





Gc  
993.1  
M23h  
v.1  
1918844

M. L

REYNOLDS HISTORICAL  
GENEALOGY COLLECTION



ALLEN COUNTY PUBLIC LIBRARY



3 1833 01149 8919















# HISTORICAL RECORDS

OF

## NEW ZEALAND.

---

VOL. I.

---

EDITED BY

ROBERT McNAB,

MINISTER OF LANDS AND AGRICULTURE.



WELLINGTON.

BY AUTHORITY: JOHN MACKAY, GOVERNMENT PRINTER.

—  
1908.





## PREFACE.

THE object sought to be attained by the publication of the "Historical Records" of New Zealand can best be understood by a perusal of the preface to the "Historical Records" of New South Wales, printed in this volume. The reason why the method is adopted of explaining one set of Records by quoting the preface to another is that this volume comprises almost exclusively those documents among the "Historical Records" of New South Wales which concern the Islands of New Zealand. Those belonging to the years prior to 1811 have been extracted from the *printed*, those after that date from the *manuscript* "Historical Records," lying in Sydney, which latter, by the kindness of the New South Wales Government, were put at the disposal of this country. The New South Wales sources are therefore our sources, their preface our preface.

So clearly are the objects to be gained by the publication of the material and the sources from which it has been procured stated in the preface to the "Historical Records" of New South Wales, that the Editor sees no necessity to deal at any length with the task of justifying or explaining the publication of this volume. The documents, it may however be mentioned, are arranged in chronological order, and it is intended to continue the issue of fresh volumes from time to time as the material obtained justifies that course. Already a very large amount of additional material, sufficient to warrant the belief that another two years should see a second volume emerge from the printer's hands, is ready for the compositor.

\$20.00 (2 vs.) - P.O. 5734 - 8-26-76 H.D. Muller

The plan of issuing volumes without waiting until the whole of the material is to hand is explained by the fact that the work was undertaken by the Editor to enable the incidents in our country's early history to be put at the disposal of the people of the Dominion as soon as possible. To wait until all was collected would be to indefinitely postpone the publication of what was available, without the certainty of finality ever being reached. Interim publications will effect the object the Editor has in view.

ROBERT McNAB.

Wellington, New Zealand,  
21st April, 1908.



## PREFACE TO THE "HISTORICAL RECORDS" OF NEW SOUTH WALES.

---

THE "HISTORICAL RECORDS" of New South Wales are published with the object of affording the fullest information obtainable concerning the foundation, progress, and government of the mother colony of Australia. It was with a similar purpose that the publication was commenced, more than two years ago, of the "History of New South Wales, from the Records." All the material that the Government could command was placed at the disposal of the writer, and in the volume issued from the Government Printing Office in June, 1889, this reservoir of information was largely drawn upon. But when Vol. II. of the History was in preparation it was considered desirable to make a change in the plan. It was determined that while the publication of the History should go on, the records themselves, with the exception of those that are trivial or formal, should be printed in full, in separate volumes, so that the public might have, on the one hand, a historical work founded on official documents, and on the other, the material upon which the narrative is based.

The adoption of this course serves a double purpose. In the first place, it enhances the value of the History, for it enables the reader to turn at any point from the narrative of the writer to the fuller information which the reports and despatches supply. The advantage gained by this treatment of the official papers is obvious. No matter how faithfully a writer of history may perform his task, he cannot cover all the ground: no matter how acutely he may criticize the actors who take part in the scenes he describes, he cannot exhibit them in so clear a light as they are shown in their own writings. Thus the publication of the Records may be regarded as desirable from the historical point of view.

In the second place, the printing of the Records gives immediate and lasting public value to State papers which would otherwise be of service to the few—only those, in fact, who have leisure to search the bulky manuscripts which have been collected by the Government. In the absence of printed records, the inquirer who endeavours to learn in what manner New South Wales was founded—how the settlement was governed in the early days—by

what steps it grew—how difficulties were encountered and overcome—what mistakes were made, and how they were corrected—by whom injustice was perpetrated, and in what way retribution fell upon the oppressor—can command no better sources of information than tradition, and the accounts of writers who had to make history from insufficient material. He is in the position that a jury would occupy if it were required to give a verdict upon hearsay evidence. The publication of the Records will change all that. With the printed Records in the public libraries and on the book-shelves of all who care to purchase them, the student of history will have the best possible material at his disposal. He will be able to read for himself, and draw his own conclusions from direct testimony.

It is not entirely a new departure that has been taken. The importance of preserving and reproducing national records is recognised in most civilised countries, and especially so in Great Britain. In earlier times, when Ministers of the Crown treated official despatches as their private property, and on quitting office carried to their own houses manuscripts which belonged to the nation, little care was taken of the records, and such a thing as giving information to the public concerning them does not appear to have had any place in the minds of those in authority. This indifference no longer exists. All public documents are carefully preserved; inventories of them are taken, and they are accurately described in printed calendars. With a few exceptions, the State papers are gathered together in one place, the Public Record Office, London, and are kept in the custody of the Master of the Rolls, who by the Public Records Act (1 and 2 Vict., c. 94) is constituted Keeper of the Archives.\* These stores of information are not simply hoarded up—they are treated in such a way as to be of use to the people, and to bring within easy reach of the historian the documentary evidence that he requires. Large volumes, entitled “Calendars of State Papers,” consisting of condensations of the documents in the Public Record Office and elsewhere from the days of Henry VIII. to the eighteenth century, are in course of publication, while some of the earlier records are printed in full.

Under the direction of the Master of the Rolls, and by the authority of Her Majesty's Treasury, the publication was commenced thirty-four years ago of “The Chronicles and Memorials of Great Britain and Ireland during the Middle Ages.” The first volume (published December, 1857) contained an official state-

---

\* With the exception of certain manuscripts in the British Museum and a few public libraries, most of the public muniments of the realm are now placed in one repository, and under the supervision of the Master of the Rolls.—“Encyclopædia Britannica,” ninth edition, vol. xx., p. 313.



ment, which has been repeated in subsequent volumes, to the effect that on the 26th January of that year the Master of the Rolls submitted to the Treasury a proposal for the publication of materials for the history of Great Britain, from the invasion of the Romans to the reign of Henry VIII. The Lords of the Treasury adopted the suggestion, and the work, conducted by a staff of editors, has gone on without interruption to the present time. Up to 1891 over 200 volumes had been published. The care and elaboration with which the work is done may be seen from the copies of the books in the Free Public Library, Sydney.

More than half a century before the publication of the "Chronicles and Memorials" was commenced, that is to say in the year 1800, a Select Committee of the House of Commons had recommended that the public records should be printed. This recommendation is referred to by the Honourable Board of Commissioners on the Public Records in its report to the King-in-Council of the 7th February, 1837. The Commissioners express their approval of the proposition in the following words: "In this opinion [the opinion of the Select Committee that the Records should be printed] we have entirely coincided. We regard the press as at once the only perfectly secure preservative of the information which the National Archives contain, and the only means by which that information can be diffused beyond a very narrow circle of inquirers." The publication of the "Chronicles and Memorials" is the outcome of these recommendations.

In Canada the Records are scrupulously kept, and their contents disclosed for the information of the public. In 1872 the Dominion Government appointed an Archivist, and founded an Archives Office at Ottawa, where all the public records, with the exception of those retained by the provincial authorities, are stored. The papers consist partly of original documents, and partly of copies of old despatches and other manuscripts transcribed by a staff of writers from originals discovered by the Archivist in the London Record Office and Departments of State, and in the archives of Paris and other European cities. From time to time reports are issued in which the records are described, and, when considered necessary, printed in full. In this manner the public is placed in possession of information of the highest interest and importance relating to the early history of Canada which had never before seen the light.

In New South Wales, owing to the shorter period of time, and the smaller quantity of material to be dealt with, it is possible to do what would be impracticable under other circumstances, that is to say, to publish in full the Records of the colony from its foundation. It has also been decided to publish all available correspondence concerning Captain Cook and his connection

with Australian discovery. The Cook Papers form Part I. of Vol. I. Part II. of Vol. I. contains the records relating to the establishment of the colony and its progress under Governor Phillip.

When the settlement at Port Jackson was established the chief authority was vested in the Governor, who not only governed the colony, but administered its affairs. The civil business was conducted nominally by a staff, but much of the work fell upon the Governor, who was troubled with matters of a kind which would be settled in the present day by an ordinary clerk. He was also at the head of the naval and military forces, and was the principal, it may almost be said the only, channel of communication between the Colonial Government and the English authorities. The reasons which led the English Government to plant a convict settlement in New South Wales are only briefly indicated in the scanty papers discovered in the State Departments; but when the colony had been established its affairs formed the subject of periodical letters from the Governors, who wrote fully about the concerns of the settlement, receiving in reply despatches for their guidance and instruction. Most of this correspondence has been preserved in the English Departments of State, either in the original or in official copies. Its value is inestimable. The despatches are full of information. The Governors were required by their instructions to keep the Home authorities well informed about matters great and small, and in the despatches sent to London almost every transaction that took place is minutely described. More than this, copies of all the Proclamations and Orders issued by the Governor and the military commander were forwarded for the information of the English authorities. These documents are recorded with the other State papers.

The early history of New South Wales is founded mainly upon the despatches sent by the Governors to the authorities in England, and the despatches received by them in reply. The Records are comprised within measurable bounds, and, as they are the chief material out of which history must be made, it has been decided to print them as they stand.

This course has been adopted on the recommendation of a Board, consisting of the late Hon. Geoffrey Eagar, Under-Secretary for Finance and Trade from 1872 to 1891; Alexander Oliver, M.A., Barrister-at-Law; Professor G. Arnold Wood, B.A., Challis Professor of History at the Sydney University; and R. C. Walker, Principal Librarian, Public Library. The Board having ascertained the nature of the documents at the disposal of the Government, came to the conclusion that the design with which the publication of the Official History was commenced



could not be fully carried out unless the State papers and other official documents upon which the work was based were made as accessible to the public as the History itself. They decided, therefore, that the printing of the Records was not only desirable but necessary, and in the month of March, 1891, a recommendation to that effect was made to the then Colonial Treasurer, the Hon. William McMillan. The proposal received the cordial approval of the Minister, who gave the necessary authority to carry out the work on the lines recommended by the Board. Arrangements were made accordingly for printing and publishing the despatches, reports, letters, and other papers which had been collected.

While the best use has been made of the material at command, the Records of the early days of the colony cannot be presented in an absolutely complete form. Every paper of consequence that has been discovered, or may be discovered hereafter, will be published; but, unfortunately, manuscripts of great interest and importance, which are known to have existed, cannot now be found. The most valuable of the early Records are the despatches sent to England by the Governors, and the despatches received by the Governors from the authorities in London. At Government House, Sydney, there are a number of letter-books containing copies of the despatches sent to England, and the original despatches received from the Home authorities; but these Records, instead of going back to 1788, the year in which New South Wales was founded, begin with 1800. Of the despatches received and sent before that date, during the Governorships of Phillip and Hunter, and the Lieutenant-Governorships of Grose and Paterson, there is no trace. What has become of them it is impossible to say. A hundred years ago State papers were not so carefully guarded as they are now; the English system was loose, and it would have been surprising if greater care had been taken in Sydney than in London. Some of the early Australian Governors may have taken their papers with them when they left office. On that supposition the disappearance of the despatches from 1788 to 1800 is readily explained; but even then the whole case is not met, for public Records of which the Governors were not the custodians are also missing.

There are circumstances, however, which discourage the view that Governors' despatches in the early days were treated as the property of those to whom they were sent. It is certain that they were not so treated by Governor King, and there seems to be no reason why Phillip and Hunter, Grose and Paterson, should have followed a different practice. We have the means of knowing exactly the course pursued by Hunter's immediate successor. The Hon. Philip Gidley King, M.L.C., has placed at the disposal

of the Government the books and papers left by his grandfather, Governor King ; but, while these manuscripts include copies of most, if not all, of the despatches received by King from the English Ministers and Under-Secretaries of State, no originals are to be found. The despatches have been copied into letter-books, some by King himself, some by his secretary ; but, while many unofficial letters to King are among the papers, the originals of the Home despatches are wanting. The inference is plain. If King had at any time regarded the English despatches as his own property, he would not have gone to the trouble of copying them, and the originals would have been found among his papers. He was exceedingly careful about his correspondence, preserving communications of all kinds, whether trivial or important, but duplicating nothing. When an original document is met with there is no copy. And the manuscripts at Government House show that when King relinquished the government he left the originals of the English despatches in the office. If in doing so he acted in accordance with the recognised practice, the presumption is that his predecessors—Governors Phillip and Hunter, and Lieutenant-Governors Grose and Paterson—treated in the same way the despatches received by them.

What, then, has become of these manuscripts ? Most probably they have been destroyed ; but by whom or with what object can only be conjectured. That the missing despatches met with this fate is the more likely from the fact previously stated, that public records of corresponding dates, for which the Governors were not responsible, have also disappeared. A strong-room in the Colonial Secretary's Office, Sydney, contains all the original records of New South Wales that can be found. These papers have been examined and scheduled, and it may be seen at a glance of what they consist. They begin with a General Order, dated 7th August, 1789, "Instructions to the Night Watch." Two other orders of no particular importance follow, and these are all out of the many hundreds issued during Phillip's Governorship that appear to have been preserved. There are no official papers whatever belonging to the administration of Lieut.-Governor Paterson—December, 1794, to September, 1795 ; and only one of the time in which Lieut.-Governor Grose ruled—December, 1792, to December, 1794. Hunter's Governorship, which covered more than five years—11th September, 1795, to 27th September, 1800—is represented by one book containing copies of the orders made from September, 1795, to December, 1797, and five or six papers of minor importance. Papers belonging to the King period, 1800 to 1806, are more numerous ; but the Records are scanty and intermittent until the term of Governor Macquarie is reached, January, 1810. There are no despatches

to or from the Governors during any period. The only manuscripts of this class in Sydney are in the Secretary's room at Government House.

The Records, so far as Sydney is concerned, are thus defective, in two respects. In the first place, the despatches from the foundation of the colony up to the beginning of 1800 are wanting; in the second place, the Orders, Proclamations, and other official papers showing how authority was exercised in the early days are found only in fragments—in fact, they can scarcely be said to exist.

But for the active search made in London by Mr. James Bonwick, F.R.G.S., the early Records of New South Wales would have been little better than a blank. The despatches sent to England by the Governors, as well as the despatches and letters transmitted to them, have been preserved, if not as completely as could have been wished, yet to a very large extent, in the Departments of State. These sources of information have been thrown open to the Government, and the transcriptions that have been made repair, so far as it can be repaired, the misfortune the colony has sustained in the loss of its early Records.

The first step to tap these valuable sources of information was taken in April, 1887, when the Colonial Secretary, Sir Henry Parkes, G.C.M.G., through the Agent-General, authorised Mr. Bonwick to make copies of certain despatches which he had discovered. In the following year, in view of the publication of the "*History of New South Wales from the Records*," authority was given for the transcription of documents relating to the period during which Governor Phillip was at the head of affairs—*i.e.*, 1788–1792. The information obtained in this way proved so interesting and valuable that Mr. Bonwick was instructed to continue his researches, and the work has since gone on without interruption. The purpose in view is to collect from every available source all the authentic information it is possible to obtain relating to the foundation of the colony and its government during the early part of its existence.

An awkward gap is thus filled up. The information, however, was not easily obtained. The manuscripts were not readily accessible; they were gathered from many Departments. The Governors in the early days were not only responsible to the Home Office, which had the colonies in its charge, but, as naval officers, they owed allegiance to the Admiralty. They had to correspond with the Home Secretary and the Lords Commissioners of the Admiralty, and with the Under-Secretaries of those departments. Each department and sub-department kept two letter-books, one for the Minister and the other for the Under-Secretary, so that it was necessary to examine four different sources of information for



the purpose of discovering what had passed between the Governors and the English authorities.

In dealing with the Records belonging to a still earlier period—that in which the establishment of a settlement in New South Wales was discussed—the ground to be covered was wider still, though not so productive. In making preparations for the despatch of the first fleet many departments and sub-departments were engaged—the Home Office, which had general direction of the business; the Admiralty, which undertook the equipment and officering of the ships, and the appointment of the force of marines which guarded the transports and formed the garrison at Port Jackson; the Treasury, which made the financial arrangements; the Transport Office, which had to do with the convict-ships; and the Victualling Department, which provisioned the fleet. When the marines were replaced by the special corps raised by Major Grose, known afterwards as the New South Wales Corps, another Department of State, that of War, was brought into operation; and, accordingly, correspondence between that department and the Home Office, and between the officials at the War Office and the officers of the corps, takes its place amongst the records. Three of the transports which constituted, with the warship “*Sirius*” and its tender the “*Supply*,” the vessels forming the first fleet, were under charter to the East India Company to take cargoes of tea from China to London after landing convicts and stores at Port Jackson; and at a subsequent stage, the company, owing to the obstacles it threw in the way of Australian trade with the East, figured largely in the official correspondence relating to New South Wales. The records of the India Office are therefore another source of information.

The transcripts which have been despatched to Sydney are thus gathered from a wide field, embracing as it does the Public Record Office, the British Museum, the Home Office, the Colonial Office, the War Office, the Privy Council Office, the Admiralty, the India Office, and Somerset House. The documents had to be searched for, and the work was not without difficulty, owing to the imperfect and unsystematic way in which official records were kept in the early days. Some documents—the earlier Orders and Proclamations, for example—cannot be found at all; others, which were believed to be missing, such as the commissions of the early Governors, have been discovered in the Home Office, after a patient search, in which valuable assistance was given by the officers of the Department. A number of the despatches copied by the transcribers in London escaped notice in the first instance because they had been placed amongst papers relating to the American colonies.

While the principal storehouse of facts concerning the early days of the colony is the Public Record Office and the Departments of State in London, information has been obtained from other sources. Six years ago the Agent-General, Sir Saul Samuel, acting under instructions from the Government at Sydney, purchased from Lord Brabourne a valuable collection of papers relating to the settlement and early history of New South Wales. They were once known as "The Brabourne Papers"; they are now known as "The Banks Papers." The grandfather of the present Lord Brabourne was related to Sir Joseph Banks, and in that way the papers came into the possession of the Brabourne family. Sir Joseph Banks, as pointed out in Vol. I. of the Official History, took an active part in the consultations and negotiations which led to the settlement of New South Wales; and there can be no doubt that his representations, founded upon what he saw of the country during his visit to Botany Bay with Captain Cook in the *Endeavour*, did a great deal towards bringing about the settlement of New South Wales. After the colony had been established he watched its fortunes with a parental eye, and the deep interest which he took in its welfare is shown by the correspondence that has come, through Lord Brabourne, into the possession of the Government of New South Wales. These manuscripts are apparently only a part of the papers that Sir Joseph kept with regard to this colony. The "Banks Papers" were discovered by accident in Sir Joseph Banks's old house in Soho Square, but these manuscripts are only a portion of the correspondence which Sir Joseph had with English Ministers, and with Australian Governors, settlers, and explorers. Many of his manuscripts relating to Australian affairs have been lost or destroyed. The papers begin with four letters from Captain Cook (originals), and go up to 1814, six years before Sir Joseph's death. The absence of letters from or to Phillip, with whom Sir Joseph Banks corresponded, the fact that there are no manuscripts of later date than 1814, and other considerations, indicate that the collection, precious as it is, is only the remnant of a large store of papers relating to the foundation and early history of New South Wales.

The manuscripts of Governor King, which have been lent to the Government by the Hon. Philip Gidley King, M.L.C., are extensive and important. They consist of a Journal, in two volumes, kept partly on board the "Sirius"\* on the voyage from England to Botany Bay with the first fleet

---

\* King came out to New South Wales as Second Lieutenant of the "Sirius."

of transports, and partly at Norfolk Island, where King acted as Commandant and Superintendent from March, 1788, to March, 1790, under a Commission issued by Phillip as Governor of New South Wales and its Dependencies; a letter-book, containing copies of despatches received and sent both during King's term as Commandant and during his subsequent command as Lieutenant-Governor, under commission from the Crown, from November, 1791, to October, 1796; four letter-books, kept during his term as Governor of New South Wales, from September, 1800, to August, 1806; and original letters and despatches, extending from 1799 to 1811. It should be pointed out, with regard to the despatches recorded in the letter-books, that King during his first term at Norfolk Island corresponded with Governor Phillip, from whom he derived his authority, while during his Lieutenant-Governorship at Norfolk Island and his Governorship at Sydney he was in direct communication with the Home Office and other Departments of State in England. While acting as Lieutenant-Governor of Norfolk Island, from November, 1791, to October, 1796, King wrote a second Journal, a copy of which is amongst the transcripts sent from England to the Government in Sydney.

Discoveries from time to time of manuscripts which were believed to have been lost, or the existence of which was unknown, may interfere to some extent with the consecutive printing of the Records; but it has been considered better to begin publishing at once than wait an indefinite time to make sure that all possible sources of information have been exhausted. The plan of the work contemplates the publication of the Records in chronological order, and the rule will not be departed from except in cases where despatches of a given date contain enclosures of earlier dates. Under such circumstances, to place the manuscripts in strict chronological order would cause confusion, instead of helping the reader. The plan of arranging matter according to subjects has its advantages, but it is considered that what might be gained in this way would be outweighed by the disadvantages of a system under which the reader would be obliged to look through half a dozen volumes to find one piece of information relating to a particular day in a particular year. It is believed that by printing the Records in chronological order, and giving with each volume a comprehensive index, the Records will be of greater value for purposes of reference than if they were dealt with under separate heads.

As the papers given in these volumes form the basis of the Official History which is published concurrently, they are presented without comment, and without any attempt to explain the story they tell. The proper place for description, analysis,



and comment is the history itself. The Records are given here as they were found, and they speak for themselves. Where it has been considered necessary to explain the relation of papers to each other, or to give information concerning persons and places, as an aid to the reader in studying the Records, the Editor has written the necessary notes, which are printed at the foot of the page, but no alteration of the text has been made in any case. Errors of composition and spelling are allowed to go without correction ; in a word, the Records as printed are literal transcripts of the originals. This is the plan now generally adopted in the reproduction of manuscripts ; indeed, no other course could be pursued without mutilating the originals, and depriving them of their historic value.

It will be noticed in examining the Records from 1783 to 1789 that duplicates are given of some of the documents printed in Vol. I. of the Official History. It was impossible to avoid this repetition. The Records stand by themselves, and they must be given intact. For this reason, the documents published in Vol. I. of the History have been reprinted ; in future issues, however, repetitions will not occur. In the Historical Records will be found the full text of the papers ; in the history they will be digested and explained. The writer of Vol. I. made such use of the manuscripts as the space at his disposal allowed ; the broader plan now adopted gives the simple facts in one set of volumes and the historical narrative in another. In this way the full Records will appear in print, while the history will not be burdened by long extracts and quotations. It is believed that by the adoption of this course the convenience of the reader will be consulted and the object which the Government has in view carried into effect.

ALEXR. BRITTON.

Government Printing Office,  
Sydney, February, 1892.

### ERRATA.

Page 219 : last line of Note—*For 1796 read 1795.*

Page 225 : third line of Notes—*For September read October.*

Page 242 : first line of Note—*For September read October.*

Page 758—*For 1835 read 1839.*

N.B.—The errata on pages 219, 225, and 242 were copied from the " Historical Records of New South Wales."

# HISTORICAL RECORDS

OF

## NEW ZEALAND.

---

LIEUTENANT COOK TO SECRETARY STEPHENS.

1770  
Oct. 23.

Endeavour, bark, at Onrust,  
near Batavia, 23 October, 1770.

SIR,—

Please to acquaint my Lords Commiss'rs of the Admiralty that I left Rio de Janeiro the 8th of December, 1768, and on the 16th of Jan'y following arrived in Success Bay, in Straits La Maire,\* where we recruited our wood and water. On the 21st of the same month we quitted Straits La Maire, and arrived at George's Island † on the 13th of April. In our passage to this island I made a far more westerly track than any ship has ever done before, yet it was attended with no discovery until we arrived within the tropick, where we discover'd several islands. We met with as friendly a reception by the natives of George's

Departure from  
Rio.

Arrive at  
Tahiti.

The natives  
well-disposed.

\* These straits separate Staten Island from the mainland of Tierra del Fuego.

† This island, now known as Tahiti, was discovered by Captain Wallis, in June, 1767, and by him named King George the Third's Island. De Bougainville landed there in April, 1768, without any knowledge of Wallis's discovery. He adopted the native name, and called it Taiti. Cook, landing in April, 1769, retained the native name, but added the vowel prefix, used by the Islanders in conversation, and for many years it was known as Otaheite. Dalrymple surmised that Otaheite was identical with the island Quiros named La Sagittaria. He accounts for Quiros finding neither a harbour nor refreshments at the island, by the fact that he attempted to land on the isthmus, *i.e.*, the south-east part, whereas Wallis, Bougainville, and Cook landed at Matavai Bay, on the northern part. There can now be little doubt but that Dalrymple was right; and that the islands Quiros named La Encarnacion, St. Juan Baptista, St. Elmo, Los Coronades, and La Conversion de St. Pablo, belonged to the large group now known as the Paumotu or Low Archipelago; the island he called La Dezena being identical with that called by Cook (and still known as) Maitea; and which Wallis called Osnaburg, and Bougainville, Le Boudoir.

1770  
Oct. 23.  
—

Island as I could wish, and I took care to secure ourselves in such a manner as to put it out of the power of the whole island to drive us off.\*

The transit of  
Venus.

Some days preceding the 3rd of June I sent Lieutenant Hicks to the eastern part of this island, and Lieut. Gore† to York Island, with others of the officers (Mr. Green having furnished them with instruments), to observe the transit of Venus, that we may have the better chance of succeeding should the day prove unfavourable. But in this we were so fortunate that the observations were everywhere attended with every favourable circumstance.‡

Society Islands.

It was the 13th of July before I was ready to quitt this island, after which I spent near a month in exploring some other islands which lay to the westward,§ before we steer'd to the southward. On the 14th of August we discover'd a small island lying in the lat'de of 22° 27' So., long'de 150° 47' W't. || After quitting this island, I steer'd to the So., inclining a little to the east until we arrived in the lat'de 40° 12' So. without seeing the least signs of land. After this I steer'd to the westward, between the lat'de of 30° and 40°, until the 6th of October, on which day we discover'd the east coast of New Zealand, which I found to consist of two large islands, extending from 34° to 48° of south lat'de, both of which I circumnavigated.

New Zealand.

New Holland.

On the first of April, 1770, I quitted New Zealand, and steer'd to the westward, until I fell in with the coast of New Holland, in the latitude of 30° So. I coasted the shore of this country to the No., putting in at such places as I saw convenient, until we arrived in the latitude of 15° 45' So., where, on the night of the 10th of June, we struck upon a reef of rocks, where we lay 23 hours, and received some very considerable damage. This proved a fatal stroke to the remainder of the voyage, as we were obliged to take shelter in the first port we met with, where we were detain'd

The Endeavour  
on the rocks.

\* Hawkesworth, vol. ii, p. 107.

† John Gore, third lieutenant. He accompanied Wallis, in the Dolphin, during the voyage round the world, 1766-8, "as one of the mates."—(*Hawkesworth*, vol. i, p. 470.) He also sailed with Cook as first lieutenant of the Resolution during the voyage in search of a north-west passage in 1776-80. On the death of Captain Cook he succeeded Captain Clerke as captain of the Discovery; and when the latter died, Gore, being next in command, took his place as captain of the Resolution and commander of the expedition.

‡ *Hawkesworth*, vol. ii, p. 140.

§ These islands (six in number) Cook called the Society Islands.

|| Ohetiroa Island, one of the group now known as the Austral Islands. The island itself is now called Rurutua.



repairing the damage we had sustain'd until the 4th of August, and, after all, put to sea with a leaky ship, and afterwards coasted the shore to the northward thro' the [most] dangerous navigation that, perhaps, ever ship was in, until the 22nd of same month, when, being in the latitude of 10° 30' So., we found a passage into the Indian Sea, between the northern extremity of New Holland and New Guinea. After getting through this passage I stood over for the coast of New Guinea, which we made in the 29th; but as we found it absolutely necessary to heave the ship down to stop her leaks before we proceeded home, I made no stay here, but quitted this coast on the 3rd of Sept'r, and made the best of my way to Batavia, where we arrived on the 10th instant, and soon after obtained leave of the Governor and Council to be hove down at Onrust, where we have but just got alongside of the wharf, in order to take out our stores, &c.

1770  
Oct. 23.

Endeavour  
Straits.

Batavia.

I send herewith a copy of my journal,\* containing the proceedings of the whole voyage, together with such charts as I have had time to copy, which I judge will be sufficient for the present to illustrate said journal. In this journal I have, with undisguised truth and without loss, inserted the whole transactions of the voyage, and made such remarks and given such descriptions of things as I thought was necessary, in the best manner I was capable of. Altho' the discoveries made in this voyage are not great, yet I flatter myself they are such as may merit the attention of their Lordships, and altho' I have failed in discover'g the so much talked of southern continent † (which perhaps do not exist, and which I myself had much at heart), yet I am confident no part of the failure of such discovery can be laid to my charge. Had we been so fortunate not to have run ashore, much more would have been done in the latter part of the

Cook's journal.

Results of the  
voyage  
compared with  
others.

\* It is, unfortunately, impossible to say what has become of this copy. It would probably be in the handwriting of Cook's clerk, by whom this letter was written.

† This is the first mention the Records contain of the "so much talked of southern continent." Singularly enough, no allusion is made thereto in the correspondence which passed between the Admiralty and Navy Boards in the spring of 1768, when the expedition was first projected. The Endeavour, so far as the official letters indicate, was merely intended to convey "to the southward such persons as shall be thought proper for making observations on the passage of the planet Venus over the sun's disk." The letter from the Admiralty to Cook informing him of his appointment contains no allusion to the objects of the voyage; nor does Cook himself mention the matter in any of his earlier letters. Care must be taken not to confound the land known to geographers of Cook's time as the *Terra Australis incognita*, or the "Great Southern Continent," with New Holland. They were not in any way identical. New Holland was not a *terra incognita*. Its western, northern, and part of its southern shores had been known to geographers for very many years. But it was thought that, in addition,

1770  
Oct. 23.  
—

voyage than what was, but as it is I presume this voyage will be found as compleat as any before made to the So. seas on the same acc't.

The plans I have drawn of the places I have been at were made with all the care and accuracy that time and circumstances would admit of. Thus far I am certain that the latitude and longitude of few parts of the world are better settled than these. In this I was very much assisted by Mr. Green, who let slip no one opportunity for making of observations for settling the long'de during the whole course of the voyage, and the many valuable discoveries made by Mr. Banks and Dr. Solander in natural history and other things useful to the learned world, cannot fail of contributing very much to the success of the voyage. In justice to the officers and the whole of crew, I must say they have gone through the fatigues and dangers of the whole voyage with that cheerfulness and alertness that will always do honor to British seamen, and I have the satisfaction to say that I have not lost one man by sickness during the whole voyage.\*

Hastening  
home.

I hope the repairs wanting to the ship will not be so great as to detain us any length of time. You may be assured that I shall make no unnecessary delay, either here or at any other place, but shall make the best of my way home.

I have, &c.,

JAMES COOK.

a large continent stretched across the South Pacific from Tierra del Fuego to New Zealand. This was the *Terra Australis incognita* of the early voyagers. In Cook's time, the eminent hydrographer Alexander Dalrymple was the most prominent champion of this theory. Even after Cook's return, Dalrymple still believed in the existence of a great southern continent. He proclaimed it to be the "greatest passion of his life" to discover it. He estimated its extent as "equal to all the civilised parts of Asia from Turkey to China inclusive," and located it as reaching from the South Pole to 30° S. latitude.—(*Historical Collection of Voyages and Discoveries*, pp. xxiii, xxiv, and xxv.) From a comparison of the proportion of land to water in the northern hemisphere, it was held that a continent was wanting in the southern hemisphere "to counterpoize the land in the north, and to maintain the equilibrium necessary for the earth's motion." The second voyage of Cook, i.e., the one of 1772-5, effectually disposed of this visionary continent. In the Introduction to his *Voyage towards the South Pole*, Cook alludes to Quiros as being the first who had any idea of the existence of a southern continent. It is evident that he intended to dismiss as pure fiction the reports of the discovery of a southern continent by Juan Fernandez, nearly half a century before Quiros.

\* This is not quite correct; a seaman named Sutherland died of consumption at Botany Bay. But, doubtless, Cook, by "sickness," meant the terrible scourge of scurvy, which wrought such havoc with the crews of previous circumnavigators. His next letter told a very different tale.

## CREW OF LIEUTENANT COOK'S SHIP ENDEAVOUR, 1770.\*

1770

Giving names of those not leaving before 1770.

*Original list.**Endeavour bark's complement, 70 men, began wages 25 May, 1768.*

|  | Time of Discharge. |
|--|--------------------|
| Comm'r, 25 May, James Cook, 1st lieutenant .. ..   | ..                 |
| Wm. Howson, his s't, D. .. ..  | 30 Ap'l, 1770      |
| John Satterly, carp'r, DD. .. ..   | 12 Feb., 1771      |
| Edw'd Terrell, his s't, D. .. ..   | 31 Aug., 1769      |
| Isaac Smith† (AB. to 23 May, 1770,<br>then mid. to 26 May, 1771, then<br>m'r's mate) .. ..   | ..                 |
| Cork, Ireland, 25, Timothy Rarden, AB. DD. (AB. to<br>1 Feb., 1771, then sailmaker) .. ..  | 24 Dec., 1770      |
| Rochester, Kent, 42, Fred'k Haite, AB. DD. .. ..   | 1 Feb., 1771       |
| Deptford, 30, Benj'n Jordan, carp'r mate, DD. .. ..  | 12 Feb., 1771      |
| London, 22, Sam'l Jones, AB. .. ..   | ..                 |
| Edw'd Duggan, AB. .. ..  | ..                 |
| Inverness, 21, James Nicholson, AB. DD. .. ..  | 20 Feb., 1771      |
| Arkness, 29, Forby Sutherland,‡ AB. DD. .. ..  | 30 Ap'l, 1770      |
| Ipswich, 27, Isaac Parker (AB. to 25 Mar., 1769, then b's<br>mate) .. ..   | ..                 |
| P'r Comm'r, 26 May, Zack'y Hicks, 2nd lieutenant, DD. .. ..  | 25 May, 1771       |
| Worcester, Sam'l Moody, AB. DD. .. ..  | 31 Jan., 1771      |
| Cheshire, 26, Isaac Johnson, AB. .. ..   | ..                 |
| Inverness, 28, Rob't Anderson (AB. to 25 Sept., 1768,<br>then q'rmaster) .. ..   | ..                 |
| Henry Jeffs, AB. DD. .. ..   | 1 Mar., 1771       |
| P'r Warr't, John Guthrey, boats'n, DD. .. ..   | 4 Feb., 1771       |
| Tho's Jordan, his s't, D. .. ..  | ..                 |
| West Enfield, Yorks'e, 19, Rd. Pickersgill, m'r's mate, D. .. ..   | 15 Ap'l, 1771      |
| Darlington, Durham, 27, R't Stainsby, AB. .. ..  | ..                 |
| Leith, 24, Ja's Gray (to 5 Feb., 1771, then q'r m'r)   | ..                 |
| P'r Warr't, 10 June, Rob't Taylor, arm'r, DD. .. ..  | 1 Aug., 1771       |
| High Wycombe, Bucks, 20, W'm Collett, AB. .. ..  | ..                 |
| P'r Warr't, 10 June, W'm Perry, surg'n mate, D. .. ..  | 5 Nov., 1770       |
| P'r Warr't, 3 June, Ja's Thompson, cook, DD. .. ..   | 31 Jan., 1771      |
| Tho's Matthews, his s't, D. .. ..  | ..                 |
| P'r Warr't, 13 June, 49, John Ravenhill, ———, DD. .. ..  | ..                 |
| Hull, Yorkshire  | ..                 |
| Edinburgh, 39, Arch'd Wolfe, AB. DD. .. ..   | 20 Feb., 1771      |
| Weathersfield, Essex, 27, Cha's Clerke, m'r's mate, D.<br>(to 19 Aug., 1768, then AB. to 16 April, 1771, then<br>m'r's mate) .. .. | ..                 |
| P'r Warr't, 15 June, Stephen Forwood, gunn'r .. ..   | ..                 |
| Dan'l Roberts, his s't, DD. .. ..  | 30 June, 1771      |

\* The list is printed as it appears in the books of the Admiralty. The letters D. and DD. stand respectively for "discharged" and "died." The list does not include the name of Mr. Weir, master's mate, who was drowned at Madeira, on 12th September, 1768; nor that of John Bootie, midshipman, who died at sea, apparently in the early part of the year 1771.

† Isaac Smith, a relative of Cook's wife. He accompanied Cook in his second voyage. He was afterwards raised to the rank of Admiral.

‡ Bennett, in his *History of Discovery and Colonisation*, p. 74, gives publicity to a rumour to the effect that Sutherland—after whom Point Sutherland, in Botany Bay, was named—died from wounds received from the natives, although further reference will show that he died of consumption.

| 1770 |   | Time of Discharge. |
|------|---|--------------------|
|      | P'r Warr't, 17 June, Rob't Molineux, master, DD.                                      | 15 Ap'l, 1771      |
|      | Isaac Manley, his s't, D.   | 4 Feb. ———         |
|      | Gillingham, Dorset, 22, Matt Cox, AB.   | .. ..              |
|      | Deptford, Kent, 27, Ri'd Hutchins (AB. to Sept., '69, then<br>b's mate)               | .. ..              |
|      | Bristol, 38, Cha's Williams, AB.  | .. ..              |
|      | Dublin, 29, Josh Childs (AB. to 1 Feb., 1771, then cook,<br>P't Warr't, 1 Feb., 1771) | .. ..              |
|      | Alex'r Simpson, AB. DD.   | 28 Feb., 1771      |
|      | P'r Warr't, 27 May, W'm Brough'm Monkhouse, surg'n,<br>DD.                            | .. ..              |
|      | Tho's Jones (1st), his s't  | 5 Nov., 1770       |
|      | Jo'n Monkhouse, mid., DD.   | 5 .. ..            |
|      | Tho's Knight, AB.   | 6 Feb., 1771       |
|      | Falmo', 28, H'y Stevens, AB.  | .. ..              |
|      | Bangor, Wales, 27, Tho's Jones (2nd)  | .. ..              |
|      | Pat'k Saunders, mid., (to 23 May,<br>1770, then AB.)                                  | 25 Dec., 1770      |
|      | Bangor, Wales, Fran's Wilkinson (AB. to 19 Aug., '68,<br>then m's mate)               | .. ..              |
|      | Rich'd Orton Clerke   | .. ..              |
|      | Brazils, 20, John Dozey, AB. DD.  | 7 Ap'l, 1771       |
|      | Blackwall, 24, James Timley, AB.  | .. ..              |
|      | Deptford, Kent, 20, Mich. Littleboy, AB.  | .. ..              |
|      | George Nowell (AB. to Feb., '71,<br>then carp'r)                                      | .. ..              |
|      | John Goodjohn, AB.  | .. ..              |
|      | John Woodworth, AB. DD.   | 24 Dec., 1770      |
|      | P'r Comm'r, 20 July, John Gore, 3rd lieut.  | .. ..              |
|      | P'r do., 26 May, 1771, to 26 May, '71, then 2nd lieut.<br>Nath'l Morey, his s't.      | .. ..              |
|      | Enoth, N'thamptons'e, 21, W'm Peckover, AB.   | .. ..              |
|      | New York, Ja's Magoa (AB. to 27 May, 1771, then mid.)                                 | .. ..              |
|      | Deptf'd, Kent, 25, R't Littleboy  | .. ..              |
|      | P'r Warr't, 5 Feb., 1771, Sam'l Evans (q'rm'r to 5 Feb.,<br>'71, then boats'n).       | .. ..              |
|      | Widows Man (2nd), AB.   | .. ..              |
|      | Madeira, New York, 20, Jno. Thurman, AB. DD.  | 19 Feb., 1771      |
|      | JAMES COOK.   |                    |
|      | ROB'T MOLINEUX.   |                    |
|      | JOHN GUTHREY.   |                    |

N.B.—The ship sailed from Plymouth Sound 17 August, 1768, and from the Madeira 14 Sept., 1768.

*List of Marines on the Endeavour.*

John Edgcombe, serg't; Jno. Trusslove, corp'l; Tho's Rositer, drum; W'm Judge, private; H'y Paul, private; Mich'l Bremer, private, D, 19 Aug., 1768; Dan'l Preston, private; W'm Wiltshire, private; W'm Greenslade, private; Sam'l Gibson, private; Tho's Dunster, private; Clement Webb, private; John Bowles, private.

JAMES COOK.  
ROB'T MOLINEUX.  
JOHN GUTHREY.



## SURGEON PERRY \* TO LIEUTENANT COOK.

1771

SIR,—

[†]

The sanguine and well-grounded expectations of the certain efficacy the wort possesses to cure the sea scurvy, and the very great probability of that distemper raging at some time or other in the course of a long voyage, induced, I apprehend, the Rt. Honour'ble the Lords Commissioners of the Admiralty to send out a quantity of malt in the Endeavour, as well to determine and fix its character in that respect as through an humane and tender care for the preservation of the crew. It may at first sight appear strange that I reckon this last motive secondary to the first, but a recollection of the ample and various assistance the same provident minds had afforded for that purpose will remove this seeming absurdity.

A specific for scurvy.

A fine distinction.

Sour krout, mustard, vinegar, wheat, inspissated orange and lemon juices, saloup, portable soup, sugar, melasses, vegetables (at all times when they could possibly be got), were some in constant, others in occasional use. These were of such infinite service to the people in preserving them from a scorbutic taint that the use of the malt was, with respect to necessity, almost entirely precluded. Again, cold bathing was encouraged and enforced by example. The allowance of salt beef and pork was abridged from nearly the beginning of the voyage, and the sailors' usual custom of mixing the salt beef fat with their flour, &c., strictly forbad. Upon our leaving England, too, a stop was put to issuing butter and cheese, and throughout the voyage raisins were serv'd with the flour instead of pickled suet.

Preventives.

Bathing.

I have enumerated all the above preventives lest Mr. McBride,† who, in page 175, reflects on sea surgeons perhaps not with the utmost candour, should suppose there must have happen'd more dangerous cases to have proved the virtues of his medicine upon than really have, and that some motives like those he has given still prevent a compliance with allowing it a fair trial. What opportunities have occur'd of using it have constantly been embraced; that more have not happen'd is, if a fault, the fault of the humanity of the Lords of the Admiralty and of the care of the captain of the ship. But I am aware that Mr. McBride may object to my assertion of its having been allow'd a fair trial, its being used by way of preservation (see page 192). If he is dissatisfied at this, it don't, however, affect me, and Mr. Monk-

Dr. McBride.

His specific

given a fair trial.

\* William Perry, surgeon, promoted from surgeon's mate on the death of Surgeon Monkhouse, 5 November, 1770, at Batavia.

† No date; evidently June or July, 1771.

‡ David McBride, M.D.

1771

house's death doubtless prevented sufficient reasons being given for his conduct in that particular.

The dose

Upon our leaving Madeira the capt. gave every man a quantity of onions. In crossing the Equator a bilious disorder affected the ship's company; it was general, but very slight. To prevent scorbutic complaints next making their appearance, which is frequently the case after a colliquation of the juices by prior illnesses, the wort was first prepared, as directed, October the 23rd, 1768. A quart a day was given to each of the convalescents; the valetudinarians, too, had the same quantity, which was also given to each of the cooks, who were supposed more obnoxious to scurvy from their duty ab't the fire. Here, then, it was used by way of prevention, and the consequence was our arrival at Rio Janeiro without a scorbutic symptom amongst us.

or invalids

On our passage from this place to Le Maire's Straits the wort was continued to our invalids, of whom we had three, one through age and two of broken constitutions from debaucheries. At Terra del Fuego we collected wild celery, and every morning our breakfast was made of this herb and ground wheat and portable soup. January, 1769, we pass'd Cape Horn, all our men as free from scurvy as on our sailing from Plymouth.

The case of  
Richard  
Hutchins.

Case 1st, March 14.—Richd. Hutchins, age 28, of an active, lively disposition and florid complexion, complained of his gums being sore, and of several small fungous ulcerations in one leg. His gums were swell'd and painful upon pressure, but still adhering to the teeth. The sores in the leg were seated abt. the ankle, were somewhat cedematous and of a livid circumference; his body was sufficiently open; did not find his appetite impair'd nor felt the usual lassitude. He took a pint of wort pr. day, had portable soup, and was order'd to use flour in lieu of salt meat. The wort gave him a stool more in the twenty-four hours without griping or uneasiness. After the first ten days the gums were perfectly sound and the ulcers in the leg assuming a kindly aspect; promised a speedy cure, wh. was accordingly perfected in another week. The wort was continued to April 8.

Wm. Wiltshire.

Case 2nd, March 24.—Wm. Wiltshire, marine, aged 27, complain'd of sore and bleeding gums; his teeth were loosen'd; he had no other scorbutic symptoms. This man had a pint of wort, which quantity was repeated regularly every day till the 12th of April. His complaint gradually mended, and after twelve days taking the med'cine were entirely removed. The effects of the wort gently solutive only.

Saml. Jones.

Case 3rd, April 2.—Saml. Jones, seaman, aged 26, naturally brisk and active, complain'd of having for some days been troubled

1771

with a dull heavy pain in his limbs ; a lowness of spts. accompanied it, and a general weariness oppress'd the frame. His stools were regular as in health, no rigidity in the tendons, nor was his appetite impair'd. The next day he took a quart of the wort ; this gave him three stools in the twenty-four hours, plentyful, loose, and offensive ; his body was thus kept constantly open. The discharge became less putrid, his pains went gradually off, and on the 12th (which was the last day of his taking the wort) not a man in the ship was more in spts. and lively than him.

Case 4, April 3.—I took a quart of the wort for some days before an unusual langour and lazyness had infested me ; no posture was so easy as lying down, and a swelling of a phlegmonoid type had appeared on my left leg. The part had been bruis'd many years before, and an induration had remained. The integuments were discolour'd from the calf downward, the apex of the tumour painful to the touch, but the rest hardly at all. To this I applied a discutient plaister, and kept from lying down as much as possible. The wort at first griped me, but not violently. On the 6th I first observ'd an amendment in the aspect of the tumour, the discolouration more circumscribed and the apex falling. My spts. were indisputably more alert. From this day I mended fast, and on the 12th left off the wort, being within sight of our port at Otaheite. Where the tumour had been there was now a circle of a deep blue, and round that a light tinge of yellow.

The Doctor ill.

His symptoms.

When Hutchins complain'd, which was the first alarm, the wort was also order'd for our invalids, older people, cooks as before, and others of the men who were suspected of lax solids and more dissolv'd state of the blood. These continued it till the 12th of April without any shadow of scurvy.

The first alarm.

From this time while at sea the wort became a part of our diet, so that, excepting five cases, three happening in port at New Holland and two while on the coast of New Zealand, not a man more suffer'd any inconvenience from this distemper. In the cases I have mention'd a trial was made of the robs, and attended with success.

Rob of lemons.

It is impossible for me to say what was most conducive to our preservation from scurvy, so many being the preventives used ; but from what I have seen the wort perform, from its mode of operation, from Mr. McBride's reasoning, I shall not hesitate a moment to declare my opinion, viz., that the malt is the best medicine I know, the inspissated orange and lemon juices not even excepted.

The best medicine.

WILLIAM PERRY.

|      |   |                        |    |    |    |  |                             |                |         |    |
|------|---|------------------------|----|----|----|--|-----------------------------|----------------|---------|----|
| 1771 | STATE and Condition of his Majesty's bark Endeavour, Lieutenant James Cook, commander, in the Downs, the 12th July, 1771. |                        |    |    |    |  |                             |                |         |    |
|      | State and condition of the ship.  | Complement             | .. | .. | 85 | Prov'ns on b'd for the complem't at whole allowance— | Bread                       | ..             | (days)  | 21 |
|      |   | Borne                  | .. | .. | 82 |  | Beer                        | ..             | "       | 0  |
|      |   | Muster'd               | .. | .. | 80 |  | Arrack                      | ..             | "       | 28 |
|      |   | Chequed—               |    |    |    |  | Beef                        | ..             | (weeks) | 4  |
|      |   | Widows' Men            | .. | .. | 2  |  | Pork                        | ..             | "       | 4  |
|      |   | With leave             | .. | .. | 0  |  | Pease                       | } or rice {    | "       | 4  |
|      |   | Without leave          | .. | .. | 0  |  | Oatmeal                     |                | "       | 4  |
|      |   | Lent                   | .. | .. | 0  |  | Flour                       | ..             | "       | 0  |
|      |   | Sick—                  |    |    |    |  | Suet                        | ..             | "       | 0  |
|      |   | On board               | .. | .. | 19 |  | Thist                       | ..             | "       | 0  |
|      |   | On shore               | .. | .. | 0  |  | Butter                      | } Sugar        | ..      | 4  |
|      |   | the complement—        |    |    |    |  | Cheese                      |                | "       | 0  |
|      |   | Officers and servants  | .. | .. | 17 |  | Oil                         | ..             | "       | 0  |
|      |   | Petty and able         | .. | .. | 57 |  | Vinegar                     | ..             | "       | 0  |
|      |   | Ordinary               | .. | .. | 0  |  | Tons of water               | ..             | ..      | 10 |
|      |   | Landsmen               | .. | .. | 0  |  | Stores wanting—             |                |         |    |
|      |   | Marines                | .. | .. | 8  |  | Boatswain's, gunner's, car- |                |         |    |
|      |   | Short of complement    | .. | .. | 3  |  | penter's.                   |                |         |    |
|      |   | Supern'y—              |    |    |    |  | Officers—                   |                |         |    |
|      |   | Belonging to the ships | .. | .. | 0  |  | Absent                      | ..             | ..      | 0  |
|      |   | Belonging to no ship   | .. | .. | 8  |  | Occasion                    | ..             | ..      | 0  |
|      |   | Whole number victual'd | .. | .. | 88 |  |                             |                |         |    |
|      |   | Condition of the bark  |    |    |    |  | ..                          | Foul.          |         |    |
|      |   | When last cleaned      | .. |    |    |  | ..                          | 12 Nov., 1770. |         |    |
|      |   |                        |    |    |    |  |                             | JAM's COOK.    |         |    |

NEWSPAPER EXTRACT.

July 27. *General Evening Post*, July, 27, 1771.—“An authentic account of the natives of Otaheite, or George's Island, together with some of the particulars of the three years' voyage lately made by Mr. Banks and Dr. Solander in the years 1768, 1769, and 1770; being the copy of an original letter from ———, on board the Endeavour, to his friend in the country :—

“SIR,—

“We left Woolwich upon the 20th of July, 1768, and returned to the same place upon the same day in 1771. Our passage to Madeira was eighteen days. We left England on the 29th of August. The Endeavour, tho' well contrived for stowage and a heavy sea, was, without exception, a very dull sailing vessel; to corroborate which you will not find eight knots an hour upon our log-book in the whole voyage. Upon this island Mr. Banks, by his great assiduity, discovered many rare and valuable plants, uncultivated, and even unknown to the Portuguese, particularly the mango. Being well supplied with wine, we steered for Cape Horne after a stay of five days, with no material occurrence but the death of a mate, who was drowned in heaving a kedge anchor out of the boat, by getting entangled

An anonymous letter.

The Endeavour slow boat.

Madeira.



in the coyle of the buoy rope. We had also a seaman killed, who fell into the hold and fractured his skull. Though we sailors do not look upon these calamities any more than common accidents, yet they wore an unfavourable aspect at our departure. When we had reached the length of Falkland Isles, we had a gale of wind which brought us under our mainsail, but not continuing very long, we soon came to crowd more sail, and stretched away for the Cape, where we expected very bad weather from the accounts of all the navigators who had been that voyage. However, we coasted along till we came to the pitch of Terra del Fuego, having the winds variable from W.N.W. to E.N.E., and when we had reached the point of that prodigious southern promontory with a fresh breeze, and one reef in our topsails, we stood to the southward into the latitude of 5 deg. 9 min. S., where, after a calm for a few hours, a breeze sprung up at S.S.W., and we doubled the Cape at two tacks; after which, to boast of such success, we even set topgallant steering-sails. We anchored at Terra del Fuego some time, and found the greatest hospitality from the natives, who by many things amongst them discovered plainly that they had an intercourse with Spanish America. Here we were prodigiously alarmed for Messrs. Banks and Solander, who, attended by two negroes and some of the ship's crew, undertook to climb to the summit of a prodigious mountain upon this isle, leaving the ship about ten in the morning and promising to be back by dinner; but they did not return till the following morning, which made us have a thousand doubts for their welfare, concluding that they must be either cut off by the natives or devoured by the wild beasts. However, the following morning relieved us from all dismal apprehensions by their appearance. They informed us that they had been so prodigiously wearied by the ascent of the mountain, that the two negroes were dead of the fatigue, and that it was with the utmost difficulty they had saved Dr. Solander; for when they had attained about halfway of the ascent it was too far to retreat, and a wood above them promising some shelter they gained it with difficulty, and made a bower for Dr. Solander, who, after having some sleep, recovered his spirits to descend to the vallies. We did not continue long upon the island of Terra del Fuego before we pursued our voyage to Otahitee, which lies in about 17 deg. south latitude; for Fuego produced little more than fish. Upon our arrival the natives received us with much hospitality and joy, being now convinced from Captain Wallace's\* conduct we really meant to befriend them; in consequence of which we exchanged presents, and set up our residence with them for three months. We found a most intelligent man amongst

1771  
July 27.

Lose two men.

Falkland  
Islands.

The Horn.

Doubled in two  
tacks.

Banks and  
Solander.

Fears for their  
safety.

A perilous  
journey.

Otaheite.

\* Captain Wallis, of the Dolphin.

|                          |  |
|--------------------------|--|
| 1771<br>July 27.         | them, who, upon all occasions, was our friend and interpreter, for we, by much application on our parts joined to his, became mutually tolerable judges of the two languages. This man, who was named Tobia (a kind of a savage priest), surprised us with the information of a large ship having been lately there, but she was departed westward, which, before his recital, we had some suspicion of, upon our discovering a number of European goods amongst them, particularly knives and other iron implements. To discover these adventurers we displayed all the European flags to Tobia, who immediately pitched upon the Spanish colours.  |
| Tupia.                   |  |
| Bougainville's ruse.     | <p>"This convinced us of a prior visiter, which was afterwards confirmed to us upon our arrival at Batavia. It was a French ship that had made this voyage upon observation or jealousy of our repeated visits to these seas, and, to disguise their scheme, had always appeared under Spanish colours. But to return to George's Island. This island is about 30 leagues in circumference, of a circular form, situated amidst a number of other isles, some famed for turtle, fruits, or fish, but no other animals but hogs and dogs, which we devoured with great appetite, and found nothing equal to dog's flesh but young lamb. The islanders are very expert in fishing, which they pursue for their daily sustenance, and cocoanuts, palm wines, plantains, the bread-tree, and some wild herbs is the only produce of this spot. The earth is sandy, and capable of producing corn, but amongst the variety of seeds and grains which we had carried out we could get nothing to grow but mustard and cresses, the seeds being certainly damaged by the length of time and the dryness of the air, or not properly packed up for so long an expedition. Their implements of war and agriculture are composed of wood and stone. A hatchet is made by tying a sharp flint stone upon a piece of wood, which cuts with uncommon sharpness; their fish-hooks are composed of mother of pearl, and their lines of women's hair, which is strong, black, and long. They use bows and arrows, and javelins of wood, which they throw with uncommon dexterity, and will strike birds in the air or fishes in the sea with them.</p> <p>"Their religion acknowledges one Supreme Being, whom they conceive to be too great to attend to the prayers of man. They, therefore, invoke him through mediators, who, they believe, are in general their great men departed. They don't kneel to an image; they only offer up a sacrifice of everything they mean to partake of—saying, 'Sure the Deity has a right to an offering of what he gave.' Their burials are more singular than any other custom: when a man dies, he is placed upon a bier, and a shed is erected over him, made of leaves of trees; this mausoleum is placed very often near their houses, and</p> |
| Products of the islands. |  |
| Weapons of the natives.  |  |
| Their religion.          |  |
| Disposal of their dead.  |  |

though the body is in a disagreeable putrid state, they never seem to take any notice of the offensiveness ; the corpse remains in this condition till the flesh is entirely consumed, and then the skeleton is interred in the burying-ground—which is done round with stones in the form of our country churchyards.

1771  
July 27.

“ *The Origin of Man* they believe to be from a chosen pair made by the great God, and that we are all descendants of them—that the Deity formed the earth of continents and isles—and that the Europeans who visit them are of the great land—but when that he had formed the sea, he towed the great earth by a string upon it, which going so quick, made many parts to break off, and those composed islands. Their women are of a copper colour, well made and well featured, with jet-black hair, which they always wear braided up with false hair. They wear a kind of cloth over their bodies, made from the cloth-tree, which is very thin, and not strong ; but when they want it for warmth, they make many folds of it, and stick it together by gums ; they have another kind, which they call mourning-cloth, stained with yellow on one side and brown on the other. They marry at nine and ten ; they bear many children, and at twenty-two are old and ugly. A virgin is to be purchased here, with the unanimous consent of the parents, for three nails and a knife. I own I was a buyer of such commodities, and after some little time married one of my nut-brown sultanas, and then became so habituated to their manners and a hut that I even left my lady and the island with reluctance. They have but one fashion amongst them, which is of a singular *outrée* nature—and that is, of painting their posteriors of a jet black, which no woman is suffered to neglect. They are not very decent in their amours, having little regard to either place or person ; this is not general amongst them, though it is often done and seen.

Their theology.

The women.

“ Upon occasions of festivity the women dance in the most indecent manner, performing a thousand obscene gesticulations, like the Indostan dancing girls. The only instruments of music to divert them at these times are large drums, and flutes made of reeds, in the form of our common flute, which is played upon by the wind of the nose instead of the mouth.

Dances.

“ We passed more than three months with these people, and upon our departure two of them voluntarily solicited us to come to England. Tobia was one of these—a sober, discreet, intelligent man ; from him we learnt the language, and an account of above forty more islands, which were contiguous to George’s Island. When we sailed from this isle we were in tolerable good health, but it was near three months before we reached New Zealand, in which passage we were at times greatly distressed for provisions. We sailed round New Zealand, where we found

Tupia.

Scarcity of food.



1771  
July 27.

Warlike natives.

a clear coast and deep water, good bays and good rivers. Navigators before us have believed this to be a continent, but it is no more than seventy miles round, having another island to the southward, between which there is a good passage. Here we were worse treated than ever, the natives being so brave and so jealous of their rights that they would not suffer us to land, continually attacking our boats with stones and arrows whenever we attempted to approach the shore, which obliged us to fire often amongst them to convince them of our great superiority, by which many fell, and that created a general consternation amongst them. By these means we got conversations with them (they perfectly understanding the tongue of Tobia), and persuading them at least to accept of presents from us, and by bringing off a few and treating them well, it was with the utmost difficulty afterwards that we could get rid of them; two in particular, when we left the island, swam after the ship to sea, declaring they would be murdered by their countrymen upon their return for shewing such a partial attachment to us.

The Maoris.

"These are a brave, warlike people, and tho' we staid fourteen days at one part of the isle, yet, whenever we attempted to land at another, they always attacked us with great fury. They have one weapon of a strange construction, which, by turning it round very quick, produces a great smook. This they always made use of; but we could not discover that anything issued out of it, or that it made any explosion.

Steer for  
Batavia.

"From hence we steered towards Batavia, and stopped at a small Dutch settlement in our passage, which had but one Dutchman upon it; but the island had a great number of Indians, over whom he stiled himself the King of Kings. After we had properly gratified his mercenary disposition, the Indians brought us down buffaloes, fowls, vegetables, and fish in abundance. From thence we pursued our course, but upon a reef of rocks five leagues from the land of New Holland we struck, and lay seven hours on shore; but at last we happily got her off, and arrived safe at Batavia, where we repaired and refitted her.

An error.

Sickness.

"We were all afflicted at this place with a violent flux and fever, which swept off six of our people in a morning. It was here we lost the ingenious Mr. Green, the faithful Tobia, and his comrade. But no sooner had we quitted this unwholesome shore, but those who came away sick recovered at sea, and the fruits and vegetables of the Cape of Good Hope restored us to health and spirits. We left this earthly paradise for St. Helena, and sailed from thence with the Portland; but we lost her company, and arrived in England with the loss of 45 people out of a complement of 90, in a voyage of three years. Before I conclude I must not omit how highly we have been indebted

An earthly  
paradise.



to a milch goat. She was three years in the West Indies, and was once round the world before in the Dolphin, and never went dry the whole time. We mean to reward her services in a good English pasture for life.

1771  
July 27.

A valuable goat.

"I have herein, sir, related the heads of this long voyage from memory, our books of remarks being all taken from us at Batavia, which were the only satisfactory rewards for our toils. But juniors must give way to superiors. I don't know, in this long epistolary narrative, that I have exaggerated a circumstance. If it gives any entertainment to you, it will well reward

The officers' journals.

"Your friend, &c."

---

LIEUTENANT COOK TO SECRETARY STEPHENS.

SIR,— Mile End, 13 August, 1771. Aug. 13.

Herewith you will receive the bulk of the curiositys I have collected in the course of the voyage, as under mentioned, which you will please to dispose of as you think proper.

I am, &c.,

JAMES COOK.

1 chest of So. Sea Islands cloth, breast-plates, and New Zeland clothes; 1 long box, or So. Sea Island chest, of sundry small articles; 1 cask'qt, a small carved box from New Zeland, full of several small articles from the same place; 1 drum, 1 wooden tray, 5 pillows, 2 scoops, 2 stone and 2 wooden axes, 2 cloth-beaters, 1 fish-hook, 3 carved images, and 8 paste-beaters, all from the So. Sea Islands; 5 wooden, 3 bone, and 4 stone patta pattows, and 5 buga bugaes, from New Zeland; 1 bundle of New Zeland weapons; 1 bundle of So. Sea Islands weapons; 1 bundle of New Holland fish gigs; 1 bundle of a head ornament worn at the Heivas at Ulietea.

---

CAPTAIN COOK TO CAPTAIN FURNEAUX.

By Captain James Cook, commander of his Majesty's sloop Resolution.

1772  
July 15.

AFTER having waited at the Cape of Good Hope the time limited by the rendezvous, viz., six weeks, you are hereby required and directed to put to sea with the sloop you command, and carry into execution, as far as in you lay, the enclosed instructions, which are an exact copy of those I have from their Lordships.

Furneaux's orders.

On all such land as you may discover in your rout to the southward, and can land thereon, you are to erect on the most conspicuous parts of the coast posts or marks, at the feet of which

In case of separation,

1772  
July 15.

to rendezvous  
in New Zealand.

Minerals.

leave letters in bottles, given an account of your proceedings, time you departed from thence, the rout you intend to take, and such other informations as you think necessary; and also, during your stay in any port or place, to hoist a St. George's ensign in the day, and make fires in the night and fire guns, or take such other method as your situation will admit, to point out to me the place where you are in case I should happen to be upon the coast at that time; but if you should fail of discovering land in your rout to the southward or westward, or the land you discover should be in so high a latitude that you cannot winter upon it—in either of these cases you are, as soon as the season of the year may render it unsafe for you to continue in high latitudes, to make the best of your way to Queen Charlotte's Sound, in New Zealand, where you are to remain untill the next season approaches for returning to the southward, taking care before you depart to leave directions in the manner above mentioned near the watering-place in Ship Cove; and if you should put into any port on the southern parts of New Zealand, either before you arrive at the above-mentioned Sound or after you depart from it, you will also make use of the fore-mentioned methods to point out the place where you are. It is recommended to you that while you are upon the southern parts of New Zealand to endeavour to procure specimens of the different stones you may find in the country, as an opinion has lately been started that some of them contain minerals or metal. If, after all, your endeavours to join me before you leave New Zealand should prove ineffectual, you will, nevertheless, continue to put in practise the same methods towards filiciating [*sic*] a meeting as you had done before, all of which I myself will put in execution in case I shall happen to be before you.

Given under my hand, on board his Majesty's sloop Resolution, at sea, this 15th of July, 1772. J. COOK.

1773  
March 28.

Precautions  
against scurvy.

Vegetable diet.

#### CAPTAIN COOK TO CAPTAIN FURNEAUX.

By Capt. James Cook, &c.

WHEREAS scurvey grass, sellery, and other vegetables are to be found in most uncultivated countrys, especially in New Zealand, and when boil'd with wheat or oatmeal, with a proper quantity of portable broth, makes a very wholesome and nourishing diet, and has been found to be of great use against all scorbutick complaints, which the crews of his Majesty's sloops Resolution and Adventure must in some degree have contracted after so long a continuance at sea, you are therefore hereby required and directed, whenever vegetables are to be got, to cause a

sufficient quantity to be boil'd with the usual allowance of wheat or oatmeal and portable broth every morning for breakfast for the company of his Majesty's sloop under your command, as well on meat days as on banyan days, and to continue the same so long as vegetables are to be got, or untill further order. Afterwards you are to continue to boil wheat or oatmeal for breakfast on Mondays, as directed by my order of the 6th of December last, but you are to discontinue to serve the additional half-allowance of spirit or wine mentioned in the said order.

Given under my hand, on board his Majesty's sloop Resolution, in Dusky Bay, this 28th day of March, 1773.\*

J. Cook.

1773  
March 28.

### CAPTAIN COOK TO CAPTAIN FURNEAUX.

By Capt. James Cook, &c.

June 4.

WHEREAS several months must elapse before his Majesty's sloop Resolution and Adventure can proceed on discoveries to the south, my intention therefore is to employ that time in exploring the unknown parts of the sea to the east and north, by first proceeding to the east, between the latitude of  $41^{\circ}$  and  $45^{\circ}$  south, untill I arrive in the longitude of  $140^{\circ}$  or  $135^{\circ}$  west of Greenwich. If in this rout I discover no land, then to proceed directly to the Island of Otahiete, where I intend to take in water and wood, refreshments as are to be got, afterwards to return back to this place by the shortest rout, and after taking in wood and water to proceed to the south, in order to explore the unknown parts of the sea between the meridian of New Zealand and Cape Horn. You are therefore hereby required and directed to put to sea, and proceed with me with his Majesty's sloop under your command; and in case of seperation by any unavoidable accident before we reach Otahiete, you are first to look for me in the same place you last saw me, and not meeting me in three days you are to proceed to Matavai Bay, in the Island of Otahiete, where you are to waite untill the 20th of August; if I do not arrive before that time then to put to sea, and make the best of your way back to this place, where you are to waite untill the 20th of November. Not being join'd by me by that time, you are to put to sea and carry into execution there Lordships' instructions.

Cook's  
programme.

The unknown  
sea to the east

and south.

Rendezvous  
at Otaheite.

Further orders.

Given under my hand, on board his Majesty's sloop Resolution, in Queen Charlotte's Sound, New Zealand, the 4th day of June, 1773.

J. Cook.

\* At the time this letter was written the Adventure was lying in Queen Charlotte's Sound. The ships had separated in a fog on the 8th February, 1773, near Kerguelen Island, and it was not until the 18th May, 1773, that they joined company again.

## CAPTAIN COOK TO CAPTAIN FURNEAUX.

By Capt. James Cook, &amp;c.

1773  
July 17.

The ration.

YOU are hereby required and directed to discontinue to serve to the company of his Majesty's sloop under your command the additional allowance of wheat or oatmeal on Mondays, as directed by my order of the 6th of December and 28th of March last.

Given under my hand, on board his Majesty's said sloop Resolution, at sea, this 17th of July, 1773.

J. Cook.

## CAPTAIN FURNEAUX TO SECRETARY STEPHENS.

1774  
April 5.Adventure, sloop, Cape Good Hope,  
5 April, 1774.

SIR,—

Furneaux at the  
Cape.The ships part  
company.

I avail myself of the opportunity by the Valantine, East Indiaman, of acquainting you, for their Lordships' information, that I arrived here the 18th of last month, with his Majesty's sloop under my command, and intends sailing for England as soon as the people are perfectly recovered, many of whom are in so weak and ematiated a state that I have been obliged to send them on shore for their more speedy recovery. I am sorry to acquaint their Lordships that I parted company with the Resolution\* in the night of the 29th of October last, off Cape Pallisser, on the coast of New Zealand, in a hard gale of wind, where we were baffled with strong northerly winds upwards of a fortnight, during which time the sails and rigging suffered so much, and the wind still continuing to blow hard in that quarter, I was obliged to bear away on the 6th of November for Tolaga Bay, on the North Island, to repair and refit them, and recruit the water; and on the 30th, after beating most of the way back, I at length gained Queen Charlotte's Sound, where

\* This was the second time the ships had parted company. The first occasion was on the 8th February, 1773, in a fog near Kerguelen Island. They did not meet until 18th May of the same year, at the winter quarters—Queen Charlotte's Sound, New Zealand. The second time, as stated here, they were separated in a gale, when near the southern entrance of Cook Strait. Furneaux's account of his movements after the separation of the ships, containing a detailed description of the circumstances attending the massacre of the boat's crew, will be found in Cook's *Voyage towards the South Pole*, vol. ii, pp. 251–64. Cook had not fixed upon any rendezvous, consequently, Furneaux had practically no chance of falling in with the Resolution. This, and the fact that his vessel was not in the most seaworthy condition, while his provisions were much damaged and a quantity completely spoilt, induced him to shape his course for the Cape of Good Hope, and then make the best of his way to England. Cook, however, continued his search for a southern continent during that and the following summer, and it was not until February, 1775, that he bore up for the Cape of Good Hope.



(by a memorandum sealed up in a bottle)\* I found Captain Cook had been and sailed from the 24th.

1774  
April 5.

By the 18th of December I got the ship ready for sea, and in the morning of that day sent the cutter up the Sound to gather a quantity of vegetables to carry to sea, with particular orders to the officer not to exceed three o'clock in his return to the ship. Not returning that evening, I suspected their safety, and next morning sent the launch, mann'd and armed, in search of them. At night the launch returned with some remains of the cutter's crew, who were all murdered by the Indians, and the greatest part eaten. I here insert a list of the names of the unhappy sufferers. For further particulars relative to the voyage I beg leave to defer acquainting their Lordships till our arrival in England. My proceedings therein I hope will meet with their Lordships' approbation.

Massacre of a  
boat's crew.

I have, &c.,

TOB'S FURNEAUX.

A list of the men killed by the Indians :—John Rowe, master's mate ; Tho's Woodhouse, midshipman ; Francis Muphy, q'r-master ; Ja's Tob's Swilley, Ab. ; Wm. Milton, Ab. ; Wm. Facey, Ab. ; Mich. Bell, Ab. ; Ja's Jones, Ab. ; Jn'o Cavanagh, Ab. ; Tho's Hill, Ab.

The victims.

#### CAPTAIN FURNEAUX TO SECRETARY STEPHENS.

1775

SIR,—

London, 18 March, 1775.

March 18.

On account of the extraordinary voyage I was sent on in his Majesty's sloop Adventure, I am under the necessity of troubling you to intercede in obtaining for me their Lordships' order for my being allow'd the provisions condemn'd on board her by surveys taken on ye same (after the customary time allow'd for surveys), particularly a quantity of bread which could not be got at in time, it being put into tight butts and stow'd in ye hold in the second teer on the coals for its more particular preservation till the latter part of the voyage ; the ground teer being stow'd with water, flesh, and other stores. In consequence of which the bread rec'd at Plymouth and the Cape of Good Hope, in June, July, and November, 1772, was

Condemned  
stores.

\* In his narrative of their proceedings in the Adventure, Furneaux thus describes this incident :—"On going ashore we discerned the place where she [the Resolution] had erected her tents ; and on an old stump of a tree in the garden observed these words cut out, 'Look underneath.' There we dug, and soon found a bottle corked and waxed down, with a letter in it from Captain Cook, signifying their arrival on the 3rd instant [November, 1773], and departure on the 24th, and that they intended spending a few days in the entrance of the straits looking for us."

1775  
March 18.

immediately expend'd, more especially as the last being rusk would not keep above three months.

Damaged bread.

On my return to New Zealand, the hold was broke up to get at the bread, which was found much damaged, and in order to preserve as much of it as possible it was pick'd and rebak'd, and what was condemn'd could not possibly be made fit for men to eat.

The bread rece'd on my return at the Cape of Good Hope was made use of for recovery and preservation of the health of my ship's company, as the English bread there remaining was exceeding bad, and in our passages thro' a warm climate made it unserviceable, tho' we used all possible means to preserve it.

The bread rece'd at Portsmouth was for the reasons aforesaid also expended.

And I humbly hope, for the several reasons aforesaid, their Lordships will be pleas'd to indulge me with their orders accordingly, which will greatly oblige,

Yours, &c.,  
TOB'S FURNEAUX.

#### CAPTAIN COOK TO SECRETARY STEPHENS.

Resolution, in Table Bay, Cape of Good Hope,  
22 March, 1775.

March 22.

SIR,—

Cook reports  
progress.

As Captain Furneaux must have inform'd you of my proceedings prior to our final separation, I shall confine this letter to my transactions afterwards. The Adventure not arriving in Queen Charlotte's Sound before the 26th of November,\* I put to sea, and after spending two days looking for her on the coast, I stood away to the south, inclining to the east. I met with little interruption from ice till we got into the latitude of 66°, where the sea was so covered with it that we could proceed no farther; we then steered to the east, inclining to the south, over a sea strewn with mountains of ice, and crossed the Antarctic Circle in the meridian of 146° west. After this I found it necessary to haul to the north, not only to get clear of the ice islands, which were very numerous, but to explore a large space of sea we had left nearly in the middle of the ocean in that direction. After getting to the latitude of 48°, I edged away to the east, and then again to the south, till we arrived in the latitude of 71° 10', longitude 106½° west; farther it was not possible to go, all the sea to the south being wholly covered with a solid sheet of ice, in which were ice mountains whose lofty summits were lost in the clouds. Hetherto we had not

The Antarctic  
Circle.

*Ultima Thule.*

\* Cook put to sea on the 24th November, 1773.

seen the least signs of land, or any one thing to encourage our researches; nevertheless, I did not think the Pacific Ocean sufficiently explored, and as I found we were in a condition to remain in it another year, I resolved to do it, and accordingly stood away to the north, and searched in vain for Juan Fernandez land.\* I was more successful with Easter Island, where I made a short stay, and next visited the Marquesas; from the Marquesas I proceeded to Otaheite and the Society Islands, where we were received with a hospitality altogether unknown among more civilized nations; these good people supplied all our wants with a liberal and full hand, and I found it necessary to spend six weeks with them. I left these isles on the 4th of June, proceeded to the west, touched at Rotterdam, stayed two or three days, and then continued our rout for Terra del Espiritu Santo of Quiros, which we made the 16th of July. I found this land to be composed of a large group of isles (many of them never seen by any European before) lying between the latitude of 14° and 20°, and nearly under the meridian of 168° east. The exploring these isles finished all I had intended to do within the tropic, accordingly I hauled to the south, intending to touch at New Zealand, but on the 4th of September, in the latitude of 20°, I fell in with a large country, which I called New Caledonia. I coasted the N.E. coast of this country, and partly determined the extent of the S.W. I found the whole so incompass'd with shoals that the risk we ran in exploring it was very great. We were at last blown off the coast, and as it was now time for us to return to the south, I was obliged to leave it unfinished, and to continue our route to Queen Charlotte's Sound, where we arrived on the 6th of October. I remain'd here refitting the sloop and refreshing my people till the 9th of November, when I put to sea, and proceeded directly for Terra del Fuego, but over such parts of the sea as I had not visited before. I choose

1775

March 22.

No signs of land.

Fernandez  
land.

South Sea Isles

The New  
Hebrides.

New Caledonia.

New Zealand.

\* Juan Fernandez, a Spanish pilot, was reported to have discovered, about the year 1576, a large continent (*gran tierra firme*), after a month's sail from the coast of Chile, "upon courses W. and S.W." The land was described as fertile and pleasant; the natives as white people, clothed in woven fabrics: while "on the coast were seen the mouths of very large rivers."—(Burney's *History of Discoveries in the South Seas*, vol. i, p. 300.) It was in the expectation of striking the coast of this *terra nondum cognita* that Cook, after penetrating over 30 miles within the Antarctic Circle, turned northwards to explore the South Pacific Ocean between the meridians of 110° and 90° west longitude, as far north as the latitude of 30° S. We now know that no such land exists, but in Cook's time this was not so; its existence was generally accepted, and it was regarded by Dalrymple—the most learned geographer of the day—as the western extremity of an extensive continent reaching eastward to Tasmania. Cook did not return from this voyage before he had set the vexed question of a southern continent for ever at rest.

1775  
March 22.  
Tierra del Fuego.

South Georgia.

Sandwich Land.

Cape Circumcision.

Steer for the Cape.

Gilbert's charts.

Hodges's paintings.

to make the west entrance of the Straits of Magalhanes that I might have it in my power to explore the S.W. and south coast of Terra del Fuego, which was accordingly done, as well as that of Staten Land. This last coast I left on the 3rd of January last, and on the 14th, in the latitude of  $54^{\circ}$ , longitude  $38^{\circ}$  west, we discovered a coast, which from the imense quantity of snow upon it, and the vast height of its mountains, we judged to belong to a great continent; but we found it to be an isle of no more than 70 or 80 leagues in circuit.\* After leaving this land I steered to S.E., and in  $59^{\circ}$  discovered another exceeding high and mountainous, and so buried in everlasting snow that it was necessary to be pretty near the shore to be satisfied that the foundation was not of the same composition. I coasted this land to the north, and found it to terminate in isles in that direction. These isles carried us insensibly from the coast, which we could not afterwards regain, so that I was obliged to leave it without being able to determine whether it belonged to a continent extending to the south, or was only a group of isles. Our thus meeting with land gave me reason to believe there was such a land as Cape Circumcision, so that I quited the horrid southern coast with less regret. But our second search for Cape Circumcision was attended with no better success than the first, and served only to assure us that no such land existed. At length, after having made the circuit of the globe, and nothing more remained to be done, the season of the year, and other circumstances, unnecessary, I presume, to mention, determined me to steer for the Cape of Good Hope, where I arrived on the date hereof, and found the Ceres, Captain Newte, bound directly for England, by whom I transmit this, together with an account of the proceedings of the whole voyage, and such surveys, views, and other drawings as have been made in it. The charts are partly constructed from my observations, and partly from Mr. Gilbert, my master, whose judgement and asseduity, in this as well as every other branch of his profession, is exceeded by none. The views are all by Mr. Hodges, and are so judiciously chosen and executed in so masterly a manner as will not only shew the judgement and skill of the artist, but will of themselves express their various designs; but these are not all the works of that indefatigable gentleman; there are several other views, portraits, and some valuable designs in oyl colours, which, for want of proper colours, time, and conveniences, cannot be finished till after our arrival in England. The other gentlemen whom Go-

\* Called by Cook, South Georgia. This island had (apparently unknown to Cook) been discovered by a Frenchman named Anthony de la Roche, in May, 1675. It had also been seen by another Frenchman, Guyot, in 1756.



vernment thought proper to send out have each contributed his share to the success of the voyage. I have received every assistance I could require from Mr. Wales, the astronomer. Mr. Kendal's watch has exceeded the expectations of its most jealous advocates, and by being now and then corrected by lunar observations has been our faithfull guide through all the vicissitudes of climates.

1775

March 22.

Mr. Wales.

In justice to my officers and crew, I must say they have gone through the dangers and fatigues of the voyage with the utmost constancy and cheerfulness; this, together with the great skill, care, and attention of Mr. Patten, the surgeon, has not a little contributed to that uninterrupted good state of health we have all along enjoyed, for it cannot be said that we have lost one man by sickness sence we left England. If I have failed in discovering a continent, it is because it does not exist in a navigable sea, and not for want of looking after. Insurmountable difficulties were the bounds to my researches to the south.

The officers and crew.

The southern continent.

Whoever has resolution and perseverance to find one beyond where I have been, I shall not envy him the honour of the discovery; but I will be bold to say that the world will not be benefited by it. My researches has not been confined to a continent alone, but to the isles and every other object that could contribute to finish the exploring the southern hemisphere. How far I may have succeeded I submit to their Lordships' better judgement, and am, &c.,

A thorough search.

JAM'S COOK.

---

CAPTAIN COOK TO MR. BANKS \* (Banks Papers).

1776

May 24.

Mile End, Friday, 24 May [1776].

CAPT. Cook presents his compliments to Mr. Banks, thanks him for his kind congratulations, and for the drawing of the New Zealand spruce. He will speak to Lord Sandwich to have it engraved, and, if his Lordship consents, will be obliged to Mr. Banks for a description.

New Zealand spruce.

Cap. Cook intends to be at the west end of the Town to-morrow morning, and thinks he could spare a few hours before dinner to sit for Mr. Dance, and will call upon him for that purpose about 11 or 12 o'clock. The stove which was in the Resolution was bought of Mr. Stephens, in or near the Poultry, on the side of the street next the river. It was supplied by the Navy Office, and when the cabbin was reduced at Sheerness it was returned into the store there, where probably it is now.

Cook's portrait.

\* The original of this letter is in the possession of the Government.

## CAPTAIN COOK'S SECRET INSTRUCTIONS.\*

1776  
July 6.

By the Commissioners for executing the office of Lord High Admiral of Great Britain and Ireland, &c.

Secret instructions for Captain James Cook, commander of his Majesty's sloop Resolution.

A northern  
passage.

Confidence in  
Cook.

WHEREAS the Earl of Sandwich has signified to us his Majesty's pleasure that an attempt should be made to find out a northern passage by sea from the Pacific to the Atlantic Oceans, and whereas we have in pursuance thereof caused his Majesty's sloops Resolution and Discovery to be fitted in all respects proper to proceed upon a voyage for the purpose above mentioned, and, from the experience we have had of your abilities and good conduct in your late voyages, have thought fit to entrust you with the conduct of the present intended voyage, and with that view appointed you to command the first-mentioned sloop, and directed Captain Clerke, who commands the other, to follow your orders for his further proceedings: You are hereby required and directed to proceed with the said two sloops directly to the Cape of Good Hope, unless you shall judge it necessary to stop at Madeira, the Cape de Verd, or Canary Islands. to take in wine for the use of their companies; in which case you are at liberty to do so, taking care to remain there no longer than may be necessary for that purpose.

To refresh at  
the Cape.

On your arrival at the Cape of Good Hope you are to refresh the ships' companies, and to cause the sloops to be supplied with as much provisions and water as they can conveniently stow.

Kerguelen  
Island.

You are, if possible, to leave the Cape of Good Hope by the end of October or the beginning of November next, and proceed to the southward in search of some island said to have been lately seen by the French in the latitude of 48° 00' south, and about the meridian of Mauritius. In case you find those islands, you are to examine them thoroughly for a good harbour, and upon discovering one make the necessary observations to facilitate the finding it again, as a good port in that situation may hereafter prove very useful, altho' it should afford little or nothing more than shelter, wood, and water. You are not, however, to spend too much time in looking out for those islands, or in the examination of them if found, but proceed to Otaheite or the Society Isles (touching at New Zealand in your way thither if you should judge it necessary and convenient), and taking care to arrive there time enough to admit of your giving the sloops' companies the refreshment they may stand in need of before you prosecute the farther object of these instructions.

Refresh at  
Otaheite.

\* These instructions, although published in the *Introduction to Cook's Voyage to the Pacific Ocean in 1776-80*, are reprinted here.

Upon your arrival at Otaheite, or the Society Isles, you are to land Omiah \* at such of them as he may chuse, and to leave him there.

1776  
July 6.

You are to distribute among the chiefs of those islands such part of the presents with which you have been supplied as you shall judge proper, reserving the remainder to distribute among the natives of the countries you may discover in the Northern Hemisphere; and having refreshed the people belonging to the sloops under your command, and taken on board such wood and water as they may respectively stand in need of, you are to leave those islands in the beginning of February, or sooner if you should judge it necessary, and then proceed in as direct a course as you can to the coast of New Albion,† endeavouring to fall in with it in the latitude of 45° 00' north, and taking care in your way thither not to lose any time in search of new lands, or stop at any you may fall in with, unless you find it necessary to recruit your wood and water.

\* Omiah, or Omai, as Captain Cook spelt the name, was a native of the island which Cook called Ulietea, but which is now known as Raiatea. It is one of the Society Group, and lies in latitude 16° 50' S., and longitude 151° 24' W. When Cook visited these islands in September, 1773, Captain Furneaux—who was in charge of the Adventure—allowed Omai, then a young man who had been despoiled of his property by neighbouring islanders, to remain on board his vessel. He was taken to England; and there, it is reported (*Cook's Voyage towards the South Pole*, vol i, p. 170), he “was caressed by many of the principal nobility,” but “did nothing to forfeit the esteem of any one of them.”

In the *Memoirs of the Colman Family*, vol. i, p. 358, *et seq.*, will be found a lively account from the pen of George Colman, the younger, of an expedition into the northern parts of England, with a party which included Sir Joseph Banks and Omai. The latter is described as being “dressed, while in England, in a reddish-brown coat and breeches, with a white waistcoat made in English manner, and in which he appeared perfectly easy.”

In October, 1777—*i.e.*, after four years' absence—Omai was landed at the island of Huaheine by Captain Cook, and an agreement made with the principal men of the island for a grant of land for his use.—(*Cook's Voyage to the Pacific Ocean*, vol. ii, p. 91, *et seq.*) The transport *Lady Penrhyn* touched at the island in 1788. Omai was then dead; and Captain Cook's fears, that the islanders would dispute his possession of the novelties he brought from England, proved to be too well-founded.

† New Albion (now California). Sir Francis Drake landed on this part of the western coast of North America in June, 1579, to refit, and took possession of it in the name of his Royal Mistress, Queen Elizabeth of England, “not without ardent wishes that this acquisition might be of use to his native country.” The territory appears to have been first visited by Cortez, in 1537.

The name New Albion was discarded by the Franciscan Friars, who settled there in 1767, in favour of California, compounded from the Spanish words *Caliente farnella* [“hot furnace”]—a name suggested by the climate.

1776  
July 6.

Foreign Powers.

You are also, in your way thither, strictly enjoined not to touch upon any part of the Spanish dominions on the western continent of America, unless driven thither by some unavoidable accident, in which case you are to stay no longer there than shall be absolutely necessary, and to be very careful not to give any umbrage or offence to any of the inhabitants or subjects of his Catholic Majesty. And if, in your farther progress to the northward, as hereafter directed, you find any subjects of any European prince or State upon any part of the coast you may think proper to visit, you are not to disturb them or give them any just cause of offence, but, on the contrary, to treat them with civility and friendship.

A northern  
passage.

Upon your arrival on the coast of New Albion you are to put into the first convenient port to recruit your wood and water and procure refreshments, and then to proceed northward along the coast as far as the latitude of  $65^{\circ}$ , or further if you are not obstructed by lands or ice, taking care not to lose any time in exploring rivers or inlets, or upon any other account, until you get into the before-mentioned latitude of  $65^{\circ}$ , where we could wish you to arrive in the month of June next. When you get that length you are very carefully to search for and to explore such rivers or inlets as may appear to be of a considerable extent and pointing towards Hudson's or Baffin's Bay; and if from your own observations, or from any information you may receive from the natives (who there is reason to believe are the same race of people and speak the same language, of which you are furnished with a vocabulary, as the Esquimaux), there shall appear to be a certainty, or even a probability, of a water passage into the afore-mentioned bays, or either of them, you are in such case to use your utmost endeavours to pass through one or both of the sloops, unless you shall be of opinion that the passage may be effected with more certainty or with greater probability by smaller vessels, in which case you are to set up the frames of one or both the small vessels with which you are provided; and when they are put together, and are properly fitted, stored, and victualled, you are to dispatch one or both of them under the care of proper officers, with a sufficient number of petty officers, men, and boats, in order to attempt the said passage, with such instructions for their rejoining you if they should fail, or for their farther proceedings if they should succeed in the attempt, as you shall judge most proper. But, nevertheless, should you find it more eligible to pursue other measures than those above pointed out in order to make a discovery of the before-mentioned passage (if any such there be), you are at liberty, and we leave it to your own discretion, to pursue such measures accordingly.

Discretionary  
powers.



In case you shall be satisfied that there is no passage through to the above-mentioned bays sufficient for the purposes of navigation, you are at the proper season of the year to repair to the port of St. Peter and St. Paul,\* in Kamtschatka, or wherever else you shall judge more proper, in further search of a north-east or north-west passage from the Pacific Ocean into the Atlantic Ocean or the North Sea; and if, from your own observation or any information which you may receive, there shall appear to be a probability of such a passage, you are to proceed as above directed; and having discovered such passage, or failed in the attempt, make the best of your way back to England by such routes as you may think best for the improvement of geography and navigation, repairing to Spithead with both sloops, where they are to remain till further order.

1776

July 6.

An alternative.

At whatever places you may touch in the course of your voyage, where accurate observations of the nature hereafter mentioned have not already been made, you are, as far as your time will allow, very carefully to observe the true situation of such places, both in latitude and longitude; the variation of the needle; bearing of headlands; height, direction, and course of the tydes and currents; depths and soundings of the sea; shoals, rocks, &c.; and also to survey, make charts, and take views of such bays, harbours, and different parts of the coast, and to make such notations thereon as may be useful either to navigation or commerce. You are also carefully to observe the nature of the soil and the produce thereof; the animals and fowls that inhabit or frequent it; the fishes that are to be found in the rivers or upon the coast, and in what plenty; and in case there are any peculiar to such places to describe them as minutely and to make as accurate drawings of them as you can; and if you find any metals, minerals, or valuable stones, or any extraneous fossils, you are to bring home specimens of each; and also of the seeds of such trees, shrubs, plants, fruits, and grains peculiar to those places as you may be able to collect, and to transmit them to our Secretary, that proper examination and experiments may be made of them. You are likewise to observe the genius, temper, disposition, and number of the natives and inhabitants where you find any—making them presents of such trinkets as you may have on board and they may like best—inviting them to traffick, and showing them every kind of civility and regard, but taking care, nevertheless, not to suffer yourself to be surprized by them, but to be always on your guard against any accidents.

Observations to be made.

Magnetic variation, tides and currents.

Natural products.

Minerals.

Ethnology.

\* Petropaulovski.

1776  
 July 6.  
 Annexation.

You are also, with the consent of the natives, to take possession in the name of the King of Great Britain, of convenient situations in such countries as you may discover, that have not already been discovered or visited by any other European Power, and to distribute among the inhabitants such things as will remain as traces and testimonies of your having been there; but if you find the countries so discovered are uninhabited, you are to take possession of them for his Majesty by setting up proper marks and inscriptions as first discoverers and possessors.

Discretionary  
 powers.

But for as much as in undertakings of this nature several emergencies may arise not to be foreseen, and, therefore, not particularly to be provided for by instructions beforehand, you are in all such cases to proceed as you shall judge most advantageous to the service on which you are employed.

To report  
 progress.

You are by all opportunities to send to our Secretary, for our information, accounts of your proceedings, and copies of the surveys and drawings you shall have made; and upon your arrival in England you are immediately to repair to this office in order to lay before us a full account of your proceedings in the whole course of your voyage, taking care before you leave the sloops to demand from the officers and petty officers the log-books and journals they may have kept, and to send them up for our inspection, and enjoining them and the whole crew not to devulge where they have been until they shall have permission so to do. And you are to direct Capt'n Clerke to do the same with respect to the officers and petty officers and crew of the Discovery.

How to act in  
 case of accident.

If any accident should happen to the Resolution in the course of the voyage so as to disable her from proceeding any further, you are, in such case, to remove yourself and her crew into the Discovery, and to prosecute your voyage in her, her commander being hereby strictly required to receive you on board, and to obey your orders the same in every respect as when you were actually on board the Resolution; and in case of your inability by sickness or otherwise to carry these instructions into execution, you are to be careful to leave them with the next officer in command, who is hereby required to execute them in the best manner he can.

Given under our hands, the 6th day of July, 1776.

SANDWICH.

By command of their Lordships,

SPENCER.

H. PALLISER.

CAPTAIN COOK TO MR. BANKS\* (Banks Papers).

DEAR SIR,—

Plymouth Sound, 10 July, 1776.

1776

July 10.

As you was so obliging as to say you would give a description of the New Zealand spruce tree, or any other plant, the drawing of which might accompany my journal, I desired Mr. Strahan and Mr. Stuart, who have the charge of the publication, to give you extracts out of the manuscript of such descriptions as I had given (if any), for you to correct or describe yourself, as may be most agreeable. I know not what Plates Mr. Forster may have got engraved of natural history that will come into my books; nor do I know of any that will be of use to it but the spruce tree and tea plant and scurvey grass, and I know not if this last is engraved. The flax-plant is engraved, but whether the publishing of this in my journal will be of any use to seamen I shall not determin. In short, whatever plates of this kind falls to my share I shall hope for your kind assistance in giving some short account of them. On my arrival here I gave Omai three guineas, which sent him on shore in high spirits; indeed, he could hardly be otherwise, for he is very much carressed here by every person of note, and upon the whole I think he rejoices at the prospect of going home.

Botanical descriptions.

Cook's publications.

The flax-plant.

Omai.

I now only wait for a wind to put to sea. Unless C. Clerke makes good haste down he will have to follow me. S'r Jno. Pringle writes me that the Council of the Royal Society have decreed me the prize medal of this year. I am obliged to you and my other good friends for this unmerited honor.

Cook's modesty.

Omai joins his best respects to you and Dr. Solander with

Your, &amp;c.,

JAM'S COOK.

CAPTAIN COOK TO SECRETARY STEPHENS.

SIR,—

20 October, 1778.

1778

Oct. 20.

Having accidentally met with some Russians,† who have promised to put this in a way of being sent to Petersburg, and as I neither have nor intend to visit Kamtschatka as yet, I

Obliging Russians.

\* The original of this letter is in the possession of the Government.

† According to Cook's published account, "Mr. Ismyloff," a Russian, described as the principal person amongst his countrymen in Oonalashka and the neighbouring islands, agreed to take charge of this letter, together with certain charts, and to send them to Kamtschatka or to Okotsk the ensuing spring, stating at the same time that he would be at St. Petersburg in the following winter.—(*A Voyage to the Pacific Ocean*, vol. ii, p. 506.) He is apparently identical with the Captain Ishmyloff appointed to succeed Major Behm.

|                        |   |
|------------------------|---|
| 1778<br>Oct. 20.       | take this opportunity to give their Lordships a short account of my proceedings from leaving the Cape of Good Hope to this time.  |
| Cook's<br>movements.   | After leaving the Cape, I, pursuant to their Lordships' instructions, visited the island lately seen by the French,* situated between the latitude of $48^{\circ} 40'$ and $50^{\circ}$ south, and in the longitude of $69\frac{1}{2}^{\circ}$ E't. These islands abounds with good harbours and fresh water, but produceth neither tree nor shrub, and but very little of any other kind of vegetation. After spending five days on the coast thereof, I quitted it on the 30th of December; just touched at Van Diemen's Land; arrived at Queen Charlotte's Sound, in New Zealand, the 13th February, 1777; left it again on the 25th, and pushed for Otaheite. I found that the Spaniards from Callao had been twice at this island from the time of my leaving it in 1774. The first time they came they left behind them, designedly, four Spaniards, who remained upon the island about ten months; but were all gone some time before my arrival. They had also brought to and left on the island, goats, hogs, and dogs, one bull and a ram, but never a female of either of these species, so that those I carried and put on shore there were highly acceptable. These consisted of a bull and three cows, a ram and five ewes, besides poultry of four sorts, and a horse and mare, with Omai. At the Friendly Isles I left a bull and cow, a horse and mare, and some sheep, in which I flatter myself that the laudable intentions of the King and their Lordships have been fully answered. |
| Live stock.            | I left Omai at Huaheine; quitted the Society Isles the 9th of December; proceeded to the north, and in the latitude of $22^{\circ}$ No., longitude $200^{\circ}$ east, fell in with a group of islands, inhabited by the same nation as Otaheite, and abounding with hogs and roots.† After a short stay at these islands, continued our rout for the coast of America, which we made on the 7th of last March,‡ and on the 29th, after enduring several storms, got into a port in the latitude of $49\frac{1}{2}^{\circ}$ north.§ At this place, besides taking in  |
| The Friendly<br>Isles. |   |
| Omai.                  |   |
| Sandwich<br>Islands.   |   |
| Nootka Sound.          |   |

\* Kerguelen Island.

† The Sandwich Islands, so named by Cook in honour of the Earl of Sandwich, First Lord of the Admiralty. They were discovered at daybreak on the morning of the 18th January, 1778. It is an open question whether these islands had not been visited by Europeans at a very early period; but there can be no doubt but that, even if such was the case, all knowledge of their existence, certainly of their locality, had been long since lost; consequently, whichever view is taken of the matter, the credit accruing to Cook remains the same. The whole question is discussed at length in Jarves's *History of the Hawaiian Islands*.

‡ The coast of America was made in latitude  $44^{\circ} 33' N$ .

§ This port Cook called King George's Sound. He, however, mentions that the native name was Nootka, by which it has since been generally known. It is situated on the western coast of Vancouver Island.



wood and water, the Resolution was supplied with a new mizen-mast, fore-topmast, and her foremast got out and repaired.

1778  
Oct. 20.

I put to sea again the 26th of April, and was no sooner out of port than we were attacked by a violent storm, which was the occasion of so much of the coast being passed unseen. In this gale the Resolution sprung a leak, which obliged me to put into a port in the latitude of  $61^{\circ}$ , longitude  $213^{\circ}$  east. In a few days I was again at sea, and soon found we were on a coast where every step was to be considered, where no information could be had from maps, either modern or ancient; confiding too much in the former, we were frequently misled, to our no small hinderence.

A storm at sea.

On an extensive coast altogether unknown, it may be thought needless to say that we met with many obstacles before we got through the narrow strait that divides Asia from America, where the coast of the latter takes a N.E. direction. I followed it, flattered with the hopes of having at last overcome all difficulties, when, on the 17th of August, in the latitude  $70^{\circ} 45'$ , longitude  $198^{\circ}$  east, we were stopped by an impenetrable body of ice, and had so far advanced between it and the land before we discovered it that little was wanting to force us on shore.

Behring Strait.

Baffled by the ice.

Finding I could no longer proceed along the coast, I tried what could be done farther out, but the same obstacle everywhere presented itself quite over to the coast of Asia, which we made on the 29th of the same month, in the latitude of  $68^{\circ} 55'$ , longitude  $180\frac{1}{2}^{\circ}$  east. As frost and snow, the forerunners of winter, began to set in, it was thought too late in the season to make a farther attempt for a passage this year in any direction; I therefore steered to the S.E., along the coast of Asia, passed the strait above mentioned, and then stood over for the America coast, to clear some doubts, and to search, but in vain, for a harbour to compleat our wood and water. Wood is a very scarce

Frost and snow.

Steer southwards.

article in all these northern parts, except in one place there is none upon the sea-coast but what is thrown ashore by the sea, some of which we got on board, and then proceeded to this place, where we had been before to take in water. From hence I intend to proceed to Sandwich Islands,\* that is those discovered in  $22^{\circ}$  north latitude; after refreshing there, returned to the north by the way of Kamtschatka, and the ensuing summer make another and final attempt to find a northern passage, but I must confess I have little hopes of succeeding—ice, though an obstacle not easily surmounted, is perhaps not the only one in the way. The coasts of the two continents is flat for some distance off, and even in the middle between the two the depth of water is inconsider-

Winter at the islands.

The summer campaign.

\* Cook proceeded to the Sandwich Islands, and it was while there that he was massacred.

1778  
Oct. 20.  
A polar  
continent.

able; this and some other circumstances all tending to prove that there is more land in the frozen sea than as yet we know of where the ice has its source, and that the polar part is far from being an open sea.

Dearth of  
harbours.

There is another discouraging circumstance attending the navigating these northern parts, and that is the want of harbours where a ship can occasionally retire to secure herself from the ice, or repair any damage she may have sustained. For a more particular description of the America coast I beg leave to refer to the enclosed chart, which is hastily copied from an original of the same scale.

An active spirit.

A healthy crew.

The reason of my not going to the harbour of St. Peter and St. Paul, in Kamtschatka, to spend the winter, is the great dislike I have to lay inactive for six or eight months, while so large a part of the Northern Pacific Ocean remains unexplored, and the state and condition of the ships will allow me to be moving. Sickness has been little felt in the ships, and scurvy not at all. I have, however, had the misfortune to lose Mr. Anderson, my surgeon, who died of a lingering consumption two months ago, and one man some time before of the dropsey, and Captain Clerke had one drowned by accident, which are all we have lost since we left the Cape of Good Hope.

Stores and  
provisions.

Stores and provisions we have enough for twelve months, and longer without a supply of both will hardly be possible for us to remain in these seas, but whatever time we do remain shall be spent in the improvement of geography and navigation by

Yours, &c.,

JAMES COOK.

1779  
Dec. 15-26.

MR. PALLAS \* TO MR. PENNANT † (Banks Papers).

DEAR SIR,—

S. Petersburg, 15-26 Dec., 1779.

Report of  
Cook's death.

In a letter sent by last post I desired Mr. Banks to let you know of the unhappy fate of Capt'n Cook, the circumstances of which I related to him from a French extract I had then read. Since that time S'r James Harris did me the favour to let me

\* Pallas, Peter Simon. A celebrated German scientist attached to the Russian Court. Professor of Natural History in the Imperial Academy of Sciences at St. Petersburg, and author of several standard scientific works.

† Pennant, Thomas. An English Naturalist and Antiquary. The friend of Linnæus and Buffon, and a most voluminous writer. From the frequent acknowledgments he makes in his published works, of the obligations he was under to Pallas, it is evident that they were regular correspondents. The above letter was no doubt communicated by Pennant to Sir Joseph Banks, to whom, as a fellow-voyager of Cook, and President of the Royal Society, it would be doubly interesting.

look over the original letters of Capt'n Cook and Capt'n Clarke, his second in command, which have been delivered to him last week, and from these I can now give you a more faultless and circumstantial account.

1779  
Dec. 15-26.

C't. Cook after having left the Cape of G.H., went to look after the new islands lately discovered, to the south of the Cape, by the French under Kerguelim.\* He found them low, uninhabited, and destitute of either tree or shrub; a poor vegetation and some turtle is all it affords. From thence he past by Van Diemen's Land and New Zealand, and pushed for Otaheitee. He found at his arrival there in August that since his last voyage the Spaniards had been there twice from Callao, and some of those that came first had stay'd on purpose on the island, but had been gone with the second comers some time before the Captain's arrival. The Spaniards had left a bull, a ram, and some poultry, but all males; thus Cap'n Cook's leaving several heads of domestic animals there proved very acceptable. Omiah was left at Oahine in good health, and several heads of cattle with him. Some more were distributed among the Friendly and Society Islands. About the end of the year C. Cook sailed to the northward. He discovered in longitude 200° from your Merid. of Greenwich, a little to the north of the Tropik, an island, which he called I. Sandwich, and near which more others seemed to lye scattered to the eastward.† He made the coast of America in March, and having much suffered in masts and rigging by the heavy storms he met in the northern hemisphere, he entered a harbour which he found a little to the north of that spot where in maps you will find the entry of Aguilas.‡ Having renewed the masts of the Resolution he stood out to sea, but met again with such continual squalls as made it impossible to observe any part of the coast till he came to anchor in a bay which by its longit. and latitude coincides with Cape Elias, where Capt'n Bering had a sight of America, and lay some hours at anchor. After some repairs in that bay, Cook steered along the coast of America, of which he made a close survey and found many mistakes of former maps, which all the way had frequently misled him. He arrived at last to the streight which divides the two continents, but his letter gives neither latitude nor longit. Having past it he found the coast of America stretching to the N.E., so he followed it as

Kerguelen  
Island.

Otaheite.

Omai

Sandwich  
Islands.

Nootka Sound.

Behring Straits.

\* M. De Kerguelen.

† The credit of discovering these islands has been denied Cook by many writers. See *The History of the Hawaiian Islands*, Jarves, p. 98, where the whole question is discussed.

‡ The harbour referred to is Nootka Sound, on the west coast of Vancouver's Island. Cook called it King George's Sound, but the native name "Nootka" is almost universally used.

1779  
Dec. 15-26.  
—

A wall of ice.

Siberia.

Cook's letter.

Winter at the Islands.

close as possible, not doubting but that he had found the wished-for passage. But being arrived (it was in August) in latit.  $70^{\circ} 41'$ , longit.  $198^{\circ}$ , he was so suddenly beset by the ice that he ran risk of being hemmed in and forced to shore by it. However, with some trouble he got clear, and finding all round to the north the sea walled up by the ice, and many reasons to convince him of the existence of some continent lying towards the Pole, which furnishes and fixes the ice, he went on to the west to try what chance he could have on the side of Siberia, the coast of which he made in lat.  $68^{\circ} 55'$ , longit.  $180\frac{1}{2}^{\circ}$  from Greenwich. Finding there no more passage than the other way he returned to the streights, remarking by the way that both continents present these quarters a low and bare country, and that the sea between them and north of the strait is not deep. On his return, C. Cook lay at the harbour of Unalashka, which island he places in  $53^{\circ} 55'$  lat. and  $192^{\circ} 30'$  longit., thus more southerly and westerly than any Russian map of account. There he delivered the letter which has been received from Ct. Cook's hand to a Russian crew which he met on the same island. It is dated in October, 1778. He mentions at the close of it that he lost during his whole absence only the surgeon of the Resolution and two men, one belonging to the Discovery having been drowned, the other died of a dropsy. He also exposes his intention of returning during winter to Sandwich Island, not to remain unactive during a long wintering in Kamtshatka, and his proposed return to the north for another tryal next year.

Thus far the celebrated Capt'n Cook's letter. Another letter from Capt'n Clarke came along with it from Kamtshatka and continues the account. Capt'n Cook found his supposition of more islands lying to the east of Sandwich I. to be true. He discovered several more, the names and number I cannot recollect, but all very luxuriant and populous, and the inhabitants of the same nation w't the people of Otaheitee. In one of these islands called by the inhabitants O-why-he anchored in a bay and stay'd two months in that harbour, which bears the name of Cara-cacossa.\* The people received him very sociably, and used to pay him a kind of worship more fit for a Divinity than man. His crew was plentifully supplied with hogs, yams, plantains, and other refreshments. He had just left the harbour when a heavy gale worsted his foremast, and obliged him to return to it again to repair. He had the carpenter and his observatory landed, and thought no harm. But the islanders now grew more thievish than they had ever been before, and at last the cutter belonging

\* Cook spelt this Karakakooa.



to the Discovery was stole from the buoy on which it was moored. Capt'n Cook next day went on shore with his lieutenant\* and nine garde-marines to the place where the chief of the isle, Tere-ooob, resided. He was received by the people with their usual veneration, but found a great mob assembled about the chief. During his compliments some of the bystanders grew insolent, and one fellow at last became it to such a degree that C. Cook fired at him with small shot, and tho' the fellow received no hurt thro' the mat he had thrown about him, yet a murmuring pervaded the whole mob, and as some hostilities began from their side the lieutenant fired and killed a man, on which, instead of flight, the attack became general, and tho' the garde-marines fired with effect no time was given them to reload their pieces. In this fray Capt. Cook was unfortunately killed at the first onset, with four of his people. The lieutenant, with the remainder, mostly wounded, retired with difficulty, whilst the firing from the pinnace and long-boat, which lay near shore, kept the enemy at some distance. Capt. Clerke, to whom the command devolved, saw no means of revenging, without considerable loss, the death of his brave countryman, the islanders being a numerous and it seemed a warlike set of people, and having stone walls for their defence on the hills. Thus he kept on the defensive and got all things on board, where he continued repairing, whilst the islanders most heartily sued for peace. In the middle of March he left this unlucky island, O-why-he, and stood to the north, where he met with very heavy gales, and brought the Resolution, which had sprung a leak and received other damage with the gale, into the harbour of Awatcha or S. Peter and S. Paul. At the end of April this year, having damages to repair, and winter still continuing in these quarters, Capt. Clarke made his arrival known to the commander of Kamtschatka, Major Behm, who came himself down to Avatsha, supplied him with cattle and all other kind of provisions that was in his power, and shewed all possible benevolence to serve him. The 4th June, when his letter was dated, Capt. Clerke was ready for sea, intended to make another tryal to the northward to survey the islands, then to call again if necessary at Kamtschatka, and lastly to return home any way. As Major Behm is expected here this winter, and carries with him the Resolution's log-book and a chart sent by Capt. Cook, you may expect some more account respecting America and the streights, if I should be favoured with a sight of these.

1779

Dec. 15-26.

The natives  
insolent.Cook killed  
in the fray.Clerke in  
command.Steers for the  
north.

Major Behm.

A final  
attempt.

\* The lieutenant of marines, Mr. Molesworth Philips.

## JAMES MARIA MATRA'S PROPOSAL.

|                                    |   |
|------------------------------------|---|
| 1783<br>Aug. 23.                   | A PROPOSAL FOR ESTABLISHING A SETTLEMENT IN NEW SOUTH WALES.  |
| Loss of America.                   | I AM going to offer an object to the consideration of our Government what [that] may in time atone for the loss of our American colonies.   |
| New fields of colonisation.        | By the discoveries and enterprise of our officers, many new countries have been found which know no sovereign, and that hold out the most enticing allurements to European adventurers. None are more inviting than New South Wales.  |
| Cook's account of New South Wales. | Capt. Cook first coasted and surveyed the eastern side of that fine country, from the 38th degree of south latitude down to the 10th, where he found everything to induce him to give the most favourable account of it. In this immense tract of more than 2,000 miles there was every variety of soil, and great parts of it were extremely fertile, peopled only by a few black inhabitants, who, in the rudest state of society, knew no other arts than such as were necessary to their mere animal existence, and which was almost entirely sustained by catching fish.   |
| Climate and soil.                  | The climate and soil are so happily adapted to produce every various and valuable production of Europe, and of both the Indies, that with good management, and a few settlers, in twenty or thirty years they might cause a revolution in the whole system of European commerce, and secure to England a monopoly of some part of it, and a very large share in the whole.  |
| Tropical products.                 | Part of it lies in a climate parallel to the Spice Islands, and is fitted for the production of that valuable commodity, as well as the sugar-cane, tea, coffee, silk, cotton, indigo, tobacco, and the other articles of commerce that have been so advantageous to the maritime powers of Europe.   |
| Flax.                              | I must not omit the mention of a very important article, which may be obtained in any quantity, if this settlement be made the proper use of, which would be of very considerable consequence, both among the necessaries and conveniences of life. I mean the New Zealand hemp or flax plant, an object equally of curiosity and utility. By proper operations it would serve the various purposes of hemp, flax, and silk, and it is more easily manufactured than any one of them. In naval equipments it would be of the greatest importance; a cable of the circumference of ten inches would be equal in strength to one of eighteen inches made of European hemp. Our manufacturers are of opinion that canvas |

made of it would be superior in strength and beauty to any canvas of our own country. The threads or filaments of this plant are formed by nature with the most exquisite delicacy, and they may be so minutely divided as to be small enough to make the finest cambric; in color and gloss it resembles silk. After my true, though imperfect description of this plant I need not enlarge on it, as a very singular acquisition, both to the arts of convenience and luxury.

1783

Aug. 23.

Its capabilities  
for manufacture.

This country may afford an asylum to those unfortunate American loyalists to whom Great Britain is bound by every tie of honour and gratitude to protect and support, where they may repair their broken fortunes, and again enjoy their former domestic felicity.

The American  
loyalists.

That the Government may run no risque nor be left to act in a business of this kind without sufficient information, it is proposed that one ship of the peace establishment (to incur the least possible expence) be directly sent to that country, for the discovery and allotment of a proper district, for the intended settlement; that one or two gentlemen of capacity and knowledge, as well in soil and situation, as in every other requisite, be sent in her, that there may be no imposition on the Government, nor upon the Americans, who, with their families, shall adventure there.

Send a ship to  
investigate.

If the Government be disposed to extend this plan, two vessels may be sent with two companies of marines, selected from among such of that corps as best understand husbandry, or manufactures, and about twenty artificers, who are all the emigration required from the parent State; these last to be chiefly such as are taken on board ships of war for carpenters' and armourers' crews, with a few potters and gardeners.

Or two ships  
with marines  
and artificers.

These twenty men and the marines, under a proper person, to be left at the new settlement, with materials and provisions, to prepare for the reception of the intended settlers, that their wants may be as few as possible on their arrival.

As the ship, or ships, stop at the Cape of Good Hope, a sufficient stock to begin with of cows, sheep, goats, hogs, poultry, and seeds may be obtained there. A supply of the like articles, as well as cotton seeds, plantains, grapes, grain, &c., &c., may be had in any quantity at Savu or any of the Moluccas, which are very near New South Wales.

Live-stock and  
plants.

When the landing is effected the smaller vessel may be dispatched home with the intelligence; and while the party designed to be left are superintending the gardens and increase of live stock, the other ship may, if thought proper, be despatched to New Caledonia, Otaheite, and the neighbouring islands to procure a few families there, and as many women as may serve for the men left

One ship to  
return.

The other to be  
sent to the  
islands.

|                                      |  |
|--------------------------------------|--|
| 1783<br>Aug. 23.<br>—                | <p>behind. There is every reason to believe they may be obtained without difficulty. If but one vessel goes, the party with their stock may be left without apprehension of danger from the natives.</p> <p>Sir Joseph Banks is of opinion that we may draw any number of useful inhabitants from China, agreeably to an invariable custom of the Dutch in forming or recruiting their Eastern settlements.</p> <p>As it is intended not to involve the Government in either a great or a useless expence (for the settlement is designed to increase the wealth of the parent country, as well as for the emolument of the adventurers), a sum not exceeding £3,000 will be more than adequate to the whole expence of Government. Most of the tools, saws, axes, &amp;c., &amp;c., for the use of the party left may be drawn from the ordnance and other public stores, where at present they are useless; and the vessels also, being part of the peace establishment, neither can, nor ought to be, fairly reckoned in the expenditure.</p> <p>That the Ministry may be convinced that this is not a vain, idle scheme, taken up without due attention and consideration, they may be assured that the matter has been seriously considered by some of the most intelligent and candid Americans, who all agree that, under the patronage and protection of Government, it offers the most favourable prospects that have yet occurred to better the fortunes and to promote the happiness of their fellow-sufferers and countrymen.</p> <p>Sir Joseph Banks highly approves of the settlement, and is very ready to give his opinion of it, either to his Majesty's Ministry or others, whenever they may please to require it.</p> <p>Should this settlement be made, we may enter into a commerce that would render our trade to China, hitherto extremely against us, very favourable. The Aleutian and Foxes islands, situated between Asia and America, which abound with the choicest furs, lie nearly north of New South Wales. It is from these islands the Russians get the most and best of their furs, with which they carry on a very lucrative trade by land with the Chinese. Our ships that sailed under the command of Captain Cook and Clerke stopped at some of them, and the skins which they procured then sold in China at 400 hard dollars each, though for the few they brought home, of the same quality, they only received about ten pounds each. As our situation in New South Wales would enable us to carry on this trade with the utmost facility, we should be no longer under the necessity of sending such immense quantities of silver for the different articles we import from the Chinese Empire.</p> |
| Banks recommends Chinese.            |  |
| Probable expense.                    |  |
| Scheme approved of by the Americans, |  |
| and by Banks.                        |  |
| Trade with China.                    |  |
| Trade with China and the islands.    |  |



There is also a prospect of considerably extending our woollen trade. We know that large quantities of woollen cloth are smuggled to Japan by the Russians, which, as it is taken by land carriage from St. Petersburg to Kamschatka, and then to the islands by a very precarious navigation in boats, must be extremely dear. The Japanese, however, go in their junks to the islands and purchase great quantities of it.

1783  
Aug. 23.

Woollen trade  
with Japan.

The peninsula of Korea, a kingdom tributary to the Chinese, and unvisited by Europeans, has its supply at second-hand chiefly from the Japanese. No ship has ever attempted this commerce, excepting once or twice that the Spaniards ventured thither from their American dominions; but as the inhabitants of New Spain are but indifferent navigators for the high, cold latitudes, they could not oftener repeat the enterprise.

It may be seen by Captain Cook's voyage that New Zealand is covered with timber of size and every quality that indicates long duration; it grows close to the water's edge, and may be easily obtained. Would it not be worth while for such as may be dispatched to New South Wales to take in some of this timber on their return, for the use of the King's yards? As the two countries are within a fortnight's run of each other, and as we might be of the utmost service to the New Zealanders, I think it highly probable that this plan might become eminently useful to us as a naval power, especially as we might thus procure masts, a single tree of which would be large enough for a first-rate ship, and planks superior to any that Europe possesses.

New Zealand  
timber for  
shipping.

By the preliminary articles of peace with Holland we are entitled to a free navigation in the Molucca Seas. Without a settlement in the neighbourhood, the concession is useless; for the Dutch have an agent almost on every island in those seas. If we have a settlement, it is unnecessary; for as spices are the only articles we could expect by it, it is probable we should stand in no need of their indulgence, for as part of New South Wales lies in the same latitude with the Moluccas, and is even very close to them, there is every reason to suppose that what nature has so bountifully bestowed on the small islands may also be found on the larger. But if, contrary to analogy, it should not be so, the defect is easily supplied, for, as the seeds are procured without difficulty, any quantity may speedily be cultivated.

The trade in  
spices.

Spices may be  
cultivated.

To those who are alarmed at the idea of weakening the mother country by opening a channel for emigration, I must answer that it is more profitable that a part of our countrymen should go to a new abode, where they may be useful to us, than to the American States. If we cannot keep our subjects at home, it is sound policy to point out a road by following of which they may add to the national strength.

Emigration  
policy.

|   |  |
|---|--|
| 1783<br>Aug. 23.<br>Value of a naval station. | <p>The place which New South Wales holds on our globe might give it a very commanding influence in the policy of Europe. If a colony from Britain was established in that large tract of country, and if we were at war with Holland or Spain, we might very powerfully annoy either State from our new settlement. We might, with a safe and expeditious voyage, make naval incursions on Java and the other Dutch settlements; and we might with equal facility invade the coast of Spanish America, and intercept the Manilla ships, laden with the treasures of the west. This check which New South Wales would be in time of war on both those powers makes it a very important object when we view it in the chart of the world with a political eye.</p>   |
| Banks's opinion entitled to attention.        | <p>Sir Joseph Banks' high approbation of the scheme which I have here proposed deserves the most respectful attention of every sensible, liberal, and spirited individual amongst his countrymen. The language of encomium, applied to this gentleman, would surely be inequitably censured as the language of adulation. To spurn the alluring pleasures which fortune procures in a frivolous and luxurious age, and to encounter extreme difficulties and dangers in pursuit of discoveries, which are of great benefit to mankind, is a complicated and illustrious event, as useful as it is rare, and which calls for the warmest publick gratitude and esteem.</p>  |
| Colonisation.                                 | <p>I shall take this opportunity to make a remark on colonisation which has not occurred to me in any author, and which I flatter myself will contain some important civil and political truth.</p>  |
| Depopulation theory.                          | <p>Too great a diminution of inhabitants of the mother country is commonly apprehended from voluntary emigration—an apprehension which seems to me not to be the result of mature reflexion. That we almost universally have a strong affection for our native soil is an observation as true as it is old. It is founded on the affections of human nature. Not only a Swiss, but even</p>  |
| Love of country.                              | <p>an Icelander, when he is abroad, sickens and languishes in his absence from his native country; therefore, few of any country will ever think of settling in any foreign part of the world, from a restless mind and from romantic views. A man's affairs are generally in a very distressed, in a desperate situation when he resolves to take a long adieu of his native soil, and of connections which must be always dear to him. Hence a body of emigrants, nay a numerous body of emigrants, may in a commercial view be of great and permanent service to their parent community in some remote part of the world, who, if they continue at home, will probably live to see their own ruin, and will be very prejudicial to society. The politician of an expanded mind reasons from the almost invariable actions of human nature. The doc-</p> |
| Poverty the source of emigration and crime.   |  |

trine of the petty statesman is hardly applicable to a larger extent than that of his own closet. When our circumstances are adverse in the extreme they very often produce illegal and rapacious conduct. If a poor man of broken fortunes and of any pretensions be timid in his nature, he most probably becomes a useless, if he has an ardent spirit, he becomes a bad and a criminal, citizen. There are indeed some epochs in a State when emigrations from it may be too numerous; but when from some calamitous and urgent publick cause it must be unworthy of inhabitants.

1783  
Aug. 23.

JAMES M. MATRA.

August 23rd, 1783.

When I conversed with Lord Sydney on this subject it was observed that New South Wales would be a very proper region for the reception of criminals condemned to transportation. I believe that it will be found that in this idea good policy and humanity are united. Sydney's opinion.

It will here be very pertinent to my purpose to give an extract from the report of the committee appointed to consider the several returns relative to goals [gaols].\* Report on gaols.

1st Resolution :—"That the plan of establishing a colony or colonies in some distant part of the globe, and in new discovered countries, where the climate is healthy, and where the means of support are attainable, is equally agreeable to the dictates of humanity and sound policy, and might prove in the result advantageous to navigation and commerce." Colonisation recommended.

2d. Resolution :—"That it is the opinion of this committee that it might be of publick utility if the laws which now direct and authorize the transportation of certain convicts to his Majesty's colonies and plantations in N. America were made to authorize the same to any part of the globe that may be found expedient." Convicts should be sent out to form colonies.

The following facts will particularly corroborate the second resolution :—

Seven hundred and forty-six convicts were sent to Africa from the year 1775 to 1776. The concise account of them given into the committee exhibits an alarming expenditure of human life. 334 died, 271 deserted to no one knows where, and of the remainder no account could be given. Governor O'Hara, who had resided in Africa many years, was of opinion that British convicts could not for any time exist in that climate. Transportation to Africa.

The estimate of the expence, given in by Mr. Roberts, necessary to establish a settlement there, to receive them, amounted Expense of settlement in Africa.

\* Committee of the House of Commons, appointed in 1777.

1783  
Aug. 23.

to £9,865. Afterwards the annual charge to the publick for each convict would be about £15 14s. Government pays annually to the contractor for each convict who is employed in the hulks £26 15s. 10d. The annual work of each man is valued at a third of the expence.

Cost of convicts  
at home.

I am informed that in some years more than 1,000 felons are convicted, many of whom are under 18 years of age. The charge to the publick for these convicts has been increasing for the last seven or eight years; and, I believe, now amounts to more than £20,000 per annum.

Two plans for  
utilising  
convicts.

When the convicts were sent to America they were sold for a servitude of seven years. A proposal has been made for the alteration of this mode, respecting those sent to Africa, by condemning them to some publick work there. They were to be released from servitude, and some ground was to be given them to cultivate in proportion as a reformation was observed in their conduct.

Neither of those plans can I approve.

Another plan—  
free grants of  
land.

Give them a few acres of ground as soon as they arrive in New South Wales, in absolute property, with what assistance they may want to till them. Let it be here remarked that they cannot fly from the country, that they have no temptation to theft, and that they must work or starve. I likewise suppose that they are not, by any means, to be reproached for their former conduct. If these premises be granted me, I may reasonably conclude that it is highly probable they will be useful; that it is very possible they will be moral subjects of society.

Reformation of  
offenders.

Treat them like  
men.

Do you wish, either by private prudence, or by civil policy, to reclaim offenders? Show by your treatment of them that you think their reformation extremely practicable, and do not hold out every moment before their eyes the hideous and mortifying deformity of their own vices and crimes. A man's intimate and hourly acquaintance with his guilt, of the frowns and severities of the world, tend more powerfully, even than the immediate effects of his bad habits, to make him a determined and incorrigible villain.

Economy and  
humanity.

By the plan which I have now proposed a necessity to continue in the place of his destination and to be industrious is imposed on the criminal. The expence to the nation is absolutely imperceptible, comparatively, with what criminals have hitherto cost Government; and thus two objects of most desirable and beautiful union will be permanently blended—economy to the publick, and humanity to the individual.

JAMES M. MATRA.



J. M. MATRA TO UNDER SECRETARY NEPEAN.\*

1784  
Oct. 1.

Marston House, Frome, Somersetshire,

DEAR SIR,—

1st October [November], '84.

Of the many letters that I have long been pestered with on the subject of New South Wales, the enclosed is the only one that I am now desirous of answering, for which reason I take the liberty of sending it to you. I know that Mr. De Lancey, who is very sanguine on the business, has been active in procuring the consent of many people to go; and as a settlement somewhere is essentially necessary to them, I wish to be authorized to give him a decisive answer, which, whatever my private opinion may be, I think, would be improper till I hear from you. You will, therefore, do me a particular pleasure, if to the great trouble you have already taken in pushing forward this business for me you would be so obliging as to tell me if the Ministry have come to a decided resolution to reject the plan, or if there be any chance of its being entered on in the spring season. I shall go next Thursday for a few days to Ld. Craven's, Benham Place, Berks., where your letter to me, under Ld. Cork's cover, will safely reach me. My company, to be sure, is not politically orthodox, but when I assure you that I am not contaminated by their heresies, you will excuse the direction. I shall always be extremely cautious of obtruding on your time; and, were you to see but a list of the fiftieth part of the letters I am perplexed with about the S. Seas, I know you would pardon this instance.

De Lancey's  
proposal to send  
out American  
loyalists.

I am, &amp;c.,

JAMES W. MATRA.

Thursday morning.

The Attorney-General, I believe by his own desire, has had communicated to him an observation on the passage of our China ships that I imagine will remove the only difficulty that I can think of in the way of the South Sea scheme.

South Sea  
scheme.

It is a better rout and shorter for the ships bound to China to pass by the coast of New South Wales—now that it is so well known—than that which they at present pursue. Sir George Young has spoken to several of them on this subject, and it appears that the Government may send out convicts at about £15 a head, and as Mr. Pitt's Commutation Bill will considerably

The China  
route.

\* Evan Nepean, Under Secretary of the Home Department, which was charged with the administration of Colonial affairs. He was created a baronet in 1802. Mr. Matra's letter and enclosure refer to a proposal to send American loyalists as emigrants to New South Wales. The American loyalists were the colonists who remained loyal to Great Britain in the War of Independence, and were punished by being driven from their homes. Mr. De Lancey's suggestions did not meet with the approval of the British Government.

1784  
Oct. 1.

increase the number of China ships, twenty being taken out by each yearly, will rid you of as many as are on hand. As perhaps the Attorney-General may not receive this in time, you will oblige me by communicating it to Id. Sydney before he goes to the Cabinet Council.

Officers willing  
to serve.

As there are officers of some consideration in the service who are willing to go on this duty, and as the number of convicts taken out at the beginning are few, and chosen, I think the impropriety of employing King's ships in the first instance sufficiently removed.

[Enclosure.]

JAMES DE LANCEY TO J. M. MATRA.\*

Oct. 12.

DEAR SIR,— Southampton, October the 12th, 1784.

I should have answered yours of the 31st of August sooner, but waited in expectation of another letter from you, which would have contained something decisive in regard to New South Wales.

A decision  
desired.

My brother will deliver this to you. He wishes much to have this business determined one way or the other, in order that, if the plan of making a settlement in the Southern Hemisphere should be given up, he may think of some other way of rendering himself usefull, as he has an active mind, and does not chuse to remain idle.

The loyalists.

The season for a voyage to that country will soon be elapsed, and unless the equipment is speedily sett on foot, another year will be lost, and my prospect of procuring settlers from the loyalists in Nova Scotia rendered less favourable, for by next year I should suppose most of them who have gone there will have procured some kind of habitation for themselves, and will not chuse to quit them for an uncertain settlement in N.S. Wales, and I would like to have among the emigrants some of the better sort, and should not chuse to have the colony composed only of such persons who would not get their living anywhere else.

Superior  
emigrants.

I find that the Treasury Board have met, and therefore hope that now the Ministers have returned to town some final determination will be had on this business, and flatter myself that a measure which appears to meet with general approbation will not be abandoned.

I am, &c.,

JAMES DE LANCEY.

\* This letter was addressed to James Maria Matra, Esq., No. 4, Duke-street, Grosvenor Square. No further correspondence on the subject has been found amongst the Records.

## LORD HOWE\* TO LORD SYDNEY.

1784

Dec. 26.

Admiralty, 26th Dec., 1784.

I RETURN, my dear Lord, the papers† you left with me to-day, which are copies only of the former sent to me on the same subject on Friday evening.

Should it be thought advisable to increase the number of our settlements on the plan Mr. Matra has suggested, I imagine it would be necessary to employ ships of a different construction. Frigates are ill adapted for such services. I conceive that ships of burthen to contain the various stores, provisions, implements, &c., wanted for the first colonists meant to be established there, and composing the chief part of the company of the ship, should be provided for the purpose, tho' an armed vessel of suitable dimensions might be previously appointed to inspect and fix on the preferable station for forming the intended establishment. The length of the navigation, subject to all the retardments of an India voyage, do not, I must confess, encourage me to hope for a return of the many advantages in commerce or war which Mr. M. Matra has in contemplation.

Matra's plan.

Unfavourable opinion.

I am, &amp;c.,

HOWE.

## SIR GEORGE YOUNG'S PLAN.‡

## THE ATTORNEY-GENERAL TO LORD SYDNEY.

1785

Jan. 13.

Lincoln's Inn Fields,

Jan'y 13th, 1785.

MY LORD,—

Inclosed you receive a scheme of Sir George Young, of the Navy, for settling New South Wales, which he has desired me to transmit to your Lordship for your consideration, to which I take the liberty of recommending it. Lord Mansfield mentioned the subject to me, and desired Sir George Young would call upon me and explain his ideas. I profess myself totally ignorant of the probability of the success of such a scheme, but it appears to me, upon a cursory view of the subject, to be the most likely

Sir George Young's plan.

A likely proposal.

\* Admiral Howe, First Lord of the Admiralty.

† Matra's proposal.

‡ The names Young and Yonge, which both occur in the Attorney-General's letter, must not be confounded. Sir George Young, who proposed a plan for settling convicts on the New South Wales coast, was a naval officer of distinction (Admiral of the White). Sir George Yonge was Secretary at War.

1785  
Jan. 13  
—

method of effectually disposing of convicts, the number of which requires the immediate interference of Government. As your Lordship and Sir George Yonge were desirous that the Lord Chancellor should be consulted respecting the removal of the soldiers from Hastings, and as I understood your Lordship was to see the Chancellor to-day, I shall be obliged to you if you, as soon as it is determined whether an application shall be made for their removal, inform me, and I will give immediate orders for the proper steps to be taken for that purpose.

I have, &c.,  
R. P. ARDEN.

[Enclosure.]

#### THE "PLAN."

The following is a rough outline of the many advantages that may result to this nation from a settlement made on the coast of New South Wales :—

Geographical  
position.

ITS great extent and relative situation with respect to the eastern and southern parts of the globe is a material consideration. Botany Bay, or its vicinity, the part that is proposed to be first settled, is not more than sixteen hundred leagues from Lima and Baldivia [Valdivia], with a fair open navigation, and there is no doubt but that a lucrative trade would soon be opened with the Creole Spaniards for English manufactures. Or suppose we were again involved in a war with Spain, here are ports of shelter and refreshment for our ships, should it be necessary to send any into the South Sea.

Trade with  
South America.

Commercial  
position.

From the coast of China it lies not more than about a thousand leagues, and nearly the same distance from the East Indies, from the Spice Islands about seven hundred leagues, and near a month's run from the Cape of Good Hope.

Variety of  
climate and  
productions.

The variety of climates included between the forty-fourth and tenth degrees of latitude give us an opportunity of uniting in one territory almost all the productions of the known world. To explain this more fully I will point out some of the countries which are situated within the same extent of latitude, on either side of the Equator. They are China, Japan, Siam, India, Persia, Arabia-felix, Egypt, Greece, all Turkey, the Mediterranean Sea, Italy, Spain, South of France, and Portugal, with Mexico, Lima, Baldivia [Valdivia], and the greatest part of the Pacific Ocean, to which may be added the Cape of Good Hope, &c., &c.



From this review it will, I think, be acknowledged that a territory so happily situated must be superior to all others for establishing a very extensive commerce, and of consequence greatly increase our shipping and number of seamen. Nor is it mere presumption to say the country is everywhere capable of producing all kinds of spices, likewise the fine Oriental cotton, indigo, coffee, tobacco, with every species of the sugar-cane, also tea, silk, and madder. That very remarkable plant known by the name of the New Zealand flax-plant may be cultivated in every part, and in any quantity, as our demands may require. Its uses are more extensive than any vegetable hitherto known, for in its gross state it far exceeds anything of the kind for cordage and canvas, and may be obtained at a much cheaper rate than those materials we at present get from Russia, who may perhaps at some future period think it her interest to prohibit our trade for such articles, and the difficulties that must arise in such a case are too obvious to mention, but are everywhere provided against in this proposal.

1786

Jan. 13.

Facilities for trade.

Tropical products.

Flax.

Commercial centre.

Metals of every kind.

Settlers from the islands and China.

The American loyalists.

Felons.

Expense.

With but a trifling expence and a little industry we may in the course of a few years establish a commercial mart on one island comprehending all the articles of trade in itself and every necessary for shipping, not to mention the great probability of finding in such an immense country metals of every kind.

At a time when men are alarmed at every idea of emigration I wish not to add to their fears by any attempt to depopulate the parent state. The settlers of New South Wales are principally to be collected from the Friendly Islands and China. All the people required from England are only a few that are possessed of the useful arts and those comprized among the crews of the ships sent on that service.

The American loyalists would here find a fertile, healthy soil, far preferable to their own, and well worthy their industry, where, with a very small part of the expence the Crown must necessarily be at for their support, they may be established now comfortably, and with a greater prospect of success than in any other place hitherto pointed out for them.

The very heavy expence Government is annually put to for transporting and otherwise punishing the felons, together with the facility of their return, are evils long and much lamented. Here is an asylum open that will considerably reduce the first, and for ever prevent the latter.

Upon the most liberal calculation the expence of this plan cannot exceed £3,000, for it must be allowed that ships of war are as cheaply fed and paid in the South Seas as in the British Channel.

1785

Jan. 18.

Ships required.

Had I the command of this expedition, I should require a ship of war—say, the old Rainbow, now at Woolwich, formerly a ship of forty guns—as the best constructed for the purpose of any in the Navy, with only half her lower-deck guns and 250 men, one hundred of which should be marines; a store-ship, likewise, of about 600 tons burthen, with forty seamen and ten marines, and a small vessel of about 100 tons, of the brig or schooner kind, with twenty men, both fitted as ships of war and commanded by proper officers.

Guard-ship.

The large ship is necessary for receiving fifty of the felons, provisions, and stores, with a variety of live-stock and plants from England and the Cape of Good Hope. She is more particularly wanted as a guard-ship, to remain in the country at least two years after her arrival, or longer, as may be found necessary, to protect the settlers, &c. The store-ship is required for taking an additional quantity of provisions, to serve until we are about to raise some for ourselves. The brig or schooner is principally

Exploring-ship.

wanted to explore the coast on our arrival, for notwithstanding a convenient place is already mentioned for the purpose, nature and experience inform me a navigable river may be found on such an extensive coast, which, when discovered, she may be then dispatched to England with an account of our proceedings. In the meantime, the store-ship may be sent to the Friendly Islands for inhabitants and useful plants.

Route for the  
China ships.

The settlement being thus established, any difficulties that may arise from the great distance of New South Wales are obviated in the manner following:—The China ships belonging to the East India Company, after leaving the Cape of Good Hope, and keeping more to the southward than usual, may land the felons on the coast, and then proceed to the northward, round New Ireland, &c., or through Saint George's Channel, and so on to the island Formosa for Canton. With a little geographical investigation, this passage will be found more short, easy, and a safer navigation than the general route of the China ships—from Madras through the Straights of Malacca.

Cheap trans-  
portation.

Perhaps the number of the felons, after the present are disposed of, may not require more than two ships in the course of a year. The expence thereof attending the transporting of them by this method must certainly be much less than by any other whatever, without even the most distant probability of their return. Every ship may take any number of felons not exceeding seventy.

Implements.

## Necessary Implements:—

Iron in bars  
Forges and anvils  
Spades and shovels  
Mattocks

Spikes and nails  
Pitchforks  
Axes of sorts  
Iron crows and wedges

|                          |                                |          |
|--------------------------|--------------------------------|----------|
| Saws of sorts            | Articles of trade with natives | 1785     |
| Large hammers            | of the islands, &c.            | Jan. 13. |
| Mills                    | Window glass                   | —        |
| Grindstones              | Grain of sorts                 |          |
| Cutlery                  | Fishing tackle                 |          |
| Cooking utensils         | Gardening tools                |          |
| Iron pots of sorts       | Carpenters' do.                |          |
| Shoes and leather        | Smiths' tools                  |          |
| Linnen and woollen cloth | Shoemakers' do.                |          |
| Tinware                  | Bricklayers' do.               |          |
| Thread, needles, &c.     | Masons' do.                    |          |
| Stockings                | Coals as ballast               |          |
| Soap                     | Some leaden pumps, &c.         |          |
| Hatts and caps           | Scythes                        |          |
| Wheels of barrows        | Pewter and earthenware.        |          |
| Seeds and plants         |                                |          |

## LORD SYDNEY TO THE LORDS COMMISSIONERS OF THE TREASURY.

1786

MY LORDS,—

Whitehall, 18th August, 1786.

Aug. 18.

The several gaols and places for the confinement of felons in this kingdom being in so crowded a state that the greatest danger is to be apprehended, not only from their escape, but from infectious distempers, which may hourly be expected to break out amongst them, his Majesty, desirous of preventing by every possible means the ill consequences which might happen from either of these causes, has been pleased to signify to me his royal commands that measures should immediately be pursued for sending out of this kingdom such of the convicts as are under sentence or order of transportation.

Gaols over-crowded.

Convicts to be transported

The Nautilus, sloop, which, upon the recommendation of a committee of the House of Commons, had been sent to explore the southern coast of Africa, in order to find out an eligible situation for the reception of the said convicts, where from their industry they might soon be likely to obtain means of subsistence, having lately returned, and it appearing by the report of her officers that the several parts of the coast which they examined between the latitudes 15° 50' south and the latitude of 33° 00' are sandy and barren, and from other causes unfit for a settlement of that description, his Majesty has thought it advisable to fix upon Botany Bay, situated on the coast of New South Wales, in the latitude of about 33 degrees south, which, according to the accounts given by the late Captain Cook, as well as the representations of persons who accompanied him during his last voyage, and who have been consulted upon the subject, is looked upon as a place likely to answer the above purposes.

to Botany Bay.

1786

Aug. 18.

Order for first  
fleet.

I am, therefore, commanded to signify to your Lordships his Majesty's pleasure that you do forthwith take such measures as may be necessary for providing a proper number of vessels for the conveyance of 750 convicts to Botany Bay, together with such provisions, necessaries, and implements for agriculture as may be necessary for their use after their arrival.

Marines.

In order that a proper degree of subordination and regularity may be preserved in this new intended settlement, his Majesty has been pleased to give orders that an officer and proper assistants shall be appointed to superintend it, and that three companies of the Marine Corps shall be stationed there so long as it may be found necessary. The officers and marines will be embarked on board a ship of war and a tender, which the Lords Commissioners of the Admiralty have been directed to provide for this service, the commanders of which will be instructed to take under their protection the ships on board of which the convicts may be embarked, and to regulate their sailing to the place of destination.

Island women.

The crews of the ship of war and the tender, as well as the Marine Corps, will be victualled by the Naval Department during their passage; but your Lordships will please to take notice that the marines are to be provided for after their landing, and supplies of provisions, as well as implements for agriculture, should also be procured for their use. The number may amount to about 180, to which is to be added the staff establishment, consisting of fifteen, and perhaps 200 females, which your Lordship will see by a sketch of the plan for forming this new settlement, herewith transmitted,\* are likely to be procured from places in its neighbourhood, as companions for the men.†

Guard for  
transports.

If the persons who may contract for the passage of the convicts should be desirous of obtaining military assistance for their greater security, they may be accommodated with a part of the marines, who would otherwise be conveyed to the new settlement in the ship of war and the tender.

Two years'  
provisions.

According to the best opinions that can be obtained, it is supposed that a quantity of provisions equal to two years' consumption should be provided, which must be issued from time to time, according to the discretion of the superintendent, in the expenditure of which he will, of course, be guided by the proportion of food which the country and the labour of the new settlers may produce.

From the length of the passage to New South Wales, the commanding officer will most likely find it necessary to call at

\* Post, p. 53.

† Women from the Islands. This part of the plan was not carried out.



the Cape de Verd Islands, as well as at the Cape of Good Hope, for the purpose of recruiting the water. At the latter of these places he will, in all probability, be enabled to obtain cattle and hogs, as well as seed grain, all of which must be procured for the new settlers, with a view to their future subsistence, and as expenses will thereby, of course, be incurred, it will be necessary that your Lordships should authorize the naval commander, or the superintendent, to draw upon you for the amount; and that, in addition thereto, a quantity of merchandize should be put on board the ship of war or the tender previous to their sailing, sufficient to obtain supplies of live stock by the means of barter with the inhabitants of the islands contiguous to the new intended settlement, from whence such supplies may at all times be obtained.

1786  
Aug. 18.

Cattle and  
grain from the  
Cape.

Barter.

A small quantity of garden seeds should be sent out from hence, together with some seed grain, to prevent inconveniences that might happen should any difficulties arise in procuring a supply, particularly of the latter, at the Cape of Good Hope.

Garden seeds  
and grain.

The tools for erecting habitations, and implements for agriculture, which it is supposed will be most useful in the settlement, are specified in the list accompanying this, and with which it will be proper to supply the marines and the convicts after their landing at the settlement. It is, therefore, his Majesty's further pleasure that these articles be also provided and sent out, together with bedding for each of the convicts, and a proportion of cloathing agreeably to the estimate enclosed. The marines will be supplied with bedding from the ship of war.

Tools and  
implements.

Clothing.

I have it in command from his Majesty only further to acquaint your Lordships that a quantity of surgical instruments and medicines and necessaries for the sick will likewise be wanted, and as soon as an estimate can be formed it shall be transmitted to your Lordships, together with the staff establishment.

Instruments  
and medicines.

In the meantime, I have only to recommend it to your Lordships to cause every possible expedition to be used in preparing the shipping for the reception of the said convicts, and for transporting the supplies of provisions and necessaries for their use to the place of their destination.\*

Immediate  
action.

I have, &c.,

SYDNEY.

\* The King's Speech (George III.) read at the opening of Parliament, on the 23rd January, 1787, contained the following passage: "A plan has been formed, by my direction, for transporting a number of convicts in order to remove the inconvenience which arose from the crowded state of the gaols in different parts of the kingdom; and you will, I doubt not, take such further measures as may be necessary for this purpose."

1786  
Aug. 18.

[Enclosure.]

1786.

Tools and  
utensils.

*List of Tools, Utensils, &c., necessary for the Convicts and Marines intended to proceed to New South Wales.*

Spades, 1, @ 3s. ; shovels, 1, @ 3s. ; hoes, 3 for each man, @ 9d. ; felling axe, 1, @ 3s. ; hatchet, 1, @ 1s. ; knife, 1, @ 6d. each ; gimblet, wooden bowls, platters, and spoons, 6d. for each man.

|   |     |    |    |
|---|-----|----|----|
| The articles necessary to each man amounts to | £   | s. | d. |
| 12s. 6d., which for 700 men will be .. ..     | 437 | 10 | 0  |

*General Stock.*

|   |        |    |   |
|---|--------|----|---|
| Crosscut saws, 40 @ 10s. each .. ..                               | 20     | 0  | 0 |
| Hand saws, 1 for every 4 men, @ 5s. each .. ..                    | 43     | 15 | 0 |
| Frame saws, 40, @ 16s. each .. ..                                 | 32     | 0  | 0 |
| Adzes, 100, @ 2s. each .. ..                                      | 10     | 0  | 0 |
| Broad axes, 100, @ 2s. 6d. each .. ..                             | 12     | 10 | 0 |
| Hammers, 1 for every 4 men, @ 1s. each .. ..                      | 8      | 15 | 0 |
| Augers, 140, @ 1s. each .. ..                                     | 7      | 0  | 0 |
| Drawing knives, 140, at 1s. .. ..                                 | 7      | 0  | 0 |
| Chisels and gouges, 300, @ .7d. each .. ..                        | 8      | 15 | 0 |
| Planes, 100, @ 2s. 6d. each .. ..                                 | 12     | 10 | 0 |
| Iron forges, anvils, and hammers, 10, @ £3 .. ..                  | 30     | 0  | 0 |
| Grindstones, 30, @ 10s. 6d. each .. ..                            | 15     | 15 | 0 |
| Wheelbarrows, 40, @ 10s. each .. ..                               | 20     | 0  | 0 |
| Pickaxes, 50, @ 5s. each .. ..                                    | 12     | 10 | 0 |
| Ploughs, 12, @ £4 each .. ..                                      | 48     | 0  | 0 |
| Iron hand mills, 40, @ £2 each .. ..                              | 80     | 0  | 0 |
| Coopers' tools, 10 setts, @ £1 15s. each .. ..                    | 17     | 10 | 0 |
| Nails of diff't sizes, @ 2s. 9d. p'r 1,000, ab't 10 barrels .. .. | 100    | 0  | 0 |
| Spikes, 2,000, @ £1 10s. p'r 100 .. ..                            | 30     | 0  | 0 |
| Hinges, 200 pairs, @ 8d. each .. ..                               | 6      | 13 | 4 |
| Locks, 100, @ 1s. each .. ..                                      | 5      | 0  | 0 |
| Bar iron, flat and square, 10 ton, @ £17 .. ..                    | 170    | 0  | 0 |
| Glass, 1,000 squares, @ 8d. per doz. .. ..                        | 33     | 6  | 8 |
| Fishing lines, hooks, nets, needles, twine, &c. .. ..             | 100    | 0  | 0 |
|   | £1,268 | 10 | 0 |

Clothing.

*Estimate of Clothing to serve a Male Convict for One Year.*

|   |    |    |    |
|---|----|----|----|
|   | £  | s. | d. |
| Jackets, 2, @ 4s. 6d. . . . .           | 0  | 9  | 0  |
| Woollen drawers, 4, @ 2s. . . . .       | 0  | 8  | 0  |
| Hat, 1, @ 2s. 6d. . . . .               | 0  | 2  | 6  |
| Shirts, 3, @ 3s. . . . .                | 0  | 9  | 0  |
| Worsted stockings, 4 p'r, @ 1s. . . . . | 0  | 4  | 0  |
| Frocks, 3, @ 2s. 3d. . . . .            | 0  | 6  | 9  |
| Trousers, 3, @ 2s. 3d. . . . .          | 0  | 6  | 9  |
| Shoes, 3, @ 4s. 6d. . . . .             | 0  | 13 | 6  |
|   | £2 | 19 | 6  |

The expence of clothing female convicts may be computed to amount to the same sum.

A proportion for two years to be provided.

[Enclosure.]

## HEADS OF A PLAN.\*

1786

Aug. 18.

Proposal for a  
penal settle-  
ment.

HEADS of a plan for effectually disposing of convicts, and rendering their transportation reciprocally beneficial both to themselves and to the State, by the establishment of a colony in New South Wales, a country which, by the fertility and salubrity of the climate, connected with the remoteness of its situation (from whence it is hardly possible for persons to return without permission), seems peculiarly adapted to answer the views of Government, with respect to the providing a remedy for the evils likely to result from the late alarming and numerous increase of felons in this country, and more particularly in the metropolis.

It is proposed that a ship of war of a proper class, with a part of her guns mounted, and a sufficient number of men on board for her navigation, and a tender of about 200 tons burthen, commanded by discreet officers, should be got ready as soon as possible to serve as an escort to the convict ships, and for other purposes hereinafter mentioned.

That, in addition to their crews, they should take on board two companies of marines to form a military establishment on shore (not only for the protection of the settlement, if requisite, against the natives, but for the preservation of good order), together with an assortment of stores, utensils, and implements necessary for erecting habitations and for agriculture, and such quantities of provisions as may be proper for the use of the crews.

As many of the marines as possible should be artificers, such as carpenters, sawyers, smiths, potters (if possible), and some husbandmen. To have a chaplain on board, with a surgeon, and one mate at least; the former to remain at the settlement.

That these vessels should touch at the Cape of Good Hope, or any other places that may be convenient, for any seed that may be requisite to be taken from thence, and for such live stock as they can possibly contain, which, it is supposed, can be procured there without any sort of difficulty, and at the most reasonable rates, for the use of the settlement at large.

That Government should immediately provide a certain number of ships of a proper burthen to receive on board at least seven or eight hundred convicts, and that one of them should be properly fitted for the accommodation of the women, to prevent their intercourse with the men.

That these ships should take on board as much provisions as they can possibly stow, or at least a sufficient quantity for two years' consumption; supposing one year to be issued at whole

\* Ante, p. 50.

1786

Aug. 18.

allowance, and the other year's provisions at half allowance, which will last two years longer, by which time, it is presumed, the colony, with the live stock and grain which may be raised by a common industry on the part of the new settlers, will be fully sufficient for their maintenance and support.

Guards for  
transports.

That, in addition to the crews of the ships appointed to contain the convicts, a company of marines should be divided between them, to be employed as guards for preventing ill consequences that might arise from dissatisfaction amongst the convicts, and for the protection of the crew in the navigation of the ship from insults that might be offered by the convicts.

Surgeons.

That each of the ships should have on board at least two surgeons' mates, to attend to the wants of the sick, and should be supplied with a proper assortment of medicines and instruments, and that two of them should remain with the settlement.

Further  
supplies.

After the arrival of the ships which are intended to convey the convicts, the ship of war and tender may be employed in obtaining live stock from the Cape, or from the Molucca Islands, a sufficient quantity of which may be brought from either of those places to the new settlement in two or three trips; or the tender, if it should be thought most advisable, may be employed in conveying to the new settlement a further number of women from the Friendly Islands, New Caledonia, &c., which are contiguous thereto, and from whence any number may be procured without difficulty; and without a sufficient proportion of that sex it is well known that it would be impossible to preserve the settlement from gross irregularities and disorders.

Island women.

Government.

The whole regulation and management of the settlement should be committed to the care of a discreet officer, and provision should be made in all cases, both civil and military, by special instructions under the Great Seal or otherwise, as may be thought proper.

Expense not to  
be considered.

Upon the whole, it may be observed with great force and truth that the difference of expence (whatever method of carrying the convicts thither may be adopted) that this mode of disposing of them and that of the usual ineffectual one is too trivial to be a consideration with Government, at least in comparison with the great object to be obtained by it, especially now the evil is increased to such an alarming degree, from the inadequacy of all other expedients that have hitherto been tried or suggested.

Flax.

It may not be amiss to remark in favour of this plan that considerable advantage will arise from the cultivation of the New Zealand hemp or flax-plant in the new intended settlement, the supply of which would be of great consequence to us as a naval



power, as our manufacturers are of opinion that canvas made of it would be superior in strength and beauty to any canvas made of the European material, and that a cable of the circumference of ten inches made from the former would be superior in strength to one of eighteen inches made of the latter. The threads or filaments of this New Zealand plant are formed by nature with the most exquisite delicacy, and may be so minutely divided as to be manufactured into the finest linens.

Most of the Asiatic productions may also without doubt be cultivated in the new settlement, and in a few years may render our recourse to our European neighbours for those productions unnecessary.

It may also be proper to attend to the possibility of procuring from New Zealand any quantity of masts and ship timber for the use of our fleets in India, as the distance between the two countrys is not greater than between Great Britain and America. It grows close to the water's edge, is of size and quality superior to any hitherto known, and may be obtained without difficulty.

1786  
Aug. 18.

Tropical  
products.

New Zealand  
timber

| Staff Establishment for the Settlement at New South Wales :—   |    |    |    |      | Yearly Salary. |    | Estimate of expenditure. |          |
|--|----|----|----|------|----------------|----|--------------------------|----------|
|  |    |    |    |      | £              | s. | d.                       |          |
| The Naval Commander to be appointed Governor or Superintendent-General   | .. | .. | .. | ..   | 500            | 0  | 0                        | 1—Staff. |
| The Commanding Officer of the Marines to be appointed Lieut-Gov. or Dept. Superintendent   | .. | .. | .. | ..   | 250            | 0  | 0                        |          |
| The Commissary of Stores and Provisions, for himself and assistants (to be appointed or named by the contractors for the provisions) | .. | .. | .. | ..   | 200            | 0  | 0                        |          |
| Pay of a surgeon   | .. | .. | .. | £182 | 10             | 0  |                          |          |
| Ditto of two mates   | .. | .. | .. | 182  | 10             | 0  |                          |          |
|  |    |    |    |      | 365            | 0  | 0                        |          |
| Chaplain   | .. | .. | .. | ..   | 182            | 10 | 0                        |          |
|  |    |    |    |      | £1,497         | 10 | 0                        |          |

### Estimate of clothing to serve a male convict for one year :—

|                   |    | No.   | Value each. |    | £  | s. | d. | 2—Clothing. |
|-------------------|----|-------|-------------|----|----|----|----|-------------|
|                   |    |       | s.          | d. |    |    |    |             |
| Jackets           | .. | 2     | 4           | 6  | 0  | 9  | 0  |             |
| Woollen drawers   | .. | 4     | 2           | 0  | 0  | 8  | 0  |             |
| Hat               | .. | 1     | 2           | 6  | 0  | 2  | 6  |             |
| Shirts            | .. | 3     | 3           | 0  | 0  | 9  | 0  |             |
| Worsted stockings | .. | 4 pr. | 1           | 0  | 0  | 4  | 0  |             |
| Frocks            | .. | 3     | 2           | 3  | 0  | 6  | 9  |             |
| Trousers          | .. | 3     | 2           | 3  | 0  | 6  | 9  |             |
| Shoes             | .. | 3 pr. | 4           | 6  | 0  | 13 | 6  |             |
|                   |    |       |             |    | £2 | 19 | 6  |             |

The expence of clothing female convicts may be computed to amount to the like sum.

1786

Aug. 31.

## LORD SYDNEY TO THE LORDS OF THE ADMIRALTY.

MY LORDS,—

Whitehall, 31st August, 1786.

The King having been pleased to signify his Royal Commands that 750 of the convicts now in this kingdom under sentence of transportation should be sent to Botany Bay, on the coast of New South Wales, in the latitude of 33° south, at which place it is intended that the said convicts should form a settlement, and that the Lords of the Treasury should forthwith provide a sufficient number of vessels for their conveyance thither, together with provisions and other supplies for their subsistence, as well as tools to enable them to erect habitations, and also implements for agriculture; and it being his Majesty's intention that a ship of war of a proper class, with part of her guns only on board, commanded by an able and discreet officer, and a sufficient establishment of inferior officers and men, together with a vessel of about 200 tons burthen, commanded also by an officer, should, as soon as the convict ships are ready, proceed with them to the new settlement, for the purpose of regulating their sailing, and for the preservation of peace and good order during the passage, as well as for other purposes after their arrival—

Convicts to be  
sent to Botany  
Bay.

Ships required.

Ship of war and  
tender.

Instructions for  
the commander.

I am commanded to signify to your Lordships the King's pleasure that you do forthwith cause a ship of war and a tender for those services to be fitted for sea with all possible expedition, and when the said convicts shall be put on board the ships which are preparing for their reception in the river Thames, to instruct the commander of the ship of war to take the convict ships under his protection, and proceed with them and the tender (which he will employ as he shall find occasion) to Botany Bay, calling off Plymouth, on his way thither, for another convict ship, the master of which will be directed to join the convoy from thence upon its appearance.

Rendezvous at  
the Cape.

From the length of the voyage to New South Wales, the convoy will, of course, find it necessary to put into port on their way thither, for the purpose of recruiting their water. Your Lordships will, therefore, give instructions accordingly, only taking care that one of the places to be fixed upon for a rendezvous may be the Cape of Good Hope, from whence it is intended that as many supplies as possible for the new settlement shall be procured.

Garrison.

As it has been thought advisable that some military establishment shall be made at the new intended settlement, not only to enforce due subordination and obedience, but for the defence of the settlement against incursions of the natives, and as from the nature of the service to be performed it is highly expedient that it should be composed of men accustomed to and under proper

discipline, his Majesty has been pleased to direct that 160 private marines, with a suitable number of officers and non-commissioned officers, shall proceed in the ship of war and the tender to the new settlement, where it is intended they shall be disembarked for the purposes before mentioned. They will be properly victualled by a commissary immediately after their landing, and provision has been also made for supplying them with such tools, implements, and utensils as they may have occasion for, to render their situation comfortable during their continuance at the new intended settlement, which it is designed shall not exceed a period of three years.

1786  
Aug. 31.

Marines.

The soldiers to  
be made com-  
fortable.

When these circumstances are known, it is very probable that many of the non-commissioned officers and men may express a desire of embarking upon this expedition; if the whole number to be employed upon it were to consist of persons of that description, it would upon many accounts be advisable to give them a preference. It is therefore his Majesty's pleasure that their wishes in this respect should as much as possible be attended to, and that your Lordships should, if there should be occasion, hold out such further indulgences to them as may induce them to embark voluntarily upon this service, either by bounty or promise of discharge should they desire it upon their return, or at the expiration of three years, to be computed from the time of their landing at the new intended settlement should they prefer the remaining in that country.

Volunteers.

Marines to be  
encouraged to  
volunteer.

I enclose to your Lordships herewith the heads of a plan\* upon which the new settlement is to be formed, for your further information, together with the proposed establishment for its regulation and government; and as soon as I am acquainted by your Lordships with the names of the officers intended to command the ship of war and the marine corps I shall receive his Majesty's further pleasure for preparing their commissions, and such instructions as may be requisite for their guidance.

Heads of a plan.

Commissions  
and instruc-  
tions.

From the nature of the services they are to execute under these instructions, entirely unconnected with maritime affairs, it would be proper that they should be immediately subordinate to the direction of this office, and upon that ground it is his Majesty's pleasure that they should be directed after their arrival at New South Wales to follow such orders and directions as they may receive from his Majesty thro' his Principal Secretary of State for this department.

Officers to be  
under the Home  
Department.

I have, &c.,

SYDNEY.

\* Ante, p. 53.

## AN ANONYMOUS PROPOSAL FOR THE SETTLEMENT OF NEW SOUTH WALES. [Extract.]

1783-86

[1783-86\*]

British trade declining.

New source of trade required.

Importance of foreign trade.

The writer's experience.

Settlement of new lands.

Project communicated to Lord North.

To assist Chili and Peru against Spain.

AT this juncture—when the ties of exclusive commerce with America are dissolved; when the trade to the East Indies is in a declining if not in a precarious state; when our trade to the Mediterranean has been long interrupted, and almost annihilated, and when that to Africa and the West Indies does not promise to be what it has been without a change of measures—it will be highly commendable in any individual to point out a new source of trade, and form any probable scheme for encouraging attempts to lay the foundation of future sources. There is no object, except internal improvement and cultivation of waste land, which a Minister should so much encourage as foreign trade, especially where the exports are chiefly the manufactures of this country, and the imports ready money or raw materials. The merchant and husbandman are a reciprocal benefit to each other.

Having been employed abroad many years, and during that time acquired some degree of commercial knowledge, and having, moreover, made myself geographically and descriptively acquainted with the new discoveries of the late circumnavigators, I have often turned my thoughts to the advantages which may hereafter be derived from them, and the resources which Great Britian may find in some new establishments to recompense her in part for the losses of the late war.

In pursuit of such ideas, I formed a project early in 1779, which I communicated to Lord North, for an expedition to the South Seas, to give countenance and support to the inhabitants of Chili and Peru, by assistance of arms, ammunition, and troops from India, that these provinces or kingdoms might be enabled to fulfil their disposition and throw off the Spanish yoke. Had it been undertaken at the time and in the manner suggested, it must have been attended with great loss to the Spaniards, and probably with future advantages to this country in its consequences, because the natives soon after, without foreign assistance, attempted to liberate themselves, and tho' their endeavours are suppressed for the present, yet it is more than probable their efforts will in the end be successful.

\* Although this proposal is not dated, the contents indicate that it was written during the period which intervened between the recognition of American Independence (1783) and the decision to found a settlement at Botany Bay (1786). It will be noticed that it has much in common with the proposals of Matra and Young, pp. 36 and 45. The original is preserved amongst the records of the Home Office.



The peace which is now concluded with Spain puts such an open enterprize at present out of the question ; but it requires no great depth of penetration to foresee that the Spaniards will not be suffered long to enjoy the extensive trade to and possession of South America. One would have thought that the apprehension of such an event, as a natural consequence, would have made them backward in seconding the views of the thirteen colonies of North America. The people of these States have formerly tasted the sweets of the interloping trade, and will not let the Spaniards quietly carry to Europe the produce of the mines which the North Americans so much want. When contests of this kind happen (and most assuredly ten years will not first elapse), the Chilese and Peruvians will again attempt to throw off the yoke, and, after the example and on better pretensions than the North Americans, become free States, or subject only to a native government. A trade then with them on the footing of the most favored nation will be a very desirable object, and open a prospect of replacing what we have lost, or may lose, of our trade to North America.

1783-86

Prevented by  
peace with  
Spain.Spanish yoke  
will be thrown  
off.Suggests trade  
with Chili.

But perhaps this is a delicate subject to touch on, and it may be held better policy to avoid giving Spain any grounds of jealousy ; on the contrary, it may be a preferable object to endeavor to wean her from the family compact, and with that view to exchange the barren Rock of Gibraltar for the Island of Porto Rico and other advantages of commerce more desirable to this nation. Be it so, there are other matters of sufficient importance to draw the attention of his Majesty's Ministers to consider whether some establishments may not be effected either on the coast of New South Wales, New Zealand, New Caledonia, or some other islands nearer the Line and more to the eastward. Each of these situations offers choice of establishments, as will be shewn in the respective descriptions thereof.

A delicate  
subject.Gibraltar and  
Porto Rico.Establishments  
at other parts.

And first of New South Wales : The coast as explored and named by Capt. Cook in 1770 extends from Van Diemen's Land in the latitude of 44° south, to Endeavor Straits in the latitude of 10° south, and occupies the whole east and north-east shore of the island (or, rather, 5th continent) called New Holland, for it contains more square miles than all Europe, and comprehends the finest latitude on the Globe. Its greatest longitudinal length of near 44° lies under the Tropic of Capricorn, and its difference of latitude from the extreme capes is near 34° ; but there are parts of the island which approach to within 20° of latitude to each other. Upon such an extensive superficies of land there can scarce be a doubt but many capital and navigable rivers must drain the internal country, and conduct the waters which fall plentifully and periodically within the Tropics,

New South  
Wales.Probable rivers  
and spacious  
harbours.

|   |   |
|---|---|
| 1783-86<br>—  | and near them, to the sea-coast. And, consequently, that in a circumference of more than 6,000 miles there must be many spacious and secure harbours with all the advantages requisite to constitute convenient sea-ports, docks, &c.   |
| Capt. Cook's account.   | Captain Cook had neither time nor proper vessels narrowly to explore every inlett on the east and north-east side of New Holland—much less the great Bay of Carpentaria—or the north, north-west, and south coasts. These are still unknown, except certain points which have been seen by other navigators, and principally on the west side by Mons. Allowan in 1772; but none, nor all of them taken collectively, have actually examined the coast throughout, and given the true outline. In his concluding observations, Captain Cook does not indeed give the most favourable account of the soil, timber, vegetable or animal productions, or even of the inhabitants that he saw, nor does he suppose the latter are very numerous. But as he could not penetrate far inland, or obtain a sufficient knowledge of the language spoken by any of the natives, it is but reasonable to suppose so large an extent of country under such latitudes must be capable of producing with as little trouble as any other country grain and other esculent vegetables, as well as feeding for quadrupeds, sufficient to subsist millions of people. But perhaps the necessary seeds and plants are wanting, as well as cultivation to improve such as are there already.                        |
| An unexplored land.   |   |
| Cook's opinions.  |   |
| Founded on partial knowledge.   |   |
| A reasonable supposition.   |   |
| Impossible to judge the country from Cook's account. First appearances often deceptive. | Without better grounds than Capt. Cook had, no negative judgement can be pronounced. He could only speak positively of what he saw and examined, for if conclusions had been definite from first appearances (or even of nine parts in ten at present), would the Cape of Good Hope ever have been settled, or supposed to afford the abundant necessities of life, or even superfluities as it does at present? Nothing can be more forbidding than its distant view, nor is such an appearance to be wondered at, considering it is a projecting point of a great continent running out in an high southern latitude between the two great oceans. Other instances might be quoted equally striking of discouraging appearances, to which New Holland throughout has comparatively an inviting aspect. And as to the number or nature of the whole people, a Briton would be sorry to have the national character drawn from those who might appear at either extreme, or even on some of the intermediate coasts of this island. But if anything is due in an advantageous light to analogous reasoning, is there not the strongest presumption that such an extensive tract of land has in its bowels, or on its surface, every production that other countries have in a similar latitude? |
| The Cape.   |   |
| Other instances.  |   |
| Reasoning by analogy.   |   |

The coast, it is true, which Capt. Cook explored is surrounded by a distant line of coral rocks and shoals, apparently dangerous to navigation; but at the same time it must be allowed that such a barrier has its use in protecting the interior coast from the fury of storms and a tumbling sea. There are navigations now which from use and the assistance of experienced pilots are perfectly safe, which from first appearances on the spot and the delineations on paper present every idea of shipwreck. The river Thames has its barriers of shoals and sands, and the Straits of Malacca appear in the charts to be wholly obstructed therewith, yet nothing is easier at present than the navigation of both.

1783-86

The Barrier Reef.

Not a fatal objection.

Similar difficulties elsewhere.

Not more than six days' sail to the eastward from the coast of New South Wales lies the western coast of the two great islands called New Zealand, which extend in latitude from 35° south to 45°, and tho' their breadth is unequal, yet they cover a space nearly equal to Great Britain. Charlotte Sound and the river Thames (an inlet so called) afford ports of great convenience to maritime objects; and the country is so situated with respect to climate that it comprehends the most habitable and temperate divisions on the Globe. Captain Cook circumnavigated both islands, and delineated as exactly as he possibly could the whole sea-coast in his several returns thereto, yet he acknowledges his defective observations of many parts. In the 438th page of the 3rd volume of "Hawkesworth's Compilation" a very flattering description may be found, concluding thus: "So that if this country should be settled by people from Europe they would, with a little industry, be very soon supplied, not only with the necessaries, but the luxuries of life in abundance." In page 441 he says: "Here are forests of vast extent full of the straightest, the cleanest, and the largest timber trees that we had ever seen." And what is an object of more consequence, for uses on the spot as well as exportation to this country, a plant grows there spontaneously, which he says (page 443) "serves the inhabitants instead of hemp and flax, which excels all of the kind put to the same uses in other countries." But of this more in the sequel. In page 444 the best place for an establishment is pointed out to be the river Thames, which Captain Cook seems to have looked forward to. And he adds, "that from the plenty of iron-sand found in Mercury Bay the ore could not be at any great distance."

New Zealand.

Area.

Harbours.

Climate

Sea-coast.

Cook's opinion of the country.

Its excellent timber.

The flax-plant.

The river Thames.

About the same length of run eastward from New Zealand as New South Wales is, but in the latitude from 18½° to 23° south, lies New Caledonia, which, tho' narrow in its longitudinal extent, is a very considerable island, inhabited by a very strong and well-disposed people; and tho' Captain Cook, in the Nar-

New Caledonia—

aborigines of.



|                                   |  |
|-----------------------------------|--|
| 1783-86<br>Cook's<br>opinion of.  | rative of his Voyage in 1774, vol. 2, page 128 to 145, does not speak so favourably of it as he does of many others, yet certainly it is a very favourable latitude, and probably only wants industry to be exerted on it. One article there is to be found in great abundance which is wanting in New Holland and New Zealand, and that is pine-trees for masting vessels of great burthen, as is observed in page 140.   |
| Its timber.                       |  |
| Norfolk Island.                   | In the midway almost from the south end of New Caledonia to the north extremity of New Zealand, and nearly equidistant east from New Holland, lies a small new-discovered island, named by Captain Cook Norfolk Isle, in latitude 29° south.   |
| Area.                             | It is about six miles long and fifteen miles round, shaped from its projecting points somewhat like an egg, the large end being to the south. This island has an advantage not common to the others by not being inhabited, so that no injury can be done by possessing it to the rest of mankind.* Tho' Captain Cook discovered it the 10th of September, 1774, at daybreak, and left it the 11th at the same time, yet he gives such an account of its productions in pages 147, 148, and 149, that there seems to be nothing wanting but inhabitants and cultivation to make it a delicious residence. The climate, soil, and sea promise everything that can be expected from them. The timber, shrubs, vegetables, and fish already found there need no embellishment to pronounce them excellent samples; but the most invaluable of all is the flax-plant, which grows more luxuriant than in New Zealand.  |
| Uninhabited.                      |  |
| Cook's account.                   |  |
| Products.                         |  |
| The choice of a site.             | Now, according to the object which may be in view for making an establishment, either the coast of New South Wales or some other part of New Holland, which on a closer examination may be hereafter discovered, cannot fail to offer a convenient situation; but if New Zealand should be deemed a more promising island either for ports or fertility, there cannot be a doubt but situations may be found attended with every convenience that nature furnishes, and perfectly adapted to receive the improvements of art. Let the choice, therefore, fall on either or both for principal establishments, it is obvious that New Caledonia and Norfolk Isle will afford useful auxiliaries. Perhaps it may be urged that the Friendly or Society Isles, or even the Hebrides, enjoy a finer climate, and are abundantly stocked with many necessities of life; but, granting this, they are in general fully inhabited, and the natives in all probability would so far oppose any establishment that it could only be made after a contest ending in their extirpation or the invaders' |
| New Zealand.                      |  |
| New Caledonia and Norfolk Island. |  |
| Preferable to other islands.      |  |

\* This was probably one of the reasons why so explicit a direction was given to Governor Phillip to settle Norfolk Island.



destruction, both which are ideas repugnant to human nature. In reply to this it may be urged that the same difficulty will occur at New Holland, New Zealand, or New Caledonia, because these are all inhabited. The objection seems natural; but as these countries are much larger, and not so fully inhabited, there is apparently room for much greater degrees of population and the most extensive improvement of cultivation; and to reduce the objection still more, it must be allowed that the natives want many of the necessaries of life, which it would be charity to furnish them with; that they are in a very uncivilised state; that to instruct and inform them better would be doing them no injury; that by communicating the principles of the Christian religion they would receive an invaluable blessing; and lastly, it is probable a purchase might be made of a part of the country from the native inhabitants for articles more agreeable and useful to them.

1783-86

Objection not applicable to New Holland or New Zealand.

State of the natives.

Influence of civilisation.

It may, moreover, be objected on general grounds (for it is best to obviate every objection) that propositions of this kind for establishing very distant colonies are at best problematical, and that besides the expence and difficulty of the outsett, the prospect of future advantage is too precarious and faint to attract many adventurers; that Great Britain has already been embarrassed and suffered much by colonization, which has drained her of too many useful citizens; that it would be better to improve every spot of waste land to the utmost degree at home, because every subject reared and attached to Great Britain is an actual addition of strength and benefit thereto, whereas every one that goes to spend his life in any other country is a real loss; and, lastly, that Great Britain, as an island breeding her own stock of inhabitants, cannot, without consuming her vitals, afford to people other islands or continents.

Objections to distant colonies.

Past losses.

Cultivation at home.

The depopulation argument.

These, it must be confessed, are all specious objections, and many of them solid ones; but if greater inconveniences can be avoided by embracing less, the ballance will be an advantage—for instance, if many British subjects disposed to emigration (and many such there are) should be tempted to go to America, and carry their property, arts, and sciences with them, would it not be good policy in point of consequences to encourage them to go to a greater distance? Again, suppose it to be at present difficult to provide for the Loyalists and other exiled natives from North America, and that they should, as they certainly will, prefer a new country without taxes or burthens to be received as denizens here, were the land and establishments even to be given them gratis, would it not be gratifying them at an easy expence to furnish them with some large frigates and store-

Its fallacy.

Advantages of distant settlements.

The American Loyalists.

1783-86  
Suitable  
colonists.

Commercial  
advantages.

The disposal of  
convicts.

The existing  
system.

Its evil  
consequences.

Vicious  
associations.

Obstacles to  
reform.

Return to vice.

Advantages of  
the transporta-  
tion system.

Prevents return.

ships and send them with proper necessaries to make one or more settlements in the islands just described? And would not such a plan be more likely to be brought to perfection by those people who have been accustomed to a similar life than by any others? Most certainly it would, and Great Britain cannot dispose of them better, or place them in a situation from whence a better return of commercial advantages might in a few years be expected; for it must be admitted as incontrovertible that the more nations or countries there are to whom commerce is familiar, and the greater the intercourse with foreign and even distant parts, the more frequent exchange of commodities there must be, and the most industrious people will engross the greatest share of the benefits resulting therefrom.

To these considerations may be added another, in which the peace, good government, and, I may add, the morals of the people of this country are materially concerned. I mean the disposal of convicts, which of late have not only been expensive, but have been confined in a manner disgraceful to the humanity of our character. Instead of being removed for ever from the society whose laws they had violated, and thereby forfeited all the privileges as citizens, they have been formed into and kept in distinct societies for the more compleat information and instruction of every new comer, and after the expiration of a certain time have been permitted to return to the community not reformed in their noxious principles, but confirmed in them. A few moments of reflection will carry proof to every man's mind of the certain tendency of strengthening vicious habits by association, and it must follow of consequence that having served out their time and being discharged into the world they must starve or return to their old trade and be hanged, for however desirous some of them might be to become good subjects, what person will receive one of them into his family or employ him in any service about his house, or where will he find a village, town, or parish to receive him without reproach? Thus repelled from society, these unhappy creatures are driven to avail themselves of their former experience, and perhaps three or four years' theoretical information, to a renewal of their crimes, and the public are like to suffer more in second practice than they did in their first outsett.

For these obvious reasons, both on the score of sound policy as well as humanity, and because convicts can no longer be sent to America, nor to any other of our remaining colonies or islands, without a great probability of their returning, or being otherwise detrimental to the manufactures of this country, it is proposed to transport them to some more distant situation,

and to place them where all temptation to a renewal of their crimes is wanting, and where necessity will indicate a different conduct, which will ultimately produce more essential benefits to themselves, and restore them perhaps to a future intercourse with their mother country.

1783-86

Removes temptation.

If it were necessary it might easily be proved in many ways that the greatest temptation to all thefts and robberies (except for ready money and food) is the facility of disposing of stolen goods without discovery. Could that inducement be removed, the temptation to such actions would be annihilated, and men remain honest for want of a temptation to be otherwise. But in great towns and populous places that is impracticable; it becomes, therefore, absolutely necessary rigorously to execute every offender, or to remove him as soon as discovered. The latter mode seems most consistent with humanity as well as reason, because all punishments are inflicted to prevent repetition, seeing that they cannot prevent the perpetration of what is past.

Facility for disposing of stolen goods.

The only alternative.

Under this idea of the propriety of removal from temptation, in preference to temporary or occasional punishment, it may be urged that the Navy, the Army abroad, and particularly the service of the East India Company, have received many atrocious offenders and converted them to useful subjects, because they have been placed in a situation where a contrary inclination was not reducible to practice.

Convicts as sailors and soldiers.

The same idea might be extended farther by supposing that fifty men and as many women, or any given number of convicts of both sexes, were sent to any part of New Zealand or New South Wales, or any part of the new discoveries proper for the experiment, and there landed with animals, seeds, implements, and other necessities of life proper for the climate and country. It is easy to foresee that tho' they might at first quarrel and commit outrages on each other, yet in a short time mutual convenience and security would unite them into social bonds, and some form of government would take place even tho' none should be given them. America is greatly obliged to similar circumstances for part of her population; and it would be some consolation to this country for the expence of transportation that the imputation of cruelty would be removed with the offending part of the community.

A convict colony.

A novel proposal.

American convicts.

After combating so many objections, it is possible the utility of the general idea of this plan will be admitted; but then it will be urged the distance is too great, and that an infant colony or colonies cannot be supported without a great expence, which must be repeated yearly in some degree without any return.

General idea of the plan.

The question of cost.



|  |   |
|--|---|
| 1783-86  | Should that be the case, the circumstance is not unprecedented,   |
| The precedent of North America. Distance not an objection. | for North America, tho' so much nearer to Europe, did not for many years make any return worth notice for the expence of property and lives sunk in the several establishm'ts made thereon ; and its proximity to Great Britain operated rather disadvantageously than the reverse, because there was a continual claim of protection and support, till the connection was lately broken by an entire separation of interests.  |
| Its advantages.  | The countries now in contemplation will not be so near as to be constantly asking and drawing the same supplies, nor will the same fatal effects by a renunciation of dependence ever be experienced from them. This distance will promote the practice of navigation more than adjacent countries, and the voyage will not be longer than it usually is to either coast of India. The Discovery and Resolution left Plymouth the 1st August, 1776, arrived at the Cape of Good Hope the 31st October, staid there a month, sailed from thence the 1st December, and after going out of the direct tract in quest of Desolation Island, where they staid a week, made New South Wales the 23rd January, being no more than four months and seventeen days in the actual run from England to the east side of New Holland. From hence it seems practicable to go thither, unload, take in another cargo, and return in twelve months.  |
| Encourage navigation.                                      |   |
| Length of the passage                                      |   |
| from England to New Holland.                               |   |
| Other inducements  | Should other inducements be wanting to give a serious consideration to some enterprize of the kind pointed out, and to derive some immediate, or lay the foundation for some future, advantages to be drawn from the discoveries of Captain Cook and other circumnavigators, many objects not undeserving notice might be enumerated. But surely enough has been said to merit a discussion. When that is entered on it will be time enough to be more minute, and to point out how easily a supply of quadrupeds and other animal provisions, as well as grain, pulse, vegetable plants, shrubs, trees, and seeds of all kinds, may be had in a fortnight from the Island of Sava or from Java, or in three weeks from the coast of Sumatra. It might also be shewn how easy it would be to draw useful inhabitants thither from the Malay Islands, and even from China, and, of course, to introduce the natural productions as well as arts and manufactures of these countries. In short, if the whole sea-coast and interior parts of New Holland were peopled in any comparative degree with Europe, Asia, or America, it would receive and return objects of commerce equal to any quarter of the Globe. |
| unnecessary.   |   |
| Supplies easily procured.                                  |   |
| The arts and manufactures of the East.                     |   |



PHILLIP'S VIEWS ON THE CONDUCT OF THE EXPEDITION AND  
THE TREATMENT OF CONVICTS.\*

1787

By arriving at the settlement two or three months before the transports many and very great advantages would be gained. Huts would be ready to receive the convicts who are sick, and they would find vegetables, of which it may naturally be supposed they will stand in great need, as the scurvy must make a great ravage amongst people naturally indolent and not cleanly.

The warships should precede the transports.

Phillip's foresight.

Huts would be ready for the women; the stores would be properly lodg'd and defended from the convicts in such manner as to prevent their making any attempt on them. The cattle and stock would be likewise properly secured, and the ground marked out for the convicts; for lists of those intended to be sent being given to the commanding officers, mentioning their ages, crimes, trades, and characters, they might be so divided as to render few changes necessary, and the provisions would be ready for issuing without any waste. But if convicts' provisions, &c., must be landed a few days after the ship's arrival, and consequently mostly at the same time, great inconvenience will arise, and to keep the convicts more than a few days on board after they get into a port, considering the length of time which they must inevitably be confined, may be attended with consequences easier to conceive than to point out in a letter. Add to this, fevers of a malignant kind may make it necessary to have a second hospital.

A ship's company is landed, huts rais'd, and the sick provided for in a couple of days; but here the greater number are convicts, in whom no confidence can be placed, and against whom both person and provision is to be guarded. Everything necessary for the settlement should be received at the Cape on board with the commanding officer, and nothing left for the transports but a certain proportion of live stock.

Convicts not to be trusted.

I may add, the short space of time left to choose a proper situation.†

The confining the convicts on board the ships requires some consideration. Sickness must be the consequence in so long a voyage (six months may be allow'd for the voyage—that is, from the time of leaving England to the arrival in Botany Bay), and disagreeable consequences may be feared if they have the liberty of the deck. The sooner the crimes and behaviour of these people are known the better, as they may be divided, and

Probable sickness on the voyage.

\* Phillip's handwriting, on small sheets of paper.

† The MS. is continued, on foolscap, in another hand—evidently a copy of Phillip's paper.

1787

Care of the women.

the greatest villains particularly guarded against in one transport.

The women in general I should suppose possess neither virtue nor honesty. But there may be some for thefts who still retain some degree of virtue, and these should be permitted to keep together, and strict orders to the master of the transport should be given that they are not abused and insulted by the ship's company, which is said to have been the case too often when they were sent to America.

What is to be done if fever breaks out?

At the ports we put into for water, &c., there may be some sick that may have fever of such a nature that it may be necessary for the sake of the rest to remove them out of the ship. In such a case, how am I to act?

Inspection on the voyage.

The greatest care will be necessary to prevent any of the convicts from being sent that have any venereal complaints.

During the passage, when light airs or calms permit it, I shall visit the transports to see that they are kept clean and receive the allowance ordered by Government; and at these times shall endeavour to make them sensible of their situation, and that their happiness or misery is in their own hands,—that those who behave well will be rewarded by being allow'd to work occasionally on the small lots of land set apart for them, and which they will be put in possession of at the expiration of the time for which they are transported.

Defence against the natives.

On landing in Botany Bay it will be necessary to throw up a slight work as a defence against the natives—who, tho' only seen in small numbers by Capt'n. Cook, may be very numerous on other parts of the coast—and against the convicts; for this my own little knowledge as a field engineer will be sufficient, and will be the work of a few days only; but some small cannon for a redoubt will be necessary. Within the lines the stores and provisions will be secured; and I should hope that the situation I should be able to take may admit of having the small rivers between the garrison and the convicts so situated that I may be able to prevent their having any intercourse with the natives.

Make friends with them, if possible.

I shall think it a great point gained if I can proceed in this business without having any dispute with the natives, a few of which I shall endeavour to persuade to settle near us, and who I mean to furnish with everything that can tend to civilize them, and to give them a high opinion of the new guests, for which purpose it will be necessary to prevent the transports' crews from having any intercourse with the natives, if possible. The convicts must have none, for if they have, the arms of the natives will be very formidable in their hands, the women abused, and the natives disgusted.

The keeping of the women apart merits great consideration, and I don't know but it may be best if the most abandoned are permitted to receive the visits of the convicts in the limits allotted them at certain hours, and under certain restrictions ; something of this kind was the case in Mill Bank formerly. The rest of the women I should keep apart, and by permitting the men to be in their company when not at work, they will, I should suppose, marry, in which case they should be encouraged, if they are industrious, by one day in the week more than the unmarried on their own lots of ground.

1787

Marriage should be encouraged.

The natives may, it is probable, permit their women to marry and live with the men after a certain time, in which case I should think it necessary to punish with severity the men who use the women ill, and I know of no punishment likely to answer the purpose of deterring others so well as exiling them to a distant spot, or to an island, where they would be obliged to work hard to gain their daily subsistence, and for which they would have the necessary tools, but no two to be together, if it could be avoided.

Intermarrying with natives.

Rewarding and punishing the convicts must be left to the Governor ; he will be answerable for his conduct, and death, I should think, will never be necessary—in fact, I doubt if the fear of death ever prevented a man of no principle from committing a bad action. There are two crimes that would merit death—murder and sodomy. For either of these crimes I would wish to confine the criminal till an opportunity offered of delivering him as a prisoner to the natives of New Zealand, and let them eat him. The dread of this will operate much stronger than the fear of death.

Rewards and punishments.

As the getting a large quantity of stock together will be my first great object, till that is obtained the garrison should, as in Gibraltar, not be allowed to kill any animal without first reporting his stock, and receiving permission. This order would only be necessary for a certain time, and I mention it here only to show the necessity of a military government ; and as I mean in every matter of this kind to sett the example, I think that I can say this will never occasion any uneasiness, but if it should, it will be absolutely necessary, otherwise we shall not do in ten years what I hope to do in four.

Preservation of stock.

Women may be brought from the Friendly and other islands, a proper place prepared to receive them, and where they will be supported for a time, and lots of land assigned to such as marry with the soldiers of the garrison.

Women from the islands.

As I would not wish convicts to lay the foundations of an empire, I think they should ever remain separated from the garrison, and other settlers that may come from Europe, and not

Convicts should be isolated.

1787

No slavery.

be allowed to mix with them, even after the 7 or 14 years for which they are transported may be expired.

The laws of this country will, of course, be introduced in [New] South Wales, and there is one that I would wish to take place from the moment his Majesty's forces take possession of the country: That there can be no slavery in a free land, and consequently no slaves.

How are the convicts to be clothed?

The cloathing for the convicts will last for a certain time, after which what means should I have of furnishing them with materials for their making their own cloaths?

Land grants.

It will be necessary to know how far I may permit the seamen and marines of the garrison to cultivate spots of land when the duty of the day is over, and how far I can give them hopes that the grounds they cultivate will be secured to them hereafter; likewise, how far I may permit any of the garrison to remain, when they are ordered Home in consequence of relief.

Lamps for the natives.

By what I am informed, hatchets and beads are the articles for barter—a few small grindstones for the chiefs; and as they use a light they hold it in their hands, small tin lamps on a very simple construction must be very acceptable.

Shipping regulations.

Ships may arrive at Botany Bay in future. On account of the convicts, the orders of the port for no boats landing but in particular places, coming on shore and returning to the ships at stated hours, must be strictly enforced.

Exploration.

The saddles I mentioned will be absolutely necessary, for two horsemen will examine the country to a certain distance, when it might be dangerous to attempt it with half the garrison, for I am not of the general opinion that there are very few inhabitants in this country, at least so few as have been represented—but this article I take upon myself, as likewise the knives, &c., that I mentioned.

Fruit-trees.

Such fruit trees and cuttings that will bear removing should be added to the seeds carried from England, as likewise roots that will bear keeping that length of time out of the ground.

Houses.

Two or three of the houses in question will be highly necessary, and there is no time to lose in giving the orders, if intended.

Articles for barter.

A certain quantity of the articles of husbandry, stores, corn, seeds, &c., of the articles for traffick, should be put on board the Berwick,\* that in case of an accident we may not be in immediate want of those things, and the same on board the store-ship in which the Lt.-Gouverneur goes.

\* Renamed the Sirius.



GOVERNOR PHILLIP TO UNDER SECRETARY NEPEAN.

1787

March 1.

SIR,—

[London] March 1st, 1787.

The Governor's instructions.

From the letter I have received from the Admiralty, and of which I enclose a copy, you will see that respecting my 11th, 12th, 13th queries the Board decline giving any answer. As I am to be entirely under the direction of the Secretary of State, immediately after I arrive on the coast of New South Wales, for what regards the Naval Department, as well as respecting the settlement, from the Board's answer to these queries, as well as similar answers to several others of the same nature, I must request your particular attention to the following circumstances in drawing up my instructions :—

That I am directed to order wine to be purchased in the passage, at Teneriffe, or where it can be procured ; for circumstances may prevent my taking on board the quantity intended, at Teneriffe, or perhaps any part of it, and it may be got at the Cape or elsewhere.

Purchase of wine.

That I may employ one of the transports as an hospital ship, if I find it necessary on the passage.

A hospital ship.

To order the marines and convicts to be supply'd with fresh meat and vegetables at such places as I may stop at in the passage, and to order the Commissary to draw bills on the Treasury for such supplies.

Fresh meat and vegetables.

That I have the power of exchanging any part of the garrison with the marines embark'd on board the ships, or of incorporating the marines now belonging to the ship with those of the garrison, if the service requires it.

Exchange of men.

That I am directed to appoint officers to fill such stations as may become vacant by death or otherwise.

Officers.

That I am directed to discharge from the ship such officers and men as may not be necessary for the navigating of the ships, and which may be necessary in the garrison, such people being desirous of remaining in the settlement.

Discharge of unnecessary officers.

That I make the settlement in such port as I may find the most convenient and best to answer the intentions of Government.

The place of settlement.

That I send one of the ships to Charlotte Sound, in the Island of New Zealand, for the flax-plant, and to the Friendly Islands for the bread-fruit, and, as women will be there procured, that I put an officer on board such transport.

Bread-fruit and island women.

That the terms by which lands are to be granted are pointed out by the article which gives me the power of granting lands.

Land grants.

That I have a power of exiling to New Zealand or the neighbouring islands any convict that may be condemned to death.

Power of exile.

That I have the power of emancipation.

Emancipation.

1787  
March 1.

Suspension.  
The naval  
command.

The power of suspending and sending home such officer who from his situation cannot be tried by a court-martial.

That in case of sending home the *Sirius* I have orders from the Secretary of State to take the command of such ships or vessels as remain on the coast, by hoisting a distinguishing pendant on board such ship or tender as I may judge necessary (such pendant not to give me any claim to the pay of a commanding officer), in order to retain the command by sea, to be more at liberty to visit the coast, and to retain the command of the ships or vessels that remain.

A better ration  
needed.

That I have a power to change the species of provisions served to the marines and convicts, for if salt meat is issued, without any proportion of flour, as has been hitherto done by the contractor to the marines embarked on board the *Alexander*, the scurvy must prove fatal to the greatest part. Of the marines already embarked two months, one in six are sent to the hospital since that ship's arrival at Spithead.

I am, &c.,

A. PHILLIP.

1788  
May 24.

#### PROPOSED TRADING SETTLEMENT AT NORFOLK ISLAND.

London, May 24, 1788.

To the Right Honourable Lord Sydney, one of his Majestie's Principal Secretaries of State, &c., &c.

The petition of Sir George Young, Knt., and John Call, Esquire, in behalf of themselves and others,—

Sheweth—

That your petitioners have it in contemplation to form a settlement on a small uninhabited island, first discovered by Captain Cook, and by him named Norfolk Island,\* lying in the latitude of 29° 2' south, and longitude 168° 16' east from Greenwich, in the Pacific Ocean, in order to promote the cultivation of the New Zealand flax-plant, and the growth of pine timber for masts, being persuaded that if they are fortunate enough to succeed in their undertaking it will be attended with great national utility, by furnishing a future supply of those valuable articles of cordage and masts for his Majestie's ships-of-war in India, which have hitherto been obtained at an enormous expence, owing to the difficulty of conveying them thither, and from their scarcity have often reduced the maritime force employ'd in the East Indies to great inconvenience and even distress.

Flax and  
timber.

Proposed  
trading settle-  
ment at Norfolk  
Island.

\* The petitioners were ignorant of the fact that this island had been taken possession of by Lieutenant King, and a settlement planted there, three months before the date of their application.

Your petitioners, therefore, considering the great expence and risque they must necessarily incur in prosecuting an enterprise in which if they succeed the nation cannot fail in being benefited, humbly solicit from his Majesty a grant to them and their heirs for ever of the said island, to be held of the Crown as of the Manor of East Greenwich.

1788  
May 24.

A free grant.

GEO. YOUNG.  
JNO. CALL.

CAPTAIN BLIGH TO SECRETARY STEPHENS.

Bounty, Cape of Good Hope,  
False Bay, May 24th, 1788.

SIR,—

You will please to acquaint the Lords Commissioners of the Admiralty that, after experiencing the worst of weather for thirty days between the latd. of  $58^{\circ} 00'$  So. and  $61^{\circ} 00'$  by constant gales of wind from S.W. to N.W. off Cape Horn, I have been under the absolute necessity of bearing away for this place, as I found it totally impracticable to get round the land and make the passage to Otaheite, agreeable to their Lordships' first orders.

Cape of Good Hope.

Cape Horn route impracticable.

I hope their Lordships will observe that it was not possible to make more of the season than I have done. I left Spithead on the 23d of December; Tenariff on the 10th Jan'y; doubled Staten Land on the 23d of March, from which time the weather was exceedingly tempestuous, particularly the last three weeks, when the snowstorms became so violent we were scarce ever doing better than lying to and drifting before the wind. In this situation my people at last began to be affected with severe rheumatisms, and I had three accidents from the violent motion of the ship—two men fell and dislocated their shoulders, and one broke a rib. The ship began to be leaky, but in all other respects as good a vessel as could possibly be; this increased our labour, and seeing no prospect of success, I conceived it would be hazarding the object of the voyage, and my conduct reprehensible under the discretionary orders I was honored with, to persist any longer, as I had not a moment's time to spare to proceed and refit at the Cape of Good Hope, and to be in time to pass the intricate parts of the voyage and to secure a completion of it. From these considerations I bore away on the 22d of April, repassed Staten Land on the 23d, and, without ever being in any port from the time of leaving Tenariff, I arrived here this day, with every man and officer in as good health as when they left England, notwithstanding for these last three months we have never been able to have our hatches open for six hours together.

Violent storms.

The ship leaky.

The route altered.

1788  
May 24.  
Refitting.

I shall refit with the utmost despatch, and proceed on the voyage by New Holland and New Zealand.

I have informed their Lordships by letter of this date of my proceedings by a Dutch ship; and an opportunity offering by a French packett, Havre de Grace, I thought it my duty to take that conveyance also [to] send a duplicate of my first letter.

I have, &c.,  
WM. BLIGH.

#### CAPTAIN BLIGH TO SECRETARY STEPHENS.

June 28.

Bounty, in False Bay, Cape of Good Hope,  
June 28th, 1788.

SIR,—

Ready for sea.

You will please to acquaint the Lords Commissioners of the Admiralty that I am now ready for sea, with his Majesty's ship under my command, and shall sail and execute their Lordships' directions with the utmost despatch. My route will be by the south part of New Holland and New Zealand. My people are in perfect health, and ship thoroughly refitted. This is the fourth letter I have had the honour to write to acquaint their Lordships of my proceedings.

I have, &c.,  
WM. BLIGH.

#### CAPTAIN HUNTER TO SECRETARY STEPHENS.

1789  
Jan. 3.

Sirius, in Table Bay, Cape of Good Hope,  
3rd January, 1789.

SIR,—

His Excellency M. Van de Graave,\* Governor of this settlement, having, upon my arrival here, very politely offer'd an immediate conveyance to Europe for any dispatches I might have to forward, I therefore embrace that opportunity of informing my Lords Commissioners of the Admiralty that, in obedience to an order from his Excellency Arthur Phillip, Esq., Governor of his Majesty's territory of New South Wales, &c., &c., a copy of which I send enclosed, together with the state and condition of the ship,† I sailed from Port Jackson on that coast, in his Majesty's ship Sirius, under my command, on the 2nd day of October, 1788; but Governor Phillip having declined to direct by what rout I should perform the voyage, I judged that at that season of the year the rout to the eastward, by Cape Horn, promised fairest

The Sirius  
leaves Sydney.

The Cape Horn  
route.

\* In other despatches the name is given as Von Graaffe.  
enclosures are not recorded.

† The



for an expeditious passage ; I therefore steered for the South Cape of New Zealand, which I passed on the 12th, and made the coast of Terra del Fuego on the 26th November. The weather off Cape Horn, altho' the summer was well advanced, was so exceedingly cold, occasioned by the vast mountains of ice which we daily fell in with, that the ship's company, who had been upon salt provisions ever since we left the Cape of Good Hope outward bound, and without any kind of vegetable, fell down very fast with the scurvy. I arrived in this bay on the 1st January, 1789, having Scurvy buried three seamen on the passage.

1789  
Jan. 3.

On the day I sailed from Port Jackson the ship sprung a leak, A leak which admitted 2 feet 4 inches water in the four hours, but as before my arrival here we had discovered it to be about two or three feet below the wale, starboard side, I hope to be able to have it stoped before I sail on my return to the coast of New South Wales.

I transmit by this opportunity a box containing dispatches from Governor Phillip, directed to Lord Sydney, one of his Majesty's Principal Secretaries of State. On the 12th of July last four transports\* under the command of Lieutenant Shortland Transports. sailed from Port Jackson for Europe. They took their route to the northward, and might possibly have called at Batavia. They have not touched here ; I therefore imagine they may have passed on to St. Helena and water'd there on their way home.

I think it necessary, in case Governor Phillip's dispatches by the above transports should not arrive before this may reach the Admiralty, to mention for the information of their Lordships that the harbour of Port Jackson, which is about 4 leagues to the northward of Botany Bay, having been examined and found a safe, extensive, and commodious harbour, the Governor had fixed the seat of Government there, instead of Botany Bay. Its Botany latitude is  $33^{\circ} 50'$  and its longitude  $151^{\circ} 25'$  Et. of meridian of discarded.

\* Alexander, Prince of Wales, Friendship, and Borrowdale.

Captain Hunter did not sight the South Cape on this occasion. In his Historical Journal, published in London in 1793, p. 95, when describing this trip, he says :—

"On the 12th, we passed the South Cape of New Zealand, but the weather being very hazy and squally, we did not attempt to make it, but kept a degree and a half to the southward of it ; here we met with vast numbers of birds of various kinds, mostly aquatic, such as albatrosses, pentada birds, divers, peterels, and a variety of gulls ; some of a kind I had not before seen during the voyage, very large, of a dark brown or mouse colour ; and another sort not quite so large, with a white body, dark wings, and the head of a light blue or lead colour. Much seaweed was also seen here in very large patches. We now had the wind fresh from the north-west quarter, with frequent squalls, attended with rain, and the weather cold. We found the variation of the compass 40 leagues south-south-east from the South Cape of New Zealand, to be  $16^{\circ} 54'$  east." [THE EDITOR.]

1789  
Jan. 3.

Greenwich. The three transports chartered by the East India Company for China\* were discharged, and left Port Jackson on the 6th May last; two of the store-ships remained when I sailed, and would be ready to sail for Europe about three weeks after my departure.

As no part of the service on which I came to this place† is yet in any forwardness I cannot give their Lordships any information upon it, but will leave an account of my proceedings to be forwarded from hence after my departure, if no opportunity should offer before I sail.

I am, &c.,

JNO. HUNTER.

CAPTAIN BLIGH TO SECRETARY STEPHENS.

Oct. 15.

SIR,—

Batavia, Octr. 15th, 1789.

Loss of the  
Bounty.

I beg you will present the enclos'd account of my transactions and of the loss of his Majesty's ship *Bounty* under my command unto the Lords Commissioners of the Admiralty, by which their Lordships will please to observe I have begun the account from the arrival of the ship at the Cape of Good Hope after my return from Cape Horn.

I left at Timor, to be sent by the first vessel that sailed, other accounts for their Lordships' inspection.

I have, &c.,

WM. BLIGH.

[Enclosure.]

Arrival at the  
Cape.

I arrived at the Cape of Good Hope on the 24th May, 1788, from whence I fully acquainted their Lordships of my proceedings, and being completely victualled and refitted I sailed on the 1st July.

Van Diemen's  
Land.

On the 20th August I arrived at Van Diemen's Land, and completed wooding and watering in Adventure Bay by the 4th Sept., when I sailed for Otaheite.

New Zealand.

On the 19th September, having pass'd the south part of New Zealand, I discovered a very dangerous cluster of rocky islots‡ (never known before). They extend  $3\frac{1}{2}$  miles east and west, and

\* Scarborough, Charlotte, and Lady Penrhyn.

† Hunter was sent to the Cape for supplies.

‡ The following is the account of the discovery of these islands given by Bligh in his "Voyage of the *Bounty*" (1792), pp. 55 and 56 [THE EDITOR]:—

"On the 14th, at noon, we were in  $49^{\circ} 24'$  S. latitude, and in  $168^{\circ} 3'$  E. longitude, which is on the same meridian with the south end of New Zealand. We altered our course, steering to the northward of east, and frequently saw rock-weed, which I supposed to have drifted from New

1½ north and So., and lie from the Traps (off the south end of New Zealand) S. 89° E., distance 146 leagues. Their latd. is 47° 44' So., and longitude 179° 09' Et. 1789 Oct. 15.

On the 26th October I anchored in Matavai Bay, Otaheite, but the season of the year render'd my situation not safe, and I therefore sailed on the 25th December into Toahroah Harbour, 3 miles from Matavai. I remained here untill the fourth of April, 1789, when I sailed with 1,015 beautyfull bread-fruit plants, and many fruit kind, in all 774 pots, 39 tubs, and 24 boxes. The BOUNTY sails with bread-fruit plants.

I found this harbour to be in the latitude of 17° 31½' So., and longitude 210° 31' 37" east, variation of compass 5° 31' E.

I left these happy islanders in much distress, for the utmost affection, regard, and good fellowship was among us during my stay. The king and all the royal family were always with me, and their good sense and observations, joined with the most engaging dispositions in the world, will ever make them beloved by all who become acquainted with them as friends. The islanders distressed.

On the 12th April I discovered an island called Whytootackee, whose chief was named Comackeiah, as I was informed by people who came off to us in a canoe. Their language seemed to prove them nearly the same people as at Otaheite. The island is about An island discovered.

Zealand. The sea now became rougher, from our being exposed to a long swell, which came from the N.E.

"On the 19th, at daylight, we discovered a cluster of small rocky islands, bearing east by north four leagues distant from us. We had seen no birds, or anything to indicate the nearness of land, except patches of rock-weed, for which the vicinity of New Zealand sufficiently accounted. The wind being at N.E. prevented our near approach to these isles; so that we were not less than three leagues distant in passing to the southward of them. The weather was too thick to see distinctly; their extent was only 3½ miles from east to west, and about half a league from north to south; their number, including the smaller ones, was thirteen. I could not observe any verdure on any of them: there were white spots like patches of snow; but, as Captain Cook, in describing the land of New Zealand, near Cape South, says, in many places there are patches like white marble, it is probable that what we saw might be of the same kind as what he had observed. The westernmost of these islands is the largest; they are of sufficient height to be seen at the distance of seven leagues from a ship's deck. When the easternmost bore north I tried for soundings, being then 10 miles distant from the nearest of them, and found bottom at 75 fathoms, a fine white sand: and again at noon, having run six leagues more to the E.S.E., we had soundings at 104 fathoms, a fine brimstone-coloured sand. The latitude of these islands is 47° 44' S.; their longitude 179° 7' E., which is about 145 leagues to the east of the Traps, near the south end of New Zealand. Variation of the compass here, 17° E. While in sight of the islands, we saw some penguins, and a white kind of gull with a forked tail. Captain Cook's track, in 1773 was near this spot, but he did not see the islands: he saw seals and penguins hereabouts, but considered New Zealand to be the nearest land. I have named them after the ship, the BOUNTY Isles."

1789  
Oct. 15.  
—

The Friendly  
Islands.

10 miles round, in latitude  $18^{\circ} 52'$  So. It has eight small keys\* lying joined by a reef to the S.S.E. of it and one to the W.S.W. The southernmost key lies in latitude  $18^{\circ} 58'$  So., and longitude obsd.  $200^{\circ} 19'$  Et., varian. compss.  $8^{\circ} 14'$  E. On the 18th April I saw Savage Island in  $19^{\circ} 02'$  So.,  $190^{\circ} 18'$  east.

On the 21st April I made the Friendly Islands, and on the 23rd following I anchored in Annamoka Road. On the 26th April, having completed my water and got on board some wood, I sailed. Annamoka lies in  $20^{\circ} 16'$  So.,  $185^{\circ} 30'$  east.

Tofoa.

On the 28th April, in the morning, the north-westernmost of the Friendly Islands, called Tofoa, bore N.E. 10 leagues, and I had directed my course to the W.N.W., with a ship in most perfect order, and all my plants in a most flourishing condition, all my men and officers in good health, and in short every thing to flatter and insure my most sanguine expectations. But I am now to relate one of the most atrocious and consummate acts of piracy ever committed.

The mutiny.

Capt. Bligh  
seized and  
bound.

At dawn of day, Fletcher Christian (officer of the watch), Chas. Churchill (ship's corporal), Thos. Burkett (seaman), John Mills (gunner's mate), came into my cabin, and, while I was asleep, seized me in my bed, and tied my hands behind my back with a strong cord, and, with cutlasses and bayonets fixed at my breast, threatened instant death if I spoke or made the least noise. I, nevertheless, called out so loud for help that every one heard me and were flying to my assistance, but all my officers, except those who were concerned, found themselves secured by armed centinels.

I was now haul'd upon deck in my shirt, without a rag else, and my hands tyed behind my back held by Fletcher Christian, and Chas. Churchill w'h a bayonet at my breast, and two men, Alexr. Smith and Thos. Burkitt behind me, with loaded musquets cocked and bayonets fixed. Under the guard I was put abaft the mizenmast.

The launch  
hoisted out.

The different hatchways were all guarded by armed men in the same manner, and those who were to be sent out of the ship and some of the mutineers who could be spared hoisted the boat out. Among these were the boatswain and carpenter, who, with some others, got sails, twine, rope, grapnel, and a small cask of water into the boat, about w'ch there were many altercations among the mutinous crew.

Bligh  
threatened  
with death.

When I exerted myself in speaking loud to try if I could rally any with a sense of duty in them, I was saluted with, "Damn his eyes, the —; blow his brains out." Christian threatening me with instant death if I did not hold my tongue.

\* Rocks forming small islands. From *Cayos* (Sp.).



Being confined, and kept apart from every one, Mr. Samuel,\* with great resolution, exerted himself and secured to me a quadrant and comp'ss, some cloaths, my journals, and material ship papers; but all my valuable instruments, and a timepiece of Mr. Kendal's make of great value, with a valuable collection of books, maps, and drawings, and money, with all my remarks and observations for 15 years past, were kept from me. He also secured 150 lbs. of bread, which proved of more value than every thing besides.

1789  
Oct. 15

Bligh's property  
kept from him.

The officers and men being now drove into the boat one by one, I was told by Christian: "Come, Capt. Bligh, your officers and men are now in the boat, and you must go with them; if you attempt to make the least resistance you will instantly be put to death." I was then taken hold of, under a guard of armed ruffians, and forced over the gangway into the boat, which waited only for me, and, untying my hands, we were veered astern by a rope. A few pounds of pork were now thrown to us. We were 19 in number, and some began to solicit a few of their little valuables that were left behind. I asked for firearms, and even at last solicited two, but we received insolence and were told we should have none. Four cutlasses were, however, thrown into the boat, and we were cast adrift in a most miserable situation.

Bligh forced  
into the boat.

No firearm  
allowed.

The size of the boat was 23 feet from stem to stern, and rowed six oars. We were so deep and lumbered that it was believed we could never reach the shore, and some of them made their jokes of it. We, however, by seven o'clock in the evening got safe under Tofoa, but the shore being steep and rocky could find no anchorage or landing. I therefore kept the boat under the land all night, paddling with two oars to preserve our station.

Arrival at  
Tofoa.

April 29th.—This day was spent in searching for a landing-place, and at the N.W. part of the island, in lat'd. 19° 41' S., I found a small cove, where with some difficulty I got a few of my people on shore to look for supplies. The weather proved stormy, which prevented me from going to sea, otherwise I should have proceeded to some of the principal islands in quest of the chiefs. This night we all slept in the boat at a grappell in the cove, and shared a few cocoanuts for subsistence, as I determined not to touch any thing that we had brought from the ship.

Looking for  
supplies.

30th.—The weather continued so stormy that I could not proceed to sea. I therefore went off with a party to see what could be got, but in the end we all returned miserably fatigued, without discovering anything but a little water in holes, the whole of which was not sufficient for one day's expence. As

Water scarce.

\* Note in MS.—Clerk.

1789  
Oct. 15.  
—

every one was now more or less jaded and wanted sleep, I took about one-half on shore for the night, and in a cave at the upper part of the cove they got tolerable good sleep, and those in the boat having more room became vastly benefitted by it.

Supplies  
obtained from  
the natives.

May 1st.—The weather continued so windy that I could not proceed to sea. Sent a party away at dawn of day to take another route in search of supplies. They found out the residence of the natives, who brought us a few bread-fruit, cocoanuts, and a few shells of water, which I bought for buttons of our jackets. At sundown they left us with a promise to bring larger supplies in the morning.

Spent the night as before.

The natives  
muster.

2nd.—The weather continued windy. In the morning the natives came to us with bread-fruit, &c., as yesterday, and also two chiefs, Eegyeefou and Maccaaccabou. Soon after two cannoes came in from a distant part of the island, and the natives were hourly increasing. The chiefs became acquainted with our situation—that the ship had sunk and we only were saved, and that I intended to go to Paulehow, their king. This seemed to give them pleasure, and Eegyeefou agreed as soon as it moderated to go with me. The readiness with which this man appeared to consent to go with me to Amsterdam gave me reason to think we should remain on good terms with these people, but unhappily I had soon cause to know the contrary. The natives began to

They become  
hostile.

be very troublesome, and made signs of hostilities towards us. I, however, thought they would go off at sundown, as they had done before, and that then I could leave the place without risk; but the reverse was the case. Three cannoes were now come in, and places fixed on for their residence during the night. I therefore determined to do our best while it was light, and directed some of the provisions I had bought to be put into the boat. The chiefs now desired me to remain on shore for the night, notwithstanding they perceived that I saw all their people arming with clubs and stones. The things being put into the boat, we were all on the go, when an inferior chief\* took me by the hand, pressing me to stay. I kept hold of this man, and w<sup>th</sup> my people now proceeded down the beach amidst a silent degree of horror on both sides. Nageetee left me, and all except one man got into the boat, who, while I was getting in, observing the stemfast not cast off, ran up the beach to effect it, notwithstanding I heard the master and others calling to him to return, while they were hauling me out of the water. The attack now began, with a shower of stones that flew like shot. The unfortunate poor man on shore† was killed instantly, and we were all more or less bruized and

Preparations  
for departure.

Attacked by  
natives.

\* Note in MS.—Nageetee.

† Quartermaster Norton.

wounded. As I hauled out to our grapnel, I hoped they could no longer annoy us ; but here I was mistaken, for they launched their cannoes and stoned us untill I got a league from the land. We could not close with them, because it was not in the power of men to do it with so heavy a boat ; they therefore took their distance to throw their shot, which they did with such execution that but a short time longer would have rendered us incapable of rowing, when they would first have stoned us to death and then taken the boat. I therefore, as the only thing left to save our lives, exhorted every one to persevere in rowing ; and throwing overboard some cloaths which beguiled them and they lost time in taking up, together with the night coming on, we very miraculously escaped.

1789  
Oct. 15.

Pursued and  
stoned.

Taking this as a real sample of their natural dispositions, there were little hopes to expect much where I was going, for I considered their good behaviour hitherto owing to a dread of our fire-arms, which now knowing us to have none would not be the case ; and that supposing our lives were safe, our boat, compass, and quadrant would all be taken from me, and, thereby, I should not be able to return to give an account of the transaction. I was solicited by all hands to take them towards home, and when I told them no hopes of relief for us remained, but what I might find at New Holland, until I came to Timor, a distance of 1,200 leag's, where was a Dutch Governor, but that I could not recollect at what part of the island he resided, they all agreed to live on one ounce of bread per day and a jill of water. I therefore, after examining our stock of provisions, which I found to consist of 150 lbs. bread, 28 galls. of water, 20 lbs. of pork, 3 bottles of wine, and 5 quarts of rum, and recommending for ever to their memory the promise they had made, bore away for New Holland, and from thence to Timor, a distance of 1,200 leag's, across a sea where the navigation is dangerous and but little known ; and in a small boat deep loaded, and with 18 souls, without a single map, and nothing but my own recollection and general knowledge of the situation of places, assisted by an old book of latitude and longitude to guide me.

Escape.

No help from  
the natives.

Short  
allowance.

Bound for  
Timor.

The secrecy of this mutiny was beyond all conception, and surprising it is that out of thirteen of the party who came with me, and lived always forward near the people and among them, no one could discover some symptoms of their bad intentions. With such deep-plann'd acts of villany, and my mind free of any suspicions, it is not wonderfull that I have been got the better of. I slept always with my cabbin door open for the officer of the watch to have access to me on all occasions, for the possibility of such a catastrophe was ever the farthest from my thoughts.

Secrecy of the  
mutiny.

1789

Oct. 15.

Cause of the  
mutiny.

To assign the cause of such a resolution we can only imagine from the huzzas of the mutineers that they have promised themselves greater pleasure and advantages at Otaheite than they were likely to meet with in their native country. To this land of guile they are certainly returned—a land where they need not labour, and where the allurements of dissipation are more than equal to anything that can be conceived. For particulars I must beg leave to refer their Lordships to my journal.

The whole  
watch  
concerned.

Christian was the officer of the deck, and the whole watch being concerned, except the two midshipmen, who had no suspicions of what their officer was about, it is not surprising that the business was speedily done, all the able men being concerned, as also the greatest number, as may be seen by the description list.\*

The loyal.

The people who accompanied me were :—

|                                    |                                      |
|------------------------------------|--------------------------------------|
| Jno. Fryer, master.                | Peter Linkletter, qr.-mr.            |
| Wm. Cole, boatsn.                  | Jno. Norton, do. (killed at Tofoa).  |
| Wm. Peckover, gunner.              | Geo. Simpson, do's mate.             |
| Wm. Purcell, carpenter.            | Law'ce Libogue, sailmaker.           |
| Thos. Dr. Ledward, acting surgeon. | Robt. Tinkler, Ab.                   |
| Wm. Elphinstone, master's mate.    | Jno. Smith, Ab.                      |
| Thos. Hayward, midshipman.         | Thos. Hall, Ab.†                     |
| Jno. Hallett, midshipman.          | Robert Lamb, Ab.                     |
| Jno. Samuel, clerk.                | Davd. Nelson, botanist (since dead). |

No., 18.

The disloyal.

The people who remained in the ship were :—

|                                    |                                  |
|------------------------------------|----------------------------------|
| Fletcher Christian, master's mate. | Jno. Sumner, Ab.                 |
| Geo. Stewart, acting do.           | Jno. Williams, Ab.               |
| Peter Heywood, midship'n.          | Matw. Thompson, Ab.              |
| Edwd. Young, do.                   | Thos. Ellison, Ab.               |
| Chas. Churchill, corporal.         | Wm. Mickoy, Ab.                  |
| James Morrison, boat'n mate.       | Jno. Millward, Ab.               |
| Jno. Mills, gunn's do.             | Richd. Skinner, Ab.              |
| Chas. Norman, carp's               | Mattw. Quintal, Ab.              |
| mate.                              | Mich'l Byrne, Ab.                |
| Thos. Mc'Intosh, do.               | Hen'y Hilbrant, Ab.              |
| crew.                              | Isaac Martin, Ab.                |
| Josh. Coleman, ar-                 | Alex'r Smith, Ab.                |
| mourer.                            | Wm. Muspratt, Ab.                |
| Thos. Burkitt, Ab.                 | Wm. Brown, botanist's assistant. |

No., 25.

Stormy weather.

1789, May 3rd.—To return to my proceedings in the boat. I steered to the W.N.W., as I formerly had heard from the Friendly Island people that land lay in that quarter. The weather continued very stormy and the sea run so very high that we had reason to expect to founder every instant. Unhappily

\* Post pp. 90-92.

† Died at Batavia.



we were obliged to throw many of our necessaries over board to lighten the boat, and we underwent great fatigue in bailing, and were miserably cold and wet in the nights.

1769  
Oct. 15.

May 4th.—On this day I discovered an island W.S.W., 4 or 5 leagues from me when I was in lat'd  $18^{\circ} 58' S.$   $182^{\circ} 16' E't.$  Islands discovered.

6th.—On to-day I discovered ten other islands, and at noon was in the lat'd  $17^{\circ} 53' So.,$   $179^{\circ} 43' E't.$

7th.—This day I discovered other islands, and at noon was in lat'd  $16^{\circ} 33' So.,$   $178^{\circ} 34' E't,$  when I was chased by two large cannoes. Storms of thunder, lightning, and rain; caught 6 gailons of water.

9th.—Fair w'r; kept steering to the W.N.W. and west.

10th.—Very heavy rains; hard gales and a high sea unto the 14th, constantly bailing, and suffering every degree of distress.

14th.—Discovered 5 islands, and was at noon in  $13^{\circ} 29' So.,$   $169^{\circ} 21'.$

15th.—Discovered an island, lat'd., noon,  $13^{\circ} 4' S.,$   $167^{\circ} 35' East.$  Hard gales and a high sea with thunder, lightning, and rain, and very dark dismal nights, not a star to be seen to steer by. Keeping the boat before the sea, constantly wet and suffering every calamity and distress.

May 21st.—Most dreadful weather, and the rain fell so heavy that we could scarce keep the boat from filling.

24th.—To the 24th the weather and sea continued very bad. We now dreaded the nights, for we were all benumbed with cold, being constantly wet. To act against the evils attending such a situation, I could only order every one when our cloaths became filled with water to strip naked and wring them, and when only wet by the rain to dip them first in the sea, so that this was the only resource we had for dry cloaths. Sufferings from wet and cold.

28th.—To the 28th the weather became better, when at midnight I fell in with the reefs of New Holland, the sea broke dreadfully high; I stood off shore for the night; at dawn of day stood in for the reefs again to search for a passage within it. At 9 in the morning I saw the reef again, and soon after standing along it to the northward, I discovered an opening which I safely entered, and happily got into smooth water. Lat'd of the channel  $12^{\circ} 50' S.,$   $145^{\circ} 08' E't.$  At  $\frac{1}{4}$  past 5 in the afternoon I got into a bay on an island about  $\frac{1}{4}$  of a mile from the main, and finding it uninhabited, I determined on searching for supplies. Night prevented us from doing more than gathering a few oysters which we found on a bed of rocks near the boat; it was, however, a great relief to us. As our boat was only large enough to admit one-half of us to rest at a time, I directed that one party should sleep on shore, so that every one was to be ready to go in search of supplies at dawn of day. The Australian coast sighted. Inside the reef. Sleeping on shore.

1789  
Oct. 15.  
Water and  
oysters.

May 29.—After a quiet and undisturbed night's rest we began to employ ourselves about what was to be done, and in an half hour I heard the joyfull tydings that fine fresh water was found. Oysters were plenty, but it was with much difficulty we could break them from the rocks. However, a sufficient quantity was got to give us a good meal. I had great difficulty in getting a fire, but at last effected it by a small magnifying glass.

I found no other supply to be expected here, except a few berries which were eat by the birds, and, therefore, every person had ventured to take as many as their stomachs would bear.

Sickness.

Weakness, with a dizziness in the head, and an extreme tenesmus, were our only complaints.

We discovered signs of the natives having been here, but the marks did not appear to be very recent. I was therefore not apprehensive, and permitted one-half of us to sleep on shore at night, as I had done before.

Preparing for  
sea.

30th.—In the morning I found every one vastly benefitted by their being here. I sent the parties out to gather oysters, and others filled our water-casks and got the boat ready for sea. Mr. Nelson found some fern root that I thought wholesome and very condusive to prevent thirst. For that reason I ordered a quantity of it into the boat.

Birds caught.

Birds could have been easily got here if I had had arms. On that account every one we saw recalled to us our miserable situation; but Providence has been graciously kind to us, for we frequently caught with our hands sea fowl, which made great addition to our dinner of bread. As a supply of water the rain was a great blessing to us, but I had not vessels to contain a sufficient quantity. It therefore happened that two gills, or a half pint of water, was what each person received in the course of the day, issued at 8 in the morning, at noon, and at sunset, with  $\frac{1}{34}$  of a lb. of bread at breakfast and the same at dinner, sometimes giving an allowance for supper.

The allowance  
of water.

I found the lat'd. of this place  $12^{\circ} 39' S.$ ,  $144^{\circ} 44'$ . The main appeared with a variety of high and low land interspersed with wood, and the more interior parts mountainous. I called it Restoration Isl'd.

Natives.

31.—At 4 in the afternoon, after having performed prayers, I sailed. About 20 natives came down on the opposite shore, armed with spears. They were black, and waved to us to come to them.

Inhabited  
islands.

I steered along shore to the N.N.W. and N.W. b. N. in the direction of the coast. Saw several islands, and at 8 in the morning passed through a cluster, and saw more natives armed in the same manner, and made the same signs as those I had seen before. I, however, did not land.

The appearance of the country is totally changed, being very low, and mostly sand hills.

1789

Oct. 15.

Landed on an island, and gathered (shell fish) oysters and a few clams. Found fine rain water in a hollow of rocks, which again enabled us to fill up our sea store. From the heights of this island I saw a small key to the N.W. b. N. As my situation was too near the main, having discovered at this place the natives to have large cannoes, I again prepared to sail, so as to reach the key before night. At noon dined on oysters and clams, and found the latit'd. of the isl'd  $11^{\circ} 58' \text{ S.}$ , long'd.,  $144^{\circ} 29' \text{ E.}$

Shell-fish and water.

June 1st.—This evening I landed, and spent the night at the key above mentioned. Got a few clams. Some of my people were taken ill with vomitings and dizzyness in their heads, besides a most dreadfull tenesmus afflicted those who had not been to stool since they left the ship, and others since they left Tofoa.

Illness.

At noon I found the latitude of this key  $11^{\circ} 47' \text{ So.}$ , long'd.  $144^{\circ} 24' \text{ Et.}$

June 2nd.—This afternoon it came on a strong gale, and my people being still ill I preferred giving them a good night's rest to going to sea. At dawn of day I found them much better. Sailed. Passed several isl'ds. The coast sandy and barren. At noon lat'd.  $11^{\circ} 18' \text{ So.}$ ,  $144^{\circ} 20' \text{ Et.}$

A gale.

June 3rd.—At night I again stopt on an island, the lat'd. of which is  $10^{\circ} 52' \text{ So.}$ , long'd.  $144^{\circ} 03' \text{ Et.}$ , and at dawn of day I again sailed and followed the direction of the coast to the N.W. Saw many islands. At noon I was in the lat'd.  $10^{\circ} 31' \text{ So.}$ , long'd.  $143^{\circ} 43' \text{ Et.}$  I now found I had passed the north part of New Holland. Land woody.

Cape York rounded.

4th.—At 5 o'clock this evening I left New Holland and steered for Timor, the exact lat'd. of which I was not certain of, but I determined to steer for it in the lat'd. of about  $9^{\circ} 30' \text{ So.}$

Steering for Timor

12.—At 3 o'clock this morning, to the great joy of every person, we discovered Timor bearing W.N.W. At daylight I found I was on the S.E. part of it, and therefore determined to run down on the south side, and to lay to at night lest I might pass any settlement, for I was not certain where the Dutch Governor resided.

Timor sighted.

14th.—This afternoon, after having passed through a heavy breaking sea and shoal water, I discovered an opening, into which I sailed and anchored at 3 o'clock. Since found to be a bay on the west part of Timor, opposite to Pulo Samon, in the south entrance. The island Rotty being in sight to the S.W. b. S. Saw some Malays. Sent two men after them, who brought several Malays to me, one of whom agreed to show me Coupang and conduct me to the Governor. This being settled, we sailed and

Arrival at Koepang.

1789  
Oct. 15.

rowed along the east shore, and in the morning, a little before day, I anchored off the town and waited for leave to come on shore.

Kindness of the  
people.

At daybreak I was desired by a soldier to land, and I was conducted to a gentleman's house, a Capt'n Spikerman, who upon my application requested I would order all my people up to his house that they might receive some nourishment. The town surgeon was sent for (Mr. Max), who gave us every kind assistance in dressing our sores, and all who saw us were ready to contribute to the relief of such poor distressed creatures, one-half of whom could not have lived a week longer, and perhaps not a few days.

The Governor  
ill.

The Governor from extreme ill-health was not able to see me just at this time, but he became anxious, and I had it in my power to see him by eleven o'clock. He received me in a most affectionate and peculiar manner of kindness. Orders were instantly given for our accommodation, and I had full power to see my people taken care of.

An extra-  
ordinary  
voyage.

Thus ended happily, through the assistance of Divine Providence, without accident, a voyage of the most extraordinary nature that ever happened in the world, let it be taken in its extent, duration, and so much want of the necessaries of life.

Miserable  
beings.

For any one to conceive the picture of such poor miserable beings as we were, let him fancy that in his house he is in the moment of giving relief to 18 men, whose ghastly countenances (but from the known cause) would be equally liable to affright as demand pity; let him view their limbs full of sores and their bodies nothing but skin and bones habited in rags; and at last let him conceive he sees the tears of joy and gratitude flowing o'er their cheeks at their benefactor. With what a mixture of horror, surprise, and pity will his mind be then agitated. So felt the people of Timor on giving us relief.

All wants  
supplied.

The Governor's\* ill health occasioned my transactions to be with a Mr. Timotheus Wanjon, the second in power at this place. Of him I was supplied w'th whatever I was in want. The surgeon, Mr. Max, attended daily our sick, our own surgeon being incapable, and in a short time our health began to improve.

Sailing  
arrangements.

I found in the road three vessels that were to sail for Batavia about the latter part of September, but their loading became so unexpectedly tedious that it amounted to a certainty, if I remained to go with them, I should be too late at Batavia to sail for Europe in the October fleet, in which case I must remain

\* *Note in MS.*—Wm. Adriaan Van Este.



there untill January in the most unhealthy time of the year to get a passage in some of our China ships. I therefore determined to hire or purchase a vessel to take us away, and gave publick notice of my intention. Several offers were made to me, the lowest of which was that they stated the voyage to them to be equal to seven months, and therefore their price was 850 dollars, because they could not return before the west monsoon set in. As this was the case, I considered a purchase to be vastly preferable, and on the 1st July I bought a vessel for 1,000 rix dollars, and called her the Resource.

1789  
Oct. 15.

A vessel  
purchased

I now presented a short account of my voyage to the Governor, Mr. Van Este, with a description list of the pirates, and requested, in his Majesty's name, that orders might be given to all their settlements to take them if they appeared. I also made application for certain sums of money, or for the Governor to take upon him to pay my accounts, for which I would give bills on the Commissioners of his Majesty's Navy and Victualling; but a great demur now took place. However, Mr. Wanjon\* at last took it upon himself and paid or advanced the money out of his private fortune, which the Governor did not like to advance on the East India Company's account.

Financial  
arrangements.

On the 20th July.—This day died of an inflammatory fever Mr. David Nelson.† He had just recovered strength sufficient to go about the country, when, by laying aside some warm cloathing he had worn for a considerable time, he caught a severe cold.

Death of Mr.  
Nelson.

As a tribute justly due to him, I have to say he was ever diligent in his busyness, and it always was his desire to forward my directions for the good of the service we were on. He was also equally serviceable and spirited in my voyage here, in the course of which he always gave me pleasure by conducting himself with resolution and obedience to my orders. I regret his loss very much.

A faithful  
officer.

On the 19th August I was ready for sea, and having finished all my busyness and informed the Lords Commissioners of the Admiralty of my proceedings, I waited only for the tide to get out of the river.

On the 20th I sailed. I left the Governor, Mr. Van Este, at the point of death.

Departure for  
Batavia.

I beg leave to acquaint their Lordships that the greatest kindness and attention has been shown to us while here by Mr. Timotheus Wanjon, who seconded every friendly wish of the Governor with real services, and will ever deserve our gratefull thanks.

\* Note in MS.—Second here.

† Botanist to the expedition.

1789

Oct. 15.

The kindness of  
the town  
surgeon.

The surgeon of the town, Mr. Max, has also been ever attentive to my sick people, and has daily and hourly attended them with great care, for which I could not get him to render me any account or other answer than that he thought it his duty.

I find the situation of the Fort of Coupang to be  $10^{\circ} 12' S.$ , longd.  $127^{\circ} 09' E.$ ; by the Dutch,  $10^{\circ} 11' S.$ ,  $121^{\circ} 51' E.$  of Green'ch.

On the 30th August I passed through Streights Mangaryue, on the west end of the Island Flores,  $4^{\circ} 00'$  west of Coupang, latitude south part Streights  $8^{\circ} 50' S.$ , and of the north  $8^{\circ} 30' S.$

Java.

On the 7th Sept'r passed the N.E. part of Java, and I determined to touch at the different principal settlements of the Dutch along the north side of this island.

On the 10th, after some little difficulty, I found out the settlement of Passourwang, and here I received great civility and refreshment from a Captain Van Reyck, the Resident, who told me he could not allow me to be longer there than one day.

On the 12th I sailed for Sourabaya.

Sourabaya.

On the 13th anchored in Sourabaya Road. Received great civility and refreshment here from Mr. Anthony Barkay, the Premier of this town, who, fearfull of my meeting with pirates, ordered me four prows to see me safe to Samarang.

On the 17th sailed from Sourabaya.

Samarang.

On the 23rd anchored at Samarang. Here I was obliged to get a new mainmast, and, being refitted, I sailed on the 26th for Batavia, with one prow in company to defend us against piratical vessels, which, it is said, the coast is very much infested with. At this place the Governor of Java resides.

Arrival at  
Batavia.

On the 2nd October I anchored in Batavia Road, and I landed about 4 in the afternoon. At 5 the Governor-General received me with much politeness and civility. I presented to him an account of the loss of his Majesty's ship, with a description of the pirates, and requested in his Majesty's name that directions might be given to their different settlements to take them if they appeared. I requested leave to sell his Majesty's schooner that I commanded by publick sale; that I might have my people and officers taken care of while here; and that his Excellency would direct and give orders for me to be received on board the first ship that sailed for Europe. I received the fullest assurances that every thing should be done that possibly could for my accommodation, and that my petition would be presented in the morning to the Council. In the morning my request was granted, and I ordered the vessel to come into the river. I had now one man ill of fever and flux, and two invalids, who I directed to be sent to the country hospital, about 4 miles from town.

The schooner  
to be sold.

It was with great difficulty I got through what I had to do for those who were with me, when I was attacked with violent fever and headache, and my life became in imminent danger. On the 7th I was removed out to the Physician-General's house, and the fever abated.

1789  
Oct. 15.  
Fever.

On the 9th I applied to the Governor-General to allow me and my people to depart for Europe in the packet that was to sail in the course of a week or ten days, when I was informed his Excellency could not send us all in one ship; but that as the physician had informed him of the risk I run by remaining at Batavia being very great, he consented for me, with two others, to have a passage, altho it was contrary to orders that the packet should carry any passengers.

Sailing  
arrangements.

The 10th Octr. the schooner was put up at publick sale, and sold only for 295 rix dollars. Died, Thos. Hall.

The schooner  
sold.

On the 11th I was charged in an account as a tax for sale of the schooner, but I refused paying any tax; it was therefore no longer demanded.

I now found myself so debilitated that I determined to sail in the packet. My people and officers were to be put into different ships. It therefore only rested whether I was to sail first or last.

The Sabandar\* brought me word on the 12th that the Governor and Council had considered it absolutely necessary to their being possessed of full powers to detain the ship and men belonging to his Britannick Majesty†; that my officers and men should be sworn and examined as from a requisition on my part. I could have no objection.

Examination as  
to the mutiny.

On the 15th the officers and men attended at the Stadt House and were examined and sworn to the cause and loss of his Majesty's ship, a copy of which was sent to me.

As it is impossible to say where a set of piratical people may go, I thought it proper to acquaint his Excellency Lord Cornwallis‡ with the loss of his Majesty's ship, and sent him a description list of the pirates.

News sent to  
India.

I now gave the master written orders how to proceed, and left with him the amount of the sale of the schooner, with orders to give in advance one month's pay to every one except himself and surgeon; and to see that such money was laid out in warm clothing, to pass the Cape with. Mr. John Samuel (clerk) and John Smith (seaman) I directed to go in the packet w'th me.

On the 16th October I embarked on board the Vlydt packet, Peter Couvret, commander, and sailed.§

WM. BLIGH.

Departure for  
the Cape.

\* Shebander. † The Bounty and her piratical crew. ‡ The Governor-General of India. § For the Cape of Good Hope, en route to England.

1789

Oct. 15.

List of the  
mutineers.

*Description list of the pirates remaining on board his Majesty's armed vessel Bounty, on the 28th April, 1789.*

Fletcher Christian, mas'r mate ; aged 24 years ; 5 feet 9 inches high ; very dark complexion ; dark-brown hair ; strong made ; a star tatowed on his left breast ; backside tatowed ; a little bow-legged ; he is subject to a violent perspiration in his hands, so that he soils any thing he handles.

George Stewart, mid. ; aged 23 years ; 5 feet 7 inches high ; good complexion ; dark hair ; slender made ; narrow-chested and long neck ; on his left breast is tatowed a star, and also one on the left arm, on which likewise is tatowed a heart with darts ; tatowed on the backside ; very small features.

Peter Heywood, mid. ; aged 17 years ; 5 feet 7 inches high ; fair complexion ; light-brown hair ; well proportioned ; very much tatowed, and on the right leg is tatowed the legs of Man, as the impression of that coin is ; at this time he had not done growing ; he speaks with the Isle of Man accent.

Edward Young, mid. ; aged 22 years ; 5 feet 8 inches high ; dark complexion, and rather a bad look ; dark-brown hair ; strong made ; has lost several of his fore teeth, and those that remain are all rotten ; a small mole on the left side of the throat, and on the right arm is tatowed a heart and dart through it, with E.Y. underneath, and the date of the year 1788 or 1789, we are not sure.

Charles Churchill, ship's corporal ; aged 30 years ; 5 feet 10 inches high ; fair complexion ; short light-brown hair ; bald-headed ; strong made ; the fore-finger of his left hand crooked, and the hand shows the mark of a severe scald ; tatowed in several parts of the body.

James Morrison, boatsw's mate ; aged 28 years ; 5 feet 8 inches high ; sallow complexion ; long black hair ; slender made ; lost the use of the 1st joint of the fore-finger of his right hand ; tatowed with star under his left breast, and a garter round his left leg with the motto : "Honi soit qui mal y pense" ; has been wounded in one of his arms w'th a musquet ball.

John Mills, gunner's mate ; aged 40 years ; 5 feet 10 inches high ; fair complexion ; light-brown hair ; a strong raw-boned man ; a scar in his right armpit occasioned by an abscess.

John Millward, A.B. ; aged 22 years ; 5 feet 5 inches high ; brown complexion ; dark hair ; strong made ; tatowed under the pit of the stomach with a Taoomy or breast-plate of Otaheite.

Matthew Thompson, A.B. ; aged 40 years ; 5 feet 8 inches high ; very dark complexion ; short black hair ; slender made ; has lost the joint of his great toe of his right foot ; is tatowed.



1789  
Oct. 15.

W. L. Mickoy, A.B. ; aged 25 years ; 5 feet 6 inches high ; fair complexion ; light brown hair ; strong made ; a scar where he has been stabbed in the belly ; a small scar under his chin ; is tatowed.

Matthew Quintal ; aged 21 years ; 5 feet 5 inches high ; fair complexion ; light brown hair ; strong made ; very much tatowed ; tatowed on the backside and other places.

Jno. Sumner ; aged 24 years ; 5 feet 8 inches high ; fair complexion ; brown hair ; slender made ; a scar upon the left cheek, and tatowed in several places.

Thomas Burkitt ; aged 26 years ; 5 feet 9 inches high ; fair complexion ; very much marked with small pox ; brown hair ; well made, and very much tatowed.

Isaac Martin ; aged 30 years ; 5 feet 11 inches high ; sallow complexion ; short brown hair ; raw-boned ; tatowed on his left breast with a star.

Wm. Muspratt ; aged 30 years ; 5 feet 6 inches high ; dark complexion ; brown hair ; slender made ; very strong black beard ; scared under his chin ; tatowed in several places of his body.

Henry Hilbrant ; aged 25 years ; 5 feet 7 inches high ; fair complexion ; sandy hair ; very strong made ; his left arm shorter than the right, having been broke ; is an Hanoverian, and speaks bad English. He is tatowed in several places.

Alexander Smith ; aged 22 years ; 5 feet 5 inches high ; brown complexion ; brown hair ; strong made ; pitted with the small pox ; very much tatowed ; scar on his right foot.

John Williams ; aged 25 years ; 5 feet 5 inches high ; dark complexion ; black hair ; slender made ; a scar on the back part of his head ; is a native of Guernsey, and speaks French ; is tatowed.

Richd. Skinner ; aged 22 years ; 5 feet 8 inches high ; fair complexion ; light brown hair ; very well made ; scars on both ankles and on his right shin ; is tatowed ; and by trade a hair dresser.

Thos. Ellison ; aged 17 years ; 5 feet 3 inches high ; fair complexion ; dark hair ; strong made ; has got his name tatowed on his right arm, and dated Oct'r 25th, 1788.

Wm. Brown, botanist assistant ; aged 27 years ; 5 feet 8 inches high ; fair complexion ; dark brown hair ; rather slender made ; a remarkable scar on one of his cheeks, which contracts the eye lid and runs down to his throat, occasioned by the King's Evil ; is tatowed.

Michl. Byrne ; aged 28 years ; 5 feet 6 inches high ; fair complexion, and is almost blind ; plays the fiddle ; has the mark of an issue in the back of his neck.

1789  
Oct. 15.

Joseph Coleman, armourer ; aged 40 years ; 5 feet 6 inches high ; fair complexion ; grey hair ; strong made ; a heart tatowed on one of his arms. This man declared to me publickly when I was in the boat that he knew nothing of the transaction, and begged of me to remember he told me of it, and that he was kept against his consent.

Thos. M'Intosh, carpt's crew ; aged 28 years ; 5 feet 6 inches high ; fair complexion ; light brown hair ; slender made ; pitted by the small pox.

Charles Norman, carp. mate ; aged 26 years ; 5 feet 9 inches high ; fair complexion ; light brown hair ; slender made ; pitted by the small pox, and has a remarkable motion with his head and eyes.

These two last, M'Intosh and Norman, declared as Coleman had done. Michl. Byrne, I was told, had no knowledge of what was doing.

WM. BLIGH.

Oct. 13.

Illness.

LIEUTENANT BLIGH TO SIR JOSEPH BANKS. (Banks Papers.)\*

DEAR Sir,—

Batavia, October 13, 1789.

I am now so ill that it is with the utmost difficulty I can write to you ; but as I hope to be in England before you can receive it, the necessary information which perhaps may be omitted in this letter will be of no consequence.

Account of the  
voyage.

I have, however, for your satisfaction, enclosed to you a short account of my voyage.† It is nearly a copy of what I have given to the Governor of Coupang‡ and the Governor-General here, because my weak habit of body at present will not allow me to do more.

An unfortunate  
enterprise.

You will now, sir, with all your generous endeavors for the publick good, see an unfortunate end to the undertaking ; and I feel very sensibly how you will receive the news of the failure of an expedition that promised so much. The anxious and miserable hours I have past is beyond my description ; but while I have health the strange vissicitude of human affairs can never affect me. Unhappily, I have lost it at present, for on my ar-

\* After the seizure of the *Bounty* by mutineers, Bligh, with the master, surgeon, two quarter-masters, two midshipmen, the botanist, the clerk, and ten of the crew, were placed on board one of the ship's boats, which arrived at Koepang, a Dutch settlement on Timor Island, after a perilous voyage of 3,600 miles, on the 15th June, 1789. From Koepang, Bligh found his way to Batavia, and afterwards to England, *via* the Cape of Good Hope.

† Post, pp. 94–104.

‡ Now spelt Koepang or Kupang.

rival here I was seized with a fever, which, fixing in my head, it made me almost distracted; but I am now better, and am to sail in the packet on Thursd. next, which will save my life.

1789  
Oct. 13.

You will find that the ship was taken from me in the most extraordinary manner, and I presume to say it could not have been done in any other way. I can, however, sir, promise to you that my honor and character is without a blemish, and I shall appear as soon as I possibly can before the Admiralty that my conduct may be enquired into, and where I shall convince the world I stand as an officer despising mercy and forgiveness if my conduct is at all blameable.

An extraordinary crime.

Bligh courts inquiry.

Had I been accidentally appointed to the command the loss of the ship would give me no material concern; but when I reflect that it was through you, sir, who undertook to assert I was fully capable, and the eyes of every one regarding the progress of the voyage, and perhaps more with envy than with delight, I cannot say but it affects me considerably. To those, however, who may be disposed to blame, let them see I had in fact completed my undertaking. What man's situation could be so peculiarly flattering as mine 12 hours before the loss of the ship? Everything was in the most perfect order, and we were well stored with every necessary both for service and health. By early attention to those particulars I acted against the power of chance in case I could not get through Endeavour Straights, as well as against any accident that might befall me in them; and to add to this, I had most successfully got my plants in a most flourishing and fine order, so that upon the whole the voyage was  $\frac{3}{4}$  over, and the remaining part no way doubtfull. Every person was in the most perfect health, to establish which I had taken the greatest pains, and bore a most anxious care through the whole course of the voyage.

Banks's recommendation.

No warning.

The crew in perfect health.

I even rejected carrying stock for my own use, and throwing away the hencoops and every convenience, I roofed a place over the quarter-deck and filled it with plants, which I looked at with delight every day of my life.

The plants before everything.

I can only conjecture that the pirates (among whom is poor Nelson's assistant) have ideally assured themselves of a more happy life among the Otaheiteans than they could possibly have in England, which, joined to some female connections, has most likely been the leading cause of the whole busyness.

The motive for the mutiny.

If I had been equipped with more officers and marines the piracy could never have happened.

Equipment insufficient.

I arrived here on the 1st instant, and solicited the Governor-General to be allowed a passage in the first ship that sailed for Europe, but he has told me that he could not possibly send us

1789  
Oct. 13.

all in one ship, and has consented, as granting me a favor, to be allowed to go in the packet, for the physician-general has represented my life in danger if I remained here. I am, &c.,  
WM. BLIGH.

[Enclosure.]

LIEUTENANT BLIGH TO SIR JOSEPH BANKS. (Banks Papers.)\*

ON the 16th August, 1787, I received my commission to command his Majesty's armed vessel *Bounty* (for that was her establishment), and to fit her out with the utmost despatch for remote parts.

The *Bounty*  
described.

The burthen of this ship was nearly two hundred and fifteen tons, her extreme length on deck 90 ft. 10 in., and breadth from outside to outside of the bends 24 ft. 3 in., a flush deck, and a pretty figure-head of a woman in a riding-habit.

Complement.

The complement of men and officers :—

|                            |                     |
|----------------------------|---------------------|
| 1 lieutenant and commander | 1 qr.-master's mate |
| 1 master                   | 1 boatswain's mate  |
| 1 boatswain                | 1 gunner's mate     |
| 1 gunner                   | 1 carpenter's mate  |
| 1 carpenter                | 1 sailmaker         |
| 1 surgeon                  | 1 armourer          |
| 2 master's mates           | 1 corporal          |
| 2 midshipmen               | 1 carpenter's crew  |
| 1 clerk                    | 24 able seamen      |
| 2 quarter-masters          | 45, total.          |

Out of the number 45 is one borne not actually on board, his pay going to the support of widows, so that the real number on board were 44 seamen and officers, likewise one botanist and an assistant, the whole being 46.

Orders.

On the 4th October I was fully victualled and stored for 18 months, and on the 20th Novemr., 1787, I received my final orders to proceed on my voyage, the purport of which was as follows :—

To take the  
bread-fruit-tree  
to the West  
Indies.

The King, upon a representation from his subjects in the West Indies that the introduction of the bread-fruit-tree among them would be of universal good to constitute an article of food, and that such having been signified to be his Majesty's pleasure unto the Lords Commissioners of the Admiralty by Lord Sydney, one of his Principal Secretaries of State, I was therefore directed to sail forthwith round Cape Horn for the Society Islands, in latitude about 18° S. and longitude 210° east of Greenwich, and there, with the necessary articles I was furnished

Route.

\* This letter was sent to Sir Joseph Banks on October 13, 1789. Ante, p. 92.



with, to procure of the natives as many plants as I could stow on board the ship.

1787-8

Having completed this, I was to proceed through Endeavour Straights (which separate New Guinea from New Holland), and from thence to Prince's Island, in the Straights of Sunda, leaving to my discretion to touch at Java or any other island for refreshment and water as I might think most proper.

From Prince's Island I was to proceed discretionally to St. Vincent's, one of the Windward Islands, and depositing one-half of my plants there, I was to go immediatly to Jamaica, and having given the remainder there to persons appointed to receive them, I was then, with such plants as were directed by his Majesty to be put on board, to return to England.

This was the sole design of my voyage, to complete which I sailed from Spithead on the 23rd December, 1787.

On the 23rd March, 1788, I doubled Staten Land,\* and attempted to make my passage round Cape Horn, between the latitude of 59° S. and 61° S., but I met with such dreadful tempestuous weather and mountainous seas, with hail and snow storms, that altho' I tried it for 30 days I could not accomplish it.

Failure to round Cape Horn.

I therefore (as my people were getting ill, and I had the honor to have the most discretionary orders to do as I thought best for the good of the voyage) determined to bear away for the Cape of Good Hope on the 22nd of April, and repassed Staten Land the next day.

Cape of Good Hope.

On the 24th May anchored at the Cape of Good Hope, and having refitted and completed my stores and provisions, I sailed on the 1st July, 1788, arrived at Van Diemen's Land on the 20th August, and having completed wooding and watering, I sailed from thence the 4th September.

Van Diemen's Land.

On the 19th September, after having past the south part of New Zealand, I discovered very dangerous rocky islets never known before. They extend  $3\frac{1}{2}$  miles east and west, and  $1\frac{1}{2}$  north and south. They lie from the Traps, off the south end of New Zealand, so. 89 east, distant 146 leagues. Their latitude is 47° 44' 30" so. ; longitude, 179° 09' east.

New Zealand.

On the 26th October I anchored in Matavai Bay, Otaheite ; sailed the 25th December, and anchored in Toahroah Harbour, 3 miles distance from the bay. I remained here untill the 4th April, when I sailed with 1,015 bread-fruit plants and many fruit kind, in all 774 pots, 39 tubs, and 24 boxes. Latitude of this harbour, 17° 31' 26" S. ; longitude, p'r observ'n, sun and moon, and stars each side of the moon, 210° 31' 37" E. ; variation compass, 5° 31' E.

Otaheite.

\* Staten Island.

1789

Kindness of  
King and  
people.

I left these happy islanders in much distress, for the utmost affection, regard, and good fellowship remained among us during my stay. The King and all the Royal family were allways my guests, and their good sense and observations, joined with the most engaging dispositions in the world, will ever make them beloved by all who become acquainted with them as friends.

An island  
discovered.

On the 12th April I discover'd an island, called by the natives Whytootackee, whose chief was named Comackaiah, as I was informed by people in a cannoe that came off to me. Their language seemed to prove them nearly the same people as at Otaheite. This island is about ten miles in circuit, in latitude  $18^{\circ} 52'$  S. It has eight small keys, lying joined by a reef to the S.S.E. of it, and one to the W.S.W. The southernmost key lies in latitude  $18^{\circ} 58'$  S.; the longitude by observation is  $200^{\circ} 19'$  east of Greenwich; variation compass,  $8^{\circ} 14'$  E.

Savage Island.

On the 18th of April I saw Savage Island, in  $19^{\circ} 02'$  S., and longitude, by my observation,  $190^{\circ} 18'$  E. of Greenwich.

The Friendly  
Islands.

On the 21st of April I made the Friendly Islands, and on the 23rd following I anchored in Annamoca Road (called by Tasman, Rotterdam). On the 26th, having completed my water and got on board some wood, I sailed.

This island lies in latitude  $20^{\circ} 16'$  S.,  $185^{\circ} 30'$  E.

Tofoa.

On the 28th of April, in the morning, the N.W.'most of the Friendly Islands, called Tofoa, bore N.E. ten leagues, and I had directed my course to the W.N.W., with a ship in most perfect order, and all my plants in a most flourishing condition, all my men and officers in good health, and, in short, everything to flatter and insure my most sanguine expectations and success.

The mutiny.

But I am now to relate one of the most atrocious and consummate acts of piracy ever committed.

Capt. Bligh  
seized and  
bound.

At dawn of day Fletcher Christian, officer of the watch, Charles Churchill, ship's corporal, Thomas Burkitt, seaman, and several others came into my cabbin, and while I was asleep seized and tyed my hands behind my back with a strong cord, and with cutlasses and a bayonet fixed at my breast threatened instant death if I spoke or made the least noise. I, nevertheless, called out so loud that everyone heard me, and were flying to my assistance; but all my officers, except those concerned, were kept in their cabbins by armed centinels, and the arm-chest was in their possession. I was now hauled upon deck in my shirt, and hands tyed behind me, held by Fletcher Christian and Charles Churchill, with a bayonet at my breast, and two men, Alex. Smith and Thomas Burkitt, behind me with loaded musquets cocked and bayonets fixed. Under this guard I was kept abaft the mizenmast. The different hatchways were all guarded by armed men in the same manner, and those who were to be sent out of

The mutineers  
in possession.

the ship, and some of the mutineers who could be spared, hoisted the boats out. Among these was the boatswain, who, with some others, got sails, twine, rope, grapnel, and a small cask of water into the boat, about which there were many altercations among the mutinous crew, and exerting myself in speaking loud to try if I could rally any with a sense of duty in them, I was saluted with, "Damn his eyes! blow his brains out."

1789

A boat lowered.

Being confined and kept apart from everyone, Mr. Samuel, my clerk, secured to me a quadrant and compass, some cloaths, my journals, and a few material ship's papers; but all my valuable instruments, with a timepiece of three hundred and fifty guineas value, a valuable collection of books, maps, and drawings, with all my remarks and observations for fifteen years past, were kept from me. He also secured about one hundred and fifty pounds of bread.

Books and papers retained.

The officers and men being now drove into the boat one by one, I was told by Christian, "Sir, your officers are now in the boat, and you must go with them." I was then taken hold of under a guard, and forced over the gangway into the boat, which waited only for me, and untying my hands, I was veer'd astern by a rope. A few pounds of pork were now thrown to us, being nineteen in number; and each began to solicit some of their little valuables that were left behind them. I desired only some firearms, and even at last solicited two, but we received insolence, and were told I should have none. Four cutlasses were, however, thrown into the boat, and we were cast adrift, and rowed with all our strength for the land.

Officers and men forced into the boat.

Cast adrift.

The size of the boat was 23 feet from stem to stern, and rowed six oars, and was so deeply lumbered, that they believed we could never reach the shore, and some of them made their jokes of it. However, by 7 o'clock in the evening I got safe under Tofoa, but could find no landing, and therefore kept the boat under the land all night, paddling with two oars to preserve our station.

Sheltering under the land.

29th.—Endeavouring to find landing, to increase our stock of water and to get some cocoanuts and provisions.

30th.—Found landing at the N.W. part of the island, in a cove, latitude 19° 41' S., as I observed it. Went in search of water, but found only a few quarts in holes of the rocks; suffered much fatigue and distress. I should now have proceeded, as I intended, for some of the islands where I had a knowledge of the chiefs, for I was well acquainted here, but the wind and sea was too stormy to venture out. Part of us slept in the boat, and others, with myself, on shore, and as we saw no natives we felt our distress the more, because we wanted not to use any of our own stock.

Looking for water

1789  
Food from the  
natives.

1st May.—Party out as yesterday, and found out the residence of the natives, who brought supplies of cocoanuts and bread-fruit, besides shells of water, all of which I bought for buttons which we cut off our cloaths. They all left us at sundown. W'r so windy could not proceed to sea.

The natives  
hostile.

2nd.—In the morning two chiefs—Eegyee-fow, and the other Maccaacabou—came down; also two cannoes came in, and another chief, called Vageetee, and having enquired our situation and my determination to proceed to Paulehow, their king (Eegyee-fow) agreed as soon as it moderated to go with me. This readiness gave me pleasure, but in a few hours I had as much uneasiness. The natives began to be very troublesome, and shewed signs of hostilities towards us. We, however, thought they would go off at sundown, as they had done before, and that then I could leave the place without any risk, but it proved to the contrary, for three cannoes were now come in, and places were fixed on for their residence during the night and fires made.

An attack.

I therefore determined to do our best while it was light, and directed some provisions we had bought to be put in the boat. The chiefs desired I would stay, notwithstanding they perceived that I saw all their people were arming with clubs and stones. We were now all on the go, and taking one of the chiefs by the hand, with a cutlass in the other, and my people with sticks, we proceeded down to the boat, when we were attacked by a multitude of Indians, in the course of which I lost a very worthy good man,\* and the rest of us more or less bruized and wounded.

Stoned by the  
natives.

As I hauled out to our grapnel I hoped they could no longer annoy us, but here I was mistaken, for they launched their cannoes and gave battle to us, or rather stoned us, untill I got a league from the land. I could not return their salute but with such stones as lodged in the boat. I therefore, as the only thing left for to save our lives, exhorted everyone to persevere in rowing, and throwing overboard some cloaths, which beguiled them and they lost time in taking up, together with the night coming on, we very miraculously escaped. Taking this as a real sample of their natural disposition, there were little hopes to expect much where I was going, for I considered their good behaviour hitherto owing to a dread of our firearms, which now knowing us to have none would not be the case, and that supposing our lives were safe, our boat, compass, and quadrant would all be taken from me, and thereby I should not be able to return to my King and country to give an account of the transaction.

Escape.

\* The Quarter-master, John Norton.



I was now solicited by every person to take them towards home, and when I told them no hopes of releif remained for us but what I might find at New Holland untill I came to Timor, a distance of 1,200 leagues, where there was a Governor, but that I had no idea at what part of the island the settlement was, they all agreed to live on one ounce of bread per day and one gill of water.

1789

One ounce of  
bread per day.

I therefore, after reccommending this promise for ever to their memory, bore away for New Holland, and from thence to Timor, a distance of 1,200 leagues accross a sea where navigation is dangerous and not known, and in a small boat deep loaded with eighteen souls, without a single map, and nothing but my own reccollection and general knowledge of the situation of places, assisted by a table in an old book of latitude and longitude, to guide me.

Bound for  
Timor.

Our stock of provisions at first consisted of 150 pounds of bread (part of which afterwards got damaged and lost), 28 gallons of water, 20 pounds of pork, 3 bottles of wine, and 5 quarts of rum.

Provisions.

It may be asked what could be the cause for such a revolution. In answer to which I have only to give a description of Otaheite, which has every allurements both to luxury and ease, and is the Paradise of the world.

Cause of the  
mutiny.

The women are handsome and mild in their manners and conversation, with sufficient delicacy to make them admired and beloved, and the chiefs have acquired such a liking to our people that they rather have encouraged their stay among them than otherwise, and even made promises of large possessions to them.

Attractions at  
Otaheite

Under these and many other attendant circumstances equally desirable, is it to be now wondered at that a set of sailors void of connections (or, if they have any, not possessed of natural feelings sufficient to wish themselves never to be seperated from them) should be led by such powerful ties.

Powerful ties.

But equal to this, what a temptation is it to such wretches when they find it in their power (however illegally it can be got at) to fix themselves in the midst of plenty in the finest island in the world, where they need not labour, and where the allurements of dissipation are more than equal to anything that can be conceived.

Allurements.

Desertions have happened more or less in every ship that has been at the Society Isles, but it has ever been in the commander's power to make the chiefs return their people. They therefore knew such a plan could never succeed, and perhaps suggested that never so small a ship and so eligible an opportunity would offer to them again.

A good  
opportunity.

1789

Christian was the officer on deck, and the whole watch being concerned except two midshipmen, who knew not what the officer was about, it is not surprising that the business was speedily done, all the able men being concerned, and also the greatest number, as may be seen by the following list :—

*People who came in the boat.*

The loyal.

|                                |                             |
|--------------------------------|-----------------------------|
| John Fryer, master             | Jno. Norton { qr.-mr.       |
| Willm. Cole, boatswain         | { Killed at Tofoa.          |
| Willm. Peckover, gunner        | Geo. Simpson, qr.-mrs. mate |
| Willm. Purcell, carpenter      | Lawrce. Libogue, sailmaker  |
| Thos. Dr. Leward, act. surgeon | Robt. Tinkler, a boy        |
| Wm. Elphinstone, master's mate | Jno. Smith, capt's servt.   |
| Thos. Hayward, mid'n           | Thos. Hall, ship's cook     |
| Jno. Hallett, do               | Robt. Lamb, butcher         |
| Jno. Samuel, clerk,            | David Nelson, botanist*     |
| Peter Linkletter, qr.-mr.      | 18, total.                  |

*People who remained in the ship.*

The disloyal.

|                                   |                                  |
|-----------------------------------|----------------------------------|
| Fletcher Christian, master's mate | Mattw. Thompson, seaman          |
| Geo. Stewart, acting do           | Thos. Ellison, do                |
| Peter Heywood, mid'n.             | Wm. Mickoy, do                   |
| Edwd. Young, do                   | Jno. Millward, do                |
| Chas. Churchill, corporal         | Richd. Skinner, do               |
| James Morrison, boatsw's mate     | Mathw. Quintal, do               |
| John Mills, gunner's mate         | Michl. Byrne, do                 |
| Chas. Norman, carp'r's mate       | Henry. Hilbrant, do              |
| Thos. M'Intosh, do crew           | Isaac Martin, do                 |
| Josh. Coleman, armourer           | Alex. Smith, do                  |
| Thos. Burkitt, seaman             | Willm. Muspratt, do              |
| Jno. Sumner, do                   | Willm. Brown, botanist's assist. |
| Jno. Williams, do                 | 25, total remaining in the ship. |

To return now to my proceedings in the boat. I steered to the W.N.W., as I formerly had heard from the Freindly Island people that land lay in that quarter.

Bad weather.

The weather very boisterous, and obliged to keep right before the sea, which at times run into us and nearly filled the boat, and were obliged to throw all spare cloaths overboard and every article we could possibly do without.

On the 4th May, latitude 18° 58' S., long. 182° 16' E., I discover'd land, an island, W.S.W. 4 or 5 leagues.

Islands

On the 6th discovered ten other islands, and that day at noon was in lat. 17° 53' S., and long. 179° 43' east. Many shoals.

Chased by  
canoes.

On the 7th discovered other islands; at noon latitude 16° 33' S., 178° 34' E., were chased by two large canoes, but got clear of them by rowing. At night torrents of rain, with thunder and lightning; caught 6 gallons water.

\* Died of fever at Koepang. Post, p. 104.

On the 9th fair w'r ; kept steering to the W.N.W. and west.

1789

On the 10th very heavy rains, hard gales and a high sea unto the 14th ; suffered much cold in the nights, being constantly wet.

On the 14th discovered land—five islands—and were at noon Islands. in latitude  $13^{\circ} 29' S.$ ,  $169^{\circ} 31' E.$  ; steered to W.S.W.

On the 15th discovered an island ; latitude at noon  $13^{\circ} 4' S.$ , long.  $167^{\circ} 35' E.$  Very fresh gale and high sea, with rain ; constantly wet and constantly bailing. Distress'd for want of light to see to steer by, the w'r being stormy, with thunder, lightning, rain, and a high sea, keeping the boat before it to the 21st, when we had most dreadfull weather, and the rain fell so heavy that Stormy weather. we could scarce keep the boat from filling.

To the 24th the weather and sea continued very bad, and we now dreaded the nights, for we were all benumbed with cold, and what added to our distress in the weak situation we were in, one of us in turns was obliged to be constantly bailing the boat in all this dreadfull weather, being continually wet, and never having a dry rag about us. The resource I directed to be taken was, in the intervals when the rain ceased to strip naked and wash and wring all our cloaths in the sea, which was a great refreshment. Sufferings in the boat.

To the 28th the weather better, when at midnight I fell in with most dreadfull breakers, but I was able to stand away clear of them. As I knew I was near the coast of New Holland, I considered this to be the reef off that coast, and I therefore stood to the west again in the morning to search for a passage within it. At 9 in the morning I saw the reef again, and soon after standing along it to the northward I discovered an opening, which I safely entered and got into smooth water. The Australian coast.

At noon latitude  $12^{\circ} 46' S.$ ,  $145^{\circ} 02' E.$  The entrance I came in at S.E., about 2 leagues.

At  $\frac{1}{4}$ -past 5 in the afternoon I got into a bay on an island about a  $\frac{1}{4}$  mile from the main, and finding it uninhabited I determined on searching for supplies. Night came on. We, however, got a few oysters from the rocks, which gave us a tolerable good meal. Landing on an island.

As our boat was only large enough to admitt one-half of us to rest at a time, I consented that one party should sleep on shore, but, unfortunately, having no materials, we could not light a fire. Division of the party.

29th May.—At dawn of day we went in search of water and what else we could get, and happily by digging found fine fresh water, and plenty of it. Oysters were the only supply besides, of which, with our allowance of bread, we made very good stews. Oysters. When the sun came out strong I was enabled to kindle a fire by

- 1789  
a small magnifying-glass, and we then made tinder and matches to supply our wants in future.
- Illness. All hands were very weak, which with dizziness in the head and a dreadfull tenesmus were the only complaints. At night part of us slept on shore.
- Fern roots as food. 30th May.—I now determined, as the people were a little refreshed, to proceed on. I therefore by noon got our small water-casks filled, and having found some fern root that I thought wholesome and very conducive to prevent thirst, I ordered a parcel into the boat. Birds could have easily have been got here if I had had arms. On that account every one we saw recalled to us our miserable situation, but Providence has been graciously kind to us, for we frequently caught by hand sea fowls, which made great additions to our dinners of bread. The frequent supply of water was also a great blessing, but I had not vessels to contain a sufficient allowance; it therefore happen'd that nearly half a pint of water was what each person received in the course of the day, issued at 8 in the morning, at noon, and sunset, with  $\frac{1}{24}$  of a pound of bread at breakfast, and the same at dinner.
- Birds caught. I found the latitude of this place  $12^{\circ} 39' S.$ ,  $144^{\circ} 44' E.$  The main appeared with a variety of high and low land, interspersed with wood, and the more interior parts mountainous.
- Poor living. 31.—At 4 in the afternoon, having performed divine service, I sailed. Saw twenty natives, armed with spears, come down on the shore opposite to us. They were black, and waved to us to come to them.
- A fresh start. I steered along shore to the N.N.W. and N.W. by N., in the direction of the coast. Saw several islands, and at 8 in the morning passed through a cluster, and saw more natives armed in the same manner, and made the same signs. I, however, did not land.
- Islands sighted. The appearance of the country all changed, being very low, and mostly sandhills. Landed on an island, and gathered shell-fish, oysters, and clams; also water, in the hollow of a rock, which enabled us to fill our sea store.
- Island visited. From the heights of this island I saw a small key to the N.W. by N. As my present situation was, therefore, too near the main, having discovered at this place the natives to have cannoes, I again prepared to sail, so as to reach the key before night. At noon dined on stewed oysters and clams. Found the latitude of this isld  $11^{\circ} 58' S.$ ,  $144^{\circ} 29' E.$
- Stewed oysters. 1st June.—With a continuance of fine w'r this evening I landed and spent the night at the key above mentioned; could get no supplies of any kind. Some of my people were taken ill with vomitings and dizziness; besides, a most dreadfull tenes-
- Sickness.



mus afflicted many of them, who had not been at stool for three weeks, and some more.

1789

At noon I found the latitude of this key  $11^{\circ} 47' S.$ , longitude  $144^{\circ} 24' E.$

2nd June.—This afternoon it came on stong gales, and my people being still ill I preferred giving them a good night's rest to going to sea. At dawn of day I sailed; people much better. Improvement. Passed several islands; the coast sandy and barren. At noon, lat.  $11^{\circ} 18' S.$ ,  $144^{\circ} 20' E.$ , I saw what I considered to be Cape York, bearing W.  $\frac{1}{2}$  N., 3 leagues.

3rd.—At night I again stopt on an island, whose latitude is  $10^{\circ} 52' S.$ ,  $141^{\circ} 05' E.$ , by corrected longitude from Cape York, whose true situation is  $141^{\circ} 15' E.$  My account, therefore, yesterday was  $3^{\circ} 05'$  wrong.

4th.—At dawn of day I again sailed, and followed the direction of the coast to the N.W.; saw many islands and breakers. Islands. At noon I was in  $10^{\circ} 31' S.$ , and  $140^{\circ} 40' E.$  I now found I had doubled the north part of New Holland.\*

Torres Straits.

At 5 o'clock this evening I left New Holland, and steered accordingly for Timor, the latitude of which I was not very certain of. However, I determined to make it in the latitude of about  $9^{\circ} 30' S.$

On the 12th June, at 3 in the morning, I saw the island of Timor, bearing W.N.W. Timor sighted.

At daylight, finding I was on the S.E. end of it, I went to the south of the island, laying-to at night lest I might pass any settlement, for I was not certain where the Governor resided. Lying-to.

On the 14th, in the afternoon, after having passed through a very heavy breaking sea and shoal water, I discovered an opening, into which I entered and anchored at 3 o'clock, which I since find to be a bay on Timor, opposite to Pulo Samow, in the south entrance, the island Rotty being in sight to the S.W. by S. At anchor.

Saw some Malays on the shore. Sent two men after them, and they brought several men to me. One of them agreed to be my pilot, and I agreed to give ten half-ducatoons to conduct me to the Governor.

This being settled, we rowed along shore, conducted by him, and on the morning, at dawn of day, I anchored off Coupang, and waited for leave to come on shore. At sunrise I was desired by a soldier to come on shore, and I was conducted to a gentleman's house (Captain Spykerman), who, upon my application, ordered breakfast and victuals for all hands; the Governor, from severe indisposition, not being able to see me just at that time. The surgeon, a Mr. Max, gave us every kind Kind treatment.

\* He had passed Cape York and was in Torres Straits.

1789

Sympathy from  
the Governor.

assistance in dressing our sores, and all who saw us were ready to contribute to the comfort of such poor distress'd creatures, one-half of whom could not have survived a week longer, and some, perhaps, not a few days.

The Governor, with much goodness, became anxious about us, and altho' his illness was very severe, I had it in my power to see him by 11 o'clock, and was received in a most affectionate and peculiar manner of kindness, which will ever endear him to my memory.

Orders were instantly given for our accomodation and supplies, and I had full power to see my people taken care of.

An extraordi-  
nary voyage.

Thus happily ended, through the blessing of Divine Providence, without accident, a voyage of the most extraordinary nature that ever happened in the world, let it be taken either in its extent, duration, or so much want of the necessaries of life.

Death of  
Mr. Nelson.

I remained at Coupang untill the 20th August, 1789,\* during which time I had the misfortune to lose Mr. David Nelson (botanist), whose good conduct in the course of the whole voyage and manly fortitude in our late disastrous circumstances deserves this tribute to his memory. He died of a fever on the 20th of July.

I have not given so full an account to the Admiralty. You will please, therefore, to attend to it in that particular.†

1790

## GOVERNOR PHILLIP TO LORD SYDNEY.

Government House, Sydney Cove,

Feb. 12.

MY LORD,—

February 12th, 1790.

I had the honor of informing your Lordship of the state of this colony by the last ships which sailed from hence, and I shall now proceed to lay before your Lordship such circumstances as have occurred since their departure.

Norfolk Island.

In February [1789] the Supply, armed tender, went to Norfolk Island with provisions and twenty-seven convicts, for although the officer who commanded there had but a very small number of free people, and in whom alone he could place any confidence, yet from the apparent impossibility of the con-

\* Bligh arrived at Batavia on the 1st of October, 1789, and sailed for the Cape of Good Hope on the 16th October, arriving on the 16th December. He left the Cape on the 2nd January, 1790, and arrived at Portsmouth on the 14th March.

† The last sentence is in Bligh's handwriting. Although Bligh did not give "so full an account to the Admiralty," he wrote and published, on his return to England in 1790, "A Narrative of the Mutiny on board His Majesty's Ship *Bounty*," which occupied 88 pages 4to. It was repeated in a fuller account of the *Bounty's* voyage, published in 1792.

victs succeeding I never supposed they would attempt an escape, and which was the less to be apprehended from the great lenity they had been treated with.

1790  
Feb. 12.

But when the Supply returned I was informed that the convicts had laid a plan for confining the officers and free people on the island, which was to be carried into execution the first Saturday after the Supply or any store-ship arrived. A convict plot.

It was usual for the commandant to go every Saturday to a farm at a small distance from the settlement. There he was to be seized, and they were then to send, in his name, for the surgeon and several others, who, as they came out, were to be confined with him, and the marines, going on Saturdays into the woods to get cabbage-tree, were to be met on their return and confined with the rest, as well as those who came on shore from the ship, after which two convicts were to go off in a small boat belonging to the island and inform those on board that their boat had been staved in landing. This intelligence they supposed would bring more people and boats on shore. The people were to be secured with the others, and the convicts were then to go and take possession of the ship, with which they intended to go to Otaheite, and there form a settlement. The mutineers' plan.  
Seize the Supply and go to Otaheite.

A woman discovered this scheme to a man belonging to the Sirius, with whom she lived, in hopes of persuading him to leave the island, and some of the convicts, being examined, confessed their intentions. A woman informs.

The commandant, finding there were only three convicts who had not engaged in this affair, and that it would not be possible to send them all away when a ship should arrive, after taking such steps as he judged would prevent their attempting to carry their scheme into execution, returned them all to their different labours, and when the Supply arrived he received the convicts sent in her. The mutiny general.

The convict who had first proposed the scheme was sent here to be tried; but no capital punishment could be inflicted upon him, as no attempt had been made to carry the scheme into execution. The ringleader escapes the halter.

My former letters mentioned that the officer sent to make the settlement on Norfolk Island, and who I had appointed to remain there as superintendent and commandant, was the second lieutenant of the Sirius. He speaks well of the few he had to depend on, and I beg leave to assure your Lordship that he acted in that affair with great prudence. King's prudence.

It had been thought necessary, after the discovery was made, to cut down all the trees which were within a certain distance of the huts, and which probably saved many lives, for in the following month they had a violent hurricane. It came from A hurricane.

1790

Feb. 12.

the south-east, and crossed the island, confining itself to a very narrow space, so that while all the trees on one side of the valley were broken down or torn up by the roots, the trees on the opposite side did not suffer the smallest injury. One tree, which from its situation had been left standing, fell on a granary, which it destroyed. This hurricane was accompanied by very heavy rain, and a torrent of water, which came down from the hills, destroyed all their gardens of Indian corn, as well as doing considerable damage to the provisions.

Gigantic pines.

I do not think the island is subject to hurricanes; if it was, some vestiges would appear, which I am told is not the case. Several of the pines which were blown down measured an hundred and eighty feet in length.

Voyage of the Sirius.

When the Sirius sailed from hence the 2nd of October, 1788, Captain Hunter was to have made the passage round the South Cape, which I am confident will be found the best passage from hence to the Cape of Good Hope; but having the wind southerly when he sailed, he did not attempt that passage, but went round Cape Horn. Arrived at the Cape of Good Hope the 2nd of January. Left it the 20th of February, and anchored here the 8th of May, 1789, having met with a very heavy gale of wind when so close in with the South Cape that it was for some time doubtful if it would be possible to clear it.

Corn for Port Jackson.

By the Sirius we received some seed wheat and barley and four months' flour for the settlement, which was all that ship could bring, with a year's provisions for the ship's company.

After the arrival of the Sirius the Supply was sent to Norfolk Island with provisions, and carried a lieutenant, one non-commissioned officer, and fourteen privates.

Fortifications.

Two guns had been landed from the Supply, and a small redoubt was to be erected, which, with this little additional force, will, I presume, prevent the convicts from making any future attempts. The Supply, after landing the people and provisions, had orders to go in search of the reef seen by the Golden Grove, store-ship, and a shoal or island which Lieutenant Shortland informed me (by the Sirius) he had seen in his passage to the northward. The Supply cruized for several days in the latitude and longitude in which Lieutenant Shortland places the island, but returned without seeing it. There is some reason to think that a mistake has been made as to the latitudes in which the island and shoal are placed by Lieutenant Shortland\*; and I

Island and shoal.

\* Sir Charles Middleton's Island and Middleton Shoals, so named by Lieut. Shortland after Sir Charles Middleton, Comptroller of the Navy. Shortland gave the latitude and longitude as follows:—"Sir Charles Middleton's Island, lat. 28° 10' S., long. 159° 50' E. Middleton Shoals, lat. 29° 20' S., long. 158° 48' E." Search was afterwards made for the



1790  
Feb. 12.

trouble your Lordship with this information in case any ship sent into those seas should go to the northward without calling at this port, and which, from the accounts received from the Cape of Good Hope, there is reason to suppose the Bounty, store-ship, has done. The weather did not admit of the Supply's going in search of the shoal seen by the Golden Grove. The Sirius is now under repair; and, when ready for sea, I shall send that ship and the Supply to determine the situation and extent of the shoals and the island.

When the Supply left Norfolk Island the public were all very healthy, the damages sustained by the hurricane had been repaired, and they had vegetables in the greatest abundance. They get fish when the weather permits the boats to go without the reef, and at times in such quantities that fish is served to the people in lieu of salt provisions. They make their lines from the flax-plant; but unfortunately we have not any person who understands how to dress it.

Vegetables and  
fish.

Half a pod of cotton being found on this island, supposed to be brought there by a bird, and a cocoanut which was perfectly sound, and appeared to have been but a short time in the water, being thrown upon the beach, have given some reason to suppose that both those articles will be found on some island at no great distance.

Cotton and  
cocoanuts.

Parts of two canoes, which answer the description given of the canoes of New Zealand, have been found on the rocks, and a wooden figure (very rudely carved), and which in every respect answers the description given of the idols seen in the Friendly Islands, has likewise been found, and probably was carried thither in one of the canoes.

New Zealand  
canoes and idols.

Lord Howe Island has been examined, but no fresh water or good anchorage being found it can be of no other advantage to this settlement than occasionally supplying a few turtle.

Lord Howe  
Island.

I had the honor of informing your Lordship that a settlement was intended to be made at a place I named Rose Hill. At the head of this harbour there is a creek which at half flood has water for large boats to go three miles up, and one mile higher the water is fresh and the soil good. A very industrious man

Rose Hill

island and shoals by Lieut. Shortland, in the schooner Francis, and by Lieut. Ball, in the Supply, but without success. They failed to discover the shoals, because the latitude and longitude had been in the first instance incorrectly observed. The island, according to modern authorities, has no existence. The "Directory of the South Pacific Ocean," p. 856, gives the following information: "Middleton Reef, an extensive reef, covered at high water. Its west elbow, according to Captain Denham, is in lat. 29° 27' 40" S., long. 159° 3' 38" E. The following reported dangers may be said not to exist: Middleton Island, or Sir Charles Middleton's Island, said to be very high, in lat. 27° 58' S., long. 159° 30' E.

1790  
Feb. 12.  
Progress.

who I brought from England is employed there at present,\* and has under his direction one hundred convicts, who are employed in clearing and cultivating the ground. A barn, granary, and other necessary buildings are erected, and seventy-seven acres in corn promise a good crop. The soil is good, and the country for seventy miles to the westward, which is as far as I have examined, lays well for cultivation, but even there the labour of clearing the ground is very great, and I have seen none that can be cultivated without cutting down the timber, except some few particular spots, which, from their situation (lying at a distance from either of the harbours) can be of no advantage to us at present; and I presume the meadows mentioned in "Captain Cook's Voyage" were seen from the high grounds about Botany Bay, and from whence they appear well to the eye, but when examined are found to be marshes, the draining of which would be a work of time, and not to be attempted by the first settlers. But I shall have the honor of giving your Lordship a more particular account of the country hereafter.

Cook's  
"meadows."

Rose Hill guard.

The captain's guard which untill lately did duty at Rose Hill is now reduced to a lieutenant and twelve privates, and intended merely as a guard to the store which contains the provisions, and which is in the redoubt; for I am sensible there is nothing to be apprehended from the natives, and the little attention which had been desired of the officers more than what was immediately garrison duty, when at Rose Hill, is now no longer required.

Comfort at  
Sydney Cove.

At Sydney Cove all the officers are in good huts and the men in barracks; and, although many unforeseen difficulties have been met with, I believe there is not an individual, from the Governor to the private soldier, whose situation is not more eligible at this time than he had any reason to expect it could be in the course of the three years station; and it is the same with the convicts, and those who have been in any ways industrious have vegetables in plenty. The buildings now carrying on are of brick and stone. The house intended for myself was to consist of only three rooms; but, having a good foundation, has been enlarged, contains six rooms, and is so well built that I presume it will stand for a great number of years.

Ravages of rats.

The stores have been lately overrun with rats, and they are equally numerous in the gardens, where they do considerable damage; and as the loss in the stores could only be known by removing all the provisions, that was done, and many casks of flour and rice were found to be damaged or totally destroyed. The loss in those two articles by the rats since landing has been more than twelve thousand [pounds] weight.

\* Dodd, Phillip's servant. He died January, 1791.

While the stores were under examination the Commissary one morning found that a key had been broken in a lock. This had been done in the night, and a convict, Smith, knew the wards of the key left in the lock to belong to a marine, who, being confined with several others on suspicion, one of them offered himself as an evidence for the Crown, and accused six of his comrades, who were tried, and the charge being fully proved the six were executed. One of those who suffered accused two others, but no proof could be brought against them.

1790  
Feb. 12.

Six marines  
hanged for theft.

These men had for many months robbed the stores of provisions and spirits, and in a manner that did not expose them to any great risk; for having procured keys for all the locks, they never attempted to rob the store but when one of the party was sentinel at the door. The key was in the lock when they unexpectedly heard the patrol, and, in the hurry, they turned the key the wrong way, and not being able to get it out broke it, knowing that the locks were always examined by the patrol.

How the stores  
were robbed.

Vegetables and provisions having been frequently stolen in the night from convicts and others, twelve convicts were chosen as a night-watch, and they have effectually answered the end proposed, no robbery having been committed for several months, and the convicts in general have lately behaved better than I ever expected.

The night-  
watch.

Only two convicts have suffered death in the last year; four were executed the first year. A marine tried for committing a rape on an infant was found guilty; but being particularly recommended for mercy by the criminal court, his sentence was changed to transportation to Norfolk Island for life.

Executions.

A marine  
transported.

As near two years have now passed since we first landed in this country, some judgment may be formed of the climate, and I believe a finer or more healthy climate is not to be found in any part of the world. Of 1,030 people who were landed, many of whom were worn out by old age, the scurvy, and various disorders, only seventy-two have died in one-and-twenty months; and by the surgeon's returns it appears that twenty-six of those died from disorders of long standing, and which it is more than probable would have carried them off much sooner in England. Fifty-nine children have been born in the above time.

A fine climate.

Since the last ship sailed (November, 1788) two marines and two convicts have been lost in the woods. One convict has been killed by the natives, and ten wounded—for it is impossible to prevent the convicts from straggling, and the natives having been robbed and ill-treated, now attack those they meet unarmed.

Lost in the bush.

Not succeeding in my endeavours to persuade some of the natives to come and live with us, I ordered one to be taken by



1790  
Feb. 12.

A native  
captured.

Carried off by  
small-pox.

force, which was what I would gladly have avoided, as I knew it must alarm them ; but not a native had come near the settlement for many months, and it was absolutely necessary that we should attain their language, or teach them ours, that the means of redress might be pointed out to them if they are injured, and to reconcile them by showing the many advantages they would enjoy by mixing with us. A young man, who appeared to be about twenty-four years of age, was taken the latter end of December [1788], and unfortunately died of the small-pox in May [1789], when he was perfectly reconciled to his situation, and appeared so sensible of the advantages he enjoyed that, fully persuaded he would not leave us, I had for some time freed him from all restraint.\* He had lived with me for the last two months, and his behaviour gave good reason for showing a more favourable opinion of the people of this country than what has been drawn from the report made by those who formerly touched on this coast.

Origin of the  
disease.  
unknown.

Whether the small-pox, which has proved fatal to great numbers of the natives, is a disorder to which they were subject before any Europeans visited this country, or whether it was brought by the French ships, we have not yet attained sufficient knowledge of the language to determine. It never appeared on board any of the ships in our passage, nor in the settlement, until some time after numbers of the natives had been seen dead with the disorder in different parts of the harbour, and two men, with a boy of about eight years of age and a girl of eleven, had been brought to the hospital, in the small-pox.

Curious facts.

Both the men died, but the boy and girl recovered. These people were brought up the middle and the latter end of April, and the small-pox never appeared in the settlement until the 2nd of May, when a man belonging to the Supply was seized with the disorder and died a few days afterwards ; nor has it ever appeared in the settlement except on that man and the native who caught the disorder from the children.

Provisions  
damaged.

In addition to the loss of provisions which we had sustained by the rats, a very considerable quantity of flour, rice, &c., had been lost and damaged in the passage by the badness of the casks and by a quantity of oil and tar having been put on board of the store-ships.

Reduced ration.

Although there could be little doubt but that supplies would arrive before the provisions we had in store were expended, it was necessary to guard against accident. I therefore directed only two-thirds of a ration to be issued to those who have hitherto received a full ration, by which our provisions would last until

\* Aranbanoo. According to Hunter, Phillip called him Manly, because he was captured at Manly Cove.



June, some few articles excepted. This order, which took place the 1st of November, 1789, included every person in the settlement, and at the same time the Sirius and Supply's ship's companies went to three-fourths allowance.

1790  
Feb. 12.

In December the corn at Rose Hill was got in; the corn Harvest. was exceeding good. About two hundred bushels of wheat and sixty of barley, with a small quantity of flax, Indian corn, and oats, all which is preserved for seed. Here I beg leave to observe to your Lordship that if settlers are sent out, and the convicts Settlers wanted. divided amongst them, this settlement will very shortly maintain itself, but without which this country cannot be cultivated to any advantage. At present I have only one person (who has about an hundred convicts under his direction) who is employed in cultivating the ground for the publick benefit, and he has returned the quantity of corn above mentioned into the publick store. The officers have not raised sufficient to support Poor results. the little stock they have. Some ground I have had in cultivation will return about forty bushels of wheat into store, so that the produce of the labour of the convicts employed in cultivation has been very short of what might have been expected, and which I take the liberty of pointing out to your Lordship in this place, to show as fully as possible the state of this colony, and the necessity of the convicts being employed by those who have an interest in their labour. The giving convicts to the Officers and convict labour. officers has been hitherto necessary, but it is attended with many inconveniences, for which the advantages arising to the officers do not make amends. It will not therefore be continued after the detachment is relieved, unless particularly directed. The plan I should propose for giving the convicts to settlers will be submitted to your Lordship's consideration in another letter. The numbers employed in cultivation will of course be increased, as the necessary buildings are finished, but which will be a work of time; for the numbers in this settlement who do nothing towards their own support exceed those employed for the publick.

My intentions of turning swine into the woods to breed have The fire-stick. been prevented by the natives so frequently setting fire to the country

The Sirius, for the conveniency of refitting, had gone into a small cove on the north side of this harbour; and it was customary for the people to walk from the opposite shore to the ship, which one of the mates attempting lost himself in the woods, and Lost in bush. every search that could be made to find him proved ineffectual.

From the time our native died, orders had been given to take another whenever an opportunity offered; but they were always on their guard, and I was desirous of it being done without

1790

Feb. 12.

Two natives  
caught.

One escapes.

being under the necessity of firing upon them. Towards the end of November two natives were taken,\* and one of them proved to be a chief, who had been frequently mentioned to us as a great warrior. The necessary precautions were taken to prevent their escape, but which was effected by the chief, a fortnight after he was taken, from the neglect of those who had the care of him; the other remains; † he lives with me, and every possible means are used to reconcile him to us, and in which I make no doubt but that we shall succeed. The little information I am able to give your Lordship of these people and the country will be the subject of another letter.

Return of the  
Supply.

In November the Supply sailed for Norfolk Island with some convicts, and returned after being absent about six weeks. All the people on that island were well, and their crops, after all they had suffered from rats, birds, and a worm which had done them considerable damage, so good that they had grain sufficient for six months' bread for every one upon the island, reserving sufficient for their next year's crops.

The Sirius.

The third lieutenant of the Sirius‡ had for a considerable time laboured under a disorder, which terminated in the loss of his senses. I therefore appointed another officer in his room. And as the Sirius was now nearly ready for sea, having repaired the damages sustained in the gale of wind, and being strengthened in the best manner our situation permitted, all the officers belonging to her would be necessary when she went to sea, and as Norfolk Island was now settled, and likely to answer the views of Government, I discharged the second lieutenant from the Sirius,§ and appointed another officer in his room; consequently, that officer, who continues superintendant and commandant of Norfolk Island, will no longer receive any pay from the Admiralty, and I beg leave to recommend him to your Lordship's attention as an officer who has fully merited everything I can say in his favour.

Commendation  
of King.Convicts sent to  
Norfolk Island.

Early in January, 1790, the Supply again sailed for Norfolk Island with more convicts; and in her passage left a small party on Lord Howe Island to turn turtle; but in fifteen days only three were taken, so that no great advantages will at present accrue from thence. The island has fresh water, but no good anchoring-ground.

Births and  
deaths.

Since the deaths mentioned in a former part of this letter, one woman has suffered for a robbery, five children have died, and twenty-eight children have been born, making in all twenty-seven deaths and eighty-seven births.

I have, &amp;c.,

A. PHILLIP

\* Coleby and Bennilong.  
† Bennilong.

‡ Lieutenant Maxwell.  
§ Lieutenant King.

THE RIGHT HON. W. W. GRENVILLE TO GOVERNOR PHILLIP.

SIR,—

Whitehall, March, 1790.

1790

March.

It being the King's intention that his Majesty's ships Discovery and Gorgon.  
 Discovery and Gorgon—the former of which has been fitted for the purpose of surveying and the latter, as I informed you in my letter No. 6, for the conveyance of troops and stores to New South Wales—should be employed upon an expedition on the north-west coast of America, and his Majesty having, with that view, ordered that the lower-deck guns, carriages, &c., of the Gorgon shall be carried out in her hold, I am commanded to signify to you his Majesty's pleasure that as soon as the said troops and stores shall have been landed from the ship you do direct her commander to mount her guns and to put her in a fit condition as soon as possible for proceeding on that service. The Gorgon.

As the present company of that ship is barely sufficient for navigating her, it will be expedient that as many officers and men as can possibly be spared from the Sirius should be lent to her during the expedition, which you will order to be done as soon as possible, and such deficiency as will then remain in the number of her war establishment of men you will complete from the marine corps now serving on shore. Crew from the Sirius.

One of the objects of this expedition being to form a settlement on the north-west coast of America,\* it is his Majesty's pleasure that you should select from among the people with you a proper number of persons to compose it, and that you should embark them either on board the Discovery or Gorgon. North American settlement.

The extent of this establishment, it is imagined, need not at first exceed thirty persons, a moiety of whom at least should consist of drafts from the new corps, under the command of a discreet subaltern officer, who is to be entrusted with the temporary superintendence of the new settlement. The remainder should consist of two or three of the most intelligent of the overseers, who have lately been sent out, a storekeeper, and any other persons who may be desirous of accompanying them, together with a few of the most deserving of the convicts, to whom you may offer a remission of a part of their service [sentence] as an inducement to go. Establishment.

\* This design was given up, but an exploring expedition was sent out under the command of Captain George Vancouver, who had accompanied Cook on his voyage towards the South Pole. He was placed in command of the Discovery, and the armed tender Chatham took the place of the Gorgon as second vessel. Vancouver's instructions were not to go to Port Jackson for help, but to sail direct for the Sandwich Islands, and then explore the north-west coast of America for the purpose of discovering, if possible, a north-west passage. Post, pp. 122-125.

1790  
March.  
Stores, &c.

And you will be careful to embark on board these ships such articles of stores, provisions, medicines, and utensils for building, &c., as you may judge sufficient for their use, in order to enable them to fulfil the object of forming such a settlement as may be able to resist any attacks from the natives, and lay the foundation of an establishment for the assistance of his Majesty's subjects in the prosecution of the fur trade from the N.W. coast of America.

The command.

As the chief command of this expedition is intended to be entrusted to the captain of one of his Majesty's ships now in the East Indies, directions have been sent to Commodore Cornwallis to despatch such frigate immediately to Owyhee, one of the Sandwich Islands, situated in the latitude 20° 00' So., and long. 25° 00' Et. from Greenwich, directing her captain to wait there until he shall be joined by the Discovery and Gorgon, when he is to lose no time in making the best of his way to the American coast, agreeably to the enclosed instructions, a copy of which is transmitted to you for your further information. You will entrust the original to the care of the commander of the Discovery, and the duplicate with the commanding officer of the Gorgon. You will despatch both these vessels to the place of rendezvous, at Owyhee, as soon as they are in a situation to proceed thither, and upon their meeting with the frigate above mentioned the commanding officer will deliver to the captain of the frigate the dispatches which you shall have committed to their care, and will put themselves under his orders.

Rendezvous at  
Owyhee.

It is hoped that the frigate from the East Indies and the two vessels above mentioned will arrive at Owyhee soon enough to allow some time for refreshment to their crews, and to enable them to be on the coast of America early in the spring; but if, from any unforeseen event, the frigate which Commodore Cornwallis is directed to order upon this service should not reach the Sandwich Islands before the end of the month of April, 1791, it is his Majesty's pleasure that you should direct the senior officer of the two ships to open the dispatches, and proceed with those two ships to execute the instructions, leaving on his departure from thence one of his people with the natives, to be taken up again on his return, or adopting any other mode he may judge more advisable for conveying to the captain of the frigate information of the route he may design to take, with a view to his proceeding to the place of destination.

Contingencies.

Articles of  
barter.

You will receive by the Discovery and Gorgon certain packages, marked and numbered agreeably to the enclosed list,\* containing such articles as are most esteemed by the people of the Sandwich Islands and the inhabitants of the American

\* No list recorded.



coast, in order to barter with them for provisions, and such other necessities as they can supply, which packages they are to deliver to the commander of the frigate, if they should join him on their arrival at the Sandwich Islands, or to make use of themselves in case of his absence.

1790  
March.

On the return of the Gorgon to Port Jackson from the intended expedition you will order the officers and men belonging to the Sirius on board their proper ship, and after embarking the remainder of the marines you will direct Lieutenant Harvey to make the best of his way with them to England, agreeably to the orders he has already received on that head.

In consequence of the information received from Lt. Bligh, The Bounty.

late commander of H.M. ship the Bounty, of a mutiny having taken place in that vessel, by which he was deprived of his command, his Maj'y has judged it proper that the Gorgon should be directed, on her return from the N.-W. coast of America, to touch at the Society Islands, and eventually at the Friendly Islands, in order, if possible, to apprehend the mutineers, a list of whom, rec'd from Lt. Bligh, is enclosed. If he should succeed in this object, he is directed to bring those men, or any of them, in confinement, to Port Jackson. And you will, in that case, send them home in confinement by the Gorgon, in order that they may be brought to trial in this country for an offence so prejudicial to the discipline of his Majesty's service.

Mutineers to be apprehended.

If the Bounty should be recovered and brought to Port Jackson, it is left in your discretion to detain her or employ her in such manner as you shall judge best.

If, by any accident, the Gorgon or Discovery should be disabled so as to be unfit to be employed on this service, it is left to your discretion to send the Sirius in the room of the Gorgon, and any light vessel, if any such should then be under your orders, in the room of the Discovery.

The Sirius to be employed if necessary.

I have, &c.,

W. W. GRENVILLE.

#### DRAUGHT OF INSTRUCTIONS FOR MR. MENZIES (Banks Papers.)\*

Dec.

THE business on which you are employed by Government, for the due execution of which you will be entitled to the salary

\* This paper, which is in the handwriting of Sir Joseph Banks, is headed "Draught of Instructions for Mr. Menzies." Mr. Menzies was the botanist sent out with an expedition of discovery and survey to the north-west coast of America, under Captain Vancouver. The vessels selected for the service were the war ship Discovery, and the armed tender Chatham. (See note to Grenville's despatch, ante, p. 113.) Mr. Menzies was appointed on the recommendation of Sir Joseph Banks, who made the necessary arrangements.

1790  
Dec.

you have stipulated to receive, consists of the following articles :—

In all places at which the ship you are on board shall touch and make a sufficient stay you are—

**Soil.** 1st. To examine into the nature of the soil—whether it is sandy, gravelly, loamy, boggy, &c., &c., and carefully to remark the size of the trees that grow upon it, as well as whether they stand thick and close, or distant and separate one from the other.

**Climate.** 2nd. The nature of the climate as far as you are able to judge of it from the productions.

**Cultivation.** 3rd. The probable degree of fertility of the soil ; whether, in case it should hereafter be found expedient to send out settlers, the usual grains, pulse, and fruit of Europe are likely to succeed, and if not, what other sort of produce would in your opinion be the most suitable.

**Flora.** 4th. To enumerate, as far as you may find yourself able, the different trees, shrubs, plants, grasses, ferns, and mosses that are found in each country, noting particularly the places where those that are uncommon have been met with.

**Plants to be collected.** 5th. To dig up plants of such as you consider most curious, plant them in the hatch which is under your care, and preserve them to the best of your ability for his Majesty's use on your return.

**Water.** 6th. You are from time to time, whenever the ship shall be watered, to acquaint the commanding officer what quantity of water the plants in your hatch are likely to consume by the week or the day, that he may be enabled to make proper provision for their future supply.

**Seeds.** 7th. You are to collect seeds of all such curious plants as you shall meet with at the season of ripening, and packing them carefully, when fully dry, in paper packages carefully sealed up, send them home by every opportunity that occurs for his Majesty's use.

**Specimens to be collected.** 8th. You are to dry specimens of all such plants, &c., as you shall judge worthy of being brought home, and more especially of all those of which you shall procure either living plants or seeds, in order that those who are employed in examining the plants you shall bring home may be assisted in ascertaining their names and qualities ; and of these you are to deliver one complete set to the Sec. of State for the Home Department.

**The King's property.** 9th. All the seeds of plants and the living plants you shall collect in your voyage you are to consider as wholly and entirely the property of his Majesty, and you are not on any account whatever to part with any seeds, plants, cuttings, slips, or parts of plants for any purpose whatever but his Majesty's use.

10th. In all your excursions on shore you are to examine with attention the beds of brooks and torrents and all other places where the natural strata of the earth are laid bare by water or otherwise, and wherever you meet with minerals that bear the appearance of oars [ores] of metals, coal, or limestone, or any other thing likely in your opinion to be usefull, you are to collect and preserve specimens of them carefully, noting the exact places in which each was found; you are also to search for similar substances among the pebbles and sand brought down by brooks or rivers from the inland country, and if you suspect them to contain even the most minute particles of metallic matter, for which you are to search with your microscope, you are to bring home samples of them.

1790

Dec.

Minerals.

11th. You are to inform yourself, as well as you are able, what sort of beasts, birds, and fishes are found in each place where you shall touch that are likely to prove usefull either as food or in commerce; and pay particular attention to the various modes of taking them which the natives or Europeans use. You are to note the places where seals or whales are found in abundance, to pay all possible attention to the natural history of the sea-otter, and to learn all you can concerning the wild sheep said to be found on the coast, and, if practicable, procure the skin of one of them for your employer.

Fauna.

12th. In all places where you can procure a friendly intercourse with the natives you are to make carefull enquiry into their manners, customs, ceremonies, religion, language, manufacture, and every other thing in your opinion likely to interest mankind. And if you find the abominable custom of eating human flesh, which they are said to practice, to be really in use among them, you are, if you can do it with safety and propriety, to be present at some of their horrid repasts in order to bear witness to the existence of a practice all but incredible to the inhabitants of civilised countries, and discover, if you can, the original motives of a custom for which it seems impossible to suggest any probable cause.

The natives.

Cannibalism.

13th. You are to keep a regular journal of all occurrences that happen in the execution of your duty, and enter in it all observations you shall make on every subject you are employed to investigate, which journal you are on your return to deliver to his Majesty's Sec. of State for the Home Department, or to such person as he shall direct to receive them; and also one compleat collection of all the specimens of animals, vegetables, and minerals that you shall have procured, as well as such curious articles of the cloths, arms, implements, and manufactures of the natives as you shall deem worthy of particular notice.

Journal.

A collection of specimens to be made.

1790

Dec.

Mr. Menzies  
and his duties.

## MEMORANDA BY SIR JOSEPH BANKS.

FURNISH Mr. M. [Menzies] with such proportion of the trade for Indians entrusted to his charge as may enable him to hire the assistance [of] the Indians as guides and to carry his luggage, and to induce them to give him such information as he may want from them.

That the plant-hatch be put under his care and direction, and that neither lumber or dogs the property of any person be put in it.

That he be allowed his share of the conveniences of the gun-room in point of store-rooms, &c., &c.

Assist him with boats when they can be spared from the duty of the ship.

Assist him with men and any such heavy luggage as he may have occasion to bring on board, particularly earth for his plants, as well as the plants themselves.

Take on board water for the plants in such quantities as shall be found necessary for the support of the plants on the requisition of Mr. M. [Menzies].

Surgeon of  
Discovery.

To be appointed surgeon of the Discovery, which he understands is intended to bear two mates.

To occupy the cabin on board her which was intended for him as naturalist.

To receive £80 a year as a salary.

To have an assistant, who is to receive £20 a year able pay and ship's provision.

To obey such instructions as he shall receive relative to an investigation of the natural productions, comparative fertility, manners of natives of the countries he is to visit, &c.

To deliver his journal to his employers on his return, provided that if it is thought proper for publication he shall be allowed to publish it for his own benefit.

Given to Mr. Nepean, Decr. 15, 1790. 22nd, he told me Ld. G.\* had agreed to the whole proposition, and ordered a letter to be wrote to Mr. Martin,† to request the appointment of surgeon for Mr. M.‡

---

Jan. 1st, 1791.

1791  
Jan. 1.

Mr. Menzies to receive £150 a year for every charge of salary, mess, servants' wages, &c., &c. Himself and his servant to be entered as supernumeraries for provision only, but his servant to

\* Lord Grenville, Secretary of State for the Home Department.

† Mr. Henry Martin, Comptroller of the Navy. He succeeded Sir Charles Middleton, March. 1790.

‡ Mr. Menzies was not appointed to this position in the first instance, but he undertook the duties subsequently.



be placed in some situation in which his time as a seaman may go on. His servant was in the President's foretop during the late armament, and is 17 years of age.

1791  
Jan. 1.

# DESCRIPTION OF NORFOLK ISLAND BY LIEUT.-GOVERNOR KING.\*

Jan. 10.

NORFOLK ISLAND is situated in the latitude  $29^{\circ}$ , and in the longitude of  $168^{\circ}$  east. Its form is nearly an oblong, and contains from twelve to fourteen thousand acres.

The face of the country is hilly, and some of the valleys are tolerably large for the size of the island. Many of the hills are very steep, and some few so very perpendicular that they cannot be cultivated; but where such situations are they will do very well for fuel. On the tops of the hills are some extensive flats.

Topography.

Mount Pitt is the only remarkable high hill on the island, and is about one hundred and fifty fathoms high. The cliffs which surround the island are about forty fathoms high and perpendicular. The basis of the island is a hard, firm clay. The whole island is covered with a thick wood, choaked up with underwood.

Mount Pitt.

The island is well supplied with many streams of very fine water, many of which are sufficiently large to turn any number of mills. These springs are full of very large eels.

From the coast to the summit of Mount Pitt is a continuation of the richest and deepest soil in the world, which varies from a rich black mold to a fat red earth. We have dug down forty feet and found the same soil.

Deep soil.

The air is very wholesome, and the climate may be called a very healthy one. There has been no sickness since I first landed on the island.

Climate.

There are five kind of trees on the island which are good timber, viz., the pine, live oak, a yellow wood, a hard black wood, and a wood not unlike the English beach. The pine-trees are of a great size, many of which are from one hundred and eighty to two hundred and twenty feet in height, and from six to nine feet in diameter. Those trees, which are from one hundred to one hundred and eighty feet in height, are in general sound; from the root to the lower branches there is from eighty to ninety feet of sound timber, the rest is too hard and knotty for use; it sometimes happens that after cutting off twenty feet from the butt it becomes rotten or shakey, for which reason no dependence can be put in it for large masts or yards. The timber of the pine is very usefull in buildings, and is plentiful

Trees.

Pines.

Value of the  
Nortolk pine.

\* In Lieutenant-Governor King's handwriting.

1791  
Jan. 10.

along the coast; its dispersed situation in the interior parts of the island is well calculated for erecting such buildings as may be necessary. From what I have seen of this wood, I think it is very durable. Two boats have been built of it, and have answered the purpose fully.

The live oak, yellow wood, black wood, and beach are all of a close grain, and are a durable wood.

The flax-plant.

The flax-plant of New Zealand grows spontaneously in many parts of the island, but mostly abounds on the sea-coast, where there is a very great quantity of it. The leaves of which the flax is made is, when full-grown, six feet long and six inches wide. Each plant contains seven of those leaves. A strong woody stalk rises from the center, which bears the flowers. It seeds annually, and the old leaves are forced out by young ones every year. Every method has been tried to work it; but I much fear that until a native of New Zealand can be carried to Norfolk Island that the method of dressing that valuable commodity will not be known; and could that be obtained, I have no doubt but Norfolk Island would very soon cloath the inhabitants of New South Wales.\*

Dressers  
wanted.

Birds.

There are a great quantity of pigeons, parrots, hawks, and other smaller birds, which are now in a wild state.

Grubs.

The ground is much infested with different kinds of the grub worm, which are very destructive to the growth of vegetables. They are mostly troublesome about the spring. It is to be hoped that when more ground is cleared away that this evil will cease.

Rats.

There is no quadruped on the island except the rat, which is much smaller than the Norway rat. These vermin were very troublesome when first we landed, but at present there are but very few.

Fish.

The coasts of the island abound with very fine fish. No opportunitys were ever lost of sending the boat out, which enabled us to make a saving of two pounds of meat each man a week.

The coast.

The coasts of the island are in general steep, too, and excepting at Sydney, Anson, Ball, and Cascade Bays, they are inaccessible, being surrounded by steep perpendicular cliffs, rising from the sea. Some rocks are scattered about close to the shore.

Sydney Bay.

Sydney Bay, on the south side of the island, is where the settlement is made. Landing at this place entirely depends

\* Two natives of New Zealand were captured in 1793, and taken to Norfolk Island. From them the people learned something about the dressing of flax, but King's anticipation that "Norfolk Island would very soon cloath the inhabitants of New South Wales" was not realised.

on the wind and the weather. I have seen as good landing as in the Thames for a fortnight or three weeks together, and I have often seen it impracticable to land for ten or twelve days successively, but it is much oftener good landing than bad. 1791  
Jan. 10

Anson Bay is a small bay with a sandy beach, where landing is in general good, with an offshore wind and moderate weather; but as the interior parts of the island are so difficult of access from thence no ships' boats have ever landed there. Anson Bay

Ball Bay is on the S.E. side of the island. The beach is a large loose stone. When landing is bad in Sydney Bay it is very good here, as it also is in Cascade Bay, on the north side of the island. Ball Bay

During the winter months, viz., from April to August, the general winds are the south and S.W., with heavy gales at times. In the summer the S.E. wind blew almost constant. Prevailing winds

The spring is visible in August, but the native trees and many plants on the island is in a constant state of flowering. The summer is warm, and sometimes the droughts are very great. Droughts.

All the grain and European plants seeded in December. From February to August may be called the rainy season, not that I think there is any stated times for rain in these months, as it is sometimes very fine weather for a fortnight together, but when the rain does fall it is in torrents. I do not remember above three claps of thunder during the time I was on the island. The winter is very pleasant, and it never freezes. Climate.

The proper time for sowing wheat and barley is from May to August, and is got in in December. That which has been sowed has produced twenty-fivefold, and I think the increase may be greater. Two bushells of barley sowed in 1789 produced twenty-four bushells of a sound full grain. Crops.

The Indian corn produces well, and is, in my opinion, the best grain to cultivate in any quantity, on account of the little trouble attending its growth and manufacturing for eating.

The Rio Janeiro sugar-cane grows very well, and is thriving. Vines and oranges are very thriving; of the former there will be a great quantity in a few years. Potatoes thrive remarkably well, and yield a very great increase. I think two crops a year of that article may be got with great ease. Sugar-cane. Vines and oranges.

Every kind of garden vegetable thrives well, and comes to great perfection. Vegetables.

The quantity of ground cleared and in cultivation belonging to the publick was, on the 13th March, 1790, from twenty-eight to thirty-two acres, and about eighteen cleared by free people and convicts for their gardens. Land in cultivation.

PHILLIP GIDLEY KING.

London, 10 Jany., 1791.

1791  
Feb. 11.

LORD GRENVILLE TO THE LORDS OF THE ADMIRALTY.

(Banks Papers.)\*

MY LORDS,—

Whitehall, 11th February, 1791.

His Majesty having judged it expedient that an expedition should be immediately undertaken for acquiring a more complete knowledge than has yet been obtained of the north-west coast of America, I am commanded to signify to your Lordships his Majesty's commands that the necessary measures should be adopted for that purpose. The Discovery and Chatham, brig, being, as I understand, in readiness for this service, it is desirable that no time should be lost in their proceeding to the Sandwich Islands, where the officer commanding those vessels should be instructed to winter.

During the time of his remaining at those islands he is to employ himself in the survey and examination of them; and as soon as the weather is favourable, which may be expected to be in February or at latest in March, 1792, he should be instructed to repair to the American coast for the purpose of his survey.

It having been agreed by the late convention between his Majesty and the Catholic King† that the buildings and tracts of land situated on the north-west coast of the continent of North America, or on islands adjacent to that continent, of which the subjects of his Britannick Majesty were dispossessed about the month of April, 1789, by a Spanish officer, shall be restored to the said British subjects, the Court of Spain have agreed to send orders for that purpose to their officers in that part of the world; but as the particular specification of the parts to be restored may still require some farther time, the King's orders for this purpose must be sent out to the Sandwich Islands by a vessel which may carry out a farther store of provisions for the Discovery and Chatham, and should sail from this country in time to reach the Sandwich Islands in the course of the ensuing winter. If in consequence of the arrangement to be made with the Court of Spain it should hereafter be determined that the Discovery should proceed in the first instance to Nootka‡ or elsewhere, in order to receive from the Spanish officers such lands or buildings as are to be restored to his Majesty's subjects, orders to that effect will be sent out by the vessel above men-

\* Indorsed: "Copy of a letter from Lord Grenville to the Lords Commissioners of the Admiralty, dated Whitehall, 11th Februray, 1791 (two enclosures)." The enclosures are missing. A different plan was proposed in the first instance; ante, p. 113. Instructions to Lieut. Menzies; ante, pp. 115-117.

† The King of Spain.

‡ Nootka Sound, on the north-west coast of America. (Vancouver Island.)

Expedition to  
America.

The Sandwich  
Islands to be  
examined.

Convention  
between  
England and  
Spain.

Restoration of  
land.



tioned. But if no such orders should be received by the commanding officer of the *Discovery* previous to the end of January, 1792, he should be directed not to wait for them at the Sandwich Islands, but to proceed in such course as he may judge most expedient for the examination of the coast of north-west America comprised between lat. 60 north and lat. 30 north.

1791

Feb. 11.

But not to be  
waited for after  
January, 1792.

In the examination of this coast the principal objects which he is to keep in view are :—

Objects of the  
expedition.

First.—The acquiring accurate information with respect to the nature and extent of any water communication which may tend in any considerable degree to facilitate an intercourse for the purposes of commerce between the north-west coast and the countries upon the opposite side of the continent which are inhabited or occupied by his Majesty's subjects.

Water com-  
munication and  
commerce.

Secondly.—The ascertaining with as much precision as possible the number, extent, and situation of any settlements which have been made within the limits above mentioned by any European nation, and particularly by Spain, and the time when such settlement was first made.

European  
settlements.

With respect to the first point, it would be of great importance if it should be found that by means of any considerable inlets of sea, or even of large rivers, communicating with the lakes in the interior of the continent, such an intercourse as I have already mentioned could be established. It will, therefore, be necessary that for the purpose of ascertaining this point the survey should be so conducted as not only to ascertain the general line of the sea-coast, but also the direction and extent of all such considerable inlets, whether made by arms of the sea or by the mouths of large rivers, as may be likely to lead to or facilitate such communication as I have described.

Commercial  
intercourse.

Scope of survey.

This being the principal object of the examination, as far as relates to this part of the subject, it will probably appear to your Lordships that a considerable degree of discretion must be left to the officer commanding the expedition as to the best means of executing the service which his Majesty has in view.\*

The com-  
mander's  
discretion.

\*

\*

\*

\*

But as far as any general instructions can here be given on the subject, it seems desirable that, in order to avoid any unnecessary loss of time, he should be directed not to pursue any

\* A blank occurs here. Twelve lines written by the transcriber, which the Minister, presumably, did not wish to go out of the office, have been erased.

1791

Feb. 11.

Only navigable  
waters to be  
examined.

The commander  
to have charge  
of both vessels.

Course of  
survey.

Nootka and  
Cook's River.

Communication  
to the south-  
ward more  
important.

inlet or river further than it shall appear to be navigable by vessels of such burthen as might safely navigate the Pacific Ocean. But as the examination of such inlets, even to the extent here stated, may possibly require that the officer commanding the expedition should proceed up them further than it might be safe for the Discovery to go, it seems necessary that such officer should be authorised by your Lordships to take the command in person of the Chatham, brig, at all such times and in such situations as he shall judge it necessary or expedient, and that corresponding orders should be given to the officer commanding the latter vessel.

The particular course of the survey must, of course, depend on the different circumstances which may arise in the execution of a service of this nature. It will, however, be proper that the officer commanding on this expedition should be directed to pay a particular attention to the examination of the supposed Straits of Juan de Fuca, said to lay between 48 and 49 north lat., and to lead to an opening through which the sloop Washington is reported to have passed in 1789, and to have come out again to the northward of Nootka.\* The discovery of a near communication between any such sea or strait and any river running into or from the Lake of the Woods, which is commonly laid down nearly in the same latitude, would be particularly useful. If the vessels employed on this service should fail in discovering any such inlet as I have spoken of to the southward of Cook's River, there appears the greatest probability that it will be found that this river rises in some of the lakes already known to our Canadian traders and to the servants of the Hudson's Bay Company. This point it would in that case be material to ascertain with as much precision as the then existing circumstances of the expedition may allow. But the discovery of any similar communication more to the southward, should any such exist, would be much more advantageous for the purposes of commerce, and should therefore be preferably attended to. With respect to the second of the points above mentioned, it is probable that more particular instructions will be given by the vessel to be sent to the Sandwich Islands after the Discovery. But if not, the officer commanding the expedition is to be particularly directed in the execution of this and of every other part of the service with which he is entrusted, to avoid with the utmost caution the giving any ground of jealousy or complaint to the subjects or officers of his

\* The passage was found. The land which is separated by it from the American continent is called Vancouver Island, in honour of Captain Vancouver, who circumnavigated it.

Catholic Majesty; and if he should fall in with any Spanish ships employed on any service similar to that committed to him, he is to afford to the officer commanding such ships every possible degree of assistance and information, and he is to offer to him that they should make to each other reciprocally a free and unreserved communication of all plans and charts of discoveries made by them in their respective voyages.

1791

Feb. 11.

Keep friends with Spain.

Interchange of information.

If in the course of any part of this service his Majesty's ships or officers should meet with the subjects or vessels of any other power or state, they are to treat them in the most friendly manner, and to be careful not to do anything which may give occasion to any interruption of that peace which now happily subsists between his Majesty and all other powers.

Foreigners to be treated as friends.

The whole of the survey above mentioned, if carried on with a view to the objects here stated, without too minute and particular an examination of the detail of the different parts of the coast laid down by it, may, as I understand, probably be completed in two summers. In the intermediate winter the ships are to be directed to return to the Sandwich Islands, and during their continuance there to endeavor to complete any part that may be unfinished of their examination of those islands.

Two summers allowed for the work.

After the conclusion of the survey in the second summer the commanding officer should be directed, supposing the state and circumstances of his ships should admit of it, to return by Cape Horn, for which the season will then probably be favourable. It seems doubtful how far the time may admit of his making any particular examination of the western coast of South America. But if this should be practicable, he should begin such examination from the south point of the Island of Chiloe, which is in about 44 south latitude; and he should direct his attention to ascertaining what is the most southward Spanish settlement on that coast, and what harbours there are south of any such settlement.

Return by Cape Horn.

Western coast of South America.

In the execution of every part of this service it is very material that the commanding officer should be instructed to use every possible care to avoid disputes with the natives of any of the parts where he may touch, and that he should be particularly attentive to endeavor by presents and by all other means to conciliate their friendship and confidence.

Disputes with the natives to be avoided.

I herewith enclose to your Lordships lists of such articles as have been procured for the purpose of presents. These will be delivered into the care of the commanding officer, to be disposed of by him according to the regulations which have been observed in similar cases.

Presents.

I am, &amp;c.,

GRENVILLE.

1791

April 18.

LIEUTENANT-GOVERNOR KING TO UNDER SECRETARY NEPEAN.\*

DEAR SIR,—

Gorgon, Teneriffe, April 18th, 1791.

After a very tedious passage of a month from Portsmouth we arrived here the 15th inst., and I suppose shall sail about the 21st; but as no vessel is yet at this place bound to Europe, it will be some time before you can receive this.

Judicial  
proceedings at  
Norfolk Island.

I must once more remind you of the necessity of some arrangement being made respecting the judicial proceedings on N.I. I am certain that when you consider the great number of inhabitants on that island, the necessity of that business being arranged will be obvious to you. A sett of common-form law books will be necessary, such as will give necessary information, and not lead one into the maze of law. I should think these books would be Burn's "Justice," Jacobs's "Law Dictionary," and Blackstone's "Commentaries." Should any other be necessary, I should suppose that a list of the books supplied Mr. Collins might be found at some of the offices.

Necessaries.

Coals, seines, fishing lines and hooks will also be great essentials, and absolutely necessary.

We have a great deal of room [rheum] on board the Gorgon, and I am fearfull we shall have as much all the passage.

Flax  
manufacture.

Should the manufacturing of the flax-plant on Norfolk Island be thought an object, which it must be, were it only to cloath those who are now there, two or three New Zealanders would be necessary to show how the operation of separating the flaxy from the vegetable part of the plant is performed, and without that assistance I do not think we shall succeed, as every method we could devise has been tried already, but without success.

Allowances.

If there could be a possibility of my being allowed the whole of the salary from my leaving Norfolk Island till I arrive there again, it would make a material sum to me. Major Ross receives his appointment as Lt.-Governor *independent* of N.I., and so I came home *on service*. I refer my claim to your friendship, and if it is customary to make any allowance for expences going out, it will be a little help to me, as my mess to New South Wales will be near £50. Should this be a customary allowance, I hope I shall not be excluded, and have desired my agent to wait upon you. If the first is improper, and the second unusual, no more can be done.

The enclosed is a letter for Mr. Davidson, in which is a receipt for some articles sent on board the Gorgon, and which would have been sent from Spithead, but as our departure from Spithead soon followed my getting to Portsmouth, and having much to do, it did not occur to me till too late.

\* A private letter.



Two English ships, which from their appearance we took to be transports, passed this island on the 16th, standing to the southward. I believe Capt. P. [Parker] intends touching at St. Iago. I beg my respectfull comp'ts to Mrs. Nepean.

I am, &c.,

PHILIP GIDLEY KING.

1791  
April 18.

THE RIGHT HON. HENRY DUNDAS\* TO GOVERNOR PHILLIP.

SIR,—

Whitehall, 5 July, 1791.

July 5.

Agreeably to the intimation which was made to you by Lord Grenville in his letter, No. 10, of the 19th of February last, the ship Pitt has been taken up, and will proceed with three hundred and fifty-six male and fifty-six female convicts to Port Jackson the first fair wind.

The Pitt.

In selecting the convicts who compose the present embarkation care has been taken that no persons but such as are likely to be useful in the settlement will now be sent out. It will, I am afraid, be impossible, unless the Pitt should be detained longer than is expected, to furnish you by her with copies of the several Orders of Council for fixing the destination of these people; but, as another vessel will be dispatched to you in the course of the autumn with a further number of convicts, I shall avail myself of that opportunity of forwarding them to you.

Useful convicts.

You will receive by the Pitt a vessel in frame, which, when set up, will, I have no doubt, be found extremely useful to you; and also a proportion of salted beef and pork for four hundred convicts for twelve months. The supply was confined to these articles on the idea that, with the grain produced in the settlements, the flour already sent from home, the quantity purchased at Batavia, and the supply intended to be forwarded to you from Calcutta, you would not, at least for the present, be in want of flour or rice. I shall, however, before the departure of the next ship, endeavour to form the best opinion I can from your communications of the exact state of the settlement in this respect, and shall then make such preparation as may appear requisite for furnishing you with such further supplies as you may be supposed to stand in need of. The tonnage taken up in stowing away the vessel in frame has prevented you receiving by this opportunity some articles, particularly the clothing for the convicts now embarked, which could not, from the want of room, be taken on board.

A vessel in frame.

Provisions.

Further supplies

\* Afterwards Viscount Melville. He succeeded Lord Grenville at the Home Office in June, 1791, Grenville going to the Foreign Office.

1791  
 July 5.  
 North American  
 possessions.

Captain  
 Vancouver's  
 instructions.

Dædalus.

Major Grose.

The ship Dædalus will proceed in the course of a few days to the north-west coast of America, to receive possession of the several places there which, in consequence of the late convention between his Majesty and the King of Spain, are to be restored.\* This vessel, after the performance of that service and delivering to Captain Vancouver (employed in surveying the said coast) such stores and provisions as he may be able to take on board, will, agreeably to the intimation made to you by Lord Grenville in his letter before referred to, repair to New South Wales, where she may be expected early in the year 1793, and her commander will then follow your orders, either for going to Calcutta or elsewhere, for the purpose of procuring supplies. It is probable, however, that Captain Vancouver will not be able to take on board so much of the cargo of the Dædalus as may be sufficient to enable him to execute the orders he has received ; if it should so happen, he will apply to you to order the Dædalus to rejoin him at the Sandwich Islands during the following winter with the remainder of her cargo ; and on receiving such application you will comply therewith, or send some other vessel, which may then be with you, with those supplies, and any others he may stand in need of, which the settlement under your government may, without inconvenience, be able to furnish. Major Grose proceeds in the Pitt with one company of his corps ; the other will follow in the next ship. The disposition which has in many instances been shown by the convicts to mutiny during the passage appears to render a military guard at all times indispensably necessary.†

THE RIGHT HON. HENRY DUNDAS TO THE LORDS OF THE  
 ADMIRALTY. (Banks Papers.)‡

July 6. MY LORDS,— 6th July, 1791.

I transmit to your Lordships herewith the duplicate and translation of a letter from Count Florida Blanca,§ signifying his Catholic Majesty's orders to the Spanish officer commanding at Nootka to cause such officer as may be appointed on the part of his Majesty to be put in possession of the buildings and districts

\* Ante, p. 122.

† This despatch is unsigned, but it is obviously from the Right Hon. Henry Dundas.

‡ Unsigned, but indorsed in Sir Joseph Banks's handwriting, " Dra't to the Admiralty about the Dædalus." This letter is obviously from the Right Hon. Henry Dundas.

§ A Spanish statesman and political economist. When this letter was written Count Florida Blanca was First Secretary of State. " Annual Register," 1790, p. 292.

or parcells of land therein described, which were occupied by his subjects in the month of April, 1789, agreeably to the first article of the late convention ; and also to deliver up any persons in the service of British subjects who may have been detained in those parts.

1791  
July 6.

The Dædalus transport having, I understand, taken on board the provisions and stores demanded by Capt. Vancouver for the supply of the Discovery and Chatham, tender, it is his Majesty's pleasure that your Lordships should order Lieut. Hergest, her commander, the moment she is ready for sea, to proceed with her to the Sandwich Islands, and on meeting with Captain Vancouver to deliver to him the letters above mentioned relative to the restitutions, and to put himself under his direction for the execution of this service, in order that Capt. Vancouver may be impeded as little as possible in the progress of his intended survey ; but as the season is now so far advanced, it appears extremely probable that Captain Vancouver will have left the Sandwich Islands before the arrival of the Dædalus, and if it should so happen, Lieut. Hergest should be directed to make the best of his way to Nootka, where he may expect to be met by a Spanish officer, to whom he is to deliver Count Florida Blanca's letter, and to receive from him, on the part of his Majesty, possession of the buildings and districts or parcells of land of which his Majesty's subjects were possessed at that port, as well as at Port Cox and any other places on that coast ; and having so done he is to await at Nootka until he shall be joined by Capt. Vancouver, who, as your Lordships will see by an extract of a letter from him, may be expected there in the course of the next summer.

The Dædalus.

Instructions.

To wait at  
Nootka.

During L't Hergest's continuance at Nootka or elsewhere on the American coast, he is to avoid with the utmost caution the giving any ground of complaint to the subjects or officers of his Catholic Majesty whom he may meet with, and to treat them in the most amicable and friendly manner ; and if he should fall in with any Spanish ships employed on the said coast, he is to afford to the officer commanding such ships every possible degree of assistance and information, and he is to offer to him that they should make to each other reciprocally a free and unreserved communication of all plans and charts of discoveries made by them during their respective voyages. He is also to be particularly enjoined to treat in the most friendly manner the subjects or vessels of any other power or state or any of the native Indians which he may happen to meet with, and to be careful not to do anything which may give occasion to any interruption of that peace which now happily subsists between his Majesty and all other powers.

To make friends  
with the  
Spaniards

and the natives.

1791

July 6.

Not to go  
southward of  
lat. 30° N.

Your Lordships will likewise instruct L't Hergest on no account whatever to touch at any port on the continent of America to the southward of the lat. of 30° No., unless from any accident he should find it necessary for his immediate safety to take shelter there, and in case of such an event to continue there no longer than may be absolutely necessary. This restriction should also be strongly enforced on Capt. Vancouver, in order to prevent his having any communication with that part of the coast comprised within the lat. above mentioned and that part of South America where on his return home he is directed to commence his intended survey, that any complaints on the part of Spain upon this point may, if possible, be prevented.

Contingencies.

From the nature of the service on which Capt. Vancouver is employed, a variety of circumstances may occur which may prevent his reaching the port of Nootka during the ensuing summer. If it should so happen, or that he does not arrive there before the month of November, it will be proper that Lieut. Hergest should be directed to proceed from thence to Karahoa Bay, and endeavour to fall in with him there or elsewhere in the Sandwich Islands, where Capt. Vancouver proposes to pass the winter.

The Dædalus to  
go to Port  
Jackson with  
live-stock.

As the Dædalus, after this service shall have been performed, is intended to be employed in N. S. Wales under the orders of Governor Phillip, it will be proper that your Lordships should direct Capt. Vancouver not to detain her at Nootka or at the Sandwich Islands any longer than may be absolutely necessary, but to dispatch her to Port Jackson with such live stock and other refreshments as may be likely to be of use in the settlement there, directing L't Hergest to touch at New Zealand in his way and endeavour to take with him a flax-dresser or two, in order that the new settlers may, if possible, be properly instructed in management of that valuable plant. Previous, however, to his dispatching the Dædalus he will consider whether, in case of his not being able to take on board the whole of her cargo, any future supply of those articles will be necessary to enable him to continue his intended survey, and, if so, that he will be careful to send notice thereof to Governor Phillip, who, on the receipt of such application, will be directed to redispach the Dædalus or to send some other vessel to him with the remainder of those supplies, and any others which he may be able to furnish to such rendezvous as Capt. Vancouver may think fit to appoint.

Supplies.

The coast of  
America.

I enclose to your Lordships herewith a sketch of the coast of America, extending from Nootka down to the latitude 47° 30", including the inlet or Gulph of Juan de Fuca, referred to in my former dispatch.\* The surveys from which this sketch was

\* Ante, p. 124.



compiled are said to have been made by one of the ships under M. de Martinez, in the year 1790, and will probably be found to be of use on the intended expedition. This sketch was obtained by Lord St. Helens from Count Florida Blanca, and I have the satisfaction of informing your Lordships that from the declarations which have lately been made by that Minister there appears to be the strongest disposition on the part of his Court that every assistance and information should be given to his Majesty's officers employed upon that coast, with a view to the enabling them to carry their orders into full execution.

1791  
July 6.

If either Capt. Vancouver or Lieut. Hergest during their continuance on the American coast should meet with any of the Chinese who were engaged by Mr. Meares and his associates, or any of his Majesty's subjects who may have been in captivity, they are to be directed to receive them on board, and to accommodate them in the best manner they may be able, until such time as opportunities may be found of sending them to the different places to which they may be desirous of being conveyed.

Captives to be released.

[Unsigned.]

# CAPTAIN VANCOUVER TO UNDER SECRETARY NEPEAN.

SIR,—  
Discovery, in Simon's Bay,  
Cape of Good Hope, 17th July, 1791.

July 17.

I have the pleasure to inform you that on the tenth of this month we arrived in this bay in perfect health. Indeed, the whole of our people seem to enjoy that blessing in an infinite superior degree than on our departure from England. We have found the Discovery to answer in every respect equal, and in some instances beyond, our expectations. In the Chatham we have not been so fortunate, as she is neither so comfortable at sea, nor doth she sail at all equal to what was expected, being much inferior in those points to the Discovery. We are recruiting our provisions and refitting the vessels with all possible dispatch, and I trust in about a fortnight shall be able to proceed on our voyage. I shall, however, at that period do myself the pleasure of again addressing you; I only now take the opportunity of the departure of the Warren Hastings of informing you of our arrival, and that I had the pleasure of finding here the Gorgon, with Captain Parker and Captain King. The former sailed on Friday from this bay, and, I believe, to-day arrived in Table Bay, in order to take in the live stock and such of the Guardian's remaining stores as she could conveniently stow, in order to save the expence of

Voyage of the  
Discovery and  
Chatham.

Refitting.

The Gorgon.

1791  
July 17.  
Transports for  
Port Jackson.

transporting them from Cape Town hither, which is very exorbitant. The Active, Queen, Albemarle, Barrington, and Britannia, Port Jackson transports, are here, and will be able to take with them all the remaining part of salt meat of the Guardian's cargo. The Gorgon takes her cable and such of the refuse of stores as will remain. It is at present in contemplation to settle and close the accounts of that unfortunate business.

At the eve of our departure I shall write you fully respecting ourselves, until when I beg leave to say,

I have, &c.,  
GEO. VANCOUVER.

#### CAPTAIN VANCOUVER TO LORD GRENVILLE.\*

Discovery, Fals [False] Bay, Cape of Good Hope,  
Aug. 9. MY LORD,— August, ye 9th, 1791.

A blot in  
geography.

Proposed  
exploration.

New Holland  
and Van  
Diemen's Land.

Since receiving my instructions at Falmouth for the prosecution of our voyage I have much regretted not being fortunate enough in a farther interview with your Lordship to have gained your final opinion respecting the examination of that extent of coast of the S.W. side of New Holland, which in the present age appears a real blot in geography, particularly when we reflect on the many vessels that in this improved age of navigation have passed the meridians; we have every reason to suppose it occupies not more than 150 leagues to the south of it without endeavouring to bring home any farther information respecting that extensive country. And as it is my wish as well as my ambition through the course of this voyage that the whole of our time should be usefully occupied in acquiring every knowledge of the distant regions we are to visit, and on considering that Captain Cook's chart of the Sandwich Islands has left me but a small field to occupy two winters in their farther examination, therefore, as the depth of winter in this hemisphere is passed over and the spring fast advancing, and likewise as when I had the honour of communicating my wishes to prosecute such an examination your Lordship seemed highly to approve of the idea, it is my intention to fall in with the S.W. Cape of New Holland, and should I find the shores capable of being navigated without much hazard, to range its coast and determine whether it and Van Diemen's Land are joined, which from all information at present extant

\* Captain Vancouver was not yet aware that Lord Grenville's seat at the Home Office had been taken by the Right Hon. Henry Dundas.

appears somewhat doubtful. I should be exceedingly sorry to lose this opportunity of throwing some light on the above subject, having sufficient time to do it and reach the Sandwich Islands, refresh, &c., &c., prior to proceeding on the American coast agreeable to my instructions.

1791  
Aug. 9.

I shall, however, prosecute this designe with the utmost caution, and should I find it attended with intricacy and danger, ever having the object of our voyage in view, abandon it and proceed into the Pacific Ocean.

I have taken this liberty of informing you of my intentions, judging it not unlikely that an opportunity may shortly offer of informing your Lordship how far I have been able to put them in execution. And have only to beg a few moments intrusion farther on your leisure to say—Mr. Menzies having applied to me for some spirits for the preservation of the different natural curiosities he may fall in with, I have thought proper to add to the bill some breeding sheep, garden seeds, &c., &c., which I intend as presents to the different chiefs of the Sandwich Islands. I shall likewise, as there are plenty of goats at Otaheite, which lays on my route to the northward from thence, procure a stock of those animals for the Sandwich Islands. The amount of the things purchased here being about 334 rix dollars, I have taken the liberty of drawing on the Treasury; for which with a letter of advice have transmitted them attested vouchers, and your Lordship's giving directions for the same to be paid will oblige him who has the honour to be, &c.,

Presents for the  
Sandwich  
Islands.

GEO. VANCOUVER.

#### INSTRUCTIONS TO VANCOUVER.

[This document does not appear in the "Historical Records of New South Wales," but is obtained from "A Voyage of Discovery to the North Pacific Ocean and Round the World," by Captain George Vancouver, 1801, pp. 67 to 74.—THE EDITOR.]

By the Commissioners for executing the office of Lord High Admiral of Great Britain and Ireland, &c.

LIEUTENANT Hergest, commanding the *Dædalus* transport, (by whom you will receive this), being directed to put himself under your command, and to follow your orders for his further proceedings; you are hereby required and directed to take him, and the said transport, under your command accordingly; receiving from her the provisions and stores intended for the use of the sloop you command, and the *Chatham* armed tender, or

1791

such part thereof as the said ship and tender shall be able to stow.

And whereas you will receive herewith a duplicate of a letter from Count Florida Blanca, to the Spanish officer commanding at Nootka (together with a translation thereof), signifying His Catholic Majesty's orders to cause such officer as may be appointed on the part of His Britannic Majesty, to be put in possession of the buildings, and districts, or parcels of lands therein described, which were occupied by His Majesty's subjects in the month of April, 1789, agreeable to the first article of the late convention, (a copy of which has been sent to you) and to deliver up any persons in the service of British subjects who may have been detained in those parts; in case, therefore, you shall receive this at Nootka, you are to deliver to the Spanish officer, commanding at that port, the above-mentioned letter from Count Florida Blanca, and to receive from him, conformably thereto, on the part of His Britannic Majesty, possession of the buildings and districts, and parcels of land, of which His Majesty's subjects were possessed at the above-mentioned period.

In case, however, this shall not find you at Nootka, when Lieutenant Hergest arrives there, but be delivered to you at the Sandwich Islands, or elsewhere, and the said lieutenant shall not have then carried into execution the service above-mentioned, (which in the event of his not falling in with you he is directed to do) you are immediately to proceed to Nootka, and to carry that service into execution as above directed, taking the said lieutenant and transport with you if you shall judge it necessary. But as they are intended afterwards to proceed to New South Wales, to be employed there, under the orders of commodore Phillip, you are not to detain them at Nootka, the Sandwich Islands, or elsewhere, longer than may be absolutely necessary, but to direct Lieutenant Hergest to repair with the said transport to Port Jackson, with such live stock, and other refreshments, as may be likely to be of use in the settlements there; and to touch at New Zealand on his way, from whence he is to use his best endeavours to take with him one or two flax-dressers, in order that the new settlers at port Jackson may, if possible, be properly in the management of that valuable plant.

Previous, however, to your despatching him to port Jackson, you are to consider whether, in case of your not being able to take on board the whole of the transport's cargo, any future supply of the articles of which it is composed, will be necessary to enable you to continue your intended survey; and, if so, you are to be careful to send notice thereof to Commodore Phillip, who will have directions, on the receipt of your application, to re-dispatch the transport, or to send such other vessel to



you with the remainder of those supplies (as well as any others he may be able to furnish) to such rendezvous as you shall appoint.

1791

And whereas Mr. Dundas has transmitted to us a sketch of the coast of North America, extending from Nootka down to the latitude of  $47^{\circ} 30'$ , including the inlet or gulf of Juan de Fuca ; and as from the declarations which have lately been made, there appears to be the strongest disposition on the part of the Spanish court, that every assistance and information should be given to his Britannic Majesty's officers employed on that coast, with a view to the enabling them to carry their orders into execution ; we send you the said sketch herewith, for your information and use, and do hereby require and direct you to do everything in your power to cultivate a good understanding with the officers and subjects of his Catholic Majesty who may fall in your way, in order that you may reap the good effects of that disposition of the Spanish court.

You are to take the utmost care in your power, on no account whatever, to touch at any port on the continent of America to the southward of the latitude of  $30^{\circ}$  north, nor to the north of that part of South America, where, on your return home, you are directed to commence your intended survey ; unless, from any accident, you shall find it absolutely necessary, for your immediate safety, to take shelter there : and, in case of such an event, to continue there no longer than your necessities require, in order that any complaint on the part of Spain on this point may, if possible, be prevented.

If, during your continuance on the American coast, you should meet with any of the Chinese who were employed by Mr. Meares and his associates, or any of his Majesty's subjects, who may have been in captivity, you are to receive them on board the sloop you command, and to accomodate them in the best manner you may be able, until such time as opportunities may be found of sending them to the different places to which they may be desirous of being conveyed ; victualling them during their continuance on board, in the same manner as the other persons on board the said sloop are victualled.

Given under our hands the 20th of August, 1791.

CHATHAM.

J. T. TOWNSHEND.

A. GARDNER.

To George Vancouver, Esq., Commander of his Majesty's Sloop the Discovery.

By command of their Lordships.

PH. STEPHENS.

1791

May 12.

[Enclosure.]

IN conformity to the first article of the Convention of 28th October, 1790, between our court and that of London, (printed copies of which you will have already received, and of which another copy is here inclosed, in case the first have not come to hand) you will give directions that his Britannic Majesty's officer, who will deliver this letter, shall immediately be put in possession of the buildings and districts, or parcels of land, which were occupied by the subjects of that sovereign in April, 1789, as well in the port of Nootka or of Saint Lawrence, as in the other, said to be called port Cox, and to be situated about sixteen leagues distant from the former to the southward; and that such parcels or districts of land, of which the English subjects were dispossessed, be restored to the said officer, in case the Spaniards should not have given them up.

You will also give orders, that if any individual in the service of British subjects, whether a Chinese, or of any other nation, should have been carried away and detained in those parts, such person shall be immediately delivered up to the above-mentioned officer.

I also communicate all this to the viceroy of New Spain by his Majesty's command, and by the royal command I charge you with the most punctual and precise execution of this order.

May God preserve you many years.

THE COUNT FLORIDA BLANCA.

Aranjuez, 12th May, 1791.

To the Governor or Commander of the port of Saint Lawrence.

J. JOHNSTONE TO J. BERTERET (Banks Papers).\*

Cape of Good Hope, August 22, 1791.

Aug. 22.

The Chatham  
and Discovery.

THE Chatham† was, without a doubt, the most improper vessel that could have been pitched upon. She draws  $12\frac{1}{2}$  feet of water, and is scarcely the burthen of 120 tons; she has neither breadth nor length in the least reasonable proportion; where then is the fitness for rivers and shallows, which they say we are to explore? As you may conclude, we are very tender, and for sailing we have not been a match for the dullest merchant vessel we have met with. The Discovery sails much better, and she is stiff from her good bearings, and by her projecting sides affords great

\* MS. in Sir Joseph Banks's handwriting, indorsed, "Extract and abstract—J. Johnstone to J. Berteret."

† The armed tender selected, in place of the Gorgon, to accompany the Discovery on Vancouver's expedition to the north-west coast of America. Ante, p. 113.

convenience and room for working. She has answered so far as to please those belonging to her.

1791  
Aug. 22.

We could have anchored at Funchal in an hour or two, but the Discovery, having acted with much more caution in respect to the land, was not able to come to us, and therefore made us a signal to join her.

Funchal.

We anchored at Teneriffe in Santa Cruz Bay on the 29th of April, and here we took in 25 tons of stone ballast, finding our own—which was 25 tons of                      and 4 of iron pigs—too little.

Teneriffe.

On the Sunday after our arrival we dined with an Englishman, and both ships had liberty, in consequence of which all hands got drunk, and insulted everyone, even the Spanish centinels. The Spanish guard was called out, and some of our men were forced down to their boats rather roughly, when the capt., who heard of the attack just as he had finished his coffee, came down, and was instantly thrust by the butt end of a musket into the sea.

Affray with the guard.

The capt., when he came on board, lamented that he was not decked in his uniform, as he could in that case have made a national affair of it; he wrote, however, to the Spanish Governor, resting his charge on there having been a lieut. in uniform among those who were beaten, and received an evasive answer. I dare-say the Governor thought him in the wrong.

Complaint to the Governor.

July 10, we came into False Bay and found the Gorgon, with five transports for New S. Wales. If you were to see the broils on board those ships you would think with me that duty and command are not sufficiently defined. There is a naval lieut. as agent, but between him and the master of the ship is a daily contention. The officer of the troops also thinks he has a command, so that on board of them regularity and subordination are out of practice.

Naval disputes.

Our astronomical quadrant is of Bird, vamped up by Roweden. We young astronomers take upon us to condemn its exactness, and find it awkward in the adjustment.

#### LIEUT.-GOVERNOR KING TO THE MARQUIS OF BUCKINGHAM.\*

Extract from a letter from Lieutenant-Governor King to the Right Hon'ble the Marquis of Buckingham, dated Sydney, New South Wales, 24th Oct., 1791.

Oct. 24.

OUR voyage from the Cape of Good Hope can by no means be called a bad one. Many gales of wind happened, and the seas were in general very high; but in a ship like the Gorgon those incon-

From the Cape to Sydney.

\* Lord Lieutenant of Ireland. He was Lord Grenville's brother.

|                                    |  |
|------------------------------------|--|
| 1791<br>Oct. 24.<br><hr/>          | <p>veniences are not much felt, and was it not for the extreme cold (the thermometer being, on an average, below 40°) and the wet state of the ship, which made us unfortunately loose a part of our stock, the voyage, altho' in the depth of winter, and running 5,000 miles in the parallel of 43° and 44°, might be called a very good one.</p>  |
| Average length<br>of passage.      | <p>The general run of all the transports and the Gorgon from the Cape of Good Hope to this port was eight weeks.</p>   |
| Loss of live<br>stock.             | <p>Out of 25 cows, 3 bulls, 62 ewes, 4 rams, and 11 swine taken on board at the Cape we lost 8 cows, 3 bulls, 8 ewes, 3 rams; but to make up in part for those losses a very fine bull calf, 17 cows, and a cow calf are in very good condition, and grazing at Parramatta with about 60 ewes.</p>   |
| Harvest<br>prospects at<br>Sydney. | <p>Very great exertions have been made here, and a vast tract of land cleared. A number of people have become settlers, one of which has been some months independant, and the rest are making great advances towards it. From present appearances, I think there is every reason to expect a plentiful crop of Indian corn. The wheat has suffered very much from the great droughts; for sixteen months scarce any rain; but some late rains has given it a more promising appearance. Poultry, swine, and goats would have been in great abundance had there been corn to support them, and which there will be in plenty when the crops are got in.</p>  |
| Good harvest at<br>Norfolk Island. | <p>Respecting Norfolk Island, we have the most flattering accounts (both publick and private) of the appearance of a very plentiful harvest. A person sent there some time ago has made considerable improvements in dressing the New Zealand flax found on the island, from which he has made some very good coarse canvas.</p>   |
| Whale fishery.                     | <p>There is a circumstance which will add greatly to the consequence of this settlement, which is the whale fishery. Most of the whalers which were destined for the west coast of America have altered their plans, and are now going to fish on this coast. The most experienced master of those ships declared on his arrival here "that in one day he saw more spermaceti whales on this coast than he had done on the coast of Brazil in six years." In the Gorgon we passed through a shoal of fifty. It is needless for me to point out the very obvious advantages which will accrue to the colony if this fishery succeeds, and which I think there is very little doubt of. Four of those [whaling ships] sailed yesterday to fish on the coast.</p> |
| Whales<br>numerous.                |  |



LIEUTENANT-GOVERNOR KING TO UNDER SECRETARY NEPEAN.\*

1791

DEAR SIR,—

Norfolk Island, 23 November, 1791.

Nov. 23.

After a week's pleasant passage, I landed here on the 4th instant, when I found discord and strife in every person's countenance, and in every corner and hole of the island, which you may easily conceive would render this an exact emblem of the infernal regions.

Discord and strife.

The accounts you will receive of this island from Ross (if he does not find it his interest to depart from the language he now holds) will be the most favourable and flattering, and, as far as I can observe at present, with great reason, for the crops, both publick and private, wear a most promising aspect.

Ross's account.

On my landing here a general murmuring and discontent at Major Ross's conduct assailed me from every description of people on the island. The acre plan was represented to me by a representation signed by 158 convicts as a compulsive measure of Major Ross's, and the impossibility of their being able to maintain themselves within the prescribed time, viz., to be clear of the publick store in March, '92. I am convinced that Major Ross's ideas in setting that plan on foot was the most laudable, and an end much to be wished for; but, from what I can at present observe and understand, I do not imagine more than twenty men at the farthest can possibly maintain themselves for three months independent of the stores. This, with the loss of a very material book of the accounts, in consequence of the plan, and the discontent that prevailed, induced me to call in the swine, and to declare the plan done away, on condition of the time given them for the above purpose being made up in publick work at the expiration of their future tasks, and I have no doubt but it will prevent much misunderstandings and great discontents.

Discontent—the "acre plan."

The "acre plan" abolished.

Forty marines and seamen and thirty-five convicts are settled here; twenty-four marines more are returning to Port Jackson with Major Ross to get their discharges, and will return here to settle, which will make the number of settlers, soldiers, and seamen sixty-four, who will have three thousand eight hundred and forty acres (each man has sixty acres); that doubled, for the intermediate Crown land, as pointed out by the instructions, will make it seven thousand six hundred and eighty; thirty-five convicts will have on an average twelve acres each, and, with the intermediate Crown land, will make the whole quantity of ground to be granted to the above people eight thousand four hundred and twenty acres. Now, I do not think that there is more than that quantity of ground fit for cultivation on the island when the

Settlers at Norfolk Island.

The area of land granted to them.

\* A private letter.

1791  
Nov. 23.

Provision for  
others.

Terms.

Swine given to  
settlers.

Reduced ration.

Influx of  
population.

The island not  
yet independent  
of supplies.

Flax.

space the buildings stand on and a quantity of ground is left for the flax ; but you will observe that the Crown land will still remain at the disposal of the Crown, and which I should apprehend must be cleared and cultivated for the support of the great number who are not, nor cannot, be admitted as settlers, as there are upwards of \* invalids who cannot work, exclusive of the civil and military, who must be provided for.

The terms of the marines and convict settlers is as follows : The marines are to be independant of the publick stores in eighteen months, and the convicts in twelve months ; they each take a woman, who they are to maintain independant of the stores in a twelve-month, viz., when their first crop is got off the ground, which will be in Decr., '92. Each settler will also take a convict after their first crop is got off the ground, and maintain him. From the hogs which will be delivered out to the settlers (and which could not have been done if the acre plan had not been abolished), and these swine which will be purchased from the convicts going from hence to Port Jackson and the marines, I hope there will be nearly enough to supply the whole of the settlers, so as to make them independant of animal food at the prescribed time. I have been thus far explicit in the acre plan, settlers, &c., that you may be informed of the real state, which may be much misrepresented.

I am told there are upwards of one hundred acres in wheat and sixty in Indian corn, which, from the appearance, will certainly produce well, and be of some assistance to us ; but it will be necessary to reduce our ration soon after the departure of the ship that is conveying Major Ross away, and which I shall take upon myself.

Had I remained here, and no more people had been sent after January, '90, I am certain this island would now have been nearly independant for flour. Our numbers were then one hundred and sixty in all. Only twenty-two months has elapsed since that time, and the numbers have increased to one thousand men, women, and children ; still less, therefore, it cannot be wondered at, if the independancy of this island is still removed to a greater distance of time. The time of our being independant for animal food is at a greater distance from the small quantity of stock on the island in proportion to the number of people to be supplied ; and as for cloathing, much cannot be expected from the flax untill we can get a native of New Zealand. Specimens will be sent home of what has been done with it.

\* Blank in MS.

You will excuse me when I again remind you of the great necessity there is for some regular and authorized mode of distributing justice. You will easily conceive that among such a sett of miserable and lawless wretches some mode should be adopted and put in force; there is not one among them that does not know how confined the power of a justice of the peace is, and when it is necessary to send a prisoner to be tried at the criminal court at Port Jackson, it may, and has happened, that the most usefull people here are taken away as witnesses. If a court could be established here for the trial of capital crimes, consisting of the Lieut.-Govr. as judge, the Deputy-Surveyor and two assistant surgeons (or the chaplain in the room of one of them), and those military officers which might have power to try and pronounce judgement; and in case of death being adjudged, not to be put into execution untill the Governor-in-Chief has signed or authorized the sentence. In this case it would be necessary to furnish the island with the same law books that are in possession of the Judge-Advocate of N.S. Wales. The clergyman who came out in the first fleet\* accompanied me hither, and has been very usefull in marrying, christening, &c., but as he returns with Major Ross we shall be left to work over our work (*sic*), but I hope one will be sent out.

1791  
Nov. 23.

A court of  
justice  
necessary—

for trial of  
capital crimes.

Law books.

A clergyman  
wanted.

I have made a great effort in writing this long letter, as I am pestered with complaints, bitter revilings, backbitings, and almost everything to begin over again.

Complaints and  
revilings.

I hope you enjoy a good state of health, and shall be glad to be informed of it by the first ship you may send to our part of the world. I beg my best respects to Mrs. Nepean, and am

Yours, &c.,  
PHILIP GIDLEY KING.

CAPT. VANCOUVER'S EXPEDITION.—NOTES BY SIR JOSEPH BANKS  
(Banks Papers).

1791.—*Chatham*.

August.—Left the Cape; went to Dusky Bay; remained there three weeks; on the night of departure from thence parted company with the Discovery.

The Chatham  
and the  
Discovery

December 27.—Arrived at Metaire [Mattavai] Bay four days after the Discovery parted company.

\* The Rev. R. Johnson.

1792

1792.

Stayed a month at Otaheite; were six weeks going to the Sandwich Islands; stayed ten days.

April 17.—Made the coast of America.

Aug. 28.—Anchored at Nootka, where the store-ship the *Dædalus* had arrived before. Mr. Hergest, Mr. Gooch, and one seaman had been cut off at Wohakoo.\* Two years more will scarce complete the research to be done on the coast. Don Quadra, commandant of the Spaniards, is† ; he this day departs for New Spain, leaving a frigate in charge of the port. Vessels of all nations are in the port.

### 1792.—*Discovery.*

March 1st.—Arrived at Sandwich Islands. 16.—† and wrote this letter from anchor. Explored the south-west side of New Holland from the Chatham's, lat.  $35^{\circ} 63' N.$ , long.  $116^{\circ} 35\frac{1}{2}' E.$  to termination; † Island, lat.  $34^{\circ} 22' S.$ , long.  $122^{\circ} 08\frac{1}{2}' E.$  Discovered an excellent port in  $35^{\circ} 05' 30''$ ,  $118^{\circ} 14' 13''$ , consisting of a spacious and well-sheltered sound with two harbours—King George III Sound. Sailing round the south promontory of New Zealand, discovered a cluster of small rocky islands, seven in number, extending about three leagues, bearing from S. Cape S. 40, W. 19 leagues, lat.  $48^{\circ} 33' S.$ , long.  $166^{\circ} 20' E.$ , called the Snares. Discovered an island, named Oparo, lat.  $27^{\circ} 36' 30''$ , long.  $215^{\circ} 57'$ , inhabited by South Sea people. The Chatham discovered an island,  $43^{\circ} 48' S. l.$ ,  $183^{\circ} 2' E.$ , and sailed nearly in an E. direction for 12 leagues along the north side of it; called it Chatham Island. Discovered another in lat.  $23^{\circ} 42'$ , long.  $212^{\circ} 54'$ ; called it Broughton's Isle. From Owhyhee they called at Woaho, and on their arrival at Altowai did not find the store-ship. At Altowai were three Englishmen left by an American vessel to collect sandalwood and pearls. During their absence of twenty months the natives treated them well, but they told C. Vancouver that Trassa had captured Metcalf's schooner and killed all the men but one, who is believed to be residing at Owhyhee, and that Oio, King of Altowai, had attempted an American brig. The letter was left with these men. Every person on board the vessels, except Neal Coyle, a private marine, who died 8th Sept. last, are well.

\* See Lieutenant Menzies' account, post p. 143.

† Blank in manuscript.



LIEUTENANT MENZIES TO SIR JOSEPH BANKS (Banks Papers).

SIR JOSEPH,—

Nootka Sound, Sept. 26th, 1792.

1792  
Sept. 26.

I was favoured with your letter by the *Dædalus*, store-ship, on our arrival here about twenty days ago. This ship has been about eleven months on her passage from England. On this side of Cape Horn she touched at the Marquesas, and in a few days after leaving them at a cluster of islands, where they found a fine harbour, and received good refreshments and much civility from the inhabitants. Though these were a new discovery to them, we have since learned that the Americans claim a priority.

From England  
to Nootka.

They afterwards touched at the Sandwich Isles, where they unfortunately lost Lieut. Hergest, Mr. Gooch the astronomer, and one seaman at the Island of Woahoo, on the 10th of May last. The manner in which this fatal accident happened (they say) was thus: The vessel was laying off and on in Whyteetee Bay, on the south side of Woahoo, while they were procuring water and refreshments. Lieut. Hergest conceiving that this business was going on rather dilatory, ordered a few empty casks into the boat, and he and Mr. Gooch went on shore unarmed, to see the duty forwarded. While the casks were filling they both took a short walk back into a neighbouring plantation, and in the meantime a scuffle happened on the beach between the boat's crew and the natives, in which one seaman was killed before they could get to the few arms they had in the boat. Some of the boat's crew afterwards landed, and saw at a distance a group of the natives surrounding Messrs. Hergest and Gooch, hustling them back into the mountains, and stripping them, as they thought, of their clothes. The natives now arming themselves on all sides, with clubs, spears, and stones, obliged them to retreat to their boat for safety and join the ship, which soon after came to an anchor, and on the following day sent an armed boat on shore to demand the two gentlemen, when they were informed of their being both massacred on the preceding evening, and could procure no part of them, as the natives were all armed on an adjacent hill, where it was not in their power to use any compulsive means. Thus situated they left the Sandwich Island, and arrived here about the beginning of July.

Massacre at the  
Sandwich  
Islands.

A seaman  
killed.

Lieutenant,  
Hergest and  
Mr. Gooch  
carried off

and killed.

I shall now proceed to give you a short account of our own progress since the date of my last letter to you from the Cape of Good Hope. We left that place on the 27th of August, 1791, and afterwards experienced a series of tempestuous weather until we passed the meridian of the east end of Madagascar. On the 26th September we made the coast of N. Holland, in the lat. of 35° south and long. 116° 15" east. We coasted on to the eastward for about 33 leagues, when we entered a harbour which obtained the

Course of the  
voyage.

1792  
Sept. 26.  
King George's  
Sound.

Climate and  
soil.

A delightful  
country.

name of King George Sound, in lat.  $35^{\circ} 5''$  south and long.  $118^{\circ} 16''$  east. Here we remained for about a fortnight, which gave me an opportunity of examining the country in various excursions round the south, making a copious collection of its vegetable productions, particularly the genus *BANKSIA*, which are here very numerous. The climate appears to be exceedingly favourable. The soil tho' light is good, and productive of a vast variety of vegetables, particularly inland, where the country appears chiefly covered with wood, diversified with pleasing pasturage and gentle rising hills of a very moderate height, well watered in many places by small rivulets. Whatever grains grow at the Cape would, I am certain, flourish here in greater perfection; in short, it is a delightful country, and well worth a more particular investigation from Government on account of its nearness and easy access to our settlements in India. We saw no natives or quadrupeds of any kind during our stay, tho' some recent traces of the former were very evident in two deserted villages at the head of the Sound.

New Zealand.

The Snares.

After leaving it we traced the coast about sixty leagues further to the eastward, and quitted it on the 15th of October, in the latitude of  $34^{\circ} 22''$  south, and about the longitude of  $122^{\circ}$  east, shaping our course for Van Dieman's Land, which we made on the 26th, and passing round it on the following day entered Dusky Bay, N. Zealand, on the 2nd Nov., where we remained twenty days, and where I was particularly entertained among a vast variety of cryptogamic plants, of which I have made a tolerable good collection, and added a new genus to the order of Musci. Next day, after departing from Dusky Bay, we discovered, in a violent gale of wind which separated us from our consort, a cluster of dreary barren rocks and islets, which we called the Snares, off the south-west end of N. Zealand, in lat.  $48^{\circ} 3''$  south and long.  $166^{\circ} 20''$  east; and in our passage we discovered a small inhabited island, about eight or nine leagues in circumference, in the lat. of  $27^{\circ} 36''$  south and long.  $215^{\circ} 57''$  east from Greenwich.

The Chatham.

We anchored in Mattavai Bay on the 30th December, where we joined our consort,\* who arrived about a week before us. Here the natives informed us of the departure of Capt. Edwards in the Pandora, frigate, with 13 of the Bounty's people, but we are now sorry to learn of her being since lost in the Endeavour Straights.

We left Otaheite on the 24th January, 1792, and made Owhyhee on the 1st of March, where we left Tooworero with his friend Tianna, the hero of Mears' voyage. We continued among these islands till the 16th, when we directed our course to the

\* The Chatham. Lieutenant Menzies was on board Captain Vancouver's ship, the Discovery.

N.W. coast of America, and made New Albion on the 17th of April, in lat.  $39^{\circ} 20'$  north, and longitude  $236^{\circ} 18'$  east. We continued tracing the coast to the northward without being able to find a harbour or inlet till we entered the Straits of Juan de Fuca\* on the 29th, in lat.  $48^{\circ} 24'$  N. From this to Cape Mendocino, in lat.  $40^{\circ} 30'$  N. and long.  $235^{\circ} 48'$  E., the coast preserves nearly a south direction, and affords in many places, particularly to the southward, most beautiful prospects of hills and dales, varied with woods and extended pastures mounting up their sides, presenting to the eye delightful rural landscapes, and to the mind the idea of a mountainous country in a high state of cultivation, which I could not pass without often regretting my not being able to land and examine it more particularly. We understand at present the Spaniards have no settlement to the northward of Port St. Francisco excepting Nootka, and one lately established at the entrance of De Fuca Straits. It may appear curious that on the day we made the Straits of Juan De Fuca we should fall in with the very same Capt. Gray, which in Mears' voyage is said to perform that wonderful interior navigation in the sloop Washington. I accompanied one of the officers on board his vessel, the Columbia, and he positively averred to us that he was never above 50 miles up the Straits, and came back the same way he entered, and Mr. Duffin, who is in this port at present waiting to carry our despatches to China, says that he himself was not above 14 leagues up. On comparing this to Mr. Mears' assertions you will see the difference. A little within the straits, which is about 4 leagues wide, we passed a small port on our right hand, where the Spaniards have since established a settlement, and continued our course in an easterly direction for about 80 miles. Here the straits widens to about 7 leagues and divides out in various directions; some branches out in a south and south-easterly direction for about 50 or 60 miles into a fine level country, which obtained the name of New Georgia, abounding with extended lawns and rich pastures, not unlike in beauty of prospect the most admired parks in England. Others branch out to the northward and north-eastward, but the principal branch leads to the north-westward, which, after examining all the others attentively to their terminations, we pursued, passing behind Nootka, about 20 leagues inland, and came out to the sea on the 9th of Aug., about the latitude of  $51^{\circ} 10'$  N.

1792  
Sept. 26.

New Albion.

Beautiful views.

Captain Gray.

Conflicting  
reports

New Georgia.

After this we again resumed our interior examination, keeping the continental shore aboard to the latitude of  $52\frac{1}{2}^{\circ}$ . Here a series of dirty rainy weather obliged us in some measure to

\* See Lord Grenville's despatch, ante, p. 122.



1792  
Sept. 26.  
Nootka.

Hospitality of  
the Spanish  
Governor.

He promises to  
surrender the  
territory.

Afterwards  
offers only a  
portion.

Menzies  
appointed  
surgeon of  
the Discovery.

relinquish our northern pursuits for this season, and being informed by one of the traders of the store-ship\* being at Nootka, and the catastrophe that befel her, we again came out to sea about the lat. 51° 40' on the 20th of Aug., and arrived here on the 28th, where we found Don Quadra, Governor of St. Blas, and commander-in-chief of the royal navy of Mexico and Callifornia, an officer to whose liberality and friendly hospitality we are all ready to testify our sincerest gratitude. He had his broad pendant on board a brig laying in the cove, the rest of his vessels, to the number of six, being at this time out examining different parts of the coast, two of which we had left in De Fuca's Straits behind Nootka.

He lived on shore at a very decent planked house, considering the situation, where he kept an open table, I may say, for the officers of every vessel that visited the port, and supplied them on board with greens and milk daily.

On our arrival he told Capt. Vancouver that he would put him in possession of this territory and port,† agreeable to his orders and the wish of his Catholic Majesty, giving up all the houses, gardens, &c., &c., as they stood, and that he would haul down the Spanish colours before he went away, and on our hoisting the English colours that he would salute the British flag. But on the arrival afterwards of an American trader, Capt. Inghram, he wonderfully prevaricated from his first intentions, as we believe by the advice of this man (Inghram), and would not give up any part excepting a small nook of the cove, about 100 yards wide, where Mr. Mears had his house and built his vessel, which could not be accepted of.

Don Quadra left this place a few days ago in the brig for St. Blas, parting with us in the most friendly manner, and leaving Don Coamano and a frigate to command here in his absence, but we expect to see him soon again on our way to the southward at the port of Monterey in Callifornia. He put himself under my care as a patient on or arrival here for a severe head-ache of which he complained, he said, for upwards of two years, and I was extremely happy that my endeavours proved serviceable in the re-establishment of his health before he went away.

The surgeon of the Discovery is to return to England in the store-ship by the way of Botany Bay on account of the ill state of his health, and Capt. Vancouver's earnest solicitations has induced me to accept his place, with this proviso, that he will take care it will not interfere but as little as possible with my other pursuits; indeed I have in some measure attended the surgeon's duty since we left the Cape of Good Hope, on account

\* The *Dædalus*.

† Ante, p. 122.



of Mr. Cranston's indisposition, and constantly prescribed for Capt. Vancouver himself since we left England, so that the difference now of attending the duty wholly will be very little, as I have two assistants, and the ship in general healthy; besides, I have by this change got an additional cabin, which will be very serviceable in preserving my collections, so that I trust it will meet with your approbation, as I can assure you that my endeavours will suffer no abatement in consequence thereof in executing the object of my mission.

1792  
Sept. 26.

Mr. Mudge, 1st lieu't of the Discovery, goes home by the way of China with dispatches for the Admir'y, under whose care I send this and a box of seeds directed to you for his Majesty's gardens; and as it is said that the Chatham will sail in the course of a few days for England by the way of Cape Horn I will embrace that opportunity to send duplicates.

Seeds for the  
King's gardens.

I am also happy to acquaint you that Mr. Johnstone is lately promoted to the rank of lieutenant, and I have, &c.,

ARCHIBALD MENZIES.

GOVERNOR PHILLIP TO THE RIGHT HON. HENRY DUNDAS.

Sydney, New South Wales,

4th October, 1792.

Oct. 4.

SIR,—

The inclosed letter from the major-commandant of the New South Wales Corps, and which is accompanied with my answer, will serve to show the necessity of this colony's receiving a regular supply of provisions, and the opinion formed of those supplies which have been received from India.

Regular supplies  
necessary.

I am sensible that the officers and men want conveniences which are found in garrisons long established; but here are some advantages to the officer and soldier not to be found elsewhere, and when the ration is regular, and the means of providing necessities for the soldier is in a proper channel, I believe there will be no complaints of this country.

Advantages and  
disadvantages.

The Britannia was at anchor in the lower part of the harbour, ready to sail for New Zealand, when I was informed that the officers had come to a resolution of hiring that ship to go to the Cape of Good Hope, and in the same evening I saw Major Grose on the subject; but being of a very different opinion as to the propriety, as well as of the necessity of such a measure, I wished to prevent what may be supposed to affect the interest of the East India Company, by opening a door to a contraband trade; at the same time, as I could not prevent it, and do not believe that the Britannia goes to the Cape with any such view, I beg leave to say that I do not think his Majesty's service will suffer, if the reasons

The Britannia  
hired by officers.

Phillip  
disapproves.

1792

Oct. 4.

The southern  
fishery.

assigned in Major Grose's letter should be deemed sufficient for the step which has been taken, and which being admitted may prevent much discontent.

In my letters by the last ships I have requested that the acts relative to the southern fishery may be sent, and such instructions as may be deemed necessary on that head, for I have no lawyer to consult, and it will probably be the same with the person who is to supply my place when I leave this country, which my state of health obliges me to hope I shall be at liberty to do after the arrival of the first ships, and I believe my returning to England will be the greatest service I can render this colony, independant of every other consideration, for it will put it in my power to shew what may, and what may not, be expected from it.

I have, &c.,

A. PHILLIP.

[Enclosure.]

MAJOR GROSE TO GOVERNOR PHILLIP.

SIR,—

Sydney, October 4th, 1792.

The rations  
unwholesome.

Measures for  
relief.

The situation of the soldiers under my command, who at this time have scarcely shoes to their feet, and who have no other comforts than the reduced and unwholesome rations served out from the stores, has induced me to assemble the captains of my corps for the purpose of consulting what could be done for their relief and accommodation. Amongst us we have raised a sufficient sum to take up the *Britannia*, and as all money matters are already settled with the master, who is also an owner, I have now to request you will interest yourself in our favour, that you will, by representing the necessities of my soldiers, protect this ship from interruption as much as you can, and that you will assist us to escape the miseries of that precarious existence we have hitherto been so constantly exposed to.

With every respect, &c.,

FRANS. GROSE,

Major Commandant New South Wales Corps.

[Enclosure.]

GOVERNOR PHILLIP TO MAJOR GROSE.

SIR,—

Sydney, New South Wales, October 4th, 1792.

The *Britannia*  
chartered by  
officers.

In answer to your letter of this day's date, requesting that I would interest myself in favour of the ship *Britannia*, which you inform me is taken up by yourself and officers, and that I would protect that ship from interruption as far as depends on me, I can only observe that the opinion I gave on the subject on the 2nd instant, when the business was first mentioned, must

have pointed out that any interruption which that ship might meet with, if the master acted contrary to the tenor of his license from the East India Company, did not by any means depend on me, and I am still of the same opinion with respect to this ship's going to the Brazil, or the Cape of Good Hope, as I was at the above time. I am sensible that the garrison suffers many inconveniences from the necessary supplies not arriving, and which I should gladly do away by any means in my power, yet I cannot acquiesce with you in thinking that the ration served from the public stores is unwholesome ; I see it daily at my own table ; I am sorry to see that it is neither so good nor in that quantity as I would wish it ; and every means in my power has, and will be, taken to remedy the evil. I offered to write to the Cape of Good Hope, and direct all the ships coming to this settlement to receive on board such necessaries as you might order to be purchas'd, and which I still think would be the best way of procuring them, or to employ the Atlantic, or either of those ships which are expected to arrive from day to day, in procuring the necessaries of which you stand so much in need, if, when those wants are stated officially, such a step appeared necessary ; but with a ship lying in the harbour, already in the public employ, and others expected, I saw no necessity for taking up the Britannia, nor can I form any judgement how far that ship's going to the Cape will do away all the distresses you have mentioned, as only shoes and the ration are pointed out in your letter. With respect to shoes, the corps has received as many as were demanded, while there were any in store, and the Commissary, as he ever has done, will supply the quarter-master with leather, as long as any remains. As to the nature of the ration, it is, I believe, nearly as good as what is issued to the army and navy in India, and I think that there can be little doubt but that an ample supply of provisions from Europe will arrive before the Britannia can return to this port ; and there is every reason to expect that a very few months will remove the inconvenience the colony labours under, of which you may form some judgement from what you have seen of my letters by the Gorgon and Supply, which ships may be supposed to have arrived in England by the latter end of last June.

When the Atlantic was sent to Calcutta, every officer was permitted to send for such articles as he wanted, and which will always be allowed, and everything else done for the accommodation of the officers and men under your command which the public service admits.

I am sorry that I cannot, with propriety, take any official step in this business.

I am, &c.,

A. PHILLIP.

1792  
Oct. 4.

East India  
Company may  
interfere.

The ration  
defended.

A special ship  
unnecessary.

Better times  
coming.

Officers'  
privileges.

1792  
Sept. 19.

EXTRACT FROM A LETTER TO GOVERNOR PHILLIP FROM LIEUTENANT-GOVERNOR KING, DATED SYDNEY, NORFOLK ISLAND, SEPT. 19TH, 1792.

Trafficking in  
land.

Restriction on  
settlers who  
wished to leave.

“As many of the fifty convicts whom I settled have applied to the master of the Pitt to take them off the island, I found it necessary to take some steps with respect to these people, and to endeavour to prevent many evils and misunderstandings that will necessarily happen if these people get their grants and afterwards leave the island, which inconveniences to the public will be more aggravated if they are permitted to make over their grants, together with their lots, to those women whom they have married, or to sell them to any one they please. If it should happen to be a deserving man or woman that gets it, it may be well; but I much fear it would in general go to people of a very different description. Soon after the Pitt's departure I took an opportunity of sending for the above fifty settlers, and pointed out to them the necessity there was for my understanding their several intentions, and to inform them that if any of them endeavoured to leave the island before or soon after the twelve-month might be expired for which they were to be victualled from the public stores they would be stopped until that twelve-months' provisions should be made good to the public. I also informed them that those who had any idea of leaving the island could not plead ignorance of this regulation, and that I knew it to be the intention of many of them to gain what they could from their grounds, and when they had realized enough to carry them off the island, to leave their families, which would be a great burthen to the public. Some of them hoped that if they cleared their ground they might be permitted to make their grants over to their wives or their friends, by which the industrious individual would suffer greatly, as fifty of the best and most desirable lots would, in time, become the property of abandoned women, burthened with children.

Daring  
offenders.

“Several thefts have been committed during this month, which have in general received slight punishments, as they were mostly occasioned by hunger. On the 23rd, after receiving their provisions, five convicts went into the woods, where they joined a convict (named James Clarke) who had been out a fortnight; they continued plundering the grounds of settlers and others, and were so daring as to make an attack on the stock in the farm-yard, and had succeeded so far as to cut the throat of a fine goat, but on being discovered they left the carcass behind them; having just before plundered my garden, and those of other officers of everything they could take. These daring outrages made it necessary for me to publish a proclamation declaring those fugitives to be outlaws, and for every person to use their utmost to take them, dead or alive, at the same time

Outlawry.



offering a reward to those who might apprehend them. Four were taken on the night of the 29th, and as the next day (Saturday) was the day the provisions were issued, the justices having found them 'guilty,' they received 100 lashes each, in part of 300 to which they were sentenced, and also to be kept at hard work and in irons during the remaining part of the transportation. On the night of the 30th another man was brought in, who was the principal confederate of the convict who had been out so long, and avowed himself the person who had killed the goat, saying he did it in hopes he should be hung. This hardened wretch is not more than 18 years of age, and has made two attempts to murder people. The principal still remains in the woods, notwithstanding the greatest search is made for him. The next day being Sunday I forgave the first four, as they came in the Pitt, and as the tales which had been told them of the woods affording a livelihood was a strong inducement.

1792  
Sept. 19.

Punishment.

"As the settlers have been so frequently robbed by the runaway convicts, they applied to me for arms, which I granted to them.

"About 100 acres of Indian corn have been planted, many acres of which we have been obliged to replant three different times, owing to the destructive effects of the ground grub, which have destroyed the whole of the corn growing on the flats, but the greatest part of the hundred acres is very thriving, and has a promising appearance of doing very well; the Indian corn, wheat, &c., planted by the different settlers also looks well, and everything at present promises ample returns. The new ground is not at all infested by the ground grub, which gives the settlers a very great advantage over the public grounds, which are greatly infested with them, and occasions great loss of seed and labour.

Indian corn.

Harvest  
prospects.

"The following is an exact statement of the numbers now on the island :—

Population of  
Norfolk Island.

|   |                        |          |
|---|------------------------|----------|
| Officers, civil and military, non-commissioned officers, and free people, with their wives and children   | } .....                | 121      |
| Settlers from the marines, seamen, and convicts   | .....                  | 123      |
| Wives, women, and children belonging to the above   | .....                  | 179      |
| Convicts taken off the store by settlers, and convicts who have served their time of transportation, and who provide for themselves   | } men ....<br>women .. | 59<br>17 |
| Servants to officers, overseers, watchmen, under the Provost-Martial, hospital cooks, barbers, taylors, bakers employed at the stores, shoemakers, and assisting the surveyor | } .....                | 101      |
| Clearing half-acres, &c., for settlers  | .....                  | 60       |
| Average number of sick during the month, including invalids   | } .....                | 91       |
| Women who do not work from being incapacitated, living with officers as washing-women, having young children, and children  | } .....                | 137      |
|   |                        | 888      |

|                  |   |
|------------------|---|
| 1792             | “Deduct 59 men and 17 women off the store, remains 812 persons on the island, who do nothing towards maintaining themselves.  |
| Sept. 19.        |   |
| Non-workers.     |   |
| Workers.         | “The whole number of souls on the island is 1,115, from which number taking 812, there remains 303 convicts (including 22 females), to carry on all the works, namely, sawing, carpenters, boat-building, blacksmiths, shingle-makers, charcoal burners, masons and labourers, quarrymen, lime-burners, lath-makers, paling, barrow-men, bringing stones for building, and the cultivation of the ground for the public use, thatchers, thrashers, &c.; 158 of the above are constantly employed in cultivation, consequently 145 remain to carry on the other works. I have made the above statement in order to give your Excellency an idea of the small progress we have made since being on a reduced ration.  |
| Robberies.       | “The robberies, both on public and private property, having for these some months past been of so daring a nature, and the situation of the island, and those upon it, requiring some examples to prevent the growing property of the settlers and the public being plundered, I do not doubt but that your Excellency will see the great necessity of stopping these practices which strike so deeply at the peace and property, as well as the public security.   |
| A thief shot.    | “James Clarke, a convict who has been for some time past a fugitive in the woods, and has constantly plundered the grounds of several people, was shot at by Leonard Dyer, whose ground he was robbing at the time he shot him.   |
| His crimes.      | “This unhappy wretch, who was killed, has been constantly in the woods these four months past, and has been a terror to every settler. Every patch of potatoes or cabbages were plundered by him, and notwithstanding the greatest exertions were made by the different settlers to detect him, he always succeeded in robbing them, and got off with his booty.  |
| Land under crop. | “The quantity of ground sowed, belonging to the public, is nearly as follows, viz.:—In and about Arthur’s Vale, one hundred and six acres of wheat, and seventeen acres of maize; at Queensborough, twenty-six acres of wheat, and ninety acres of maize; at Phillipburgh, fourteen acres of maize, all which is very thriving, and I have a great pleasure in informing your Excellency that there is every appearance of a plentiful crop from the quantity of ground sowed, which would have been much greater but from the work being carried on so very slowly, owing to the shortness of the ration, and the weak state of the labouring part of the convicts, and a quantity of ground originally cleared for the Government, which has unavoidably fallen into settlers’ lots. Excepting a few, the settlers in general do very well; most of them have a good space of ground cleared on their different lots, and their crops are in great forwardness. |
| Short ration.    |   |

“ The seamen and marines late belonging to the Sirius are all doing very well, and will in a few months be in very good circumstances, as their crops are likely to be good.

1792  
Sept. 19.

Settlers from  
the Sirius.

“ I am sorry to say that no amendment is made in manufacturing the flax of this island. I am confident that a native of New Zealand would in a short time enable us to make a great progress in cloathing ; but 'till then I fear we shall not be able to improve on the pattern now sent. Your Excellency may depend on my doing my utmost to promote that, as well as every other improvement.

Flax manu-  
facture.

“ Respecting Mr. Chapman's appointment as storekeeper at Phillipburgh,\* the necessity of that appointment will be very obvious, as two-thirds of the Atlantic's cargo is landed there, and where provisions are issued.

Storekeeper.

“ J. T. Doidge, late superintendant of convicts, is become a settler. I have to request being informed what are the encouragements and conditions on which the superintendants settle.

A settler.

“ The quantity of ground now in cultivation for the use of the public, and which I have mentioned in a former part of my letter, is two hundred and fifty-three acres, and I hope ten or twelve acres in addition will be cropped by the middle of November. Everything at present appears likely to yield a good return, which may be estimated at upwards of five thousand bushels ; much may also be got from the different settlers, and other individuals, if I receive orders to purchase it.

Cultivation.

Good harvest  
prospects.

“ I think it highly probable that the store will be eased of two hundred people if the crops belonging to private persons turn out good ; but the whole of the above statement must depend on the continuation of the present favourable aspect, for the time is not past when a great part of our crop may be hurt by the grub and caterpillar, many acres of maize have been planted thrice.

Disturbing  
influences.

“ The unavoidable reduced labour, in consequence of the short ration and the other reasons which I have had the honor of pointing out to your Excellency in a former part of my letter, have prevented that quantity of ground being cleared which would have enabled us to become every year more independent ; but I am sorry to say that our labour these nine months past (from the above causes) has not been so great as might be expected ; but as these difficulties will in a part be done away very soon, I hope next year, or after this crop, to answer that part of your letter wherein you wish to know the time when further supplies may be no longer necessary with more certainty than I possibly can now. But it is my present opinion that we shall be independent for grain and flour after the next year's crop, if this

Reduced labour  
and short ration.

Food supply.

\* Mr. W. N. Chapman, afterwards Secretary to Governor King at Sydney.

1792  
Sept. 19.  
—

and the succeeding one turn out well. Respecting animal food, that will be some time longer necessary, particularly for the civil and military, although there will be a great quantity of swine on the island next year if our crops don't fail.

Good landing-  
places made.

"Having with infinite labour made an opening on the stone beach at Cascade Bay for landing, I found after a gale of wind from the northward that it was filled up with large stones. I therefore turned my attention to erecting a crane on the landing-rock, at the east end of Cascade Bay, which is connected with the road by a strong and well-framed bridge, and some rocks that were under water, and have been blown to pieces, have rendered the north side of the island very accessible, and have removed every obstacle respecting landing safely and conveniently on this island, which now can be always easily effected either in Sydney or Cascade Bay, as they reciprocally become the lee side of the island. But artificers are much wanted."

Landing safe  
and convenient.

---

CAPTAIN VANCOUVER TO GOVERNOR PHILLIP.

Oct. 15.  
—

SIR,—

Discovery, at sea, 15th Oct'r, 1792.

The Dædalus.

Agreeable to the order and directions transmitted to me from my Lords Commissioners of the Admiralty, I herewith dispatch the Dædalus, hired transport, under the command of Lieutenant James Hanson, by whom your Excellency will receive this, and who is directed to put himself under your command, and to follow your orders for his farther proceedings.

Her cargo.

You will also herewith receive a list of the remaining part of the said transport's cargo, which his Majesty's ship Discovery and armed tender the Chatham, under my command, have not in the present instance been able to take on board; as likewise a list of such part of the said cargo as under the present circumstances I do not deem essential to me in putting into execution his Majesty's commands entrusted to my care. The remaining part is, however, absolutely necessary for that purpose, and, agreeable to their Lordships' directions, I am to request your Excellency will cause the same to be forwarded to my address, and to arrive at the port of Nootka about the month of August following, where, on my return from pursuing my examination of the coast of N.W. America, I shall call in order to take the said stores and provisions on board. We are now on our passage to some of the Spanish ports on the south part of the coast of New Albion, where I intend putting on board the Dædalus, for the use of his Majesty's colony under your Excellency's government, so many breeding cattle and sheep as she can conveniently take, which

Stores for  
Nootka.



breed, inur'd to countries but slightly cultivated, have at Nootka succeeded to a very high degree with scarce the smallest care and attention. I therefore trust they will be found useful in New South Wales. Lieutenant Hanson, as you will observe by his orders, has likewise directions to pay attention to lose no opportunity of procuring such live stock and refreshments as may be useful at Port Jackson, from the different places he may fall in with during his passage across the Pacific Ocean.

And as there is a probability on my arrival with the store-ship at some of the Spanish ports aforesaid I may find it convenient to take on board some further supply of provisions, I beg leave to inform your Excellency that in that case it will be necessary for the deficiency so occasioned to be made up, as likewise any that may be caused by leakage, decay, or other unforeseen accidents, that quantity being absolutely necessary to enable me to perform that part of my orders which still remain unexecuted.

Lieutenant Hanson will, I trust, be able to satisfy your Excellency's curiosity respecting the general proceedings of our voyage, so far as it is at present extended; under which circumstances I shall not intrude on your leisure further than observing that we fell in with the coast of New Albion on the 17th of April, and passed Cape Mendocino in lat.  $40^{\circ} 28\frac{1}{2}'$  N. and  $235^{\circ} 50'$  E. longitude; from whence we traced the shores at the distance of one, two, or three leagues, circumstances so concerning, without finding any port or opening in the land until we reached, on the 29th of April, the south entrance of De Fuca's Straits, situate in  $48^{\circ} 23'$  N. lat. and  $235^{\circ} 38'$  E. long., which inlet we pursued up several arms of the sea, determining the extent of each, and keeping the continental shore always in boats, as far east as the long.  $238^{\circ} 0' 2''$ , in the lat. of  $48^{\circ} 0' 0''$  N., from which station we coasted the continent in an irregular N.-westerly direction to the lat. of  $51^{\circ} 45'$  N. and  $232^{\circ} 0' 4''$  E. long., whence it again winds to the eastward to the long. of  $235^{\circ} 0' 5''$ , in the lat. of  $52^{\circ} 15'$  N., which station ended our present northern campaign, on the 18th of August, and where we shall recommence an examination in the ensuing spring. The direction of the continent here pointed out leaves the land in which Nootka is situated, an island, or rather a cluster of islands, of considerable extent, caused by the junction of Queen Charlotte's Sound and De Fuca's entrance, not very badly delineated in Arrowsmith's charts, leaving a very disagreeable and intricate navigation between them and the continent.

On my passage into this ocean I visited a small part of the S.W. coast of New Holland, and there discovered one very excellent port, which I have honored with the name of King George the

1792

Oct. 15.

Cattle and sheep  
for New South  
Wales.

Supplies for the  
expedition to be  
kept up.

New Albion.

De Fuca's  
Straits.

A cluster of  
islands.

King George's  
Sound.

1792  
Oct. 15.  
—

Dangerous  
rocks.

The Snares.

Chatham  
Island.

Third's Sound. As I think from its situation, the fertility of the country, with Oyster Bay Harbour, seas, &c., it may be worthy some further attention, I have sent you my survey thereof with the adjacent coast, and some views of the surrounding country, which, though not executed with any degree of neatness, the positions of the different harbours, &c., as also the different headlands, &c., as also their appearance [are given], without, I believe, any material error. We likewise, made two other discoveries, which, belonging to your neighbourhood, I shall beg leave to communicate, the first being a very dangerous cluster of barren rocks, being seven in number, extending in a direction about N. 70' E. and S. 70' W. true, occupying the space of about 3 leagues, which, from their situation, I have called the Snares; the largest, which is the N.-easternmost, and about a league in circumference, is in the lat. 48° 03' S. and 166° 20' E. longitude, bearing from S. Cape of New Zealand S. 40' W. true, 19 leagues distant, and from the southermost part of the Traps S. 62½' W. true, 20 leagues distant; the largest, which is the highest, may be seen in clear weather about 8 or 9 leagues, the other is an island discovered by the Chatham, after being separated from us the morning we discovered the Snares, by a very violent storm, and which, in honor of His Lordship who presides at the Admiralty Board, obtained the name of Chatham Island; along the N. side of which he sailed about 12 leagues; it is situated in lat. 43° 48' S. and 183° 02' E. long., its inhabitants much resembling the indians of New Zealand, who were found on the N. side, which was the only part they saw, and where they anchored and took possession; they, however, discovered no port.

Knowing of no other information that can be worthy your present attention, I beg leave to assure you I have the honor to be with best wishes for your welfare, and that of his Majesty's colony under your Excellency's government.

Yours, &c.,

GEO. VANCOUVER.

---

CAPTAIN VANCOUVER TO GOVERNOR PHILLIP.

Dec. 29.  
—

SIR,—

Discovery, Monterrey, 29th Dec'r, 1792.

Since writing my letter, dated 15th Oct'r,\* which accompanies this, we have experienced a very tempestuous and boisterous passage to this place, which we reached about a month ago; and, agreeable to my intentions as stated in that letter, I have taken on board the Discovery and Chatham a very

\* Ante, pp. 154-156.

considerable quantity of the stores and provisions which remained in the *Dædalus* on our departure from Nootka ; the whole of which I had requested should be returned to me ; that, however, in consequence of having made a material alteration in my engagement since that period, is by no means sufficient for the purpose of executing the remaining part of his Majesty's service entrusted to my care. I have, therefore, in addition to the above-mentioned remaining stores and provisions, sent your Excellency a list of such as will be necessary to complete our stock for the time I conceive we must yet be employed in prosecuting that part of my order which still remains unexecuted.

1792

Dec. 29.

Shipping stores.

More provisions required.

The lateness of my despatching the *Dædalus*, occasioned by adverse winds, &c., will, I fear, prevent the returning those stores and provisions, as I have before requested, by the month of August following ; it may, however, so happen that I may not quit Nootka before September or probably late in that month ; it will, therefore, be proper that the vessel so charged should be despatched so soon as possible for the purpose of meeting me at that place ; but should I sail from Nootka before that should happen, I shall leave sufficient instructions for the guidance of the officer commanding such vessel, and in case there is a probability of his arriving very late on the coast, it would be necessary he should call at the Sandwich Islands, where, though we should not meet, there is yet a great probability of gaining some information respecting us. The other object of the *Dædalus* accompanying me to this port, I have likewise been able to accomplish to my satisfaction by putting on board 12 cows and 6 bulls, with an equal number of male and female sheep ; these are at present in good condition, in which state, I trust, they will arrive safe, and prove highly serviceable to his Majesty's colony under your Excellency's government.

Store-ship.

Rendezvous.

Live-stock for Sydney.

The *Dædalus*, from accident and desertion, being short of complement, Sr. Quadra has made a promise of using his efforts to prevail on some of the people under his command to undertake this voyage in the *Dædalus*, on my promise that they should be returned to Nootka by that vessel or such other as may be charged with the before-mentioned stores and provisions for the use of his Majesty's vessels under my command, to which conditions I have acceded and taken the liberty of asserting that your Excellency would cause the same to be put into execution, and by complying with this further request, should such a circumstance take place, you will highly oblige him who has the honor, with the most sincere wishes for the welfare of yourself and his Majesty's colony under your Excellency's government,

Spanish sailors.

Spanish sailors for the *Dædalus*.

Yours, &amp;c.,

GEO. VANCOUVER.

1792  
Dec. 29.

Invalids.

P.S.—I have been under the necessity, much against my wishes and inclinations, of discharging Mr. Willm. House, late boatswain of the *Discovery*, who, whilst in that situation, so far as his abilities enabled him to act, conducted himself as a sober, diligent officer, having been afflicted with a violent rheumatic complaint which rendered him incapable of performing that service for many months past. I therefore beg leave to recommend him to your Excellency's notice, together with the three valuable seamen and one marine whom I have been under the very disagreeable necessity of parting with for similar reasons, who equally deserve every clemency and attention the nature of his Majesty's service will admit of. These people I have thus discharged, because we have not the power of affording them relief, and the service we have yet to perform being of a long and arduous nature. I am in hopes of its being shortly in your Excellency's power of providing them a passage to England, in which case I trust they will find relief from the severe maladies under which they at present labor.

GEO. VANCOUVER.

#### CAPTAIN VANCOUVER'S INSTRUCTIONS TO LIEUTENANT HANSON.

By George Vancouver, Esquire, Commander of his Majesty's sloop *Discovery*, &c.

Instructions for  
the *Dædalus*.

WHEREAS the *Dædalus* transport under your direction has deliver'd to his Majesty's vessels under my command, such part of the cargo she was charged with as they can conveniently stow; you are with the remaining part of the said cargo, in pursuance of his Majesty's pleasure, communicated to me by the Right Honourable the Lords Commissioners of the Admiralty, hereby required and directed to proceed without a moment's loss of time, taking also under your charge and particular care, the breeding cattle and sheep as per margin,\* which I have caused to be put on board the said transport, for the use of his Majesty's colony at Port Jackson, New South Wales, to which place you are immediately to make the best of your way, observing the following route:—

Route.

From this port you are to proceed to the islands that were discovered by the *Dædalus*, when under the command of the late Lieutenant Hergest; and in the most convenient port in those islands to cause such refitting and other necessary services to be performed as the said transport may stand in need of; and, having executed that service, you will endeavour to take from

\* 6 bulls, 12 cows, 6 rams, 12 ewes.



them such live stock and other refreshments as may be likely to be useful to his Majesty's colony at Port Jackson, for the effecting which you have my permission to appropriate such of the articles of traffic on board the *Dædalus*, consigned to me, as may be absolutely necessary for that purpose, taking care to note the number and contents from out of the cases, or casks, they are taken, with the quantity, and to what purpose they have been expended, to be transmitted to me on the return of those articles hereafter; and then to proceed from thence to a bay lately visited and surveyed by the French in the northern part of New Zealand, called by Captain Cook, Doubtless Bay, in which passage you are to act with the utmost caution to prevent falling in with, in the course of the night, any of the many low islands that are thickly distributed to the southward of the Marquesas, so far as the 20th or 22nd degree of S. latitude, in which navigation your keeping nearly in the parallel of the Marquesas, until you arrive in the 212th or 210th degree of E. longitude will be your safest route to the southward. Otaheite will be in that track; therefore, winds and weather permitting, it will be proper you should touch at that island, and you are hereby required and directed to do so, where, should you meet with any of the crew belonging to the ship *Matilda*, said to have been lost on a shoal in lat. 22° S., and 138° 30' W. long'de, and after which accident they, in their boats, reached that island, you are to take them on board, and give them a passage to Port Jackson, they being British subjects, and wishing to return to their native country by such mode of conveyance; victualling them as the persons on board the said transport are victualled. Their numbers said to be remaining at Otaheite are twenty-one, among which is one convict that made his escape from Port Jackson in the said ship *Matilda*.\*

1792

Dec. 29.

Cargo.

To call at  
Doubtless Bay.The crew of the  
*Matilda*.

At Otaheite you will endeavour to take on board such hogs, goats, fowls, &c., with provender for them, as may be likely for the purpose of being serviceable to the said colony, procuring them by the means above pointed out.

Live-stock.

From Otaheite you will proceed to the before-mentioned Doubtless Bay, a sketch of which is herewith inclosed for your information.

Doubtless Bay.

I have pointed out this port as the one in that island most likely to answer the purpose for which you are required to revisit

From New  
Zealand to Port  
Jackson.

\* The *Matilda* transport sailed from Sydney in company with the *Mary Ann* for Peru, December, 1791. Collins in his *Account of New South Wales*, vol. i, p. 172, says: "These ships had some convicts on board, who were permitted to ship themselves with the masters." The convict referred to in Vancouver's instructions to Hanson was apparently a stow-away.

1792  
Dec. 29.

Natives and  
flax.

The islanders  
to be well  
treated.

New Zealand, particularly from its situation so near the north extremity of that country, round which is the most proper route you should pursue to Port Jackson ; at which or any port near the north extremity of New Zealand, should necessity prevent your gaining the above-mentioned, you are from thence to use your best endeavours to take with you one or two of the natives of that country versed in the operations necessary for the manufacture of the flax-plant of which their garments are mostly made, for the purpose, if possible, of instructing the new settlers at Port Jackson in the management of that very valuable plant,\* and this being a subject of no small importance you are to pay particular attention to the effecting it, in the execution whereof the native of the Sandwich Islands you have on board may be essentially serviceable from his speaking nearly the same language, you will therefore endeavour to attach him as much as possible to your interest by attention and civil treatment which conduct is essentially necessary you should, and you are likewise hereby required and directed by all possible means to pursue with all the inhabitants of the South Sea Islands you may from time to time fall in with.

Peace policy.

You are also hereby most strictly enjoined to treat in the most friendly manner the subjects or vessels of any power or state you may happen to meet with, and to be in every respect careful not to do anything that may interrupt that peace which now happily subsists between his Majesty and all other powers ; nor are you on any account to put into any of the ports on the continent of America to the southward of the 30th degree of N. latitude, unless by accident you should find it necessary for your immediate safety to take shelter there, and in case of such urgent event to continue no longer than may be absolutely necessary.

To go to Port  
Jackson.

These being the principal objects entrusted to your charge, you are hereby required and directed to proceed forthwith agreeable to the foregoing instructions to Port Jackson aforesaid, and deliver the packet you will receive herewith to Commodore Phillip, or in his absence to the commanding officer, putting yourself under his command, and following his orders for your further proceedings.

For which this shall be your order.

Given on board his Majesty's sloop Discovery, in Monterrey Bay, the 29th December, 1792.

GEO. VANCOUVER.

\* This direction was carried out.

LIEUT.-GOVERNOR GROSE TO THE RIGHT HON. HENRY DUNDAS.

SIR,— Sydney, New South Wales, 19th April, 1793.

1793  
April 19.

The two Spanish ships Descuierta and Atrevida, commanded by Don Alexandro Malaspina and Don José Bustamante, whose probable arrival had been formerly notified, anchored here on the 13th of last month.

Spanish ships.

His Majesty's instructions respecting their reception I have executed to the utmost in my power, paying them every compliment and attention due to their rank and situation; and I have the pleasure to report that on their leaving us, as well as on many occasions before their departure, they did not omit to give every testimony on their part of the satisfaction and gratitude they felt at the hospitality they had been treated with. While they were here they lived amongst us; and in return they twice invited the officers of the settlement to a public dinner on board the ships, on which occasion they received me with the distinction that is paid by them to their lieutenant-generals.

Hospitality.

Returning the  
compliment.

The commodore presented me with two views of this place and one of the settlement at Parramatta, together with such observations as had been made of this harbour and country by the officers of the expedition who were charged with that department. These, together with a packet for the Spanish Ambassador at the Court of London, will be forwarded by the Kitty.\*

Views of  
Sydney.

\* These documents were forwarded with Grose's letter of 30th May, 1793. They are not, however, amongst the Records. In the collection of MSS. in the British Museum received from Sir Joseph Banks's executors is the following paper; it bears no date: "Arrived at Cadiz, 21st September, 1794, Captains Malaspina and Bustamante, and Galeano and St. Cevallos, commanders of the corvettes Descuierta and Atrevida, and the galera Sutil. These vessels were built at the Carraccas, purposely for discoveries for the improvement of knowledge, and especially navigation, and sailed from Cadiz, 30th July, 1789. They have constructed charts and descriptions of the coasts of America and the adjacent islands, from the River of Plate to Cape Horne on one side, and from that cape on the other to the extremity of North America. On the N.W. coast of America, in 59°, 60°, and 61° latitude, they sought in vain for the strait alleged to have been discovered by the Spaniard, Ferrer de Maldonado, which they proved to have no existence. They despatched in the beginning of 1792 the galeras Sutil and Mexicana, under the command of Captains Galeano and Valdes, who were directed to act in concert with the English captain, Vancouver, for the examination of the immense archipelago known under the denomination of Admiral de Fuente and John de Fuca. The greater part of 1792 was occupied by the corvettes in the examination of the Marianas and Philipinas Islands, and Macao, on the coast of China. They passed repeatedly between Mindanao and Morintay [Moralay]; they coasted New Guinea; they made it under the Line to the eastward 500 leagues; they passed amongst the New Hebrides, visited New Zealand

1793  
April 19.

Such articles as were wanting to refit their ships I directed the Commissary to furnish, and as they were of inconsiderable

at Dusky Bay, New Holland at Port Jackson, and the archipelago of the Friendly Islands at the islands of Babau [Vavau], not seen by any antecedent navigators who have passed these parts. They ultimately traversed unfrequented parts of the South Sea, on the way to Callao de Lima, where they arrived in June, 1793. From that port they touched at Concepcion, in Chili, and the corvettes, separating to encrease the operations of discovery, coasted Terra de Fuego, coast of Patagonia, and the east part of the Malouines (Falkland Islands), joining at Rio de Plata; at Montevideo they joined the frigate *Sta. Gertrudis* and several register ships, which they accompanied to Cadiz. In this voyage, botany, mineralogy, and hydrography have received much and valuable improvement. The experiments on gravitation have been repeated in both hemispheres, and in various latitudes, which will conduce to the determination of the figure of the earth, and will assist in establishing a universal measure. They have studied the civil and political state of the countries they have visited. They have collected monuments to illustrate the history of their emigrations, as well as the progress of their civilization from their primitive ignorance. Their discoveries have not cost a single tear to the human race, and they have only lost three or four of the crew in each vessel. Their observations are to be published as soon as possible." Apparently this was never done. The authorities of the British Museum report that they have no knowledge of such a work having been published.

[Personal investigation by the Editor led to the discovery that a second edition of "*Malaspina's Voyage*" had been published in Madrid in 1885. This, at the time the New South Wales Records were being prepared, appears not to have been known by the British Museum authorities. The work is not known to have ever been translated into English. The doings of the Spanish commander on the New Zealand coast in February, 1793, are here translated and reproduced.—THE EDITOR.]

#### MALASPINA'S NARRATIVE.

"On the 21st we found ourselves in latitude 40 deg, longitude 45 deg 30 min east of Manila. Dusky Bay lay 100 leagues to the south, and Cape Farewell and Queen Charlotte's Channel 107 leagues to the east.

"A new softness in the air, longer days, and the brilliancy of the stars made these climates much more convenient for navigation than the tropics. Even in this latitude, the favourable east wind still blew, and in measure as we approached the coast we discovered a larger number of aquatic birds, whereas on one side a dense mist obscured the horizon. Consequently, although by midday of the 24th being in latitude 44deg 34min, longitude 46deg east of Manila, we judged the coast to be near, and although the *Atrevida* signalled land in sight, it was impossible, on account of the mist, to approach nearer, and by nightfall, finding no bottom, we steered to the west, the wind at N.N.E. light breezes.

"February 25.—These changed to a soft S.S.E. breeze, which sprang up at midnight, clearing away the mist, which obscured the horizon, so that towards 3 o'clock, having taken the altitude to starboard, we found ourselves at break of an exceedingly fine day, within five leagues of the coast, which extended from N.E. to S.S.E.

"By the exact details which Capt. Cook, with his usual accuracy, has given of this part of the coast, we were able without difficulty to make out all the points within sight. Five Fingers Point bounded our view to the south, the opening of Dusky Bay was clearly visible, and the course



value, I thought it would meet the wishes of his Majesty's Ministers to supply them without a charge.

1793  
April 19.

we followed carried us slightly to leeward of Doubtful Bay, which at 9 o'clock was about two or three miles distant. Having made a careful survey of its surroundings, we put off from the coast, and stood in on the other tack somewhat to windward. It would be difficult to give a more perfect description of the ruggedness and elevation of these coasts than that given by Capt. Cook on his first voyage. Two miles from shore we sounded in 100 fathoms, without finding bottom, and, although the intermediate island showed signs of a fairly abundant vegetation, the entrance of Dusky Bay, and all the coast of the port, closed in with inaccessible mountainous peaks, justified the captain's accounts, which have caused this port to be looked upon as dangerous to ships leaving it.

"Nevertheless, the fact of its latitude being only 45deg 13 min, of its being to leeward while the south winds held, and the well known importance of taking advantage of the weather on that coast, and the fine day we were enjoying being, as it were, a warning, were all reasons which prompted us to lose no time in availing ourselves of this favourable opportunity for achieving our purpose. The more so that every change of wind, and the examination of Captain Cook's meteorological diary, made us fear that we should again meet the east winds directly opposed to the entrance of both ports.

"For these reasons, having taken up at midday a convenient position to windward, ready to follow any course that circumstances might render advisable, the armed boat of the *Descubierta*, under command of Don Felipe Bausa, was sent to reconnoitre the interior of the port, and particularly to ascertain the facilities for watering and wooding; she was under orders to return with the utmost despatch. Meanwhile the corvettes, sometimes lying to, sometimes making small boards, kept the same position relative to the entrance.

"The boat did not return until 9 at night; only at the entrance, on the outside of the island, had they touched bottom in 20 and 25 fathoms, gravel, but afterwards in both channels they sounded in 50 fathoms, without finding bottom, nor could they again touch it in all the surroundings of the island. Both channels were intercepted by some rocks, presenting no danger to navigation. Wood and water were abundant in the interior; in an inlet to the north the coast was somewhat more level and sandy, offering safe and convenient anchorage. Time being limited, they had not been able to take soundings. To the south-east, a channel of two or two and a half cables ran through the mountains, the latter rising in sharp peaks, then becoming much narrower the channel wound round to the south, perhaps going to meet the internal channels of Dusky Bay. The tide was not very rapid. From the signs on the shore, the ebb appeared to be about midday. They saw a few birds, not a single seal, no shellfish save a few small limpets, and not a sign, however remote, of inhabitants. These were the chief points in their report of this place, to which must be added a total lack of pine trees, vegetation consisting of a species of medium sized shrub. In brief, unless chance or dire necessity bring mariners to this port, we must suppose that it is destined to be perpetually deserted, and that Dusky Bay will ever remain the port of welcome in this neighbourhood, offering as it does a more convenient, a safer, and a healthier refuge.

"Night falling and the boat taken up, we remained becalmed some little time off the coast, but soon a light north wind sprang up, which enabled us to put off, and by midnight we were three leagues from shore. Anxious

1793  
April 19.  
Departure.

They sailed from hence on the 12th instant, but as they seemed to evade any questions that were put to them respecting their future intentions, I can form no probable conjecture where they are gone. They expect to be in Europe in about fourteen months from this time.

I am, &c.,

FRANS. GROSE.

# LIEUT.-GOVERNOR GROSE TO THE RIGHT HON. HENRY DUNDAS.

April 21.  
The Dædalus.

SIR,— Sydney, New South Wales, 21st April, 1793.

I have the satisfaction to inform you that the Dædalus on the morning of yesterday made her appearance on the coast, and I have prevailed on the captain of the Shah Hormuzear, who was at that time about to take his departure, to stay a day longer, that I might be enabled by the conveyance of his ship to communicate her arrival.

to lose no time, we steered to the south, calculating we had still seven leagues to run, and by 3 in the morning, having made three of the seven, we again stood to the coast, calculating to enter Dusky Bay at daybreak. The wind was now considerably increasing, a heavy mist obscured the coast, and there was every sign of an unfavourable change in the weather.

"26th.—We hoped that the first daylight would afford us a favourable opportunity of ascertaining our course, but dawn revealed a different outlook, and we appeared to have completely lost our advantageous position for gaining the port. At 4 in the morning, the fog having for a moment cleared off, we found ourselves suddenly at the entrance of Dusky Bay, and only two or three miles distant from Break-sea Island, which it was quite impossible to pass on account of the wind. Finding thus an error of three leagues in our calculations since midnight, we steered due west, the wind blowing a strong gale. At 9 o'clock we again tacked, and stood in to the land, waiting an opportunity of gaining the wind.

"But our efforts were vain. We were again standing in to the coast at the same position as in the early morning, the wind at N.E. and gaining strength every moment as we neared the shore, which warned us that to hold to our purpose was to run the risk of serious losses. Consequently we were compelled to take in two reefs in our topsails and steer to the south. At times portions of the coast were still visible, principally Five Fingers Point, which stood out clearly.

"Far from falling, by the afternoon the wind had become so violent that it might almost be called a hurricane, with a heavy sea running. We suffered considerable damage in our sails and rigging. The corvettes seemed powerless to resist. We had taken three reefs in the foresail and maintopsail, a precaution we considered necessary to prevent the waves from swamping the ships. By 10 o'clock an accident seemed to threaten us at any moment.

"After midnight the wind began to fall, but did not entirely cease until dawn, at which time we were sailing with two reefs in the four chief sails and topsails. The heavy weather was followed by a few brief intervals of calm, which was finally followed by a favourable S.S.E. wind, accompanied by an exceedingly dense fog.

I at first began to fear I had been precipitate in the contract I had made for the cattle, but the event proves otherwise, and you will perceive by Captain Vancouver's dispatches to Governor Phillip\* that the *Dædalus* is sent here more for the purpose of asking than giving assistance.

1793

April 21.

Captain  
Vancouver's  
expedition.

The particulars relative to the *Discovery* and *Chatham* having been already communicated, it is unnecessary for me to trouble you with any recital on that subject, or the melancholy end of Lieutenant Hergherst [Hergest] and Mr. Gootch [Gooch], the astronomer.†

Two officers  
killed.

Captain Vancouver has sent here two natives of New Zealand,‡ for the purpose of teaching us their manner of manufacturing the flax-plant; and he has attempted, but without success, to supply us with twelve cows, six bulls, some calves, eighteen sheep, and a number of hogs. Unluckily, no part of the stock, excepting hogs, one calf, and four sheep, has survived the passage.

New Zealand  
natives.

"The course we had been compelled to take in the past storm had carried us to a considerable distance from the coast. Our observations revealed to us a strong current to the N., and thus we were no less than 30 leagues from the bay.

"The warning we had received brought reflection with it, and we decided that to venture into Dusky Bay for the sole purpose of making experiments of gravity was an unnecessary risk. Other reasons were added to this—viz., the extraordinary effects of the cold and the last storm upon the already weakened and tired Philippine crew, and the heavy rains experienced in the port, so that at times a fortnight would pass without any opportunity for taking observations, and finally, as we were twice again to cross parallel 45deg on either side of Cape Horn, it would not be difficult to find a more favourable opportunity of achieving our purpose.

"For these reasons, we decided that to repair the ships and rest the crew it would be advisable to put in at Port Jackson or Botany Bay in New Holland. We therefore steered west without delay, and at midday of the 28th, the following day, we were already 70 leagues from the extreme south of New Zealand.

"Our longitude before Doubtful Bay, compared with that of Capt. Cook, was as follows. The errors 30 and 20min in the two islands of New Zealand, which the captain noticed in his second voyage, had, of course, been corrected in our charts:—

|                          |    |    | Chronometer 71. | Num. 11. |
|--------------------------|----|----|-----------------|----------|
| Longitude east of Manila | .. | .. | .. 45.35.38     | 45.35.38 |
| Longitude by time        | .. | .. | .. 45.41.1      | 45.13.12 |
| Difference of time       | .. | .. | .. 5.23         | 0.22.26  |

\* Ante, p. 156. Vancouver's *Voyage of Discovery*, vol. iii, p. 63.

† These gentlemen were massacred on the 7th May, 1792, by the natives of one of the Marquesas Islands.—*Ib.*, vol. ii, p. 320.

‡ These natives were conveyed to Sydney, in the *Dædalus*, by Lieutenant Hanson. Post, p. 169 and note. See Collins, vol. i, p. 519, where a full account of them will be found; see also p. 130.

1793  
April 21.  
—  
Stores for  
Vancouver.  
  
Charts.

I shall take care that the *Dædalus* returns at the time Captain Vancouver has pointed out; and I am happy to add the service he is engaged in is not likely to be interrupted for the want of supplies, being enabled from the state of my stores to furnish him with almost everything he writes for.\*

I shall convey to you by the *Kitty* the charts and drawings of Oyster Bay, King George the Third's Sound, &c., which I have received from Captain Vancouver, and the which should now be sent but that I consider it absolutely requisite for my own information and future guidance to get them copied, and this cannot be done in time for the *Shah Hormuzear*.

I am, &c.,  
FRANS. GROSE.

Sept. 3.  
—  
  
Convicts and  
stores.  
  
  
  
  
Supplies  
  
from India.  
  
  
The *Britannia*.

LIEUT.-GOVERNOR GROSE TO THE RIGHT HON. HENRY DUNDAS.

SIR,— Sydney, New South Wales, 3rd September, 1793.

I have the honour to inform you that the *Boddingtons*, transport, with 124 male and 20 female convicts, from Ireland, arrived here on the 7th ultimo. The stores she brings are in good condition, and the prisoners, according to their own account, have been exceedingly well treated; they are in much better health than any I have ever seen landed here, and have had but one death on their passage.

In my former letters I have already stated that our accidental supplies have saved us from some difficulties, but you will still observe by the Commissary's return,† which I inclose you, that we are not in such abundance as to render precaution unnecessary. In your last dispatches, an intimation to try the Bengal market being signified, I have sent to Lord Cornwallis a ship called the *Britannia*, belonging to Mr. St. Barbe, which came out last year to this country with provisions. Though she is well calculated for the purpose, I should have preferred sending the *Boddingtons*, because, as she had already been agreed with by the Navy Board, any bargaining on my part would have been avoided; but as she could not be ready sooner than in six weeks, was not coppered, and was more expensive than the other, I felt it my duty to take up the *Britannia*, she being compleatly ready for sea, and offered at a shilling per ton less than the *Boddingtons* had engaged for. A copy of the charter-party is inclosed,† together with an account of the provisions I have now sent for.

\* Vancouver's *Voyage of Discovery*, vol. iv, p. 304.    † Not available.



I hoped to have received by the Boddingtons as many supplies as would have rendered our situation more independent, for although in the event of my purchasing provisions, or taking up ships, no want ever has or is likely to occur, I cannot but be alarmed at all I purchase, and everything I do, being unaccustomed to business, and fearful of acting so much from my own discretion.

1793  
Sept. 3.

Grose's fears.

The vessel sent in frame by the Pitt has at length been put into the water. I have placed in her as the master the late boatswain\* of the Discovery. He had been sent here by Capt. Vancouver, for the purpose of returning to England as an invalid, but having recovered from his complaint, and being willing to take the command of the sloop for forty pounds a year, I thought it expedient to employ him, having manned the vessel with some seamen left here by other ships. She will sail for Dusky Bay in New Zealand immediately, in order to ascertain how far that place, which, I understand, possesses all the advantages of Norfolk Island, with the addition of a safe harbour and seal-fishery, may tend to the benefit of his Majesty's service, as connected with these settlements.†

The Francis

to be sent to  
Dusky Bay.

The Dædalus left Port Jackson on the first of July, having obtained here nearly everything Capt. Vancouver had applied for.

The Dædalus  
returns to  
Vancouver.

It being desired in Mr. King's letter, received by the Boddingtons, that the Governor's opinion respecting the provisions procured from Bengal might be communicated, I shall not hesitate to say, although not a single article was received by the Atlantic which in any other part of the world would have been served as a ration, that I yet have not a doubt but the colony may be supplied, for everything brought by another ship (the Shah Hormuzear) was of excellent quality, excepting the salted meat, and this, although inferior to Irish-cured provisions, was not so bad but it might be eaten; and to what cause the colony was indebted for the trash brought by the Atlantic I never could discover.

Bengal  
provisions—

Grose's  
opinion of.

The frequent disappointments we have met with in the colony make me rather unwilling to say much of our wheat, but unless some untoward accident does befall it, we may from appearances reckon very largely on the ensuing crop.

The wheat  
harvest.

The officers are daily clearing ground to a considerable extent, and although the Indian corn grown on account of Government turned out very badly, the settlers from convicts have supplied the stores with some considerable quantity from their

Indian corn.

\* William House.

† See Captain Raven's letter of 2nd November, 1793, post, p. 177.

1793  
Sept. 3.

farms, the which I have instructed may always be taken from them at five shillings per bushel, it being at the same time a cheap purchase for Government, and an accommodating market for the settler.

Captain Nepean.

The ill state of Captain Nepean's health having rendered his return to England necessary, I have directed him to take his passage in the *Britannia*; and to this officer, who has been some time in the colony, I beg to refer you for any particulars concerning it.

I have, &c.,

FRANS. GROSE.

LIEUTENANT-GOVERNOR KING TO UNDER SECRETARY NEPEAN.

Nov. 9.

DEAR SIR,—

Norfolk Island, 9th November, 1793.

Captain Nepean.

By your brother\* I am enabled to send this, which, with the accompanying despatches and the information he will be able to give, will I hope be satisfactory. I have made your brother walk every inch over the island; therefore he knows all about it. To my publick letter and to him I beg to refer you for every information respecting this I'd, &c. If it should be thought necessary to settle N.Z., and I should happen to be the person fixed on, I hope my family, which is now growing numerous, will be considered.

Settlement of  
New Zealand.

King's pay.

Will it not be possible for my agent to receive my pay? I have no opportunity of getting certificates from Major Grose, as all the vessells which touch here are homeward bound.

He asks for  
instructions.

I wish much to have certain instructions respecting purchasing maize and swine's flesh from settlers, &c., as at present I am in the dark and doing it on my own head, which I shall continue untill I receive directions to the contrary.

New Zealand  
flax.

Two or three hundred more men could be very advantageously employed here. Enough flax ready for spinning might be procured from *Eaheinomanē†* to clothe all the inhabitants of N.S.W., for trifles such as axes, hoes, and carpenters' tools, knives, and good lead.

As your brother will tell you all about us, I shall conclude this with my sincere wishes for your health, and am, with best respects to Mrs. Nepean,

Dear Sir, &c.,

PHILLIP GIDLEY KING.

Presents.

I have sent a case of Norfolk pine by your brother, which I have to beg Mrs. Nepean's acceptance of for a piece of furni-

\* Captain Nepean.

† *Eaheinomanive*, the native name of the north island of New Zealand.

ture. I hope you received the two cases of pine and yellow-wood which I sent by Manning in the Pitt.

Jamieson, the superintendent,\* tells me that Mr. King and Davison gave him reason to hope for five shillings a day. He certainly is deserving, and has a wife and family.

1793  
Nov. 9.

LIEUT.-GOVERNOR KING TO THE RIGHT HON. HENRY DUNDAS.

SIR,— Norfolk Island, 19th November, 1793.

Nov. 19.

On the 8th instant most of the preceding letters, which I have the honor of forwarding by this conveyance, being finished, and the wind having set in at north with the new moon, which is a certain indication of its continuing in that quarter for some days, and as the two New Zealanders† had frequently expressed an anxious wish to return to their native country, in which they have been thrice disappointed, I thought the present a very favourable opportunity to second their wishes.

Norfolk Island.

The New  
Zealanders—

I have already had the honor of observing that every instruction they were capable of giving us in manufacturing the flax-plant was acquired in one hour. On considering the manner in which they were taken from their friends, and their great uneasiness to get back again, joined to the probable advantages that may arise to these colonies by their again mixing with their friends, to whom I am certain they will recount in the warmest terms of gratitude the tender and kind treatment they met with here from every description of people, determined me to make use of the present opportunity, as it might be some time before so favourable a one might present itself again.

their instructions in flax-dressing ;

their treatment at the island ;

It being the master of the *Britannia's* intention to pursue his route to Bengal between the south end of Mindanao and Borneo, and as the eastern monsoon is not well set in or attended with good weather in those seas before December or January, I concluded that a fortnight's detention would make no material difference in her voyage. I therefore consulted with the master of the ship, and gave him directions to proceed on that service.

their return in the *Britannia*.

\* John Jamieson.

† These natives of New Zealand—named Woodoo and Tookee—had been captured by Lieutenant Hanson, in charge of the *Dædalus*, acting under instructions from Vancouver (p. 160). By Lieutenant Hanson they were taken to Port Jackson, and shipped, at the direction of Lieutenant-Governor Grose, to Norfolk Island, in the *Shah Hormuzear*, on the 24th April, 1793. They remained on the island until conveyed back to New Zealand, as explained by King in the above despatch. Collins gives a lengthy description of these natives ; see his *Account*, vol. i, p. 519 *et seq.*

1793

Nov. 19.

King  
accompanies  
them;

he leaves  
Nepean in  
charge.

The passage to  
New Zealand.

The reception.

Tookee's  
relatives.

I always had a wish to see my two friends safe landed in their native country, that I might be assured of no unpleasant circumstances happening in the course of their passage, to make them forget the kind treatment they had met with here. My being absent from the island at this time for a fortnight would not be of any material consequence, particularly as it will be three weeks before the harvest commences. I did not think myself justifiable in leaving the command of the settlement on this island to the subaltern who commanded the detachment doing duty here, when a captain on full pay belonging to the New South Wales Corps was on the spot. The nature of the service I was going on did not preclude the possibility of accidents happening to me, and there being only three subalterns stationed here, no court-martial could be held or offenders punished, which was a principal reason for my requesting Captain Nepean to take the command of this island during my absence, which he very readily complied with. Considering him as an officer liable to be called into service (altho' going home on leave), and the necessity of the case appearing to me to render such a step necessary, I gave Captain Nepean an order to take upon him the charge and command of the settlements on this island during my intended absence, a copy of which order, with my order to the master of the *Britannia* to proceed on that service, with his journal, I have the honor to enclose.

The persons (as per margin\*), with what few articles I could collect together as presents to my friends, being embarked, on the evening of the 8th instant we sailed from Norfolk Island, and in the afternoon of the 12th we rounded the north cape of New Zealand. The wind during the passage, altho' favourable, was light, with some calms of short duration. At the extremity of the cape we saw a number of houses, and soon after opened a considerable hippah, or fortified place, situated on a hill just within the cape, from whence six boats were seen coming to the ship. As soon as they came within hail, Tookee was instantly recognised by most of the natives. The boats were now increased to seven, with upwards of twenty men in each. They instantly came alongside, and most of the natives came on board, embracing and shedding tears of joy over Tookee, whose first and earnest enquiry was after his parents, family, and chief. On those heads he obtained the most satisfactory information from a woman, who he informed us is a near relation of his mother's. His father and chief were still inconsolable for his loss. The latter (*Moo-de-wye*), who Tookee has always men-

\* The Rev. Jas. Bain, Mr. Thos. Jamison, Mr. W. N. Chapman, two New Zealanders, two non-commissioned officers, twelve privates, and one convict.



tioned in the most affectionate manner, was about a fortnight ago on a visit to the chief of the hippah above described, where he remained four days; and Te-wy-te-wy, the principal chief of Tookee's district (Ho-do-do), was daily expected. This information gave Tookee great joy. It was remarked that altho' there were upwards of one hundred and fifty people on board and alongside, Tookee confined his caresses and conversation to his relation and the chiefs, who were distinguished from the rest by the marks (Amoko) on their faces, and by the respectful deference which was shewn them by the Emokis (working-men), who at times they beat most unmercifully. To those chiefs who Tookee informed me were only Epodis (vizt., subaltern chiefs), and were well known to him, I gave presents of axes and other articles. A traffic was carried on with a scrupulous honesty on both sides; iron hoops and other articles were exchanged for abundance of manufactured flax, mantles, patoo-patoos, spears, &c. At seven in the evening the canoes left us, and we made sail with a light breeze at west, intending to run for the Bay of Islands (near which place Tookee lives), which was now twenty-four leagues distant from the ship. At nine o'clock a canoe with four men came alongside, and altho' those people could not have known our friends were on board, yet they came into the ship without any hesitation; they had only a few fish to dispose of. The master of the ship being desirous to get their canoe, the bargain was soon concluded (with Tookee's help), much to the natives' satisfaction; nor did they discover the least reluctance or apprehension at sleeping on board all night, and being carried to Ho-do-do, for which place we were then steering. Our new guests very satisfactorily corroborated all which Tookee had heard before respecting his family, friends, and the amity that subsisted between the tribes of Ho-do-do and Moode-whenna, the district to which they belonged. In relating the news of the country since Tookee's departure, they gave an account of the T'Souduckey tribe having made an irruption into Woodoo's country (Teer-a-witte), and killed the son of Pove-reek, his chief, and thirty warriors. Woodoo, who was present, burst into a flood of tears, and retired into a corner of the cabin, where he wept most bitterly. No great progress was made during the night, owing to calms. At six in the morning a number of canoes were seen coming from the hippah, in the largest of which were thirty-six men, and a chief in white, making signals with great earnestness. They soon came alongside, and Tookee was enquired for, when to his great joy he recognised Ko-to-ko-ke, the Eti-keti-ca, a principal chief of the hippah, who came on board and hung over Tookee, shedding the tears of affection and joy for his unexpected meeting. Tookee then

1793  
Nov. 19.

Customs of the  
natives.

Traffic with  
them.

A canoe  
purchased.

Tribal wars.

A Maori chief.

1793  
Nov. 19.

introduced him to me, and after the ceremony of etrouge (joining noses) he took off his ha-a-how (which I have the honor to forward in the box) and put it on my shoulders. In return, I made him a present of an ha-a-how made of green baize decorated with broad arrows. Soon after seven other canoes, with upwards of twenty men and women in each, came on board, when the decks were so full of New Zealanders that it became necessary to keep them off the poop, which was effected by the ceremony of etapoo.\* What they brought to dispose of was purchased in a manner equally honorable on both sides, nor was there any attempt made to defraud or purloin the least article.

The poop  
cleared.

An alternative.

Before Ko-to-ko-ke came on board, I asked Tookee whether he would go back to Norfolk Island or land at Moode-whenna, in case of its continuing calm or the wind coming from the southward, which there was an appearance of. Tookee was extremely averse to either. His reasons for not wishing to land at Moode-whenna were that the persons who gave him the information were only Epodis and Emokis, and who might be suspected of not telling the truth, and that if the ship did not go to Ho-do-do he would be prevented from sending some marks of his esteem and love to his friends at Norfolk Island. Nothing more was said about it, and it was my determination to land him at Ho-do-do, if it could be done in the day, although it was now a perfect calm. Soon after Ko-to-ko-ke came on board all Tookee's and Woodoo's apprehensions vanished, and they told me with tears of joy that they wished to go with the old chief, who had confirmed all they had heard before, and promised to take them to Ho-do-do the next morning, where they would arrive by night. The next wind (after the calm) predicted by the New Zealanders was to be a southerly one. To wait the event of the calm or the wind might have detained the ship some days before we could think of returning, as the Bay of Islands, near which place Tookee lives, was twenty-four leagues to the southward of the ship. Could I have reached that place in four days after I left Norfolk Island I should most certainly have gone there. That not being the case (this being the sixth day) I did not think myself justifiable in detaining the ship longer than was absolutely necessary. Notwithstanding the information we were in possession of, and the confidence Tookee put in the old chief, I felt much anxiety about them, and expressed my doubts to Tookee that what he had heard might be an invention of Ko-to-ko-ke and his people to get him in their power, and that I would much rather take them back and wait for another opportunity than

Friendly  
natives.

The Bay of  
Islands.

King's fears  
unfounded.

\* By this ceremony all but the old chief were forbidden to come within a prescribed area. In this case the poop was the forbidden ground.—(Collins, vol. i, p. 527.) The word is also spelt "eta-boo."

put them in the power of suspicious people. To this Tookey answered with an honest confidence that an Eti-ke-ti-ca never told an untruth or deceived, and that he wished to go with Ko-to-ko-ke. I then took the old chief, with Tookey and Woodoo, into the cabin, when I explained to him (with Tookey's help) how much I was interested in my friends getting safe home, and showed him a present I had made up for him, and enumerated a considerable one which Tookey would give the people who paddled the canoe in which he was to go to Ho-do-do the next morning. I also told him that in two or three moons I should return and go to Ho-do-do. If I found Tookey and Woodoo were safe arrived with their effects, I should then return to Moodoo-whenna, and make him some very considerable presents, which I also enumerated. I was so well convinced of the old man's sincerity that I considered it injurious to threaten him with punishment for failing in his engagement. The only answer the old man made was by putting both his hands to the sides of my head (making me do the same to him) and joining our noses, in which position we remained three minutes, the chief muttering in a very earnest manner what I did not understand, after which he went through the same ceremony with Tookey and Woodoo, which ended with a dance, when they embraced me and said that Ko-to-ko-ke was now become their father, and would in person conduct them to Tookey's residence. Whilst I was busied in getting ready what I meant to give them (which fell very short of what they would have had if I had been able to land them at their homes), Tookey (who I am now convinced is a priest) had made a circle of four chiefs round him, in the centre of which was Ko-to-ko-ke and several of the rest, listening with great attention to the account he was giving of Norfolk Island. On telling them it was only three days' sail from Moodoo-whenna he was not satisfied with the assertion, but carried a cabbage to them, which he informed them was gathered five days ago in my garden. This produc'd a general shout of admiration. Everything being now arranged and ready for their departure, Tookey and Woodoo requested, on the part of Ko-to-ko-ke, that the soldiers might exercise and fire, and that one of the great guns might also be fired. This I could have no objection to, as the request came from him, but I thought it necessary to take that opportunity to explain to the chief (thru' Tookey) that he might see by our conduct to him and his countrymen that our wish and intention was to be good neighbours and friends with all Ea-hei-no-mane, and that those weapons were never used but when we were injured, which I hoped would never happen. I also thought it necessary to add that no other motive than gratifying his wish could induce me to shew him what

1793  
Nov. 19.

Promised  
presents.

A Maori  
ceremony.

Leave-taking.



- 1793  
Nov. 19.  
—  
A display of  
firearms.  
  
A southerly  
wind.  
  
Return to  
Norfolk Island  
  
Dispositions of  
the Maoris.  
  
Native  
products.  
  
Provisions and  
presents.
- those instruments were intended for. All the natives, to the number of one hundred and fifty, were seated on one side of the deck, the old chief keeping himself seated between my legs. The detachment were paraded on the opposite side of the deck, and fired three rounds after having gone through the manual. A great gun was then fired loaded with grape. This surprized them greatly, particularly the old chief, who I made notice the distance the shot fell from the ship.
- The wind had now the appearance of coming from the southward, and the chief was anxious to get away, as that wind throws a great surf on the shore, there being no harbour there. Tookee and Woodoo now took an affectionate leave of every person, and made me remember my promise of returning to see them in two or three moons, when they would return to Norfolk Island with their families. The old chief, after having taken great pains to pronounce my name properly, and made me well acquainted with his name, took leave and left us, when they were saluted by the officers and every person on board with three cheers. In two hours after a breeze sprung up from the northward, with which we stood to the eastward, and after a passage of five days from New Zealand, and ten days' absence from hence, I landed on the 18th instant and resumed the government.
- I shall not trespass on your patience, sir, with any remarks on the New Zealanders, as the little intercourse I had with them did not enable me to form any opinion about them; but if they bear but a small proportion to the amiable dispositions of our two friends, they certainly are a people with whom a good understanding might be easily cultivated with common prudence and precaution. I regret very much that the service which the Britannia is engaged on (that of going for provisions for the colony) did not permit me to detain her longer to make such observations respecting the inhabitants and the quantity of manufactured flax which might be obtain'd, circumstances which I am confident would be of great utility to commerce if better known.
- In the box No. 2, I have the honor to forward samples of the New Zealand flax in its manufactured state—an ha-a-how (or mantle of that country) and fishing-lines, made and used by the New Zealanders; also samples of the manufactured flax from the flax-plant growing here (and which, on comparing it, is the same as the New Zealand flax-plant), which grows in such abundance and superior luxuriance on Norfolk Island, together with a specimen of the canvas made from it on this island.
- What articles I was not provided with to give the New Zealanders I requested the master of the Britannia to supply me with at a fair valuation; and as the time I had to get ready



1793  
Nov. 19.

was so very short, I neither embarked stock to supply the New Zealanders or provisions for the people I took with me, both which he has supplied me with, and for the payment of which I have directed the Deputy-Commissary to draw on the Right Hon'ble the Lords Commissioners of his Majesty's Treasury, and to transmit proper vouchers to their Lordships' secretaries, copies of which I have the honor to enclose. Two female and one he goats, which were intended to be given to Tookey, unfortunately died on the passage.\*

I have to acknowledge the satisfaction I experienced on my resuming the government to find that everything had been conducted with the greatest propriety during my absence.

Should any part of my conduct not be approved of in the proceedings which I have had the honor to state, I hope my zeal for wishing to forward his Majesty's service and to convey useful information will offer some excuse in my favour.†

I have, &c.,

PHILIP GIDLEY KING.

[Enclosure.]

#### CAPTAIN NEPEAN'S INSTRUCTIONS.

By Philip Gidley King, Esq., Lieutenant-Governor of Norfolk Island, in the Pacific Ocean.

Nov. 7.

WHEREAS I judge it expedient and necessary for the good of his Majesty's service to proceed to Knuckle Point,‡ in New Zealand, in the Britannia, transport, to land the two natives of that country, and to make such cursory observations on that part of the island and the inhabitants as it is necessary that his Majesty's Ministers should be made acquainted with by you :

King's visit to  
New Zealand.

And as it is necessary that a sufficient number of officers belonging to the New South Wales Corps should remain on the island to order and compose regimental courts-martial :

\* The presents given to the New Zealanders by King were—"Hand-axes; a small assortment of carpenters' tools; six spades; some hoes; with a few knives, scissors, and razors; two bushels of maize; one of wheat; two of pease, and a quantity of garden seeds; ten young sows, and two boars, which Tookey and the chief faithfully promised should be preserved for breeding."—Collins, vol. i, p. 531.

† The Duke of Portland, in his despatch to Governor Hunter of 10th June, 1795 (post, p. 201), expressed, but in very mild terms, his disapproval of King's conduct in quitting the island before he had communicated with Lieutenant-Governor Grose.

‡ Knuckle Point, the northern headland of Doubtless Bay.

1793

Nov. 19.

Captain Nepean  
left in charge.

His instructions.

You are hereby required and directed to take upon you the charge and command of the settlements on this island by doing and performing all and all manner of things thereunto belonging agreeable to the tenor of his Majesty's Commission appointing me Lieutenant-Governor of this island (a copy of which you have received), and you will herewith receive all such orders as have been, or which have not been executed, and you are to follow such orders and instructions as you may (during my absence) receive from his Majesty's Governor, or Lieutenant-Governor of the territory of New South Wales in his absence, or other your superior officer.

Given under my hand, at Government House, at Sydney, on Norfolk Island, this seventh day of November, 1793.

PHILIP GIDLEY KING.

[Enclosure.]

#### CAPTAIN RAVEN'S INSTRUCTIONS.

By Philip Gidley King, Esq., Lieutenant-Governor of Norfolk Island, in the Pacific Ocean, &c., &c., &c.

New Zealand  
natives.

WHEREAS I think it expedient for the good of his Majestie's service to proceed to Knuckle Point, on New Zealand, to land two natives of that country taken from that place by the *Dædalus*, storeship, in April last, and to make such observations on the country and inhabitants as I may be enabled to do in one or two days after my arrival there (provided the wind and weather should be favourable); and as the *Britannia*, transport, is hired into his Majestie's service by Lieut.-Governor Grose to proceed to Calcutta, and it being your intention to take the eastern rout, ten days or a fortnight will make no material difference in your voyage, as the monsoon will be but young by the time you arrive in the Eastern seas:

The *Britannia*  
to convey them.

You are therefore required and directed to receive and victual myself and twenty other persons (as p'r margin)\* on board the *Britannia*, and to follow such directions for your further proceedings (until the above service is performed) as I may find it necessary to give you for the good of his Majestie's service.

Given under my hand, at Government House, at Sydney, on Norfolk Island, this seventh day of November, 1793.

PHILIP GIDLEY KING.

\* Rev. Jas. Bain, Mr. Thomas Jamison, Mr. W. N. Chapman, the two New Zealanders, two non-commissioned officers, twelve privates, and one convict.

[Enclosure.]

CAPTAIN RAVEN TO LIEUTENANT-GOVERNOR KING.

1793  
Nov. 19.

SIR,—

Britannia, 2nd November, 1793.

In answer to your letter, which I was this morning favoured with, I beg leave to inform you that I shall strictly attend to your requisition. We are now making the utmost Preparations dispatch in procuring vegetables and refreshments, the want of which, and Norfolk Island lying directly in my track, induced me to touch here, where I shall await your commands.

All the information respecting my people whom I left for ten months on the south island of New Zealand I here subjoin, and shall be extremely happy if they convey any information worthy the attention of his Majesty's Ministers or satisfactory to you. My first plan after discharging the cargo I brought from England to Port Jackson was to have gone to Dusky Bay to procure seals' skins for the China market. The many impositions practised by masters of merchant ships upon the officers of the colony of New South Wales induced the gentlemen of Port Jackson to charter the Britannia to fetch a supply of provisions, &c., from the Cape of Good Hope. On this voyage I sailed from Port Jackson the 23rd of October, 1792. Having New Zealand pioneers more people in the ship than was necessary for her management, I asked the second mate (Mr. Leith) to remain behind at Dusky Bay with a party of men and the carpenter. To this request he assent'd in the most unequivocal and manly manner you can conceive. On the eleventh day after leaving Port Jackson we anchored in Facile Harbour, one of the many ports contain'd amongst the archipelago of Dusky Bay Islands. The prospect of procuring skins and leaving my people in safety I thought might justify my conduct, and acquit me of any reproach for hazarding the event of so singular a speculation. By the latter part of November we had completed a dwellinghouse, 40 feet Sailors landed at Dusky Bay, long, 18 broad, and 15 high, and had landed provisions and stores for twelve months. I also left ironwork, cordage, and sails, &c., with one year's provisions. for the building and rigging of a small vessel, which I had directed them to construct for their conveyance to some friendly port, as an unforeseen accident might prevent the return of the ship. On the 1st of December, 1792, we sailed, and left our The Britannia's voyage. shipmates perfectly satisfied with their situation and the attention I had paid to their comfort and protection. Not any circumstance occurred in circumnavigating the Globe which can afford you either information or amusement. Our passage from the south cape of New Zealand into the Atlantic Ocean was uninterrupted by any gales of wind, and was attended with moderate breezes from the S.W. and smooth water. On the 26th of June last we returned to Port Jackson; and on the 26th of August

1793  
Nov. 19.  
She returns to  
Dusky Bay.

Safety of the  
sailors.

Seals' skins  
collected.

A vessel built ;

her construction.

New Zealand  
timber,

fish, and fowls.

the ship was chartered by Lieut.-Governor Grose to fetch provisions from some part of India for the use of his Majesty's colony of New South Wales. I had leave by the charter to touch at New Zealand for my people, and was directed by Lieut.-Governor Grose to convey every information respecting them and the nature of the place, &c., unto him. For this purpose his Majesty's schooner Francis was order'd to accompany us. We sail'd from Port Jackson on the 8th of September, and anchored in Anchor Island Harbour on the 27th. Heavy gales and contrary winds were the cause of our being so long making a passage, which I am confident will, nine times out of ten, be performed in six or seven days. The instant we came to an anchor, Mr. Leith and five others came on board, and gave me the pleasing information of every person I had left being in health, Thos. Wilson, one of the seamen, excepted, who had a disease he had contracted at Port Jackson, which he had kept from the knowledge of every person until he was no longer able to do his duty. I found him very low, but on the recovery, and he is now quite well.

I found that my people had collected 4,500 seals' skins, a quantity, though not equal to my former expectations, yet as I was well convinced they had used every exertion and had procured as many as possible, I was satisfied under those circumstances, and should have been so had the number been far less. What excited my admiration was the progress they had made in constructing a vessel of the following dimensions : 40 ft. 6 in. keel, 53 ft. length upon deck, 16 ft. 10 in. extreme breadth, and 12 feet hold. She is skined, ceiled, and decked, and with the work of three or four men for one day would be ready for caulking. Her frame knees and crooked pieces are cut from timber growing to the mould. She is planked, decked, and ceiled with the spruce fir, which in the opinion of the carpenter is very little inferior to English oak.

Her construction is such that she will carry more by one-half than she measures, and I am confident will sail well. The carpenter has great merit, and has built her with that strength and neatness which few shipwrights belonging to the merchant service are capable of performing.

There are various kinds of timber in Dusky Bay, but that which is principally fit for shipbuilding is the spruce fir, which may be cut along the shore in any quantity or size for the construction of vessels from a first-rate to a small wherry.

Fresh provisions are readily procured. Coal-fish are innumerable, and may be caught with hooks and lines in almost any quantity, and have this peculiar excellence—my people ate them without bread for many months twice a day, and



were fond of them to the last. Ducks, wood-hens, and various fowls they have procured in great plenty. Tea they made from the spruce and tea-trees. The animals I left had fed themselves upon what they found in the woods, and were exceedingly fat and prolific.

1798  
Nov. 19.

The rains here are not attended with that inconvenience experienced in other climates. Colds or rheumatisms my people were never afflicted with. The winter was mild, and in general they had better weather than in the summer months. The flax grows here in great abundance, from which our people made fishing-lines and kellick-ropes.

Climate of  
New Zealand.

Flax-plant.

The Francis parted from us on the evening of Sunday, the 22nd of September, and did not arrive in Dusky Bay until Saturday, the 12th of October. We had then been waiting several days for a wind, and now found it necessary, as well for the good of his Majestie's service as for the safety of the schooner, to remain and assist her with our carpenter to repair several defects, and to furnish boats to procure ballast, &c., &c. Sunday, the 21st of October, we sailed from Dusky Bay in company with the Francis, and parted company the same evening, she keeping her course for Port Jackson, and we hauled to the northward on our passage to Bengal.

The Francis

her defects

Before I conclude, I beg leave to observe that we saw three natives the first time we were in Dusky Bay, but notwithstanding our giving them all the signs of friendship and hospitality we could not procure any intercourse. They took to the woods, and we never saw them again, nor did Mr. Leith see any inhabitants during his residence at Poenammoo. He once found a fire, but the natives had fled at his approach.

Natives shy

Should I have omitted any subject or circumstance you may wish to be acquainted with, I beg you will inform me, and I shall with pleasure attend to your request.

I am, &c.,  
W. RAVEN.

LIEUTENANT-GOVERNOR KING TO UNDER SECRETARY NEPEAN.\*

DEAR SIR,— Norfolk Island, 19th November, 1793.

To my publick letter respecting my trip to New Zealand I must refer you for every circumstance attending it, and I hope to hear that my proceedings on that business will be approved of. I am confident much publick good would result to the commerce of Great Britain and these colonies if a settle-

King's trip to  
New Zealand.

A settlement  
proposed.

\* A private letter.

|                         |  |
|-------------------------|--|
| 1793<br>Nov. 19.<br>—   | ment was made at the Bay of Islands or the river Thames. To my letters I must refer you for my ideas on that subject. Since my return from that country I am more confirmed in its apparent utility. Weavers and rope-makers should be sent out with their proper implements, as it will answer much better to send the flax manufactured than in the raw state. If the plants get safe home, I think too much attention cannot be paid to the cultivation of it, as it will grow most luxuriantly in situations where scarce anything else will vegetate. I have sent a box with some very fine plants to Sir Joseph.* I now come to the point which I intended this letter for. In my publick letter to Mr. Dundass respecting my going to New Zealand I have suppressed a circumstance respecting my leaving the command of the island to your brother during my ten days' absence. For my reason I must refer you to the above letter. When I had resolved on going, I issued the General Order which is an enclosure in No. 2.† Mr. Abbot, who is the senior of the three subalterns, came to me, and in the most contemptuous, and I may also say mutinous, manner (in the presence of the Deputy Surveyor‡), and positively and unequivocally (in his own name and that of the other subs.), refused obeying the order in any one respect. I endeav'd to point out what I thought the consequences of such behaviour might be, but that only seemed to make him more irritable and obstinate in continuing his avowed intention of disobeying the order in toto, which he doubted if Capt. N. would obey or not. On my sending for your brother, on putting the question to him and stating Mr. Abbot's conduct (which he avowed before Capt. N.), he answered that he considered himself as an officer liable to be called into service in these colonies on any emergency, and that he considered it his duty, as a capt. belonging to the N.S.W. Corps and in full pay, to obey any legal order which he might receive from a superior for the good of the King's service. After Mr. Abbot had for some time endeavoured to persuade Capt. N. that he was totally incompetent to take the command, and that I had grievously oppressed him (Lt. Abbot) in thinking of such a thing, I cut the matter short by telling Lt. A. that as Capt. Nepean thought it his duty to obey my orders he might do as he chose, on which he left me, saying he should consider more about it. It was now seven o'clock in the evening, and I intended to embark early next morning. The next morning, at seven o'clock, Lieut. Abbot came to me and said that he should not retard the service by continuing a disobedience to the order, but that he should represent the oppression he laboured under. At nine o'clock, |
| The flax-plant.         |  |
| Dispute with Abbott.    |  |
| A breach of discipline. |  |
| Abbott and Nepean.      |  |
| Stand taken by King.    |  |

\* Evidently Sir Joseph Banks.  
Grimes.

† Not available.

‡ Charles

my commission, with my order to Capt. N., was read, and I embarked, and neither at my embarking or landing did any one of those officers attend me. After my return Lieut. Abbot sent Ensign Piper to me to ask whether I meant to write home respecting what had taken place previous to my embarking, because if I did he would make a representation to ye Sec'y at War. I declined giving that officer any information on that head. Soon after I received a letter from Ensign Piper denying that he had ever given Lieut. Abbot the least reason to make use of his name (in refusing to obey the order), as Lieut. Abbot had not even spoken to him on the business previous to his (Lt. A.) coming to me and making use of both the officers' names. The other sub'n was so much intoxicated with liquor that he was incapable of giving any opinion. Mr. Abbot thought proper to wait upon me, and before the D'y Surveyor he acknowledged that neither of the officers gave him permission to make use of their names, and that he had never consulted them previous to his making me that declaration, but that they since were and continued of his opinion. As this is the substance of this business, I must leave you to make your comments on it. Independent of the necessity I found myself under to leave a suff't number of officers to form court-martials, I had another reason which, in my opinion, militated against my leaving Lieut. Abbot in command here. Six months ago that officer engaged some soldiers to pick a quarrel with a settler in order to beat him, which the settler having notice of had collected other settlers to repel force by force, but, fortunately for the peace and tranquility of this island, the soldiers did not carry their plan into execution. This came before me as a complaint. This was one reason which I had not to give the command to Lt. A. Another reason was that the officer next to him is a beastly drunkard, and by no means fit to succeed Lt. Abbot in case of death, had I been inclined to leave the government with ye latter. I find some kind of representation is sent by Lt. A. to the Secretary at War. I do not wish to injure Mr. A., although I have great reason and provocation. I have therefore suppressed making any mention of this transaction in my publick letters, leaving it to you to make what use of this you may think proper. If N.Z. should be seriously thought on, would it not be advisable for some person to examine the country before any people are sent there? I should have no objection to performing that service, which might be completed in two months on sailing from hence.

By your brother I have sent you a box of N.Z'd curiosities, which you will dispose of as you may think proper.

I am, &c.,

PHILIP GIDLEY KING.

1793

Nov. 19.

He embarks for  
New Zealand.

Explanations.

An admission.

Soldiers and  
settlers.

A drunken  
officer.

Examination of  
New Zealand.

1793

Nov. 19.

## A LETTER FROM NORFOLK ISLAND.\*

Norfolk Island, 19th November, 1793.

Capt. Raven.

THE *Britannia* is chartered to bring provisions, &c., for this colony from Bengal. Captain Raven sailed from Port Jackson in October last for Dusky Bay, in New Zealand, which he had left twelve months ago, to kill seals. On his return he found them all well,† and they had about 4,590 sealskins, although they were very deficient of tackle to kill them with. During their stay at this bay they built a small vessel of 150 tons burden, entirely out of the wood of the country, which, they say, is equal to the English oak, and grows in great abundance. The bay is large, commodious, and well sheltered from the winds. During their stay at the bay they caught such an abundance of fine fish, and a kind of wood-hen, which cannot fly, having no long feathers in its wings; and they had scarce any occasion for their salt meat all the time they remained there. They saw no natives; but on one of their excursions into the country they found a fire in a small hut. They left some axes, &c., on a tree which lay in front of the hut, but the natives had not removed them when they left the island. They speak so highly of the country, for the goodness of the soil and the fine timber with which it abounds, that it may be an object to Government in course of time.

A colonial-built vessel.

Natives of New Zealand.

Captured by the *Dædalus*.

Method of flax-dressing.

A machine required.

I should have mentioned in my former letter, had time permitted, the *Dædalus* having brought two of the natives of New Zealand to instruct the people to manufacture the flax-plant. The process proves to be a very simple one. They divide the fibre or haum across the leaf, about half through, with the point of a knife (in New Zealand they do this with a cockle-shell), then they draw it three or four times under the back of a knife, so that the outer part strips off. It is then taken to the water, and beat with a round stick; after this it is hung out in the sun to bleach; when sufficiently bleached, it is then hackled and spun into yarn. The two last parts of the process are an improvement made on the New Zealand mode of preparing it. By this method there has been some excellent canvas made out of it at this island, a sample of which is sent home. All that is now wanting is a machine that will dress it in a more expeditious manner, which might be easily invented by an

\* Reprinted from *Saunders's News-Letter* of Tuesday, 15th July, 1794. The Editor describes it as a letter from an officer at Norfolk Island, addressed to his friend in Lincoln. The letter contains internal evidence (post p. 184 and note) that the writer was Mr. Thomas Jamison, assistant-surgeon.

† Captain Raven had in December, 1792, left a party of men at Dusky Bay. Ante, p. 177.



artist, the New Zealand method being rather tedious, and requiring a number of hands.

1793

Nov. 19.

The New Zealanders are pleasant and good-natured beyond anything one could expect to meet with amongst so barbarous a people as they have always been considered to be. One of them is called Odoo, the other Tugee. The former is son to one of the princes of that country; the other is son to one of their priests. They live constantly at the Lieutenant-Governor's, and eat at his table. They seem very well content at their present situation. At times they express a wish to return to their native country, which will be complied with the first favourable opportunity that offers.

The captured natives.

Their life at Norfolk Island.

Various are the accounts respecting this colony (and not more so than the causes that have produced them), some of them, I am convinced, from a want of competent knowledge or sufficient information on the subject they spoke of. This has been the case with some, in my opinion, as I believe them to be men of the greatest veracity, and incapable of misrepresenting things; but that there have been misrepresentations is beyond a doubt, and many of them so unfavourable to the colony that nothing but time and facts can obliterate them. However, most people allow the climate to be very fine, and that there are considerable tracts of fine ground; and the general opinion is that were there a sufficient number of black cattle imported, the colony would soon amply supply itself. As to this island, all agree that the soil is excellent; all it wants is a good harbour, and much could be done to remove this inconvenience should the place prove to be an object worth that attention. To conclude this part of my letter, I am of opinion that New South Wales is not sufficiently known to authorise anyone to give a decisive account of the country, as there are not above thirty miles known one way and not more than twenty the other, which is but a speck, speaking of such an immense tract of country as New Holland is.

Conflicting accounts.

The climate.

A harbour at Norfolk Island.

Imperfect knowledge of N.S.W.

I have some seeds and specimens of plants for you, which I shall send in the first ship that sails from this directly to Europe. I would have sent them by this conveyance, but, from the long voyage, I think they would share the same fate as those I sent you before.

Seeds and plants.

The two New Zealanders, Tugee and Odoo, having expressed the greatest anxiety to return to their native country, and the Governor, being desirous that they should return impressed with those favourable ideas which they have hitherto imbibed of the friendship and kind treatment they had received at this island, was equally anxious that their wishes should be complied with; and on the afternoon of Friday, the 8th of March, Lieutenant-

The New Zealand flax-dressers.

|   |  |
|---|--|
| 1793                                    | Governor King, the Rev. Mr. Bain, myself,* Mr. Chapman, the two natives, two non-commissioned officers, and seventeen privates belonging to the New South Wales Corps, embarked on board the Britannia. The wind being fair, made sail about four o'clock p.m. The weather continued fine, and the wind favourable. Nothing particular occurred until Tuesday morning, when we made the Three Kings, a small island which lies off the north end of New Zealand. About eleven o'clock we were abreast of North Cape. As soon as the bay opened, the natives came off in their canoes, and came alongside of the ship with the greatest confidence, unprovided with any warlike instruments, except a few which they brought to dispose of. By evening there were no less than seven of these canoes alongside, containing, upon an average, twenty men each. They exchanged their cloth, flax, fishing-hooks, lines, &c., &c., with the people on board, for knives, axes, pieces of iron, hoops, &c., &c. This traffic was carried on, with the strictest honesty by both parties, until the evening put an end to it, when the canoes returned to the shore. |
| Nov. 19.                                |  |
| Taken back by King.                     |  |
| Off the New Zealand coast.              |  |
| Visited by natives.                     |  |
| Traffic with them.                      | It was almost calm during the night, and in the morning there were only light airs, with some appearance (by the clouds) of a contrary wind, the ship being about fifteen leagues from the place where the two natives lived. As this night seemed extremely likely to detain the ship longer than the Governor wished for, he asked Tugee and Odoo if they would go in one of the natives' canoes, to which they seemed very much averse. Some time after one of the principal chiefs came on board, who informed them that their chief had been on a visit there about three days before the ship arrived—that the two tribes were on the strongest terms of amity with each other. They informed the Governor of this, and seemed perfectly convinced of the truth of it, and were satisfied to go with him in his canoe. The Governor told them it might be a deception, and that if they had any doubt they had better return to Norfolk, and wait for another opportunity; to which Tugee replied “that chiefs never told lies, and that they were quite satisfied to go in the canoe.”  |
| A calm.                                 |  |
| The natives willing to land in a canoe. |  |
| King consents.                          | The Governor finding that the ship was not likely to get round to the bay, and being also convinced of the truth of what the chief had told them, as one of the natives who had stayed on board all night had related the same story, he now consented to their going in the canoe, and sent for the chief and told him that   |

\* Lieutenant-Governor King, in his despatch of the 19th November, 1793, ante, p. 170, gives the names of those who embarked with him. It will be seen from this that the writer of this letter was Mr. Thomas Jamison, assistant-surgeon.

he should be back in four months, and, should he find Tugee and Odoo well, he would make him and his tribe a very handsome present; to which he replied by saluting with the nose—that is, he applied his nose to the Governor's, in which position he continued for some minutes. This done, the stock, Indian corn, wheat, and garden seeds, &c., &c., were put into the canoe. Poor Tugee and Odoo now came to take leave of us with very full hearts indeed, and seemed greatly impressed with a sense of the obligations they were under to Governor King, whom they were very much attached to. Everything being now in the canoe, they put off for the shore. The next day we had a fair wind for Norfolk, where we arrived on Tuesday, the 18th, about four o'clock, being just ten days on our passage to New Zealand and back again to Norfolk.

1793  
Nov. 19.

Salutations.

Leave-takings.

Sail for Norfolk  
Island.

I can give you no information respecting this country, as we did not land. As to the coast, it looks to be sandy in many places, but in general it seems covered with green herbage. I think a large quantity of flax might be bought from the natives for very little. I send you a specimen of it, and some other curiosities which I purchased of them. I also send you enclosed in the letter a small specimen of the Norfolk Island flax, as dressed ready for the hackle.

Appearance of  
New Zealand  
coast.

#### W. N. CHAPMAN TO MRS. CHAPMAN.

[This document does not appear in the "Historical Records of New South Wales," but is obtained from His Honour Mr. Justice F. R. Chapman, in whose possession is the original letter. Mr. William Neate Chapman, when a midshipman in the Royal Navy, was appointed Secretary to Governor King, and accompanied him to Sydney and thence to Norfolk Island in 1791. He subsequently held a similar position under Governor King in New South Wales. He was uncle to the late Mr. Justice H. S. Chapman, and great uncle to the present Judge.—THE EDITOR.]

Norfolk Island, November 19th, 1793.

HONOURED MOTHER,—

I am this moment come on shore from the "Britannia" from a cruise to New Zealand, and a pleasant one it has been. We sailed from Norfolk Island on the 8th, and arrived off the North Cape of New Zealand on the 12th instant, and had got pretty close in shore by four o'clock in the afternoon, when five canoes came off to us; the least, I am sure, measured upwards of forty feet and the longest about sixty feet. They had from thirty to forty natives in each. As soon as they saw Tooke (Tuki) and Woodoo (Huru), they came on board without any reluctance and began a very fair and honest traffic. About five

1793  
Nov. 19.

o'clock two more canoes came off. There were several etangitadas (rangatiras) or chiefs amongst them, most of whom were known to Tooke; there was also a woman, who proved to be Tooke's sister-in-law. We all saluted her, and there was a very moving scene betwixt her and her brother-in-law. About seven o'clock they all left us until eight, when there was one canoe came on board with four men in her. The chief of them sold the canoe to Captain Raven and staid with us all night and slept aboard. In the morning eight canoes came off to us; on board of one of them was a chief of the name of Kotokake. As soon as Tooke and Woodoo saw him they said, as there was not wind enough to carry us to their own district, they would go on shore with the chief, of which Governor King was very glad, as he did not wish to detain the ship as she was bound to Calcutta to fetch provisions for the Colony. About nine o'clock, everything being settled, they took their farewell of us. They cried terribly and every body on board was very much affected at the parting, particularly the Governor, who said he never parted with his mother with more regret than he did with those two men. They are the finest set of men I ever beheld; the shortest we saw was at least 5 ft. 10 in., and very strong and muscular. The women are small but have very pleasing countenances. I have heard it remarked that the women of most countrys have the greatest flow of spirits—much greater than the male sex—and I assure you it is the case in New Zealand. We had, at one time, not less than 150 natives on board together, and just as they were going to leave the ship they gave us a dance. I never heard such a noise, or saw such ugly faces as they made, in my life in any country. So soon as they were gone, we stood back for Norfolk Island, but before we had got three miles from where they left us we fell in with a school of black fish, which is a sort of whale. The captain hoisted out his whaleboat, and the mate (Mr. Malon) went out and struck one, and afterwards brought it alongside. We took out the heart and kidneys and then set it adrift. We have had very fine weather all the time. Yesterday we made Norfolk Island, when everybody belonging on shore landed but me. I landed this morning, and the ship sails tomorrow noon.

I remain, dear Mother,

Your affectionate and dutiful Son,

W. N. CHAPMAN.

Mrs. Chapman.

P.S.—Mrs. King has informed me that she has wrote you all the news of the island since our departure, and, as I have but little time, you will, I hope, excuse it from me.



LIEUTENANT-GOVERNOR GROSE TO LIEUTENANT-GOVERNOR  
KING.1794  
Feb. 25.

SIR,—

Sydney, 25th February, 1794.

I have read with great attention your letter of the 30th ult<sup>o</sup>, and I am more astonished and mortified at its contents than I can well describe. What appears to me the most extraordinary is the great confidence with which you seem to set about such ill-judged and unwarrantable proceedings.

Your excursion to Knuckle Point, your sending away the New Zealanders without any directions whatever, and without either knowing or inquiring what were my intentions respecting them, are attacks on my situation I little expected, and which would justify measures I shall not pursue.

Your taking on yourself to appoint Captain Nepean, who by accident called at Norfolk, to a command you had left without permission might have produced the most unpleasant effects. Lieut. Abbott would have been perfectly justified in resisting your appointment of Captain Nepean, and the circumstance of your assembling the garrison for the purpose of reading them your commission, intending, I suppose, thereby to shew you was authorized in the step you was taking, was very irregular. Your commission, when read, was the best proof I know of that you had assumed an authority you did not possess, and that you was taking from Lieut. Abbott, the second in command, the authority he had.

Ready as I might be to put up with any want of attention to myself, I really do not see how this can be done, for I must for my own sake report the circumstances. I have not a doubt but the Secretary of State and the Commissioners of the Navy Board will consider your delaying the Britannia for this trifling purpose, at a time when she was charged with a business of such importance to the colony, a transaction deserving their highest disapprobation, and I really must very pointedly disclaim any knowledge whatever as well of the excursion as its appendages.

The mutiny you state to have happened at Norfolk I have directed to be investigated by a Court of Enquiry composed of all the officers who were present at Sydney. To them I have communicated all the information, either public or private, I received from yourself. Their opinion I enclose to you.

The necessity of disarming the detachment I cannot discover, although we all too plainly perceive that if the soldiers have been refractory the insults they have received from the convicts were sufficient to provoke the most obedient to outrage.

Grose  
indignant.Respect due to  
his office.Severe strictures  
on King.Report to be  
sent Home.

A disclaimer.

The mutiny.

Sufficient  
provocation.

- 1794  
Feb. 25.  
Lieut. Townson. I have directed Lieut. Townson to take command of the detachment serving at Norfolk, and he will communicate to you whatever orders I have given him respecting the soldiers.
- Militia to be disbanded. The militia you have ordered to assemble are immediately to be disembodied, and their arms are to be sent in the schooner, for the purpose of being served out to those persons who are settled on the banks of the Hawkesbury.
- Prisoners. Lieut. Townson is directed to apply to you for the persons of Thomas Restil Crowder and William Doran, who are to be kept in irons in the guard-house until the departure of the schooner, when they are to be sent as prisoners to Sydney.\*
- An important personage. The house occupied by the commanding officer of the troops being reported to be very uncomfortable, you will permit him to choose for himself any other house he prefers, and you will remove any person inhabiting the house he wants to the quarter he would have occupied.
- Officers recalled. Mr. Grimes being at this time much wanted by the Surveyor-General, you will direct him to take a passage in the schooner; and the Rev. Mr. Bain is also expected by this conveyance.
- The military. Lieut. Abbott, for the present, is to continue at Norfolk, and put himself under the command of Lieut. Townson; and although I have judged it necessary to enable Lieut. Townson to assemble regimental courts-martial that Ensign Lucas should proceed with him in the schooner, Lieut. Abbott is not to consider himself as relieved until another officer is sent to Norfolk Island for that purpose.
- An explanation wanted. It appearing by a remark of yours that Cooper, the man who struck Bannister, the soldier, was forgiven his punishment at the intercession of the detachment, and, at the examination of the Court of Enquiry, the officer, the sergeant, and all the soldiers who came from Norfolk Island declaring they were not acquainted with any such request having been made, and that, on the contrary, they were disappointed on finding him escape without punishment, I have to request you will trouble yourself to give me some further explanation of this circumstance.
- Land grants to officers. Lieut. Townson, the commanding officer of the detachment, having received a lease of twenty acres of land at Norfolk Island, he is to chuse such situation in Charlotte Fields as he may approve of, and of which Mr. Grimes will bring with him the description. He is also to chuse a spot of twenty-five

\* Fuller particulars of the circumstances of the quarrel in which these men were concerned will be found in King's letter to Dundas, 10th March, 1794. Crowder was a constable. King describes him as having been emancipated by Governor Phillip "on my representation." Doran is described by Lieutenant Beckwith as "a man who lives with the Governor" (meaning, evidently, Lieutenant-Governor King).

acres for the use of the officers who at any time shall be on detachment at Norfolk, which are to be divided in the following proportions, vizt. :—

1794  
Feb. 25.

To the commanding officer of the detachment ten acres, and to the three subalterns five acres each of cleared ground. At present Lieut. Townson will allott the ten acres for the use of the soldiers of the detachment.

Lieut. Townson will also apply to you for a spot whereon such soldiers as he may wish to indulge with sleeping out of the barracks may build huts, which huts are never to be visited by the constables; but in case of any disturbance therein the sergeant of the guard is to be sent to, and the commanding officer of the detachment will, of course, take away the indulgence of sleeping out of the barracks from such soldiers as conduct themselves irregularly.

Sites for  
soldiers' huts.

Lieut. Townson is instructed to enlist a person of the name of Flemming, now employed as general overseer at Norfolk Island, who will receive a warrant of emancipation on condition of his enlisting, and he is to be sent hither in the Francis. The two prisoners, Crowder and Doran, are to be under his charge on board the schooner. A young woman of the name of Eliz't' Goff, who has obtained permission to come to Sydney, is also to be placed under his care.

A convict  
soldier.

As I perceive that some of the ships which have lately touched at Norfolk Island have taken several convicts from thence, it is to be understood that in future no convict is to quit that settlement until application has been made and permission obtained from hence.\*

Convicts  
quitting the  
island.

I am, &c.,

FRANS. GROSE.

LIEUT.-GOVERNOR KING TO THE RIGHT HON. HENRY DUNDAS.

(Extract.)

SIR,—

Norfolk Island, 10th March, 1794.

March 10.

Being conscious that the whole of my conduct since I first settled this island in 1788 has been actuated by a constant attention to the advancement and interest of his Majesty's service, I hope, sir, no wilful design will be imputed to me of retarding the first or injuring the latter by my proceedings in detaining the Britannia. That ship, having touched at this island on her way to India, I conceived it my indispensable duty

King's trip to  
New Zealand.

\* In his letter to Dundas of the 30th August, 1794, Grose attempts to excuse the severity of this letter by an explanation which suggests his willingness to acquit King of any blame.

|   |  |
|---|--|
| <p>1794<br/>March 10.<br/>—<br/>The <i>Britannia</i><br/>detained.</p> <p>Captain Nepean<br/>inspects the<br/>island,</p> <p>and is left in<br/>charge.</p> <p>King's reasons<br/>for detaining<br/>the <i>Britannia</i>.</p> <p>Grose's anger.</p> <p>The New<br/>Zealand natives.</p> | <p>to inform his Majesty's Ministers of every circumstance respecting the actual state of the settlement on this island, as it was then eight months since I had any communication with [Lieutenant] Governor Grose. I therefore desired the master of that ship to wait a few days untill I could prepare copies of the letters, &amp;c., which were transmitted by the <i>Shah Hormuzear</i> in May, and by the <i>Sugar-cane</i> in October, 1793, which were done as expeditiously as possible; and as Captain Nepean, of the New South Wales Corps, was on board that ship and going to England on leave of absence by way of India, I requested that officer to land and to inform himself of the state of this settlement, which might enable him to give such information as might be required of him on his return to England. In the letter which I had the honour of sending by that officer, and of which duplicates will accompany this, I have stated my reasons for detaining the <i>Britannia</i> longer than the time necessary for finishing my letters (which from the number of enclosures, &amp;c., took up seven days), also my reasons for conducting the New Zealanders myself, and leaving the command with Captain Nepean during my absence. To those reasons I feel it necessary to add such others as operated with me at the time those transactions took place. The service the <i>Britannia</i> was going on, viz., that of procuring a cargo of provisions for the colony, could not escape my reflection; but, at the same time, I had every reason to suppose that there was at least an equal quantity of salt provisions in store at Port Jackson as there was at that time on this island, and of which we had then fifty-six weeks at a full ration. In this idea I was the more confirmed from the circumstance of two ships having arrived from England since my supplies were sent here. At the same time [as] my letters, &amp;c., were finished the wind set it at north with the new moon, which is here a certain indication of its continuance in that quarter for some days, during which the <i>Britannia</i> would have made but little progress on her voyage, whilst that wind was fair for New Zealand. Those reasons, joined to the short distance from hence to Knuckle Point, viz., 140 leagues, induced me to hazard assuming a responsibility which has unfortunately drawn on me the harshest censure and threat from [Lieutenant] Governor Grose. The two New Zealanders having always lived with me, I was a constant witness of their grief and anxiety for their families' safety, without the means of alleviating it otherwise than by promises; and it was my full intention to send them to Port Jackson by the first opportunity, from whence I hoped they would have been restored to their family. The instructions which I have received respecting them from [Lieutenant] Governor Grose, by his secretary, are as follows: "The <i>Dædalus</i>, storeship, has arrived from the north-west coast of America.</p> |
|---|--|



The agent, Lieut't Hanson, according to instructions he received from Captain Vancouver, has brought hitherto two men, natives of New Zealand, and the Lieutenant-Governor has sent them to you for the purpose of giving such information as they may possess respecting the manufacture of the flax-plant. The Lieut't-Governor, thinking it perfectly unnecessary to recommend them to your care, desires me only to add that he hopes much benefit may be derived from their introduction among us ; you will, of course, victual and cloath them." This instruction was certainly sufficient for me to detain those men for any length of time, untill I might receive farther instructions from [Lieutenant] Governor Grose respecting them ; but the daily lamentations of two sensible men, who were continually reminding me of my promise and repeating their anxious fears respecting the safety of their familys, from whom they were separated in a sudden manner, made me feel for them as a father and a husband. Those reasons, joined to the supposition of [Lieutenant] Governor Grose that he imagined they were sent here from my application, which application I made repeatedly to Governor Phillip,\* and renewed it when in England, and also requested Captain Vancouver (who I met at the Cape of Good Hope), if it should be in his power during his stay in those seas, to procure two natives of that country, that it would be an act of publick utility to send them thither ; and, as I have before observed, every instruction they were able to give us in manufacturing the flax-plant was obtained in a very short time, and on which we have very considerably improved. All which reasons induced me to give way to what I conceived were the dictates of humanity in restoring them to their familys and connexions. Could I have imagined that this proceeding would have been disapproved of by [Lieutenant] Governor Grose I certainly should have waited his orders, whose commands it is equally my duty and pleasure to obey ; and so distant were my intentions from making an attack on the respect due to his situation that I assured myself of his approving of the act in favour of the motive which occasioned it.

My reasons for conducting the two New Zealanders myself were, that I might be certain of no unpleasant circumstances happening on the passage to make them forget the kindness they were shewn on this island, and to return immediately if it should fall calm or a contrary wind should blow, and to prevent any unnecessary delay, as the only object was that of putting the New Zealanders on shore ; and had the passage been so short as I had reason to expect it would, it was my intention to have

1794

March 10.

Grose's instructions concerning them.

Their desire to return.

Brought from New Zealand at King's suggestion.

King's surprise at Grose's anger.

No intention to offend.

King's reasons for accompanying the natives.

\* See pp. 120, 160.

1794

March 10.

His absence of  
short duration.Expenses of the  
voyage.Why Captain  
Nepean was left  
in charge.Motives by  
which King was  
actuated.

landed for a few hours, and to have endeavoured to ascertain the quantity of manufactured flax which might be procured. But having been four days on the passage I gave up that idea as soon as I could assure myself that our two friends were in safety. My absence from Norfolk Island was only ten days, nor was I longer than eighteen hours off New Zealand; and I was happy to find on my return that the behaviour of every one during my short absence was equal to my expectations and wishes. The expence of thirty-seven pounds two shillings, which was due to the master of the *Britannia* for victualling those I took with me, at one shilling each per diem\*; also for ten young sows and two boars at forty shillings each, which I gave the New Zealanders to breed from; also one hundred weight of bread and a hundred looking-glasses, which were given to those who came on board the ship, which sum of thirty-seven pounds two shillings was included in a bill on his Majesty's Treasury, as stated in the letter No. 6, which I had the honour of transmitting by Captain Nepean. This small expence I hoped might be allowed of, as it was the means of procuring the goodwill of those who visited us, and the stock, I hope, will prove of publick utility if ever that country should be settled or visited by Europeans.

Respecting my reasons for appointing Captain Nepean to command here during my absence—the inability of the commanding officer of the detachment to hold any garrison or regimental courts-martial, there being only three subalterns on detachment here, appeared to me a sufficient reason to render that step necessary in case of any accident happening to me. Whatever irregularities or improprieties I may have committed in those proceedings I am, sir, sorry for them; but I did hope that the motive by which I was actuated, and the idea that a publick good might result from the New Zealanders again mixing with their friends, would have softened any errors which I might have fallen into, and which did not in the most distant manner proceed from any inattention or disrespect to [Lieutenant] Governor Grose, as no person can have a higher respect for the situation he holds than myself, and I very much regret that my assuming this responsibility should have drawn on me the most pointed and degrading effects of his displeasure.

I have, &amp;c.,

PHILIP GIDLEY KING.

\* For the names of those who accompanied King, see ante, p. 170 (note).

LIEUTENANT-GOVERNOR KING TO LIEUTENANT-GOVERNOR GROSE.

1794

SIR,—

Norfolk Island, 19th March, 1794.

March 19.

I am honoured with your letter and orders, dated 25th ulto., by Lieut. Townson, who arrived here in the Francis, schooner, the 9th inst. Despatches by Lieut. Townson.

It is, sir, with much concern and sorrow that I find the whole of my conduct has incurred your marked disapprobation, particularly as I have ever made it my study to merit the approbation of my superiors by every action which appeared to me consistent with the character of an officer. Permit me, sir, to assure you of my entire respect and deference, and should anything appear improper in what I must now state as my defence to the charges laid against me, it does not—it cannot, sir—proceed from my heart, as no other consideration than an earnest desire of forwarding the King's service and promoting the peace and happiness of those under my charge has ever been the ruling and prevailing line of my conduct. King and Grose.

By the triplicate of my letter to the Right Hon'ble Henry Dundas, sent by the Shah Hormuzear,\* which triplicate I sent opened in my despatches by Lieut. Beckwith† for your inspection, you will, sir, observe my remark that it “required entreaty to persuade them (the New Zealanders) to give us the least information in their mode of dressing the flax.” In order to possess that information I made them a promise of sending them home by the first ship, and which had the desired success; and it was my full intention to send them by the first opportunity to Port Jackson, hoping they might be sent from thence. The Sugar-cane and Boddingtons arrived here on their way to India‡; they were disappointed, and when the Britannia came they repeated their wish to be sent back again; the hourly lamentations of two sensible men panting to revisit their dearest connections and their native country, from which they were separated in a sudden manner; your supposition in the private letter§ you wrote me by the Shah Hormuzear, that you supposed they were sent here from my application (which application I made in every letter I wrote to Governor Phillip, and renewed it when I was in England); and the New Zealanders having given us every instruction in their power respecting the method of working the flax: all these reasons induced me to give way to the dictates of humanity in restoring them to their friends and The New Zealand natives.  
Their services as flax-dressers.  
Their anxiety to return.

\* The Shah Hormuzear left Norfolk Island, 27th May, 1793.

† Lieutenant Beckwith carried Lieutenant-Governor King's despatch of the 30th January, 1794, to Lieutenant-Governor Grose.

‡ The Sugar-cane and Boddingtons were at Norfolk Island, 2nd to 27th May, 1793.

§ Not available.

1794

March 19.

No intention to  
belittle Grose.

Why King  
accompanied  
the natives.

Length of the  
voyage.

Back on the  
tenth day.

Why Nepean  
was left in  
charge.

King's respect  
for Grose.

country. Could I for a moment have imagined that this step would have been disapproved of, or if a ship had been going to Port Jackson, I most certainly, sir, should have waited your orders, or have sent them to you, as I know and feel it my duty to pay obedience to your orders; and permit me to assure you, sir, in the most respectful manner, that it was far, very far, from my intention to make any attack whatever on the respect due to your situation, as I flatter'd myself with your approbation of the act.

My reasons for conducting the New Zealanders myself, and the certainty of the northerly wind prevailing some days (which it did), and which was a foul wind for the *Britannia*, together with my reasons for leaving the command with Captain Nepean, I have stated in the first part of the duplicate of the letter No. 6,\* to the Right Hon'ble Henry Dundas, and which, sir, I sent open by Lieut. Beckwith for your inspection. It was my intention not to be longer than ten days or a fortnight at most from the island, and to have return'd immediately if the wind came contrary, or we had met with any calm weather on our passage thither; and you will observe, sir, by the master's journal, as also by the duplicate of my letter No. 6, to the Right Hon'ble Henry Dundas, that my stay at the extreme north point of that island, from the time we came near it, was only eighteen hours, and that I relanded here the tenth day after my departure. As my conduct has, in this as well as in every other instance, met your disapprobation, I am sorry for it; but I can assure you, sir, I had no other view in going there than what I have stated in the above letter, and to prevent the *Britannia* making any unnecessary delay; nor had I any other view in leaving the command with Captain Nepean than that of a sufficient number of officers being on the island to order and compose garrison courts-martial. I am sorry for whatever impropriety or irregularity I may have committed in the above transactions; and I can assure you, sir, I had no other intention in them than that of doing a humane action, and, as I hoped, an act of public utility; and I must here beg leave to assure you, sir, that no person has a higher sense of the attention due to you than myself, and nothing but the great distance between us, and the length of time which might elapse before I could receive your orders (as it has been within a few days of one year that I have not had an opportunity of soliciting or obtaining them), would have induced me in that case, or any other, to act from my own judgment. . . .

I have, &c.,

PHILIP GIDLEY KING.

\* The letter referred to was dated 19th November, 1793. See page 169, ante.



## HUNTER'S INSTRUCTIONS. (Extract.)

*George R.*1794  
June 23.

INSTRUCTIONS for our trusty and well-beloved John Hunter, Esquire, our Captain-General and Governor-in-Chief in and over our Territory of New South Wales and its Dependencies, or to the Lieutenant-Governor or Commander-in-Chief of the said Territory for the time being. Given at our Court at Saint James's, the twenty-third day of June, 1794, in the thirty-fourth year of our Reign.

6. And whereas it has been humbly represented unto us that advantages may be derived from the flax-plant, which is found in the islands not far distant from the intended settlement, not only as means of acquiring clothing for the convicts and other persons who are and may become settlers, but from its superior excellence for a variety of maritime purposes, and as it may ultimately become an article of export: It is therefore our will and pleasure that you do particularly attend to its cultivation, and that you do send home by every opportunity which may offer samples of that article, in order that a judgment may be formed whether it may not be necessary to instruct you further upon this subject.

LIEUTENANT-GOVERNOR PATERSON TO THE RIGHT HON. HENRY DUNDAS.\*

Sydney, New South Wales,

SIR,—

21st March, 1795.

1795  
March 21.

I have the honor of informing you that Lieutenant-Governor Grose sailed from hence for England in the *Dædalus*, transport, on the 17th of last December, leaving me in the direction of his Majesty's settlements in this part of the world, and taking with him, as you will perceive by the enclosed copy of his last despatch to you, the Rev. Mr. Bain, Mr. White, and Mr. Laing.†

Grose sails for England.

Having reason to expect the arrival of Governor Hunter daily,‡ I have made no alteration in the mode of carrying on the service

Hunter daily expected.

\* Lieutenant-Governor Paterson was not aware that the Duke of Portland had succeeded Mr. Secretary Dundas as Secretary of State for the Home Department, on the 11th July, 1794.

† Lieutenant-Governor Paterson was evidently confusing Grose's despatch of 8th December, 1794, to Hunter with that of the 10th idem to Dundas.

‡ Governor Hunter did not arrive until the 7th September following.

- 1795  
March 21.  
—
- The harvest.**      which I found adopted at the Lieut.-Governor's departure, and have, consequently, little else to report than the present state of the colony.
- Rations.**      Our wheat harvest did not prove very abundant, but I have the satisfaction to say that the Indian corn has every appearance of being very productive; from the accounts which I have been able to collect, I conclude there will be a very considerable quantity of that article to receive into store this season, from settlers and others, and of what has been raised on account of Government.\*
- The Experiment.**      The flour being nearly expended, I have decreased the ration of that article, and substituted Indian corn in lieu, which is now sufficiently ripe for use, and which I have directed the Commissary to purchase from settlers and others at five shillings per bushel.
- Loss of a storeship.**      The Experiment, a small vessel, arrived here in the month of December last, from Bengal, with some articles of trade on speculation. From the master† I received an account that a large ship had sailed from Bombay, in July last, freighted with cattle and other articles, in pursuance of the contract entered into between Mr. Bampton and the Crown (already reported to you by Lieut.-Governor Grose), which ship was, unfortunately, lost soon after her departure from Bombay‡; but of this untoward accident no advice has been sent by Mr. Bampton, and, notwithstanding the time which has since elapsed, I still hope we may derive every benefit from it which Lieut.-Governor Grose had in view when he entered into the contract for the cattle.
- The Britannia.**      The Britannia, which had been engaged by the officers of the settlement to procure cattle and other articles for them at the Cape of Good Hope, returned from thence on the 4th instant.
- Horses.**      Out of forty-one horses which were put on board, thirty-three survived the voyage, and are likely (two excepted, which died soon after they had landed) to prove a valuable addition to the stock in the country. The master having some wine and spirits for sale, I have purchased a small quantity of the wine for the use of the hospital, and of the spirits for the people belonging to the schooner.§
- Wine and spirits.**

\* On or about the date of this despatch, settlers and others were informed that they would receive 5s. per bushel for all Indian corn brought by them to the public stores.—Collins, vol. i, p. 411

† Captain E. McClellan. The Experiment sailed for India on the 23rd March, carrying Lieutenant-Governor Paterson's despatches.

‡ See note to the Duke of Portland's despatch of 10th June, 1795, post, p. 200. The vessel which was lost was the Neptune.

§ The Francis.

Wishing to obtain some information which I could depend upon respecting the harbour of Port Stephens (thirty leagues to the northward of this place), I sent the colonial vessel thither, under the direction of Mr. Grimes, the Deputy-Surveyor. He remained in it about a week, and, from his report, I have no reason to conclude it will ever be necessary to send a second time to it.\*

1795

March 21.

Port Stephens.

The colonial vessel had been for some time previous to her sailing to Port Stephens employed in supplying the settlers on the banks of the Hawkesbury with provisions. I have caused a small store to be erected there, and have placed Baker, the superintendent, who arrived here in the *Surprize*, in the care of it, with a small guard for its protection.

The settlement at the Hawkesbury.

I have directed the Commissary to draw bills on the Right Honorable the Lords Commissioners of his Majesty's Treasury for the sum of four thousand two hundred pounds, to pay for the grain which has already been purchased this year, and for other incidental expenses, the accounts of which he will transmit by the earliest conveyance after this.

Expenses.

I have the honor to enclose the Commissary's return of the provisions remaining in store, together with a state of the settlements at this period, by which you will perceive the want we are likely to feel in the article of salt meat, unless some supplies should arrive.

Returns.

A vessel that has been for some months here awaiting the arrival of Mr. Bampton anchored here the 15th instant from the river Thames in New Zealand. I understood her people have been employed in cutting spars to freight whatever ship Mr. Bampton should bring or send here with the cattle, and that in the performance of this business, although but a brig of one hundred and fifty tons, no interruption or molestation whatever was given by the natives.†

A vessel from New Zealand.

On the banks of the Thames the flax-plant was found growing in the greatest abundance and luxuriance, and any quantity of it might have been procured for a few pounds' worth of iron.

The flax-plant.

\* An epitome of Grimes's report will be found in Collins, vol. i, p. 408. It is worthy of note that although the master of the colonial vessel—the *Francis*—on his return voyage from Port Stephens, “ran close along shore,” he saw no port or place of shelter for vessels until he got to Broken Bay.

† The brig of one hundred and fifty tons was the *Fancy*, Captain Dell. She lay in the river Thames, New Zealand, for three months, and collected upwards of two hundred fine trees, from sixty to one hundred and forty feet in length. Collins (vol. i, p. 410) says that they were obliged on one occasion to fire on the natives, killing two men and one woman, the seamen declaring, in what he terms “their usual enlarged style,” that they had driven off and pursued upwards of three thousand of “these cannibals.”

1795

March 21.

Norfolk Island.

I shall not fail to communicate the circumstance to Governor Hunter on his arrival.

This vessel in her way hither touching at Norfolk Island, some letters were received from Lieut.-Governor King, a copy of which I have the honor to inclose for your information.

I have permitted the master of the Experiment to take with him a cargo of the mahogany and cedar of this country,\* in the hope that if it should prove valuable in India it may be of advantage to his Majesty's interest in any future intercourse with that country which may be directed by Government.

I have, &c.,

W. PATERSON.

CAPTAIN BAMPTON TO LIEUTENANT-GOVERNOR PATERSON.

June 1.

SIR,—

Port Jackson, 1st June, 1795.

Arrival of the Endeavour.

I have the pleasure of informing you the Endeavour is safe arrived in Port Jackson with the cattle and grain on account of Government. I beg leave to acquaint you with the many unavoidable accidents which have prevented my fulfilling the contract earlier.

The route to Batavia.

In the first instance, you will perceive by my journal, which I will produce if you think it necessary, by which you will see we were unavoidably detained getting through the unknown passage between New Holland and New Guinea to Batavia.† On my arrival at Batavia I was informed of the French war, and that the Straits of Sunda and Banca were infested by a number of French privateers, which obliged me to remain near a month after the ship was ready for sea until I could get the Dutch frigate, the Amazon, to convey me through the straits, which was late in December, and it was the 1st of February before I arrived at Bombay. On my arrival, there was no ship fit for conveying cattle to a great distance, nor did the ship I now have arrive until

French privateers.

At Bombay.

\* Collins (vol. i, p. 412) states that the timber which the master of this vessel called cedar was obtained by him from the Hawkesbury River, whence he took sixty logs; but he does not say where the so-called mahogany was procured. To Mr. J. H. Maiden, Curator of the Technological Museum, the Editor is indebted for the following note: "The mahogany is what we now call red or forest mahogany, and is *Eucalyptus resinifera*. The cedar from the Hawkesbury is *Cedrela Australis*; it is now pretty well exterminated from places near the river, except in well-nigh inaccessible localities."

† Captain Bampton left Sydney in the Shah Hormuzear on 21st April, 1793.



the middle of May. I then purchased her, but found she was not fit to proceed in those boisterous latitudes without docking (and the south-west monsoon far advanced), which took me until the month of October. It was impossible for me to get the cattle from Surat at this season, and it took me until January before I could get them all down, after which I had to land them and feed them two months on dry food, such as hay, grain, &c., for had we taken them on board directly from grass they must inevitably have died in the course of so long a voyage. This brought all February, and on the 17th of March I embarked the cattle, and on the 19th sailed with 132 head of cattle and new grain just arrived from Surat.

I am, &c.,

W. W. BAMPTON.

1795  
June 1.

Cattle from  
Surat.

THE DUKE OF PORTLAND TO GOVERNOR HUNTER.

SIR,—

Whitehall, 10th June, 1795.

June 10.

I have received and laid before the King the letters from Lieut.-Governor Grose, mentioned in the margin,\* and two letters from Lieut.-Governor King, of the 19th March, 1794, together with their respective enclosures.

Grose's  
despatches.

The particular instructions which you received previous to your departure from hence, for the regulation of your conduct in every particular, render it unnecessary for me to be so minute in answering the letters now before me as would otherwise have been requisite.

Hunter's  
instructions.

It gives me great pleasure to find that the quantity of land already under cultivation produces more grain than is sufficient for the consumption of the settlement, and particularly so, as the naturally increasing proportion of that cultivation must be fully equal to the supply of the additional number of convicts, which from time to time may be expected to arrive from hence. The return,† too, of the live stock is far from unpromising. The supply which (from what is stated in Lieutenant-Governor Grose's letter of the 31st of August last) may be expected by the ship Shah Hormuzear, with the means of procuring further supplies, to be adopted under your instructions, will, I have no doubt, in a very short period place the settlement in such a

Land under  
cultivation.

Live-stock.

\* April 5th (not available, but quære whether it is not the despatch dated April 29th, 1794); July 5th; August 20th; August 30th; August 31st.

† The return referred to was evidently that enclosed with Grose's despatch of 5th July, 1794.

1795  
June 10.  
Private  
enterprise.

Convict labour.

System followed  
by Grose.

Norfolk Island.

condition as will, with respect to live stock as to grain, render it totally independent of this country.\* I am, at the same time, sorry to observe that the amount of the public live stock and cultivated ground bears by no means that proportion to the private which might be expected from the nature of the case and the number of convicts employed, whose labour should be considered as the property of the public by whom they are supported; and herein I must observe that the directions contained in Mr. Dundas's letter to Lieutenant-Governor Grose of the 30th of June, 1793, directing certain regulations to be adopted with regard to the number of convicts to be allowed to officers, as such, and the conditions under which any greater number should be allowed them, did not admit of any discretionary construction on the part of the Lieutenant-Governor, and consequently they have been improperly deferred. Besides, the reasons assigned by Lieutenant-Governor Grose for deferring them are insufficient and erroneous,† since nothing can be more self-evident than that the public will be most benefited, either when the convicts, fed by the public, are employed on its account, or when employed for and on account of the individual, they are fed by that individual, and taken from the public stores. I must here observe that Lieutenant-Governor Grose states that Norfolk Island not producing herbage sufficient for the maintenance of any species of live stock, must always be

\* The Shah Hormuzear did not return. Her owner (Mr. Bampton) despatched in her stead the Endeavour, an 800-ton vessel, from Bengal, with a cargo of provisions and one hundred and thirty-two head of cattle, in performance of his contract with Lieutenant-Governor Grose (see Collins, vol. i, p. 417). The Endeavour arrived at Port Jackson on 31st May, 1795. She was not identical with Captain Cook's vessel of the same name.

† Lieutenant-Governor Grose's reasons for deferring the execution of the directions referred to will be found in his despatch to Mr. Secretary Dundas of the 29th April, 1794. Hunter did not immediately disturb the system which had been continued by Grose. When the former arrived in the colony, the whole of the available labour was employed in agricultural work, particularly in preparing for the wheat harvest, and he naturally felt a disinclination—at such a time—to bring about so sweeping a change. Regulations were promulgated, however, in regard to assigned servants in the following cases: The settlers who arrived in the Surprize (Messrs. Boston, Pearce, and Ellis) were allowed five convicts; superintendents, constables, and storekeepers, four; free settlers, two; settlers who had been prisoners, one; and sergeants of the New South Wales Corps, one. Recognising, however, that it was impossible the Government could continue to feed and clothe the cultivators of the soil, and then purchase the produce of their labour, Hunter announced that, after the harvest had been garnered, the number of convicts allowed to the military officers, and victualled from the public store, would be greatly reduced.—Collins, vol. i, p. 431.

dependent on the mother country or on New South Wales for salt provisions. Should this be the case, you will be particularly on your guard not to burthen that settlement with a greater number of convicts than can subsist themselves on the island, without a perpetual recourse to this country or to New South Wales.

1795  
June 10.

As the conduct of Lieut.-Governor King, in purchasing, as stated in Lieutenant-Governor Grose's letters of the 30th of August last, eleven thousand four hundred and seventy-six bushels of Indian corn, appears to have arisen from good motives, you will, thro' him, make the best terms you can with the owners. It is certainly proper and necessary to purchase from individuals what is wanted for the public stores, yet it is equally so that the purchase should be at the market price, and it cannot be expected what was given when the commodity was scarce should continue to be given when it becomes more abundant; and this circumstance makes me conceive that Governor Phillip could never have meant to fix a standing price for what must vary and fluctuate every year.

Indian corn.

Purchases  
from settlers.

I have maturely considered the statement made by Lieutenant-Governor King of the transactions in Norfolk Island, referred to in Lieut.-Governor Grose's letter of the 30th August, and I am far from imputing to Lieut.-Governor King any degree of blame which calls for serious reprehension. What I most object to is, his quitting his government and departing with the New Zealanders in the *Britannia*, without previous communication with Lieut.-Governor Grose.\*

The disturbances at Norfolk Island.

With respect to the mutinous detachment that was sent from the island, I am truly sorry to observe that their conduct was such as to merit much severer treatment than it met with. The source of their disorderly conduct and of their disobedience clearly arose from their having been improperly permitted to mix and interfere with the other inhabitants, but particularly with the convicts, from whom, as their situation and their duties are perfectly separate and distinct, so should their conversation and connections. The best proof I can receive that both the one and the other are properly governed, will be that matters of dispute seldom arise between them, and for this plain reason, because they should neither of them ever be in the way of it. But whenever such disputes do arise, strict and impartial justice must decide between the parties, for whoever mis-

Cause of the mutiny.

Soldiers and convicts.

\* See Lieutenant-Governor King's despatches of 19th November, 1793, and 19th March, 1794; and Lieutenant-Governor Grose's despatch of the 25th February, 1794.

- 1795  
June 10.  
—
- Grose's orders.** conducts himself must be considered as losing all title to preference or distinction from being of a different class or description.
- I have thought it necessary to express my sentiments more fully on this subject, because I am inclined to think that the General Orders of Lieut.-Govr. Grose, dated 25th February, 1794, transmitted to Lieut.-Governor King, must have been hastily conceived on the pressure of the moment, and without due attention to the principle I have above mentioned, and which in the distribution of justice should never be lost sight of.
- Disputes of soldiers and civilians.** I am of opinion it would be better, whenever such disputes arise, which I trust will be very rarely, that the complaint in the first instance should always be guided by and follow the nature and description of the person.
- Procedure.** Thus, if a convict, or any civil person, is complained of, the complaint should be to the Governor, or the nearest magistrate; if a military person, to the Commander-in-Chief, or nearest officer, as the case may require.
- Irish convicts.** You will receive this by the Marquis Cornwallis,\* transport, which takes from Ireland one hundred and sixty male and forty female convicts,† with nine months' provisions for them after their arrival, and the articles mentioned in the enclosed list, for the use of the settlement.
- Criminal Court at Norfolk Island.** You will likewise receive by this conveyance his Majesty's commission for establishing a Court of Criminal Jurisdiction in Norfolk Island‡; and Mr. Hibbins, the Judge-Advocate for Norfolk Island, if not already sailed, is ordered to take his departure in the Marquis Cornwallis.
- Supplies.** Another transport is expected to sail from hence in the course of the month of July, in which it is proposed to send the supplies specified in the within list.§
- Stationery.** An additional quantity of common stationary will be sent, either in the Marquis Cornwallis or the transport which is to follow, for the use of the Commissary, Mr. Palmer, in keeping his accounts in the manner in which he has been directed, which must be strictly adhered to.
- I am, &c.,  
PORTLAND.
- \* She arrived at Sydney on 11th February, 1796.—Collins, vol. i, p. 455.
- † According to Collins (vol. i, p. 455), the Marquis of Cornwallis had on board 163 male and 70 female convicts.
- ‡ A copy of this Act was enclosed, with Hunter's instructions, in Dundas's despatch of 1st July, 1794.
- § The list is not available.



LIEUTENANT-GOVERNOR KING TO THE DUKE OF PORTLAND.

1796

MY LORD,—

Norfolk Island, 19th January, 1796.

Jan. 19.

The enclosure will inform your Grace by what opportunity I have the honor of forwarding this despatch.

Capt. Bampton  
and the  
Endeavour.

The distressed state of the master and people belonging to those vessels has induced me to comply with his request in the manner stated in the enclosure, which I hope will meet your Grace's approbation.

I have the honor to transmit copies of such official communications as have taken place between Governor Hunter and myself.\* From the very short stay of those vessels, and my present ill state of health, I hope this will appear the most satisfactory information respecting the present state of this island, as no material change has taken place since the date of my last letter to Governor Hunter.

King's  
correspondence.

It being found necessary to purchase two hundred and thirty-two bushels of wheat from settlers, &c., to issue during the late harvest, I directed the Deputy Commissary to receive the same; and as this is the first wheat purchased on this island, I have been guided in the price (*i.e.*, 10s. the bushel) by what is given at Port Jackson, payment for which has been made agreeably to Governor Hunter's directions to me on that behalf, proper vouchers for which (and some orders that I have deemed it necessary to give respecting the receipt of, and authenticating the payment for, such grain and animal food as it may be necessary to purchase from individuals to issue to those victualled from his Majesty's stores), addressed to the Secretaries of his Majesty's Treasury, I have the honor to enclose, and have left it open for your Grace's inspection.

Wheat  
purchased from  
settlers

Payment for  
stores.

As no salt meat has been lately issued to those victualled from his Majesty's stores, I have directed the Deputy Commissary to state on the back of the enclosure the quantity of fresh pork received from settlers, &c., at 6d. the pound, and that furnished by Government, since the last payment, to issue in lieu of the salt ration reserved in the stores, payment for which will be made on the arrival of his Majesty's armed vessel *Reliance*, which I expect to see every hour.

Fresh meat.

I have the honor to enclose lists of persons of different descriptions landed here from the *Fancy*, *snow*, and *Providence*, schooner. They are real objects of pity, being so debilitated from extreme hunger that it will be some time before any labour can be got from them.†

\* These letters principally refer to matters of routine, and to the projected departure of King for England.

† The enclosure is not among the transcripts received from London.

1796

Jan. 19.

A Colonial-  
built schooner.

Mr. Bampton informs me that at Dusky Bay he left a schooner of sixty tons almost built, which may be expected here with the remainder of the people belonging to the Endeavour in about three weeks, a list of whom is added to the enclosure.

Wreck of the  
Endeavour.

It may be necessary to inform your Grace that the loss of that ship was occasioned by stress of weather, which compelled the master and officers to run her ashore in Facile Harbour, Dusky Bay, New Zealand, where she lies bilged. Such stores belonging to the wreck as could not be taken away by the three small vessels are left at Dusky Bay in storehouses, under the care of four men, who are to remain there until a vessel can be sent from India to take them off.\*

Requirements of  
the island.

I have the honor of enclosing a list of such wants as we are most in need of on this island, a copy of which was sent to Governor Hunter; and I am assured that such of those articles as are at Port Jackson, and can be spared, will be sent hither by the Reliance. But as I have no information respecting a clergyman, I presume circumstances will not admit of either of the two chaplains at Port Jackson being sent hither. I am induced therefore to submit to your Grace's consideration the necessity of a chaplain's being appointed to do duty on this island, which appears the more necessary since the establishment of a Court of Criminal Judicature.

I have, &amp;c.,

PHILIP GIDLEY KING.

[Enclosure No. 1.]

CAPTAIN BAMPTON TO LIEUTENANT-GOVERNOR KING.

Snow Fancy, off Norfolk Island,

DEAR SIR,—

19th January, 1796.

Capt. Bampton  
and the  
Endeavour.

I beg leave to acquaint you that I sailed from Port Jackson in the Endeavour, with the Fancy, on the 19th of September last; but having unfortunately suffered the disaster of the Endeavour's being shipwrecked, and having now only a few days' provisions of rice alone to subsist upon, and that at half-allowance, under such unfortunate circumstances, I have taken the liberty of requesting your humane assistance for such necessary supplies as I stand in need of, and his Majesty's store will admit, to enable me to return to India.

\* These men were relieved by the captain of the Mercury in the winter of 1797. Thirty-five in number were landed on Norfolk Island.—Post, p. 219.

I likewise beg leave to inform you that I have between twenty-five and thirty people who secreted themselves on board the Endeavour (unknown to me or any of the officers), whose time of transportation is not yet expired. I therefore hope, sir, you will be so kind as to send boats and a guard to take them on shore; as likewise a number of others whom I permitted, by leave of his Excellency Governor Hunter, to have a passage to India, but from my unfortunate situation cannot take them any further.

1796  
Jan. 19.

Stowaways  
returned

For further particulars I beg leave to refer you to Captain Dell, who will give you every information of our circumstances, and wait your pleasure.

With my best respects to Mrs. King.

I have, &c.,  
W. W. BAMPTON.

[Enclosure No. 2.]

LIEUTENANT-GOVERNOR KING TO DEPUTY-COMMISSARY CLARK.

MR. William Wright Bampton (late master of the Endeavour) having represented the distressed state of his people for provisions and some stores, which are necessary for the prosecution of his voyage to India, and as he informs me he can procure a person to lodge twelve hundred pounds of fresh pork in his Majesty's stores in exchange for an equal quantity of salt beef, and that he has a quantity of salt which will be useful in curing Government's pork, which he is willing to give as an equivalent return for the quantity of dholl required, and will pay any overplus in money :

Stores required  
by Capt.  
Bampton.

On these conditions you will deliver him the salt beef out of the stores, and the dholl from that condemned by survey, with the stores as per margin,\* taking a fair valuation of the worth of those articles, delivering to me original copies of the same, together with such money as may be given for the overplus value, to be applied by me to the purpose of purchasing grain and fresh pork.

To be supplied  
from Govern-  
ment stores.

For all which this shall be your order.

Given under my hand, at Sydney, on Norfolk Island, this 19th day of January, 1796.

PHILIP GIDLEY KING.

Two tons and a half of dholl; twelve hundred pounds of beef; three pieces of island canvas; one hundred pounds of nails; six hundred deck-nails; some ironwork, about seventy pounds weight; four pounds of thread.

1796  
Oct. 18.

# CONDITION OF NORFOLK ISLAND.

By Lieutenant-Governor King.

18th October, 1796.

Civil and  
military.

*Inhabitants (Civil)* consists of the Lieutenant-Governor, Judge-Advocate, Deputy Provost, Deputy Commissary, and an assistant surgeon, to whom may be added a storekeeper, an acting master-carpenter, beach-master, and one superintendent.

*Military* consists of a captain, three subalterns, and a company. The whole number of the civil and military, with their wives and familys, is one hundred and twenty.

Free settlers.

*Settlers* are four seamen, who belonged to his Majesty's ship Sirius, and fifteen marines, who were discharged at the relief of that detachment, and became settlers in January, 1792.

Also fifty-three settlers from those whose terms of transportation is expired, three officers, and others who held ground by grant or lease, or who have purchased allotments from settlers; also fourteen from those whose term of transportation is unexpired, and who hold allotments exceeding five acres. The whole number of which (exclusive of the officers), with their familys, is about two hundred and forty-one.

Expirees.

*Men and Women whose Terms of Transportation are Expired.*—One hundred and forty-nine men and sixty-three women of this description support themselves by hiring ground from settlers, working for individuals, or at their different callings. Some few are employed as overseers, and working for the publick, for which they are cloathed and fed from the stores, and further recompensed according to their merit. The number of this class, with their women and children, is about two hundred and thirty.

Male convicts.

*Male Convicts* who remain under the sentence of the law are as follows :—

|                        |    |    |    |    |    |    |
|------------------------|----|----|----|----|----|----|
| For life               | .. | .. | .. | .. | .. | 36 |
| From 10 to 5 years     | .. | .. | .. | .. | .. | 10 |
| „ 5 to 3               | „  | .. | .. | .. | .. | 4  |
| „ 3 to 1               | „  | .. | .. | .. | .. | 26 |
| „ 1 year to six months | .. | .. | .. | .. | .. | 60 |

136

Government  
work.

Of which number five are assigned to settlers and others, on condition of their maintaining them; the rest are employed as stated in the following page. From which it will be obvious that no progress in cultivation for the Crown can be made, as not more than thirty men are employed in cultivating ground for the public advantage, which is much interrupted by incidental work, and attending the artificers in carrying on the different buildings, which are indispensable.



NUMBER and Employment of every Person resident on Norfolk  
Island, 16th October, 1796.

1796  
Oct. 18.  
Population.

## Males.

|  |      |        |
|--|------|--------|
| Lieutenant-Governor and officers of the civil department ..  | 5    | Males. |
| Convicts allowed do. .. ..   | 26   |        |
| One captain, 2 ensigns .. ..   | 3    |        |
| Convicts allowed do. .. ..   | 22   |        |
| Non-commissioned officers and privates of the detachment ..  | 71   |        |
| Convicts allowed do. .. ..   | 3    |        |
| Convicts allowed guard .. ..   | 2    |        |
| Storekeeper, 1; superintendent, 1; master carpenter, 1; beach-<br>master, 1 .. ..  | 4    |        |
| Convicts allowed do. .. ..   | 13   |        |
| Overseers, 9; convicts, men, and boys allowed do., 9 ..  | 18   |        |
| Settlers from marines and seamen, independent of the stores ..   | 8    |        |
| Do victualled for working for the public .. ..   | 11   |        |
| Do from convicts who have served their term of transportation,<br>and who are independant as above .. ..                       | 38   |        |
| Do victualled for working for the public .. ..   | 19   |        |
| Free men who are not settlers .. ..  | 2    |        |
| People whose terms of transportation are expired, and who work for<br>their living among settlers and others .. ..             | 144  |        |
| Convicts who are taken off the stores by the settlers and others to<br>assist them in clearing their ground, &c. .. ..         | 5    |        |
| Employed at public cultivation—  |      |        |
| At Sydney, 16 .. ..  | } 28 |        |
| At Queenboro', 12 .. ..  |      |        |
| Boat's crew, 5; constable, 1; watchmen (who are invalids), 8 ..  | 14   |        |
| Carpenters, 13; sawyers, 8; boatbuilders, 2 .. ..  | 23   |        |
| Stonemasons, labourers, and quarrymen .. ..  | 5    |        |
| Blacksmiths, 3; tool-helver, 1; charcoal-burners, 3; shingle-makers,<br>2; glazier and painter, 2; grooms, 2; mak'g salt, 2 .. | 15   |        |
| Barbers, 2; bakers, 2; shoemakers, 3; taylors, 4; hospital, 1 ..   | 12   |        |
| Millars, 2; butcher, 1; jailer, 1; ropemaker, 1 .. ..  | 5    |        |
| Schoolmaster, Commissary's clerks .. ..  | 5    |        |
| At the stores, 4; flax manufactory (with 9 women) .. ..  | 13   |        |
| Stock, 8; granary and barn, 1; gardeners, 2 .. ..  | 11   |        |
| Men allowed marine settlers, &c., for working at their different trades  | 5    |        |
| At Phillip Island, taking care of the stock .. ..  | 3    |        |
| Total males .. ..  | 533  |        |

## Females.

Females.

|  |    |  |
|--|----|--|
| Wives to civil and military, 11; children, 24; free women, 2 ..  | 37 |  |
| Settlers' wives, and those who have served their terms of transporta-<br>tion, and who are independant of the provision store .. | 64 |  |
| Wives and women living with overseers, and washerwomen, and<br>having young children .. ..                                       | 61 |  |
| Working at the flax manufactory .. ..  | 9  |  |
| Making slips and nursing .. ..   | 20 |  |
| Children supported by their parents .. ..  | 64 |  |
| Do victualled from the stores .. ..  | 99 |  |

Total females and children .. 354

Total males .. .. 533  
Females and children .. .. 354

Number in the settlement .. .. 887

1796  
Oct. 18.  
Nature and  
extent of land.

*Land.*—The island contains about 11,000 acres. In the level grounds, where the earth cannot be washed away by heavy rains, the soil varies from a rich brown mould to a light red earth. These soils are again varied by some extensive pieces of light black mould and fine gravel, which is found to produce the best wheat. The heavy rains which fall during the winter months wash the earth from the sides of the steep hills into the bottoms, leaving a marly substance, which will not admit of cultivation in that state; but this is only the case with the very steep hills that are cleared of timber, and have been four or five years in cultivation, as those of an easy ascent preserve their depth of soil, many of which have borne six successive crops of wheat. Owing to the quantity of soil washed from the sides of the steep hills into the bottoms (some of which were only a waterway between the hills), they are now level spots of ground, covered with great depth of the richest soil. Of the 11,000 acres of ground in this island, there are not 200 that could not be cultivated to the greatest advantage, if cleared of timber, and a sufficiency of people, cattle, and ploughs were on the island.

Alienated and  
cleared land.

*The manner in which the land is occupied.*—The ground cleared of timber for the public use, and that marked out for the settlers' lots, occupy a great part of the island, and is distributed in the following manner, viz. :—

| To whom allotted.  | Number<br>of Acres. | Acres<br>cleared of<br>Timber. |
|--|---------------------|--------------------------------|
| Ground allotted to settlers on grant or lease ..                           | 3,239               | 920                            |
| „ officers, by grants, lease, or per-<br>mission .. ..                     | 132                 | 132                            |
| „ to individuals of different de-<br>scriptions .. ..                      | 100                 | 100                            |
| „ reserved for Government, and contiguous<br>to the above allotments ..    | 1,400               | None.                          |
| „ cleared of timber, and has been occupied<br>for the public benefit .. .. | 376                 | 376                            |
| Total quantity of ground occupied as above ..                              | 5,247               | 1,528                          |
| Supposed contents of the island, about ..                                  | 11,000              | ..                             |
| „ quantity of ground unoccupied, about ..                                  | 5,753               | ..                             |
| „ „ not cleared of timber ..   | 9,472               | ..                             |

Produce of the  
land.

*Cultivation.*—Most of the ground cleared of the timber was under cultivation in 1793 and 1794, and produced about 34,000 bushels of grain, but from the sudden and effectual check given

1796  
Oct. 18.

to private industry during the year 1794, and the great proportion of the labourers working for their own support, and other-ways disposed of, not more than a third of Government ground and a fifth of the ground belonging to individuals was in a state of cultivation during the last year; that portion of ground thus neglected became overrun with rank and strong weeds, which is a great cover to the numerous rats there are on the island, exclusive of the injury done the soil by the growth of these weeds. However, from the humane attention shewn to the wants of the industrious individual by Governor Hunter in directing the maize-bills to be paid (which proceeding has since been sanctioned by his Grace the Duke of Portland), I hope that step will not only relieve many deserving people, but also renew that industrious disposition which the settlers have in general shewn.

Public labour.

The few men at public work, and the labour necessary for preparing the ground to receive wheat, did not admit of more than 100 acres of wheat and 18 of maize being sowed last year for the Crown. But the produce of the wheat was much reduced by the quantity of weeds that grew with it, and by some severe lightning when in blossom.

Wheat.

*Crops.*—Cultivation on this island is generally confined to maize, wheat, potatoes, and all kinds of garden vegetables. The heat of the climate, occasional droughts, and blighting winds render wheat an uncertain crop. Nor can it be averaged at more than 18 bushels an acre, altho' some have yielded 25.

Owing to the quick and constant growth of rank weeds, few individuals can sow more wheat than is necessary to mix with their maize, which hitherto has rarely exceeded 5 acres each. Some few among the settlers who are remarkably industrious, or who have greater advantages than others, have generally from 5 to 11 acres in wheat.

Maize.

The harvests of maize are constantly certain and plentiful, two crops of which are generally procured in twelve months. The produce of one crop may be averaged at 45 bushels per acre, and many have yielded from 70 to 80.

Method of cultivation.

To procure two crops of maize, or one of wheat and one of maize, in twelve months, *i.e.*, from June to June, the following plan is observed, *viz.*: The ground, owing to its extreme fertility, needs no other preparation than cutting off the weeds, and planting the maize from June to August. Seldom more than one good hoeing is required. In October and November the cobs are full formed and the tassels are dry. About this time the spaces between each hole is planted with the second crop of maize. In December and January the first crop is gathered.

|                               |   |
|-------------------------------|---|
| 1796<br>Oct. 18.<br>—         | <p>Taking up the stalks of the first crop loosens the mould round the plants of the second crop, which are now 6 inches high, and are immediately hoed. If it is intended to sow wheat for the first crops of the succeeding year, it is necessary to give this second crop at least three hoeings to keep the ground as clear of weeds as possible. The second crop of maize is gathered by the beginning of May, and is always much more productive than the first, though liable to be mildewed. If April and May happen to be wet months, which is often the case, the wheat is sowed (for one crop of wheat and one of maize) from the beginning of June to the latter end of July, and is housed by Christmas Day; the stubble is cleared off as fast as possible, and as much rain generally falls in January, maize is then planted, which comes off the ground in April and May. Sometimes potatoes are planted for a second crop, and yield an abundant encrease. It is much wished that a regular course of crops could be observed, but the want of cattle, ploughs, and labourers, with some other local objections, prevent that desirable mode of cultivation from being followed.</p> |
| The second crop.              |   |
| Potatoes.                     |   |
| Proportion of cleared ground. | <p>By the statements in page 208 it appears there are 5,247 acres occupied, out of which only 1,528 are cleared of timber. Also that there remains 5,753 not occupied and uncleared, making in the whole 9,472 acres not cleared of timber. If 6,000 out of the 9,472 acres not cleared could be put under cultivation, in addition to the 1,528 already cleared of timber, its produce at one crop only, and allowing no more than 30 bushels of maize to the acre, would be 225,840 bushels of grain, which might be doubled if there were labourers to procure a second crop.</p>  |
| Indian corn.                  | <p>The remaining 3,472 acres might be reserved for fuel, wood for buildings, and other purposes.</p> <p>India corn must be ever considered the principal produce of the island for furnishing the inhabitants with bread, and which can never fail of being abundant for that purpose, as well as feeding stock. The few labourers at publick work has not allowed of any wheat being sowed this year for Government; but as individuals will continue to raise that grain their overplus will be purchased, as flour being mixed with the meal of Indian corn makes it much better. From the great quantity of Indian corn still remaining in the stores; and what will be raised this year by the few convicts at public labour, I do not think it will be necessary to purchase any of that grain this year, unless future circumstances should require it.</p>  |



ACCOUNT of grain raised by those employed in cultivating ground for the public use, and that raised by officers, settlers, and others, on Norfolk Island, from the 6th March, 1788 (when it was first settled), to the 18th October, 1796 :—

1796  
Oct. 18.

| Year.                       | By whom raised. | Quantity of Maize and Wheat in Bushels. | Bushels of Maize and Wheat purchased from Individuals for the Public Use. | Quantity of maize and wheat raised 1788-1796. |
|-----------------------------|-----------------|---|---|---|
| From—                       |                 |   |   |   |
| March, 1788, to May, 1789   | Government      | 46                                      |   |   |
|                             | Individuals     | 10                                      |   |   |
| May, 1789, to May, 1790*    | Government      | 450                                     |   |   |
|                             | Individuals     | 50                                      |   |   |
| May, 1791, to May, 1792     | Government      | 1,688                                   |   |   |
|                             | Individuals     | 391                                     | 40  |   |
| May, 1792, to May, 1793     | Government      | 4,549                                   |   |   |
|                             | Individuals     | 6,900                                   | 3,610½  |   |
| May, 1793, to May, 1794     | Government      | 6,000                                   |   |   |
|                             | Individuals     | 28,676                                  | 11,688  |   |
| May, 1794, to May, 1795     | Government      | 3,300                                   |   |   |
|                             | Individuals     | 14,000                                  | None.   |   |
| May, 1795, to October, 1796 | Government      | 1,803                                   |   |   |
|                             | Individuals     | 11,500                                  | 389   |   |
|                             |                 | 79,363                                  | 15,727½   |   |

\* I was absent this year.

*Fruit-trees.*—The sugar-cane of which the different in- Sugar-cane.  
closures are made is extremely luxuriant, and grows to the  
greatest perfection. Some sugar and a small quantity of spirits  
has been made. It is to the great quantity of sugar-cane  
that I attribute the success the inhabitants have met with  
in rearing such a number of swine. The bananas found on Bananas.  
the island, and those brought from the Brazils, grew to a  
very great perfection, the bunches weighing from 40 to 80 lb.  
each. Of guavas and lemons there is a great abundance. The  
apple-trees brought from the Cape in 1791 have borne very  
fine fruit. Two weak coffee-plants, brought in 1791, are now  
healthy trees, bearing upwards of 20 lb. of berries each; from  
the luxuriance of their growth, great quantities might easily  
be raised. Cotton has also done well, altho' but little of it  
has been cultivated, as I am told it is a bad kind. But such  
is the fertility of the soil, and the favourableness of the  
climate, that all European and most tropical productions  
would thrive extremely well if seeds or plants could be  
sent. Miscellaneous  
fruit-trees.

1796  
Oct. 18.  
Live-stock.

Live Stock.

STATEMENT of Live Stock in possession of Government and private individuals.

| To whom belonging.           | Cattle. |    | Horses. |    | Asses. |    | Sheep. | Goats. | Swine. | Poultry.           |
|------------------------------|---------|----|---------|----|--------|----|--------|--------|--------|--------------------|
|                              | M.      | F. | M.      | F. | M.     | F. |        |        |        |                    |
| Government ..                | 3       | 3  | ..      | .. | 2      | 4  | 22     | 55     | 710    | A great abundance. |
| Individuals ..               | ..      | .. | 1       | 2  | ..     | .. | 148    | 328    | 4,125  |                    |
| Increase, living ..          | 3       | 3  | 1       | 2  | 2      | 4  | 170    | 383    | 4,835  |                    |
| Do. killed and taken away .. | ..      | .. | ..      | .. | ..     | .. | 34     | 6      | 4,972  |                    |

Stock killed for food.

Exclusive of the above increase, many of the swine were killed during the scarcity of provisions, from May, 1792, until the following September; since when no reduction has taken place in the established ration (excepting in January, 1794, when I learnt there was no salt provisions in the stores at Port Jackson. As we had at that time eleven months' meat at a full ration, I caused the reduction of 3 lb. a week to be made here to enable me to send a supply in case it should be demanded). That reduced ration continued only four months. From the quantity of grain raised, and other natural resources for breeding swine, that stock increased so much about June, 1793, that I directed swine's flesh to be purchased and issued in lieu of salt provisions, receiving it in such proportions as not to hazard a decrease of the sows, the purchase being occasionally confined to hogs. The quantity purchased and issued up to this date is 236,292 pounds, at 5d. and 6d. p. lb., which has made a saving in the stores of an equal quantity of salt meat, exclusive of 14,408 pounds furnished from Government stock for the same purpose; 286,000 pounds has been killed by individuals for their own use, and 59,980 pounds supplied masters of ship and taken from the island by people returning to Port Jackson, making in the whole 536,700 pounds.

The meat supplies.

The purchase of maize.

When the settlers were informed that payments for the 11,476 bushels of maize which they had lodged in the stores in January, 1794, could not be made until orders were received from England, and that no more grain could be received, but that the purchase of fresh pork would be continued, the course of their industry became changed, altho' raising grain still continued necessary for rearing their stock.

Indigenous plants as food for swine.

On most part of the 9,472 acres not cleared of timber the trees and underwoods are covered with the most succulent

1796  
Oct. 18.

herbage, which, with the fern and other soft roots, afford the best of food for swine. Several individuals have taken advantage of this convenience by inclosing from 10 to 100 acres of the uncleared parts, into which they turn their swine. Several individuals have from 20 to 150 confined in this manner that require no other attention or care than giving them a sufficiency of maize to accustom them to their owners' call.

A great resource for animal food has been found in Phillip Island, which has abounded with the best of food for swine, many having been raised and brought from thence. The great drought during the first part of this year, and the quantity of swine on the island, has destroyed a great part of the weeds and grass on which they fed, insomuch that I found it necessary to get as many from thence as possible. But those that were first sent and their increase are so wild that I do not think they will be easily caught. Several hogs brought from thence have weighed, when fattened, from 180 to 300 lb. An extensive inclosure of 100 acres is made on Norfolk Island, on account of Government, within which there were upwards of 400 swine when counted last month (in September). In this inclosure they are fed with maize, on which, and the herbage, they increase and thrive very well.

Swine on Phillip  
Island.

Making salt and salting pork has been successfully tried in the winter months, but it will not answer in the summer. It is intended to salt all the swine belonging to Government that can be killed during the winter, as I hope a sufficiency of salt will be made to answer that purpose.

Salting pork.

From these resources it may fairly be presumed, if no unforeseen mortality should attack the stock, that the settlers and other individuals will be able to continue supplying the stores with half the ration of animal food, and that Government, in the course of twelve months, may furnish the other half; and if the industry of the settler and other individuals is encouraged, by their overplus grain and animal food being purchased, and that there were more labourers who have a term of years to serve, the produce of the grounds now cleared is more than sufficient for the maintenance of the present inhabitants—337 of whom support themselves without any expence to the Crown, which would be further secured if cattle and sheep could be sent here, as the former are much wanted for labour, and the latter for a change of food, as it is certain that sheep breed as well here as in any part of the world, and have not as yet been subject to distempers common to that kind of stock. The Cape ewes have not bred; but the Bengal ewes year twice in the thirteen months, and have commonly two, often three, and sometimes four lambs at a yearling, which have increased so much in size by being

Food supplies.

Self-support  
by settlers.

1796

Oct. 18.

Goats.

crossed with the Cape ram that a lamb six weeks old is now as large as one of the old ewes brought here in May, 1793.

The goats are extremely prolific, and generally breed thrice in the year. They commonly have from two to four kids at a time.

Any number of sheep, goats, and a quantity of cattle might be bred here, as the cleared grounds afford the best of pasture for these species of stock. But it will be a length of time before the increase of the few cattle, horses, and asses now on the island will be of much use, unless more are sent.

Poultry.

From the small quantity of poultry on the island in November, 1791, so great an abundance has been raised that the quantity taken away since that time is not less than 900 dozen, besides those consumed on the island. Innumerable quantities of fowles and many turkeys are wild in the woods, where they not only breed and increase, but are also of great service in destroying the caterpillars and grubs with which the island was much infested; but during the last three years little or no inconvenience has been felt from them, which I attribute to the swine and wild poultry.

Expense of rations.

It is now eleven months since a full ration, and three years since smaller proportions of fresh pork, has been issued to those victualled from the public stores, the expence of which to the Crown, with the present number of full rations, is thus explained:—

By the receipts, issues, and vouchers, it will appear that from February 19th to May 21st (viz., 3 months), about 480 full rations have been victualled from the stores, at 7 lb. of fresh pork each week. To supply this consumption:—

Cost of food supplies.

|  |       |    |    |
|--|-------|----|----|
| 44,638 lb. of fresh pork have been supplied by individuals   | £     | s. | d. |
| at 6d. per lb., making the sum of .. .. .  | 1,115 | 19 | 0  |
| And that the quantity supplied by Government between the above dates is 6,525 lb., which at 6d. p. lb. makes a saving of .. .. . | 163   | 2  | 6  |

|                   |    |    |    |     |    |   |
|-------------------|----|----|----|-----|----|---|
| Expence quarterly | .. | .. | .. | 952 | 16 | 6 |
|                   |    |    |    |     |    | 4 |

|                |    |    |    |       |   |   |
|----------------|----|----|----|-------|---|---|
| Expence yearly | .. | .. | .. | 3,811 | 6 | 0 |
|----------------|----|----|----|-------|---|---|

|  |     |   |   |
|--|-----|---|---|
| Quantity that may be supplied from Government stock during the remaining 9 months may be about 12,200 lb., which makes a farther saving in the course of the year of .. .. . | 300 | 0 | 0 |
|--|-----|---|---|

|  |    |    |       |   |   |
|--|----|----|-------|---|---|
| Total expences for one year in animal food | .. | .. | 3,511 | 6 | 0 |
|--|----|----|-------|---|---|

|   |    |    |       |   |   |
|---|----|----|-------|---|---|
| Savings made by 350 full rations who support themselves throughout the year in animal food, &c. | .. | .. | 3,185 | 0 | 0 |
|---|----|----|-------|---|---|

The above calculation only respects animal food.



From the preceding statements a calculation may be formed of the number of people Norfolk Island will maintain. And in forming an opinion on this head, I am persuaded that 2,000 people might be maintained almost immediately with grain and a great proportion of animal food; but to keep up a supply of meat, salt provisions would be necessary for the increased number of inhabitants for one or two years, which, with the addition of six or seven hundred ewes, might soon supply that number with animal food, which kind of stock would be much easier raised and with less expence than swine, exclusive of the benefit attending a change of food.

1796  
Oct. 18.  
Capabilities of  
Norfolk Island.

*Manufacture of New Zealand Flax.*—Not more than nine women and thirteen men (mostly invalids) can be employed preparing and manufacturing the flax. If there were slays or reeds, brushes and other articles, indispensibly necessary for flax dressing and weaving, with more people to work the flax, and weavers, this island would require very little assistance in cloathing the convicts; but the only cloth that can be made, for the want of these necessary articles, is a canvas finer than No. 7, which is thought to be equally strong and durable as that made from European flax.

Flax-dressing.

This necessary plant needs no cultivation, yet that experiment has been made, and has answered extremely well, but it is not so much superior to that growing in its natural state as to bestow any pains on its cultivation.

Until the arrival of the two New Zealanders in May, 1793, no desirable progress was made in its manufacture, nor was it without much entreaty that our visitors gave the information we wished. As this work is principally performed by the women in New Zealand, our friends were by no means equal to give us the fullest instructions, yet sufficient was obtained to improve upon.\*

The New  
Zealand natives.

The following is the method practised by the New Zealanders and the people on this island in manufacturing the flax.

When the leaves are gathered, the stalk running through the centre is taken out with the thumb-nail, and the red edges of the leaf are also stripped off. The two parts are then separated in the middle, making four slips of about  $\frac{3}{4}$  of an inch wide, and the length of the leaf, which is from 18 inches to 3 or 4 feet. These slips are cut across the centre with a muscle-shell, but not so deep as to separate the fibres, which is the flax. The slips thus prepared are held in the left hand, with the thumb resting on the upper part of the slip, just above the cut. The muscle-shell, held in the right hand, is placed on the under parts of the slips,

Method of  
manufacturing  
flax.

\* Ante, p. 182.

1796  
Oct. 18.

Improvements  
in manufactur-  
ing flax.

just below the cut ; with the thumb resting on the upper part, the shell is drawn to the end of the slip, which separates the vegetable covering from the flaxen filaments. The slip is turned, and the same operation is performed on the remaining part, which leaves the flax entire. If it is designed for fishing-lines, or other coarse work, nothing more is done to it ; but if intended for cloth, it is twisted and beat a considerable time in a clear stream of water, and, when dried, twisted into such threads as the work requires. I have before observed that our visitors were not very conversant in the mode of preparing the flax, yet sufficient was learnt to improve upon. Instead of working it as soon as gathered, we find it works better to place it in a heap in a close room for five days or a week, by which means it is softer and pleasanter to work. We also find it easier and more expeditious to scrape the vegetable covering from the fibres, which is done with three strokes of a knife ; it is then twisted and put into a tub of water, where it remains until the day's work is finished. The day following it is washed and beat in a running stream. When sufficiently beat, it is dried, and needs no other preparation until it is hackled and spun into yarn for weaving.

Capabilities of  
producing  
merchantable  
articles.

This flax needs no cultivation, as it grows sufficiently abundant on all the cliffs of the island (where nothing else will grow) to give constant employment to five hundred people ; and should it be thought an object, any quantity of canvas, rope, or linen might be made here, provided there was men, women, weavers, flax-dressers, spinners, and ropemakers, with the necessary tools. But as we are destitute of these aids, keeping in practice the few that can be spared from other essential work is all that can be done at present. If a machine could be so constructed as to separate the vegetable covering from the flaxen filaments, any quantity of this useful article might be prepared with great expedition. . . .

PHILIP GIDLEY KING.

#### MINUTE OF THE BOARD OF TRADE.

1797  
Dec. 26.

Whaling in the  
South Seas.

At the Council Chamber, Whitehall, the 26th of December, 1797.

READ—A memorial of the merchant-adventurers in the southern whale-fishery, stating that it is absolutely necessary that the vessels employed on the southern whale-fishery should put into some ports or islands in the Pacific Ocean for the purpose of refreshing their crews, which they are prevented from doing by the war between Great Britain and Spain ; representing, at the same time, that they have strong reason to suppose that the spermaceti whale and seal fishery might be carried on to great advantage at Kerguelen's Land, in the Indian Ocean, off the

coasts of New Holland, the New Hebrides, New Caledonia, New Zealand, the Phillipine Islands, and Formosa, but that by the Act of Parliament of the 35th of his present Majesty, cap. 92, sec. 19,\* such vessels are restrained from proceeding further north than the Equator and further east than 51 degrees of east longitude, and consequently from carrying on the fishery at and near the places above mentioned, where they might procure the refreshments they stand in need of, and consequently escape the risque of capture; and therefore praying that the restriction above mentioned may be taken off, and that a Bill may be immediately brought into Parliament for that purpose, or that such relief may be given them as to the wisdom of Parliament shall seem fit.

1797  
Dec. 26.

35 Geo. iii,  
c. 92.

Statutory  
restrictions.

Ordered—That a copy of the said memorial be transmitted to William Ramsay, Esquire, for the consideration of the Court of Directors of the United Company of Merchants of England trading to the East Indies, with a letter expressing the hope of the Lords of this Committee that the Court of Directors will not be averse to a compliance with the prayer of the memorialists for the benefit of the southern whale-fishery (which is become a very important branch of commerce), as far as they conceive may be done consistently with the security of their commercial rights; and desiring that the Court of Directors will report, with all convenient expedition, their opinion on the subject of the said memorial, suggesting, at the same time, in case of a compliance with the request of the memorialists, such regulations and restrictions as may be thought necessary for preventing the ships engaged in the southern whale-fishery from interfering with any of the essential rights to which the East India Company is entitled under its charter.

The rights of the  
East India  
Company.

#### GOVERNOR HUNTER TO THE DUKE OF PORTLAND.

Sydney, New South Wales,

MY LORD DUKE,—

10th January, 1798.

1798  
Jan. 10.

Since I had the honor of writing your Grace upon the concerns of the colony by the ship *Britannia*† (*via* Canton), duplicates of which letters I herewith transmit, I had occasion to send the small Colonial schooner to Norfolk Island, and I have heard from thence.

\* “An Act for further encouraging and regulating the Southern Whale Fisheries,” passed 22nd June, 1795.—See Raithby’s Statutes at Large, vol. ix, p. 747.

† The *Britannia* sailed from Sydney in company with the *Ganges*, in August, 1797

1798  
Jan. 10.  
Condition of  
Norfolk Island.

The commanding officer\* there complains that they are without wheat, and informs me that the settlers on the island are afraid to risk any attempt to raise that grain, from the ill success which has heretofore attended all their efforts; that in consequence of their endeavours to increase their breed of swine their consumption of maize has been so great that they are become short of that grain also. For these reasons he requests that I will give him a discretional power occasionally to raise the price of fresh pork, by way of encouraging a proper attention to and care of that stock; but this desire I have not judged expedient to comply with, conceiving it may insensibly lead to inconveniences of some extent.

The price of  
pork.

Ship-building.

The settlers have petitioned me to the like effect, and also to be permitted to build a vessel for navigating between the island and this place; but as I do not think the reasons urged in their petition are of sufficient weight, and I suppose that the same rage for traffic which prevails here has already reached that island, and will in due time effect the ruin of the settlers there, as it has done many here, I have positively forbid the building a vessel.

Profits of  
merchants.

Enclosed† is my letter to the commanding officer on the subject of his complaints, and paper No. 2, which I have sent to be made public. They certainly labor under very great inconveniences, and are exposed to numerous impositions in the purchase of such articles as are occasionally sent from hence for sale there; but that is an hardship which I have it not in my power to remedy or remove. True it is that they generally exact an advance of five hundred per cent. upon the price charged here, and that is seldom less than an equal increase on the original value, so that the labour of twelve months will go but very little way in the purchase of those trifling comforts which, until they arrived here, they may have been all their lives accustomed to receive. This, your Grace will see, is a very hard case, and, no doubt, furnishes grounds for discontent.

Advantage of a  
public store.

If what I have said and taken the liberty to suggest in my letter No. 25, relating to the establishment of a public store on account of Government, should be adopted, a branch of that store might be fixed upon Norfolk Island, and I am convinced that Government might be very moderate, and by a very small advantage might, thro' the means of such a store, lessen the expence of maintaining the convicts; and was such a store established, I would recommend that a certain quantity of spirits be sent, for the purpose of putting an entire and decided stop to the importation of that article by any but through the immediate

\* Captain Townson.

† The enclosures are missing.



channel of Government. In short, my Lord, I confess myself at a loss what means to devise for preventing the importation of this article in large quantities by individuals.

The public labor on Norfolk Island, as well as at this place, is now very slowly carried on, for want of a supply of those stores which have been long solicited. At this time, my Lord, I am obliged to order the iron bars from the windows of various buildings to work up into tools and implements of husbandry, and we make nails from old iron hoops. These various wants your Grace will pardon my mentioning so often.

In the accounts received from Norfolk Island, I am informed of an American snow,\* which had refitted here, having called there and landed thirty-five people who had been left at Dusky Bay, in New Zealand, when the ship Endeavour was wrecked there, about twenty months before. As I had long been apprehensive that some of these people might still be in that melancholy situation, upon the master of this American having offered to go thither and take off such people as he might find, and land them upon Norfolk Island, on condition that I would permit his taking from the wreck what stores he might want, I refused my sanction to his taking anything from the wreck, but said he might make what terms he could with the people he might find belonging to her, and that I would give him a letter to the commanding officer upon Norfolk Island to permit his landing these people there. This service he has performed under many difficulties, and has sent me a copy of his agreement with those unfortunate people whose deplorable situation for so long a time had given me much concern.

I have, &c.,  
JNO. HUNTER.

LIEUTENANT-GOVERNOR KING TO SIR JOSEPH BANKS.  
(Banks Papers.)

3, St. George's Square, Portsea,  
DEAR SIR,— 13th February, 1799.

I hope you received my letter of the 11th, which I am rather doubtful of, as you do not mention it in yours which I received to day. As the garden is considerably less than the five tons, not being four, I conclude it will remain; perhaps the bulwark on the quarter being removed, and light low railing in its place, may amend the crankness; and if the Navy Board

1798  
Jan. 10.

Improvising  
implements.

Survivors from  
the Endeavour

landed at  
Norfolk Island.

1799  
Feb. 13.

H.M.S.  
Porpoise.

\* The American vessel was called the *Mercury* (Collins, vol. ii, p. 48). The *Endeavour*, in consequence of her unseaworthy condition, was abandoned at Dusky Bay, by Captain Bampton, in October, 1796.

1799  
Feb. 13.

A gloomy  
prospect.

should judge proper to order the cloathing from the 'tween decks on shore here for some other ship to bring out, then stuff might be put on board to make an inclosure for the greatest part of the plants between decks, for it will be in the passage between the Cape of Good Hope and Van Diemen's Land that the removal of the garden below (or at least its contents) will be an ease to the ship, and of no detriment to the plants. From the ship's sailing and steering so bad there is no other remedy than lengthening her. I do assure you the accounts of the masters of West Indiamen that came round under her convoy from the Downs presents us a gloomy presage of a tedious and long voyage, exclusive of the danger to be apprehended from her being pooped by the heavy seas we must meet on the latter part of the passage, for according to all accounts she absolutely refuses to answer her helm when going anything large.\*

Charts and  
journals.

As I presume Mr. Dalrymple will be with you this morning, may I request you will be so good to tell him that altho' I cannot just yet lay my hand on the N. Zealander's chart, yet he may be assured of it. I wrote to Mr. Nepean about a copy of the French survey of the harbour of Van Diemen's Land that is in Mr. D.'s possession, but have received no answer. If Mr. D. will have the goodness to send my journals and the copy of Bampton's passage to Mr. Sykes's, Arundel-street, it will be forwarded to me; and I think that will be the best way for Cayley's things to be forwarded. He is much rejoiced at his microscope being found. Souter has been extreemly ill during the passage, but the garden has been well attended by Grimwood's man. I think everything looks far better than I expected to find them.

I shall very anxiously expect the returns from the Navy Board to the report gone from here respecting the garden.

I am, &c.,

P. G. KING.

Weight of  
plant-cabin.

*Note in the handwriting of Sir Joseph Banks* :—The exact weight of the garden and every part of it will be reported by this post to be 3 tons 3 cwt. 3 qr. Every box was weighed—tarpauling, gratings, glass, &c. The Commissioners report it to the Board this post. As they were not ordered to report anything but the weight, that only will be done.

Mr. Gelpin says that the weight of the garden will operate in a heel with a force equal to produce  $1\frac{1}{2}$  degrees. The largest heel he has measured was 45 degrees.

\* The Porpoise was eventually replaced by another vessel.

## INSTRUCTIONS TO MAJOR FOVEAUX, ACTING LIEUTENANT-GOVERNOR AT NORFOLK ISLAND.

1800  
June 26.

INSTRUCTIONS for Major Joseph Foveaux, of the New South Wales Corps, appointed to act as Lieutenant-Governor of His Majesty's settlements in Norfolk Island, in the Pacific Ocean, a dependancy on His Majesty's territory of New South Wales.

\* \* \* \*

4th. The productions of all descriptions acquired by the labor of those supported by the Crown is to be considered and accounted for as a public stock, to be appropriated solely for the maintenance and use of those who are unavoidably maintained at the public expence ; the overplus to be reported respectively as pointed out by the second article of these instructions.

The labour of convicts.

You are also to cause the utmost attention to be paid to manufacturing the flax plant into such cloth as can be worn by the convicts, employing all such convict women as are maintained by the public in preparing it, and the weaver who will go with you in manufacturing it ; and you will, as soon as I may hear from you, be provided with such articles as are needful. You are also to allot three acres of ground for the experiment of cultivating the European flax, and manufacturing it, if found preferable to the New Zealand flax ; and also the same quantity of ground for the experiment of cultivating and manufacturing cotton, which may be propagated from that growing on the island and the seeds which you carry with you. You are also furnished with the mode of cultivating that necessary article in the Bahamas. And you are also to encourage, as much as possible, the salting of pork, both from Government stock of swine as well as that of individuals, for the purpose of supplying this place as well as Norfolk Island. And to facilitate this necessary and desirable object, you are herewith furnished with the different modes of salting animal food in warm climates, as well as a plan and directions for making pans to obtain salt from the water by evaporation.

The manufacture of cloth from flax.

The cultivation of European flax and manufacture of cotton.

Preserving pork.

\* \* \* \*

Given under my hand at Sydney, this twenty-sixth day of June, 1800, in the fortieth year of His Majesty's reign.

PHILIP GIDLEY KING.

FROM INDIA GOVERNMENT OFFICIALS TO GOVERNOR KING.  
(King Papers.)

HON'BLE SIR,— Fort William, 18th December, 1800.

Dec. 18.

The most noble the Governor-General in Council had the honor to address His Excellency the late Governor of New

1800  
Dec. 18.

Convicts  
resorting to  
India.

South Wales, on the 3rd of July last, and to communicate His Lordship's sentiments respecting the resort to India of persons transported as convicts from the British dominions in Europe to New South Wales. His Lordship at the same time advised His Excellency of the measures which this Government had judged it necessary to adopt for preventing such persons from establishing themselves in any part of the British possessions in India.

2. The Governor-General in Council has since had the honor to receive a letter dated the 15th March last, from His Excellency the late Governor, in reply to the letter addressed to him by His Lordship in Council, under date the 11th November, 1799.

Penalty bonds.

3. Although your Excellency is precluded by your instructions from detaining convicts after the expiration of the term of their transportation, the Governor-General in Council is persuaded that important advantages would result from the adoption of the measures which His Lordship in Council has suggested of requiring the commanders of ships authorized to proceed from New South Wales to India (previous to their being permitted to receive on board of their ships in any capacity persons who have been convicts) to enter into penalty bonds not to permit any such persons to land in any part of India. The Governor-General in Council therefore begs to repeat his request that your Excellency will be pleased to require the suggested engagement from the commanders of the ships in question, untill the resort of convicts to India shall be effectually prevented by the interposition of the authority of the Legislature.

Expirees land  
in Fort William.

4. Besides the persons from Botany Bay who had clandestinely established themselves in India, as specified in the list transmitted to the late Governor, twenty-two persons who had been convicts, transported to New South Wales for a certain term of years, and a convict of the name of Elliott who had been transported for life, were lately landed at Fort William from the ship Hunter, commanded by William Hingston.

The Hunter and  
her commander  
seized.

5. William Hingston not appearing to possess any authority from the Hon'ble the Court of Directors for repairing with his ship to India, the Governor-General in Council deemed it proper to direct the person of William Hingston and the ship Hunter to be seized, and to order the necessary legal proceedings to be instituted for the purpose of having the ship condemned and adjudged to the Company, and of obtaining a decree for the penalties prescribed by the Act of Parliament in cases of ships and persons engaged in an illicit trade to India in violation of the chartered rights of the Hon'ble East India Company.

Ships to be  
licensed.

6. The Governor-General in Council judged it to be indispensably necessary to adopt these measures with a view to pre-



vent in future any ships, not licensed by the Company or by their Governments, from repairing from New South Wales to any of the British possessions in India, and we request that your Excellency will not permit any ships to proceed from New South Wales to India excepting such as shall have been so licensed. To permit a free intercourse between India and New South Wales would be productive of the most dangerous consequences to the interests of the Company and of the British nation in India, by affording the means of introducing into India a succession of Europeans who might gradually establish themselves, and colonize these possessions under circumstances destructive of the fundamental policy of which the Legislature has established the whole system of our empire in Asia.

1800  
Dec. 18.  
Free  
intercourse  
disadvan-  
tageous.

7. Subsequently to the institution of the proceedings against him, William Hingston represented that he proceeded to Bengal, not only with the sanction of His Excellency, the late Governor of New South Wales, but with his immediate approbation, for the purpose of conveying to New South Wales articles required for the use of the colony. The Governor-General in Council therefore directed the proceedings against William Hingston to be discontinued, and His Lordship has permitted him to return to New South Wales with any such articles the exportation of which from Bengal shall not have been prohibited.

Governor  
Hunter's  
sanction.

It is not the intention of the Governor-General in Council, by restricting the intercourse between India and New South Wales, to preclude that colony from being furnished with any supplies which it may require from India. His Lordship in Council will be happy to concert with your Excellency the best means of furnishing the colony with those supplies in any manner that may appear most expedient consistently with the necessary precautions for preventing persons who have been convicts at [New] South Wales from resorting to India.

Indian trade  
with New South  
Wales.

We have, &c.,

WELLESLEY.

ALURED CLARKE.

P. SPEKE.

GOVERNOR KING TO MARQUIS WELLESLEY. (King Papers.)

MY LORD,— New South Wales, 2nd October, 1801.

1801  
Oct. 2.

I had the honor of receiving your Excellency's Despatch in Council by the Hunter bark, dated 18th December last.\*

I hope my several letters by the Trimmer, Anne, and John have arrived. Duplicates thereof I have the honor to enclose,

\* Ante, p. 221.

1801  
Oct. 2.  
Escapes to  
India.

from which it will appear I have paid the utmost attention to your wishes respecting the prevention of convicts, and those who ever have been convicts, going in ships bound to India; and the masters giving penalty bonds for such of the latter description as may go from hence.

A dishonest  
captain.

The conduct of William Hingston,\* mentioned in your Excellency's letter, has been so extremely dishonest, that I have directed the proprietor of the ship Hunter (which he was entrusted with) to state his case in the enclosed affidavit, by which you will perceive that the representation he made respecting having Governor Hunter's leave to return here with a cargo from Bengal, was framed to serve his own purpose, as he had no other authority than to touch at New Zealand for a cargo of masts, and to sell the ship at Bengal as a prize. In this place it is necessary I should possess your Excellency of that article of His Majesty's instructions relative to vessels not being allowed to have any intercourse with India from hence, and when I assure your Excellency of my strict adherence to that instruction, I hope no faith will be put in the declaration of any people who may eventually take any vessel from hence without my permission in writing, which will never be granted except in such cases of necessity as are at present unforeseen.

His false  
statement.

Intercourse  
with India.

Emigration to  
India.

I feel much obliged to your Excellency's wish to promote the interests of this colony, and you may rest assured that no exertion shall be wanting on my part to prevent the emigration of any description of people from this colony to any port of India.

I am, &c.,

PHILIP GIDLEY KING.

---

#### STATE OF HIS MAJESTY'S SETTLEMENTS IN NEW SOUTH WALES. (Extract.)

Dec. 31.  
The whale  
fishery.

31st December, 1801.

RESPECTING the whale-fishery on this coast, it has certainly succeeded so far that three ships have gone home loaded with spermaceti oil, *i.e.*, Eliza, Britannia, and Albion. Six are now on the coast and off the north end of New Zealand. When last heard of they had various success. Some had upwards of 600 barrels (70 tons). Every ship that comes here, and indeed our Colonial vessels, always see great quantities of whales; but the objection on the part of the masters of the whalers is the frequent gales of wind that happen on this coast. However, as it is certain that whales may be caught in great plenty here, this coast

\* William Hingston was master of the Hunter. The enclosure is not available.

will generally be preferred to the coast of Peru in war time, and even in peaceable times. The run by Van Dieman's Land is less destroying in wear and tear than by Cape Horn, which will not only give the whaler the chance of bringing prisoners and stores out, but also inable them to try this coast before they go to the coast of Peru.

1801  
Dec. 31.

PHILIP GIDLEY KING.

GEORGE BASS TO CAPTAIN WATERHOUSE.

Venus, in Matavai Bay, Otaheite,

My MUCH ESTEEMED FRIEND,— 30th January, 1802.

1802  
Jan. 30.

I never let pass an opportunity to write and inform you of the progress, crooked it must be confessed, of our commercial perigrinations. In Oct. I informed you at Port Jackson of all our transactions up to that period, and likewise laid before you the . . . \* of our plan of this voyage for pork, which we are now employed in performing; and as far as things have hitherto gone our prospects are fully equal to our expectations.

A commercial  
speculation.

Nov. 21 we left Port Jackson; in 14 days reached Dusky Bay in New Zealand, whither we went for the purpose of cutting timber for planks to make into pork chests, since Gov'r King was unable to find casks enough to complete our hold. In 14 days more we had cut our timber, and had picked up from on board a large ship† that has been left deserted there for some years, some few trifles of ship's stores and unwrought iron which will turn to some account at our forge here. Sailing from Dusky Bay we steered for Otaheite, and arrived here on the 24th instant.

The Venus in  
Dusky Bay.

Gov'r King has here at this time a small Colonial brig‡ for the purpose of curing pork, but we find the island yet so abundant in hogs we have determined to set up an establishment here which will aim at curing about two-fifths of our whole cargo, for which we have salt enough with us. Bishop§ stays here with the party; I go on with the brig to the Sandwich Islands, and there endeavour to fill all the rest of the casks; so that we hope to complete the cargo in much less time by work-

Hogs at  
Otaheite.

Salting pork.

\* Word illegible.

† The Endeavour, Captain Bampton, wrecked off the New Zealand coast in September, 1795, and beached at Facile Harbour, Dusky Bay. Ante, pp. 204 and 219.

‡ This was the Norfolk, previously known as the Harbinger.

§ Bishop was Bass's partner.

Jan. 30.

ing at one part of it on Otaheite, and the other at the Sandwich Islands, than if we kept ourselves together at either of those places. It is not for the hogs alone we find it necessary to go to the latter place; it is for salt, which the former produces not, and which we must have.

The chief of  
Otaheite.

The Chief of the Island is our good friend, and will remain so as long as we shall want a friend here, because he knows we have much property of well assorted Indian trade, which Gov'r King's stores will not afford until fresh supplies duly selected shall arrive from England. We have been enabled to make him a very magnificent Indian present, which has won his avaricious disposition over to us; and I have engaged to bring him from Owhyhee some valuable things from his brother, Chief Tameha Meha, the king of that island, so that he has much yet to gain by his attention to our establishment. This is Pomarre, who you may have read of in Cook's voyage, the father of the present Otoo, or minor king, who is, by the way, the most drunken profligate you ever knew, and calls himself forsooth the Prince of Wales, as if our princes got drunk like beasts, &c., &c. He may indeed be a caricature of our Prince!

The Prince of  
Wales.

Pomarre has given us one of his own houses on Pt. Venus, which was removed to the spot we fixed upon as most convenient for our work. We have in short everything we ask for that he can give. He is a great and troublesome beggar to us, and we spare him not on our side. Whatever we give to each other is not a loss to either, for we square the value in the returning present. Our great present for example costs us about 6 guineas in England, but when he comes to square it in return, he will give 50, 60, or 80 large hogs; so that it is in reality more like buying and selling than making presents to each other.

*Quit pro quo.*

Superabund-  
ance of food.

We cannot help comparing the starving condition of England with the superabundance of food in this island. Our house is built among cocoanut trees and bread-fruit trees, and of the latter article—within a stone's throw—more than w'd supply 500 men for a month. The profusion at this, the bread-fruit season, is amazing, and the natives are idle in proportion. But I shall say nothing of Otaheite now that so much has already been said. The missionaries (poor creatures), our countrymen, are very civil and friendly in their little way.

Messages of  
affection.

Mrs. Waterhouse will please accept my kind love, as well as all my sisters and brothers. My wife Bess I write to, as also to my friend Capt. W. I would joke Bess upon the attractive charms of Otaheitian females, but that they have been so much belied in their beauty, that she m't think me attracted in good earnest. However, she has nought to fear here.

Adieu my dear friend, adieu.

GEORGE BASS.



## EX-GOVERNOR HUNTER TO UNDER-SECRETARY KING.

1802

March 22.

DEAR SIR,—

No. 40, Cornhill, 22nd March, 1802.

I had the honor of receiving your letter of the 20th, on the subject of the ships intended to be sent out each spring and autumn, with convicts, to New South Wales, a plan which I am glad to find adopted,\* as I am sure it will be attended with very considerable accommodation to the inhabitants of that colony.

With respect to such articles as that settlement in its present state can best furnish as a return by those ships to this country, I would recommend the sending back such timber as may be thought fit for naval purposes, of which I think there are several kinds, viz., that called by us stringybark. It is something similar to the teak of India, and is, in general, sound.

*The box-tree.*†—This is a straight, sound, and compact timber, and there was much of it in the neighbourhood of Parramatta and Portland Place. The crooked limbs of most of the gum-trees, when sound, are very fit for ship timbers or ribs, and are uncommonly durable. The fact I proved by the raising the frame of a vessel of 160 tons, which, for want of strength, I could not finish before I left the country, but she stood in frame, exposed to the weather, upwards of two years without the smallest appearance of any decay.

There is also a tree there called *cedar*,‡ but it is a sort of coarse mahogany. The swamp or *she-oak*,§ more frequently called *beef-wood*: This is a beautiful wood, and highly ornamental in cabinet work, much admired in this country. I think that would be a valuable return. I must here observe that as most of the timber in that country is very heavy, and will not swim (the cedar excepted), and as it may be necessary sometimes to carry it some distance by water, crafts for that purpose must be built without loss of time. If the timber happens to be cut at Botany Bay or Broken Bay the ship can go into those harbours and receive it.

If coals—of which there is abundance at Hunter's River, a small harbour 22 leagues to the northward of Port Jackson—shall be approved as a return, small crafts must be built and kept constantly going, for the purpose of making a deposit at Sydney. When I mention coals I do not mean them as a return to this country, but that an agreement might be made hereafter

\* The plan referred to was to send out the convicts in King's ships at stated periods of the year. The letter to Hunter of the 20th March, 1802, is missing.

† *Eucalyptus hemiphylora*, F. v. M. ‡ *Cedrela australis*, F. v. M.

§ *Casuarina suberosa*, and other spp.

1802  
March 22.

with the Dutch Government at the Cape of Good Hope, where fuel is so very scarce, and so very expensive; and that they should in return send by a ship *of their own*, if it can be so settled, live cattle to Port Jackson; or, if more approved, they might send sugar from the colony of Batavia, with such other Indian goods as the Government here might consent to have the colony supplied with. This would, no doubt, relieve the expenses of the settlement, and very much add to the comfort of its labouring inhabitants.

If the timber to be sent from New South Wales should not be approved in our dockyards, it would be found a convenient and valuable article for fuel or other purposes at the Cape, which lays so conveniently in the route homeward.

Tanning.

Most of the trees in New South Wales afford a bark which is strongly astringent, and answers well for tanning leather. This I have tried in the colony, and found it succeed well.

Sealing.

Small vessels would be convenient in the proper seasons amongst the islands off the south part of the coast, where they sometimes find many seals; but this kind of business would be better in the hands of private individuals, if permitted to build vessels fit for such purpose.

The flax-plant.

The native flax—a good sort—grows with considerable luxuriance in its wild state in different parts of the colony, but particularly on the banks of the Hawkesbury River. Should the frequent floods there occasion the abandoning of any of those farms, the flax would be cultivated on that ground with much advantage, and the floods would probably be less ruinous to that article than they have to our corn or wheat fields.

Wool.

The sheep bred in that country produce good wool. Might not the raw material be purchased up there and sent Home to be manufactured for the use of the convicts?

Tobacco.

That country produces tobacco very well from the seed which has been carried there. I am the more surprized at the prices paid in the colony for that article, whilst such numbers were employed in farming.

Indigo.

Indigo grows spontaneously in New South Wales, particularly near the eastern farms, and might no doubt be cultivated with advantage. All these things I have mentioned as matters which, in my travels through that country, have fallen under my own observation, and I do it merely to show that in due time much may be done to lessen the expences of that settlement; but at the same time I conceive the timber and coals may be found the only articles by which a part of its expences may be immediately relieved.

The timber.

In speaking of the timber of New South Wales, and of its ability for naval purposes, I confine myself to what experience

I had of it in His Majesty's ship *Reliance* whilst under my command.

1802  
March 22.

In 1797, on a passage from the Cape of Good Hope to New South Wales in a calm, three heavy seas broke on board the ship, smashed the jolly boat (over the stern) to pieces, stove the cabin dead-light in, &c., &c., which, together with gales of wind, afterwards shook the ship so much, and put her in so leaky a state that it was necessary to give her a very considerable repair, to do which the carpenter thought it necessary to put eight riders in of a side, from the gunwale down to the keelson, each in one piece, which was done, together with relaying the decks, repairing the top sides, and new waterways, from the wood of the country, and from trees fallen near where the ship lay. I afterwards made several voyages to and from Norfolk Island, and made a winter's passage round Cape Horn to St. Helena, and from thence to England, during which time, though the ship encountered many heavy gales and laboured much, not one of the riders either shrunk, rent, or, when I left the ship in 1801, were in the least decayed. The ship is now lying at Sheerness (a receiving ship), where those riders may be seen, as well as the plank sheers, waterways, &c., which were put in her from the wood of that country.

The *Reliance*  
in a gale.

Repairs with  
Colonial timber.

I must here remark that we had not any paint in the ship, or anything that could tend to preserve the wood in a warm and afterwards in a very cold climate. It is therefore in the same state as when cut down in the woods, and was not seasoned as ship timber in general is. It will be necessary to observe that there is so much resinous gum in the wood that it appears to be impervious to water, for many logs, in the first forming the settlement in 1788, were cut down and rolled into the water (salt), to clear the land, which logs, when taken up again in 1798, were as sound as when cut down—not the smallest appearance of decay. The stumps of which trees were blown with gunpowder, bored with holes, and filled with mud and water, and of course constantly exposed to the weather; after remaining in this state more than eleven years, no appearance of decay showed itself. I am therefore induced to think the wood of New South Wales more durable than oak or the teak. Masts have been made of it, and very fully approved of by the commanders of the different vessels in which they were put. In His Majesty's ship *Buffalo*, which returned from New South Wales, there is a mizenmast and bowsprit made of the wood of New South Wales. The commander of her so much approved of the bowsprit that he solicited the officers of the yard not to replace it, and has sailed again for New South Wales with it in. On being got out for the purpose of being examined, it *floats*.

Exposure of  
timber to  
weather.

No decay in  
eleven years.

- 1802  
March 22.  
A hard timber. The mizenmast was kept by the officers of Portsmouth yard, and is now there for inspection.
- Abundance of timber. When this wood has been used for planking a ship, it has been found of so hard a nature that a scraper would hardly touch it, and a nail drove in, the carpenter of the *Reliance* said, they could not get out again. The bolts now in the riders of the *Reliance* will most probably confirm the assertion.
- Water carriage. The carpenters, when in getting the timber for the repairs of the *Reliance*, stated that the timber necessary was in great abundance, but they were sometimes obliged to go for the crooked timbers that exactly suited their purpose some distance, but the ship was then lying alongside the rocks in the town of Sydney. Any quantity of strait or crooked timber was to be got close to the water's edge (I mean fit for naval purposes) through the whole harbour of Port Jackson, which is nearly seventeen miles in length, with almost numberless coves on each side, the parts cleared for cultivation being in general some distance inland. Rough timber may be fashioned where the tree is fallen, and in the heaviest gale of wind a small boat can go to any part of the harbour, it being in general considerably less than a quarter of a mile wide ; consequently, water carriage is always certain.
- Ship-building. If plank was necessary for the wales, or any other part of a ship, the pit could be made under the tree where fallen, and the plank cut out and shaded till seasoned. It is customary to do so in that country, the land being unoccupied, and for more than twelve miles a ship of 500 tons can be moored where most convenient for receiving spars, timber, or plank. Made masts could be finished in the woods, and be brought down in separate pieces to the water side. Anchor stocks, or yard-arm pieces could be furnished in the same way, and capstans, cross-trees, and bill-heads, with a certainty of their answering the purpose for which they were intended. Such timbers, from the growth of the trees, might be selected here as would more effectually secure the planks to the stern and stern posts of a ship.
- Ship-building at New Zealand. Ships were sent from India to New Zealand, when they left people while they disposed of their cargo at Port Jackson, who, during the time they were there, cut as many spars as they wanted, and in two instances built schooners of 50 tons, one of which was at Port Jackson when I left it ; the other was, I believe, taken to Batavia.
- Ships' boats. The boats of the *Reliance*—which, I believe, are now at Deptford—were built by the crew of the *Reliance*, many of which, under the superintendence of the carpenter of the ship, with a like encouragement, fellers, sawyers, and carpenters, sufficient for any rough work.



The coast on each side Port Jackson is almost a mass of coal. In Hunter's River, to the north of Port Jackson, the boats frequently went to load with coal for the purpose of supplying the ships in Port Jackson going to India as an article for sale. They usually broke it from the cliffs with a pickaxe into the boat, or got it from an island mostly composed of coal, lying at the mouth of the river. There are so many specimens of this coal in England that its qualities are known, and, I believe, considered very fine. If the coal-tar is considered any object, any quantity might be provided from this coal, and I apprehend the cinders, after the tar is extracted, would answer every purpose of an iron foundry, which might be carried on to any extent Government wished, the country abounding with so much of that ore.

1802  
March 22.  
Coal

and iron.

On Norfolk Island the pine tree exudes a great quantity of turpentine from its bark, quantities of which might be collected at the proper season by scarifying the bark as well as spars. I am not sufficiently informed to what extent the flax plant of that island may be made useful. There is a great quantity of it, and I have seen some canvas made from it used as ships' light sails.

The Norfolk  
Island pine and  
flax.

I should suppose a ship going direct to New South Wales with convicts, and to return with a cargo of timber (if timely information had been given that it might be ready for them) could perform the voyage in twelve months. The constant prevailing westerly wind will always insure a passage; or if necessary to send timber to the West Indies, the passage would be much shortened.

The voyage to  
Sydney.

In times of war those ships could bring many men for the service of His Majesty's fleet from the emancipated convicts. Most of those I found it necessary to enter on board His Majesty's ship *Reliance* turned out useful men. How many may be got I cannot say, but I should suppose some hundreds, and as the colony increases their number must increase. The East India Company did send officers there to recruit their army, but I believe were prevented.\*

Convicts as  
recruits for  
Navy.

The sassafras wood is there in great plenty, which is, I understood, not only for medicinal purposes, but for other uses, an object of commerce.

\* Hunter was in charge at Sydney when these officers arrived, and it was he who refused to allow them to enlist recruits until the decision of the Secretary of State was known. He was subsequently informed by the Duke of Portland that he was right in this action, and that permission could not be granted, as it was "conceived that, upon the whole, the inconveniences of such a plan would more than balance its advantages."

1802

March. 22.

Colonial timber  
for gun  
carriages.

I should suppose the wood of New South Wales would have a superiority over what I have generally seen in use for gun carriages, as the constant friction during the time of action, exercising the guns, washing the decks, and the various occasions there are for running guns in and out, wears the trucks and axle trees very much, which is more particularly experienced on foreign voyages, not being able to replace them. The wood of New South Wales, when used as cogs to wheels in various mills used here, do not suffer from friction. Gun carriages, from their being so frequently washed, I believe, tends to their decay, which, together with the friction, tho' not rendering them useless, it still prevents their being worked with facility, easily painted, or rendered of that general utility they might, had not the wood been worn away, which so much impedes their traversings.

Decay in time  
of peace.

I have understood in times of peace, when gun carriages are laid up in the different gun wharfs, that with all the precaution of painting them, &c., it is not found sufficient to prevent many becoming useless. The wood of New South Wales will certainly bear friction and stand the weather. I should suppose slides for carronades made from that wood would more fully answer the purpose.

Miscellaneous  
uses.

In machines used in dockyards, where a great deal of friction takes place, I think that wood would be found highly serviceable. It sometimes happens in a ship that a block is obliged to be so placed that the rope leading through lays against the check of it. That wood would not be so liable to be chafed in wet weather.

Magazines, if lined with that wood, would be less damp than sometimes it is found to be; and I apprehend it would have similar advantages if the bread-rooms of ships were built of that wood.

Convicts who from their crimes have forfeited their labour to Government might be employed in preparing any quantity of those articles.

I have, &amp;c.,

JOHN HUNTER.

GOVERNOR KING TO THE DUKE OF PORTLAND.\* (King Papers.)

Sydney, New South Wales,

29th March, 1802.

March 29.

The Lady  
Nelson.

MY LORD,—

The vessel in which L't McKellar takes his passage, not being ready to sail before to-morrow, enables me to inform

\* A letter of similar purport was also sent by Governor King to Secretary Nepean, of the Admiralty.

your Grace that the Lady Nelson returned here on the 23rd instant, having been absent five months executing the service I had the honor to inform your Grace of in a former letter. With this I transmit Acting-L't Murray's journal, and copies of his charts of discoveries he has made in the straits that separate New Holland from Van Dieman's Land, and although the bad weather and contrary winds he met with has prevented him from executing the orders he sailed under so fully as might have been wished, yet I hope his survey of the east and north coasts of King's Island, lying in the center of the west entrance of the straits, and having described another very noble and spacious harbour (Port Phillip) within the straits, which are both so fully described in his journal and the charts, with the other objects of his researches, will serve to assure your Grace that no time has been lost in putting His Majesty's Instructions on that behalf into execution; and as Mr. Murray, who has served eight years in the Navy, and passed for a lieutenant, has acquitted himself very much to my satisfaction and, I trust, to the public advantage in what he has done, I hope there will be no impropriety in my respectfully requesting your Grace's recommendation for his being confirmed as a Lieut't in the Royal Navy, and appointed to the command of the Lady Nelson.

1802  
March 29.

Acting  
Lieutenant  
Murray's  
discoveries in  
Bass Strait.

Port Phillip.

King's eulogy  
of Murray.

I am sorry the vessel's sailing so soon prevents those surveys being connected with the other parts of the straits; but if the charts and journals now sent, and those constructed before the Lady Nelson's return, are put into the hands of Mr. Dalrymple, hydrographer to the Admiralty, a chart sufficiently correct may be compiled therefrom for present purposes until further discoveries are made, which chart will be of the utmost service to ships coming here from England.

An incomplete  
survey.

A serviceable  
chart.

I have sent the accompanying packet to the secretary of the Admiralty, which I have left open for your Grace's perusal.

The Lady Nelson continues in excellent condition, and only wants a partial caulking and new sails (the latter of which I shall hardly be able to supply her with for the want of canvas) to proceed on further service.

Condition of the  
Lady Nelson.

This detention also gives me an opportunity of informing your Grace of the Colonial schooner's return from Norfolk Island on the 25th instant. A copy of the L't-Govr's public letter and returns I have the honor to enclose, by which you will observe the great success the South Sea whalers have had off Norfolk Island and New Zealand.

The whaling  
industry.

I have, &c.,

PHILIP GIDLEY KING.

1802

May 21.

Questions to  
navigators.

GOVERNOR KING TO MESSRS. TURNBULL, QUESTED, AND GARDINER.

GENTLEMEN,—

Sydney, 21st May, 1802.

One of you having been two whalers' voyages to this coast, another having been a considerable time on the coast, and the other making his voyage, I have to request you will inform me of your opinion and answers to the enclosed queries, in replying to which you will use the maturest and most deliberate consideration.

I am, &amp;c.,

PHILIP GIDLEY KING.

QUERIES by Governor King to Messrs. Turnbull, Qusted, and Gardiner, masters of the South Sea whalers Britannia, Speedy, and Venus, of London.

*Answers.**1st.*The route to  
the South Sea.

Which do you think the best way of getting into the South Sea, with respect to the wear and tear of your ships and the health of your crews, either by Cape Horn or by Van Dieman's Land?

*1st.*

We think the passage round by Van Dieman's Land is much the easiest, with respect to the vessel, &c., and health of the crew.

*2nd.*The coasts of  
South America  
and New  
Zealand.

What difference is there in the weather on this coast and that of New Zealand, as far north as your present limits, and the weather on the opposite coast, in the same parallels of latitude?

*2nd.*

Within the same parallels, on both coasts, the weather is boisterous, but with this difference, that on the coast of Chili and Peru the gales are steady, and this coast variable and attended with squally weather and a great sea; but off New Zealand the weather and sea is as favorable as on the coasts of Peru and Chili.

*3rd.*

A comparison.

What difference in time do you imagine there is in getting a voyage on this coast and New Zealand, or on the coast of Chili, Peru, Mexico, and California?

*3rd.*

The example of ships fishing on this coast proves that there is no material difference in time.

*4th.*The whale  
fisheries

Do you think any advantage would attend the fishery by being allowed to go as far to the northward on this side the Pacific as you are permitted to go on the east side?

*4th.*

We have always observed the spermaceti whales going in large shoales to the northward, and are certain, from our experience, that great quantities must resort about the Hebrides and New Guinea.



5th.

From the experience and success you and others have had in fishing on this coast, and off New Zealand, do you think it would be to the interest of the adventurers in the South-Sea fishery persevering in sending their ships entirely to this coast for spermaceti oil?

6th.

How far do you think the adventurers would be advantaged by their ships coming first to this coast and New Zealand, then running to the coast of Peru and completing their voyage there in peacable times?

7th.

What has been the general state of your ships company's health, and how far have you been benefitted by the refreshments you have obtained here and at Norfolk Island?

8th.

Any other information respecting the fishery on these coasts which can be communicated will be transmitted to Government, and some of the principal adventurers in the South-Sea fishery.

Given under our hands, at Sydney, in New South Wales, this 21st day of May, 1802.

ROBERT TURNBULL.

GEORGE QUESTED.

BARNABUS GARDINER.

The following particulars of the three whalers, Britannia, Speedy, and Venus, lying in Sydney and mentioned here as having visited the New Zealand coast, are extracted from the Historical Records of New South Wales and placed upon record [THE EDITOR]:—

Arrival, April 30, 1802; ship's name, Speedy; master's name, G. Quested; build, British; tons, 313; men, 24; where and when built, London, 1779; where and when registered,

5th.

We think, for the reasons stated in the answer to the 1st quere, that it would be to the interest of the owners sending their ships here first, and making up the voyage, if necessary, on the opposite coast, or running to New Guinea, if allowed, and then the opposite coast to complete the voyage.

1802

May 21.

in Australian waters.

6th.

Answered by the former.

The southern whale fisheries

7th.

Our ships company's have been in good health, neither of us having lost a man. Respecting refreshments we have had more plentiful and cheap supplies at Norfolk Island than at this place, but at both we have had sufficient to keep our crews in good health.

Health of the crews.

8th.

We know of no other particular information, except that a very great advantage would be derived by the limits being extended on this side the Pacific Ocean to the Equator, and the longitude of 130° east of Greenwich.

Additional information.

1802  
May 21.

London, 1791; owners, Enderbys; cargo, 170 tons sperm oil.

Arrival, May 12, 1802; ship's name, Britannia; master's name, R. Turnbull; build, British; tons, 301; guns, 6; men, 24; where and when built, C. of Dorset, 1783; where and when registered, London, 1787; owners, Enderbys; cargo, 1,300 bar. oil.

Arrival, May 10, 1802; ship's name, Venus; master's name, B. Gardner; build, British; tons, 295; guns, 10; men, 24; where and when built, Deptford, 1788; where and when registered, London, 1800; owners, Champions; cargo, 550 bar. oil.

Their former movements to and from Sydney, compiled from the above source, were as follows [THE EDITOR]:—

Speedy: Arrival, Jan. 1, 1801; cargo, 300 bar. oil; departure, Feb. 4, 1801; arrival, July 11, 1801; cargo, 72 tons oil; departure, Aug. 8, 1801.

Britannia: Arrival, Mar. 26, 1801; cargo, gen. merch.; departure, May, 1801; arrival, Oct. 19, 1801; cargo, 550 bar. oil; departure, Nov. 3, 1801.

Venus: Arrival, Sept. 16, 1801; cargo, gen. merch.; departure, Oct. 13, 1801.

---

#### GOVERNOR KING TO SIR JOSEPH BANKS.

June 5.

DEAR SIR,—

5th June, 1802.

The Lady  
Nelson sent to  
Bass Strait.

By Capt. McKellar you will have learned that I retained the Lady Nelson 'till November, when, finding the Investigator did not arrive, I was unwilling to lose so much of the summer, and sent her to the Straits, expecting she might fall in there with the Inves'r. The young man\* who commands her did very well. He remained out from 9th Nov. till 28th March, and as I had closed my despatches I could say but little about what he had done at that time. However, I now have the plea-

The information  
gained.

sure of saying that in this trip he ascertained everything on the east, north, and S.E. sides of King's Island, which he made a very good sketch of, as well as the passage through and coves in Kent's Group. He also discovered a spacious harbour about six leagues to the westward of Western Port which I named Port Phillip, after my worthy and dear friend the Admiral, who until now has not had his name bestowed on either stick

Port Phillip.

\* Acting-Lieutenant John Murray.

or stone in the colony. I have sent Mr. Murray's journal to the Adm'ty, with a chart\* containing his discoveries, together with his tracks and those of other vessels that have passed thro' the Straits. I have also sent a letter respecting the *Naturaliste*, which arrived here April 24th, and Investigator, 9th May. Under the persuasion that you will see that letter, either at the Adm'ty or Whitehall, I shall say nothing more about it, as the whaler this goes by is in a great hurry to get home before winter, that you may not be left in darkness. The Investigator is refitting, and will sail, I hope, in a month, accompanied by the Lady Nelson, which is, and has been, a most valuable vessel to this colony and the service she is going on; and as the young man who commands her has passed for a lieutenant, and has hitherto acquitted himself much to my satisfaction (considering he is neither astronomer or surveyor, but aspires to both), should it occur, and an opportunity happen, I shall be much obliged by your saying a word in his favour at the Admiralty. I have wrote particularly about him in my letter to the Admiralty. As Captain Flinders will tell his own story what he has done, I think, if no accidents happen in the business he has to perform, that a complete survey will be made. The *Naturaliste* did not remain here more than fourteen days. We expect the *Geographe* here also. The Commander has been looking for the *Naturaliste*, and she for him. Rendezvous they had none, for while the *Naturaliste* was here Flinders met the *Geographe* six degrees to the westward of Basses Straits. Previous to the *Naturaliste*'s sailing we had an imperfect account of peace.

By Captain Flinders I received yours of June 22nd and July 8th.† With your usual goodness you inform me of the advantageous reports made of me. As it is my only study to merit your approbation, and as for others I am callous to what those about me say and think. There are two things that set me much at variance with those about me—first, my determination that the public shall not be cheated; and next, that the King's authority shall not be insulted. I could enlarge very much; however, trusting you will see my dispatches, I must refer you to them. The former system of monopoly and extortion I hope are now eradicated. Of spirits I think the inundation is going off, and industry begins to know her produce will not be sacrificed to the infamous wretches that have preyed on the vitals of this colony.

1802

June 5.

Le *Naturaliste*  
and the  
Investigator.

The  
Investigator  
refitting.

Lieutenant  
Grant.

Prospects of  
Flinders's  
survey

Le *Naturaliste*  
and  
Le *Geographe*.

King desirous  
of Banks's  
approbation.

His motives.

Monopoly and  
extortion.

\* Unfortunately this chart is not available. The journal, as already stated, will be found in Labilliere's *Early History of the Colony of Victoria*, vol. i, p. 72 *et seq.*

† These two letters are not available.

1802

June 5.

A new  
settlement.

The live-stock.

I have begun a new settlement\* eight miles to the northward of Parramatta, which is doing extremely well. The country and soil is well adapted for cultivation and grazing, and extends equally good as far as the Hawkesbury. Our herds of tame cattle are increasing so fast that we are obliged to be constantly erecting new stockyards. This species of stock thrive wonderfully well.

Natural history  
specimens.An aboriginal's  
skull.Ensign  
Barrallier.

Caley's tour.

Mineral  
discoveries.

I do not recollect what things I sent by the Buffalo besides the duck-bill, the Spanish wool, and Cayley's boxes. The first I hope got safe and perfect, as no pains or spirits were spared to preserve it. I will enquire respecting the other species, and do as you desire. I sent some rubbish by the Albion which I hope you received safe. I send by this conveyance the articles named in the enclosed list. The printed paper will explain how I came by the head. The bearer of it you will find mentioned in Collins's books. Altho' a terrible pest to the colony, he was a brave and independent character. Understanding that the possession of a New Hollander's head is among the desiderata, I have put it in spirits and forward it by the Speedy. I also send a box containing specimens of the fustic which grows in great abundance at the Coal Harbour or Hunter's River. Respecting the salt, I believe the specimens Governor Hunter gave you were good ones. I now send a large lump in a box, which I can assure you was taken from a hollow in the mountains. I did intend to have sent a party early in March, under the direction of Ensign Barrallier, and to have had a chain of depots for provisions, to ascertain the circumstance of the salt and several other objects, but the rain unfortunately set in, which will prevent this expedition taking place before next October, when I hope we shall be able to make a good job of it. Cayley has made new attempts to get to the mountains, and has once crossed the Nepean. With all his faults, which he cannot help, I believe him clever and faithful, except that he certainly supplies Colville, to whom I am informed he has sent parcels by the Speedy. Notwithstanding this, and all his eccentricities, I believe fulfilling your wishes and expectations is his constant study.

While the Naturaliste was here the mineralogist made experiments on the ferruginous stones that abound here. He says they contain too small a portion of iron for working, but that a profitable substance might be got from them for glazing porcelain. He could not discover any limestone. He says none was to be found on the S.W. coast, but the Investigator says different.

\* Evidently Castle Hill.



Capt. Flinders tells me that on one of the northernmost of the islands that form D'Entrecasteaux Straits or Archipelago they found a very considerable salt-pit, which would supply this colony. This is an information I will avail myself of as soon as summer approaches and I have a vessel I can send. At present the Porpoise is gone to the Society Islands in quest of salt pork, and the other Colonial vessels cannot be spared; neither would the season be favourable if they were at leisure. However, it is an object of too much consequence to pass over or neglect. I should have sent you a copy of the charts for the Lady Nelson's last voyage; but as I have requested the Adm'ty and Sect'y of State to allow them to be printed until Flinders can complete and arrange his surveys, I hope you will have some direction therein. This is rendered still more necessary from an information I have received from a vessel\* that has returned here from sealing after being four months absent, six weeks of which time they were in a very snug place on the west side of King's Island, filling with prime sealskins and elephant oyl. . . .†

1802

June 5.

A deposit of salt.

Pork from Otaheite.

The Lady Nelson's voyage.

King's Island.

I have in a very earnest manner recommended the making a settlement at Port Phillip, for the very advantageous account given of it, both by Capt. Flinders and Lieut. Murray—its relative situation to this colony requires it. The soil is excellent, and the timber thin, added to which the security and expansiveness of the harbor seems to point it out as absolutely necessary that a settlement should be made there; nor can there be a doubt of its being a better wheat country than this, from its being in a higher latitude. So fully convinced am I of the utility this would be of to this colony that I would have decided on this measure before I heard from England; but the truth is, I have not a person I can spare or trust with such a commission. The great abundance of sea elephants, prime and other seals, that are throughout these Straits and all up the south-west coast, will make this a place of great resort, if the oyl of the elephant or skins are held in request, but at present we are told that the China market is quite glutted with them; however, that may not always be the case.

Port Phillip.

Good site for a settlement.

Seals and sea elephants.

No market for oil.

The whale-fishing on this coast and off New Zealand may now be pronounced established. A full whaler takes these letters Home, another is almost ready to follow, and four more are filling with very good success. In order to set Government *au fait*, I have put some queries to three of the whaling masters

The whaling industry deserving of encouragement.

\* The Harrington, whaler, Captain Campbell.

† Omitted, being practically a repetition of parts of the Governor's letter to Under-Secretary King.

1802  
June 5.

The French  
expedition.

The scientists  
on the  
Investigator.

who are now in here. The answers I have sent Home to the Admt'y and Sect'y of State, also another copy to one of the principal owners, which, of course, you will see; but I have no doubt, from the success they have had, you will observe how deserving that employ is of encouragement and protection from Government.

What political object the French have in view of exploring this coast I do not know, but I suspect they have a settlement on the west coast in view. I hear of no other new discovery they made except a very large bay\* between Swan River and the east point of the Land of Lyons. Should that be the case, is it not more incumbent on us to make a settlement at a place so advantageously situated as Port Phillip certainly is? Mr. Brown sends a box of seeds by this conveyance. All the scientific folks on board the Investigator appear very assiduous. They talk of a walk to the mountains. With my sincere wishes for your health, and my respects to Lady and Miss Banks, I beg to assure you of the respect with which I am,

Yours, &c.,

PHILIP GIDLEY KING.

GEORGE BASS TO CAPTAIN WATERHOUSE.

Venus, Sydney, 5th January, 1803.

1803  
Jan. 5.

Friendly letters.

Trading in pork.

European goods.

Cattle from  
South America.

The Venus as a  
cattle ship.

MY DEAR FRIEND,—

I am much obliged by your friendly letters, which I met with on my arrival here from the islands in Nov'r last.

That pork voyage has been our first successful speculation, and I trust will be an earnest of our future. We again go in search of pork, not because it is a great voyage, but that it is more near to certain than any other we can attempt.

Our European goods will be left here for sale, except such parts of them as we may judge necessary for buying our pork at the islands, and also some others for the purpose of a new scheme.

Gov'r King, anxious to introduce good cattle into this colony, gives me a letter to the commanding officer of any of the Spanish posts in South America I may think proper to go to, begging of him to allow me to purchase cattle to salt down on the spot for a supply of beef, as well also to purchase them alive to introduce the breed here. Moreover, in case the Venus should be found incapable of carrying live cattle of the Chili stature, I am to be

\* Evidently Geographe Bay, named after Le Géographe.

allowed to hire, on my own account, a ship of sufficient size to bring them down. The guanaco\* and pacost† of Chili are also very [suitable] animals for this country. The Governor wishes me to bring some of these animals. The Venus is perfectly equal to their size.

1803  
Jan. 5.

I propose, after leaving the Spanish coast, if my intentions have been answered there so far as to procuring beef in salt and the latter animals, to run down to Otaheite for water, and there we have a new job to set about—it is the recovery of a Colonial brig which was stranded there and left as lost a year ago,‡ but which we think may be got off and repaired, if no new gale has knocked her to pieces. We buy her as she lies of the Gov'r (King) on the above condition.§ Should we get her off and repair her, I shall send the brig Venus on to Port Jackson w'th one of the mates, and myself go on in the Resurrection to other islands in search of a cargo of pork for her to bring here.

Salt meat from Chili.

Running down to Otaheite.

Purchasing a wreck.

If from the strictness of their orders I can find no Spanish Governor who will allow me to purchase cattle, I shall then go to the Sandwich Isles, and set myself wholly upon a real pork voyage as before.

An alternative.

If our approaching voyage proves at all fortunate in its issue, I expect to make a handsome thing of it, and to be much expedited on my return to old England.

The prospect of success.

Sealskins and oil will most probably be the article imported by us there.

I have also some idea of selling the brig to the Spaniards, who cannot fail to admire so much beauty and strength. She is now heaving down, and at this moment lies keel out to repair her copper, which is much worn by her long runs. She is just the same vessel as when we left England—never complains nor cries, though we loaded her with pork most unmercifully; nor have we either split sail or carried away a spar, but the former have suffered much by working about amongst the islands.

Bass's vessel, the Venus.

A good sea boat.

Bishop has been totally useless to me and the concern for many months past, indeed ever since I left him at Otaheite in February, and went to the Sandwich Islands. He is still no

Captain Bishop.

\* The *Auchenia Huanaca*, belonging to the same genus of ruminant mammals as the llama, vicuña, and alpaca. Its principal habitats are the Andes Mountains and the high lands of Patagonia.

† The Peruvian name of the alpaca.

‡ This was an English-built vessel of 56 tons, named originally the Harbinger. Governor King purchased her in May, 1801, for £700, and renamed her the Norfolk. She was sent to Otaheite for pork in November, 1801, and while there was allowed to drive ashore to save her being wrecked in a hurricane.

§ The agreement in regard to the Norfolk was that Bass should pay the Governor £100, provided he managed to repair her; if not, no money was to be due.

1803  
Jan. 5.  
—

better, and that being the case I shall leave him here to recover whilst I make the next voyage. It is more than probable he will be in the grave before my return.

The wreckage of  
the Endeavour.

In my letter from Sandwich Islands in May last, I told you we had been at Dusky Bay in N. Zealand—at least I thought so. I shall go to Dusky Bay again this voyage for the purpose of picking up two anchors and breaking the iron fastenings out of an old Indiaman\* that lies there deserted, with the intention of selling the former to the Spaniards, and of working up the other to purchase pork in the Islands. Of the little iron we took out last voyage, converted by our smith into axes, we made a good thing. Now we shall be prepared for breaking her up.

Arrival of  
"Buffalo."

The Buffalo brought here all my old friends, so that on my arrival from the Islands I was as much surprized to find them returned as I was on coming here from England to find them all gone.

Mrs. Bass.

I have written to my beloved wife by the *Naturaliste* *via* France, and the *Alexander*, *via* Bombay, but still did not write to you because I wished [to wait] until I could inform you of my future intended proceedings.

Pray make my kind love and compliments to Mrs. Waterhouse. I shall desire Bess to say the same to her sisters and brothers.

Prospects of the  
voyage.

With all my disappointments, my much beloved friend, I trust our voyage and affairs will turn to some good account. The want of a remittance must prove a great disappointment to you; it is a painful one to me. Be assured my labor will never be wanting to our success. Let but our next trip do well and all will do well. Be assured of the fidelity of

Yours, &c.,

GEO. BASS.

#### GEORGE BASS TO GOVERNOR KING.

[This document does not appear in the "Historical Records of New South Wales," having reached Sydney after the volume relating to the year 1803 was in type. In its manuscript form it was forwarded by Mr. F. M. Bladen, the New South Wales historian.—THE EDITOR.]

Jan. 30.

Your Excellency.

Sydney, New South Wales,

Jan. 30th, 1803.

SIR,—

From the dearness of animal food in this country, and the little prospect there is of its price being reduced by killing the

\* The Endeavour was beached at Dusky Bay in September, 1795—*ante*, p. 204. The submerged remains of the wreck can still be seen in a small nook in Facile Harbour. An interesting account, by Dr. Hocken, of this old relic, as it appeared in 1887, will be found in the "Transactions of the New Zealand Institute," vol. xx, p. 422.



live stock for many years yet to come, I have been induced to make some consideration upon the chance of lessening the vast sums expended annually by the Government, in sending out hither supplies of beef and pork for the rations of the convicts, whose numbers, now that peace is established in Europe, we may conclude will every year be very considerably augmented.

In point of information, it is unnecessary for me to say to your Excellency, that by my late voyage to the South Sea Islands, I have enabled you to issue from the Public Stores, pork at a price much below what the Government could have sent it out from England; but I mention the circumstance to impress upon Your Excellency that I have not only undertaken but performed a reduction of the public expense,(1) thus furthering your arduous exertions to the same end, whilst producing to myself a profitable though very moderate return, and on this plan am I desirous of proceeding in the present instance.

I have every proof short of actual experiment, that fish may be caught in abundance near the South part of the South Island of New Zealand, or at the neighbouring islands. And that a large quantity might be supplied annually to the Public Stores.

Government aiding me in the project, I will make the experiment.

The aid I ask of Government is an exclusive privilege or lease of the South part of New Zealand, or that South of Dusky Bay, drawing the line in the same parallel of latitude across to the East side of the Island, as also of the Bounty Isles, Penantipode Isle, and the Snares, all being English discoveries, together with ten leagues of sea around their coasts(2). The lease to continue for seven years yet to come; renewal to twenty-one years, if the fishery within the first seven, is judged likely to succeed. Capability of affording to the Public Stores once every week a ration of good salt fish at one penny per pound less cost than a meat ration, calculated at the prime cost in England with freight, to be deemed good and sufficient proof of success, and ground for claiming the renewal of the lease to its utmost limit of 21 years.

And, since the several different places above specified, are only asked for to give greater scope to the experiment, they shall all upon the application for renewal of lease, be given up, that only excepted which experience shall have proved to be the best adapted for the purpose in view, which purpose is no other than that of a fishery.

Until after the expiration of seven years, I cannot consent to supply annually any specific quantity of fish to the Public Stores, such term being to be considered as a period of probation

1803  
Jan. 30.

1803  
Jan. 30.  
—

only. Nor do I wish that Government shall be bound to take any specific quantity of fish annually, supposing that quantity to be ready. Government may, within the above space of time become purchasers, or not, as is found convenient(3).

And should any failure happen in the Stores, and times of exigency again be seen in the land, I will ready come forward, and supply one half of the fish I may have in my own private stores during such exigency at 25 per cent. less cost than the then market price of that article in this colony.

If Your Excellency thinks the above proposal worthy of notice, I request of you at once to have the privilege, that I may begin to set matters in motion.

If I can draw up food from the sea in places which are lying useless to the world, I surely am entitled to make an exclusive property of the fruits of my ingenuity, as much as the man who obtains Letters Patent for a corkscrew or a cake of blacking.

Sir, I am, &c.,

To his Excellency Governor King.

GEORGE BASS.

Notes by Governor King :—

(1.) The quantity of pork purchased from Mr. Bass at 6d. per lb. was very acceptable at the time it came before the supplies arrived from England—and as far as my information goes, at least 6d. per lb. less than it could be sent from England. But it is to be supposed that if the peace continue salt pork sent from England will not exceed sixpence a lb., and we have now 3 years meat in store.

May 9th, 1803.

(2.) As Mr. Bass limits the time of his first essay to seven years, his success may warrant the term being extended. But it remains to be ascertained how far the fish thus salted will answer, and whether the oyla potatoes expended with the fish may not be adequate to the saving proposed. But as it is at his own risque that he undertakes this enterprise, every encouragement, I presume, should be allowed him—which at present depends on the progress he may make, when he makes the trial, which will not be done until his return from his present voyage.

(3.) This is by no means binding on Government to take the fish unless wanted.

GEORGE BASS TO CAPTAIN WATERHOUSE.

Venus, Port Jackson,

2nd February, 1803.

MY DEAR FRIEND,—

I have written to you thrice from hence since my arrival from the South Sea Islands. In a few hours I sail again

Feb. 2.  
George Bass.

on another pork voyage, but it combines circumstances of different nature also.

From this place I go to New Zealand to pick up something more from the wreck of the old Endeavour in Dusky Bay, then visit some of the islands lying south of it in search of seals and fish. The former, should they be found, are intended to furnish a cargo to England immediately on my return from this trip. The fish are to answer a proposal I have made to Government to establish a fishery on condition of receiving an exclusive privilege of the south part of New Zealand and of its neighbouring isles, which privilege is at once to be granted to me.\* The fishery is not to be set in motion till after my return to old England, when I mean to seize upon my dear Bess, bring her out here, and make a *poissarde* of her, where she cannot fail to find plenty of use for her tongue.

1803  
Feb. 2.  
—  
His fishing project.

His wife to come out.

We have, I assure you, great plans in our heads; but, like the basket of eggs, all depends upon the success of the voyage I am now upon.

In the course of it I intend to visit the coast of Chili in search of provisions for the use of His Brit. Majesty's colony; and that they may not in that part of the world mistake me for a contrabandisto, I go provided with a very diplomatic looking certificate from the Governor here, stating the service upon which I am employed, requesting aid and protection in obtaining the food wanted. And God grant you may fully succeed, says your warm heart, in so benevolent an object; and thus also say I; Amen, says many others of my friends.

To Chili for provisions.

Not a contrabandisto.

Bishop's state of health is improving, though very slowly. He being altogether unfit for strong undertakings stays behind here till my return, or until one hears I am digging gold in So. America.

Captain Bishop still ill at Sydney.

Such parts of our English cargo as suits this place are now for sale, and at last are doing tolerably. I trust no new arrivals will again glut the market.

Speak not of So. America to any one out of your family, for there is treason in the very name!

\* The proposal made by Bass was that he should have the exclusive lease for seven years of the part of New Zealand lying south of a line drawn due east from Dusky Sound to the eastern coast—i.e., to about where Dunedin now stands—also the Bounty Isles, Antipodes Isle, and the Snares, together with ten leagues of sea around their coasts. If he succeeded in establishing the industry, he was to have an extension of twenty-one years. "If," wrote Bass, "I can draw up food from the sea in places which are now lying useless to the world, I surely am entitled to make an exclusive property of the fruits of my ingenuity as much as a man who obtains letters patent for a corkscrew or a cake of blacking"

1803  
Feb. 2.

Pleasing prospects surround us, which time must give into our hands. There are apparent openings for good doings, none of which are likely to be tried for till after my return, and dissolution of partnership with Bishop, a point fully fixed upon.\* With kind love to Mrs. W. and all your family, I am, even at this distance and at this length of time, and under all my sad labours, as much as when I saw you,

Yours, &c.,

GEO. BASS.

### GOVERNOR KING TO LORD HOBART.

[Extracts.]

May 9.

MY LORD,—

Sydney, New South Wales, 9th May, 1803

\*

\*

\*

\*

H.M.S. Porpoise.

Three years' service.

The Porpoise, since her last return from Otaheite, has been found very weak in her frame, and her outside plank in many places rotten. She is now repairing and refitting as well as can be done here, to be sent to England next September.† That ship has not lain idle a day, except in refitting, during the three years she will have been on this service, and has rendered much benefit to the colony by the two cargoes of salt pork she has brought from Otaheite, the first of which certainly saved us from experiencing much inconvenience and loss of our breeding stock; nor has her second cargo been unacceptable, altho' our stores are now so well filled with salt meat. Notwithstanding she has brought these supplies, yet she is by no means calculated for bringing cattle; therefore, if it should meet your Lordship's approbation, to apply to the Admiralty for the Porpoise being replaced by another vessel of about 350 or 380 tons, with a good between decks for cattle, a vessel of that kind would be a great acquisition to this colony; and if the two qualities of sailing and stowage could be united, such a ship would be the most desirable for this service.

The Cumberland.

The Cumberland, Colonial schooner, which I sent to the southward, as stated in my separate letter (a duplicate of which is sent with this), returned here 8th March. By her I received a letter from the Commandant of the French expedition of discoveries, a copy of which—with my remarks thereon—I have the honor to enclose. By its tenor your Lordship will observe that he does

\* Charles Bishop, Bass's partner, did not accompany him. He was commander of the vessel, but had to be left behind, in consequence of mental derangement.—*Sydney Gazette*, 24th November, 1805.

† The Porpoise sailed on the 10th August, 1803, in company with the Cato and Bridgewater. The last-named reached Bombay, but the Porpoise and Cato were wrecked on Wreck Reef on the night of the 17th August, 1803.



not avow having instructions to make any settlement on Van Diemen's Land. What intentions the French Government may in future have on that island, I cannot pretend to say further than I have communicated to your Lordship; but I respectfully conceive some instructions should be sent on that head, as it is within the limits of His Majesty's territory. On the arrival of His Majesty's ship *Glatton*, Lieut't John Bowen of that ship offered to settle any part of that island I might direct. The river *Derwent* having many local advantages, joined to the description given by Mr. Bass of what is called *Risdon's Cove*, induces me to accept of L't Bowen's offer; and as he had Capt. Colnett's consent and recommendation, I have appointed him to act as commandant and superintendant of that intended settlement, under the enclosed instructions. And as an assistant-surgeon cannot be spared from this place or *Norfolk Island*, I have appointed Mr. Jacob Mountgarret, surgeon of the *Glatton*, to that situation, who will also act as a magistrate, and be of much assistance to Mr. Bowen, whose numbers at first will be but small, until I am able to report to your Lordship the progress he is likely to make.

1808  
May 9.  
Frenchmen  
suspected of  
settling in Van  
Diemen's Land.

Bowen to settle  
Van Diemen's  
Land.

The officer of the *Buffalo*, surveyor, gardner, &c., returned from their survey of *King's Island* and *Port Phillip*, with no very promising hopes of either being found an eligible place for a large agricultural settlement. I have the honor to forward a copy of their surveys,\* which will explain what they have done. It now remains to determine how far it would be advisable to make a settlement at *Port Phillip*. From its being situate at the western extremity of the entrance of the straits, it may be advisable some years hence, and indeed absolutely necessary. How far it may be considered as an immediate object, I must submit to your Lordship's consideration.

The French schooner I mentioned in a former letter,† which arrived here from the *Isle of France* to catch seals, &c., in the straits, was lost among the *Cape Barren Islands*, which may stop any more adventurers from that quarter.

The flattering accounts the owners of the southern fishery will receive of the success their ships have had on this coast and that of *New Zealand*, ought to ensure their following this as the surest and most profitable track for their ships. We have now two ships belonging to *London* ready to sail, full of *spermaceti oil*, and several more are gone *Home* in the same state.

Success of  
whale fisheries.

\*

\*

\*

\*

I have, &c.,  
PHILIP GIDLEY KING.

\* These enclosures are not available.

† *L'Enterprise*, Captain *Lecorre*.

1803

June 30.

Ships entered  
inwards at Port  
Jackson.

## SHIPPING RETURNS.\*

A LIST of Ships and Vessels which have entered Inwards in the Harbour of Port Jackson, in His Majesty's territory of New South Wales, between the 1st day of Jan'y, 1803, and the 30th day of June following, with the particular quantity and quality of the lading of each vessel.

Time of entry, Feb. 15; vessel's name, Greenwich; master's name, A. Laws; built, British; number of tons, 338; number of guns, 2; number of men, 23; where and when built, London, 1800; where registered, London; owners' name, Messrs. Enderby; general cargo, 209 tons sperm oil; from whence, New Zealand.

Time of entry, Mar. 6; vessel's name, Venus; master's name, B. Gardener; built, British; number of tons, 295; number of guns, 10; number of men, 24; where and when built, Deptford, 1788; where registered, London; owners' name, Messrs. Champion; general cargo, 1,400 barrels sperm oil; from whence, New Zealand.

Time of entry, June 1; vessel's name, Alexander; master's name, Rt. Rhodes; built, British; number of tons, 301; number of guns, 6; number of men, 29; where built, Newcastle; where registered, London; owners' name, Messrs. Hurrys; general cargo, 50 tons oil, 2 casks tobacco; from whence, New Zealand; where and when bond given, Sydney, June 1.

W. N. CHAPMAN, Naval Officer.

Nov. 29.

Vessels cleared  
outwards from  
Port Jackson.

## SHIPPING RETURNS.†

A LIST of Ships and Vessels which have cleared Outwards from the harbour of Port Jackson, in His Majesty's territory of New South Wales, between the 1st day of January, 1803, and the 29th day of November, with the particular quantity and quality of the lading of each vessel.

Time of clearing, Sept. 19th; vessel's name, Alexander; master's name, Robt. Rhodes; built, British; number of tons, 301; number of guns, 6; number of men, 29; where built, Newcastle; where registered, London; owners' name, Messrs. Hurrys; general cargo, 107 ft. oak and 50 ton oil; wither bound, New Zealand.

W. N. CHAPMAN, Naval Officer.

\* Only vessels from New Zealand are given. † Only vessels to New Zealand are given.

## SHIPPING RETURNS.\*

1803  
Dec. 31.

A LIST of Ships and Vessels which have entered Inwards in the harbour of Port Jackson, in His Majesty's territory of New South Wales, between the 30th day of June, 1803, and the 31st day of December, with the particular quantity and quality of the lading of each vessel.

Time of entry, July 7; vessel's name, Albion; master's name, Eber Bunker; built, British; number of tons, 362; number of guns, 10; number of men, 26; where built, Deptford; where registered, London; owners' name, Messrs. Champion; general cargo, 600 ba'ls sperm oil, &c.; from whence, New Zealand.

W. N. CHAPMAN, Naval Officer.

SIR JOSEPH BANKS TO GOVERNOR KING. (King Papers.)

1804  
Aug. 29.

MY DEAR SIR,—

Soho Square, 29th August, 1804.

As the opportunity by which I now write is not a King's ship, I shall not say much on the points we usually correspond on. All worth mentioning is that I had a great loss in Lord Hobart's going out of office; for I had just prevailed upon His Lordship and Mr. Sullivan, his Secretary, to understand the history of your colony, and was in hopes of going on better than I ever have done, when His Lordship resigned.

Banks and Lord  
Hobart.

I have a new task to undertake, to bring Lord Camden and Mr. Cooke into the same happy disposition. I do not, however, despair of doing it before the ship, whatever she may be, that is to replace the Porpoise is fitted out; and I shall struggle hard to get a garden on board her, and some shepherds' dogs.

A new Secretary  
of State.

What is become of Fleming I do not know.† He came to me on his arrival, and found me sick in my bed, where I lay near three months. When I got up, Fleming was not to be found. I conclude, therefore, he has got some berth, either honest or dishonest, which he likes better than an appointment in your colony, which, from the recommendation you give me, I should have struggled hard to obtain for him.

Fleming.

Barrallier come to me as soon as he arrived, having learned that his unintelligible journals had been sent to me, and requested to borrow them that he might correct them and transcribe them

Barrallier.

\* Only vessels from New Zealand are given.

† This is the man whom King sent Home in charge of plants, &c. From a subsequent letter (16th October, 1804) it will be seen that he had accepted a situation in a botanic garden in the West Indies.

1804  
Aug. 29.

fair. I put them into his hands on condition of receiving them back. He soon after went to Milford, where his father is building a large ship for Government, and I have not since heard of him. The stones he brought from the mountains are in my hands; but nothing in them seems to promise either scientific or profitable discovery. The many things you have been so good as to send to me by the Glatton and the Greenwich came safe, and so, I trust, have those by the Calcutta. I have got Mr. Brown's plants and Mr. Westhall's drawings; the rest will come up in a day or two.

A substitute for  
hops.

The root you send me, and propose as a substitute for hops, does not taste bitter, or very little so. It has a bad taste, which I think would spoil the beer. Your hops will be two years old when this comes to hand, and will have borne some fruit this season; next they will give you a good crop. I would advise you, therefore, to wait with patience, and not search for substitutes which, if of ever so promising a nature, might have evil effects on the human constitution.

Secretary  
Chapman.

I will enquire for Mr. Chapman.\* He called once upon me, and I was not at home. I wrote to him the next day, wishing to see him, but have not, and conclude he is gone into the country.

Flinders.

Poor Flinders, you know, I suppose, put into Isle de France for water, and was detained as a prisoner, and treated as a spy. Our Government have no communication with the French; but I have some with their literary men, and have written, with the permission of Government, to solicit his release, and have sent in my letter a copy of the very handsome one M. Baudin left with you. If this should effect Flinders's liberation, which I think it will, we shall both rejoice.

Allen, the miner, has arrived safe. He left his chief collections; but, among the few things he had preserved for himself, I see nothing worthy of much notice.

Colonial linen.

Your linen, made from flax grown at Sydney, lays before me; a very good linen it is. I conclude that you do not mean that it is made of New Zealand flax, and I fear it is not a cheap article.

The wool  
industry.

I do not think you need to trouble yourself about getting possession of the fine-woolled sheep for Government. If the project for breeding them succeeds, they must soon become so abundant that the genius of your people, who will not let a potato stay under ground till it is ripe, will soon spread them over the country.

\* W. N. Chapman (Secretary to Governor King) was, at the time Banks penned the above letter, in England on leave.



A proposal has been made to institute a company here with a capital of £10,000 for the purpose of increasing the breed of sheep, which are to become the property of the subscribers—the wool, I mean—and the mutton to remain that of Mr. McArthur, the manager. Government have been applied to to make grants of land for that purpose. I have advised that a grant be made of a million of acres in such parts as Capt. McArthur shall chuse, at a proper distance from all settlements, for the sole purpose of feeding sheep, resumable at the will of Government, whenever any part of it may be appropriated to tillage or other purposes, on satisfaction being made for any stock-houses on the premises resumed, and an equal quantity of land granted at a more distant point, 100,000 acres at first and 100,000 more when 100,000 fine-wooll'd sheep are actually in existence on the first 100,000, and so on.\*

1804

Aug. 29.

A public company proposed.

Col. Paterson complains to me of the asperity of some expressions you have used to him. I fear I ought not to doubt of his having richly deserved them; yet, as I sincerely wish the colony to prosper, I as sincerely desire that you two may again be friends and pull together for the good of the whole. I have written to him on the subject and stated the necessity of a reconciliation on his part, as I am confident that no well-regulated Government will suffer a Governor and a Lt.-Governor to remain together if on bad terms, and that in that case he must be recall'd. I cannot therefore but hope that a little relaxation on your part may bring about a reconciliation, and that a sense of the value of your friendship to the Colonel may make it both permanent and sincere on his part.

King and Paterson.

I observe that I have paid in very little money on Caley's account to your agent. I wish you would favour me with a request to pay in more. I should be thankful, as I do not like to be in debt in money matters to a man to whom I owe so much for literary assistance.

Caley.

I send to you with this two volumes of the natural history of the Paraguay for the chapter in the second volume, which give some account of the manner of managing housed stock in an open country. Some hints from it may be used by you and be useful. The chief thing to be wished for is some person from Buenos Ayres, skilled in the management and the use of the bullet

Housing stock.

\* This scheme, proposed by Captain Macarthur, was never carried out. A smaller quantity of land was granted to him, and he undertook the breeding of fine-woolled sheep as a private investment. It is his enterprise in devoting his means to the cultivation of such an industry, and his assiduity and zeal in bringing the matter before the British Government and clothing manufacturers at Home, that entitle Captain Macarthur to be honoured as the founder of the wool-growing industry in Australia.

1804  
Aug. 29.

and thong; this may be effected by the S. whalers and shall be propos'd to Government.

The wild cattle.

I doubt whether you did well or not in killing the savage bulls. They are the defenders of the herd against savages. New ones, however, will spring up from among the younger ones within a fortnight and be in a month quite as savage as their predecessors.

The *Sydney Gazette*.

I thank you very much for the *Gazettes* you have been so good as to send me. Your papers are rather under the influence of Government and no opposition *Gazette* can yet be set up. They give, in my opinion, a most unequivocal testimony of the flourishing state of the colony and bring forward some excellent matters and regulations which have from time to time taken place much to your honor and somewhat to that of Lord Hobart and His Lordship's advisers. Pray be so good as to continue them as regularly as you can. I have at present from No. 1 to 11 and from 30 to 54; the intermediate ones, 12-29 inclusive, have not been sent.

George Caley.

Caley, who always was very useful to me, has of late sent me Home many very interesting things, and seems industrious in the extreme. I feel a particular obligation to you for bearing with the effusions of his ill-judging spirit. Had he been born a gentleman, he would have been shot long ago in a duel. As it is, I have borne with much more than ever you have done, under a conviction that he acted under strong tho' mistaken feelings of a mind honest and upright. I expect much from his excursion to the south, where everything is new.

King's leniency to prisoners.

There is only one part of your conduct as Governor which I do not think right—that is, your frequent reprieves. I would have justice, in the case of those under your command who have already forfeited their lives and been once admitted to a commutation of punishment, to be certain and inflexible, and no one case on record where mere mercy, which is a deceiving sentiment, should be permitted to move your mind from the inexorable decree of blind justice. Circumstances may often make mercy necessary—I mean those of suspected error in conviction—but mere whimpering soft-heartedness never should be heard.

A busy man.

Excuse the desultory state of this letter. It was written, as most of mine, at intervals between numerous interruptions which have too frequently broke in upon the arrangement of matter which ought and otherwise would have taken place.

Believe me, &c.,  
JOS. BANKS.

## SHIPPING RETURNS.\*

1804

Dec. 31.

**A LIST** of Ships and Vessels which have entered Inwards in the Harbour of Port Jackson, in His Majesty's Territory of New South Wales, between the 1st day of January, 1804, and the 31st day of December following, with the particular quantity and quality of the lading of each vessel.

Ships entered  
inwards at Port  
Jackson.

**Time** of entry, Mar. 31; vessel's name, Scorpion; master's name, Wm. Dagg; built, British; number of tons, 343; number of guns, 14; number of men, 32; where built, London; where registered, London; owners' name, Messrs. Mathers; general cargo, 4,750 skins, 20 barrels oil, 10 tons salt; from whence, New Zealand; where bond given, Sydney.

J. HARRIS, Act'ng Naval Officer.

## GOVERNOR KING TO EARL CAMDEN.†

Sydney, New South Wales,

30th April, 1805.

1805

April 30.

MY LORD,—

Port Dalrymple.

I am happy to communicate to your Lordship that, exclusive of the accompanying duplicates of my correspondence with Colonel Paterson by letters of a more recent date, I find his former accounts of the good prospect he has, not only confirmed, but expressing the most sanguine ideas of the settlement he has formed at Port Dalrymple fulfilling His Majesty's intention in directing that settlement to be made, as directed in my Lord Hobart's despatch of June 24th, 1803.

Your Lordship will observe the supplies that have been furnished from hence, and when that settlement is so fortunate as to receive the cows contracted for with Mr. Campbell, it will wear a more promising appearance than this settlement did six years after it was begun, owing to the disappointments and losses it experienced in the supplies of stock, provisions, and stores.

Supplies from  
Sydney

Being anxious to supply Port Dalrymple before the winter as amply as our present stores and resources would admit, His Majesty's ship Buffalo, with the Integrity, Colonial cutter, sailed from hence the 25th ult'o, with the people, stock, provisions, &c., enumerated in the margin, which will secure that settlement from experiencing any want for several months.

sent in Colonial  
vessels.

By the Lady Barlow I had the honor of informing my Lord Hobart that I had sent the Investigator to Norfolk Island for a

Removing from  
Norfolk Island.

\* Only vessels from New Zealand are given.

† Marked by King, "Separate, No. 2, per H.M.S. Investigator."

|                              |  |
|------------------------------|--|
| 1805<br>April 30.<br>—       | <p>part of the civil and military settlers and convicts, in compliance with His Lordship's instructions, since which time the Investigator has returned, when I received the communications made in Captain Piper's letters to me, copies of which I have the honor to enclose, by which your Lordship will observe that the wheat harvest has been tolerable abundant; and if a portion of our late rains has fallen at Norfolk, there is reason to expect the produce of maize will increase the intended supply of salted pork from that island. I also enclose my answer to the commandant, in which your Lordship will observe the further intended arrangements and the necessity I am under of giving a farther explanation of my Lord Hobart's intentions respecting that island, and the measures I have adopted for carrying them into execution, which has been greatly misinterpreted or misconceived. However, I hope that notice will be sufficiently explicit, and meet your Lordship's approbation.</p>  |
| Lord Hobart's intention.     | <p>As I fully understood from the tenor of my Lord Hobart's letter respecting the partial removals from Norfolk Island to Port Dalrymple, that it never entered into His Lordship's contemplation to withdraw every person, I humbly submit that I conceive its total abandonment at any future period would be attended with a great loss to the extending settlements in supplies of salted provisions we have and do receive from thence, and which there is little doubt will continue to encrease. And another important advantage has always been derived from that island in supplying the South Sea whalers with the most plentiful refreshments, being situated so near the fishing grounds on the north-east coast of New Zealand, which has been the means of preserving the lives of many British seamen, and enabling them to return to England in perfect health, after being almost constantly at sea during two and sometimes three years, instead of being the scrobutic and debilitated men returned when their cruising was confined to the coast of South America.</p> |
| The evacuation partial only. | <p>In making the above statement as connected with the interest of the south whalers, I beg to add that from the information of the masters of those ships that have for the last four years frequented the north-east part of New Zealand, I found that the quantity of seeds and other articles I gave the two New Zealanders who visited Norfolk Island in 1794, and remained there nine months, have turned to a very beneficial account, not only for their own advantage, but also in supplying the whaling ships very liberally with potatoes and other productions derived from what my two visitors, whom I conducted to their homes in 1794,* took with them. The frequent intercourse those vessels have had with that</p>  |
| A place of call for whalers. |  |
| The natives of New Zealand.  |  |
| Vegetables.                  |  |

\* Ante, pp. 169 and 190.



part of New Zealand has been very advantageous. The New Zealanders have gone on board their vessels, assisted them in procuring oil, and are found a very tractable people ; hence there is every reason to expect that the assistance they may derive from them, if encouraged and liberally treated, will greatly facilitate their pursuits and ensure a continuance of those refreshments so grateful to seamen on long voyages, and prevent them from quitting the coast in the season for whaling to seek supplies elsewhere and distant from their fishing ground.

1805

April 30.

A tractable  
people.

The many vessels that have put into the Bay of Islands and other parts of that coast have never, as far as I have learn'd, had any altercation with the natives, but have received every kind office and assistance in procuring their wood and water, &c., at a very cheap rate in barter ; exclusive of which a great public advantage might hereafter be derived by the whalers who fish on that coast being provided with articles of barter with which they may procure great quantities of the manufactured flax, and if provided with small machines for making rope they might carry on that work when not engaged with whaling, which would be an amusement to the people and a double object gained, as the leakage of oil would not damage that rope but on the contrary strengthen it. And if any circumstance should lead those whalers to this port they may very advantageously barter it for provisions and other necessaries. An anxious wish to promote and secure those advantages to the whalers has induced me to direct the Commandant of Norfolk Island to send a number of sows and other stock occasionally to that island by any master of a whaler in whom he can confide, to be delivered to the most powerful chief at the Bay of Islands or among the different families or tribes.

No altercation  
with natives.

Rope-making.

\*

\*

\*

\*

In a former letter I had the honor of stating the general and individual inconvenience that attended the Americans not only occupying fishing stations in and about Bass's Straits but frequenting this port, from which they have drawn several useful people, and in fact depriving the inhabitants of the only staple hitherto acquired. How far this may or may not be allowable I have not taken upon me to decide, but have requested instructions thereon. I also stated the circumstance of a small vessel belonging to an individual being sent in quest of the beche-de-mer. That vessel is returned, and altho' they failed in that object, yet they acquired another of not less value, namely, sandalwood, which is in such great request with the natives of India and China. It has long been known, from the intercourse with the Friendly Islands, that sandalwood was a production of some of the Feejee Islands, which are a group hitherto not much known. The pro-

The American  
whalers.Trading to the  
port.Sandalwood  
obtained from  
the islands.

1805  
April 30.

prietor of this vessel was induced to make the trial from the information of a person who professed a knowledge of the place where it was to be obtained, but who, unfortunately with several others, were cut off at Tongataboo, one of the Friendly Islands. After going to several of the Feejee's, and finding much difficulty and not a little apprehension for the safety of their small vessel from the natives' attack, they accomplished their object by procuring fifteen tons of sandalwood in exchange for pieces of iron at an island called by the natives Vooie. Whether it is plentiful or not is doubtful, as the people belonging to the vessel could not land, and that carried on board by the natives was in small quantities. However, should it prove abundant and become more easy to obtain, it may hereafter be an advantageous object of commerce with China.

The encouragement of trade.

With the knowledge of those advantages a desire for speculation will increase, and to keep that desire within due bounds must be the Governor's duty, as far as it respects Colonial vessels; but it appears to me not altogether admissible that the Governor should interfere in the commercial destination of vessels belonging to merchants resident in the Company's settlements in India. Seeing the Company's claim to navigate in all the seas east of the Cape of Good Hope, however, the correction of abuses committed within his jurisdiction as Vice-Admiral may claim his cognizance.

Europeans and the islanders.

Of late years there has been a great intercourse with Europeans with the Society and Sandwich Islands, which has not only furnished them with abundance of firearms, but has also been the means of a number of Europeans continuing on those islands, among whom are some of indifferent, not to say bad, characters, mostly left from ships going to the north-west coast of America, whalers, and several from this colony, who have gained much influence with the chiefs whom they have assisted in their warfare. At Atooi,\* one of the Sandwich Islands, I am informed a schooner, of twelve carriage guns, was nearly completed a year ago, and that it was the chief's intention to send her to England.

\* \* \* \*

The trade with China.

Since writing the preceding part of this letter application has been made by some individuals to connect themselves with Americans for the object of procuring a cargo of sandalwood, carrying it to China, and returning here with the proceeds. As I conceive that measure would lead to opening an intercourse with this colony and the Company's possessions, I have resisted the importunate solicitations on that behalf, as it militates

\* Now known as Kanai.

so much against His Majesty's Instructions thereon; but in continuing those restrictions I have assured the adventuring inhabitants, being His Majesty's subjects, of my earnest wish and exertions to promote their endeavours, and of which I can offer no better assurance than the application contained in my separate and particular letter sent by the Lady Barlow, and I cannot close this subject without humbly suggesting the necessity of instructions being sent prescribing the intercourse and connexion that may be allowed between the inhabitants and Americans; nor can I conceal from your Lordship that I respectfully conceive any other toleration or encouragement beyond relieving their immediate wants would be highly injurious to the public interest, and continue to defeat the views of Government in forming this colony by taking convicts from hence.

1805  
April 30.

King's assistance and advice.

Americans.

I have, &c.,

PHILIP GIDLEY KING.

GOVERNMENT AND GENERAL ORDER.

26th May, 1805.

May 26.

THE master of the Policy, South Sea whaler, having, in defiance of the Port Regulations, gone from hence without taking a regular clearance, or giving the necessary bond for the delivery of the cargo he took in at this place for the port of London, all ships, or vessels of every nation, are hereby ordered to comply with the regulations of the Port Orders on that behalf; and vessels attempting to pass the Sow and Pigs without showing the Naval Officers Signal of the ship or vessel being cleared, will be fired on with shot from the battery on George's Head, for which purpose the guns are shotted, and the necessary orders given to the guard on duty at that post.

Defying the Port Orders.

Vessels leaving without proper clearance to be fired upon.

Whereas a number [of] Otaheitans and Sandwich Islanders have been brought from Otaheite by the Harrington, letter of marque, and two Spanish prizes she took out of the Ports of Coquimbo and Caldera, for the purpose of manning them, and several New Zealanders being brought here and left by South Sea whalers from the east coast of that island; and it being intended by the persons who have hitherto been allowed to frequent the islands in Bass's Straits to send some of these credulous people to that place where their treatment and return are very suspicious and doubtful; and it being of the utmost consequence to the interest and safety of Europeans frequenting those seas, and more particularly the South Sea whalers, that these people should suffer no illtreatment,

South Sea Island natives on board English vessels.

Natives not to be illtreated or detained.

1805  
May 26.

but, on the contrary, experience every kindness until they can return to their native country ;—it is, therefore, hereby strictly forbid sending any Otaheitan, Sandwich Islander, or New Zealander from this settlement to any island or other part of this coast on any sealing or other voyage, or to any place to the eastward of Cape Horn.

Natives not to  
ship except for  
their own  
islands.

All masters of ships, foreign as well as English, are hereby forbid taking away any such Otaheitan, Sandwich Islander, or New Zealander from hence without the Governor's permission in writing, which will not be given unless with a certainty of the masters taking them to the islands they belong to.

Treatment of  
island natives at  
Sydney.

During their stay here, those whose service they are employed in are not to beat or illuse them ; but if their employers, or those who brought them to this Colony, are not able to maintain and employ them, they are to report it to the Governor, who will take measures for their employment and maintenance until they can be sent home.

And it is to be clearly understood that all such Otaheitans, &c., are protected in their properties, claims for wages, and the same redress as any of His Majesty's subjects.

# GOVERNOR KING TO UNDER-SECRETARY COOKE.

[Extracts.]

Sydney, New South Wales,  
31st December, 1805.

Dec. 31.

SIR,—

\*

\*

\*

\*

A Maori chief.

By the Buffalo, a chief of a very considerable district on the east side of New Zealand, and who had been carried to Norfolk Island in a whaler, came here on a visit.\* As this person has always been spoken of in terms of the warmest gratitude by the commanders of the South Sea whalers, who have received every assistance from him and his people when they have touched there, I have caused every attention to be paid to him, and I make no doubt but the kindness he and that part of his family he brought with him have received here, and the presents he takes with him, will ensure that great advantage to our whalers. That

\* This chief, Tip-pa-he, was the head of the Maoris inhabiting the country contiguous to the Bay of Islands. He was accompanied by five of his sons, and is described as a man of apparently 50 years of age, 5 ft. 11½ in. in height, and of athletic form. His countenance was "expressive and commanding, though much disfigured by his face being completely tattooed."—*Sydney Gazette*, 1st December, 1805. The Buffalo arrived at Sydney on 27th November, 1805.



I may be assured of no unpleasant accident happening to him on his return, I intend sending him home again in the *Lady Nelson* in about a month.

1805  
Dec. 31.

I am sorry to say that an American vessel, last from the Isle of France, laden with spirits, put in here on the old plan of wanting repairs and water. Coming last from that place I considered it my duty to examine a letter the commander had for a dealer here named Simeon Lord, who I learn'd had made a contract with the commander of a French vessel which came here in the short interval of peace in 1803, and had entered into some plan or agreement with the house of Merle, Cabot, & Co., of the Isle of France. The measure I have found it necessary to take in consequence of this discovery I shall detail by the *Sydney*.

An American vessel spirit laden.

Of the spirits brought by the American (which there is every reason to be assured was shipped in America), I have allowed six thousand gallons to be landed, and shall send the remainder from hence. No other consideration would have induced me to suffer this quantity at a time when there is an apparent scarcity of grain before us, but the general conduct of the inhabitants when I sent the vessel away which brought the fifteen thousand gallons from the house of Campbell & Co., at Calcutta, without permission, joined to the impolicy of refusing that indulgence at this season. The measures I have felt it my duty to adopt on that occasion to prevent the oppressive dealings that have occurred on those occasions I shall also detail by the *Sydney*.

The importation of spirits.

It gives me pleasure to communicate the general good state of health, and the orderly behaviour of the greater part of His Majesty's subjects in this territory and its dependencies.

I have, &c.,

PHILIP GIDLEY KING.

\* \* \* \*

As Mr. McArthur has fixed his establishment in the neighbourhood of the country where the herds of cattle resort, he has made an offer of catching and taming the great number of overplus bulls there are in those herds, and that are chased out by the master bulls, provided he could have the labour of twenty men for that purpose, victualled at the public expence, and to have for his trouble one out of three bulls that he may take. This is a measure I should most willingly consider of, but unfortunately the want of labourers at present at public work prevents my closing with his proposals, which I shall consider and most probably consent to when more convicts arrive—the want of which is much felt in our agricultural and other concerns,

The wild cattle.

Scarcity of labourers.

1805  
Dec. 31.

both public and private, on account of the numbers employed in the fisheries, those whose terms are expired, and the number sent to the new settlements, all which will be more particularly detailed in my letters by the Sydney.

PHILIP GIDLEY KING.

#### SHIPPING RETURNS.\*

Shipping entered  
inwards at Port  
Jackson.

A LIST of Ships or Vessels which have enter'd Inwards in the Harbour of Port Jackson, in His Majesty's territory of New South Wales, between the 31st of March, 1805, and the 31st of December following, with the particular quantity and quality of the lading of each vessel.

Time of entry, May 16; vessel's name, Ann (ship); master's name, Jas. Gywnn; number of tons, 288; number of men, 22; where built, New Bedford; where registered, New Bedford; owner's name, Wm. Rock, junr.; general cargo, 130 tons sperm oil; from whence, New Zealand.

Time of entry, Sept. 28; vessel's name, Eliz'th and Mary; master's name, Jn. Kingston; number of tons, 235; number of guns, 10; number of men, 24; where built, America; where registered, London; owners' name, Spencer & Co.; general cargo, 800 barrels sperm oil; from whence, New Zealand.

#### SHIPPING RETURNS.†

Shipping cleared  
outwards from  
Port Jackson.

A LIST of Ships and Vessels which have cleared Outwards from the port of Port Jackson, in His Majesty's territory of New South Wales, between the 31st of March, 1805, and the 31st of December following, with the particular quantity and quality of the lading of each vessel.

Time of clearing, Sept. 20; vessel's name, Argo; master's name, Jn. Baden; number of tons, 221; number of guns, 18; number of men, 26; where registered, London; owners' name, Halletts & Co.; general cargo, ballast; whither bound, New Zealand.

\* Only vessels from New Zealand are given.

† Only vessels to New Zealand are given.

AMONGST the private papers of the Honorable P. G. King, M.L.C. (grandson of Governor King), are the following rough notes (pp. 1 to 10) in the Governor's handwriting. They are on detached sheets of small note-paper. Some of them appear to have been written while he was looking forward to the arrival of his successor, Captain William Bligh; others at a later period, probably during the voyage to England. The frequent blanks indicate that he had not, at the time of writing, access to official documents. The first one, only, is dated:—

1806

## KING PAPERS.

*The Legality of Government and General Orders.*

2nd January, 1806.

Jan. 2.

IN a conversation between Mr. McArthur and myself respecting the free introduction and sale of spirits, which he defended the legality of, and which from experience and a thorough knowledge of the baneful effects of a small quantity being allowed to be landed while its influence lasted, I objected to in the most decided manner. He introduced the subject of some counsel's opinion of the illegality of all local Regulations, and that no Order or Regulation given by a Governor could be binding or legal unless sanctioned by an Act of Parliament. This subject was brought about on his urging the propriety of the distilling peaches into a spirit for the use of the inhabitants, and my testifying a wish to coincide, but that I felt a repugnance to doing it as the Judge-Advocate had said that he considered the introduction of the excise laws as a stretch of authority, and without adopting some of them I did not consider it possible to allow of that or any other distilling.

The Governor's power to make local Regulations.

As Mr. McArthur was not possessed of that authority, or chose to mention the name of the counsel who gave the opinion, I could only observe that this was the first time I ever heard of such an objection, as all the local Regulations were regularly sent [to] the Minister for the Colonies, who had never made any exception, but had, in some instances, testified his approbation of the general part; a proof of which was my Lord Hobart's directing Lieut.-Gov'r Collins to comply with those Orders, with most part of which he was furnished with copies for his guidance. And as most of the Orders I have given have been as near as possible conformable to the existing laws of England, allowances being made for the descriptions of persons they were to govern, and rendered necessary by the local state of the colony and the precedents of former Governors, I most certainly have considered myself warranted in framing these Regulations, without which no human being could have preserved any degree of regularity or order.

No exception taken to them in England.

Orders conformable to the laws of England.

1806  
Jan. 2.  
The laws of  
England  
inadequate.

Efficacy of  
Colonial  
Regulations.

If it is urged that the laws of England are sufficient for the government of this colony, experience has fully shown the fallacy of such reasoning. Were the generality of the inhabitants of that mixed description that composes society in an English town and county, such reasoning might be allowed; but when it is considered that three-fourths of the inhabitants have been spared from an ignominious death by the humanity of the laws of England, and that the greater part of that number are so rooted in wickedness and vice, which can never be changed by any time or place (at least as far as respects the present generation), joined to the very little amendment that is seen in those who have either expiated their crimes, either by having served their terms or become emancipated—the necessity of these restrictive local Regulations must be visible to everyone who is, or ever has been, acquainted with the depravity of those which they govern in, and of the established law of England, which is lost sight of on no occasion whatever, and in those instances when a deviation is necessary for the security of persons and property, they are invariably adhered to as much as circumstances admits of it; nor in many cases does these deviations exist beyond the term that any exigency renders them absolutely necessary.

### *New Zealand Natives.*

New Zealand  
natives.

Ill-treated by a  
whaler.

IN consequence of the great intercourse of the South whalers with the natives of the Bay of Islands, on the N.E. part of New Zealand, some of the lower orders of them have been occasionally brought to Sydney, and among them a youth said to be the son of a powerful chief at the Bay of Islands who had always been extremely hospitable to the whalers. The report of the reception these people had met with induced others to follow; and as I had made the youth some presents of tools, &c., for his father, and had directed some breeding swine to be sent from Norfolk Island to the chief, he soon after formed a resolution of paying me a visit, and for that purpose he went to Norfolk Island in a small Colonial vessel, the master of which I am sorry to say treated him so ill as to occasion the most bitter reproaches of Tip-a-he (the name of the chief) and his sons, who accompanied him. Fortunately the kind reception and attention he met with from Captain Piper, Commandant of Norfolk Island, and every person on that island, greatly removed the unfavourable ideas he was impressed with, and which he has often assured me would have been sufficient to have deterred him from the voyage to this place and returning to New Zealand but for the knowledge he had of my treatment of the two New Zealanders,



Tookee and Woodoo,\* who visited Norfolk Island in 1794,† and the kindness shown him by Captain Piper, whose absolute authority was requisite to rescue Tap-a-he's youngest and most beloved son from the master of the vessel, who, there is too much reason to apprehend, had destined the son for the payment of the father's passage, although he could not be ignorant that the kindness this family received at our hands would be abundantly repaid to the English whalers frequenting the Bay of Islands. Such wretches are who have no hesitation at committing these acts, and such was the master's conduct as to occasion the observation from Tip-a-he that he considered him as an *emoki* (i.e., of the lower class) as the only excuse for his conduct. Shortly after, the Buffalo arrived at Norfolk to take the supplies for Port Dalrymple, from whence she was to return here. This opportunity Tip-a-he took advantage of to pay me the visit he had so long intended, and was received on board by Capt. Houstoun with his four sons. As some circumstances induced Capt. H. to go to the Derwent, Tip-a-he had an opportunity of seeing that settlement, where he met with much civility from Col. Collins and the officers of that colony during the ship's stay of one week. Unfortunately her arrival at Port Dalrymple was prevented by encountering one of the severest gales of wind that has visited the neighbourhood, that so effectually disabled the ship as to make her return to this port unavoidable.

1806

Rescued by  
Piper.Maoris visit  
King.

Soon after the Buffalo anchored, Captain Houstoun waited on me with his guest, who was clad in the costume of his country. On being introduced he took up a number of his mats, laying them at my feet, and disposed of a stone patoo patoo in the same manner, after which he performed the ceremony of Etongi or joining of noses. After many exclamations of surprise at the house and other objects that attracted his passing attention, he gave me to understand that he had long designed the visit he had now accomplished, to which he had been encouraged by the reports of my two visitors at Norfolk Island in 1794 [1793], the request of his father, and the prospect of his country being benefited by his visit, as it had been for the great blessing bestowed on it by the introduction of potatoes at Tookee and Woodoo's return from Norfolk Island. He also added that leaving New Zealand was much against the wishes of his dependants, but that objection was much outweighed by the probable

The meeting.

Tip-a-he's  
objects in  
visiting Sydney.

\* See concerning these two Maoris, King to Dundas, 19th November, 1793, p. 169, and the note thereto.

† This is an error. The natives referred to were landed at Norfolk Island in April, 1793, and taken back to New Zealand in November of the same year.

1806

A guest at  
Government  
House.

Description of  
Tip-a-he.

A polished  
savage.

An inquiring  
mind.

Tip-a-he's ideas  
of justice.

advantages they would derive from his visit, and concluded by saying that he considered himself under my protection. If I wished him to remain here, go to Europe, or return to his own country, he was resigned to either, and in the most manly confidence submitted himself and his sons to my directions. All this was said in such an imposing manner that no doubt could be entertained of his sincerity.

As I was anxious that no kindness should be wanting to impress him with a full sense of the hospitality I wished to make him sensible of, he, with his eldest son, named Tookey, lived with me and eat at the table, whilst a very good room was allotted for his lodging and that of his sons.

Tip-a-he is 5 feet 11 inches high, stout, and extremely well made. His age appears about 46 or 48. His face is completely tattooed with the spiral marks shewn in "Hawkesworth's and Cook's Second Voyage," which, with similar marks on his hips and other parts of his body, point him out as a considerable chief or Etangatida Etikitia of the first class. To say that he was nearly civilized falls far short of his character, as every action and observation shows an uncommon attention to the rules of decency and propriety in his every action, and has much of the airs and manners of a man conversant with the world he lives in. In conversation he is extremely facetious and jocose, and, as he never reflected on any person, so Tip-a-he was alive to the least appearance of slight or inattention in others.

He never missed any opportunity of gaining the most particular information respecting the cause and use of everything that struck his notice, and but few things there were of real utility that did not entirely engross his most serious attention. In communicating observations on his own country he was always very anxious to make himself understood, and spared no pains to convince us that the customs of his country were in several instances better than ours, many of which he looked on with the greatest contempt, and some with the most violent and abusive disapprobation, of which the following is an instance:—

Two soldiers and a convict were sent prisoners from Port Dalrymple to be tried by a Criminal Court for stealing some pork from the King's stores at that place. Tip-a-he attended their trial on the Friday, and one of them was ordered for execution on the following Monday. As is usual, they attended Divine service on the Sunday. As everyone was much affected at their situation, Tip-a-he was not wanting in commiseration; but the instant the service was ended he went to the criminals and embracing them accompanied them back to the jail, where it appeared they gave Tip-a-he a petition to present to me. On

returning to Government House he came into the room where I was writing, and in a very earnest manner, and I believe from the full force of conviction, he endeavoured to reason with me on the injustice of slaying men for stealing pork, and at the same time shewing the severest sorrow and grief for their fate, which he concluded by taking the petition out of his pocket and giving it to me, at the same time shedding tears. He threw himself prostrate on the ground, sobbing most bitterly. Observing that I did not give him any answer or hopes than by saying I should consider of it he left the room and did not make his re-appearance until the hour of dinner, having taken off the dress he had made here, and appeared very violent, exclaiming in most furious manner against the severity of our laws in sentencing a man to die for stealing pork, although he admitted that a man might very justly be put to death for stealing a piece of iron, as that was of a permanent use; but stealing a piece of pork which, to use his own expression, was eat and passed off, he considered as sanguine (*sic*) in the extreme. With much earnestness he urged his being allowed to take them to New Zealand, where taking provisions was not accounted a crime; and so earnest was he on this expedient that he went to the master of an American vessel, then lying here, to request he would take them to New Zealand, where his ship would be loaded with potatoes as a recompense for their passage. During the three days that the fate of these criminals were pending Tip-a-he would take no nourishment whatever, and in several instances was inclined to be very furious. However, on its being signified that two were forgiven and that neither of the others would be executed at Sydney, he came about by degrees, but would never be reconciled to the idea of men suffering death for taking wherewithal to eat—a natural reasoning for one who inhabits a country where everything of that kind is common, and where their other wants are but few. A material object of Tip-a-he's visit here was to know if the ships that touched at the Bay all belonged to King George, and whether the refreshments and assistance he and his people gave them were right and agreeable to me. On this subject I explained to him the difference between the English and American colours, and that both were equally entitled to his kindness. He complained that in one instance a New Zealander had been flogged by the captain of a whaler and hoped that I would give orders that no such act should be committed in future, and very liberally observed that he supposed the captain must have been a very bad man in his own country to commit such violence on a stranger who he had nothing to do with. As all the whalers and other vessels which have visited Tip-a-he's residence have expressed

1806

He intercedes in  
favour of two  
condemned men.

Stealing food no  
crime.

English and  
foreign shipping.

1806  
Hospitality of  
the Maoris.

A silver medal.

Other presents.

New Zealanders  
as shepherds.

Tip-a-he's  
territories.

Cannibalism.

the great convenience, hospitality, and assistance they have uniformly received from this worthy chief and his people, I told him that I should impress on those who might visit him the necessity of their conducting themselves and people in a peaceable manner, and to give them articles in exchange for their potatoes and what stock he may in future have to spare—which the supplies of breeding swine and goats, with fowls, &c., sent from Norfolk Island, will soon enable him to do. To give him some proof of the estimation he was held in by me and the inhabitants of this place, I caused a medal to be made of silver with the following engraving: “Presented by Governor King to Tip-a-he, a Chief of New Zealand, during his visit at Port Jackson, in January, 1806”; and on the reverse: “In the reign of George the Third, by the Grace of God King of the United Kingdom of Great Britain and Ireland.” This medal was suspended by a strong silver chain round his neck. With this and his other presents he was pleased and gratified—particularly with the numerous tools and other articles of iron given him from the public stores and by every class of individuals. As several New Zealanders of the lower class had come here by different vessels, it was a desirable and useful object to endeavour to get a number of people sent from that country to distribute about as shepherds. On communicating this wish to Tip-a-he he appeared to give (*sic*) very readily into the idea, but insisted on sending the middling order of people, who would be more expert at labour and tractable than the *emokis* or lower class, who were too idle and vicious to send here and from whom no good could be got. Hence it appears, as well as from his general conversation, that the *emokis* are made to labour by the authority of the chiefs. How far our friend will be able to comply with his promise of sending some of his subjects here must depend on the degree of authority he possesses. From what I was able to learn, Tip-a-he's authority is very extensive. His residence we know to be on the north side of the Bay of Islands, just within Point Pococke,\* where he has a considerable hippah, or fortified place. The district extending to the northward is called Why-po-poo; but he claims the whole country from Moodee Whenua across the island, which must be very extensive; and, as a proof of the accuracy of his assertions, he admits that Mowpah, who is chief about the River Thames, is his rival on the south and Moodee Whenua on the north.

On the subject of cannibalism we could get but little certain information, as Tip-a-he decidedly denied the existence of such a

\* So named by Captain Cook. The point is now known as Cape Wiviki.



practice in his dominions, but said it was common in Mowpah's district. Ti-a-pe, a native of Moodee Whenua, also said it was a practice with Tip-a-he and his subjects. Where truth lies I am undecided; but I am of opinion, from everything I have heard and observed, that this practice most certainly prevails in New Zealand.

1806

As our visitor was constant in his attendance at Divine service, his ideas on the existence of a God and matters of religion were often conversed upon. The existence of a God who resides above they believe, and that his shadow frequently visits the earth; that it is in the power of the priests to invoke the appearance of this shadow (which is perceptible to them only) either for the purpose of succouring the sick or on any other exigency. The presence of the Deity is made known by a gentle whistling. The rest of the cure or other benefit depends on the charms or incantations of the priests, in whose efficacy they have an implicit belief. The dead are buried, and they believe that the spirit ascends; but if it enjoys a new state, or this "death is an eternal sleep," we could not ascertain. But that there are future rewards and punishments they consider as certain; as well as the existence of an evil spirit as opposed to the Deity, which they distinguish by the Otaheitian name of Eatooa; but they have no image to represent it, as have the Otaheitians.

New Zealander's  
idea of the  
supernatural.

Polygamy exists. Tip-a-he told us of several wives he has had, one of whom he killed for having a troublesome tongue; nor could he help testifying his surprise that many of the women here did not suffer the same fate. He has fifty-two children living, but he now attaches himself to only one young woman, by whom he has a son now eight years old, who accompanies him on his visit and of whom he is very fond.

Silencing a  
shrew.

Of the natives of this country he had the most contemptible opinion, which both he and Tookey did not fail to manifest by discovering the utmost abhorrence at their going naked, and their want of ingenuity or inclination to procure food and make themselves comfortable, on which subject Tip-a-he on every occasion reproached them very severely. Their battles he treated as the most trifling mode of warfare, and was astonished that when they had their adversary down they did not kill him, which it seems is a custom among the New Zealanders and is carried to the most unrelenting pitch; indeed, no race of men could be treated with a more marked contempt than the natives of this country were by our visitors, who, it must be confessed, were infinitely their superiors in every respect.

Contempt of  
aborigine of  
Australia.

Of Tip-a-he's independent and high spirits a better proof cannot be given than the following circumstance that occurred a week previous to his departure. Every person, particularly the

Tip-a-he's  
independence.

1806

officers and their wives, had made him presents of some baubles, as well as the greater part being of great use to him, which was clothing and iron tools of most description. An officer's wife had given him, among other things, a pair of ear-rings, which he very inconsiderately bestowed on a young woman. The donation was soon after discovered, and the ear-rings taken from the girl, on which Tip-a-he was reproached for his want of respect for the original donor, who, before this unlucky event, was very much respected by him. However, the instant he found that the ear-rings had been taken away, he packed every article up which he had received from that person (and among which were some useful things) and sent them by one of his sons; nor could he ever be persuaded to speak or see the lady who gave him the things, and constantly expressed his disgust at hearing of the presents he had received being in any way mentioned except by himself; and, to do him justice, he always took every opportunity of speaking of the donors with the most grateful respect.

\* \* \* \*

The Lady Nelson  
to convey  
Tip-a-he home.

That no unpleasant circumstance might occur to him (Tip-a-he) on the passage, I ordered the Lady Nelson for that service; and as so good an opportunity of gaining some knowledge of that country might not soon recur, I purposed sending Mr. Mac-Millan, surgeon of the Buffalo, with some other people, to remain there, under Tip-a-he's protection for five or six months, for the purpose of making such observations on the inhabitants, their manners and customs, with the formation of the country, as the time and their situation might admit of. This measure was stopped, after every preparation was made, by the arrival of a vessel from England, from whom I learned that an officer was on his way out to relieve me in consequence of a request I had made to that purpose in May, 1803. I therefore did not think the service would allow of my detaching the surgeon and any of the people in case of the Buffalo's services being wanted.\*

Tip-a-he was most chagrined at this disappointment, and I firmly believe he would have been very kind and attentive to the party; and whenever that country is explored, I am certain our worthy visitor's good offices will not be wanting.†

\* The Lady Nelson sailed on this mission on 24th February, 1806.

† It has been alleged that, notwithstanding his kind treatment at Sydney, Tip-a-he was the moving spirit in the massacre of the crew of the Boyd. His fellow-countrymen denied that he had any share in the matter, and the Reverend S. Marsden acquitted him of any complicity. He, with a number of his tribe were shot, in reprisal, by a party of whalers.

*King's Policy.*

1806

MY aim has been the prosperity of this colony, and giving a permanent security to the real interests of its inhabitants as far as lay in my power. I do not, nor cannot, expect to have satisfied every person. That, I have ever known, is in a great measure incompatible with a faithful discharge of duty. To receive the approbation of the good and honorable part of society has been and ever will be my ambition. If proofs had ever been advanced that my opinions and conduct were improper, and communicated without rancour, I should have considered myself much indebted to the man who would have convinced me of my mistake in a proper or friendly manner; but on the contrary, scurrility and abuse, clothed with darkness and assassination, have served instead of argument. My friends I therefore hope will not have a worse opinion of me for thinking such treatment beneath my resentment and unworthy of a reply.

King actuated  
by high motives.

*Newcastle.*

WHEN the Coal River was first settled it was with the view of turning the coal to advantage by sending it round here in the small vessels, for which purpose miners, &c., were sent, as it was expected the vessels going to China would ballast with it. This was done by one or two vessels, but the success of the speculation not encouraging them to take a greater quantity, and as the person I had put in command at that place had not conducted it so well as might have been done, and having no other person to place there, I was obliged to withdraw that settlement altogether.

The original  
settlement of  
Newcastle.

Having received the Secretary of State's direction in ———, \* pointing out that place as an eligible situation for the most turbulent and refractory characters to be kept at the coal works, after the insurrection in March, 1804, was suppressed, I turned my attention towards re-settling that place for the reception of desperate characters, but found some difficulty in fixing on a person to conduct it. Previous to the Calcutta's departure Lieutenant Menzies, of the Marines on board that ship made an offer of his services, with his commander's leave, when, after consulting, the business was closed and a Colonial appointment was given to Mr. Menzies to command and superintend that settlement, which was soon after named by that gentleman King's Town. The district I had previously named Newcastle, and

The second  
settlement.

Origin of names.

\* Blank in the manuscript. The letter referred to was doubtless that of 24th February, 1803, in which Lord Hobart directed King that incorrigible convicts who scorned reward and braved displeasure should, instead of being sent to Norfolk Island, be sent to labour at the coal-mines.

1806

Labouring for  
the Crown.

the county, Northumberland, these names having some analogy to those places in England. Lieutenant Menzies was appointed to act as a magistrate in that district. As much inconvenience would attend the convicts being allowed to work in what is called their own time for the individuals who went there for cedar and coals, that settlement was made in some measure immediately productive by the convicts collecting those articles which were disposed of to those who went for them, whereby they only required men to navigate the vessels, and the communication between the convicts at Newcastle and Sydney [was] greatly cut off thereby.

The prices charged were — per foot of cedar, and — per ton for coals, which was carried against the proprietors as a store debt.

The Irish  
convicts.

Of the Irish convicts sent to this place there were some equal to any act of depravity. The greater part were sent from Ireland for murders during the rebellion and were the most active persons in the insurrection here in March, 1804.

To guard those desperate characters, Lieutenant Menzies took only —\* soldiers of the New South Wales Corps and one Royal Marine belonging to the Buffalo.

Lieutenant  
Menzies.

From every account I have received there is much cause to be satisfied with Mr. Menzies,† who is certainly obliged to have recourse to severe measures with such a description of people as he is surrounded by. One desperado has thrice left the settlement and has as often been returned and punished. Several others have found means to find their way by land, arriving at Broken Bay naked and starving.

Escapees.

Menzies and the  
military.

I have no doubt Mr. Menzies would have done well but from his desire to have his party increased, and an officer to command in his absence. That officer, according to the tour of duty, certainly is and was a madman, having given the greatest proofs of his eccentricities—not to give them a worse name. His conduct to the commanding officer of the Corps was so improper that he was obliged to name another to relieve him; but before it could take place [he committed] such violent acts as obliged Mr. Menzies to send him under an arrest under several charges, the principal of which was for mutiny.

A dispute with  
the commanding  
officer.

Soon after Mr. Cressey went to Newcastle an altercation took place between Mr. Menzies and the commanding officer of

\* The guard consisted of one sergeant and nine privates of the New South Wales Corps, and one private marine.

† Although King here speaks of Menzies as if he was commandant at Newcastle at the time of writing, it will be seen from the paragraph which follows that it was written after Menzies had retired (March, 1805).



the Corps,\* consequent on the latter's [? former's] refusing to send a return to that officer, conceiving that such a return from him, as an officer not belonging to the Corps and having one marine under him, could only be made to the Governor. The commanding officer sent me these letters, but as it appeared to involve a question of military opinion I did not consider it incumbent on me to give any decision thereon.

1806

SOME Remarks on the Present State of the Colony of Sidney, in New South Wales, and on the means most likely to render it a productive, instead of an expensive, settlement.†

4th June, 1806.

June 4.

THE colony of Sidney at its first establishment may not inaptly be compared to a new-born infant hanging at its mother's breast. It deriv'd its whole nourishment from the vitals of its parent, and the exhaustion it occasioned was not unfelt. In this state it was tolerated only because no other expedient could be devis'd for disposing of those malefactors whom the policy of this country found it necessary to expel from society, and whom the American States, from an ill-consider'd pevishness of disposition, refus'd at that time to receive, as they formerly had done.

The origin of the settlement at Sydney.

Its present state may be compar'd to that of a young lad beginning to attain some learning, but, between the intervals of his schooling, gaining by his industry part of his necessary maintenance, and certain of soon becoming a blessing, instead of a burthen, to his family, if a little attention only is given to the direction of his talents and the advancement of his worldly interest.

A comparison.

In this stage he submits without a symptom of dissatisfaction to the will of his parents. The laws by which he is govern'd are ordinances either emanating from the will of his great father, the King, in the form of instructions to the Governor, or in proclamations issuing from the Governor himself, as the King's

An adolescent state.

\* The commanding officer at the time was Brevet-Major George Johnston. According to King, the dispute arose because Menzies claimed to command the subaltern and detachment of soldiers stationed at Newcastle.

† The manuscript from which this statement is printed is in the handwriting of the clerk or private secretary of Sir Joseph Banks. It contains, however, numerous interlinear and marginal corrections in Sir Joseph Banks's own handwriting and is initialled by him. At the time when it was written, much dissatisfaction was expressed by, and on behalf of, wealthy merchants and shippers at the restraints placed upon traders to Australia by the East India Company's charter. See Banks's remarks, post, p. 276.

1806  
June 4.

representative. These he obeys cheerfully, from a sense of the great benefits he yet continues to receive in supplies of provisions, clothes, &c., sent to him from Home at no small expence. He will, however, soon be in a situation to provide for himself; and when that time comes he will listen with avidity to the first person who reads to him that chapter in Blackstone which declares that a Briton inherits as his birthright the constitution of England, and carries this inheritance with him to every new country he may think fit to settle in.

National rights.

As soon as this notion enters into his mind, he will call out loudly for the enjoyment of municipal rights. He will soon obtain the privilege of a representative assembly, and with it the right of legislation. From that moment he will demand what he has now a right to claim—the benefit of the Act of Navigation—and can for the future be restrained in the article of shipbuilding, and in the enjoyment of that proportion of commerce which our colonies possess, by no other means than by the operation of the East India Company's charter, which, if enforc'd upon him, will either drive him into piratical enterprise or induce him to hazard a trade with other nations in preference to his mother country.

Growth of  
Colonial enter-  
prise and trade.

In this situation it is surely necessary to treat him with no small degree of kindness and attention. He is certainly *non sine diis animosus infans*.\* The moment the seal fishery open'd itself to view after the discovery of Basses Straits, a large number of persons enter'd into it with spirit and activity; the representation of Mr. McArthur respecting fine wool proves that speculation upon future advantages are carried much further at Sydney than sober European judgment will justify; and the article of *tre pang* had not been many weeks discover'd on the southern reef, in consequence of the wreck of the Porpoise, when suggestions were made of the propriety of opening an intercourse with China for the supply of the colony with Chinese manufactures by the sale of that article at Canton.

England and  
her colonies.

This project certainly ought not to be encourag'd. The whole benefit of the colony, either in consumption or in produce, should be secur'd, as far as possible, to the mother country; and this may with certainty be done if proper indulgences are granted to induce the colonists who grow rich there to remit their gains to England, which they most certainly will prefer above all other countries if they are well treated in their attempts to acquire property.

Branches of  
Colonial trade.

The adventures that open themselves at present and offer a fair prospect of advantage to the colonists are the seal fishery,

\* *Horace*, Ode iv, Book 3.

the coal trade, the production of fine wool, the collection of sandal-wood from the Feegee Islands, the fishery of *wrepang* on the reef near New Caledonia, and, in a much more distant view, the south whale fishery.

1806  
June 4.

The importance of the seal fishery is yet little understood. All seals produce oil and skins of some value. A certain portion of the seals of the southern hemisphere, called fur seals, have under the shaggy hair with which they are cover'd a coat of wool almost as fine as that of the beaver, and much more valuable than that of the rabbit. This, by the invention of a Mr. Chapman, can be separated from the hair that covers it and converted into a most valuable raw material for the hat manufactory, and possibly a more advantageous article to the revenue when employ'd in that trade than any other of equal value.

The seal fisheries.

The fur of this seal will, by coating over the sheep's wool bodies of which hats are made, convert them into what the hatters call fine plates, each of which pays a duty of two shillings or three shillings to Government. A seal, when worth ten shillings, will cover three or four of these bodies, and they clearly will produce to the revenue as much as its sale price to the fishermen, which it is presumed no other article will do.

The hat trade.

More of this kind of wool would be us'd in the manufacture of hats if a greater supply of it could be obtain'd. At present the makers of shawls and other fancy draperies purchase a part of the stock at a high rate and convert it into various elegant and expensive articles—one of which is a cloth, not a little resembling the *drap de vigogne*,\* and sold almost as dear. But the fur is not the only valuable produce of the seal fishery; it is from one species only that fur can be obtained, but every species, and the sea-elephant in particular, produce oil in abundance, and skins fit for the tanner.

Other uses of seals' skins.

The island of Van Dieman, the south-west coast of New Holland, and the southern parts of New Zealand, produce seals of all kinds in quantities at present almost innumerable. Their stations on rocks or in bays have remain'd unmolested since the Creation. The beach is incumber'd with their quantities, and those who visit their haunts have less trouble in killing them than the servants of the victualling office have who kill hogs in a pen with mallets.

Abundance of seals.

While this is the case the utmost encouragement should be given to those colonists who will embark in search of the seals. They are at present, from their accumulated number, an object of speculation to every nation that has ships. The Americans have lately visited Van Dieman's Land and kill'd great numbers

American and French adventurers.

\* Swans'-down.

1806  
June 4.

A permanent  
industry.

of them. During the short interval of peace a sealing vessel was fitted out from the Isle of France for the same purpose to Basses Straits.

These distant speculations, however, cannot be advantageous to foreigners. After the seals have been once effectually disturb'd their diminished quantities will not then afford sufficient encouragement to induce Americans or Frenchmen to interfere with our colonists ; but there can be no doubt that at all times hereafter seals will be attainable in great quantities—as is now the case in Newfoundland—by stationary fishers, who know the courses they take in their migrations, and can intercept them in their progress by nets and other contrivances. Thus, if we encourage our new settlers to disturb as speedily as possible every seal station they can discover, we shall receive from them an immense supply of skins and oil, in the first instance ; shall prevent the interference of foreign nations in future in the sealing fishery ; and secure to ourselves a permanent fishery hereafter, because it will be carried out by means which none but stationary fishermen can provide.

The prospect of  
the wool trade.

On the subject of fine wool little need be said. Government here seem inclin'd to believe that a very few years will produce a very large increase of the small number of merino sheep which Capt. Waterhouse purchas'd of Mrs. Gordon, at the Cape, and carried to Port Jackson ; in fact the herbage of the colony is by no means so well adapted to the sheep farming as that of Europe. The progress of the flock will, therefore, be slow ; but as the true merino breed will certainly retain the superiority of their fleeces, and produce wool worth six shillings a pound at the least when wash'd and scour'd, or six hundred and seventy-two pounds sterling a ton, there can be no doubt that it will bear the necessary charges of freight, insurance, &c., and become in due time a profitable article of investment for a cargo from Port Jackson to London.

Trade with  
China to be  
discouraged.

During the time while the seal fishery continues to give great profit, as must be the case till the rocks of Van Dieman's Land and New Zealand have yielded their maiden harvest, it does not seem necessary to encourage materialy any other kind of adventure. The fishing for *trepang*, which cannot be sold but in China, may safely be discourag'd at present, and consider'd as a reserve for an increas'd population and diminish'd resources. Whenever the colony may hereafter resort to it, the East India Company will, no doubt, send an annual ship to take off the quantity procur'd, as it will by so doing supply themselves with an investment for China of as certain a sale as silver, and at the same time preclude all pretence of the colonists to carry it to Canton in their own vessels.



The collectors of sandal-wood should be encourag'd, as the Americans will certainly obtain every pound of that valuable article which our colonists neglect to procure. Its high price, however, will amply provide for the cost of sending it to England, where the East India Company will find it in their interest to purchase it at rates very advantageous to the original shippers.

1806

June 4.

Sandalwood.

It will clearly be expedient to promote a trade in coals between the colony and our new acquisition at the Cape. At present coals may be brought to the Cape by ships sent to New South Wales for that purpose, which will be found a much more economical mode of supply than sending coals from England, as was done when the Cape was last in our hands. Thus, if a proper trade is set on foot, and encouragement is given to the colonists by allowing the entry of new articles from thence into the United Kingdom without charging upon them the exorbitant and impolitic duty now levied on all unrated goods, a supply of cabinet woods for veneers, dying stuff, gums, and many other useful raw materials will, by degrees, find its way to the mother country, while the collecting of them will give ample encouragement to the industry of the stationary inhabitants, their children and servants.

Coals for the Cape.

At present the colonists have very little craft of any kind, nor ought they to be allowed any increase till regulations respecting the size of their vessels and the limits within which they may be allow'd to navigate have been sanction'd by His Majesty's Ministers, and agreed to by the directors of the East India Company. This cannot be a difficult task, as the colonists have no possible claim to visit lands within the limits of the Company's charter north of ten degrees south latitude, nor the Company a just reason for withholding from them the privilege of going thus far. They will by this arrangement be effectually restrain'd from all intercourse with the colonies of Europeans in the East Indies, tho' permitted to visit every part of the immense continent to which they are destin'd in due time to give a British population.

The Colonial vessels.

This indulgence will at once put the colony on a most respectable footing in point of navigation, enable the colonists to be usefull to themselves, and in time advantageous to their mother country; and it will, by enabling them to be honest traders, remove all hazard of their becoming pyrates, the fear of which seems to haunt the Court of Directors so continually.

An indulgence.

A concession on the part of the East India Company, so honorable and so liberal in the first instance, will destroy at once all the obliquy arising from the unreasonableness of a monopoly excluding any of their fellow subjects from seas in which themselves have no reason to navigate, and a continent they have

The monopoly of the East India Company.

1806  
June 4.

*A terra incognita.*

no wish to explore—a conduct for which they are now daily and hourly reproach'd; while it will justify in the eyes of all mankind the most rigorous exercise of their right to confiscate ship and cargo, in case any colonist should hereafter be so imprudent as to pass the limit of the vast area given up to him for the exercise of his talents and the employment of his commercial capital. It will give an opportunity to our countrymen to occupy in succession every desirable situation which might tempt other nations to colonise and lay the foundation of a claim which the lapse of time may hereafter mature of resisting the attempt of other countries to participate in the sovereignty of a mass of land great enough in point of extent to satisfy the ambition even of a French Emperor; and it must be remember'd that the district now propos'd to be open'd to the investigation of British adventure is about as unknown to civilis'd nations as an equal portion of the moon, and probably hides within its broad bosom objects of commerce, materials for manufacture, and sources of wealth of the utmost importance to the future welfare and prosperity of the United Kingdom. J.B.

July 7.  
Australasia.

SOME Observations on a Bill for admitting the produce of New South Wales to entry at the Customs-house of the United Kingdom.\* (Banks Papers.)

7th July, 1806.

Van Diemen's  
Land

WILL it not be better, instead of the doubtful phrase of "Australasia" or "New South Wales," terms certainly not synonymous, and which seem to cover some secret claims, to say plainly "His Majesty's colonies, &c., of New South Wales and Van Diemen's Land"? This puts in a claim for the territorial possession of Van Diemen's Land, and leaves the greatest part of New Holland, as it ought to be left, open to the enterprise of any European nation who may venture in time of peace to make a settlement there, under a moral certainty of its falling into our hands in the event of war. The territorial possession of Van Diemen's Land is worth asserting, and, as we have now two settlements upon it—one on the north and the other on the south side—may with some color of justice be maintained, and it will in time become a most valuable nursery for seals if other nations can be prevented from robbing the seal harbours when a stock of seals has accumulated in them.

Trading limits.

The north and south limits assigned by the Bill to the lands, the produce of which may be legally brought to England, deserve consideration. Some sea room should be allowed to our enter-

\* These observations are in the handwriting of Sir Joseph Banks.

prising colonists in case they choose to circumnavigate the northern point of the third continent. The southern passages of Torres Straits are very shallow. To the northward there is deeper water. The ninth degree of south lat. is therefore submitted as the northern limit in the place of  $10^{\circ} 37'$ . It opens no additional prospect to the colonists of visiting our European settlements, but facilitates considerably the investigation of the northern, and probably the most interesting, parts of New Holland.

Why any southern boundary should be set to the enterprise of our successful sealers does not appear. The limit proposed by the bill of  $43^{\circ} 9' S.$  will prevent them from visiting the south part of New Zealand, where treasures of seal-skins and oil have been accumulating for ages, and the little island of Penantipode, which has furnished 30,000 of the seal-skins and a proportionate quantity of the seal oil laden on board the expected ship which their Lordships have been graciously pleased to admit to an entry here, to the no small encouragement of the southern fishery. Besides, it is surely probable that the Antarctic, as well as the Arctic, regions produce whales and other sea monsters beneficial to fishermen, which may be made a source of profit to our new settlers, but cannot be advantageously fished for by any other Englishmen.

Will it be necessary to enact anything relative to the registration of ships built in New South Wales, either by an act of Government there or on their arrival in England, if furnished with proper certificates, or do the present navigation laws attach upon His Majesty's territories there as soon as they are declared to be colonies? Timber costs nothing there, and ship timber of excellent quality is believed to exist on the coast, not far to the north of our settlements. Ships will in consequence be soon built there, notwithstanding the high price that labor must for some time continue to bear. If the masts sent home and fixed in the Sydney prove good—and we are told that she herself has a ——\* mast standing in her cut in that country—the probability of ship-building becoming a trade there will be much increased.

Is it necessary in this Bill to make any provision for the prevention of American intercourse with our infant colonies? If the existing laws are sufficient for that purpose, instructions ought to be sent to the Governor to enforce them with severity. The mischief the Americans have done by stealing convicts from Sydney, and when they found them useless or mischievous by landing them on the South Sea Islands, is almost incal-

1806  
July 7.

The Southern  
Fisheries.

Ships built in  
New South  
Wales.

Colonial timber.

American  
enterprise.

\* Blank in the original.

1806  
 July 7.  
 Europeans  
 landed on the  
 Islands.

culable. Otaheite is said to be at present in the hands of about 100 white men, chiefly English convicts, who lend their assistance as warriors to the chief, whoever he may be, who offers them the most acceptable wages, payable in women, hogs, &c. ; and we are told that these banditti have by the introduction of diseases, by devastation, murder, and all kinds of European barbarism, reduced the population of that once interesting island to less than one-tenth of what it was when the Endeavor visited it in 1768. Surely these people will, if not otherwise provided for, soon become buccaneers and pirates.

Aug. 12.

### SHIPPING RETURNS.\*

Shipping  
 entered inwards  
 at Port Jackson.

A LIST of Ships and Vessels which have entered Inwards in the Harbour of Port Jackson, in His Majesty's territory of New South Wales, between the 1st day of Jan'y, 1806, and the 12th day of August following, with the lading of each vessel.

Time of entry, Mar. 10 ; vessel's name, Favourite ; master's name, Jon. Paddock ; number of tons, 245 ; number of guns, 4 ; number of men, 36 ; where built, Nantucket ; where registered, Nantucket ; owners' name, Gardener & Co. ; general cargo, 60,000 seal skins ; from whence, E. Coast of New Zealand ; where bond given, Sydney.

Time of entry, Apr. 22 ; vessel's name, Aurora ; master's name, Andw. Meryck ; number of tons, 302 ; number of men, 26 ; where built, Melford ; where registered, Biddeford ; owner's name, Danl. Sterbeck ; general cargo, 40 ton oil, 150 lbs. tobacco ; from whence, New Zealand ; where bond given, Sydney.

Time of entry, July 23 ; vessel's name, Vulture ; master's name, Thos. Folger ; number of tons, 312 ; number of guns, 14 ; number of men, 30 ; where built, French ; where registered, London ; owners' name, Mather & Co. ; general cargo, miscellaneous merchandise ; from whence, New Zealand.

J. HARRIS, Naval Officer.

### SHIPPING RETURNS.†

Shipping  
 entered out-  
 wards at Port  
 Jackson.

A LIST of Ships and Vessels which have cleared Outwards from the Harbour of Port Jackson, in His Majesty's territory of

\* Only vessels from New Zealand are given.

† Only vessels to New Zealand are given.



New South Wales, between the 1st day of January, 1806, and the 12th day of August following, with the lading of each vessel.

1806  
Aug. 12.

Time of clearing, Mar. 25; vessel's name, *Star*; master's name, Jas. Birnie; number of tons, 119; number of guns, 6; number of men, 20; where built, Calcutta; where registered, London; owners' name, Birnie and Co.; general cargo, ballast; whither bound, off New Zealand; where bond given, Sydney.

J. HARRIS, Naval Officer.

## SHIPPING RETURNS.\*

1807  
June 30.

REPORT of Ships and Vessels entered Inwards at the port of Port Jackson, in His Majesty's colony of New South Wales, from the 1st of January to the 30th June, 1807.

Ships entered  
inwards at Port  
Jackson.

When entered, April 8; name of the ship, *Elizabeth*; master, E. Bunker; build, foreign; number of tons, 238; number of guns, 2; number of men, 17; registered, London; names of the owners, Campbell & Wilson; from whence, The Fishery, off New Zealand.

When entered, April 8; name of the ship, *Commerce*; master, James Birnie; build, Plantation; number of tons, 225; number of guns, 2; number of men, 23; built, Newfoundland; registered, London; name of the owner, James Birnie; from whence, Penantipodes.

When entered, May 14; name of the ship, *Albion*; master, Cuth't Richardson; build, British; number of tons, 362; number of guns, 10; number of men, 30; built, Deptford; registered, London; names of the owners, Wilson, Campbell, & Page; from whence, The Fishery, off New Zealand.

ROB'T CAMPBELL, Naval Officer.

## SURGEON LUTTRELL TO UNDER SECRETARY SULLIVAN.

[Extracts.]

HON'D SIR,—

Sydney, 8th October, 1807.

Oct. 8.

When I had the pleasure of addressing you last year by the *Alexander*, Capt'n. Brooks,† we were then involved in all the miseries of famine, per various causes; but, thanks be

"The miseries of  
famine."

\* Only vessels from New Zealand are given.

† The *Alexander* sailed from Sydney for England on 10th November, 1806.

1807  
Oct. 8.

Consequences of  
the flood.

to the Supreme Disposer of events, we have struggled through it, and as our last maize crop proved very abundant, our distresses are much relieved; but the consequences of the flood is still felt, and will be for some time in a very great degree, for as there was almost a total destruction of the pigs and every sort of poultry by the inundation, it will be some months before any quantity can be again reared, for it is only since the maize crop that there has been any food to properly feed them with. A very serious evil to the settlers in the country has arisen out of the flood is that of pig-stealing all over the country by the convict serv'ts and inferior class of settlers that have been formerly convicts, who league with the others in their nightly depredations. This evil is carried on by those rogues to the very great detriment of the colony at large, for old and young, whether nearly ready to farrow or not, are all equally destroy'd by them, and as this crime is but trivially punished by the laws of England, the punishment that is inflicted on them they totally disregard, and they return to their destructive and wanton practice with a perfect nonchalance. Pig-stealing in this colony ought to be a capital offence, as it is at present the only animal food, except poultry, of the great body of the settlers, as sheep are not yet numerous in the colony, and are in few hands, and the horn cattle is still fewer, although they are rapidly increasing, as the climate agrees with them remarkably well.

\* \* \* \*

Graziers and  
sheep and cattle  
walks.

Men whose view of settling in the colony as graziers only do little benefit to it, as they do not as graziers promote the clearing and cultivating of the country. To grant, therefore, very large tracks of land, and the permission to purchase a considerable quantity of cattle, by the produce of which they mean to live, is incompatible with the interests of the colony. It is by combining the grazier with the farmer that the increasing prosperity of the country is to be expected; for, as the toil and expence to bring a wooded country into cultivation requires both labour and money, the person whose\* the quantity of stock he possesses is placed above it\* to it. On the other hand the poor cultivator without\* who is forced to labour hard for his subsistence, by clearing the land for a precarious crop, is depressed in spirits, and instead of carrying on his cultivation with spirit and energy, he views with silent dejection his neighbour indolently abounding in the prosperity of his heads of cattle. . . . As there is a great want of mechanics of various descriptions, such as carpenters, masons, smiths, wheelwrights, brickmakers, &c., they might be permitted to come into the country either at their

Grazing *versus*  
farming.

Scarcity of  
mechanics.

own expence, or on such conditions as Government might chuse, and for them to work at their different trades, but not to have grants of land assigned them. The want of a number of free artificers is greatly felt in every part of the country, and is a considerable hindrance to the improvement of the farms, many of which are in a most wretched state for want of proper buildings on them. But industry here is in general at a low ebb. A colony founded principally by convicts is a long time advancing to any degree of perfection. When working as serv'ts to Government, or to the different settlers unto whom they are granted, the little labour they perform scarcely amounts to a fourth part that a labourer in England would accomplish in a day. And those that are become free, and in the earlier periods of the colony had lands granted them, are for the most part a very worthless, dissipated class, retaining the vicious propensities and habits which occasioned them to come to this country. A spirit of trading and dealing, amounting nearer to gambling than anything else, pervades the whole of them, and it is not uncommon for a man, scarce worth anything else than his crop on the ground, to purchase a sorry horse for upwards of a hundred and twenty and thirty or forty pounds, and to give his assignment of his growing crop for it. After having it, perhaps, for a few days, he sells it again to another person for something else, and so on from one to another. And whilst this sort of trafficking is going on, labour is at a total standstill, and the cultivation of the ground neglected; and should there happen to be a quantity of rum in the colony, a debouching of several days succeeds. Prior to Governor Bligh's arrival, a considerable injury to the colony had crept in: that of ticket-of-leave men—men that were taken off the stores, and permitted to work for themselves. The original idea might have been a good one; but, as a great number of the most worthless of the convicts had from some recommendation or other obtained this liberty, the colony, instead of reaping a benefit either from their labour or skill in any mechanic branch, the greatest part of them became hucksters and dealers in various articles of food, and especially during the famine, enhancing the price of every commodity on the people, and making them their prey. But Governor Bligh, seeing the pernicious tendency of the measure, has recalled a great number of them into Government employ.

1807  
Oct. 8.

Industry  
languishing

The spirit of  
gambling.

Ticket-of-leave  
men.

\* \* \* \*

The climate here is so delightful that there is, take it altogether, scarce any to be compared to it. The want of a better society, the remoteness of our situation, and the little intercourse with our parent state, by which we are deprived of many of those comforts and necessities we have been accusom'd

Social life.

|                              |   |
|------------------------------|---|
| 1807<br>Oct. 8.<br>—         | to, and often the total privation of every article of cloathing and many et cæteras in haberdash'ry, &c., necessary to family use, makes us lament the immense distance between us, and wishfully to sigh for a sight of Old England.   |
| Intercourse with<br>England. | If a more regular intercourse was opened between this and the mother country, a ship from England—with a cargo of various articles of food, ironmongery, and cloathing of different kinds, paint, glass, earthenware, &c., &c.—every three months would find a sure and ready market; or if one or two of the China ships was to make this in their passage to China with a cargo for this country it would answer very well, and I do not believe the passage to China would be longer by this route than by the eastern passage, and the danger is incomparably less; but I am in hopes the Legislature will, in their justice and wisdom, upon a renewal of the East India Charter, grant a free trade, under certain limitations, both to China and the East Indies; but in the course of a few years more, by extending our settlements eight or ten degrees further to the north, every production of India and China might be had from our own coast, as I believe there are some harbours within that distance that would answer every purpose of forming a settlement on them. Amongst the disadvantages that this country at present labours under is the want of an exportable article for shipping that touch here, either for the India, China, or the Home market. A few of the ships that have arrived have had a Home freight of whale oil and seal skins; but the latter trade is greatly on the decline, as the seals are all nearly destroy'd on the southern islands on this coast, or, from the constant molestation they have suffer'd, have abandoned the islands. To get a cargo of skins, new and more distant islands must be discover'd, and the consequent risk and expence must be so much increased that the amount of the cargoes will hardly pay the charges. As the climate of this country is favorable to the growth of the annual cotton plant, such as is the produce of the Carolinas, the cultivation of it as an exportable article for the China market would prove of great benefit to the colony; and as the demand for raw cotton is very great at China, it would become an article for that market for shipping that bring cargoes to this country and are proceeding on to China. But, unfortunately for the colony, there is not a true cotton plant in it, or ever was since the colony was founded—the <i>Gossypium</i> of Linné. It would be meritorious in any individual to send out both seeds and plants if the Government should not consider it as an object worthy their attention. Wool, |
| Free-trade with<br>the East. | the Government was falsely informed, was an article which, in the course of a few years, would become an article of the utmost importance to Britain; but the fallacy of the account I in my  |
| Articles of<br>export.       |   |
| The fisheries.               |   |
| Cotton.                      |   |
| The wool trade.              |   |



former letter set forth, and what I have since seen of the sheep of this country I am still further confirmed what I advanced on that subject—that at present there is not a good fleece in the country, and it will be many years before the hair is totally obliterated. Besides, a wet season diseases them, and they die out of number; it is the worse and most precarious stock in the country. The horn cattle are increasing rapidly, and the meat of them is equal to English beef, and it only wants a dispersion of them amongst the people that are worthy to have them to make this a much more thriving colony than it has been. A few individuals have, for this country, large herds, from 100 to 200 head of cattle, but the prices they ask for a cow are such that but few can venture on the purchase of them—from sixty to seventy pounds for a cow or calf, a bullock from fifty to sixty; and now I have enter'd on the price of the horn cattle, I will just enumerate prices of the various stock, and grain, &c.:—Sheep: To purchase a flock of ewes and wethers, with lambs, two pounds a head, one with another. Wethers, for the butcher, from three pounds to five; retail'd out by the butcher at two shillings pr. lb.; prior to the flood, at one shilling. A small pig at 6 or 7 weeks old, 20 shillings; a full grown hog, eight pounds or more; pork, retail'd by the butcher at 22d. per lb.; grown fowls, five shillings each; wheat, at present, 16s. per bushel; maize, 6s. per bushel; potatoes, 26s. pr. c. weight; green peas, 1s. 6d. pr. quart; a cabbage, 6d.; no cheese made in the country; a small quantity of butter at 6s. pr. lb. by a few individuals. The colony at present is in absolute want of butter, cheese, porter, wine, spirits, all sorts of cloathing, tea, sugar, all sorts of kitchen utensils, bedding, blankets, sheets, &c., &c.; and what adds to our distresses is, immediately as any of those articles coming into the colony they are purchased up by a few hucksters in Sydney and resold to the settlers and others at the enormous prices of three and four hundred pr. c't from the imported price. If a merchant in England was to send a trusty free man into this country with a regular consignment of goods he would do well. If you remember, sir, it was required of me, on my coming into the colony, to make the rearing and breeding of sheep the first object of my attention, in consequence of the representations that had been made to Government of the value of the wool. Accordingly, on my coming into the country, I purchased six hundred pounds' worth of sheep; but, as I found it was likely to be a very losing concern, and the wool to be little or no value, I thought it necessary to dispose of more than half of my flock, but I have now upwards of three hundred. Our increased expences, arising from the extreme dearness of provisions, occasioned by the

1807  
Oct. 8.

The cattle.

Prices of stock;

and of grain,  
pulse, &c.

Provisions and  
utensils.

Luttrell as a  
sheep-farmer.

1807  
Oct. 8.  
—  
Luttrell asks for  
more cattle.

floods, with the money I have necessarily expended on my farm, has in great measure exhausted my little fortune, and you will know I have a numerous family. I shall be gratefully thankful to you, sir, to procure for me the purchase of six more cows, to the six I already have, for the better support of my family, as it is from the horn cattle only that a family can hope to prosper. I should be glad to purchase them by two at a time, according as they suit my circumstances, or to pay for them by their produce with interest thereon. The horn cattle of this country being a very mixed breed, chiefly from cattle imported from the Cape of Good Hope and from India, with some few from England and St. Helena, and as the cattle at the Cape will never give any milk unless they have their calves by their side, the cattle of this colony partake of the same habits. A cow here can only be milked once a day, having shut up the calf in a pen all night.

\* \* \* \*

Peaches. Our climate produces us peaches in the most luxuriant manner, and some of excellent quality and flavour; at present they are but of little use to the colonist. Cyder has been attempted to be made from them, but the experiment has not been successful. Fine brandy might be made from them; but as no distillation is allowed in the colony, we are not able to derive any advantage from what Nature so bountifully bestows on us, although very considerable sums annually goes out of this colony for the purchase of very inferior Rio rum, rum from Bengal, &c., &c., which money might be kept in the colony was a distillery to be carried on under proper regulations and restrictions. Beer cannot be made good here from the want of hops, and the climate is much too warm for their growth; attempts have been made to raise them, but without succeeding.

Rum.

Beer.

Grapes. Grapes on the first settling of the colony thrive very well, and promised to be a useful and profitable culture; but from some unknown cause or other they are now annually blighted, and the culture of them is entirely given up; but I believe they have not grapes proper for the climate, and a bad management has been one principal cause of their failure, for as this climate is nearly similar to the Cape, where they make very good wine, it appears paradoxical to me why, under proper management, they should not succeed here. I am attempting to rear them at my farm, and I hope to succeed. Tobacco might be raised in large quantities, which also takes a considerable sum from the colony for the purchase of Brazil tobacco; but the culture of it has not been attempted, in great measure from the poverty of the settlers, not being able to raise buildings for the drying and curing it,

Tobacco.

Flax and hemp. and from the number of hands necessary in the culture. Flax

succeeds very well, as also hemp, growing on the rich lands of the Hawkesbury to a most luxuriant height, and if proper encouragement was given for the growth and manufacture of it, it would become an article of the greatest importance to the colony. The plant called the New Zealand flax\* thrives remarkably well; and if we knew how to manufacture the fibre it would be superior either to cotton or the common flax, as it is exceedingly strong, and has a rich, glossy, silk-like feel and look; but the years of famine from the occasional floods have caused wheat and maize only to be attended to preserve our existence. Our fruits, besides peaches before-mentioned, we have apricots, some pears, some apples, quinces (far superior in size and flavour to the English), mulberries (English, China, and the Cape), strawberries, raspberries, nectarines (imported by Gov'r Bligh), a fine Japan fruit called loquet, plumbs (but they do not bear well; we want cherries), greengage plumbs, filberts, walnuts, pistachio nuts, olives. Oranges and lemons we have but not in abundance, considering the length of time the colony has been settled. But little attention seems to have been paid either to gardening or to any improvement in agriculture, considering the time the colony has been settled; but I hope there is every prospect of the colony improving under the judicious care of our present Governor, who certainly has the welfare of the colony much at heart. The improvements that have taken place in every part of the country since he began his government have proved of the greatest utility. Abuses that had been long suffered to exist he has rectified and done away; the more than Robersperian rule he has crushed, and his attention has been directed to the welfare and happiness of all the colony, instead of the private advantage and emolument of a few interested individuals that heretofore bore all the sway in the colony, and who, under the imbecile government of Governor King, were actually the governors of the colony. Prior to Governor Bligh coming into the colony a clamour—† been raised against him, and an opposition formed to counteract his government, and the recent events of the colony has fully confirmed what was before only rumored. In consequence of the officers of the Porpoise going to England, I have been appointed by Governor Bligh as surgeon to the ship. To-morrow we sail for the Derwent. If my desultory letter will afford you, sir, any amusement or information, I shall always be happy to give you such.

1807  
Oct. 8.

Fruit.

Agriculture  
neglected.

Bligh

King.

Bligh's enemies.

I am, sir, &c.,

E. LUTTRELL.

\* *Phormium tenax*.

† MS. torn.

1807

## EX-GOVERNOR KING ON AUSTRALIAN TIMBERS, &amp;c.\*

December, 1807.

Dec. —

Ironbark and  
stringybark  
timbers

THE iron† and stringy barks‡ are straight, from 40 to 80 feet high, and 18 to 20 inches diameter, generally sound throughout, without much crooked or compass timber. It is heavy, but the latter not more so than oak. Both are well adapted to the different purposes of keels, beams, uprights, and floor timbers of large scantling, and many other purposes where straight and durable timber is required. Of the stringybark several ships have had lower masts. The Buffalo now has a fore and mizen mast and boltsprit of that wood, and two cheeks of the main-mast, all which she had in 1799, and has had them ever since. Their excellence, as well as that of studding sails and other booms, was sufficiently tried in the blowing weather and high seas she experienced in two voyages round Cape Horn. Fifty-gun ships' foremasts and mizen-masts, might be selected, and it may be presumed that spindles for larger ships' masts might be made from those trees which abound in all parts.

Spars on the  
Buffalo.

Box-wood.

The box§ is a very fine timber, and grows in great abundance about Parramatta, quite straight, from 60 to 100 feet high, and from 18 to 26 inches in diameter, tapering but little. The crooked wood, being the branches, &c., are of small size; but this timber answers every purpose of the foregoing species, except that growing so very straight it might not answer so well for floor timbers; but for every kind of straight work, gun-carriages, &c., is equal to any wood in the world. Much of it has been used in Portsmouth Yard for tillers of all rates.

Bluegum and  
blackbutt.

The blue|| and blackbuted blue gum¶ are in New South Wales esteemed good woods, and some vessels which answer extremely well have been built principally of these woods, from their affording good crooked timber and cutting well into the planks. Most of this species that I saw in Portsmouth Yard are shaky, which may be owing to their being cut down at an improper time of the year; but that circumstance I do not think ought to condemn that wood, without a farther trial of its good or bad qualities; and if the experience of those who have worked those woods can be relied on, from their making choice of it to build their vessels, it ought to be equally considered with the rest, if found necessary to send for timber to N.S. Wales; and

\* This document was addressed to the Commissioners of the Board of Revision. † *Eucalyptus paniculata* and others. ‡ *Eucalyptus capitellata* and *E. eugenoides*. § *Eucalyptus hemiphloia*. || *Eucalyptus saligna*. ¶ *Eucalyptus pilularis*.



as a farther proof of the goodness of all these foregoing woods, Gov'r Hunter left a frame of a vessel\* composed of the different species of woods, and intended to be 150 tons, which for want of shipwrights could not be finished. The frame was up seven years, exposed to all weathers, and when taken down to put into smaller vessels the whole was perfectly sound and good, nor could the treenails be drove out.

1807

Dec. —

A proof of the  
durability of  
Colonial timber.

\*                      \*                      \*                      \*

Never having landed at New Zealand I cannot report on this subject from my own knowledge, but have always understood that very fine masting of pine, and wood fit for planking, abounds throughout and is easily procured—which the good terms we are on with Tip-a-he, Chief of the Bay of Islands, would greatly facilitate the acquiring any quantity. And I am persuaded that the hemp† of that country would be a great object of national importance and of easy acquisition. On these subjects much more satisfactory intelligence may be readily obtained from masters of south whalers, who have constantly refreshed at New Zealand, and when the Board wishes it I will send or attend with them.

New Zealand  
timbers.

Respecting the growth of hemp in New South Wales, we had no seed until 1804; when about half a pint grew it was propagated and grew extremely luxuriant, the plant being eleven feet high and of a very superior staple. A quantity of this was manufactured for different purposes, among which was a main and mizen topsail, the greatest part of a mainsail, and an awning, with other sails, &c., for the Buffalo, which lasted most of the passage from New South Wales to this country, and can now be produced as a sample of its goodness and strength.

Hemp.

The ironstone about New South Wales has not been considered on account of its not yielding a sufficient proportion of iron to encourage its being worked. A quantity of specimens of ores were received from Port Dalrymple, which has been tried here in the dock-yard, and from the enclosed report you will perceive that this ore yields 60 lb. of pure iron from 100 lb. of ore, samples of which I shall present to your Board, and the iron smelted therefrom.

Ironstone.

I have, &c.,

PHILIP GIDLEY KING.

\* The Portland.

† *Phormium tenax*.

1808

Oct. 1.

LIEUTENANT-GOVERNOR COLLINS TO UNDER-SECRETARY COOKE.

Hobart Town, Van Diemen's Land,

Sir,

1st October, 1808.

Governor King's  
opinion of  
Hobart Town.

The ship *Rose* being about to depart hence for England, I avail myself of the opportunity of addressing you upon the subject of a dispatch received from Lord Castlereagh at Port Jackson, an extract of which has been transmitted to me by Lieutenant-Colonel Foveaux. It is therein stated that "this settlement is represented by Governor King to be at too great a distance for the general resort of whalers, and therefore not likely to become of any material importance." What motive that officer could have for this assertion is unknown to me, and I cannot but think he must have intended to have spoken of the settlement at Port Dalrymple, as it is well known that no whaler has ever put in there for the purpose of procuring a cargo; whereas this place has been resorted to every season since I have been here by whalers, many of whom have filled their ships with oil procured in the river and adjacent bays, and proceeded therewith to England. It is situated contiguous to New Zealand, the advantage of which is that at the end of the fishing season there, if it should have proved unsuccessful, the ships may run to this river and compleat their cargo, as the black whale resorts hither when the sperm whales quit the coast of New Zealand. Several of the latter have also been killed off Cape Pillar by ships coming to this river, and a whaler, the *Dubuc*, now about to return to England, has taken in 180 tons of black whale oil procured here this season.

Collins thinks he  
must have  
meant Port  
Dalrymple.

Advantages of  
Hobart Town.

Proposed reduc-  
tion of the  
establishment.

I am the more desirous of stating these particulars to you, sir, as it appears by Lord Castlereagh's letter that in the event of Governor King's information being right no settlers are to be sent here, but it is to be retained as a place where convicts may be usefully employed until the utility of forming in it a more permanent establishment may be more fully ascertained.

Norfolk Island-  
ers at Hobart  
Town.

At the date of His Lordship's letter it could not have been known that the whole of the settlers at Norfolk Island, with very few exceptions, having it in their option where to fix their future residence, had made their election of this settlement, a great part of whom are now in it, and the remainder daily expected, from whose exertions, if properly supported and encouraged, I have every hope that this part of New Holland will ultimately be entitled to attention.

I have, &c.,

DAVID COLLINS.

## GOVERNOR BLIGH TO VISCOUNT CASTLEREAGH.

1809  
June 10.

His Majesty's Ship Porpoise, in the Derwent,  
MY LORD,— New South Wales, 10th June, 1809.

1. It gives me great concern to be still under the necessity to have my dispatch descriptive of the persons who have so unwarrantably conducted themselves against the welfare of this territory, which, but for their unparalleled proceedings, would have been replete with accounts of the improvement of a people who, in expectation of further benefits which were progressively arising out of faith, hope, and charity, would have become industrious and good subjects; but this reverse has caused the good to suffer, and led those whose minds were weak or vicious to be biassed by present advantages, or prospects of future which they had not sense to see could not be realised. Profligacy in others appears to complete the picture of the late rebellion, and, although a severe scourge, encourages me to hope will produce good fellowship and that purity which otherwise would have been much more remote. It is impossible, however, that the people can be in a more wretched state. Free man, but poor; the emancipated man returning from his unlawful way of life, and the unhappy prisoner under his penance of retribution, all now look with anxious hearts to the hour of relief by their gracious Sovereign.

Bligh on the  
condition of  
New South  
Wales.

2. I have not been able to render them any personal service, except remaining in the territory, that every act of the principal rulers, or their Courts, might become doubly unlawful, and their revenge kept within certain bounds, to which otherwise there was reason to apprehend there would have been no limits; imprisonment would not have been sufficient atonement to them from the honest men for being loyal.

His object in  
remaining in the  
colony.

\* \* \* \*

14. The New Zealand youth arrived safe, with his presents for A Maori.  
his chief, Tippahee, to whom he had an early opportunity to  
return.

I have, &c.,

WM. BLIGH.

## MEMORANDUM CONCERNING NEW SOUTH WALES.\*

Dec. 30.

IN very distant and but seldom frequented settlements, like that of New South Wales, it is of the utmost consequence to husband Stores.

\* This statement is not signed, nor does it bear upon its face any indication of the person to whom it was addressed. It contains internal evidence of having been written by a person (apparently an officer) who was in the colony during the governorship of Hunter, and who returned

1809  
Dec. 30.

with all possible care the Colonial stores of every description ; but particularly such as are of European produce or manufacture.

Moorings  
wanted in Port  
Jackson.

As cables and cordage of every description is not only very expensive in the first instance, but extremely difficult to procure in so remote a colony, every possible means should be resorted to to preserve them. It is therefore absolutely necessary that three sets of mooring chains and bridles should be sent out and laid down in Port Jackson. One set equal to hold a ship of the line, and two sets for frigates. Such moorings would in a few years nearly repay their first cost by preserving the cables, and most likely the ships and crews, when employed upon necessary service on unknown, or at least very unfrequented coasts, where anchors and good cables are the only means of preservation.

North Harbour.

North Harbour, near the entrance of Port Jackson, is a very proper station for ships of war for the protection of the port ; but it is also necessary that one set of moorings for a frigate, or sloop, should be laid down directly opposite the town of Sydney, to command the navigation up the harbour, or occasionally the town and neighbourhood of Sydney.

Port  
Regulations.

No merchant vessels, except coasters, of whatever nation or country should be permitted, when entering the port, to proceed directly up to Sydney. They should be obliged to anchor in North Harbour, and wait for permission to proceed, or unlade. This would, in a great measure, put a stop to smuggling.

Naval officer.

An able officer, combining the abilities necessary for master-attendant, harbour-master, and nautical surgeon should be appointed, and provided with necessary instruments.

A lieut. with a party of (not less than) thirty marine artillery, including a master gunner, should be sent out.

Artillery.

When I left the colony in 1804 there was not one artilleryman in the whole colony ; and when the guns were to be loaded, even for a salute upon a holiday, the master shipwright was the person selected for that service.

Brass guns.

I have known the brass field pieces in the front of the Guard-house refuse frequently to explode, notwithstanding abundance of fire was applied to the priming ; and the guns for the guard, or for alarm, near the entrance to the harbour were nearly buried in the sand.

A steady man in the character of ordnance storekeeper is absolutely necessary, as are four additional field-pieces, and as many 9-inch brass howitzers with their proper appointments.

to England in 1804. He was evidently familiar with the artillery at Sydney. The style and matter suggest that it was written by Barrallier. The supposition is strengthened by the fact that he arrived during Hunter's administration, and left in 1804. No date appears on it ; but it was found amongst the records of 1809.



An able assistant to the master shipwright is much wanted for the purpose of exploring the extensive forests, and selecting proper timber for constructing frames for ships of the line, and to point out the proper times and seasons for felling it; and occasionally to examine the fine spars and timber said to abound on the island of New Zealand.

1809  
Dec. 30.  
Selecting native timbers.

A schooner of 80 tons, a bold sea-worthy vessel, should be constructed and employed upon the above service, or any other beneficial to the colony.

A sailing river barge is absolutely necessary—such a one as was proposed by me, and approved of by Governor Hunter in 1802,\*—for the particular service of Port Jackson. A plan and draft of this vessel, as also of a schooner of 60 tons, was carried out in H.M. ship *Calcutta*, together with every article of furniture, such as masts, sails, yards, anchors, cables, and rigging complete; but neither of them were built.

A river barge.

A sailing pilot boat of about 30 tons is absolutely necessary, not only for the service of pilotage, but to keep up a frequent communication between the seat of Government and the very distant sub-governments of Van Dieman's Land, and Norfolk Island.

A pilot boat.

A collector, or superior officer, of the Customs, together with an able, active assistant, should be appointed, and a proper boat furnished for that very necessary service.

A Collector of Customs.

This latter appointment is only necessary in the event of a want of vessels of war on the coast, or one (a gun brig) stationed in North Harbour, who would bring-to and examine every vessel that came in, and, by furnishing a sufficient guard on board, would entirely do away the pernicious and dishonorable trade of smuggling that has hitherto completely distracted—I may say almost destroyed—the colony.

Examining vessels.

This essential duty being intrusted to officers, not only respectable for the rank they hold, but for their honor and probity, would most effectually destroy every attempt at defrauding the revenue, and prevent the practice of engrossing and forestalling the markets.

In every department the port dues and public duties would be fairly collected and accounted for so far as related to the port.

Port dues.

This being once established, good order and subordination would soon follow; the Government would be properly respected and the colony restored to plenty, peace, and harmony.

A naval force is absolutely necessary on the coast of New South Wales; without it, experience has sufficiently explained to us that not only the Government has fallen into disrepute, but the nation has been insulted and His Majesty's subjects actually

Necessity for permanent naval force.

\* Evidently an error for 1800.

1809  
Dec. 30.  
—  
  
An instance.

taken out of their vessels and confined in irons, and this within our own ports, and by a power almost without a navy. In the year 1803 an American brig was sealing in Basses Streights and fell in with a small schooner belonging to Port Jackson, also employed in catching seals. The American, who was much superior in point of size, strength, and number, not only insulted and abused the master and crew of the British vessel, but ordered him away, and on refusal actually took them on board and confined them for some time in irons, and after completing his cargo drove all the seals from the shores and set fire to the woods to prevent their returning. Surely such disgrace and insult should not be repeated.

The French  
bogey.

\* \* \* \*

Independant of the necessity of a naval force in conjunction with the military to aid, assist, and protect the Governor and the civil power as established by law (for it appears the military alone has not done it) from the violence of banditti, it is no less necessary to protect the colony from an attack by the French from the Mauritius, which would have taken place long ago if the enemy had possessed a naval force equal to the enterprize. There was no doubt but what it was their intention, when Monsieur Baudin took correct plans of Port Jackson, &c., purchased a vessel there for the purpose of exploring the passage to the Mauritius through Bass Streights, where he actually passed to the westward with his division and arrived at the Isle de France ; and had he lived another year I think it very possible the Commodore would most likely have visited the colony for the purpose of annihilating the settlement.

A question of  
territory.

*New Zealand.*

Query : Is New Zeeland attached to or considered as part of the Government of New S. Wales ?

Latitude.

2dly. Would not the Northern Island of New Zeeland be a much preferable situation for a colony than any part of the coast of New South Wales that we are yet acquainted with ?

The northern isle extends from 34° 20' S. to 41° 36" S., a distance nort. and south of 436 miles, affording a great diversity of climate, and equal to produce grain of every description.

The southern isle is seperated from the northern by Cooke's Streights, and extends itself from Cape Farewell, in 40° 30' S., to Cape , in 47° 20' S., a distance of 390 miles, in a climate the most temperate in the world when cleared of its immense forests of valuable timber.

The fisheries.

On the coasts of these islands the whale and seale fishery may be carried on to any extent, and the preparation for boiling and

curing all done on the shore. By this means the whalers would have no occasion to touch at Port Jackson for supplies and refreshments, nor would the convicts have such opportunities of making their escape.

1809  
Dec. 30.  
—

The natives of New Zealand are a very different race of men The Maoris.. to those of New South Wales; they are of a different colour, athletic, muscular men, arising no doubt from the superior nature of the soil and its productions. The sea also furnishes great quantities of superior fish of every description, and the forest timber is reported excellent. The spars for masts and yards are cut down upon these islands and carried to China where they fetch a very high price. Hemp and flax can be produced in any quantity, and the southern parts of the South Island the wool might be improved equal to the best in Europe.

#### MASSACRE OF CREW OF THE BOYD.\*

1810  
Jan. 6.  
—

THESE are to certify that during our stay in this harbour we had frequent reports of a ship being taken by the natives in the neighbouring harbour of Wangarawe,† and that the ship's crew were killed and eaten. Maoris seize a vessel.

In order to ascertain the truth of this report, as well as to rescue a few people who were said to be spared in the general massacre, Mr. Berry, accompanied by Mr. Russell and Matingaro‡ (a principal chief of the Bay of Islands, who volunteered his service), set out for Wangarawe with three armed boats on Sunday the 31st of December, 1809, and upon their arrival found the miserable remains of the ship Boyd, Captain John Thompson, which the natives (after stripping of everything of value) had burnt down to the water's edge. Rescuing the survivors.

From the handsome conduct of Matingaro they were able to rescue a boy, woman, and two children, the only survivors of the shocking event, which, according to the most satisfactory information, was perpetrated entirely under the direction of that old A woman and three children rescued.

\* See also Captain Chace's statement, enclosed in Macquarie's despatch of 12th March, 1810, post, p. 298; and the whalers' letter to Macquarie of 10th April, 1810, post, p. 299.

† Wangaroa.

‡ Captain Berry, in an account of the circumstances connected with the rescue of the survivors, gives the name of this chief as Matenangha.—*Constable's Miscellany*, vol. iv, p. 345.

1810  
Jan. 6.  
Particulars of  
the seizure.

rascal Tippahee,\* who has been so much and undeservedly caressed at Port Jackson.

This unfortunate vessel (intending to load with spars) was taken three days after her arrival. The natives informed the master on the second day they would shew the spars. Next day, in the morning, Tippahee arrived from Tippanah and went on board. He staid only a few minutes, and then went into his canoe, but remained alongside the vessel, which was surrounded with a number of canoes which appeared collected for the purpose of trading; and a considerable number of the natives, gradually intruding into the ship, sat down upon the deck. After breakfast the master left the ship with two boats to look for spars. Tippahee, waiting a convenient time, now gave the signal for massacre. In an instant the savages, who appear'd sitting peaceably on the deck, rushed on the unarmed crew, who were dispersed about the ship at their various employments. The greater part were massacred in a moment, and were no sooner knocked down than cut to pieces while still alive. Five or six of the hands escaped up the rigging. Tippahee now having possession of the ship, hailed them with a speaking trumpet, and ordered them to unbend the sails and cut away the rigging, and they should not be hurt. They complied with his commands and came down. He then took them ashore in a canoe and immediately killed them.† The master went on shore without arms, and was of course easily dispatched. The names of the survivors are Mrs. Morley and child, Betsey Broughton,‡ and Thomas Davis, a boy.

Tippahee the  
ringleader.

Massacre of the  
crew.

Friendly  
natives.

The natives of the Spar district in this harbour have behaved well, even beyond expectation, and seem much concerned on account of this unfortunate event; and, dreading the displeasure of King George, have requested certificates of their good conduct in order to exempt them from his vengeance; but let no man (after this) trust a New Zealander.

\* Although the whalers who visited Wangaroa Harbour, immediately after the massacre, were convinced that Tippahee took an active, if not a leading, part in the affair, the Rev. Samuel Marsden, who visited the locality in 1814-5, satisfied himself that not only was Tippahee not in any way concerned in the attack, but that he had endeavoured to save a number of the sailors who had taken refuge in the rigging. The reader who wishes to pursue the question can collect the very contradictory evidence from the accounts of the missionaries in Nicholas's *Narrative of a Voyage to New Zealand*, vol. i, pp. 143 and 297, and from Alexander Berry's account, furnished to *Constable's Miscellany*, vol. iv, pp. 330 *et seq.*

† The Reverend Samuel Marsden places an entirely different aspect upon the event. According to him, Tippahee arrived on the scene only in time to rescue the men who had escaped up the rigging and land them on an adjacent point. They were then pursued and overtaken by the infuriated Maoris from whom Tippahee was attempting to shelter them.

‡ This was an infant daughter of Commissary Broughton.



We further certify that we gave Tarra, the bearer of this, a small flat-bottomed boat as a reward for his good conduct and the assistance of getting us a cargo of spars.

1810  
Jan. 6.  
—

Given on board the ship City of Edinburgh, Captain Simeon Pattison, Bay of Islands, January 6th, 1810.

SIMEON PATTISON, Master.

ALEXR. BERRY,\* Supercargo.

JAMES RUSSEL, Mate.

Tarra behaved very well, and all his tribe; for that reason I gave him several gallons of oil. I came in January the 17th, and sailed the 20th, 1810.

WILLIAM SWAIN, Ship Cumberland.

[Enclosure.]

CERTIFICATE OF SHIPPING AGENTS.

SHIPPED in good order and well conditioned by Mr. Simeon Lord, of Sydney, merchant, in and upon the good ship called the Boyd, whereof is master for this present voyage Mr. John Thompson, and now riding at anchor in Port Jackson, and bound for London, to say two thousand two hundred and thirty fine salted fur skins, and are to be delivered in the like good order and well conditioned at the aforesaid Port of London (the act of God, the King's enemies, and all other dangers and accidents of the seas and navigation of whatever nature or kind soever excepted), unto Messrs. John and William Jacobs, merchants, or to their assigns, he or they paying freight for the said goods at and after the rate of twelve pounds sterling per ton, with primage and average accustomed.

Cargo of the  
Boyd.

In witness whereof the master or purser of the said ship hath affirmed to three bills of lading, all of this tenor and date, the one of which three bills being accomplished, the other two to stand void.  
Sydney, New South Wales, this 11th October, 1809.

ALEXANDER BERRY TO GOVERNOR MACQUARIE.

Ship, City of Edinburgh,

Bay of Islands, New Zealand,

SIR,—

6th January, 1810.

I beg leave to inform your Excellency that, while filling up with spars in this harbour, we received intelligence that a ship had been taken and destroyed by Tippahee, in the harbour of Wangarrooa.

Seizure of the  
Boyd.

\* Until comparatively recent years, this Mr. Berry was a prominent figure amongst public men in the colony. In the year 1820 he explored part of the Shoalhaven country, receiving a large free grant of land in that district. Mr. Berry was appointed a Member of the Legislative Council in 1856. He died in 1873.

- 1810  
Jan. 6.  
Discovery of the hull.  
The survivors.  
Despatches.  
Tippahee.
- I, therefore, went round in three armed boats in order to ascertain the truth of the report, when I found the remains of H.M. hired transport Boyd, Captain Thompson, lying in shoal water, and burnt down to the copper sheathing.
- I was able to rescue the only four survivors from the hands of the natives, consisting of a boy,\* a woman, and two children, the rest of the crew and passengers having been killed and eat.
- I brought away the two principal chiefs, prisoners, and through their means have obtained a box containing Government despatches, which I will forward.
- Tippahee has betaken to the bush and eluded my researches. As there is no opportunity of sending the chiefs to Port Jackson it will be necessary to liberate them.

I have, &c.,  
ALEX'R BERRY.

#### GOVERNOR MACQUARIE TO VISCOUNT CASTLEREAGH.

- March 12.  
The capture of the Boyd.  
Captain Chace's account.  
Treachorous natives.
- MY LORD,— Sydney, New South Wales, 12th March, 1810.
1. Since closing my dispatch of date, the 8th inst., a Colonial ship named the King George, employed in the seal-skin and oil trade, arrived here from off the coast of New Zealand, and brings the melancholy accounts of the loss and capture of the ship Boyd by the New Zealanders, under their chief, Tippahee,† and the massacre of the whole of her crew and passengers, with the exception of two women and a child,‡ who escaped from these merciless savages.
  2. I do myself the honor to enclose for your Lordship's further information the deposition and narrative of Mr. Chase, the master of the King George, detailing the circumstances of this unfortunate and melancholy event.
  3. The Boyd came out here with convicts from Ireland about six or seven months ago, and was returning to England by way of New Zealand, with intention to carry Home some timber and spars from that country, having a valuable cargo of skins and oil from this colony on board besides.
  4. It will be necessary that the South Sea whalers should be cautioned, previous to their sailing from England, to be very

\* *Note in original.*—"Thos. Davis, Ann Morley and child, Betsy Broughton."

† See footnote, ante, p. 294, and post, p. 300.

‡ The survivors were a woman with her infant in arms; a lad named Davies, about fifteen years of age; and the infant daughter of Mr. Commissary Broughton.

vigilant and guarded in their intercourse with the New Zealanders, as well as with all the natives of the South Sea Islands, who are in general a very treacherous race of people, and not to be trusted.

1810  
March 12.

5. A proposal was some time since made to me by Mr. Simeon Lord, and other respectable merchants here, of forming a settlement at their own expence on the northern island of New Zealand, for the purpose of collecting the flax plant of that country, and manufacturing it into cordage and canvas for the use of this colony, and with the hope of ultimately extending their trade to the service of the British Navy; but claiming, in the event of the undertaking proving successful, and of its being approved of by the British Government at Home, the exclusive privilege of this branch of trade for fourteen years. To this proposed speculation I have given my sanction, promising to recommend it to the favorable consideration and patronage of His Majesty's Ministers, which I now do in the strongest manner, conceiving, as I really do, that the undertaking is likely ultimately to succeed, and consequently to prove of great national benefit. I have not pledged myself to the projectors of this scheme that they are to obtain the exclusive privilege of this branch of trade for fourteen years, but only that I would submit their application to His Majesty's Ministers. I think, however, that the privilege they solicit is in itself reasonable, and therefore beg to recommend it may be granted to them.

Proposed  
settlement at  
New Zealand.

Macquarie  
favours the  
proposal.

6. Notwithstanding the recent melancholy occurrence already adverted to, in regard to the capture of the Boyd and the massacre of the crew and passengers of that ship, the projectors of the flax speculation on New Zealand still intend to prosecute their design; and according send a superintendant with a party of men hired for this purpose, on board the brig Experiment, to New Zealand, where that vessel is to remain long enough to give them time to collect a quantity of dried flax to be sent Home for the inspection of His Majesty's Ministers, as a specimen of the quality and of the success that may be expected to result from such an undertaking. I shall transmit the correspondence that has taken place with the projectors of this speculation to your Lordship in my next dispatch.

Cultivating New  
Zealand flax.

7. There being no other circulating medium in this colony than the notes of hand of private individuals, and this practice having already been productive of infinite frauds, abuses, and litigation, I am very apprehensive it may at some future period occasion a general bankruptcy, and prove ruinous to individuals as well as to the interests of the colony unless some remedy is speedily applied to this growing evil. I shall, therefore, in my next dispatch communicate my sentiments more fully to your

Notes of hand.

A dangerous  
system.

1810  
March 12.  
—

Lordship, and take the liberty to suggest some plan to remedy this ruinous and alarming practice that has so long prevailed here. In the meantime I shall only take the liberty to suggest that the same plan of the Cape Colonial Bank, if adopted and approved of by His Majesty's Ministers, would answer equally well here. I shall, therefore, in my next dispatch strongly recommend the adoption here of the same system of banking and circulating medium, as is now so successfully and beneficially pursued at the Cape of Good Hope.

Movements of  
the soldiers.

8. I have the honor to acquaint your Lordship that since the date of my last dispatch the relief from Port Dalrymple has arrived here, and I hope the vessel having on board the detachment of the 102nd Regiment from Norfolk Island will very soon make her appearance also.

Campbell  
appointed  
secretary,

9. I beg leave to report to your Lordship that I have appointed John Thomas Campbell, Esqr., to be my Secretary. This gentleman I met with for the first time at the Cape of Good Hope on my way hither. He was there very strongly recommended to me by Lord Caledon and some other friends, and I have every reason to be highly pleased with his abilities, conciliating manners, and gentlemanly conduct. I also beg leave to report that I have appointed Captain H. C. Antill, of the 73rd Regiment, to be my aid-de-camp, and Cap'n T. S. Cleaveland, of the same corps, to act as Major of Brigade to the troops serving in this territory. I trust your Lordship will approve of those appointments, and authorize me to draw on the Lords Commissioners of the Treasury for their respective salaries and allowances.

Antill, aide-de-  
camp.

I have, &c.

L. MACQUARIE.

[Enclosure.]

#### LOSS OF THE SHIP BOYD.

Sydney, 12th March, 1810.

Capture of the  
Boyd.

IN presence of Mr. Robert Campbell, Naval Officer and Magistrate, who was directed by His Excellency Governor Macquarie to investigate the information received of the loss of the ship Boyd on the coast of New Zealand, Samuel Rodman Chace, master of the ship King George, of this port, declares: That on the 19th day of February last (by log) he fell in with the ships Ann and Albion, whalers, off Cape Brett on the coast of New Zealand, and that he went on board of the Ann about 8 o'clock in the evening, when Cap'n Gwynn informed him that both ships had left the Bay of Islands the day before, where the natives informed him that the ship Boyd was taken at a port about 30 miles to the northward called Wangarowe, and that every person

Massacre of her  
crew.



belonging to the ship (except two women and a child\*) where massacred. That when this happened there was two boats ashore from the ship procuring spars, and those of the ship's company who were on board were at the time busily employed in overhauling and repairing the rigging.

1810  
March 12.

There had been no previous disturbance with the natives, who appeared very friendly, but at the time they rushed on board the Boyd their war weapons were concealed under their mats, and that after killing all the men on deck they ordered those who had gone aloft to cut the sails from the yards, and that those men were afterwards carried on shore, where, after cutting off their legs and arms, they were roasted.

Circumstances  
of the attack.

That Capt'n Gwynn likewise informed the said Samuel Rodman Chace that Prince Mattarra, who had lately arrived from England, was the principal leader, with another chief; that Tippo-hee, when the attack was made on the ship, was in his canoe at some distance; but after the ship was taken he went on board to take possession, when, after plundering her, she was set fire to and sunk, the tops then remaining above water; that all which he has declared was read to him by Capt'n Gwynn from a written paper, and that he, the said Chace, was prevented from taking a copy of it from being anxious to get back to his ship, the night being dark.

Who were the  
ringleaders?

That when he fell in with the above ships it was his intention to go into the Bay of Islands; but, being afraid of the consequences, he gave the natives who came on board the ship in a canoe off the East Cape a whaleboat to go on shore with another New Zealander, who had been in the King George for near three years, to whom he gave a letter addressed to the master of any ship that might arrive, giving the above intelligence and apprising him of the danger; and he thinks this native could be depended on for delivering it.

A warning letter.

Capt'n Gwynn also informed him of the ship Mary, Capt'n Simmons, having foundered off the East Cape, but that the crew was saved by the other ships in company.

S. R. CHACE.

---

#### WHALERS TO GOVERNOR MACQUARIE.

SIR,—

Bay of Islands, 10th April, 1810.

April 10.

In consequence of the destruction of the Boyd, Capt. Thompson, with the inhuman massacre of the passengers and

The seizure of  
the Boyd.

\* The actual number saved were one woman, a lad of about fifteen years of age, and two infants.

1810  
April 10.

Tippahee's  
Island.

An engagement  
with the Maoris.

crew of that ship, and from the information of Captain Pattison, of the ship *City of Edinburgh*, and the different natives of this place, having every reason to believe that Tippahae was the chief perpetrator of the horrid transaction,—on the 26th March, 1810, we, the undersigned, with our respective boats' crews, determined to ascertain if any person had been so fortunate as to escape the general massacre and confined on Tippahee's Island, as well as to rescue them and recover the arms, ammunition, and other warlike stores from the hands of the savages. On landing at Tippoona and proceeding to the top of the island, the residence of Tippahee, we found the natives in a hostile disposition, and after a short interval they set up a general cry, and immediately discharged a volley of musquetry and spears at us. Our retreat was impracticable without certain loss, when we proceeded and took possession of the island by force of arms. The natives, with Tippahee, escaped to the main, either taking away or destroying their musquets by throwing them into the sea.\*

We found the Boyd's long boat and some papers, which we send by the *Perseverance* to Port Jackson, and earnestly caution all commanders coming to this place to be constantly on their guard, the natives appearing determined and fully adequate to carry any single ship.

JOHN KINGSTON, Speke.

JOHN WALKER, Inspector.

WILLIAM PARKER, Diana.

JOSH. MORRIS, Atalanta.

FREDK. HASSELBERG, *Perseverance*.

\* J. L. Nicholas, who visited this part of New Zealand in company with the Rev. Samuel Marsden in the year 1814, gives the following account of this event:—"Four or five of our whalers happening to enter the Bay of Islands shortly after the cutting off of the Boyd, landed their crews on a small island, where Tippahee and his tribe resided, being previously informed by Tarra that to them alone was the massacre to be attributed; and, fired with impatience for revenge, they commenced an indiscriminate slaughter of the guiltless inhabitants, sparing neither age nor sex, burning their houses and destroying their plantations. Tippahee escaped with his life, after having received some severe wounds; but the havoc made among his people must be truly afflicting to the friends of innocence and humanity."—*Narrative of a Voyage to New Zealand*, vol. i, p. 229. Marsden shared Nicholas's belief in the innocence of Tippahee; but it must be borne in mind that they, apparently, formed their conclusions from the accounts of the Maoris themselves, given some time after the event. Alexander Berry, on the other hand, visited the spot a few days after the seizure, and had the additional evidence of the survivors, two of whom were old enough to be able to give an account of the circumstances. He appears to have had no doubt as to the complicity of Tippahee.

WILLIAM LEITH TO MESSRS. LORD, WILLIAMS, AND THOMPSON.

1810

(Colonial Secretary's Papers.)

April 15.

Bay of Islands, New Zealand,

GENTLEMEN,—

15th April, 1810.

Mr. Mason, late mate of the Speke, having offered to take charge of any despatches I might have to send you—he intending to leave this bay in the *Perseverance*—I have entrusted him with the delivery of the case containing the book, and this, my first letter to you.

Mails from New Zealand

On 4 April we made the North Cape of New Zealand. On the 5th at sunset we anchor'd at the entrance of the Bay of Islands, after experiencing two heavy gales of wind. Early in the morning of the sixth a friendly chief came on board. From this man with extreme sorrow we learnt the confirmation of the fate of the ship *Boyd* and crew, the particulars of which I send you herewith. He likewise informed us that 6 ships lay at the upper part of the bay, names as p'r margin\*; that the boats of the ships had attacked and wounded *Tip-pa-hee*, destroyed his houses and property, and killed about 60 of his people,—which I find to be correct. The *Boyd's* longboat and some other articles fell into their hands. The loss on the side of the English is one man killed, by the accidental going off of a musket; a few were slightly wounded. *Tip-pa-hee* made his escape, it is reported, to *Wongaloorah*, where the unfortunate remains of the *Boyd* lays 5 fath'ms under water.

Arrive at the Bay of Islands.

Reprisals

Sixty Maoris killed.

Towards the evening we anchored at the upper end of the bay, close to the other ships. All the natives of this bay being at war with each other, added to the extreme poverty of the place, gave me poor hopes of meeting with success in this bay; even potatoes are not to be procured. Soon after we anchored, a chief by the name of *My-hanga* came off, belonging to the district of *Tarrahee*. The good character I had previously given me of this man determined me to appear on friendly terms with him. Accordingly I made him a present of a few articles, for which he has rendered himself useful by keeping the natives from incommoding the ship.

Natives at war.

A friendly chief.

On the 8th, in the morning, I resolved to go on shore in order to open a trade with the natives, as nothing worthy of notice had been brought off to us. 900 men of this district having gone eastward to the war led me to suppose that I had little to fear from the remainder. Not being able to procure anything of consequence, I returned on board, and in the evening I again went on shore, accompanied by *Howell*. We, being both well armed, intended penetrating a short way by land towards a hill which

A trip inland.

\* *Speke*, *Inspector*, *Atalanta*, *Perseverance*, *Spring-grove*, and *New Zealander*. These ships sailed in company with us.

1810  
April 15.

overlooks the lower part of the bay, hoping to see the schooner Governor Bligh working in. We were nearly three hours travelling 3 miles, which will give you a tolerable idea of the difficulty attending penetrating far into the country. We reached the top of the hill, but could not see the schooner, and got safe on board about 1 hour after dark. On Monday, 9th, several boats from the ship intended going up a river on the north side of the bay to rescue four white men they had information of. Judging this to be a fit opportunity to form a correct judgment of the nature and productions of this part of the northernmost island, determined me to be one of the party. After reaching the head of the river we landed and penetrated about 10 miles inland. It then appeared we had not got half way to the place of abode of the white men, who are supposed to be concerned in the seizure of some ship or other. Prudence pointed out the necessity of our returning, that we might reach the boats before dark. Mr. Finucane being of the party, I proposed to him to return by a different rout from that, which we came, in order to disconcert any plan the natives might have formed to cut us off; Mr. F. being of the same opinion, which was put in execution, we got safe on board about the close of day.

A river  
expedition.

Soil and  
country.

The soil of this part of the island is certainly most excellent. Although we penetrated so far, and chiefly through a fine valley with many fine runs of water, we did not see a single pine tree or any wood of consequence. The quantity of flax plant is very small indeed—the whole I have seen would not produce one cwt. when manufactured. As we were not far from the district of Wongaloorah, Bruce has certainly grossly deceived you by his false representations. I am perfectly convinced that were it possible for us to remain in the Bay of Islands it would not answer any good purpose. It would be absurd, as two ships do not consider it safe to lay here by themselves. I am likewise of opinion that the masters of the different ships have to thank themselves for all the evils they have brought on by their injustice and ill-treatment of the natives. All the timber lays very far up the country, and can be obtained only through the medium of the natives. A trade subject to such interruptions as will arise on the least offence they may receive cannot be productive, especially as the articles are very scarce. The pine I consider is not of a good quality, possessing very little turpentine or rosin.

The Bay of  
Islands.

Foveaux.

Col. Foveaux and Mr. Finucane take their passage to England in the Speke, not finding themselves well accommodated in the brig. In order to freight the Experiment I am endeavouring to purchase as many spars as will fill her, which must be cross cut to make good stowage. After getting the spars in, I purpose looking into Wongaloorah—that is, if I can prevail on Capt. Dodd



to do so—and then to cruise off the North Cape for a day or two in hopes of seeing the schooner. When she joins us I shall proceed in the Experiment to the East Cape, trading if possible on the coast between the two capes. I find, by the masters of the whalers that have been at the East Cape this season, that mats and flax are to be procured there of a good quality. At the East Cape I expect to be able to send the Experiment for England. As soon as I have completed the cargo of the Experiment and dismissed her, shall continue to trade about the East Cape if possible for a short time, and then proceed to Queen Charlotte Sound, Cook's Straights, being informed here by the whalers who have been there this season that the flax plant abounds in that Sound, even to the tops of the hills. I have likewise information that there is very few, if any, natives there. This sound being not far out of our way to Foveaux Straights induces me to make trial of it. Should it, on my arrival, promise to answer my purpose, I intend remaining in it during the midwinter months. You will therefore please to direct the master of such vessel as you may judge proper to send to our relief to make Cook's Straights. On each side of the entrance of the Sound I purpose fixing a cross, or nailing a piece of timber across a tree, as a signal of our being within it. Should we leave the Sound previous to the arrival of such vessel, I will leave directions pointing out our course, inclosed in bottles and buried at the feet of trees, or crosses with a string afixed and leading above ground. If we should not be in the Sound, nor any signs remain of our having been there, it will be necessary for such vessel to run up the Bay of Plenty, and the East Cape before the master attempts to search for us in Williams's or any other bay in Foveaux Straights. The same signals I shall make in the last as in the beforementioned straits. It is highly necessary to require the master to be very cautious when on the coast, and not permit more than one canoe to come alongside, and but few natives on deck at a time. Shall feel great inconvenience for the want of a carpenter or two. Have appointed Howell to take charge of the stores, trade, &c., in case any accident should befall me until your pleasure is made known on that head. The Boyd's long boat is sent to Sydney by the Perseverance. She being a boat well calculated for our use, should this establishment succeed she would be of great service to us. Have rec'd very little assistance or advice from any person on board the Experiment, they being completely panic-struck.

1810  
April 15.

Collecting cargo.

Queen Charlotte  
Sound.

Sailing  
directions.

Treacherous  
natives.

I shall make every possible exertion in my power, and if, on seeing those ports which have been pointed out to me, and find the least probability of success, I shall not hesitate to give it a fair trial. I am of opinion that some measures should be taken

False reports.

1810  
April 15.  
—  
Flax.

against Bruce,\* having no doubt but that he was laying a snare to deprive you of your property and us of our lives as soon as a fit opportunity presented itself. We are now getting under sail, in order to run out of this bay. Have delivered to the care of Col. Foveaux a small box containing a sample of flax and thread, directed to Messrs. John and William Jacob, London. With all the exertions I have made, and after being every day on shore at all the native towns in the bay, I am much concerned to say that I could not obtain more than four pounds of flax. Not so much as a single mat is to be had here. Have procured a small quantity of timber, but what I have got is very fine for this part of the islands.

\* \* \* \*

Scarcity of  
trade.

Arranging a  
rendezvous.

Believe me, gentlemen, I feel great regret at my not being able to procure a cargo for the Experiment in this port. I am, however, confident you will see the impossibility of meeting with success here. Should the Bligh not join us, I am of opinion that it will be requisite for us to put on shore on the islands called Three Kings, laying off the North Cape.† are goats and hogs on these islands, we may with difficulty make a shift until you can send some vessel to our assistance. Many are for our returning to Sydney; but I conceive it to be my duty to make every effort in my power before I consent to that measure. However, in case you should hear that any accident has occurred to the Bligh, please to direct the master of any vessel you may send to our relief to make those islands before he looks for us elsewhere. I am fearful the schooner Parramatta, belonging to Mr. Blaxcell, has shared the same fate as the Boyd, and by the same hands, as the natives give me to understand something of this nature.

I am, &c.,  
W<sup>m</sup> LEITH.

#### GOVERNOR MACQUARIE TO VISCOUNT CASTLEREAGH.

Sydney, New South Wales,

30th April, 1810.

April 30.  
—

MY LORD,—

\* \* \* \*

Seizure of the  
Boyd.

66. In my last despatch I did myself the honor to inform your Lordship of the capture and destruction of the ship Boyd, bound from hence to England, and which had touched at New Zealand, where she was treacherously seized, and the whole of her crew and passengers (with the exception of two or three)

\* This was, no doubt, George Bruce, an English sailor, who had married the daughter of a Maori chief in 1804, and settled at the Bay of Islands.  
† Copy torn.

most cruelly massacred by the natives of that country, headed by their chief, Tip-pa-hee. These melancholy accounts have been since confirmed beyond a doubt by other vessels that have touched at New Zealand, and I now do myself the honor to enclose\* your Lordship the copies of papers containing a more circumstantial account of this event than the one I formerly transmitted to your Lordship. It will be necessary that the South Sea whalers, and other ships trading in the South Seas, should be apprized of this melancholy event, in order that they may be more vigilant and on their guard against a similar act of treachery when they may have occasion to touch at these islands.

1810  
April 30.

EX-GOVERNOR BLIGH TO SIR JOSEPH BANKS. (Bligh Papers.)

His Majesty's ship *Hindostan*,

SIR,—

Rio Janerio, 11th August, 1810.

Aug. 11.

Bligh at Rio.

In continuation of my former letters, I have the honor to acquaint you, by the *Chichester Packet*, which is now to sail, that the arrangement of embarking the 102nd Regiment under my orders, in His Majesty's ships *Hindostan*, *Porpoise*, and *Dromedary*, being completed, I left Port Jackson on the 12th of May, and arrived here on the 25th ultimo. The troops and crews having suffered considerably from the severity of the weather round Cape Horn, it obliged us to come hither to prevent much sickness, which was likely to have taken place, and to repair our ships. The whole is now affected except in the *Dromedary*, which I fear will prevent our sailing until Tuesday, the 14th.

Before we left Sydney accounts were brought from the *Derwent* of the death of Colonel Collins, and Colonel Paterson died on the 21st of June on board the *Dromedary* off Cape Horn.

Collins and  
Paterson.

In my despatch of the 9th March I stated that Lieutenant-Colonel Foveaux was permitted by Governor Macquarie to separate from the regiment and sail in a brig called the *Experiment* for England. Some mercantile pursuits obliged that vessel to proceed to New Zealand, where, meeting with a ship called the *Speke*, he chose to quit the *Experiment* and embark in her. On our arrival at this place we met the *Speke* proceeding to sea; but light winds obliging her to anchor, and knowing who we were, the master during the night returned and applied to proceed Home under our convoy, and will accompany us

Colonel  
Foveaux.

\* The enclosure (a reprint from the *Sydney Gazette*) is omitted. The statements on which it was framed are given at length, ante, pp. 293, 295, 298, and 299.

1810  
Aug. 11.

The command  
at Hobart.

accordingly ; while it appears that Lieut.-Colonel Foveaux considers his arrival in England before me of such consequence as to proceed in the Packet if she sails before us, which it is expected.

As a report, sir, which I have every reason to believe to be true, I find this officer is sanguine in his expectations of being appointed Lieutenant-Governor of the Derwent ; but whatever motives they are that make him so desirous of appearing in England before me, I hope the subject of my despatches from the time of his taking the command upon him from Major Johnston, in place of obeying my written orders to reinstate me in the Government, to the time of Colonel Paterson's arrival, may be allowed to repel any influence which may be made in his favor previous to my arrival.

Bligh's  
witnesses.

As it became Mr. Judge-Advocate Bent's opinion that it was necessary to have further advice from Government how he was legally to act, and that the Governor could not legally send Home any man against his consent except those holding appointments under Government, I could not bring any one to trial, and some egregious offenders, therefore, remain in the colony. But on the part of the Crown, pursuant to my Lord Castlereagh's directions in his letter to me of the 15th of May, 1809, I have embarked with me Mr. Palmer, Commissary ; Mr. Gore, Provost-Marshal ; Mr. Williamson, Deputy Commissary ; Mr. Divine, Principal Superintendent ; the Rev'd Mr. Fulton, Chaplain ; Mr. Oakes, the Chief Constable ; Mr. Suttor and Mr. Mason, planters. These persons will declare unquestionable truths of the evils existing in the territory, and give testimony of what has been transacted.

Mr. Atkins, the late Judge-Advocate, is on board, having been ordered Home by Governor Macquarie.

I have, &c.,  
W<sup>M</sup> BLIGH.

Aug. 18.

#### DESTRUCTION OF THE BOYD.

Loss of the  
Boyd.

WE mentioned in our last that Captain Chace had received at New Zealand a particular account from an Otaheitan of the loss of the above vessel, which we premise by stating, upon the foregoing authority, that when the Boyd went from hence she had on board four or five New Zealanders, who made part of her crew. These people were displeased at their treatment on the passage, and determined on revenge. On their arrival they communicated their complaints to their friends and relatives, who were of the

Ill treatment of  
Maoris.



Whangaroa party, and frequently at war with Tippahee and his subjects ; and the design of taking the ship was formed in consequence. It being Captain Thompson's intention to take in a quantity of spars, he applied to the natives for assistance in procuring them, which they promised, but, in order to entice him on shore, artfully objected to perform until he should accompany them to point out such as he might best approve. The Captain was thereby prevailed on to leave the vessel, accompanied by his chief officer, with three boats manned, to get the spars on board, the natives who had arrived in the ship being of the party, which was accompanied by a number of others in their canoes. The boats were conducted to a river, on entering which they were out of sight of the ship ; and, after proceeding some distance up, Captain Thompson was invited to land, and mark the spars he wanted. The boats landed accordingly, the tide being then beginning to ebb, and the crews following to assist in the work. The guides led the party through various parts of the wood that were less likely to answer the desired end, thus delaying the premeditated attack till the boats should be left by the effluence of the tide sufficiently high to prevent an escape ; which part of the horrible plan accomplished, they became insolent and rude, ironically pointing at decayed fragments, and enquiring of Capt. Thompson whether they would suit his purpose or not ? The natives belonging to the ship then first threw off the mask, and in opprobrious terms upbraided Capt. Thompson with their maltreatment, informing him at the same time that he should have no spars there but what he could procure himself. The captain appeared careless of the disappointment, and with his people turned towards the boats, at which instant they were assulted with clubs and axes, which the assailants had till then concealed under their dresses ; and although the boat's crew had several muskets, yet so impetuous was the attack that every man was prostrated before one could be used. Capt. Thompson and his unfortunate men were all murdered on the spot, and their bodies were afterwards devoured by the murderers, who, cloathing themselves with their apparel, launched the boats at dusk the same evening and proceeded towards the ship, which they had determined also to attack. It being very dark before they reached her, and no suspicion being entertained of what had happened, the second officer hailed the boats, and was answered by the villains who had occasioned the disaster that the captain, having chosen to remain on shore that night for the purpose of viewing the country, had ordered them to take on board such spars as had already been procured, which account readily obtained belief, and the officer was knocked down and killed by those who first ascended the ship's side. All the seamen of the

1810  
Aug. 18.

In quest of  
spars.

Native cunning.

The captain  
upbraided.

A savage  
onslaught.

Cannibalism.

Maoris return  
to the ship.

The ship seized.

|                               |  |
|-------------------------------|--|
| 1810<br>Aug. 18.              | watch were in like manner surprised and murdered. Some of the assassins then went down to the cabin door, and asked the passengers and others to go on deck to see the spars, and a female passenger obeying the summons was killed on the cabin ladder. The noise occasioned by her fall alarmed the people that were in bed, who, running on deck in disorder, were all killed as they went up except four or five, who ran up the shrouds, and remained in the rigging the rest of the night. The next morning Tippahee appeared alongside in a canoe, and was much offended at what had happened, but was not permitted to interfere or to remain near the ship. The unfortunate men in the rigging called him, and implored his protection, of which he assured them if they could make their way to his canoe. This they effected at every hazard, and was by the old king landed on the nearest point, though closely pursued. The pursuit was continued on shore. They were all overtaken, and Tippahee was forcibly held while the murder of the unhappy fugitives was perpetrated. A female passenger and two children, who were afterwards found in the cabin, were spared from the massacre, and taken on shore to a hut, in which situation Mr. Berry and Captain Pattison, of the City of Edinburgh found when they rescued them. Tippahee was afterwards permitted by the Whangarooans to take three boat loads of any property he chose out of the ship, firearms and gun-powder excepted; and the bulk they divided among themselves. The salt provisions, flour, and spirits they threw overboard as unpalatable; the carriage guns they did the same with, considering them useless; the muskets they prized very much; and one of the savages, in his eagerness to try one, stove in the head of a barrell of powder, and filling the pan of the piece snapped it directly over the cask, the explosion of which killed five native women and eight or nine men, and set part of the ship on fire. |
| Passengers killed.            |  |
| Tippahee.                     |  |
| Attitude of Tippahee to crew. |  |
| Rescue of the survivors.      |  |
| Stripping of the ship.        |  |
| An explosion.                 |  |
| Tippahee.                     | From the foregoing details it appears that neither Tippahee nor his son Mytye had any share in the barbarous acts committed by those sanguinary miscreants; but that the old chief had, on the contrary, endeavoured to preserve the lives of several of the crew; and if we consider the order in which the incidents are narrated, we must at least conclude this to be the most probable account received of the doleful event before us; and the more especially so as it is the report of an Otaheitan, who was on the spot at the time, and who, as an alien, not being interested on the part either of the Bay of Islanders or of the Whangarooans, may still more be entitled to credit.  |
| A disinterested spectator.    |  |
| A warning to captains.        | In the principal facts, alas! all accounts unhappily coincide; and while we have to deplore the calamity, we cannot forbear expressing a hope that the commanders and crews of vessels   |

traversing these seas will temper friendship and humanity towards the uncivilised islanders with prudence and caution, and be ever guarded against surprise and treachery, to which numbers of our countrymen have become the victims.\*

11  
Aug. 18.

---

SHIPPING RETURN.†

1811.  
Dec. 31.

REPORT of Ships and Vessels entered Inwards at Port Jackson, in His Majesty's Colony of New South Wales, from the 1st day of October to the 31st December, 1811 :—

Shipping  
inwards.

Date of entry, Nov. 29; name of the vessel, Sally and Mary; master, C. Feen; build, Plantation; number of tons, 130; number of guns, 1; number of men, 18; where built, Calcutta; where registered, Calcutta; name of the owner, S. Wills; from whence, Macquarie Island; general cargo, none.

H. GLENHOLME, Naval Officer.

Naval Office, Sydney, New South Wales,  
31st December, 1811.

---

SHIPPING RETURN.‡

REPORT of Ships and Vessels cleared Outwards from Port Jackson, in His Majesty's Colony of New South Wales, from the 1st day of October to the 31st day of December, 1811, viz. :—

Shipping  
outwards.

When cleared, Nov. 12; name of the ship, Concord; master, T. Garbutt; number of tons, 150; number of guns, 8; number of men, 18; build, British; where built, Dartmouth; where registered, London; owners' names, Alex'r Birnie & Co.; where bound, Macquarie Island; general cargo, ballast; clearance fees, 5s.

H. GLENHOLME, Naval Officer.

Naval Office, Sydney, New South Wales,  
31st December, 1811.

\* Reprinted from *Sydney Gazette*, 1st September, 1810. The accounts of Tippahée's action are very conflicting. See statement of the officers of the City of Edinburgh, ante, p. 294.

† Only vessels from New Zealand are given.

‡ Only vessels bound to New Zealand are given.

1811

March 19.

[India Office—Miscellanies, Vol. 50.]

J. BOSANQUET TO W. FAWKNER.

SIR,—

East India House, the 19th March, 1811.

*Re extension of  
limits of  
southern whale  
fishery.*

I have received and laid before the Court of Directors of the E. I. Company your letter of the 14th inst., stating that an application has been made to the Lords of the Committee of Council for Trade for an extension of the limits of the Southern Whale Fishery to the eastward of the Cape of Good Hope between the longitude of 115 and 180 degrees east as far as 10 degrees of north latitude, and desiring the Court will take the same into their consideration and acquaint their Lordships whether the Court will have any objection to such an extension of the Southern Whale Fishery.

The Court trust that their Lordships will feel that it has ever been the wish of the Court to give every extension in their power to the commercial interests of the Kingdom.

The present limits of the Southern Whale Fishery were fixed under an idea that they would be fully sufficient for the purposes intended.

*No reason stated  
for extension.*

In the present instance the Court beg to observe that no circumstances have been stated to shew why the extension now proposed is necessary or advisable. They therefore flatter themselves that before they shall be expected to make any alterations therein their Lordships will have the goodness to call upon the parties now asking for this extension to point out whether any and what inconveniences have been experienced from the restrictions imposed by the present limits or what advantage they expect by the extension, as the Court imagine it cannot be the wish of their Lordships that these limits should be extended without a satisfactory cause being assigned for the alteration.

*What advantages  
are  
expected?*

I have, &amp;c.,

Wm. Fawcner, Esq.

JACOB BOSANQUET.

## NEWSPAPER EXTRACT.

March 21.

(Supplement to the *Calcutta Gazette*, 21st March, 1811.)*New Zealand.*

THE following address has been circulated on the subject of the late massacres by the cannibals, natives in that quarter:—

All masters of ships frequenting New Zealand are directed to be careful in not admitting many natives on board, as they may be cut off in a moment by surprise.

*Heard rumours  
of a ship being  
cut off.*

These are to certify, that during our stay in this harbour we had frequent reports of a ship being taken by the natives in the neighbouring harbour of Wanganoas, and that the crew were killed and eaten.



In order to ascertain the truth of this report, as well as to rescue a few people who were said to be spared in the general massacre, Mr. Berry, accompanied by Mr. Russell, and Metangangoa, a principal chief of the Bay of Islands, who volunteered his services, set out for Wanganoa, in three armed boats, on Saturday the 31st December, 1809, and upon their arrival they found the miserable remains of the ship Boyd, Capt. John Thompson, which the natives, after stripping of every thing of value, had burnt down to the water's edge. From the handsome conduct of Metangangoa, they were able to rescue a boy, a woman, and two children, the only survivors of this shocking event, which, according to satisfactory information, was perpetrated entirely under the direction of that old rascal Tippahee, who has been undeservedly caressed at Port Jackson.

1811

March 21.

Investigation  
made by Messrs.  
Berry and  
Russell.

One boy, one  
woman, and two  
children saved.

This unfortunate vessel intended to load masts, &c., she had been there three days: after her arrival, the natives informed the master that in two days they would shew the spars; next day, in the morning, Tippahee came from Tippusia, and went on board; he staid only a few minutes, and went into his canoe, and remained alongside the vessel, which was surrounded with a considerable number of canoes, which soon collected for the purpose of trading, and a considerable number of natives gradually intruded into the ship, and sat down upon the deck. After breakfast the master left the ship, to look out for spars, with two boats. Tippahee, after waiting a convenient time, now gave the signal for massacre—in an instant the savages, who appeared peaceable upon deck, now rushed upon the unarmed crew, who were variously employed about the ship—the greater part were massacred in an instant, and were no sooner knocked down than they were cut to pieces, still alive. Five or six of the men escaped up the rigging. Tippahee now having possession of the ship, hailed them with a speaking trumpet, and ordered them to unbend the sails, and cut away the rigging, and they should not be hurt; they complied with his commands, and afterwards came down upon deck; he then took them ashore in a canoe, and immediately killed them. The master went ashore without arms, and of course was easily dispatched.

Unexpected  
attack made on  
Boyd's crew.

Every man  
massacred.

The names of the survivors are Mrs. Nancy Morley and child, Miss Betsey Broughton, and Thomas Davison (boy). The natives of the spar district in this harbour have behaved well even beyond expectation, and seem much concerned on account of the unfortunate event, and dreading the displeasure of King George, have requested a certificate of their good conduct, in order to exempt them from his vengeance; but let no man, after this, trust a New Zealander.

Natives of spar  
district behaved  
well.

1811  
March 21.

We further certify that we have given Tarra, the bearer of this, a small flat-bottomed boat, as a reward for his good conduct, and the assistance he afforded in getting us a cargo of spars.

SIMON PATTISON.

ALEX. BERRY, Supercargo.

JAMES RUSSELL.

Given on board the City of Edinburgh, Captain Simon Pattison, at the Bay of Islands, January 6, 1810.

I hereby certify that the above is an exact copy, taken from the certificate in the possession of Tarra, a chief of New Zealand, by me. Given under my hand the 11th day of July, 1810.—WILLIAM SWAINE, Master of the Ship Cumberland.

The boy Davison, mentioned above, owed the preservation of his life to his being club-footed, the natives taking him for a son of the devil !

[India Office—Miscellanies, Vol. 50.

W. RAMSAY TO MESSRS. ENDERBY.

April 10.

GENTLEMEN,— East India House, the 10th April, 1811.

Extension of  
southern whale  
fishery limits.

The Court of Directors of the East India Company have considered your letter dated the 2nd instant requesting in behalf of all the adventurers in the Southern Whale Fishery that the Court will permit the extension of limits adverted to in your former application to be inserted in the new Southern Whale Fishery Bill now before the House of Commons and stating that you have no objection to the Act being limited for three years which is a very short time and a power reserved by the Court to refuse licenses to individuals where they shall see cause, also that the masters of the ships may be obliged to enter into bonds to the same amount as to the owners, and I am directed to acquaint you that the Court have no objection to the insertion of a suitable Clause in the proposed Act to be previously submitted to the company's solicitor.

Clause to be inserted in Bill.

I am, &c.,

W. RAMSAY, Secy.

Messrs. Chas., Saml., and Geo. Enderby.

[Church Missionary House—C.M.S. Proceedings.

June 4.

EXTRACT FROM THE REPORT OF THE COMMITTEE DELIVERED TO THE ANNUAL MEETING, 4TH JUNE, 1811, AT THE NEW LONDON TAVERN, CHEAPSIDE.

\*

\*

\*

\*

The settlement at New Zealand is the object to which your Committee next beg leave to direct the attention of the Society.

By letters, dated Parramatta, New South Wales, April 25th, 1810, from the settlers Wm. Hall and his wife, and John King, and from the Rev. Samuel Marsden of May 3, your Committee learnt, with pleasure, their safe arrival at Port Jackson on the 27th of February preceding.

1811  
June 4.

New Zealand  
settlers arrived  
at Port Jackson.

Your Committee cannot convey to the Society a more succinct account of the circumstances, which had retarded the formation of the settlement, than in Mr. Marsden's words:—

“On our arrival at Port Jackson, I found the merchants here had formed a determination to make a settlement at New Zealand, in order to procure hemp, &c., which that island produces. The people were appointed, who were to form the settlement; and every other necessary preparation made, and the ship ready to sail under the sanction of the Government: when, at the moment, a vessel arrived from New Zealand, bringing information that a ship called the Boyd, which had sailed from Port Jackson for timber to carry to India, had been burnt by the natives, and the ship's crew murdered, with the exception of eight persons. This was very alarming news, and deterred, for the present, the merchants from their intention of forming a settlement on New Zealand.

Reasons for  
delaying forma-  
tion of settle-  
ment.

Destruction of  
the Boyd.

“Had this settlement been formed, it would have afforded great protection to the missionaries; as a regular communication would have been constantly kept up between this place and that island. . . .

“The merchants here will, I believe, endeavour to make a settlement on the island if it can be effected. The difference between the New Zealanders and Europeans is, so far as we know, confined to one district. The last ship which came in with spars met with every attention from the natives. What has taken place at New Zealand has not in the least altered the intention of your settlers of going thither. . . .

Settlement will  
be formed if  
possible.

“The Society may be assured that every necessary attention shall be paid to their missionaries, and that I shall feel a pleasure in communicating to them such knowledge as may be of use to them in future. Should circumstances render it necessary for them to continue in New South Wales, it is my intention to see if anything can be done for the instruction of the natives of New Holland. I purpose to place Wm. Hall, his wife, and John King, on a piece of land, and to make some little establishment for the accommodation of our own natives, and those of the islands who may visit us, and who have no place of protection. How far I may succeed I cannot say as yet. I shall write to you again when opportunity offers.”

Missionaries  
will be cared for.

Subsequent communications from the same zealous and able friend, dated Parramatta, July 29th and Oct. 25th, 1810, confirm this representation,—

1811

June 4.

Destruction of  
Boyd the fault  
of Europeans.

. . . "It is generally believed here, that the whole that has happened to the Boyd has been owing to the conduct of the Europeans themselves. I have conversed with many who have been at New Zealand, some before and some since the affair of the Boyd, but they all concur in one opinion that we are the aggressors. I am still persuaded that Divine Goodness has some gracious intentions towards this noble race of human beings.

New Zealanders  
shall be taught  
in New South  
Wales.

"I have sown two acres of flax, which are now growing : as soon as this is ready, it is my intention to set John King to teach the New Zealanders how to spin line and make rope, as this will apply to their immediate wants. Port Jackson will be the proper place to begin the instruction of these people, both in religion, morals, arts, and commerce. They are very attentive, sober, and willing to learn all they can. I shall be happy to have a school formed for them in this place, where they may be taught everything that may be of use to them, in their present state : I mean the simple mechanics, agriculture and the knowledge of the Scriptures.

"Nothing can be effectually done with the natives of the South Sea Islands, without the means of keeping up a constant communication with them from Port Jackson. The missionaries can neither be safe nor comfortable without this. A communication cannot be maintained without a ship." . . .

---

CAPTAIN BIRNIE TO GOVERNOR MACQUARIE.

To His Excellency Lachlan Macquarie, Esquire, Governor in Chief, &c., &c., &c.

1812

Aug. 13.

SIR,—

13th August, 1812.

The ship *Mary Ann*, Capn. Moore, which arrived in this port yesterday, has a very considerable investment on board, and after discharging the same is to proceed on the sperm whale fishery.

I have to solicit that your Excellency will be pleased to grant permission to haul the said ship alongside the stores of Messrs. Campbell & Co. This will be a very great convenience, in order to facilitate the landing of the cargo, and refitting the ship for her future voyage, which will require every possible dispatch, in consequence of the season for fishing off the coast of New Zealand having already commenced.

I have, &amp;c.,

JAMES BIRNIE.

O'Connell Street, 13th August, 1812.



## ENDORSEMENT IN GOVERNOR MACQUARIE'S HANDWRITING.

1812

*Answer.*

Aug. 14.

Altho' the Govr. deems it irregular to permit any ship or vessel discharging cargo at a private wharf, and is therefore unwilling to sanction such a practice; yet in consideration of what Mr. Birnie has stated in respect to the necessity of dispatching the ship *Mary Ann* with all possible expedition to the fishery, the Govr. is pleased in this particular instance to permit that ship to be hauled alongside the wharf of Messrs. Campbell & Co., and to land the whole of her cargo there, with the exception of her wines and spirits, which must be landed at the public wharf and deposited in the bonded store until sold, the Wharfinger and Govt. Ganger searching the ship to ascertain that no wines or spirits (excepting ship stores) remain on board, previous to the rest of the cargo of the *Mary Ann* commences to be landed.

L. M.

Sydney, 14th Aug., 1812.

## CAPTAIN BIRNIE TO GOVERNOR MACQUARIE.

To His Excellency Lachlan Macquarie, Esquire, Governor in Chief of New South Wales, &c., &c., &c.

SIR,—

31st March, 1813.

1813

March 31.

The brig *Perseverance* being now ready to proceed on a voyage to the islands of New Zealand, with persons on board on whom reliance can be placed, for the purpose of ascertaining whether the flax plant is sufficiently abundant on those islands, so as to warrant a greater undertaking, for the purpose of collecting that useful article, I beg leave to request your Excellency will be pleased to grant me liberty to do so as well as to import the said commodity into this colony.

As it is highly essential in an undertaking of this kind that a person qualified to manufacture that article should accompany the voyage, I most respectfully request your Excellency will be pleased to allow Robert Williams, a prisoner who came to this colony in the ship *Ann*, Captn. Clarke, to proceed on the said brig. Sufficient security shall be given for his return to this port; as it is not intended that any persons shall be left at the islands this voyage, nor that the vessel shall be absent from this port more than two months.

I have, &amp;c.,

JAMES BIRNIE.

Sydney, 31st March, 1813.

1813  
April 1.

# ENDORSEMENT IN GOVERNOR MACQUARIE'S HANDWRITING.

*Answer.*

The Govr. accedes to Mr. Birnie's request of sending the brig *Perseverance* to New Zealand for the purposes herein stated. He also acquiesces in Mr. Birnie's request of giving permission to Robt. Williams, convict, proceeding on board the *Perseverance* for the purpose herein stated ; but as it is a dangerous precedent to permit convicts to quit the territory on any account whatsoever, it is necessary that Mr. Birnie should execute a bond to have this man brought back to the colony under a penalty of two hundred pounds sterling.

Sydney, 1 April, 1813.

L M.

## GOVERNMENT AND GENERAL ORDER.

Dec. 1.

1st December, 1813.

WHEREAS many, and it is to be feared just, complaints have been lately made of the conduct of divers masters of colonial and British ships, and of their crews, towards the natives of New Zealand, of Otaheite, and of the other islands in the South Pacific Ocean : And whereas several ships, their masters and crews, have lately fallen a sacrifice to the indiscriminate revenge of the natives of the said islands, exasperated by such conduct : And whereas the lives and properties not only of His Majesty's subjects, but of the subjects of other Powers, touching at such islands, are likely to be put in continual jeopardy, and the farther trade and intercourse with the said islands greatly endangered, if not wholly prevented, unless some effectual measures are taken to prevent the continuance of a conduct and behaviour, at once repulsive to humanity and interest : It is therefore hereby ordered and declared by His Excellency the Governor that from and after the first day of January next ensuing the date hereof, no ship or vessel, either of British, India, or plantation registry, shall be suffered to clear out from this port, or any other port within the territory of New South Wales, for New Zealand or for any islands whatsoever in the South Pacific Ocean, or South Seas, unless the master of the said ship or vessel, if of British or Indian registry, and the master and owners of the said ship or vessel, if of plantation registry, shall become bound by his or their deed or deeds in writing to be signed with his or their seal or seals to the Naval Officer for the time being, of this port, or of such other port in this territory as such ship or vessel may clear out from, in the penal sum of one thousand pounds sterling, to be paid to such Naval Officer, his executors, administrators, or assigns, to and for the use of His Majesty, upon breach of the condition thereunder to be written, which condition shall be as follows :—

1813  
Dec. 1.  
—

“Whereas the ship or vessel called the—— of —— registry, whereof —— is master, and —— is or are owner or owners is about to be cleared out for New Zealand, or for the South Seas, or for some or one of the islands in the South Seas, pursuant to a certain Proclamation of His Excellency the Governor, bearing date the first day of December, 1813. Now the condition of this obligation is such, that if the above bounden —— master of the said vessel, and the officers and crew of such vessel, shall each and every of them, peaceably and properly demean themselves, and be of their good behaviour towards the natives of New Zealand, or of such of the islands in the South Seas as the said vessel may touch at in the course of this her voyage ; and if they shall not commit any act of trespass upon the plantations, gardens, lands, habitations, burial-grounds, tombs, or properties of the natives of the said islands, or any of them ; and if they shall not make war or cause war to be made upon them, or in any way interfere in the disputes, quarrels, and controversies of the said natives, or stir up, excite, or foment any animosities among them ; and if they shall leave the natives of the said islands to the free, uninterrupted, and undisturbed enjoyment of their religious ceremonies, rites, or observances ; and if the said master, officers, or crew or any of them shall not ship any of the male natives of any of the said islands, nor take away any such natives from any such islands without their free will and consent and the free will and consent of their chiefs, parents, or others to whom they may be subject ; and if the said master, officers, and crew shall not ship or take away any of the female natives of the said islands from the said islands without such free will and consent as aforesaid, and also without having first obtained the consent and approbation in writing of His Excellency the Governor of this territory, or other person actually administering the powers of Government in the same ; and in case the master and commanding officer of such vessel shall, by and with such consent as aforesaid, ship any male native or natives of any of the said islands either as a mariner, or diver, or for any other purpose whatsoever, then, and in that case, if the said master or commanding officer shall discharge from the said vessel all or any such male native or natives so shipped on board the same, wheresoever he shall be requested, by him or them so to do, first paying him or them such wages or price as may be lawfully or reasonably due to him or them for his or their services at the time of such discharge, then this obligation to be void and of no effect, otherwise to remain in full force and virtue. And whereas the natives of all the said islands are under the protection of His Majesty, and entitled to the good offices of his subjects ; all persons whatsoever charged by the oath of credible witnesses with any acts of rapine, plunder,

1813  
Dec. 1.

robbery, piracy, murder, or other offences against the law of nature and of nations, against the persons and properties of any of the natives of any of the said islands, will, upon due conviction, be further punished with the utmost rigour of the law.

LACHLAN MACQUARIE.

EXTRACT FROM THE "HAMPSHIRE TELEGRAPH."

Dec. 13.

Portsmouth, December 13, 1813.

Wreck on Mac-  
quarie Island.

LETTERS from New South Wales of January last represent the markets at Sidney to be glutted with India produce, and every commercial transaction to be cramped by the extreme scarcity of specie. The ship Campbell Macquarie, of Calcutta, had been wrecked on Macquarie Island. The cargo of 1,650 sealskins was lost. Captain Siddons, with the officers and crew, saved themselves on the island; and after residing there from the 10th of June to the 11th of October, they were fortunately discovered and taken off by the *Perseverance*, belonging to Port Jackson.

[The *Missionary Register*, February, 1815.

INSTRUCTIONS TO CAPT. DILLON.

1814  
March 9.

SIR,—

Sydney, March 9, 1814.

To deliver stores  
at Derwent,  
then proceed  
to Bay of  
Islands.

You will proceed with all possible dispatch to the River Derwent with the *Active*, brig, and deliver the stores on board to the person authorized there to receive them. After you have discharged the present cargo, you will then, with as little delay as possible, sail to the Bay of Islands, on the coast of New Zealand. On your arrival, you will open a friendly intercourse with the natives, particularly with Duaterra, Garra, Cowheetu, Coro Coro, and any other chief that may promote the object of the voyage.

To treat natives  
most kindly.

The main object of this voyage is to promote a friendly intercourse with the natives of New Zealand. You will do all you can to prevent any quarrel between the natives and the ship's company. If Duaterra, or any other chiefs, wish to come to Port Jackson, you will receive them on board when you finally leave the island. Or if they wish to send any of their children to be instructed, or a young native or two, these you may bring. I wish the natives to be treated with the greatest kindness while you are there, and everything to be done, that can be done with prudence, to gain their confidence. You will inform them that it is my intention to visit them when the vessel returns; and that I wish a chief to come over to Port Jackson, in order that I may enter into some arrangements with him for their benefit.



With respect to the articles which you may bring back in the vessel, these must depend upon circumstances. I should wish you to bring as much hemp as you possibly can, and such spars and timber as you may, with Mr. Hall, judge valuable ; pork, if it is to be obtained, and salt fish : rosin, or any other natural productions. I wish you to fill up with potatoes. They had better be kept in the baskets in which the natives bring them, as I think they will keep better that way.

1814  
March 9.

Return cargo  
from New  
Zealand.

On the Sabbath Day I wish Mr. Kendall to read on board, when the weather will permit, the prayers of the Church ; and when you arrive at New Zealand, I desire that you will be very particular in the observance of the Sabbath Day not to buy nor sell any thing on that day, but all the sailors to be clean and do no work.

Observance of  
Sabbath.

Messrs. Hall and Kendall will do all they can to procure a cargo for the vessel, toward defraying the expenses, along with you ; and I hope you will shew every attention to them, and make their situation as comfortable as possible. Should Mr. Kendall and Mr. Hall wish to remain a few days longer when the vessel is ready, you will be good enough to allow them to do so : in order that they may form any plan for their future settlement at New Zealand, or gain any information respecting the island for the future guidance of the Church Missionary Society.

SAMUEL MARSDEN.

P.S.—I wish you not to allow any private trade with the natives, nor any natives to be brought on board by the ship's company without your particular permission. And, to prevent all quarrels as far as possible, you will not suffer any of the native women to come on board, as this voyage is for a particular object.

Intercourse with  
natives.

[February, 1815.]

REV. S. MARSDEN TO CHURCH MISSIONARY SOCIETY.

Parramatta, March 15, 1814.

March 15.

I WAS very much gratified with the arrival of Mr. Kendall and his family, as it determined me, at once, to attempt the mission. I waited upon the Governor, and informed His Excellency what was the ultimate object which the Society had in view in sending out Mr. Kendall. When they arrived we were building two school-houses, neither of which was ready, or Mr. Kendall would have had one of them. It will be some time before they are completed. In consequence of this, Mr. Kendall has an opportunity of visiting New Zealand before he enters on any work in this colony. When I sent the Active I did not think it prudent for any of the families to go, but only Messrs. Kendall and Hall. Mr. King remains at

No schoolhouse  
ready for Ken-  
dall.

So is visiting  
New Zealand.  
first.

1814  
March 15.  
—

Parramatta (as his going would not have been attended with any advantage) till they all go, should Providence open a way for them.

I have directed Mr. Kendall to bring over with him a chief in order that we may make some arrangement with him for the future establishment of the settlers, and that the Government here may explain to him what are our views.

Marsden goes if  
missionaries  
settle.

I applied to the Governor for his permission to accompany Messrs. Kendall and Hall. He promised that I should go with the missionaries, should it be finally determined for them to settle at New Zealand, and see them properly fixed. I should have been glad to go now, as I could then have been better qualified to furnish the Society with every necessary information.

Prospects of the  
mission.

Messrs. Kendall and Hall were in very good spirits. They have very good accommodations, and I trust will do well. I think Mr. Kendall will soon acquire a knowledge of their language. A very fine young man, about seventeen years old, the son of a chief, has been living for some time with Mr. Kendall. They were very much attached to each other. He is gone along with him. I wrote to Duaterra, and informed him for what purpose Mr. Kendall and Mr. Hall were coming to New Zealand. Before Duaterra left Parramatta he was very urgent with me to send him a man to teach his boys and girls to read and write. I told him then I would send for Mr. Kendall, and he should come.

I have sent a variety of presents to the chiefs, and hope that the missionaries will be treated with kindness and attention by the chiefs and natives. The young chief, who is Mr. Kendall's companion, will be able to explain to his countrymen the object of the voyage. He assured me that he would return with Mr. Kendall.

Mr. Kendall's  
qualifications.

I think Mr. Kendall will prove himself a valuable man for the work. His heart is engaged in the cause. He is very mild in his manners, kind, tender, and affectionate, and well qualified to treat with an ignorant heathen. He applied to learn the language from Toohe, the young chief, and made some progress. On board he will have nothing else to attend to. From a combination of circumstances, I trust that Divine Providence has opened the way very clearly now, so as to warrant our attempt.

Circumstances  
favourable.

No missionaries could go out under more favourable circumstances than Messrs. Kendall and Hall do at present; and I trust they will give a good account when they return. Mrs. Kendall and Mrs. Hall, with their children, are living near me at Parramatta. I shall study to make them as comfortable as I can. They are all well. Both the master and the mate of the *Active* have been at the Bay of Islands, and are acquainted with the natives of New Zealand, which will prove of great advantage to them.

It is singular that the ship's company should consist of the following nations: Two natives of Otaheite, one of Owhyhee, one of New Zealand, one European native of New Holland, one American, one from Sweden, one from Norway, one from Prussia, and English and Irish!

1814  
March 15.

I gave particular instructions to the master for Mr. Kendall to read the service of the Church every Sabbath Day; and, when at New Zealand, that the Sabbath should be observed with the greatest solemnity. I shall be very anxious for their return, and trust that the Divine blessing will attend them, and preserve them from all evil.

Observance of  
the Sabbath.

I have, &c.,

SAMUEL MARSDEN.

#### REV. S. MARSDEN TO THE CHURCH MISSIONARY SOCIETY.

(Extract of a letter from Marsden to the Church Missionary Society, dated Parramatta, March 15, 1814; and printed in the *Missionary Register* for November, 1814.)

Marsden and  
New Zealanders,  
1814.

I have long wished for an opportunity to bring forward some of the masters of vessels, who visit the islands in the South Seas, for their wanton cruelties, robberies, and murders of the natives; in order to put a stop, as far as possible, to these acts of violence.

A few months ago, I received information that the master of a vessel from Port Jackson had treated a New Zealander very ill by beating him cruelly, stripping him naked, and taking from him what little property he had acquired by acting as a sailor on board. These acts took place in the Bay of Islands. I wrote an official letter to the Governor (a copy of which I herewith transmit) when the master of the vessel arrived, requesting that His Excellency would cause an inquiry to be made, which was done. I immediately brought forward another master of a vessel upon a similar charge. The facts, which I circumstantiated, induced His Excellency to issue a Proclamation for the protection of the natives of the South Sea Islands; and to require all masters of vessels who clear out of this port to enter into a bond, that they will not commit any of those acts of fraud and violence upon the natives.

Measures of  
protection of  
New Zealanders.

My next step was to try if I could not get a society formed for the protection of the natives of the South Sea Islands who may come to Port Jackson. In this I also succeeded far better than I expected. I have no doubt but this society will greatly aid the missions to New Zealand, and to the other islands. I consider this institution to be of vast importance to the common cause. For the governing of the society, as well as for constituting it, I

Formation of  
society for their  
protection.

1814

March 15.

copied your rules as nearly as I could : these were approved. I shall transmit to you the proceedings as far as we have gone. The Church Missionary Society will see, from all these circumstances, that Divine Goodness is preparing a way for these poor heathens to receive the glad tidings of the Gospel.

May 12.

## GOVERNOR MACQUARIE TO THE UNDER-SECRETARY OF STATE.

SIR,—

Sydney, N.S.W., 12th May, 1814.

1. By the arrival of the ship *Three Becs*, with male convicts, on the 6th instant, and since closing my dispatch of the 30th ultimo, I have had the honor to receive your letters under dates 28th Septemr. and 13th November, 1813, the latter enclosing copy of a memorial from George Bruce, addressed to the Secretary of State for the Colonies.

*Re Bruce's  
memorial, New  
Zealand.*

*Contradicting  
Bruce's asser-  
tions.*

*Bruce a  
deserting con-  
vict.  
Married chief's  
daughter.*

*Bad conduct to  
her.*

2. I have perused the above-mentioned memorial, and in obedience to the commands of the Secretary of State, beg leave to submit for His Lordship's information the following remarks thereon, namely : 1st, the assertion made by George Bruce in his memorial, in regard to my having advised him to go to England is totally unfounded, having gone thither entirely of his own accord. He was greatly involved in debt here, and to avoid paying them he entered himself as sailor on board His Majesty's ship *Porpoise*, and returned to England in her in May, 1810. 2nd, George Bruce (who went by the name of *Druse* in this country) came originally a convict to this colony ; deserted from the Government vessel *Lady Nelson* at New Zealand, where he remained, and afterwards married the daughter of the chief *Tippahee*. 3rd, I believe he went to Bengal in the manner he described, and practised gross impostures on that Government, representing himself as a prince of New Zealand, and as being a man of great consequence there, by which means he obtained considerable sums of money from the Bengal Government, and a passage back to this colony, where he arrived about the time of my assuming the government of it. 4th, it is not true that George Bruce, *alias* *Druse*, possesses any interest or authority in New Zealand, where he is, on the contrary, much despised and disliked, on account of his ill usage and neglect of his wife, the daughter of the chief *Tippahee*, by whom he had an only child (a girl), who is now supported in the Female Orphan School at Sydney, the poor unfortunate mother having died here some little time before her husband returned to England in the *Porpoise*, and by whom she was most shamefully and cruelly neglected in her last illness. 5th, to conclude these remarks, I must observe that George Bruce



(whose character is perfectly well known in this country) is a man of no principle whatever, of desperate fortune, much given to drunkenness and every kind of dissipation, and of most profligate manners in all other respects.

3. I therefore strongly recommend that George Bruce, *alias* Druse, may never be permitted to return to this country, nor to New Zealand, in which last, instead of doing any good, he would do a great deal of injury and mischief, both to the natives of that country and to such European traders as might chance to touch there.

1814  
May 12.

Bruce do harm  
if sent out.

I have, &c.,

L. MACQUARIE.

#### A NEW ZEALAND COMPANY.

To His Excellency Lachlan Macquarie, Esquire, Captain General, Governor, and Commander in Chief, in and over His Majesty's Territory of New South Wales, and its Dependencies, &c., &c., &c.

Sydney, Oct. 3rd, 1814.

Oct. 3.

THE memorial of the undersign'd, merchants, traders, and others, residing in the said territory, respectfully sets forth,—

Memorial of  
merchants, &c.,  
of New South  
Wales.

That one of Your Excellency's memorialists—namely, Simeon Lord, of Sydney, merchant—being desirous of procuring some staple commodities for exports and return cargoes from this colony and New Zealand to England, the Cape of Good Hope, and other parts, did, so long back as in the year 1809, charter the ship *Boyd*, for the purpose of proceeding from hence to England with coals, cedar, and timber, touching at New Zealand for spars and other commodities, which the said Simeon Lord thought might be disposed of to advantage at the Cape of Good Hope and England; with which, and 30,000 seal skins, that ship sail'd in the month of October, 1809, and arrived in November at a port called Wangaroo, a little to the northward of the Bay of Islands, on the east coast of New Zealand, where she was unfortunately cut off by the natives, and that design was frustrated.

Lord wished to  
procure goods  
for export.

Chartered *Boyd*  
and sent to  
New Zealand.

Cut off by  
natives.

Yet the said Simeon Lord, still having great reason to believe that the timber, hemp, flax, and other commodities procurable at New Zealand would be of the greatest importance, both for the consumption of this colony, and as exports, he, in the year 1810, in conjunction with Francis Williams and the late Andrew Thompson, Esquire, made another attempt to form a settlement and factories under Your Excellency's sanction and recommendation to His Majesty's Ministers to encourage and protect their endeavours, as well as to grant certain in-

Second attempt  
made.

1814  
Oct. 3.

£12,000 worth  
of property on  
Boyd.

Wish to form a  
stock company.

To form settle-  
ments and  
factories at  
New Zealand.

To be incor-  
porated by a  
charter.

dulgencies expressed in the prayer of a memorial they had the honor to address to Your Excellency on that subject, and to which Your Excellency was pleased to inform memorialist, Simeon Lord, was sanctioned, under certain restrictions; and in pursuance of which, two vessels were equipt, with men, provisions, and proper materials, &c., sent under the management of one William Leith, whose misconduct frustrated their intentions after the parties concerned had sunk upwards of £2,000 on that occasion, exclusive of the incalculable injury the said Simeon Lord had individually suffered in the loss of the said ship Boyd, on board of which he had upwards of £12,000 real property, of which not one penny had been insured by reason of the failure of Messrs. Jacobs, of London, merchants, who had been appointed Mr. Lord's agents, and instructed to make insurance accordingly. From these losses, and other pecuniary embarrassments which the said Simeon Lord had to contend with, the object then (and still) intended to be carried into effect lay dormant untill May last, when the said Simeon Lord, desirous again to make a further attempt was inform'd that several other merchants and respectable inhabitants of this colony were solicitous to enter into a speculation of that nature, which induced the said Simeon Lord and Garnham Blaxcell, another of your memorialists, to make a public business of it, by advertizing for all persons who were inclined, to come forward and incorporate themselves into a stock company, dividing it into shares of £50, so that every person might participate in the benefits of the enterprize who would advance and risk that sum; and having obtained Your Excellency's permission to advertize and convene a meeting for that purpose, and with a view to establish such settlements and factories at New Zealand as might be thought advisable, or likely to answer the intended purpose of procuring and preparing the New Zealand hemp and flax plants suitable for this, or any other markets, together with timber, or any other articles the natural productions of that island, and which was to be called and known by the name of "The New South Wales New Zealand Company" constituted or incorporated by a certain charter or license from Your Excellency as Governor in Chief of this colony, authorizing them to incorporate themselves into a company, and to frame such laws and regulations as might be found requisite and necessary from time to time, first submitting them to Your Excellency's consideration and approval, so as to enable the company, by just and salutary rules and regulations, to proceed in and effectually to carry on their intended speculation, which memorialists, presuming on Your Excellency's gracious support and encouragement so far as may be reasonable and within Your Excellency's province,

and trusting that Your Excellency, in consideration of the heavy expences and hazards of such an undertaking, from the large sums already sunk by former attempts, would deign, under proper rules, regulations, and management, to afford them your support and protection, under the reasonable and well-grounded expectation that a most valuable exportation of hemp, flax, and other commodities might be acquired, and the natives in time civilized, made a usefull race of people, and taught to appreciate the value of a friendly intercourse between us.

1814  
Oct. 3.

Asks Governor's support.

And here memorialists respectfully beg leave to submit to Your Excellency the outlines of their first proposed plans and intentions, looking up to you as the father and patron of your people for support and protection, and pledging themselves to observe such restrictions and regulations as in Your Excellency's wisdom may seem meet and desirable to prescribe.

Outlines of proposed plans.

First, that memorialists propose to be incorporated into a stock company by a proper deed or charter. The concern to consist of two hundred £50 shares, which shares may be sold, divided, or disposed of as the proprietors and holders may think proper.

To consist of 200 £50 shares.

That the concerns of the company shall be carried on and managed by two or more directors, to be elected from the general body of proprietors by ballot once every year, at which time the accounts of the year shall be made up and open to the inspection of the proprietors, the profits ascertained, and appropriated to the general benefit, in like manner as stock companies in England are generally guided, but governed by their own laws and regulations under Your Excellency's approbation, to whom all new rules and regulations shall from time to time be submitted.

Company to be managed by two or more directors.

The first object is to employ the capital so subscribed in shares in purchasing two small vessels, one from 80 to 100 tons, the other 50 or 60 tons burthen, with about 50 men, including the vessels' crews, forming the first establishment at Fort William, on the south end of New Zealand, and fetch across Foveaux Straits in the smaller vessel the raw materials and such of the natives as may chuse to assist the men so established, in procuring, preparing, and packing the hemp and flax, and, if found convenient, make cordage and canvas, thus by degrees extending their undertaking so as to make other settlements and factories on such other parts as may be discovered, or found likely to answer the objects in view, after carefully surveying the whole of the harbours and places on the island, to which service it is intended to appropriate the larger vessel, at the same time endeavouring to form, and preserve by every mode of conciliation and

Will purchase two small vessels.

Larger one to survey island.



1814  
Oct. 3.  
—

Kind treatment  
of natives.

Factory  
managed by a  
proprietor.

Shares be  
divided and  
extended.

Asks protection  
from inter-  
ference from  
others in  
colony.

Asks for a  
charter, &c.

kindness, a friendly intercourse with the natives, by bartering with and encouraging them to procure and prepare the hemp and flax, by shewing them the best way of dressing those articles by hand, and which memorialists trust by a strict and honourable adherence on their part, and those who may act under them, to one principle—namely, that of treating the natives courteously and kindly—may in time produce confidence and mutual friendship, making them first usefull, and then leading them on to progressive civilization, by allowing and inviting such of them as may be so disposed to proceed to the establishment, where they may learn our tongue, and be taught to assist in the various processes attached to the arts before them, to facilitate which there will be a kind of dock yard, where blacksmiths, ship-wrights, carpenters, and sawyers will be employed; and as the manager or person in charge and command at the factory will be one of the proprietors, holding not less than ten shares, besides his salary from the company and his instructions from Your Excellency, or the Governor for the time being, whose interest it will be, exclusive of such instructions, to be carefull and cautious that no improper treatment is given to the natives; and as it is probable there will be many speculators glad to profit by the company's experiments if successfull, memorialists submit that as they have advertized, and not only offered, but solicited the inhabitants of this colony to join them, and as the shares may at all times be divided and extended according to the supposed value of the speculation, in its progress, memorialists hope that Your Excellency will be pleased to prevent any infringement or interference by others from this colony without first obtaining a similar permission and authority from England through Your Excellency's recommendation, or the Governor for the time being; so as they may not avail themselves of memorialists' experience by attempting to form a similar establishment, or send vessels to barter with the natives, to the prejudice and injury of memorialists, who being the first to hazard their property in the speculation, and having carried it on under Your Excellency's gracious patronage and protection, trust they may be at liberty to prosecute their views without any such interruption or opposition.

May it therefore please Your Excellency to grant memorialists a charter, licence, or such other authority as will enable them to incorporate themselves into a stock company, with such other documents and authority as will enable them to establish and form settlements and factories on such parts and places on New Zealand as may, after strictly surveying, be found likely to answer their purpose, and that memorialists may be permitted to import and export part or all such commodities as may be



procured, to and from this colony, duty free, and that Your Excellency will be pleased to appoint the person in charge a Justice of the Peace, with such instructions and regulations as to Your Excellency's wisdom may seem meet, with such other encouragement and indulgencies as the nature and magnitude of the undertaking merit.

And memorialists will ever pray, &c.

S. LORD.

G. BLAXCELL.

RICHARD BROOKS.

W. H. HOVELL.

E. S. HALL.

1814  
Oct. 3.

And other  
encouragement.

[Memorandum—Church Missionary Society.

MISSIONARY LETTERS.—REV. S. MARSDEN'S VOYAGES TO NEW ZEALAND.

Nov.

(Taken from his Journals.)

*First Voyage.*—On November 9th, 1814, the Rev. S. Marsden embarked on board the "Active," at Port Jackson, and sailed for New Zealand, arriving at the North Cape on Dec. 16th. He left Whangaroa on February 16th, 1815, on his return journey, and reached Port Jackson on March 23rd, 1815.

*Second Voyage.*—He embarked on the "General Gates" on July 29th, 1819, and reached the North Cape on August 10th, leaving Rangheehoo again on November 9th, to return to Port Jackson.

*Third Voyage.*—On February 13th, 1820, the Rev. S. Marsden embarked on the "Dromedary," and arrived at the Bay of Islands, February 27th. On June 5th he embarked on the "Coromandel" for the River Thames, where she was going to obtain spars. Reached Cape Colville on the 12th. On Sept. 17 he left New Zealand in the "Prince Regent" for Port Jackson, but was forced to return through stress of weather. He then left her, and waited for the "Dromedary," which left New Zealand, November 25th.

*Fourth Voyage.*—The Rev. S. Marsden sailed in the "Brampton" July 22nd, 1823, and reached Rangheehoo, August 3rd. On September 7th he sailed from Rangheehoo, accompanied by the Rev. S. Leigh, whose health had broken down. The vessel struck on some sunken rocks and was wrecked, but no lives were lost. The people all escaped to the Island of Mootoorroa. On November 14th he again embarked on the "Dragon," and arrived at Port Jackson, Nov. 30th.

1814

*Fifth Voyage.*—(No journal; particulars taken from the *Missionary Register*.) In March, 1827, the Rev. S. Marsden embarked in H.M.S. "Rainbow" for New Zealand, and arrived in the Bay of Islands on April 5th. After a very brief stay he sailed again on the 10th, arriving at Port Jackson on the 18th.

*Sixth Voyage.*—The Rev. S. Marsden left Port Jackson on February 16th, 1830, in the "Elizabeth," and entered the Bay of Islands on March 8th (last entry in journal, May 11th). On May 27th he embarked in the "Prince of Wales" on his return to N.S. Wales.

*Seventh Voyage.*—The Rev. S. Marsden embarked for his seventh and last voyage in the "Pyramus" on February 7th, 1837. He landed at Okeanga on the 23rd, and left for Port Jackson July 27th, 1837.

(N.B.—Rev. S. Marsden died May 8/38.)

---

#### GOVERNMENT AND GENERAL ORDER.

Nov. 9.

9th November, 1814.

IT having been represented to His Excellency the Governor that the commanders and seamen of vessels touching at or trading with the islands of New Zealand, and more especially that part of them commonly called "The Bay of Islands," have been in the habit of offering gross insult and injury to the natives of those places, by violently siezing on and carrying off several of them, both males and females, and treating them in other respects with injudicious and unwarrantable severity, to the great prejudice of the fair intercourses of trade, which might be otherwise productive of mutual advantages, and His Excellency being equally solicitous to protect the natives of New Zealand and the Bay of Islands in all their just rights and privileges as those of every other dependency of the territory of New South Wales, hereby orders and directs that no master or seamen of any ship or vessel belonging to any British port, or to any of the colonies of Great Britain, resorting to the said islands of New Zealand, shall in future remove or carry therefrom any of the natives without first obtaining the permission of the chief or the chiefs of the districts within which the natives so to be embarked may happen to reside, which permission is to be certified in writing under the hand of Mr. Thomas Kendall, the Resident Magistrate in the Bay of Islands, or of the Magistrate for the time being in said districts.

It is also ordered and directed by the authority aforesaid that no master of any ship or vessel belonging to Great Britain,

or any of her colonies, shall land or discharge any sailor or sailors, or other persons, from on board his ship or vessel within any of the bays or harbours of New Zealand without having first obtained the permission of the chief or chiefs of the place, confirmed by the certificate of the Resident Magistrate, in like manner as in the foregoing orders.

Any neglect or disobedience of these Orders by the masters or seamen belonging to ships or vessels trading from hence to or having any intercourse with New Zealand or the adjacent isles will subject the offenders to be proceeded against with the utmost rigour of the law on their return hither; and those who shall return to England without resorting to this place will be reported to His Majesty's Secretary of State for the Colonies, and such documents transmitted as will warrant their being equally proceeded against and punished there, as if they had arrived within this territory.

And, with a view to carry these Orders into due effect, His Excellency is pleased to direct that the following chiefs of New Zealand—viz., Dewaterra, Shunger, and Kora Korra—be and they are hereby invested with power and authority for that purpose, and are to receive due obedience from all persons to whom these Orders have reference, so far as they relate to their obtaining permission to remove or carry away any of the natives of New Zealand or the adjacent isles, or to land or discharge any sailors or other persons thereon.

LACHLAN MACQUARIE.

[*Sydney Gazette.*

GOVERNMENT AND GENERAL ORDERS.

Government House, Sydney,

Saturday, 12th November, 1814.

Nov. 12.

*Civil Department.*

1. THE Reverend Samuel Marsden, Principal Chaplain of this territory, having solicited permission to proceed by the brig Active to New Zealand, for the purpose of endeavouring to effect a friendly intercourse with the natives of that country, and promoting the benevolent views of the Church Missionary Society, by introducing among those natives the knowledge of the Christian religion and the arts of civilized society; and His Excellency the Governor giving due consideration to the importance of the objects which may by these means be effected, is pleased to grant Mr. Marsden leave to proceed (by such opportunity as he may choose to embrace) on the object of his mission to New Zealand, and to be absent from hence for four months from the date of his departure.

Rev. Marsden  
going to New  
Zealand.

Leave granted  
for four months.

1814  
Nov. 9.

1814  
Nov. 12.

Mr. Kendall  
J.P. in New  
Zealand.

2. The Reverend Benjamin Vale, Assistant Chaplain, is to proceed forthwith to Parramatta, and to perform the clerical duties there until the return of Mr. Marsden from New Zealand, or till further orders.

3. His Excellency the Governor has been pleased to appoint Mr. Thomas Kendall (missionary) to be one of His Majesty's Justices of the Peace in the Bay of Islands in New Zealand, and throughout the islands of New Zealand, and those immediately contiguous thereto. Mr. Kendall is therefore to be respected and obeyed as such throughout the said islands and places.

By command of His Excellency the Governor.

J. T. CAMPBELL, Secretary.

[The *Missionary Register*, September, 1815.

REV. S. MARSDEN TO REV. J. PRATT.

Nov. 18.

Sydney, New South Wales, November 18, 1814.

DEAR SIR,—

Embarked for  
New Zealand.

I am now embarked on board the *Active* for New Zealand, together with Messrs. Kendall, Hall, and King. I have deemed it necessary to take a few select mechanics to assist the settlers, for the present, to form their establishment. The chiefs and their attendants return with me, excepting one young man who remains with my family at Parramatta, in order that he may improve his mind in useful knowledge. He is a very fine young man.

Visit of chiefs  
to Sydney.

The chiefs have been much gratified with their visit to this colony, and the inhabitants in general have treated them with kindness and respect. His Excellency Governor Macquarrie has been very kind and attentive to them, and has given them three cows and a bull, one cow to each chief. I shall take a horse and two mares for the future benefit of the settlement. The Governor has also given to each of the chiefs a suit of military officer's clothing, which has been very acceptable to them. They all seem very grateful.

Mr. Kendall  
appointed  
Magistrate.

At my request His Excellency the Governor has appointed Mr. Kendall to act as Magistrate, which will be a check upon some of the masters and owners of vessels and their crews, who visit New Zealand. The General Order relative to this subject I herewith transmit for the information of the Society. The Governor has directed the colonial seal to be put to all the copies of these Orders, which I have to give to the chiefs, in order to shew more particularly what is the wish of the Executive authority in this colony.



As far as human foresight can conjecture, there is a fair prospect for establishing the mission at New Zealand. I have had many difficulties to contend with, but they seem now to be in a great measure removed. The Society must be aware that the expenses attending this undertaking must be very considerable at the first.

1814

Nov. 18.

Fair prospects  
for mission.

Nothing will tend so much to civilize the natives of New Zealand as a constant intercourse with this colony. I intend the Active to be always employed in this service, for the safety and comfort of the settlers. I think the natural productions of the island will nearly pay the expenses from this time. When I arrive at New Zealand I shall be a better judge of this matter, and shall then communicate my ideas to the Society.

Hopes will  
support itself.

I leave my family under the Divine protection. If I should be spared to return to them I shall be able to provide for all their wants; but if Providence should otherwise determine, I recommend them to the kind consideration of the Society, as much of my capital is expended in the work, and my partner has been afflicted for more than three years. Whatever sacrifices I may make at present, I feel it my imperious duty to visit New Zealand. How far I am a judge of my own spirit I cannot tell. I shall commit all my affairs into His hands, and follow where the Lord leads, so far as I know. I shall give the Society a more particular account the first opportunity. You will excuse my haste and confusion, as the vessel is now under weigh.

Recommends  
his family.

I have, &amp;c.,

SAMUEL MARSDEN.

P.S.—The settlers are all well.

[Church Missionary Society.]

REV. S. MARSDEN'S ACCOUNT OF HIS FIRST VISIT TO NEW ZEALAND.

Dec.

*Observations on the Introduction of the Gospel into the South Sea Islands: Being my First Visit to New Zealand in December, 1814.*

WHEN the fulness of time drew near for these poor heathen nations to be favoured with the knowledge of Divine revelation, the Supreme Governor of the World overruled the political affairs of America and England to further this object, and made the wrath of man to praise Him.

One great step was accomplished when America, in July, 1776, was declared a free and independent nation. A short time before this important event took place, Captn. Cook, accompanied

American  
independence  
acknowledged,  
1776.

1814

Dec.

by the late Sir Joseph Banks, had been sent by the British Government to visit the South Sea Islands; and during this voyage the great navigator visited New South Wales, and anchored in Botany Bay.

New convict station needed.

After peace had been established between England and America, in the year 1783, the British Government found that it had now no place to which the national convicts might be transported. In this dilemma, it has been said that the late Sir Joseph Banks recommended to His Majesty King George the Third to form an establishment at Botany Bay expressly for convicts, and upon this suggestion an Act of Parliament was passed for that purpose.

Botany Bay was selected.

It is obvious that neither His late Majesty nor his Ministers had, in these political arrangements, any intention to convey the Gospel to the nations of the South Sea Islands, but merely to provide a receptacle for the criminal population of Britain. Yet He who governs the universe and has the hearts of kings in His own hands had that merciful object in view. As a proof of the correctness of this remark, it is a well known fact that when the first fleet was ready to sail with the convicts for New South Wales, in the year 1787, no clergyman had been thought of. A particular friend of mine, a pious man of some influence, who was anxious for the spiritual welfare of the convicts, made a strong appeal to those in authority to induce them to appoint a clergyman to superintend the spiritual concerns of all, both free and bond, who embarked to form the intended establishment in New South Wales. Accordingly, through the interest of the late Dr. Porteous, the Revd. Richard Johnston was appointed chaplain. The above single fact, therefore, clearly shows that the whole was under the superintending providence of an all wise and merciful God. Though He did not establish a colony in New South Wales for the advancement of His glory, and the salvation of the heathen nations in these distant parts of the globe, by selecting men of character and principle, on the contrary, He took men from the dregs of society—the scrapings of jails, hulks, and prisons—men who had forfeited their lives or liberties to the laws of their country; but He mercifully gave them their lives for a prey, and sent them forth to make a way for His missionary servants—for them that should bring glad tidings—that should publish peace to the heathen world—that should say unto them in the name of the Lord, “Look unto Me, and be ye saved, all the ends of the earth, for I am God, and there is none else.” Well may we exclaim, with the apostle, “How unsearchable are His judgments, and His ways past finding out.”

Appeal made for a chaplain to go with the first fleet.

This opened the way for missionary work in the South Seas.

Having made the above preliminary observations, I need only add that on the 26th of January, 1788, the first convicts arrived in Botany Bay under the command of Admiral Phillip, who was appointed Governor of the new colony.

1814

Dec.

First convicts  
arrived in  
Botany Bay,  
1788.

I shall now proceed to notice the first dawn of the rising of the sun of righteousness upon the poor benighted heathen of New Zealand. In the year 1793, His Majesty's ship "Dedalus," commanded by Lieut. Hanson, was in the South Seas on discovery, and during his voyage the Lieut. touched at New Zealand, and anchored in Sandy Bay, a little to the southward of the North Cape. Some natives came off, in their canoes, to see the ship, among whom were two young chiefs,\* who alone could be prevailed upon to go on board; they were invited into the cabin, and were much entertained with the various objects they then saw. Soon after they had come on board, Lieut. Hanson weighed anchor and sailed for Norfolk Island. The two young chiefs, not being aware of the ship's sailing, and when they came on deck seeing themselves at a considerable distance from the land, and all their canoes returned to the shore, became much alarmed for their personal safety. Lieut. Hanson and his officers did what they could to pacify their minds, being anxious to carry them safely to Norfolk Island, and deliver them to Captain King, who was at that time Lieut. Governor of the island, and wanted some New Zealanders to instruct Europeans how to dress flax, which grew there spontaneously, and was of the same quality with the flax of New Zealand. I have always considered this circumstance as one of the first apparent steps, adopted by Divine Providence, to prepare the way for the introduction of the Gospel into New Zealand.

1793: Lieut.  
Hanson carried  
off two New  
Zealand chiefs.

Wanted by  
Lieut.-Governor  
King on Norfolk  
Island.

Captain King treated Hoodoo and Tokee with the kindest attention: they lived at Government House, and everything was done to quiet their minds and gain their confidence.

When they had resided with him about nine months, the merchant ship "Britannia" (on her way to the Cape of Good Hope for supplies to the Colony of New South Wales) touched at the island, and was engaged by the Lieut. Governor to take the two youths to their native country. He embarked with them himself, in order to prevent any insult or injury being done to them. He saw them safely landed among their friends, and gave them some hogs, various instruments for agricultural purposes (such as axes, spades, &c.). He also supplied them with clothes, and such other articles as he thought conducive to their future good. The great kindness and solicitude shewn by Captain King for their welfare made a deep impression on their

Returned to  
New Zealand  
nine months  
later.

Very grateful  
for kind treat-  
ment.

\* Hoodoo and Tokee.

1814  
Dec.

minds, and filled them with gratitude and esteem towards the donor, as they afterwards testified to myself and others.

During the nine following years little communication took place between the New Zealanders and Europeans, either at Norfolk Island or at New Zealand; a few of them, however, came occasionally, in whalers, to Port Jackson, and with some of these I became acquainted as opportunity offered.

1802-3: The  
"Lady Nelson"  
driven to New  
Zealand.

About the year 1802-3 a small Government vessel, the "Lady Nelson," commanded by Lieut. Simmons, was sent with supplies to Norfolk Island, but was driven by violent contrary winds to the east side of New Zealand, and anchored in the Bay of Islands. Captain King had by this time returned to England, and Norfolk Island was under the command of Captain Townson, an officer of the New South Wales Corps. This change did not, however, prevent a longing desire in the late chief Tippahee and four of his sons to see the island where the two young chiefs before mentioned had been so kindly treated; they were allowed a passage in the "Lady Nelson," and received every attention from the officer in command.

Tippahee and  
four sons  
visited Norfolk  
Island.

After they had been some time on the island, His Majesty's ship "Buffalo," commanded by Captain Houston, arrived from Port Jackson, by which means Tippahee learned that the late Captain King had come out Governor of New South Wales, and expressed his wish to visit Sydney. He obtained a passage accordingly, and the Governor received him and his friends with the greatest cordiality. They were invited to Government House, where they lived at their pleasure.

Then went to  
Governor King  
at Sydney.

Tippahee was a man of high rank and influence in his own country. He possessed a clear, strong, and comprehensive mind, and was anxious to gain what knowledge he could of our laws and customs. He was wont to converse much with me about our God, and was very regular in his attendance at church on the Sabbath; and, when at public worship, behaved with great decorum. After satisfying his curiosity, he and his friends returned to their native home.

Duatterra, &c.,  
also came to  
Port Jackson.

About two years after Tippahee departed, the young chief Duatterra, accompanied by several of his countrymen, came to Port Jackson, which gave an opportunity to me of having frequent communication with this very interesting people. The more I examined into their national character the more I felt interested in their temporal and spiritual welfare. Their minds appeared like a rich soil that had never been cultivated, and only wanted the proper means of improvement to render them fit to rank with civilized nations. I knew that they were cannibals—that they were a savage race, full of superstition, and wholly under the power and influence of the Prince of Darkness—and



that there was only one remedy which could effectually free them from their cruel spiritual bondage and misery, and that was the Gospel of a Crucified Saviour. But, as Saint Paul observes, "How could they believe on Him of whom they had not heard, and how could they hear without a preacher, and how could they preach except they be sent?" After seriously considering their degraded condition, and embracing all opportunities of gaining a perfect knowledge of their character, I resolved to return to England, as soon as I could obtain leave of absence, and endeavour to get some missionaries sent out to preach the Gospel to this people. I was fully convinced that there were no insurmountable difficulties in the way of preaching the Gospel in New Zealand; and I felt no apprehension that the lives of missionaries, if any were sent, would be in danger, being confident that I could personally go with safety if I saw it was my duty to do so.

1814  
Dec.

New Zealanders  
needed mis-  
sionaries to  
teach them.

Under these impressions, I waited on His Excellency Governor Bligh (who had now relieved Governor King in the government of the colony) to obtain the necessary leave of absence to visit England, which was granted on condition that the Rev. H. Fulton, who was then at Norfolk Island, should perform my duty as chaplain to the colony during my absence (being myself the only clergyman in New South Wales at that period). Fortunately, a vessel was just about to sail for Norfolk Island, by which I wrote to Mr. Fulton, and another ship very opportunely touched at that place while on her way to Sydney (about this time), which enabled that gentleman to comply with my request, so as to arrive at Port Jackson sooner than I expected. As such opportunities were of rare occurrence, I considered this circumstance a highly favourable dispensation of Providence towards myself at that time, being aware that a great political storm was fast gathering in the colony in which (if I remained) I could not well avoid being involved; and to gratify my earnest desire of having the Gospel preached at New Zealand, as well as to secure my own quiet, I was most anxious to quit the colony without delay, lest I should be prevented from proceeding on the design I had formed. It was therefore a matter of great joy to me when I obtained His Excellency's leave of absence, and got on board of His Majesty's ship "Buffalo" along with the late Governor King. We sailed in February, 1807, and arrived in England in the November following.

Obtained leave  
to go to England.

Arrived in  
England, 1807.

Shortly after my arrival in London I waited upon the Reverend Josiah Pratt, Secretary to the Church Missionary Society, and stated my views on the degraded state of the New Zealanders for the want of moral and religious instruction, and requested that the Committee would take their miserable

Stated his views  
to Rev. J. Pratt.

1814  
Dec.  
—

situation into its favourable consideration. The Rev. J. Pratt attended to my request with the greatest kindness, which inspired me with the hope that the Committee would enter into my views, and render the assistance solicited.

Three missionaries promised, but no one offered.

I remained in England more than fourteen months, during which period I waited upon the Committee several times, and it was ultimately resolved to send three missionaries out with me on my return to the colony. No clergymen, however, offered their services on this occasion. The character of the New Zealanders was considered more barbarous than that of any other savage nation, so that few would venture out to a country where they could anticipate nothing less than to be killed and eaten by the natives. At length two mechanics agreed to accompany me, and I was very glad of their offer, as I conceived that they, like Caleb and Joshua of old, might open the way for others at a future time to take possession of the land. They accordingly embarked with me in 1809 for New South Wales.

Could only get two mechanics.

Destruction of the "Boyd."

On our arrival at Port Jackson, in February, 1810, we received the melancholy news that the ship "Boyd," of 600 tons burden, had been burnt, and the captain and crew all murdered and eaten by the natives of Whangareroo, in New Zealand. This most awful calamity extinguished at once all hopes of introducing the Gospel into that country. Every voice was naturally raised against the natives, and against all who were in any way attached to their interest. None lamented this calamity more than myself.

Revenge taken by the whalers.

Another dreadful occurrence soon after took place. At the time I here allude to there were seven whalers on the coast of New Zealand, and the masters of these vessels, having heard of the fate of the "Boyd," sailed into the Bay of Islands, which lies about forty miles to the southward of Whangareroo, and in the night each ship sent a whale-boat, with an armed crew, who landed on Tippiabee's Island, and there murdered every man and woman they could find. In this dreadful slaughter my friend Tippiabee received seven shots, and died of his wounds. Many other friendly disposed people were killed. It was alleged by the Europeans, as a justification of this horrid massacre, that Tippiabee assisted in the destruction of the "Boyd" and her crew; though at the same time he was an innocent man. The mistake appears to have originated in the near similarity in the names of the two chiefs—that of the chief at the Bay of Islands was Tippiabee, and the name of the other at Whangareroo (who aided in the destruction of the "Boyd") was Tippoohee. I knew them both well.

Tippiabee killed, though innocent.

After these awful events, the way to New Zealand appeared to be completely hedged up, though I did not despair of the

ultimate success of the mission, from my personal knowledge of the real character of the New Zealanders, provided I could get any vessel to take the missionaries to New Zealand, who were then with me at Parramatta, and willing to go. I waited more than three years, and no master of a vessel would venture for fear of his ship and crew falling a sacrifice to the natives.

At length I purchased a brig called the "Active," which had come from India, and applied to the then Governor Macquarie for permission to go with the brig myself along with the missionaries; but His Excellency refused my request. At the same time he promised that if I sent the "Active," and she returned safe I should then have permission to go. I was satisfied with this answer, but felt at a loss to find a suitable person to navigate the brig, because the risk of being murdered and eaten by the New Zealanders prevented several shipmasters from accepting the office. Mr. (now Count) Dillon, who afterwards went in search of La Perouse (La Prouse), was then in Sydney (1814), and I engaged him to take the command of the "Active." I then wrote a letter to the chief Deuaterre, or Duaterre, whom I had known nine years before, requesting him to return with the brig, and to bring with him three or four chiefs, as also to acquaint the natives that I had sent missionaries in the vessel to see their country, and that it was my intention also to visit New Zealand, provided the brig returned in safety from their coast, and that the missionaries would then accompany me, for the purpose of forming a settlement on the island. Under these circumstances Mr. Dillon sailed with the missionaries, and in due time returned to Port Jackson without injury to himself, the crew, nor to the vessel.

The "Active" having safely arrived in port, I lost no time in calling upon His Excellency for the fulfilment of his promise. My leave of absence was immediately granted, and, with all convenient dispatch, I embarked in company with the missionaries, their families, and five chiefs—namely, Shunghee, Torokoro, Toui, Toui's brother, and Duaterre.

We sailed from Sydney Cove, 19th November, and reached the Bay of Islands, in New Zealand, on the 22nd December, 1814. After arranging all matters respecting the mission as well as circumstances would permit (which will be detailed hereafter), I left the island, in the same vessel, about the first of March, 1815. Duaterre was then dangerously ill, and, as I afterwards learned, he died four days after the "Active" sailed for Sydney. The death of this chief was a very afflictive dispensation—he was a man of comparatively great knowledge, loved his country, and was most anxious for its welfare. His character, conduct, and sufferings will be better seen in the following memoir, which has already been published:—

1814

Dec.

No vessel would go to New Zealand.

Purchased the brig "Active."

Went to New Zealand and returned in safety.

Marsden and five chiefs reached New Zealand, December, 1814.

Duaterre died in March, 1815.



1814

Dec.

Memoir of  
Duaterra.*Memoir of Duaterra.*

In the year 1805 the "Argo," whaler, commanded by a Mr. Baden, put into the Bay of Islands for refreshments. On the vessel leaving the harbour Duaterra embarked on board of her, with two of his countrymen. The "Argo" remained on the coast for about five months, and then returned into the bay. On the vessel's final departure from New Zealand for Port Jackson, Duaterra sailed in her and arrived in Sydney Cove. After the "Argo" was again ready for sea, she went to fish on the coast of New Holland, where she remained about six months, and afterwards put into Port Jackson. During this cruise Duaterra acted in the capacity of a common sailor, and was attached to one of the whale-boats. While the "Argo" lay in Sydney Cove, Duaterra was discharged from her; but received no remuneration for his services during the twelve months he had been on board.

Served on the  
"Argo" and  
"Albion" as a  
sailor.

On his leaving the "Argo" he entered on board the "Albion," whaler (then in the Cove), commanded by Captain Richardson; and was six months on the fishery, in that vessel, off the coast of New Zealand, and when she put into the Bay of Islands Duaterra left her, and returned to his friends. Captain Richardson behaved very kindly to him, and paid him wages (in various European articles) for his services on board the "Albion."

Duaterra remained in New Zealand six months, when the "Santa Anna," whaler, anchored in the Bay of Islands on her way to Bounty Island, whither she was bound for sealskins. Duaterra embarked on board this vessel, commanded by a Mr. Moody. After she had taken in her supplies from New Zealand, she proceeded on her voyage, and arrived at Bounty Island in safety, when Duaterra, with one of his countrymen, two Otaheitans, and ten Europeans were put on shore to kill seals, and the vessel then sailed to New Zealand to procure potatoes, and afterwards to Norfolk Island for pork, leaving the fourteen men whom they had landed with very little water, salt provisions, and bread.

Left by the  
"Santa Anna"  
on Bounty  
Island.

When the "Santa Anna" arrived off Norfolk Island, the master went on shore, and the vessel was blown off, and did not again make the land for a month.

About five months after the "Santa Anna" left Bounty Island the "King George" arrived, commanded by Mr. Chase; but, previous to the arrival of this vessel, the sealing party had been greatly distressed for more than three months, for want of water and provisions. There was no water on the island, nor had they any bread nor meat excepting seals and sea-fowl. Duaterra often spoke of the extreme sufferings which he and the party with him endured from hunger and thirst, as no water

Suffered  
extremely from  
hunger and  
thirst.



could be obtained except when a shower of rain happened to fall. Two of the Europeans and one Otaheitan died from the hardship.

In a few weeks after the arrival of the "King George," the "Santa Anna" returned, and the sealing party had, during her absence, procured eight thousand skins. After taking the skins on board, the vessel sailed for England, and Duaterra, having long entertained an ardent desire to see King George, embarked on board as a common sailor with the hope of gratifying his wish.

1814  
Dec.

Sailed for  
London to see  
King George.

The "Santa Anna" arrived in the River Thames about July, 1809, and Duaterra then requested that the captain would indulge with a sight of the King, which was the only object that had induced him to leave his native country. But when he made inquiries by what means he could get a sight of the King, he was told sometimes that he could not find the house, and at other times that no one was permitted to see King George. This distressed him exceedingly. He saw little of London, being seldom allowed to go on shore. He told me, about fifteen days after his arrival that the vessel had discharged her cargo, and the captain had informed him that he would be put on board the "Ann," which had been taken up by Government to convey convicts to New South Wales, and had then dropped down to Gravesend. Duaterra asked the master of the "Santa Anna" for some wages and clothing, but these were refused, and he was told that the owners at Port Jackson, on his arrival there, would pay him, in two muskets, for his services; but these he never received. About this time Duaterra, from hardships and disappointments, was seized with a dangerous illness. Thus, friendless, poor, and sick as he was, he was sent down to Gravesend, and put on board the "Ann," in which ship I was about to embark on my return with my family to New South Wales. At this time he had been fifteen days in the river, from the first arrival of the "Santa Anna," and had never been permitted to spend one night on shore.

Cruel treatment  
received from  
captain.

Mr. Charles Clarke, the master of the "Ann," informed me (after I had recognised Duaterra) that when he was first brought on board the "Ann" he was so naked and miserable that he (the master) refused to receive him, unless the master of the "Santa Anna" would supply him with a suit of slops, observing at the same time that he was very sick. I was then in London, but did not know that Duaterra had arrived in the "Santa Anna." Shortly after Duaterra had embarked at Gravesend, the "Ann" sailed for Portsmouth; and when I embarked Duaterra was confined below by sickness, so that I did not see him nor knew that he was there for some time. To my great astonishment, I first observed him on the fore-castle. He was wrapped up in an old

Sent on board  
the "Ann" sick  
and naked.

Recognised by  
Marsden after he  
had embarked.

1814

Dec.

Cruelly treated  
on "Santa  
Anna."

Went to  
Parramatta and  
lived with  
Marsden.

Embarked on  
"Frederick"  
for New  
Zealand.

great coat, very sick and weak; had a very violent cough, and discharged considerable quantities of blood from his mouth. His mind was also very much cast down, and he appeared as if a few days would terminate his existence. I inquired of the master where he had met with him, and then of himself as to what had brought him from England, and how he came to be so wretched and miserable. He stated, in reply, that the hardships and wrongs which he had endured on board the "Santa Anna" were exceedingly great, and that the English sailors had beat him very much, which caused him to spit blood, and finally that the master had defrauded him of all his wages, and prevented him from seeing the King. I should have been most happy, if there had been time, to call the master to account for his conduct, but it was too late. I endeavoured to soothe his afflicted mind by assuring him that he would now be protected from insults, and that his wants should be supplied. By the kindness of the surgeon and master, and by administering proper nourishment to him, he began, in a great measure, to recover his strength and spirits, and got quite well before we reached Rio-de-Janeiro. He was ever after truly grateful for the attention that was shewn him. As soon as he was able he did his duty as a common sailor on board the "Ann" till she arrived at Port Jackson, in which capacity he was considered equal to most of the men on board. He accompanied me to Parramatta (after leaving the ship), and resided with me there till the November following, during which time he applied himself to agriculture.

In October, 1810, the "Frederick," whaler, arrived from England, and was bound to fish on the coast of New Zealand. Duaterra having been long absent from his friends, and wishing to return home, requested me to procure a passage for him in the "Frederick." One of Tippahee's sons was at the time living with me, as were also two other New Zealanders, all of whom united in the same request. I applied to the master of the "Frederick" for their passage, who agreed to take them on condition that they should assist him to procure his cargo of oil, while the vessel remained on the New Zealand coast, and when he finally left it he would land them at the Bay of Islands. They were four very fine young men who had been a good deal at sea, and were therefore a valuable acquisition to the master; and, on his promising to be kind to them, I agreed that he should take them on his own terms. They all left Port Jackson in the "Frederick" in November, with the gratifying hope of soon seeing their country and friends.

When the ship reached the North Cape of New Zealand, Duaterra went on shore for two days to procure supplies of pork and potatoes, as he was well known, and had many friends

among the natives. As soon as the ship had procured her necessary supplies, she proceeded on her cruise, and, in little more than six months' time, procured a cargo, and was ready to depart from the coast. Duaterra, finding that the master intended to sail for England, naturally requested that he and his companions might be put on shore, on the specific terms of their engagement with the master, made by me on their behalf. The ship lay (at the time) in the mouth of the Bay of Islands, where the residences of all their relatives then stood, and Duaterra had got everything ready to put into the boat, expecting they would be immediately put on shore. The master, however, on his being urged to land them, said he would do so by-and-by, when they had caught another whale, and the vessel then bore away from the harbour. Duaterra felt great distress on this occasion, as he had been from home about three years, and was most anxious to see his wife and friends. He earnestly solicited the captain to land him on any part of the coast—he cared not on what place—as all he wished was to get put on shore, and he would find his way home. The master was deaf to all his entreaties, and told them he would proceed to Norfolk Island, and from thence direct to Britain, and that he would be landed as they passed New Zealand on their way to England.

1814

Dec.

Served on  
board for six  
months.

Master refused  
to land them.

When the "Frederick" arrived off Norfolk Island, Duaterra and his three companions were sent on shore for water, and were all nearly drowned in the surf, having been washed under some hollow rocks (with which that shore abounds) which placed him in such danger of his life, as he emphatically observed to me afterwards, that "on reaching the surface of the water, his head was full of sea." It is generally very dangerous for a boat to land at Norfolk Island on account of the great surf among the breakers. When the "Frederick" was sufficiently supplied with water and wood, &c., so that the master had no further occasion for the services of Duaterra and his countrymen, he had the cruelty to inform them that he would not again touch at New Zealand, but proceed direct on for England. This occasioned great distress to Duaterra, who reminded the captain of his violated promises—the cruel usage to which he had been subjected by not being put on shore while the ship lay at the Bay of Islands (within two miles of his home), and being subsequently prevented from leaving the vessel when off the North Cape; that it was a great addition to his misery to be left with his companions in a destitute situation on Norfolk Island, after all the assistance they had rendered him (the master) in procuring his cargo. Nothing, however, which Duaterra could urge had any effect on the callous mind of the captain, who proceeded on board his ship, and left the New Zealanders to provide for

They were left  
alone on Norfolk  
Island.



1814

Dec.

Tippahee's son  
forcibly taken  
off by captain.

themselves as they best could. Duaterra further stated that the master came again on shore (before he left) and took Tippahee's son on board with him by force, though the lad wept much and entreated the captain to leave him with his friend Duaterra. (No tidings have been heard of that young man since he was thus forcibly taken from Norfolk Island. The ship was taken by an American while on her passage home, after a severe action in which the captain was mortally wounded, and the chief mate killed.)

Taken to Port  
Jackson by the  
"Ann."

Some time after the "Frederick" had sailed from Norfolk Island, the "Ann," whaler, touched there for refreshments (she was then commanded by Mr. Gwynn), and, after procuring supplies, she was to proceed to Port Jackson. Duaterra made early application to the master, who very humanely granted him a passage. On the "Ann's" arrival at Port Jackson the captain informed me that he had found Duaterra in a naked and distressed state, at Norfolk Island, where the master of the "Frederick" had left him and his companions without clothing or provisions. Mr. Gwynn further observed that the legal share of the "Frederick's" cargo of oil due to Duaterra and his three countrymen would have come to about £100 each, had they accompanied the ship and got her safe to England; and he considered that they had been very much injured by the master of that vessel. Mr. G. kindly supplied Duaterra with clothing and other necessities, for which he was exceedingly grateful.

He arrived once  
more at Parra-  
matta.

Duaterra was very happy when he got once more to Parramatta. He gave me an affecting account of the distress which he suffered when in sight of his own district, and yet denied the pleasure of seeing his wife and friends, from whom he had been so long separated; and what he felt, also, when the "Frederick" finally sailed from Norfolk Island, leaving him on the spot, with little prospect of ever returning to his own country. When he left Sydney in the "Frederick" he was in possession of some seed wheat, agricultural tools, and other useful articles, with which he was supplied, but he was despoiled of these on his voyage, and on his return had nothing left of all he had received. He continued with me at Parramatta till the "Ann," whaler, belonging to the house of Alexander Birnie, of London, arrived from England. She was bound for the New Zealand coast, and he requested me to procure him a passage, that he might make another effort to see his country and friends. The captain agreed with me to take him on condition that he would remain on board, and do the duty of a sailor while the ship continued on the coast. Duaterra readily consented to go on these terms, and took with him some seed wheat and tools for agricultural purposes, a second time.

Duaterra  
embarked in the  
"Ann" for New  
Zealand.



The "Ann" was about five months on the coast, and Duaterra was ultimately landed in safety at home, to the inexpressible joy of his relations and of himself. During the time he remained with me he laboured early and late to obtain knowledge, and, particularly, to make himself acquainted with practical agriculture. He seemed well aware of the advantages of agriculture, in a national point of view, and was a tolerable judge of the qualities of land. He was anxious that his country should reap the advantages, which he knew it was capable, by the cultivation of the soil, on waste lands, and was fully convinced that the wealth and happiness of a country depended greatly on the produce of its soil.

On his landing from the "Ann," he took with him the seed wheat, &c., which he had received at Parramatta, and acquainted his friends and his neighbouring chiefs of its great value, stating that it was from it the Europeans made the biscuit, which they had seen and eaten, on board of ships. He gave a portion of this article to six different chiefs, and some of his own common men, directing them, at the same time, how to sow it; and he reserved, of course, a proper proportion for his own use, and that of his uncle, Shunghee, who is a very great chief, having a domain extending from the east to the west side of the island. The people to whom Duaterra had given seed wheat put it properly into the ground, and it grew well, but before it was ripe many of them became impatient for the produce, and as they expected to find the grain at the root of the stems, like their potato crops, and finding, on examination, that there was no wheat under the surface, they all, with the exception of Shunghee, pulled it up and burnt it. The chiefs ridiculed Duaterra about his wheat speculation very much, telling him that because he had been a great traveller he thought he could easily impose on their credulity by telling them fine stories, &c., nor could anything in his power to urge serve to convince them that wheat would make bread. Shunghee's crop and his own came in due time to perfection, and were reaped and threshed, which convinced the natives that the grain was produced from the top, and not from the bottom, of the stem, as they had supposed, yet they could not be persuaded that bread could be made from it.

About this time the "Jefferson," whaler, commanded by Mr. Thos. Barnes, put into the Bay of Islands; and Duaterra being anxious to remove the prejudices of the chiefs respecting the wheat, and to prove (what he had before asserted) that it could be made into biscuit, requested the loan of a pepper or coffee mill from the master, to grind some of his wheat into flour (if such an instrument could do it) that he might make a cake before them, but the mill was too small, and he did not then

1814  
Dec.

Took seed-wheat  
with him.

It was distri-  
buted and sown  
by chiefs.

All but  
Shunghee  
pulled it up and  
burnt it.

Shunghee and  
Duaterra's  
crops good.

1814

Dec.

He had no mill  
to grind it.

succeed in his design. He sent me word, by a vessel proceeding from New Zealand to Sydney, that he had sown his wheat and it had grown well, but he had not timely thought of a mill to grind it, and requested me to send him some tools of agriculture, which I determined to do, by the first opportunity.

A short time after this the "Queen Charlotte" cleared out from Port Jackson for the Pearl Islands; and, as this vessel would likely have to pass the North Cape of New Zealand, I thought there was a probability of her touching at the Bay of Islands, and I therefore put some hoes and other agricultural tools, as also a few bags of seed wheat, on board, and requested the Captain (Mr. Wm. Shelley) to deliver them to Duaterra should his ship touch at Bay of Islands. Unfortunately, the "Queen Charlotte" passed New Zealand without touching anywhere, and was afterwards taken by the natives of Otaheite, and while she was in their possession all the wheat, as well as other things I had put on board, were either stolen or destroyed. When I received information of that calamity I felt much concerned that Duaterra should from time to time meet so many disappointments in his benevolent exertions to improve the condition and to civilize his countrymen. I was fully convinced that nothing could be done effectually for New Zealand without a vessel for the express purpose of keeping up a regular communication between Port Jackson and that island.

Articles sent to  
New Zealand  
destroyed by  
Otaheitans.

Mr. Kendall  
sent out by  
Church Mission-  
ary Society.

When Mr. Kendall, who had been sent out under the patronage of the Church Missionary Society, arrived in the "Earl Spencer" I soon determined either to take up a vessel or purchase one for the service of New Zealand, and thereby make an attempt to establish a settlement, as had been resolved on by the Society in 1808, and for the purpose of which Messrs. Hall and King, with their families, accompanied me out from England to New South Wales, on my return to that colony. I endeavoured to hire a vessel, but could find none willing to make a voyage under £600, which I considered too much for one voyage to New Zealand.

Bought the  
"Active," and  
sent her to New  
Zealand.

The brig "Active" having about this time arrived from the Derwent, the owner proposed to sell her, and I therefore became the purchaser, and ordered the vessel to be got ready for sea, directing Messrs. Hall and Kendall to proceed in her to Bay of Islands.

Sent a steel mill  
to grind wheat.

When the "Active" sailed, I sent a message to Duaterra, to inform him for what purpose I had sent over Messrs. Kendall and Hall; and invited them to return with them to Port Jackson, and to bring two or three chiefs along with him. I sent him on this occasion a steel mill to grind his wheat, a sieve to clean it, and a few other useful presents. On the arrival of the

brig at her destination the settlers were kindly received by Duaterra and the other chiefs, and every attention was paid to them during the six weeks they remained on the island. Duaterra was greatly rejoiced by the receipt of the mill. He quickly set to work and ground some wheat in the presence of his countrymen, who danced and shouted for joy at seeing the flour. He told me that he made a cake, baked it in a frying-pan, and gave it to the people to eat, which fully satisfied them of the truth of what he had repeatedly told them—namely, that “wheat would make bread.” The chiefs then begged some more wheat, which they received and sowed, and there can be little doubt but they will soon learn to appreciate the value of wheat.

1814  
Dec.

Delight of  
natives at its  
success.

Previous to the time the “Active” reached New Zealand Duaterra had resolved to visit Sydney by the first vessel which might sail for Port Jackson; in order to procure a mill, some hoes, and other articles which he much wanted. He therefore greatly rejoiced when the “Active” anchored in the Bay of Islands, trusting to get a passage in her; but on receiving the mill and wheat, &c., which I sent he altered his mind, observing that he would now apply himself to agriculture for two years, as he had the means of cultivating his land and grinding his wheat. His uncle Shunghee had, at the time, a great desire to visit Port Jackson, and being a powerful chief at home, and having no friend at Port Jackson who could speak English and the New Zealand tongue, Duaterra was induced to accompany him, although his wives, friends, and people earnestly requested him to stay at home. He endeavoured to persuade them that he would return in four moons, but they disbelieved him, under an erroneous idea that the “Active” would not again return. Their priest told him that his head wife was sure to die, before his return, if he left her. (This very woman hung herself the day after Duaterra died, on account of her tender affection and love for him.) He told the priest he had often returned before, and would soon return again. He accordingly took leave of his relatives and friends, and embarked, with his uncle and a few other natives, for New South Wales. About a month after he once more reached Parramatta in safety.

Shunghee  
wished to visit  
Port Jackson.

During his stay at my house I often observed him to be very thoughtful, and I asked him the occasion of his uneasiness. He replied, “I fear my head wife is either dead or very sick.” What the priest had told him respecting his wife’s dying during his absence evidently made a deep impression on his mind. Though he had been about three years in my family before, and had acted with great propriety all that time, and willingly received religious instructions on all proper occasions, yet the superstitious notions of the religion he had imbibed from his

Duaterra’s  
belief in native  
priests.

1814  
Dec.

infancy at New Zealand were deeply rooted in his ideas. He had great confidence in what the native priests asserted, and in the effects of their prayers.

His death has been the subject of much pain and regret to me, and appeared to be a very dark and mysterious dispensation.

During the last ten years of Duaterra's life he had suffered every danger, privation, and hardship that human nature could well bear; and on my arrival at New Zealand, with him and the settlers before named, he appeared to have accomplished the grand object of all his toils—an object which was the constant topic of his conversation—namely, the means of civilizing his countrymen. He said with joy and triumph in his eyes, “I have now introduced the cultivation of wheat in New Zealand. It will become a great country; for, in two years more, I shall be able to export wheat to Port Jackson; in exchange for hoes, axes, spades, and tea and sugar.” Under this impression he made arrangements with his people for a very extensive cultivation of the land, and formed a plan for building a new town, with regular streets, after the European mode, to be erected on a beautiful situation, which commanded a view of the harbour's mouth, and the adjacent country round. We, together, inspected the ground fixed on for the township, and the situation of the intended church. The streets were to have been all marked out before the brig sailed for Port Jackson; but at the very time of these arrangements being made Duaterra was laid on his dying bed. I could not but look on him with wonder and astonishment, as he lay languishing under his affliction, and could scarcely bring myself to believe that the Divine Goodness would remove from the earth a man whose life was of such infinite importance to his country, which was just emerging from barbarism, gross darkness, and superstition. No doubt he had done his work, and finished his appointed course, though I fondly imagined that he had only begun his race.

His desire to  
civilise his  
countrymen.

His death  
greatly  
lamented.

It may not be uninteresting to some of my readers to subjoin also the memoir of another young chief named Mowhee, who likewise was instrumental in promoting the introduction of the Gospel to New Zealand.

When Mowhee was about eight years old he became desirous of visiting New South Wales, from the accounts he had heard of the Europeans, by Koodoo and Tokee; and to effect his purpose he embarked on board a whaler at the Bay of Islands (the captain of which intending to call at Port Jackson), and on their way the vessel touched at Norfolk Island, when Mr. Drummond (the harbourmaster) went on board and took Mowhee on shore to his own house, and treated him with great kindness, and

Mowhee (a chief)  
visited Norfolk  
Island.



promised to keep him as one of his own family if he agreed to remain. Mr. D. then placed him at a day-school, where he learned to read and write.

1814  
Dec.

Some time after Mowhee's arrival in Norfolk Island Mr. Drummond removed to New South Wales (taking the lad with him) and settled on a farm at Liverpool (a town about seven miles south from Parramatta). I visited Mr. D. shortly after he had settled on his estate, and found Mowhee living with him there, as a servant, or acting rather in the capacity of shepherd. This sort of employment did not seem to suit Mowhee's turn of mind—he wanted to be placed in a situation where he could see and learn more of civil life. I proposed that he should come and live with me, to which Mr. D. agreed; and he was accordingly removed into my family. By this time he had learned to speak English tolerably well, and could read a little. He possessed an amiable disposition, and seemed anxious to learn all he could. He remained with me till November, 1814; making the period of his stay with Mr. Drummond and me together to be more than eight years. He accompanied me when I sailed to New Zealand in the "Active," and possessed, at that time, as clear a knowledge of civil life, and of the Christian religion, as human instructions could well communicate to one just emerging from savage life.

Moved with Mr. Drummond to Liverpool.

Afterwards lived with Mr. Marsden.

On 23rd December he arrived in the Bay of Islands to the great joy of his friends, and it gave me great pleasure to see with what kindness and affection Mowhee was received by his tribe. Terra, the head chief, said (on my presenting him a few trifling articles) that "he could accept nothing from one who had been so kind to his countryman." And while I remained he did all in his power to promote the objects I had in view.

Returned to New Zealand in December, 1814.

When I returned to New South Wales, Terra's brother, Tupee, with several other chiefs, accompanied me; and I considered these ample security for the safety of the missionaries and their property after my departure. Mowhee was left, with his relations, at New Zealand, that he might assist the missionaries in their intercourse with the natives, being qualified for that task by his knowledge of the English tongue. About twelve months afterwards Mowhee became anxious to improve his knowledge by a visit to England, having heard much of that kingdom, for which purpose he entered as a common sailor on board the "Jefferson," whaler, home bound, and arrived in the River Thames in May, 1816. The captain of the vessel, having then no further occasion for his services, and knowing that he was connected with the missionaries at New Zealand, took him to the Church Missionary Society's House in Salisbury Square. His case and circumstances were laid before the Committee of that

Went to England in the "Jefferson."

1814  
Dec.  
Taken under the protection of the Church Missionary Society.

benevolent institution, which immediately resolved to provide for the friendless stranger. He was taken under the protection of the Society until an opportunity should offer to return him to his native land. The Rev. Basil Woodd got him under his more immediate care, and provided accommodation for him in a respectable family. He was sent to a charity school belonging to the Bentinck Chapel, and during his attendance on it he was taken ill (on the 25th) and died on the 28th December, 1816. The Rev. B. Woodd published a very interesting memoir of him in the *Church Missionary Register* for February, 1817, to which I refer the reader.

Particulars of first voyage to New Zealand.

I shall now proceed with the particulars of my first voyage to New Zealand.

Sailed for New Zealand, November, 1814.

Thirty-five persons and many animals on board.

When I was preparing to visit that island, Mr. John Liddiard Nicholas, a gentleman who came out (two years before) to settle in this colony, voluntarily proposed to accompany me. I readily accepted his offer, and we embarked on board the brig "Active" on Saturday, the 9th November, 1814, and sailed down the harbour early that morning, but were obliged to anchor again near the mouth of the harbour by contrary winds; here we were detained nine days. On Monday the 28th we weighed anchor, and got out to sea, the number of persons on board (including women and children) were thirty-five. Mr. Hanson, master, his wife and son, Messrs. Kendall, Hall, and King, with their wives and five children, eight New Zealanders, two Otaheitans, and four Europeans belonging to the vessel, besides Mr. Nicholas, myself, two sawyers, one smith, and one runaway convict (as we found him to be afterwards). We had also on board one entire horse, two mares, one bull, and two cows, with a few sheep and poultry of different kinds—intended for the island. The bull and cows had been presented by Governor Macquarie, from His Majesty's herd. Nothing of consequence happened during our voyage. I suffered much from sea-sickness, and though I have been so frequently at sea I cannot get the better of that unpleasant complaint. I am always sick, and frequently compelled to keep my bed.

Stood in for the North Cape.

On the 16th December we saw the Three Kings, some small islands (thus named) which lie off the north end of New Zealand, about twelve leagues. We sailed close by them in the afternoon; and, as I wished to pass a day at the North Cape, we stood in for it, with a light breeze, in the evening, and saw the land before sunset. We had little wind all night; the next morning at daylight we were nearly four leagues from shore. We stood in till about 8 a.m. I was anxious to have an interview with the chiefs, in order that I might explain to them the object of my voyage, and introduce the settlers to them, and prepare the way for my

future attempts to promote their welfare. After breakfast the ship's boat was hoisted out, with a view to visit the shore. I directed Duaterra, Shunghee, Koro-koro, Tohee (or Tooi), and Terra, all the chiefs we had on board, to go in her, but no Europeans, so that they might open an intercourse between us and the natives, and bring us some supplies. The boat was well armed, that they might defend themselves, if any attack should be made upon them. Before the boat had reached the land, a canoe came alongside the "Active" with plenty of fish, and shortly after a chief followed from the shore, who immediately came on board with his son. In his canoe there were some very fine looking men. I asked him if he had seen Duaterra, whom I had sent on shore; he told me he had not, and immediately showed me a pocket-knife, which he had tied to a string round his waist, and which he highly valued, and informed me that it had been given to him by Duaterra a long time before. I was much gratified that we had been so fortunate as to meet with a chief who knew our friend Duaterra, as we were now likely to obtain fully the object of our visit. I told them my name, with which they seemed well acquainted, and immediately enquired after a young man belonging to that place who had lived with me some time previously; his brother was in the canoe, and greatly rejoiced he was to see me; he made the most anxious enquiries after his brother, and I gave him every information I could. We were now quite free from all fear, as the natives seemed desirous to show their attention to us by every possible means in their power. I informed the chief that we wanted some hogs, and potatoes; he requested me to send one of his people on shore in his canoe, and he would send for some immediately. I ordered one of the New Zealanders, belonging to the vessel, into the canoe, as I did not think it prudent to send any European.

1814

Dec.

New Zealand  
chiefs went on  
shore.

Vessel visited  
by natives from  
shore.

The chief and his son remained on board; they seemed very happy, and much gratified with our confidence in them; and I explained to the chief the object of our voyage. In a short time other canoes came to the "Active," and brought an abundance of the finest fish I ever saw; our decks were soon covered with them. We had now a number of natives on board and alongside who behaved with the greatest propriety. We traded with them for fishing-lines and other articles of curiosity.

Brought  
abundance of  
fish.

Before Duaterra and the other chiefs returned with the boat a large war-canoe came off to the vessel. She was very full of stout, fine looking men, and sailed very fast, though the sea was rather rough, and we were at some distance from the land. It was pleasing to behold with what ease she topt the rising waves. One of the principal chiefs was in the war-canoe with a number of

1814

Dec.

Natives friendly  
and attentive.

Their explanations  
re "Boyd"  
and "Jefferson."

Unjust demands  
of Europeans.

his attendants, and a young Otaheitan known to Europeans by the name of Jem, whom I had known some years before, as he had resided a considerable time with Mr. McArthur at Parramatta. This Otaheitan had married the chief's daughter, and his wife was in the canoe. He was much surprised to see me, and I was no less so to meet him there, so very unexpectedly. He had been in the habit of calling at my house when at Parramatta, and was well acquainted with my situation in New South Wales, and he could speak English exceedingly well. I fully explained to him the object of my coming to New Zealand, and the nature of my intended plans for the future success of the design. He was much pleased at the idea of Europeans residing on the island. This young man, being very intelligent and active, appeared to have obtained the full confidence of his father-in-law, and to have great weight and influence at the North Cape. I made himself, his father-in-law, and the other principal men a few presents, which were gratefully received. After some conversation, I mentioned that the New Zealanders had been guilty of great cruelties towards the Europeans, particularly in the case of the "Boyd": they replied that Europeans were the first aggressors, by inflicting corporal punishment on their chief. I also told them that Mr. Barnes (the master of the "Jefferson," whaler), when at Port Jackson, had informed me that they had acted treacherously towards him, in attempting to cut off two boats belonging to the ship when she was last at the North Cape, in company with the "King George." I said I was much concerned to hear these reports, and that, if they continued to act in this manner, *no European ships* would visit them. In reply to this, the Otaheitan young chief stated that the masters of the "Jefferson" and "King George" had in the first instance behaved very ill to them. They had agreed to give 150 baskets of potatoes and eight hogs for one musket. The potatoes and hogs were delivered, and divided between the two vessels, after which the Otaheitan and one of the chiefs went on board the "King George" for the musket (which was delivered); at the same time the master of the "King George" demanded more potatoes and hogs. The chief was detained on board, and the Otaheitan sent on shore for the articles demanded. The head chief said he had fulfilled the agreement for the musket by the 150 baskets of potatoes and eight hogs, and he would give no more. The chief that was detained prisoner on board the "King George" was the head chief's brother, and was with us at this time on board the "Active." The Otaheitan was sent to the "King George" to inform the master that no more potatoes and hogs would be given, and to request him to relieve (? release) the chief, whom he had unjustly detained. This the master refused to do, and he also kept the Otaheitan a



prisoner. In two or three days they were put on board the "Jefferson," and there they remained for some days till they were ransomed, at 170 baskets of potatoes and 5 hogs. The people on shore were greatly enraged all this time, and alarmed for the safety of their chief, the vessels being out of sight. After the potatoes and hogs were delivered, two boats were sent on shore with the Otaheitean and the chief. Great numbers of the natives were assembled on the shore to receive them. They were no sooner landed than the natives fired upon the boats, and I have no doubt but they would have massacred the crews at the moment if they could for the fraud and cruelty before stated. The Otaheitean told me it was not possible to restrain the people from firing upon the boats.

1814

Dec.

A chief and an Otaheitean kept prisoners.

Natives fired upon ship's boats.

The chief spoke with great warmth and indignation at the treatment he had received. I assured them that both King George and Governor Macquarie would punish any act of fraud or cruelty committed by the Europeans whenever the proper information was given. I then gave them Governor Macquarie's instructions to masters of vessels, and explained the nature of them, which was clearly understood by the Otaheitean, who explained it to the rest. I told them that the "Active" would occasionally visit them, and by that means they might easily obtain redress from the Governor of New South Wales, and requested them never to commit any act of violence upon Europeans in future, but refer their complaints to Governor Macquarie. They seemed much pleased, and promised they would not injure the crews of ships that might touch there. I also informed them that the masters of the "King George" and "Jefferson" would be called upon to answer for their conduct when they came to Port Jackson, as I should inform Governor Macquarie of what they had done.

Promised them redress for injury.

They promised not to injure Europeans in future.

While the principal chief and his party remained on board the boat returned with Duaterra and the rest that had gone in her. Duaterra and the principal chief seemed well acquainted and were very polite to each other. The most friendly salutations past between them, and Duaterra, being now comparatively very rich, made several presents to his friends, as did the other chiefs who had come with me from Sydney. Duaterra renewed the conversation relative to the firing upon the "Jefferson's" boats, and laid the strongest injunctions on them not to injure the Europeans in future, but to refer their complaints to the Governor of New South Wales. This was one of the most interesting and pleasing days I had ever enjoyed; I was never more amused and gratified than upon this occasion.

Before evening we had an abundant supply of fish, hogs, and potatoes.

1814

Dec.

—

Natives stayed  
on board till  
evening.

I informed the natives we should sail that night for the Bay of Islands. They pressed us much to stop another day, and they would bring us more hogs, potatoes, and fish. I told them we had enough for the present, and that I would call and see them on my return to Port Jackson, and in the meantime, if they would prepare me some flax, I would buy it from them. The chief promised to have some ready. As soon as evening came on they took their leave in a very warm and affectionate manner, and went into their canoes, to return to shore, apparently much satisfied with the reception they had met with on board the "Active," and the information they had received relative to the "Active" visiting them again, and the Europeans settling on their island. When they had left us we made sail, and proceeded on our voyage with a fair breeze.

During the night the wind died away, and in the morning the little we had was against us, so that our progress along the coast was but slow. The hills and woods appeared very beautiful to the eye, and the fires of the natives smoked in all directions on the main land; the wind continued nearly the same during the day. The next morning we beat up against the wind, and passed the mouth of the Harbour of Whangarooma (the place where the "Boyd" was cut off), but could not weather the Cavalles, some small inhabited islands a few miles from the main. The natives informed us there was a safe passage between these islands and the main, and we therefore endeavoured to beat through them, but could not, for contrary winds. As we were not far from the Cavalles, I wished to visit the people residing on them, and had the boat hoisted out for that purpose. Messrs. Nicholas and Kendall, with Koro Koro and Tohec, accompanied me on shore.

Visited the  
Cavalles.

Natives ran  
away and hid.

As soon as we landed, all the natives ran off, and secreted themselves in the bushes, excepting one old man, who, being lame, was not able to make his escape. We walked up to him; he appeared alarmed till he saw Koro Koro. I then made him a present of a few trifles; and in return he offered us a basket of dried fish, which we declined. Koro Koro immediately left us, and went in search of the natives. Mr. Kendall sat down with the old man, who was much fatigued in getting up the hill, from the steepness of the shore. Mr. Nicholas and I went after Koro Koro, but were some time before we could find him; he had gone to inquire after his relations, who lived upon this island. After some time we found Koro Koro, who had met with one of his own men. By this time the natives began to recover from their alarm, and to come out of their hiding places.

They afterwards  
came to them.

While we were talking with Koro Koro and some of the natives, his aunt was seen coming towards us, with some women and children; she had a bough twisted round her head and another in her hand, and a young child on her back. When she came within one hundred yards, she began to make a very mournful lamentation, and hung down her head, as if oppressed by the heaviest grief. She advanced to Koro Koro with a slow pace; Koro Koro appeared much agitated; he stood in deep silence, like a statue, leaning upon his musket; as his aunt advanced she prayed aloud and wept exceedingly; Tohee (Koro Koro's brother) seemed much affected, and, as if ashamed of his aunt's conduct, he told us he would not cry. "I will act like an Englishman," he said, "I will not cry." Koro Koro remained motionless till his aunt came up to him, when they laid their heads together, the woman leaning upon a staff and Koro Koro upon his gun, and in this situation they wept aloud for a long time, and repeated short sentences alternately, which, we understood, were prayers, and continued weeping, the tears rolling down their sable countenances in torrents. It was impossible to see them without being deeply affected. At this time also the daughter of Koro Koro's aunt sat at her mother's feet weeping, and all the women joined in their lamentations. We thought this an extraordinary custom amongst them, and a singular mode of manifesting their joy, but we afterwards found that this custom was general in the Island of New Zealand. Many of these poor women cut themselves in their faces, hands, and breasts with sharp shells or flints, till the blood ran down in streams. When their tears and lamentations had subsided I presented the women with a few presents. Tohee had sat all this time labouring to suppress his feelings (having declared he would not cry). In a short time we were joined by several fine young men. Among them there was a youth, the son of a chief on the island. When Tohee saw him coming he could contain his feelings no longer, but instantly ran to him, and they were locked in each other's arms, weeping aloud. After they had saluted each other, and the women had gone through various ceremonies, we entered into conversation with them. I enquired why they all ran off into the bushes; they told us that they had supposed, when we landed, that we were going to shoot them. These people were greatly rejoiced when they found us to be their friends. They did everything in their power to please and gratify us. After spending a few hours we returned to the place where we left Mr. Kendall talking to the old man. A number of the natives attended us, and we enjoyed a very pleasant day, as every object around us was new and interesting, particularly the inhabitants. From the

1814

Dec.

Koro Koro's  
meeting with his  
aunt.

Curious manner  
of showing joy.

Spent a pleasant  
day among  
them.

1814  
Dec.  
—

top of the Cavalles, the view of the mainland, together with the ocean, and the numerous small islands scattered upon it, is the most delightful I ever saw (at least, I thought so). When we arrived we found Mr. Kendall had been visited by some of the natives, who were still with him, and had much entertained him during our absence. In the evening we returned to the vessel accompanied by the son of the chief and other chiefs from the main, who remained on board all night.

The next morning the wind still continued against us, and we had been labouring more than a day and a night to work the vessel either round the islands or between them and the main to no purpose. I thought it most prudent, as there were good anchorage, to bring the vessel to anchor, and wait for a fair wind. I communicated my wishes to the master accordingly; and we came to anchor between the islands and the main, in 7 fathoms of water. Here we lay about five leagues from Whangarooa Harbour, where the "Boyd" was cut off, and her crew massacred, and one league from that part of the main which belonged to the chief Shunghee, who came with us from Port Jackson.

War between  
people of  
Whangarooa and  
Bay of Islands.

Duaterra and Shunghee had often told me of the bloody war which had been carried on between the people of Whangarooa and those of the Bay of Islands from the time the "Boyd" was destroyed till that period. During the stay of these chiefs in New South Wales they were always apprehensive that the chiefs of Whangarooa would take advantage of their absence to make an attack upon the people at the Bay of Islands. However, we here learned that there had been no disturbance since they had left home. It appeared that after the "Boyd" had been cut off Tippahee (a chief belonging to the Bay of Islands, and who had visited Port Jackson, where he received great attention) was accused of being concerned in that dreadful massacre, and, in consequence of which, the whalers, who were at that time on the coast, and had come into the Bay of Islands shortly after that affair, united their force, and sent seven armed boats before daybreak to attack the island of Tippahee, where, on their landing, they shot every man, woman, and child that came in their way; in this attack Tippahee received seven wounds, and soon afterwards died. Duaterra and Shunghee always declared that Tippahee was innocent of the crime for which he suffered; and that Tippoohee, of Whangarooa, committed it. Whangarooa is situated about thirty miles nearer the North Cape than the Bay of Islands. Tippahee was in the habit of trading with the people of Whangarooa, and happened to go there with a cargo of fish on the day in which the "Boyd" was taken, and the whole of her crew massacred. When he

Tippahee  
accused of  
abetting  
destruction of  
"Boyd."

He was killed  
by whalers.



arrived five only of her men were alive and in the rigging, whom he took into his own canoe and landed them, with a view of saving their lives; but, being followed by the people who committed the outrage, these five were forcibly taken from him and instantly put to death.

1814  
Dec.

Though in reality he tried to rescue the men.

This is the account given by those natives who had first visited New South Wales. They originally declared that Tippahee was innocent of the destruction of the "Boyd." The people at the Bay of Islands, in consequence of the murder of their chief, Tippahee, declared war against the people of Whangarooma. Several desperate battles had been fought, and the war was likely to continue.

I had often told Duaterra and Shunghee that it would be to the interest of all parties to make peace, and that I wished to see it established before I quitted New Zealand. Duaterra expressed his doubts as to the accomplishment of this object. I told him I thought, if I could obtain an interview with the chiefs, I might bring it about, and that it was my determination to visit Whangarooma before my return, to try what could be done.

Marsden hoped to establish peace.

The wind continued in the same quarter next day, which obliged us to remain at anchor. I again visited the Cavallies, and there learnt that the chiefs of Whangarooma were on the main and all the principal warriors; they had come to the funeral of some great warrior, who had died a few days before, and were then encamped on the shore opposite to our anchorage. At this information I hastened on board and consulted with Duaterra—told him how anxious I was to make peace, now that Europeans were come to settle among them—that this would secure the lives of the Europeans and tend to the general benefit of their country. I expressed my wish to visit the camp of the Whangarooma people, and hear what the chiefs had to say on the subject. As he had never met these people since the loss of the "Boyd," except in the field of battle, he hesitated some time. I did all I could to induce him to try the experiment. He was not afraid of himself, but was apprehensive that some accident might happen to me, or to the persons of my party. He at length consented to go on shore with me. Shunghee and Koro Koro agreed to accompany us, and Messrs. Nicholas, Kendall, King, and Hanson volunteered to do the same. We took several loaded muskets in the boats with us. The beach on which we landed belonged to Shanghee and was covered with his people.

Whangarooma chiefs encamped opposite vessel.

On approaching the shore we saw the Whangarooma chiefs, with their warriors, encamped on high sugar loaf hill to our left, with colours flying, &c. The foot of this hill communicated with the sea. As soon as they saw us land, our distance from

Visited their camp.

1814

Dec.

They all ran  
away.Stopped by  
Duaterra.Ceremonial  
meeting with  
chiefs.Their head chief  
ill treated on  
"Boyd."

them being about half a mile, they took to their spears, struck their colours, and ran off as fast as they could. Duaterra took a brace of large pistols, and desired me to follow him slowly, for he would come up to them at a certain point, where they must speak to him, because they could not escape by any other way. We accordingly followed Duaterra in a body, and were surrounded by a crowd of men, women, and children belonging to Shunghee's tribe. A few of the principal people ran in different directions to clear the way, and keep the crowd from pressing on us. In a short time Duaterra returned to meet us, and called on me to come forward. We accordingly mended our pace, and soon came in sight of the Whangarooma people, who had stopped to receive us. A line was formed on each side for us to pass through them. An old woman, whom I took to be a priestess, made a very great noise, and waved a flag in her hand as we advanced. The chiefs were all seated on the ground, according to their custom, and their warriors standing up, with their spears fixed in the ground uprightly. These instruments were from 15 ft. to 20 ft. in length. They were also armed with patooes. Duaterra, with a pistol in his hand, stood at some distance from the chiefs, and, on my coming up to them, he fired off the pistol, and directed those who had muskets to do the same. This being done, the Whangarooma party returned the compliment by discharging their firearms, which I considered a favorable omen to the success of my mission. One of the principal chiefs (who had cut off the "Boyd") had been at Parramatta and knew me; he had also acquired tolerable English from being on board of whalers. He was known to Europeans by the name of George.

I made a few presents to the chiefs, and after some conversation on various subjects, particularly on our visit to New Zealand, I enquired how they came to cut off the "Boyd" and to murder the crew. Two of them stated that they were at Port Jackson when the "Boyd" was there, and had been put on board by a Mr. Lord in order to return home—that George (their head chief) had fallen sick while on board, and was unable to do his duty as a common sailor, in consequence of which he was severely punished—was refused provisions, threatened to be thrown overboard, and many other indignities were offered to him, even by the common sailors. He remonstrated with the master, begged that no corporal punishment might be inflicted on him, observing that he was a chief in his own country, which they would ascertain on arrival at New Zealand. He was told he was no chief, with many abusive terms which he mentioned, and which are but too commonly used by British seamen. When he arrived at Whangarooma his back was in a very lacerated state, and his friends and people were determined

to revenge the insult which had been offered to him. He said if he had not been treated with such cruelty the "Boyd" would never have been touched.

1814  
Dec.

His friends  
massacred the  
crew in revenge.

From the accounts which these people and their chiefs gave of the destruction of the "Boyd," Tippahee had had no hand in this melancholy affair—it was wholly their own act and deed. This appeared to be strictly true, for I saw no reason to disbelieve their declaration that Tippahee and his people suffered innocently, and that their death was the cause of much bloodshed, for many men since that rash act was committed have been cut off belonging to the Bay of Islands, as well as to the Whangaroa Tribe, with whom the affair originated. I never passed Tippahee's island without a sigh—it is now desolate, without an inhabitant, and has been so since his death. The ruins of his little cottage, built by the kindness of the late Governor King, still remains, and I hope that those Europeans who were engaged in that fatal transaction were ignorant at the time that they were punishing the innocent. I think it probable that the mistake (if there was one) originated in the affinity between the name of Tippahee and that of the chief of Whangaroa who was principally concerned in the destruction of the "Boyd," styled Tippoohee. This chief I saw and conversed with on the subject.

Tippahee's  
island now  
desolate.

Having fully satisfied myself respecting the loss of the "Boyd," and explained to these people the reason of the "Active's" coming to New Zealand, I found, as night was coming on, I could not accomplish the grand object I had in view—namely, to establish peace among them—without loss of more time. I therefore resolved to remain in their camp all night. Shunghee had given directions to his people to prepare supper for us nearly a mile from where we then were. I told the chief we would go to visit Shunghee's people, and when we had taken some refreshment Mr. Nicholas and I would return, and spend the night in their camp, in order that we might have a little more conversation with them. To this they readily consented, and, with a view to show us some marked attention, they entertained us with a sham fight, a war-dance, and a song of victory before we went to Shunghee's people.

Remained in  
their camp all  
night.

After these ceremonies were over we took our leave, and returned to the place where we had landed, attended by a great number of natives. Shunghee's servants had got our potatoes and fish prepared. Duattera and the party who had come with us from the vessel now returned on board, leaving myself, Mr. Nicholas, and Shunghee to spend the night on shore. We sat down to supper on the ground, but were soon almost smothered by the natives, who crowded so close around us that I was compelled to draw a circle, and direct them not to pass it. We

Had supper with  
Shunghee's  
people.

1814

Dec

And they  
returned to the  
Whangarooma  
warriors.

were here much amused by these people, and they appeared equally so with us : they manifested every desire to serve us : and after spending about an hour with them, we returned to the camp of the Whangarooma warriors, who had removed about half a mile from the place where we had the first interview with them, and had taken their station on a level piece of ground, which I estimated to contain about 100 acres.

When we arrived, they received us very cordially. We sat down among them and the chiefs surrounded us. I then renewed our conversation relative to the destruction of the "Boyd," with a view of bringing about a reconciliation between them and the inhabitants of the Bay of Islands, as I considered the establishment of peace between these contending parties of great importance to the mission. The chiefs told me the state the wreck of the "Boyd" was then in, and promised to give me the guns and whatever remained belonging to her if I would go into their harbour. They had got some of the guns on shore, and would get the rest. The chief George told me that his father and five others were blown up in the "Boyd" when she took fire. His father had got part of the powder on deck with some of the muskets, and was trying one of the flints in a musket lock—whether it would strike fire—when a spark from it caught the powder, and the explosion killed all within its reach. He pressed me much to go into their harbour. I told him I probably might do so before I left New Zealand, provided the wind would permit ; but I could not then go, on account of the stock and number of people I had on board the "Active." I then addressed them on the subject of peace ; pointed out to him how much more it would be for their interest and happiness to turn their attention to agriculture, and the improvement of their country, than continue to fight and murder one another, and particularly now, as the Europeans were about to settle amongst them, through whom they would obtain wheat to sow their land and tools to cultivate it. I assured them that every assistance would be given by the Europeans to promote the improvement of their present situation ; and that if they would only attend to the cultivation of their land, and lay aside all sorts of war and murder, they would soon become a great and happy people. George replied that he did not want to fight any more, and was ready to make peace. Much conversation then passed, chiefly respecting New Zealand and Port Jackson, which George had visited. I endeavoured to press upon his mind the great degree of comfort we enjoyed as compared with his countrymen's enjoyments—our mode of living, houses, &c., which he had seen, and that all these blessings might be obtained by them by cultivating their land and improving them—

Tried to estab-  
lish peace on  
the island.

Their chief was  
tired of war.



1814  
Dec.

selves in useful knowledge, which they would now have an opportunity to acquire from the European settlers. He seemed sensible of all these advantages, and expressed a wish to follow my advice. The other chiefs and their people stood around us.

As the evening advanced the people began to retire to rest in different groups. About 11 p.m. Mr. Nicholas and I wrapped ourselves up in our great coats, and prepared for rest also. George directed me to lie by his side; his wife and child lay on one hand, myself on the other, and Mr. Nicholas close by the family. The night was clear, the stars shone brightly, and the sea in our front was smooth. Around us were numerous spears stuck upright in the ground, and groups of natives lying in all directions like a flock of sheep upon the grass, as there were neither tents nor huts to cover them. I viewed our situation with new sensations and feelings that I cannot express—surrounded by cannibals who had massacred and devoured our countrymen, I wondered much at the mysteries of Providence, and how these things could be. Never did I behold the blessed advantages of civilisation in a more grateful light than at that moment. I did not sleep much during the night; my mind was too anxiously occupied by the present scene, and the new and strange ideas it naturally excited. About 3 o'clock in the morning I arose and walked about the camp, surveying the different groups of natives, some of whom put out their heads from under the tops of their "Kakka-haws," which are like a beehive, and spoke to me. When the morning light appeared we beheld men, women, and children asleep in all directions, like the beasts of the field.

Strange  
surroundings at  
night.

I had directed the boat to be brought on shore for us at daylight, and soon after Duaterra arrived in the camp. I then invited the chiefs to breakfast on board the "Active," which invitation was readily accepted. We immediately went in the boat together, and several canoes put off at the same time for the "Active." At first I entertained doubts whether the chiefs would trust themselves to us or not, on account of the "Boyd," lest we should detain them while we had them in our power; but they showed no signs of fear, and went on board with apparent confidence. I communicated to Duaterra my intention to make them some presents. He told me whatever article I gave to one, I must give a similar article to another; and each article was to be given separately, and to the eldest chief first. The axes, bill-hooks, prints, &c., &c., which I intended to give them were all got ready after breakfast. The chiefs were seated in the cabin, in great form, to receive the presents. I sat on one side of the table and they on the other. Duaterra stood and handed to me each article separately, that I was to give them. Messrs.

Chiefs break-  
fasted on the  
"Active."Distribution of  
presents.

1814  
Dec.

Kendall, Hall, and King, with the master of the "Active" and his son, were all one after the other introduced to the chiefs; and the chiefs were at the same time informed what duties each of these persons was appointed to do—*i.e.*, Mr. Kendall to instruct their children; Mr. Hall to build houses and boats, &c., &c.; Mr. King to make fishing-lines; and Mr. Hanson to command the "Active," which would be employed in bringing axes and such other articles as were wanted from Port Jackson, to enable them to cultivate their land, and improve their country.

Reconciliation  
effected.

When the ceremonies of giving and receiving presents was over, I expressed my hopes that they would have no more wars, but from that time would be reconciled to each other. Duaterra, Shunghee, and Koro Koro all shook hands with the chiefs of Whangarooa, and saluted each other, as a token of reconciliation, by joining their noses together. I was much gratified to see these men at amity once more, and sincerely wished that this peace might never be broken, and I considered the time well employed while we had been detained by adverse winds. The chiefs took their leave, much pleased with our attention to them, and promised never to injure any European in future.

Duaterra's  
welcome home.

Having nothing more to do, and the wind having become favourable, we weighed anchor in the afternoon, and stood for the Bay of Islands. We reached the mouth of the harbour, and were met by a war-canoe belonging to Koro Koro, who resided on the south side of the harbour. In this canoe were Koro Koro's son and a number of his servants, who were all greatly rejoiced to see their chief. He left his son on board, and immediately went on shore himself. At 3 p.m. on Thursday, 22nd Dec., we anchored on the north side of the harbour, about seven miles from the Heads, in a cove opposite to the town of Rangheehoo, where Duaterra was wont to reside, to the great joy of his people. The "Active" was soon surrounded by canoes from all quarters. On going ashore Duaterra and Shunghee found all their friends and relatives well, who wept for joy at their return, and the women cut themselves, in a similar manner to those of the Cavaliers, with shells and flints till the blood flowed down. It was in vain to attempt to persuade them not to do this, because they considered it the strongest proof of their affection. The next day we landed the horses and cattle, and fixed upon a place for the present residence of the settlers; and began to clear away the rubbish, and prepare for erecting houses for their reception on a piece of ground adjoining to the native town pitched upon by Duaterra and the other chiefs of the place.

Visited by Koro  
Koro and ten  
canoes.

About 8 o'clock on Saturday morning, Koro Koro, who lived about nine miles from the settlers, came to pay his respects to

us. He was attended by ten canoes, full of his warriors, accompanied by some women and children. The canoes came down in a regular line, with colours flying, on observing which we immediately hoisted ours. Some of his officers stood up and regulated all their movements by word of command, and signals made by means of their large *patooes* (which were ornamented with feathers). Those they held in their hands, and kept in constant motion. Koro Koro was dressed in his native clothing, and his brother Tohee; both were painted with red ocre, and had feathers in their hair. The warriors were likewise painted. The whole presented a grand warlike scene. They advanced with a great speed towards the brig, and kept a regular line, every man striking his paddle at the same instant, so that the whole sounded as one stroke. They sung the war-song as they approached, and performed all their gestures and threats, as if they were determined upon attacking the vessel in earnest. We saluted them with a discharge of thirteen small arms. The song of victory was then sung in the canoes, and their customary rejoicing performed.

1814  
Dec.

Who entertained  
them with a  
sham fight.

After this, Koro Koro, with the chiefs who had accompanied him, came on board, and made us several presents in the most polite manner. A number of chiefs from other districts were also on board; and Koro Koro introduced them all, one by one, to his European friends, commented on the particular attention they had shown to him when at Port Jackson; and lamented that the poverty of the country prevented him from returning their kindness, according to his wishes. He was also very particular in explaining to the other chiefs for what purposes Messrs. Hall and King had come to reside in New Zealand. Duaterra and his friends were present on this occasion and assisted in regulating the necessary ceremonies and forms in which Koro Koro and his party were to be received.

Introduced to  
other chiefs.

It had been previously arranged between Duaterra and Koro Koro, unknown to us, we were to be entertained with a sham fight. After taking some refreshment, preparations were made to go on shore. Koro Koro was to make an attack upon Duaterra's people, and take the place by storm. Duaterra then went on shore to prepare for the defence of his place. A number of canoes, full of people, immediately joined us belonging to other chiefs. When Koro Koro left the vessel, accompanied by Mr. Nicholas, the settlers, and I, Duaterra had all his men drawn up in order, armed with their spears and other weapons of war. Koro Koro's canoes advanced towards the shore in the same order of battle in which they had approached the "Active." A chief belonging to Duaterra, quite naked, ran furiously to and fro along the beach, making a most horrid

Sham fight  
between  
Duaterra and  
Koro Koro  
people.



1814

Dec.

Women took  
part in the  
battle.

noise, and daring the sham enemy to land. As the canoes came nearer to the shore those in them increased their shouts and furious gestures. At length they all jumped out of the canoes into the water, and in one compact body began the attack. Duaterra's men all retreated as fast as possible, and the others pursued them a considerable distance, when Duaterra's men suddenly wheeled round and attacked their pursuers. The battle then became general. A number of women were seen in the heat of the action, among whom were Tipahee's old widow (apparently about seventy years of age) and Duaterra's wife, bearing in her hand a *patooe* about 7 ft. long made of the jawbone of a whale. She brandished this weapon about in the very centre of the mock fight, and went through all the various movements usually performed by the men in advancing and retreating. After both parties had run and struggled together till nearly exhausted (some having been trampled upon and others accidentally knocked down), they formed a close body, and united in the shouts of victory and in the war-dance which ended the scene.

Duaterra's  
preparations for  
the Sabbath.

Duaterra, during the action, commanded one party and Koro Koro the other. The former passed the remaining part of the day in preparing for the Sabbath. He enclosed about half an acre of ground with a fence, in the centre of which he erected a pulpit and a reading-desk, and covered the whole with either black native-made cloth or some duck which he had brought with him from Port Jackson. He also procured the bottoms of some old canoes, and fixed them up as seats for the Europeans on each side of the pulpit, intending to have Divine service performed next day. These preparations were made of his own accord, and in the evening he first informed me that everything was ready for public worship. I was much pleased with this singular mark of his attention. The reading-desk was about 3 ft. and the pulpit 6 ft. from the ground. The black native cloth covered the top of the pulpit, and hung over the sides. The bottom of the pulpit, as well as the reading-desk, was made of part of a canoe, and the whole was becoming and had a solemn appearance. He had also erected a flagstaff on the highest hill in the village, which had a very commanding view. On Sunday morning, when I went upon deck, I saw the English flag flying, which was a pleasing sight in New Zealand. I considered it the signal for the dawn of civilization, liberty, and religion in that dark and benighted land. I never viewed the British flag with more gratification, and I flattered myself they would never be removed till the natives of that island enjoyed all the happiness of British subjects.

Pulpit, reading-  
desk, and seats  
erected.



About 10 a.m. we prepared to go on shore to publish the glad tidings of the Gospel of Christ for the first time on this island. I was under no apprehension for the safety of the vessel, and therefore ordered all on board to attend Divine service on shore, except the master and one man. On our landing we found Koro Koro, Duaterra, and Shunghee dressed in regimentals, which had been given them by Governor Macquarie—their men drawn up, ready to march into the enclosure, to attend Divine service. They had their swords by their sides and switches in their hands. We entered the enclosure, and were placed on the seats on each side of the pulpit. Koro Koro marched his men on, and stationed them on my right, and in rear of the Europeans, while Duaterra placed his men on the left of the inhabitants of the village, including women and children, and the other chiefs formed a circle round the whole. A very solemn silence prevailed. The sight was truly impressive. I got up and began the service by singing the old hundredth psalm, and felt my very soul melting within me when I viewed my congregation, and considered the state they were in. After reading the service, during which the natives stood up and sat down at the signal given by the motion of Koro Koro's switch, which was regulated by the movements of the Europeans, it being Christmas Day I preached from the 2nd chr. St. Luke's Gospel, v, 10th, "Behold I bring you glad tidings of great joy," &c. The natives told Duaterra they could not understand what I meant. He replied they were not to mind that now, for they would understand by-and-by, when he would try to explain the meaning as well as he could. When I had ended the sermon he informed them of what I had described in my discourse. Duaterra was very much pleased that he had been able to make all the necessary preparations for the performance of Divine service in so short a time; and we felt much obliged to him for his attention. He was extremely anxious to convince us that he would do everything for us that lay in his power, and that the good of his country was his principal consideration. In the above manner the Gospel has been introduced into New Zealand, and I fervently pray that the glory of it may never depart from its inhabitants till *time shall be no more*.

After the service we returned on board, much gratified with the reception we had met with, and we could not but feel the strongest persuasion that the time was at hand when the glory of the Lord would be revealed to these poor benighted heathen, and that those who were to remain on the island had strong reason to believe that their labours would be *blessed* and *crowned* with success. In the evening I administered the Holy Sacrement on board the "Active," in remembrance of our Saviour's birth and of what He had done and suffered for us.

1814  
Dec.

Description of  
first public  
service held in  
New Zealand.

Duaterra  
explained the  
sermon to  
natives.

1814

Dec.

Went to the  
timber district  
for wood.

On Monday morning, as there were no timber at Rangheehoo fit for erecting the necessary buildings for the settlers, I determined to take the brig to the timber district, which I understood was about twenty miles distant, on the opposite side of the harbour—up a fresh-water river; because this would supply what was wanted at once, and save considerable expense. I therefore ordered all iron and various other articles to be landed and given in charge of Duaterra. The poultry were also sent on shore. The sawyers and smith, with Mr. Hanson, jun., left the vessel likewise. I directed them, with the assistance of the natives, to build a hut 60 ft. by 16 ft., and to thatch it for the immediate accommodation of the settlers and their families.

In want of axes,  
coal, &c.

When we returned from the timber district the natives seemed very willing to assist us as much as they could. I found now I should be much distressed for want of axes, and other articles of trade, as the presents I had made at the North Cape and along the coast had very much reduced my stock. We had also omitted to bring coals with us from Port Jackson; and I hardly knew how to remedy these defects. As nothing could be done in our mechanical operations (nor could we purchase provisions from the natives) without carpenters' tools, such as axes, &c., I had no alternative but to erect a smith's shop and burn charcoal, in order that the smith might get to work and make axes, &c., to supply our present wants. I consequently desired that some of the natives might assist the smith in burning charcoal and in erecting a workshop until the "Active" should return.

Terra was chief  
of timber  
district.

Having given such instructions as I deemed necessary and prudent, we sailed for the timber district on Tuesday, taking with us the settlers and their families (this district belonged to a chief named Terra, an old man apparently seventy years of age). Terra was then the head chief on the south side, and possessed considerable influence. I therefore judged it prudent to wait upon him, and to obtain his permission, in the first place, to cut what timber we required, in order to prevent any misunderstanding. Accordingly, when we came opposite to his village I went (accompanied by Messrs. Kendall, Nicholas, and King) to visit him, and took with me a young man about seventeen years of age, who was related to the chief, and who had been almost nine years from New Zealand, the latter part of which period he had lived with me in Parramatta. He had also lived several years with a Dr. Drummond at Norfolk Island, from whom he experienced great kindness. When we landed I found Terra sitting on the beach with some of his subordinate chiefs and people. He received us very cordially, and wept much on account of the young man's return, as did many others, some of whom wept aloud. I presented him with an axe, an adze,

and two plane irons, with several other trifles. He said he did not want any present from me, but only my company, as he had heard so often of me from his own people and others. I told him that I had waited on him to beg his permission to cut some timber in his district, for building houses to the Europeans at Rangheehoo. He expressed a strong desire that they would come and reside with him. I pointed out to him that they could not well come then, but must settle with Duaterra in consequence of our long acquaintance with him; but that in time some Europeans should come and live with him. He gave his consent for us to have what timber we wanted. He informed me that the wheat which had been given him when the "Active" was first there was growing. I went to see it, and found it almost ripe. As the vessel had gone on, and I was informed we were several miles from the place at which she would anchor, I wished to take my leave before the night came on us, but the old chief would not consent till we had first taken some refreshment. He therefore ordered his cooks to dress some sweet potatoes as soon as possible (these are with them esteemed a choice food). In a short time a basket full of them were roasted and placed before us. The chief sat by us, as did his wives and a number of men, women, and children. He would not eat with us himself, nor permit any of his people to do so, and when we parted with him he ordered two baskets of sweet potatoes to be put into the boat for our use. I invited him to come on board the "Active," which he promised to do, and we took our leave, being much gratified with the attention of this chief and his people.

1814

Dec.

Asked permission to cut timber.

Which was readily granted.

Gave them some sweet potatoes.

The next morning we were visited by numbers of the natives from different districts; and I contracted with some of the subordinate chiefs for a cargo of timber. The brig lay about eight miles from the fresh-water river where the pine trees grew, there not being sufficient depth of water to bring her nearer. I went up, accompanied by Messrs. Nicholas and Hall, to see the pines, and we found a considerable village upon the banks of the river, which they called Koua Koua. When our arrival was known we were soon surrounded by numbers of the natives, who vied with each other in their attentions. None of us were under the least apprehension of danger any more than if we had been among our own country folk. In about ten days we had got our cargo, and were ready to return to Rangheehoo.

Visited the Village of Koua Koua.

During the time the natives were getting the timber Mr. Nicholas and I visited different places for several miles round, and passed one night with an old chief, who gave us an account of Captain Cook's visit and stay at the Bay of Islands. He said that he was then a young man, and shewed us where the



1814

Dec.

Returned to  
Rangheehoo.

sailors pitched their tents, washed their linen, watered their ships, and cut their wood. He also related several occurrences which took place while the great navigator remained there.

Our cargo being completed on Friday the 6th of January, 1815, we weighed anchor and sailed for Rangheehoo. When we got there the hut which I had directed to be built was almost finished. It was my intention, as soon as the settlers and their luggage were safely landed, to visit either Whangaroa or the River Thames, as the wind at the time might permit. Several of the natives of Whangaroa had visited the "Active" since the peace had been established between them and the people of the Bay of Islands.

Started to visit  
Waimate.

As the hut would not be ready for the reception of the settlers for at least four or five days, I agreed with Shunghee to visit one of his villages twenty-five miles distant in the interim. Mr. Nicholas volunteered to accompany me. Early on Monday morning, the 9th, Shunghee, Duaterra, his wife, and several other chiefs came off to the brig in a war-canoe, in which we were to go up one of the western branches of the harbour, from the head of which we were to walk to a place called "Waimate," where the village alluded to was built. After breakfast we left the "Active" and went into the canoe, which was large and commodious. Sixteen persons could row on each side and we could sit or lie down at pleasure. These canoes go very quick through the water, and afford the most pleasant conveyance for passengers. Some of them are 80 ft. to 90 ft. in length. A smaller canoe also accompanied us, with some of Shunghee's common servants.

Discovered a  
fall of water.

About 11 o'clock we reached the head of the cove, which we estimated to be about fifteen miles from the "Active." Here we landed in a potato garden belonging to Shunghee's brother named Kangorooa, where we were to take some refreshment before we proceeded on our journey. Duaterra and his wife had already gone to their farm. The servants were all busy, some in digging potatoes, others in making fires to roast them. Hearing the sound of a fall of water at a little distance I went to examine it, while the potatoes were roasting, and found a fresh-water river falling over a bed of rocks, which there extend from bank to bank. I estimated the fall to be about 91 ft. perpendicular height. The water is sufficient to turn mills of any kind. A regular bed of solid rock (I think of whin-stone) runs direct across the head of the salt-water cove, and forms a dam similar to many of the artificial dams in England. The water seemed to be supplied from regular springs and heavy rains. The land on both sides of the river appeared very good.



After taking some refreshment, about 10 o'clock we set off for Waimate. For the first three or four miles we passed through a rich uneven country. The land in general was free from timber, and could easily have been plowed. It appeared to me to be good strong wheat land, and was then covered with fern. For the next six miles the land seemed of various qualities, some exceeding good, some of it stony, a part swampy, and the other portions of a gravelly nature. The whole of this tract of country, taken collectively, would form a good agricultural settlement. It is watered by several fine streams running through it, about a mile apart from each other, and it is skirted in various places by lofty pine trees and other timber. When we had walked nearly ten miles we entered a very fine wood in which there were some of the largest pines I had ever seen. One measured more than 30 ft. in girth, and probably not less than 100 ft. in height, without a branch. It appeared to be nearly the same thickness at the top as at the bottom. While passing through this wood we met with a chief's wife, who was overjoyed to see us. Her husband's name was Terria, a very fine handsome looking man. He had been on board the brig a few days before. He informed me that some time back a boat's crew belonging to a whaler had entered his potato ground, in the Bay of Islands, to steal his potatoes, and that he had set his father and some of his people to watch them, when the Europeans shot his father dead, and killed another man and a woman. He afterwards watched them himself, and killed three European sailors. I understood that the Europeans belonged to a whaler called the "New Zealanders."

After meeting Terria's wife, we came to his village, situated on the banks of a fine run of fresh water, and a deal of rich land around it. We enquired how many wives he had, and were told ten. Terria was from home, but his wives pressed us much to have some refreshment with them. There were a number of servants, both men and women. We accepted the invitation, and Shunghee having shot a wild duck, we had it dressed while Terria's servants prepared abundance of potatoes for the whole party. We stopped in this village about two hours. They had a number of fine hogs, but no other animal was seen excepting dogs. The New Zealanders are a very cheerful race. We were here entertained with a dance and song, and they continued their mirth during our stay. We took our leave of them a little before the sun went down.

Proceeding on our journey, we arrived at Shunghee's village just before dark, where we were received with the loudest acclamations of his people, several of whom wept for joy. This village contains about two hundred houses, and is situated

1814

Dec.

The land appeared good wheat land.

Would form a good agricultural settlement.

Reached Terria's village.

Joyful reception at Shunghee's village.

1814

Dec.

Description of  
his fortifications.Chief's stage in  
centre of village.Started to see a  
large lake,about twelve  
miles in circum-  
ference.

on the summit of an almost inaccessible hill, and strongly fortified both by nature and art. Three very deep trenches have been cut round the sides of the hill, one above another, and each trench fenced round with whole and split trees, from 12 ft. to 20 ft. high. We entered this extraordinary fortification through a narrow gateway, when Shunghee shewed us how he defended his place in time of war. He had one small secret corner where he could be concealed and fire upon the enemy. Every little hut in this enclosure is fenced round. Some of the storehouses for the reception of their spears and provisions are about 30 ft. long and 20 ft. wide. They are also well built; the roofs are thatched. Some of the eaves extend 3 ft. over the sides in order to carry off the water and keep the building dry. In the centre of the fort, on the very summit of the hill, a stage is erected upon a single pillar, about 20 ft. long and 3 ft. broad, hewn out of a solid log, and elevated about 6 ft. from the ground. Upon this the chief sits, either for pleasure or business, just as occasions require him, to consult with his people. It commands a most extensive view of the surrounding country in all directions. Near this stage is a little hut about 4 ft. from the ground, 3 ft. long and 2 ft. wide, with a little image placed upon the side of the door (which does not exceed 1 ft.); a seat also is placed in front, upon which the chief's lady sits when she eats her provisions, which are deposited in this little building.

About 9 o'clock we were informed that the room was ready where we were to sleep. Some clean mats had been spread upon the floor for us to lie on. We wrapped ourselves up in our great coats. A number of the natives lay in different situations, some under cover and some in the open air. We had enjoyed a very pleasant day, and our long walk had prepared us for a sound sleep (though not indulged with feather beds).

Early on Tuesday morning, the 10th, we rose with an intention of visiting a fresh-water lake about five miles distant from the village. We set off attended by Shunghee and several chiefs with a number of servants. Our way lay thro' a wood composed of various sorts of timber besides the noble pine. We could not but view these wonderful productions of nature with reverence and wonder. On our way to the lake we also passed through some very rich ground, and soon arrived at a small village where Shunghee's people were at work preparing ground for planting potatoes. There was a very fine crop, nearly ripe, in one part. The land appeared dry and rich, and the potatoes meally. I have never seen better potatoes under the best culture. When we had walked two miles further we came to the lake. It might be about twelve miles in circumference, and we were informed that it empties itself into the head

of a river which ran into the ocean on the west side of the island. Its head was about an hour's walk from the lake. The land appeared good on the north side of it. We amused ourselves about two hours in viewing this lake and the neighbouring grounds; and then returned to the last mentioned village, where we dined on a wild duck and potatoes (aided by the provisions we had brought with us). The duck was shot by Shunghee. After this we returned to the fort, and slept there for that night.

Shunghee's people here appeared very industrious. They rose at the dawn of day, both men and women. Some were busy making baskets for potatoes, others dressing flax, or making mats. None remained unemployed.

1814  
Dec.  
—  
Shunghee's  
people very  
industrious.

Shunghee and his brother Kangerroa have a large track (tract) of country similar in extent to one of the counties in England. It extends from the east side to the west side of New Zealand, and is well watered. We saw much land well adapted for cultivation.

Shunghee had near the village we were at one field, which appeared to me to contain forty acres, all fenced in with rails, and upright stakes tied to them to keep out the pigs. The greater part of it was planted with turnips, common and sweet potatoes, which were in high cultivation. They suffer no weeds to grow, but with incredible labour and patience root up everything likely to injure the growing crop. Their tools of agriculture are chiefly made of wood, some formed like a spade and others like a crow-bar, with which they turn up the soil. Axes, hoes, and spades are much wanted. If these could be obtained their country would soon put on a different appearance. No labour of man without iron can clear and subdue uncultivated land to any extent. The New Zealanders seem to do as much in this respect as the strength and wisdom of man in their situation is equal to. Shunghee showed me some fine wheat, the seed of which I had sent him about seven months before. It was nearly ripe, and the ear was full and large. He put a very high value upon it, as he appeared to know its worth from his few months' residence at Parramatta. I had also sent over a little English flax seed. This also had been sown and it came to great perfection, far superior to any I had observed in New South Wales.

Their agricul-  
tural tools made  
chiefly of wood.

Wheat and flax  
grow well.

Shunghee treated us during this visit to his village with all the attention and hospitality his means afforded. He had slain two hogs, and we had what we used of them dressed after our own mode.

Early on Wednesday, the 11th, we took our leave of this extraordinary fortification, and the people who resided in it, intending to breakfast at the village belonging to Terria, about



1814

Dec.

five miles distant. Shunghee sent his servants with two fine hogs for the use of the vessel. We arrived at Terria's village a little after 7 a.m., where we were very kindly received. The fires were soon lighted and preparations made for breakfast. Several natives joined us here, whom we had not seen before. Terria was not yet returned.

Chief's wives  
forbidden to  
take tea.

After Mr. Nicholas and I had breakfasted I had tea made for Terria's wives and Shunghee's, who surrounded us. They all refused to take any. Shunghee told me they were all *tabooed*, and thereby prohibited from taking anything but water. I pressed Shunghee to allow one of his wives (who had a little child about a month old, and who had followed us from the village) to take it. He said she could not drink any, for if she did his child would die. I was fully convinced that their refusing to take the tea was founded upon some superstitious notions. They were all very fond of bread and sugar, and I distributed what remained of these articles among them, while Shunghee and the other chiefs drank the tea.

On their return  
met Duaterra  
bringing  
provisions.

In about two hours we proceeded to the cove where we had left the war-canoe on Monday morning. The distance we had to walk was about eight miles, and our party consisted of twenty-five persons, all natives of New Zealand except Mr. Nicholas and myself. In about three hours' time we reached the canoe; here we stopped and took dinner, and afterwards set off for the brig. When we had got within seven miles of the vessel we met Duaterra in his war-canoe with a supply of provisions, particularly tea, sugar, and bread. He was apprehensive we should want these articles, as we had been absent one day longer than was intended when we left the "Active." As Shunghee and Duaterra approached each other they mutually fired a piece, which is held by them as a mark of respect. The two canoes were nearly matched, and these chiefs were determined to try their strength and skill to see which would go the quickest. Shunghee commanded one and Duaterra the other. They both ran at so rapid a rate that it was not possible to tell at times which had the advantage. We were much amused with the exact order they struck their paddles and their skill in struggling for the superiority. One man in each canoe gave the signal for every stroke, which changed every few seconds. Sometimes the strokes were long and slow, at others short and quick. In a little time we reached the "Active."

Rowing match  
between  
Duaterra and  
Shunghee's  
crews.

On Monday morning previous to leaving the vessel I directed that the settlers, their families, and everything belonging to them, should be landed as soon as the building was ready for their reception. On my return I found Mr. Kendall and his family were on shore, and every preparation made for Messrs. Hall and King.



As I intended to sail either for Whangaroa or the River Thames as soon as the brig was cleared, I went on shore to make the necessary arrangements for my departure. On landing I was informed that a chief named Werrie (nephew to the late Tippahee) was very much enraged, and had beat his wife, in consequence of finding a nail in her possession. The nail had excited Werrie's jealousy, which caused him to demand where she had got it. She told him that a man belonging to the "Active" had given it to her as a present. Werrie could not be persuaded that any man would give his wife so valuable a present as a nail unless her conduct had been improper. I was apprehensive that this unpleasant circumstance might be attended with serious consequences unless the chief's mind could be satisfied with respect to the chastity of his wife. I sent for Duaterra and consulted with him, when it was agreed that the man who was said to have given Mrs. Werrie the nail should be sent for, and if any improper act could be proved against him he should be confined to the vessel. A public investigation therefore took place, in presence of the chief and many of the inhabitants, held on the open beach, where they dance and exercise. The New Zealand woman and the accused European were brought forward. She defended herself very warmly, but said she could not identify the man who had given her the nail, affirming, however, that she had received it as a present. After a long examination she was acquitted by the unanimous voice of the chiefs, to the satisfaction of all parties. Though I could not but entertain suspicions of the lady's chastity from her hesitation to point out the person who had given her the nail, I took this opportunity to assure them that if any person belonging to the "Active" either insulted or injured any of their people he or they should be punished. After this business was settled Mr. and Mrs. Hall were landed with the remainder of the stores.

On the following morning, Friday, the 13th, Mr. and Mrs. King were also landed, and the vessel supplied with water and wood to be in readiness for sea.

About 3 p.m. we weighed and sailed down the harbour. It was my intention if the wind permitted first to sail for Whangororoa, having been invited by several of the inhabitants of that place who had come to Rangheehoo since the peace was established. I had Duaterra and Koro Koro, with twenty-five New Zealanders, as a guard on board. They were very fine young men, and could be depended on. Many of them being the sons of chiefs on both sides of the harbour, I thought it prudent to take a sufficient number of men, in case any difference should happen to arise either at Whangororoa, the River Thames, or at any other part of the coast at which we might touch.

1814

Dec.

Werrie's anger  
at his wife's  
possessing a nail

She said one of  
the sailors gave  
it her.

Settlers and  
their stores  
landed.

Sailed for  
Whangororoa.

1814

Dec.

Anchored off  
the Cavalles.

When we got to sea the wind was fair for Whangororoa, and we directed our course thither; but when we came over to the Cavalles the wind suddenly changed, and compelled us to anchor between the Cavalles and the main, about five leagues southward of Whangororoa. Here we remained all night.

Chisel stolen by  
one of the  
natives.

Soon after we anchored three canoes came off from the Cavalles and other islands around. Some of the people came on board, and remained till after the sun went down. When they had gone the carpenter missed one of his chisels, with which he had been at work. Duaterra was very angry, as we were convinced that some of the natives had taken it. The boat was immediately manned by Duaterra's men, well armed, and proceeded to one of the above-mentioned islands. I requested Duaterra, provided he should find the thief, not to injure him, but merely to take the chisel from him. In about an hour's time they returned without being able to find the thief, having landed on the wrong island (as the night was very dark). The next morning (Saturday the 14th) at break of day a canoe came off to inform us where the thief was, and wanted assistance to take him, but I thought it more prudent to let the matter rest, lest it should detain the vessel too long, as we had then got up the anchor, intending to sail for Whangororoa, a light breeze having sprung up. It, however, soon became calm and obliged us to anchor again.

A chief visited  
the "Active."

In the afternoon the wind blew pretty fresh, but directly against us, with a prospect of its continuing in that quarter, which would prevent us from entering the harbour of Whangororoa. I therefore determined to proceed for the River Thames, to which we bore away, as soon as the anchor was weighed. On the same evening we passed the mouth of the Bay of Islands, with a gentle breeze which continued all night, and in the morning we were not far from the Poor Knights (some small islands which lie a few leagues from the main).

Trick played on  
him by New  
Zealanders.

About 10 a.m. a canoe was observed coming to the brig. Duaterra ordered his men under arms, and directed them to lie down upon the deck, that they might not be seen when the canoe came alongside. The canoe came up. It contained only one old chief, three men, and a woman. A rope was thrown to them to secure the canoe. The old chief got immediately on the side of the vessel, to come on board. He had not observed the New Zealanders, who, just as he was coming over the gangway, sprung up, some presenting their muskets and others their spears, which so alarmed him that he fell back into the canoe, and almost upset it. There he lay some time before he recovered from his fright, the New Zealanders making a most dreadful noise at the same time. The old chief came afterwards on board, and

1814  
Dec.  

---

was much rejoiced to see so many of his friends, and laughed heartily at the trick which had been played on him. After some conversation with him, we understood that he had learned who we were, and the object we had in view. He took his leave with much apparent satisfaction, but they had not gone far before another canoe came off from a different part of the coast with a number of very fine young men in it. They had learned where we were going (as one of them had visited the "Active" before when she lay at Koua Koua), and requested I would allow him to accompany us to the River Thames, which was granted.

By this time we were near a very high part of the coast called Breamhead by Captain Cook. The chief of that district, with his son, had visited the brig when we lay at Koua Koua. I had made him a present of a few things, and among them a piece of red and white India print, and informed him that I intended to visit the River Thames as soon as we had passed Breamhead. The wind blowing very fresh, and observing two canoes labouring hard to reach the vessel (one of them had a signal flying), I desired the master to bear away for them. When we came up I found that the canoe with the flag contained the son of the above-mentioned chief, and his colours were a part of the piece of print I had given to his father. He pressed us much to go on shore and visit his father, but I told him we could not stop then, as the wind was fair, but would see him on our return. The young man provided us with abundance of bream, and other fine fish, which they had in the canoe.

Natives provided them with fish.

After we had received this liberal supply of fish we directed our course again towards the River Thames, and the same evening passed Point Rodney (one of the heads of the harbour), and saw Cape Colville, the other head, which is very high land, and not much less than twenty leagues distant from the first.

On Monday the 16th we found ourselves pretty far advanced up the River Thames, in which there are several islands, on the east side and on the west. About 11 a.m. we came opposite the residence of the head chief, Houpa, of whom we had often heard, and from those accounts were taught to believe that he was a man much esteemed as well as feared, and possessed very great power. In a short time we observed a war-canoe full of men advancing towards the vessel. We hove to when they came near. They lay upon their paddles, and viewed the brig, and informed us that Houpa was in the canoe. I requested him to come on board, which he did with one of his sons. Houpa is one of the strongest and best-made men I almost ever beheld. He was greatly surprised to see such a number of New Zealanders on board and so few Europeans.

Proceeded to the River Thames.

Visited by the Chief Houpa.



1814

Dec.

Who was known  
by Timmaranghee.

We had one chief in the "Active" named Timmaranghee, who was intimate with Houpa, and who had lived on board the brig for some time. He informed Houpa who we were, and that we had come to the River Thames (which they call Showrakee) to see him and his people, and also that some of the Europeans were settled at the Bay of Islands, with a view of instructing the natives. I made him a present of a few things, and in return he directed two fine mats to be presented to me out of his canoe. He expressed a wish for us to come to an anchor near his residence. I told him it was my intention to visit his place when we returned down the river, but as the wind was then favourable we would take advantage of it and proceed. He directed us what course to steer, and told us we should get the vessel aground if we kept too much to the right. After holding conversation with several of the natives on board, he took his leave, expecting to see us again on our return.

Experienced  
adverse weather.

We then made sail up the river, and were at the time on the western side, about four leagues from its mouth. We had left Houpa more than an hour before the wind began to blow very fresh, so that the water soon became so rough that we could not perceive the channel when we had got almost to the head of the harbour. It was then high water, and on sounding found that we had only 3 fathoms, and there being no appearance of the gale abating, we were induced to put the vessel about, by which means we got into deeper water before the tide fell too much for the safe riding of the brig. At this time we were on the east shore, not far from land. We worked to windward for several hours, and in the evening came to anchor in 4 fathoms water, where we lay all night, during which it rained and blew very hard. The harbour here is very open. There is no shelter for shipping, which renders it very dangerous.

New Zealanders  
on board were  
much alarmed.

On Tuesday about 4 o'clock (as the gale increased) we weighed anchor, in order to work the vessel to windward if possible, and to get her under the land, as the place we lay in was not safe should the vessel be driven from her anchor. The sea was so rough and the brig had so much motion that the New Zealanders (who had never been before on board ship at sea) were much alarmed, and imagined they would be lost. About 6 p.m. the gale abated, and we came to anchor again, about two miles from the west shore, opposite a large village. Tho' the inhabitants had seen us all day, yet they dared not venture out in their canoes on account of the weather.

Boat with ten  
men sent on  
shore.

After we came to anchor the boat was hoisted out, and ten New Zealanders went on shore to open a communication with the natives. Shortly after the boat had reached the beach we heard a great noise. Duaterra was uneasy because the boat



did not return as soon as was expected. He was afraid that some quarrel had taken place between the inhabitants and the people in the boat, and observed that if they had injured any of his men he would immediately declare war against them with all the force he could command. In about an hour after dark the boat returned safe, and they informed us that they had been very kindly received, and that the noise we had heard was only their rejoicings. They told us there were plenty of fine hogs and potatoes on shore, both of which we much wanted, the brig being full of people. This information determined me to visit the village in the morning. However, on the following day a chief named Pethi (nephew to Haupa) came after the "Active." He was a very stout handsome man, and in the prime of life, with mild manners, and a countenance both pleasing and interesting. I invited him on board. The chief Timmoranghee was well known to Pethi. After the usual salutations relative to our voyage and all affairs connected with it as far as Timmoranghee knew, I gave him some biscuit (which they are all fond of) and showed him some wheat in the straw which had been grown at New Zealand by Shunghee, informing him that the biscuit was made from wheat, and I gave him some seed. He showed much anxiety to learn the culture of wheat, and enquired how many moons it was from sowing to reaping time, and expressed his determination to try if he could grow some at his settlement. I made him a present of a few articles, and (accompanied by Mr. Nicholas) went on shore, taking twelve New Zealanders with us.

1814  
Dec.

Next day Pethi  
came on board.

They returned  
to his camp with  
him.

On landing the natives received us with every mark of friendship. The women and children were numerous, but not so the young men. We enquired the reason, and they told us that they (the young men) had gone to war, and that few except old men, and those who had been taken prisoners, remained in the village. At this place we found the New Zealanders sold their prisoners-of-war, or kept them to work as slaves. Several of the natives of the Bay of Islands had brought with them a little trade, some a few nails, others small pieces of iron-hoops, some a few feathers, and some had fishing-hooks, with a variety of articles of no value to Europeans but of much value to themselves. The village was all in motion. They crowded together like a fair from all quarters. Some of the inhabitants brought their mats to sell and various other articles, so that the whole day appeared a busy scene, and many things were bought and sold in their way of trade. When the fair was over the ladies entertained us with several dances and songs. One of them had on a very fine upper garment, which a chief from Rangheehoo (who had come with us) wanted to procure for his wife. He had brought a box

Found young  
men had all gone  
to war.

Much barter  
among natives.

1814

Dec.

Feathers exchanged for a garment.

Visit to Houpa's fortified village.

of feathers, neatly dressed, the pithy part of the quill having been all cut off, and only the external part remaining, to which the feather was attached. He made the feather wave gracefully with the smallest breeze when placed in the air. He opened it in presence of the ladies, many of whom wanted these feathers. He on the other hand wanted the fine garment. After placing them very tastefully, two or three feathers in each of the ladies' hair, she that had got the fine garment beheld how elegantly they appeared on the heads of those who wore them, and became seemingly impatient to possess such an ornament. He asked her to sell her garment. She hesitated for some time. At length he laid a certain number down at her feet. This proved a temptation she could not resist, and she instantly threw off the fine garment and delivered it to him for his feathers. The chief intended this article as a present to his wife, and he presented it to her on his return.

After this Mr. Nicholas accompanied me to Houpa's fortified village. It was situated upon a high hill, nearly a mile from where we then were. It was in many respects similar to that already described belonging to Shunghee. Here we found no men. It was entirely left to the care of some women and one of Houpa's wives. They told us the men had gone to war. In this place there were some very fat hogs and fine plantations of potatoes. The women afterwards told us they could not sell the hogs, as they belonged to the men who had gone to the war. Houpa's wife said she had a very large one belonging to herself, which she would make me a present of, if I would stop till it could be brought in, for at that time it was out feeding. She sent the servants to look for the hog, along with one of our people, but they returned without it. I made her a present of some print, and some other trifles. She was very anxious we should wait till the hog could be found, but we could not conveniently stay longer, and therefore left this romantic place. This lady's face, arms, and breasts were all covered with scars, which had been lately cut in consequence of the death of one of Houpa's children. She was a very fine tall woman. Houpa did not reside there at the time. I observed that the pillars leading into the fortification were carved with various figures, such as men's heads, &c., and some of them had round caps on their tops, similar to those on gateways in many parts of England, and were about 14 ft. high.

Shortly after we left Houpa's lady we received a message from Duaterra to inform us that he was coming on shore for us. We met the boat, and Duaterra landed. Pethi, the chief, came at the same time, and wished us to go to the upper end of the village, where he resided. The distance was about two miles

along the shore. We agreed to visit him, and ordered the boat to follow us. When we arrived we met some of the finest men and women I had yet seen in New Zealand. They were well dressed, and received us very cordially. There were three of Houpa's nephews and their ladies, who wore fine mats fancifully wrought, which reached from their shoulders to their feet, and had a very graceful appearance. I had taken a few pieces of print, some plane irons, common nails, &c., with me, of which I made the chiefs and their ladies a few presents. We had a few baskets of potatoes dressed. Several songs and dances, in which the chiefs and their ladies took an active part, and exerted all their strength and voice to amuse us.

1814

Dec.

Then went to  
Pethu's village.

It was now about 5 p.m. We therefore took our leave, and returned on board to dinner. When we had set down I was informed that two canoes were coming off with the chiefs and their ladies. I went on deck to receive them, and invited them to dine with us, which they readily accepted. I told the chiefs I wanted some potatoes and hogs for the vessel, but as the men had gone to war to whom they belonged, I could not purchase any; and therefore it was my intention to sail that evening for the Bay of Islands. They wanted me much to stay, and told me to take whatever we wanted on shore, regardless of what the people said. I told them I could not steal nor take by force anything from the inhabitants, but I was willing to purchase but would take nothing unless what was legally bought and paid for. They urged me much to stop and get my supplies, which I would have done if I had been sensible; they could be procured without giving offence to the natives, but I was convinced they could not (from what I had been told on shore) unless the male proprietors had been there.

Chiefs and  
ladies returned  
to the vessel  
with them.

As soon as we had dined, I desired the master to prepare for sea immediately. The anchor was soon weighed, and the vessel put under sail dash, the chiefs and their ladies still remaining, unwilling to leave us. They had several dances on deck. At length I got the ladies into the canoes, but the chiefs showed no inclination to part, and again had another dance, when the ladies once more leapt on board and joined them in the dance and song, which continued till we had sailed a considerable distance, when they were compelled either to leave us or go to sea.

Very reluctant  
to leave.

When they had got into the canoes, the twenty-eight natives I had on board began to sing and dance in their turn, to amuse the chiefs and their ladies, who lay upon their paddles all the time. As soon as the dance ended on deck they began again in the canoes, and continued till we could hear them no longer. They then waved their hands and returned to the shore. One of these chiefs promised to visit Port Jackson and to see Duaterra.



1814

Dec.

Presented them  
with wheat.

at the Bay of Islands, from whom they had received and returned presents during our short stay here. These people shewed us the kindest attention, and did all they could to amuse us. I gave several of them wheat, which I hope will prove advantageous to them. I also told them they would be able to procure axes and other tools from the Europeans at Rangheehoo (for they will give anything for axes). Duaterra, with his armed men (having dressed himself in European clothing, with a sword by his side), commanded considerable respect from these chiefs when on shore.

I trust our visit to the River Thames will unite in friendship the leading men of Rangheehoo and those of this part of New Zealand, and that if in future any European settlers should be sent to the River Thames they will be welcomed by the natives. I felt much gratified with the conduct of the people, but sincerely regretted that I could not see Houpa again. The wind was so strong against us we could not make his settlement, and were therefore obliged to stand out to sea. As my stay in New Zealand was limited I could not wait for a change of wind.

Entered Bream  
Cove.

The next morning (Tuesday the 19th) we saw Point Rodney about seven leagues off. There being little wind we did not reach it till 12 o'clock, when we entered Bream Cove, and sailing into it we ran along shore a little distance from the land. The ground was, in general, level; and a grove of pines appeared behind the banks of the cove. When we had reached near Breamhead, the natives told us there was an harbour at the head of the cove into which a fresh-water river ran from the interior. We sailed up to the mouth of this harbour, Mr. Hanson (the master of the "Active") saying it would be a very safe place for a vessel to lay in, as she would be completely sheltered from the sea. We enquired if any ship had ever been in that harbour. The natives told us that the "Venus," from Port Jackson, had anchored there a long time ago, and further that she had put in at the North Cape also and had taken two native women, one from the Bay of Islands and one from Bream Cove; that she went from thence to the River Thames, where her people got Houpa and one of his daughters on board with an intention to take them also away; but when the "Venus" sailed from the River Thames Houpa's canoe followed her, and he waited his opportunity to leap overboard, which he effected, and was taken up by his own canoe, but none of the women have ever since returned. The "Venus" brig belonged to Messieurs Campbell and Co., of Calcutta. She was taken by some convicts, who were on board of her, at Port Dalrymple, and carried off the coast. Such are the horrid crimes which Europeans, who bear the Christian name, commit upon the

Native women  
carried off by  
"Venus."



savage nations! We lay to all night in the cove, as I wished to see the chief who resided near this place, and whose son supplied us with fish as we passed when bound for the River Thames. We now began to fish, and in a short time got abundance of bream and other sorts of fish. I expected we would have seen the chief, but the vessel had not yet been observed.

1814

Dec.

Got abundance of fish.

The next morning at daylight we sailed, and shortly after passing Bream Head we were seen from the shore, when a canoe put off for the brig. As soon as it came alongside I observed the chief, whom I had wished to see, in it. He told us that he had not seen the vessel the night before, as he and his men had been busy at work on their potato ground, which prevented him from looking out. Mayhanger, a young man who is mentioned in Mr. Savage's account of New Zealand, and who accompanied that gentleman to England on his return from New South Wales to Europe, was also along with the chief. Mayhanger enquired after many persons he had seen in England, and who had been kind to him. The chief was anxious we should return with him for one day, saying he had abundance of hogs and potatoes and would supply all our wants. I told him I could not detain the vessel if the wind was fair, but must proceed. I gave him a little wheat for seed, some nails, and a cat, with which they returned on shore highly pleased with their visit, and requested only that I could but stop one day for him to make me some return.

Chief offered them hogs and potatoes.

Shortly after they were gone the wind changed and continued against us all day. At 6 p.m. we were about two leagues from shore. The sea being smooth, and likely for a fine night, I determined to visit the chief, and had the boat immediately hoisted out. Mr. Nicholas accompanied me. We had none but New Zealanders in the boat. The sun was set before we reached the shore. The natives soon beheld the boat, and one of them stood upon a rock pointing out where we were to land. There is a bar which runs across the mouth of this harbour, and upon it the sea breaks with great violence. As we approached it appeared impossible to us that the boat could pass through the surf, yet two canoes came dashing through the waves (as if they bade defiance to the destructive rocks and foaming billows that rolled over them with a dreadful noise) to direct us where it would be safe for the boat to land. When the boat came near the shore a number of natives rushed through the surf, laid hold of the boat, and conducted us safely in.

Went on shore. Landing difficult.

The chief's residence was on the east side of the harbour, but we were compelled to land on the west side, on account of the surf, and had therefore to cross the water in a canoe. The whole place was surrounded with broken rocks, which resembled

1814  
Dec.

Welcomed by  
the head chief.

more the ruins of old abbeys than anything else. Some formed very large arches, others deep caverns, some were like old steeples, and others like broken massy columns. In short, they represented the most curious group of ruins which time, storms, and seas have made. A numerous crowd of men, women, and children came to meet us. The chief and Mayhanger were overjoyed at our visit. The chief who had been on board was the war commander, or one whom the New Zealanders call "the fighting man." Yet we now found there was another higher in authority than our friend, to whom we were conducted. He was seated on the ground, and a clean mat was placed by for Mr. Nicholas and me. The war commander stood all the time with a spear in his hand. The head chief was a very old man, with a long grey beard, and little hair upon his head. He was an exceeding pleasant man. Koro Koro came with us. He related to the chief all the wonders he had seen at Port Jackson, the attention paid to him, the riches of our country, and for what purpose our brig had come to New Zealand. The old chief laughed much, and made many enquiries, and wanted us to stay till next day. He ordered us some pork and gave a few baskets of fish for the people.

Returned to  
Rangheehoo.

We stopt till about 10 o'clock, when we took our leave, having enjoyed a very pleasant evening. They conducted us through the surf and we made for the vessel. She was by this time so far distant that we could not even hear the muskets which were fired as signals, tho' we could observe the flash of the powder which directed us to the vessel. We got on board, when a breeze sprang up, and we made sail, and the next morning discovered Cape Brett in sight. As we sailed along the coast we were visited by ten canoes, which brought us plenty of fish. About 3 p.m. we anchored in the Harbour of Rangheehoo, and found all on the settlement well, and assuming the pleasing appearance of civilisation from the buildings erected and erecting and from the sawyers, smiths, and others at work.

Promising  
aspect of  
settlement.

Having now completed everything relative to the establishment of the mission that appeared to me necessary as far as regarded the intercourse of the settlers with the natives—I had opened a communication nearly two hundred miles along the coast, and the chiefs in all the different districts were acquainted with the object in view, and they all seemed sensible of the benefits which they were likely to derive from the residence of Europeans among them. A more promising prospect could not be looked for than the present for civilizing this interesting people. We had had no differences during the whole time of our stay (and we had no means of protecting ourselves against such numbers as are in these districts), but were wholly in the power of the

natives. I put no restraint upon them, but suffered them to come at any time and in any number to the vessel, Sundays excepted (when we had Divine service). A number of the chiefs lived constantly on board and many of their servants also.

1814

Dec.

We had only two small thefts committed while the brig lay in this harbour. One of the chiefs detected a common man with about 2 lb. of iron, and brought him to me. He was in a violent rage with him. I ordered the man to be confined in the hold till Terria, the head chief, came on board. When he arrived he was informed of what the man had done. Terria desired the thief to be brought on deck, and on the man's approach Terria made a blow at him with a billet of wood and would have instantly put him to death if I had not interfered to spare his life by getting him out of the brig into a canoe. The chief then ordered him to quit his dominions and return to them no more.

Theft committed by a native.

I afterwards lost two razors, and the chiefs were much concerned when informed of the circumstance, saying they hoped I did not suspect either of them, or that they could be guilty of such a crime (as no chief would steal). They said I had been too indulgent in allowing their servants to come on board, who could not all be trusted; and assured me that if ever they found out the thief at any period, however distant, he should be put to death. They also presented me with a very valuable mat, one of the finest I had seen, as a compensation for my loss, observing that while I remained in their districts I should not suffer any loss which they could remedy. They were all much concerned about these thefts. One of them sat upon deck two days and nights, and would not come into the cabin to eat, from vexation, saying he was so much ashamed of such conduct. (Theft and adultery they punish with death.)

Severely punished by Terria.

Compensation made for loss.

On passing up the River Koua Koua I observed upon the summit of a very high hill a Roman cross, and asked the natives what it was for. They told me it was to hang thieves on, whom they first killed and then hung up their dead bodies till time or the vultures destroyed. During our stay at Koua Koua I had many interesting conversations with the chiefs relative to the nature of crimes and punishments, and I pointed out to them that there was no comparison between a man who would steal a potato and another who committed murder. And yet their punishment (in New Zealand) was the same, for they will as soon kill a man for stealing potatoes as for murder. The chief has the power of life and death over his people. They appeared much astonished when I told them that King George had not the power to put any man to death, tho' a much greater king than any in New Zealand. I explained to them the nature of a British jury—that no man could be put to death in England

Theft punished by death.



1814  
Dec.

They approved  
the nature of a  
British jury.

Diverse opinions  
re marriage.

His interpreter  
very valuable.

unless twelve gentlemen had examined into the case of the accused prisoner on any alleged offence, and if they pronounced him guilty of a crime deserving death then King George could put him to death, but if these twelve gentlemen said he was not guilty King George could not put him to death; and even when a criminal is condemned to die King George has the authority to pardon him if he wishes to do so. They remarked that such a law was very good, and one of them asked what Governor we should send them. I replied that we had no intention of sending them any, but wished them to govern themselves. I mentioned some crimes which were punished with death, and others which we punished with banishment; and observed that punishment should be regulated at all times by the nature of the offence. I told them if a man had two wives in England, tho' he was a gentleman, yet he would be banished from his country. One of the chiefs said he was of opinion that it was better to have only one wife, for where there are many there will always be quarrelling; others said that their wives made the best overseers, and that they could not get their grounds cultivated if it was not for the industry of their wives; and for that reason only, they thought to have more wives than one was good policy. These conversations sometimes past while the women were present, and they were generally of opinion that a man should have no more than one wife. Some of the chiefs thought there were too many kings in New Zealand, and that if there were fewer they would have fewer wars and be more happy. I told them there was only one king in England; at the same time there were more gentlemen than in New Zealand, but that none of these gentlemen could put a man to death nor dared they go to war with one another. King George would not allow it, and they could not do this without his permission, on which account there was no fighting with nor murdering of one another in England, as there were among them.

I had one young man, a native of New Zealand, belonging to the vessel who had lived some years at Port Jackson, a very good interpreter, who generally attended me, to explain anything which the natives could not clearly understand; and by his assistance I also obtained any information I wished relative to the island and inhabitants of New Zealand, and was enabled to communicate much useful knowledge to them. Our conversation [was] generally touched religion, civil government, agriculture, and commerce. They always shewed an anxiety for information respecting the habits or customs of the people in other parts of the globe.

Shortly after our arrival at Koua Koua, a chief named Weevea came on board the brig to request me to visit his settlement.



I promised I would, as soon as I could conveniently leave the vessel. This village is situated on the banks of a fresh-water river called Wycaddee, about twelve miles from where we lay, at the head of one of the coves. The village takes its name from the river.

Having now completed our cargo I informed Weevea that I would accompany him to see his people. The next morning his canoe was got ready, and being joined by another canoe we set off for Wycaddee. The rain fell very heavy. I was soon wet through my great coat and other clothing. The wind and tide were against us, and the fresh-water river had risen in consequence of the late heavy rain, so that we made but little progress. When we had got about four miles on we came to a little village on the west side of the harbour. The chief came to invite us on shore, but this I declined as I was as wet as if I had been in the river. The chief waded after our canoe, notwithstanding the heavy rain, from a desire to know what was going on, and Weevea had enough to tell him of what he had learned on board the "Active." He pressed us much to take some refreshment with him, but I was too cold and wet to leave the canoe. When he had taken his leave, Weevea said to me, "This chief is a great king. Give him a nail." I complied with the request by giving him a few nails, and he returned on shore highly delighted with his presents.

We proceeded to Wycaddee, but the higher we got up the river the stronger the stream ran against us, so that at length the men could not stem the current with their paddles, but were compelled to go close in shore and get out of the canoe to drag it along, and with all their exertions they could not reach the village with the canoe. We therefore landed a little after dark, in order to walk up the remaining distance (about one mile) to the place. The rain still continuing, we had to pass thro' some swampy ground, which was in many places flooded with water. I however followed my guides, sometimes up to my knees in mud and sometimes sunk in deep water-holes, for the night being dark we could not see to pick our way. At length I discovered a light, like the twinkling of a star, appearing and disappearing at short intervals. It was a signal that the village was near. As one light only appeared I enquired where it was, and was informed that it proceeded from the chief's residence. Weevea was a little behind at this time, and I was walking along with one of his officers.

Before we entered the village the officer who was with me called aloud to the inhabitants and informed them that I was coming. Many of these people had visited the "Active." I made for the spot where I had first seen the light (in order

1814

Dec.

Went with  
Weevea to  
Wycaddee.

Bad journey  
through rain  
and mud.

Reached the  
village.

1814

Dec.

And crept  
into a small hut.

to get in shelter from the rain), and when I came up to this hut I had to creep into it through a small doorway about 2 ft. high and 18 in. broad. A number of women and children and a few of Weevea's servants composed the inmates. There was about a handful of fire in the centre of the hut (made of a few small sticks), round which were the children, all naked. Sometimes a little fire blazed for a moment and then went out, and the hut was full of smoke (as there was no vent for it to get out except at the small doorway already mentioned). This strange group of natives were all rejoiced to see me. I took off all my clothes, being very wet and cold. The children ran out to collect some firewood. Weevea brought me two clean mats to wrap myself in, as bed-clothes to sleep upon, and a log of wood for a pillow. The women and children were busy in mending the fire and drying my clothes. I found the smoke very offensive, but I thought it more prudent to put up with this inconvenience than run the risk of catching cold by sleeping in a hut where there was no fire. Weevea told me he could not remain in the hut on account of the smoke. As I would not leave it he retired into another by himself and left me with the company before mentioned, who entertained me a great part of the night in talking of their chief and his concerns. The women and children were very kind and attentive, and they did all in their power to make me comfortable.

Smoke in hut  
very offensive.

When they sleep they lie upon the ground, have little covering, and some none at all. A log of wood was laid in the centre of the hut, which ran the whole length, being about 30 ft. long, and the natives lay on each side of the log with their heads reclined on it. At this time I had no Europeans with me, nor any other person except Weevea's people. My object was to gain as clear a knowledge of the character and habits of these islanders as possible while I was in the country, which could not be acquired without sacrificing for a time the comforts and conveniences of civil life. I was under no apprehension for my personal safety, as I had never met with the smallest insult from one of them.

Had no  
European  
companions.

About midnight Weevea came to the hut and informed me that one of his wives was very ill, and her little child—that he was afraid she would die—and requested I would pray with her in the morning, which I promised to do. He appeared much concerned about this woman. I had heard a person moaning very much for some time, as if very weak and in great pain, and I also heard a child cry occasionally. Early in the morning I rose to see the poor woman, and found her lying with a child about three days old by her side in the open air, sheltered only by a few reeds placed in the direction from which the storm of

Visited a sick  
wife of Weevea.

wind and rain blew. She had been exposed all night in this manner, notwithstanding the stormy weather, and looked very ghastly, as if death was near. I talked to her for some time. She could scarcely speak, but smiled feebly, and seemed pleased with my attention to her. I knelt down by her side, along with Weevea and some of his people, and offered up my supplications to the Father of Mercies on her behalf. She well understood the meaning of prayer, tho' not the language in which it was then offered, as the New Zealanders consider that all their afflictions come from some superior Being, whom they are much accustomed to address while in trouble. The poor woman wanted nourishment. I presented her with a piece of biscuit, but she gave me to understand that she was forbidden to eat anything except potatoes. I spoke to Weevea, who told me God would be angry if she ate the biscuit. He took the bread, and, after repeating many petitions over it, placed it under her head and told me the presence of God would be in the biscuit, but his wife must not eat it. I lamented that the poor woman had been in the open air all night, which was enough to occasion her death, and learned that it was the prevailing custom among the New Zealanders when people were sick to carry them out of the huts into the open air lest the huts should be defiled. These people neither eat nor drink in their houses, but always in the open air, for the above reason.

1814  
Dec.

Found her  
exposed to wind  
and rain

and allowed  
to eat  
nothing but  
potatoes.

Sick people  
always left in  
the open air.

I could not learn that the New Zealanders have any graven images or likenesses of supposed deities, as other heathen nations have; but they consider their god to be an intelligent spirit or shadow, for when I enquired of one of them what God was like, I was told he was an immortal shadow; yet they suffer much in times of sickness from their superstitions, being compelled to lie in the open air, and to refuse food and water for days together, under an impression that if either be administered to the sick they will surely die. I had often been struck previous to my present visit to Wycaddee with the weakly and aged appearance of young women who had borne children, which I now attribute to the colds and other complaints caught, no doubt, by exposure whilst giving birth to their offspring.

Their ideas of  
God.

In passing thro' the village I saw a little naked child lying on the ground in the presence of a number of people. A chief informed me it was his child, and was two days old, and shewed me its mother, who was walking about. She would probably have been lying there too if she had been sick. The child was not very well. I mention this as a proof that both women and children at the critical time of danger are exposed to sufferings unknown to civil society.

Children also  
exposed.

1814

Dec.

At a small distance from where Weevea's sick were lying there was a little hut and a stage erected in it. Weevea took me to it, and told me his father had been slain in battle, and that his body was wrapped up and placed upon that stage, where it would remain till the bones moulded away. I could not observe any part of the body, as the covering had been drawn up into a round form, and not stretched out like our dead.

The chiefs in New Zealand, when they die, are generally placed on stages in some secret groves, several of which I saw. The natives do not like to visit the places allotted to their departed friends, and there is generally some frightful image erected near the spot to terrify all who approach near the repository of their dead. I was therefore surprised that Weevea had his father's remains so near his dwelling, and in the centre of the village. This village is situated in the centre of a rich valley, the land good and fit for cultivation. I also observed many noble pine trees.

Weevea wants  
European  
settlers.

Weevea was anxious to have some European residents at Wycaddee, and pointed out the spot where their houses might be built, on the rich banks of the river, where the advantages of situation and soil for cultivation (owing to the vicinity of the water, &c.). I told him that in time his wishes might be complied with, but that we must first see how the inhabitants of New Zealand conducted themselves towards the Europeans at Rangheehoo. If they were well treated, more should be sent. He wished then to accompany me to New South Wales. I told him the number I had already agreed to take were as many as the vessel could well accommodate, but I would give directions to secure a passage for him at a future time should he then feel inclined to visit me. With this he was satisfied, and said he would come. I then told him, as the vessel would leave Koua Koua that day, I must request the use of a canoe that I might get on board without delay. He replied that he could not suffer me to go until he had presented me with two or three hogs. He then immediately through [threw] off his clothing, took a boy and a dog to the river, plunged with them into the water, and swam across, holding them above water with the one hand and swimming with the other. On reaching the other side he ran off into the forest like a lion (the boy following) and in a little time returned with three hogs, which were put into the canoe, and all was got ready for my return. He made me a present of some mats at the same time, and told me he would accompany me to the vessel. When we got to the canoe he put in one of his sons, a fine boy about nine years old. I asked him what he was about to do with his boy. He told me that he intended to take him to Rangheehoo, to live with Mr. Kendall, in order to be instructed. I observed that Mr. Kendall's house was not yet ready to receive

Gave them hogs  
and mats.



pupils, but as soon as it was and Mr. K. be able to accommodate him, I would speak to Mr. Kendall, who would then, I had no doubt, receive him. With this he was satisfied.

It may not be improper to notice here a conversation I had with the two chiefs Tupee and Timmoranghee some time after respecting Mr. Kendall's school. He had already begun to teach the children, and had taken into the school two fine boys, the sons of a common man at Rangheehoo. Those chiefs told me it was of no use to teach the children of the common people—that they had no lands or servants, and could never rise higher in rank than their parents, but that it would be very good to instruct the sons of the chiefs. From which I could learn that there is no middle class of people in New Zealand: they are all either chiefs or (in a certain degree) slaves. At the same time the chiefs do not give their commands to the people indiscriminately as a body with that authority which masters in civil society exercise over their servants; nor do their dependents feel themselves bound to obey such commands. It is true they have the power to put any of their people to death for criminal conduct, but as the chiefs have no means of remunerating the services of their dependents (there being reciprocal contracts between them as master and servant) they cannot command the people as a body to labour on their ground, &c. In time of war or other common danger the chiefs assume sovereign authority, and compel the people to put themselves under their orders, and all subordinate chiefs must also (with their dependents) attend their immediate superiors to the field of action. The chiefs have their domestic servants to cook their provisions, manage their canoes, cultivate their land, or do any menial service required, and these only are wholly under the chief's authority.

1814  
Dec.

No middle class  
in New  
Zealand.

Domestic  
servants under  
chief's autho-  
rity.

I now took my leave of this people and returned to the brig, which had got under weigh, but was obliged to anchor again, the tide running so strong she could not stem it with the light wind she then had. When I arrived I was informed by some of the chiefs that the "Jefferson," whaler, had come on the coast, and was anchored in the cove near Terria's village, and that their [there] had been a serious difference between the people on board and the chief Terria, whom they had threatened to shoot; further, that if any injury was done to Terria it was designed to cut off the ship and kill her crew, and they therefore requested me to go down and know the cause of the quarrel.

"Jefferson"  
anchored near  
Terria's village.

I was much concerned to hear this account, and told them I would go on board the "Jefferson," and if any injury had been done to Terria, the party who had done it should be brought on board the "Active" and taken to Port Jackson, where he

Quarrel  
between her  
crew and  
natives.

1814

Dec.

Terria explained  
the difference.

Europeans were  
to blame.

Another provo-  
cation by one of  
the sailors.

Tupee wished to  
hang the sailor.

would be punished by Governor Macquarie. I took the largest carpenter's axe we had in the vessel with me as a present to Terria (knowing that nothing would be more acceptable to him), and set off in a canoe for his village. I found him at home, and, after presenting the axe, I told him what I had heard. He stated that he had been on board the "Jefferson," and that a pistol had been pointed at his breast by a person who threatened to shoot him. I desired him to go with me, and point out the person who had thus insulted him. He ordered his canoe, and we proceeded on board, accompanied by his brother and another chief. When we got on board he pointed out the person who had threatened to shoot him and stated the cause of their difference; but as the matter was at length settled to the satisfaction of the chief and his friends it is not necessary to say more than that it appeared to me that the Europeans were wholly to blame.

I remained on board the "Jefferson" all night. While walking upon the quarter-deck, in company with the second mate, I saw one of the chiefs in a dreadful rage, and Tupee (Terria's brother) pointing up to the mast-head, at the same time making signs to some of the natives, as if he wanted to hang some person up. I immediately went with the mate to know what was the cause of the uproar. The chief, who was too angry, pointed to a young man who had a sword in his hand, and said he had struck his wife several times with the sword, and when he forbade him he had made several stabs at himself. I told him to be quiet, and the man should be punished if he had done wrong. I then turned to the young man who still kept the sword, and when I spoke to him was very insolent, and used extremely bad language before his officers and me. He refused to be reconciled to the chief, tho' neither he nor his wife had given the smallest offence. I told the chief I should represent the man's conduct to Governor Macquarie, and that Mr. Kendall, who was appointed by the Governor to hear their complaints against the Europeans, would be sent for, and he would write them on paper and I would take them with me to Port Jackson, which was done. They attended the examination, when the young man was brought before Mr. Kendall, as a Magistrate, and they were perfectly satisfied with what was done.

I enquired of Tupee what he meant by pointing to the mast-head. He said that he was recommending to his countrymen not to injure any person on board but the man who had struck him and his wife with the sword, and to hang him only at the mast-head. Masters of vessels should be very particular and not to place swords in the hands of young thoughtless sailors when they are among savage people. The number of natives then on board and alongside the "Jefferson" could have taken her in one

moment. The natives should either be prohibited altogether excepting the chief of the district from coming on board, or care should be taken not to insult any of them, to whom this permission may be given.

1814  
Dec.

Masters of  
vessels should  
be very careful.

Previous to this time I had had frequent conversations with the chiefs respecting the loss of the "Boyd," and pointed out to them the injustice of putting to death the innocent with the guilty, as the people of Whangoroa had done in that instance. They readily admitted that the guilty only ought to suffer. I was pleased to find that Tupee was strongly impressing upon the minds of the natives the same idea, and instructing them not to injure any person on board the "Jefferson" except the man who had given the offence.

All differences being now settled, I waited for the arrival of the "Active." She soon appeared in sight, and anchored not far from the "Jefferson," where we intended to take in our water, and then to proceed to the settlement at Rangheehoo. While the "Active" was taking in her cargo at Koua Koua a number of native women came on board every day. I told them I could not allow any of them to remain on board at night unless their husbands were with them. Accordingly, in the evening the vessel was searched, and if any women were found they were sent on shore (sometimes not very well pleased). During my stay on board the "Jefferson" I saw many of my old female acquaintances, who laughingly said they were not now on board the "Active," and that the "Jefferson" was not *tabooed* when the evening came like the "Active"—there was no *iriauta* (meaning there was no command to be off). I replied that I was angry with the master and crew of the "Jefferson" for suffering them to remain all night in the vessel, and that these were all very bad men. The women smiled, and expressed their confidence that they would not be molested.

Native women  
not allowed on  
board at night.

The next day I accompanied Mr. Kendall to Rangheehoo in the "Jefferson's" whale-boat, where I found Duattera dangerously ill. This was a very distressing circumstance to me. I called to see him, but the superstitions of the natives would not permit me for several days to do so. Having at length gained admission, I found Duattera lying on his back facing the sun, which was exceedingly hot, in a high fever, his tongue very foul. He complained of violent pains in his bowels, and from every appearance he was not likely to survive long. Two of his wives, his father-in-law, the priest, and several attendants were with him. He was much pleased that I had come to see him. I asked him if he had anything to eat or drink. He replied he had not, excepting potatoes and water. I told him whatever he wanted he should have, and ordered him a supply of tea, sugar, rice, and

Returned to  
Rangheehoo.

Found Duattera  
very ill.

Sent him some  
tea, sugar, &c.



1814

Dec.

He had intended  
building a new  
town.

wine, for which he expressed his gratitude. I had some wine and water got for him as soon as possible, part of which he took. He also eat [ate] some rice, and drank some tea, which revived him a little. It was his intention to have laid out a new town, with regular streets, to be built after the European mode, in which ground was to be set apart for the erection of a church. I had examined the spot, which appeared delightful. The situation is on a rising hill fronting the cove, and commanding a view of the whole harbour, being about eight miles from its mouth. He mentioned his intention to me, and hoped he would recover in time to have the town properly marked out before I sailed. I told him I should be ready to attend him, but hoped to see him better first, and recommended him to take what nourishment he could.

Having obtained permission to see him at all times, I called the next day, and found that he spoke much better, and I entertained hopes of his recovery; but on the following day he appeared worse. He was supplied with all the necessaries he could wish for by Messrs. Kendall, Hall, and King, who willingly did all they could for him.

All the utensils used for conveying meat or drink to the sick chief were detained by his relations, who said if they were removed Duaterra would die, and he was himself of the same opinion! So strongly rooted is superstition in the human mind when once admitted.

Grief at  
Duaterra's  
illness.

I had hitherto met everything in New Zealand to my full satisfaction, and nothing to give me pain till this unexpected affliction of Duaterra, which was to me very distressing, because upon his wisdom, zeal, industry, and influence I had calculated the production of many advantages to New Zealand. My hopes were now likely to be blighted, as I could entertain little expectation of his being restored. I know Infinite Wisdom cannot err: what the Great Head of the Church ordains to be done will in the end be best; but as David moaned for Abner I shall long moan for Duaterra, now removed by death, for as a great man fell in Israel when Abner was killed so did a great man fall in New Zealand when Duaterra died—so far as natural causes may be considered to operate.

Caused by over-  
exertion.

I attributed Duaterra's sickness to his exertions. He was a man of great bodily strength, and possessed an active and a comprehensive mind, which on his return to New Zealand he exerted to the utmost, day and night, to carry the plans he had formed into execution. His grand object was agriculture. He calculated that in two years he should be able to raise sufficient wheat for all his people to supply other chiefs with seed, and in a short time to export some to Port Jackson in exchange for iron and such other

Agriculture his  
grand object.



articles as he might want. With this view he had visited his different lands or farms, some of them forty miles distant from Rangheehoo, laid out the ground he intended to clear and cultivate, and marked out the work for his men, having first enquired of me how much ground a man might break up in a day at Port Jackson. He was seldom at home, but constantly at his farms, excepting when he went with me to the River Thames, and on this account I fear he will be a great loss to his country. He had introduced agriculture, and paved the way for the civilization of his countrymen. When he last came to New South Wales, in August, 1814, he brought his half-brother with him, and left him with me, desiring that the boy might be instructed in useful knowledge. The boy is now about ten years of age, and is a very fine intelligent youth, exceedingly well disposed and industrious. This youth is next in authority, and will succeed Duaterra in his estates. I intend him to remain till he can speak the English language, and gain a knowledge of agriculture. He is every day at work, either as a carpenter or a farmer, and I entertain hopes that should Duaterra be removed by death this young man will soon be able to fill his place. I have a person instructing him also to read a little before he returns to his native home. I trust that in these mysterious dispensations Divine Goodness is preparing a way to bring these poor heathens into the Church of Christ, and that if one instrument fails another will in due time be provided. In the day of trouble we may say with Abraham, "God will provide Himself a lamb for a burnt offering."

On Friday, 24th February, the brig "Active" was ready for sea, Duaterra still continuing in a dying state, and my time being limited by Governor Macquarie's order I could not remain to see the result of his sickness. I was happy, however, in the consideration that those I was about to leave behind would cheerfully administer to all his wants, and would do everything in their power to restore him to health, for they were all very kind to him, and anxious for his preservation.

I had given permission for ten New Zealanders to accompany me to Port Jackson, eight of whom were chiefs or sons of chiefs, and two servants. They all embarked on Friday, and their friends assembled from every quarter to take their leave of them and me. Before my final departure from the island I wished to obtain, and as far as possible to secure, a legal claim to the land occupied and required by the Europeans who I was about to leave in the country; and for this purpose application was made to two nephews of the late Tippahee, who were the legal proprietors of the land in question, which adjoined the Village of Rangheehoo. These two chiefs readily consented to sell us the land (they were related to Duaterra). I went with them and the

1814  
Dec.

His half-brother  
will succeed him.

He is now at  
Port Jackson.

Ten New  
Zealanders  
going to New  
South Wales.

1814

Dec.

Bought land for  
the settlers.

settlers to ascertain the proper dimensions or boundaries, but we had no instruments to measure the exact quantity, which I took to be about 200 acres. The natural land-marks or boundaries were inserted in the deed of sale made and executed on the Friday (24th February, 1815) in the presence of several chiefs from the several districts around. The land was purchased on behalf of the Church Missionary Society for *twelve axes*; and the deed of grant or sale contains (by way of seal and signature) all the curves and lines which are *tattooed* on the chiefs' faces, which renders it a very singular and curious document.

I took this opportunity to inform the assembled chiefs that, as the land now belonged to the Europeans, they were all at full liberty to come or send from any part of New Zealand for such things as they might wish to purchase, and that the smith would make them axes, hoes, and other useful tools, but on no account was he to repair fire-arms or make any warlike instruments whatever, not even for the *greatest chiefs* on the island. Ahoodea O'Gunner (one of the chiefs from whom we purchased the land) declared that the ground was no longer theirs, but wholly and solely the property of the white people, and was *tabooed* for their use only. The ceremony of executing the deed was performed on the newly purchased land, and a son of Mr. King's (the first white native of New Zealand, born at Rangheehoo) was publicly baptized on this occasion, which with many other impressive circumstances will render this truly interesting scene a subject of long remembrance to the New Zealanders and of gratitude and praise to the new followers of Jesus then present, who were the humble instruments of the work.

Over 200 huts in  
Rangheehoo.

Ahoodea O'Gunner, a sensible man and very partial to the Europeans, is the chief man in Rangheehoo, where the settlers reside. It is the largest and most populous town or village we have seen on the island, and it contains upwards of 200 huts. Mrs. O'Gunner, wife of the chief, was a pleasant woman and had much improved in her appearance and cleanliness before we left. She spent most of her time with the Europeans, assisting the women in anything she could do. Ahoodea O'Gunner requested I would send him a suit of clothes to wear on the Sabbath, as he did not like to attend Divine service in his native dress, which he thought improper, and I promised to attend to his request.

Sailed from  
Rangheehoo on  
February 26th.

Having finally arranged and settled all matters respecting the establishment of the missionary settlement at Rangheehoo, I embarked in company with Mr. Nicholas, and on Saturday morning, the 26th, we weighed anchor and sailed. Many of the chiefs came on board, and accompanied us down the harbour. There was much weeping and lamentation at the parting scene. Messieurs Kendall, Hall, and King were also on board, and the

chiefs promised very kindly in reference to them, saying that if Duaterra should die they would take care of the missionary settlers—that none should hurt or molest. Many requested to go with me to New South Wales, but I was obliged to refuse them, partly because we had no room in the vessel, and partly on account of the heavy expense necessary to maintain them on the passage and while the vessel might lay at Port Jackson. I told them I would at all opportunities permit a few to have a passage at a time, and that they should come in turn by rotation, and with these prospects they were satisfied. The head chief's wife wept greatly, and cut her face, arms, and breast with shells, &c., till the blood streamed down her person. She said that she would neither eat nor drink during five days and nights, but would sit in her hut and weep and pray for us all that time. She was a very intelligent young woman, could then speak a little English, and was partial to Europeans, and her husband was equally well disposed to them.

1814  
Dec.

Lamentation  
at their  
departure.

Terria was urgent to have one or two Europeans sent to reside in his district, and it was my intention, provided I heard favourable accounts of the settlements, and could meet with suitable persons, to send a man and his wife by the next return of the "Active" to New Zealand.

Terria wants  
some European  
settlers.

We proceeded down the harbour till we neared the Heads, when the canoes returned with our weeping friends. Here we had to anchor till the turning of the tide, and during this interval we were visited by a chief from the River Thames, who had just arrived.

About noon we put out to sea, and bore away for the North Cape, and came in sight of it about noon next day (Sunday, the 27th). I was determined to put in and spend a day, according to my promise (if the wind would permit). We accordingly steered for it. The wind was not unfavourable during the Sunday night, and on Monday morning we were four or five leagues from the shore with a land breeze. The vessel had passed the north-east point where I had intended to touch, but we could not make it. We endeavoured to work to windward by carrying all the sail we could, and about 10 o'clock a canoe put off for us from a different part of the shore where the chief lived whom I wished to visit. When the natives came on board I was informed that the chief had got a quantity of flax dressed and ready for me, and that Jem, the Otaheitean, was about four miles in the interior. I requested the principal native to send his canoe on shore, to inform Jem of my arrival, but to remain himself on board. This accordingly was done. He, like many others, wished for a passage to Port Jackson, which, for the reasons already assigned, I could not grant.

Visited by a  
canoe from the  
North Cape.



1814

Dec.

Went on shore  
with the chief.

Shortly after another canoe reached us, in which I went on shore, accompanied by Mr. Nicholas and the chief who had come on board. We landed at a small village near the beach. This surf was high, and the place where we landed appeared to me very rocky and full of danger; but relying on the knowledge and dexterity of the natives in such cases, we ventured thro' all, and got safely on shore, our only damage being the sprinkling of a little salt water. We here found some pretty little cottages, and their gardens in high cultivation, well laid out and neatly fenced in. The potatoes and yams, &c., were planted in separate beds, and no weeds were to be seen in these plots of ground.

In passing through the village I observed a man's head stuck on a pole in front of the cottage. The chief stole silently from behind me and took it down, and then carried it into the hut. He was not aware that I had observed it, and by his cautious conduct I concluded he was desirous I should not; on which account I took no further notice, but passed on.

A messenger  
sent for Jem.

It was from this village a messenger had been sent for Jem, the Otaheitean, who had not yet returned. We walked about two miles into the interior on the path by which Jem was expected to pass, and a number of natives attended us. We saw on our way some beautiful plantations of potatoes and other vegetables. The women appeared as if they were little acquainted with Europeans. Most of them kept at a distance for some time, and always fled when we spoke to them.

Native women  
very timid.

Being informed that Jem had taken another road and was gone down to the beach, we returned towards the sea by a different way to that by which we left the village being conducted by the natives. We met the chief's son dressed in the India print I had given to his father when on my way to Bay of Islands. The edges of his garment were ornamented by a white hog's skin with the hair on, which looked tolerably handsome; the print being red and white gave it a tasteful effect. He was an exceeding fine youth. He produced the printed orders of Governor Macquarie (given by me to his father); they were wrapped up and covered with great care, in order to keep them clean. At his request I consented to give him a passage to New South Wales. Being informed that his father was waiting to see me at the head of the bay (about three miles off) I set off to visit him, and was met by Jem, who told me the flax was ready.

Chief's son  
handsomely  
dressed.

It being almost dark, and the wind blowing fresh from the land, so that the brig could not get up, I was apprehensive she would be driven out to sea, and therefore thought it prudent to get on board without delay. With this view we returned to the village, and on our way saw two women leaning on a rock weeping and making loud lamentations. I enquired the cause and learnt



that it was on account of their husband (the chief who had applied for a passage). I desired them not to weep, for I could not take their husband with me, because the vessel was full.

1814  
Dec.

When we got to the village I requested a canoe from the natives to take us on board; they launch'd one immediately, and filled her with men. The sea was rough, and the brig a considerable distance from shore, and I expected we should meet with some difficulty in getting on board. But as the natives apprehended no danger I endeavoured to persuade myself that my fears were groundless, and therefore entered the canoe, which soon passed over the raging surf, and reached the "Active" in safety. Some of the canoes are 80 ft. long, and it is astonishing to see with what skill these people manage them in a rough sea.

Returned on board in the evening.

Native canoes sometimes 80 ft. long.

Previous to leaving the shore, I informed Jem that the brig would lay to all night, if not driven off by the wind, and in the morning we should stand in for the land, in order that I may see his father-in-law before I left, and get the flax he had prepared on board.

As the wind continued the same all night we could not make nearer the land in the morning than in the evening before. Jem came off, however, pretty early with a message from the chief requesting me to go on shore. I desired him to return and tell the chief the sea was so high, and not being accustomed to their canoes I was afraid to venture, and that if he had anything to send the vessel should wait till I heard from him again. At the same time I sent him a present of some edge tools which I had reserved for his use.

In about three hours Jem returned with a quantity of potatoes and about 3 cwt. of flax. He also brought a boy whom the chief wished me to take to Port Jackson, with a request that Jem might accompany him, and return by the "Active" on her next trip to New Zealand. I was unwilling to disappoint the wishes of this chief who placed such confidence in me, and I therefore gave my consent for them both to remain in the vessel. We then made sail and bore away with a fine breeze for Port Jackson. Jem told me that the chief's eldest son, whom I had seen on shore, was very anxious to come, but his mother would not consent at this time.

Potatoes and flax brought on board.

Took Jem and a boy to Port Jackson.

I had now twelve natives as passengers, besides the one employed in the vessel, on board, and it was with the most heartfelt satisfaction that I left New Zealand. I had not met with the slightest accident, provocation, or insult. I had fully accomplished the object of my voyage, and satisfied myself respecting the real character and disposition of these heathens. I had obtained satisfactory evidence that there existed no real obstruction to the introduction of Christianity and civilization among

1814

Dec.

Encountered a  
heavy storm on  
March 20th.

Tupee and  
Timmoranghee.

Driven over  
200 miles north  
of Port Jackson.

Arrived in  
Sydney Cove  
on March 23,  
1815.

New Zealanders  
treat women  
kindly.

them, and that nothing more was requisite than common prudence on the part of the persons who might be engaged in this humane and benevolent undertaking.

Nothing material happened during our passage till the 20th of March, when we had a very heavy storm of thunder and lightening from the south-east. It blew a very hard gale, which compelled us to lay to for two days and nights. At this time we were not far off the coast of New South Wales. Some of the New Zealanders were greatly alarmed for their safety, and expected the vessel to be dashed to pieces every moment—particularly the chief Timmeranghee, who wept and said he would never see his wife and children any more, and begged the captain to take all the coats from the masts (meaning the sails) for they would kill the ship. Tupee on the other hand was quite composed during the storm. He said that “neither thunder, lightening, nor wind would destroy the vessel [if] he and I remained in it,” and exhorted Timmorangha not to be afraid, for he was safe enough. Notwithstanding all that Tupee could say, Timmorangha’s fears continued as long as the gale lasted. He neither rested by night nor by day. Tupee was often accustomed to pray, and sometimes he would have some of his countrymen with him. He had a strong confidence in some supernatural being—the God of New Zealand, as he was wont to call the object of his worship. I was very sick during the storm, and could seldom get out of my cott. Tupee would sit beside me, and put his hand on different parts of my body, and pray to his God. He was a dignified and a superior character, and was always the same—very mild and even tempered. In this gale we were driven more than two hundred miles to the northward of Port Jackson. When the storm abated the wind became favourable to us, and we anchored safely in Sydney Cove on Wednesday, 23rd March, 1815.

I shall conclude this detail of the voyage by observing that the New Zealand chiefs are a warlike race, proud of their rank, and jealous of their dignity. They seemed to be men who never forget neither a favour nor an injury. They retain a grateful remembrance of those Europeans who have been kind and faithful to them, and a spirit of sovereign contempt and revenge to such as have abused their confidence or otherwise injured them.

The people appear to live in amity and peace among themselves when under the government of one chief. I saw no quarrelling nor domestic broils while I was on the island. They are kind to their women and children. I never observed a mark of violence on any of them, nor did I see a woman struck, and the missionary settlers informed me that they had never seen any difference among the native people of Rangahēehoo during the period they had resided there. I have reason also to hold the same opinion

generally of those of them who inhabit the districts on the south side of the Bay of Islands, especially when connected with each other by the ties of blood or being of the same tribe and belonging to the same village. I was likewise informed that no injury had been done in these parts of the country to any European since the time of Captain Cook's voyage.

The two brother chiefs Terria and Tupee are exceedingly well disposed men, and have never allowed acts of violence towards Europeans, altho' often provoked by insults from the latter. They frequently stated to me the nature of the injuries which they and their people have sustained or suffered from English seamen, and that not long ago a master of a vessel had shot two of their men dead; but notwithstanding this outrage they had not retaliated upon the Europeans, and mentioned the circumstance only as a proof how much they wished to cultivate our friendship. They wished me to be under no apprehension for the safety of our brig while on their coast, because she would be protected by the unanimous good will of the people. I said in reply that the vessel was intended to be constantly employed for their benefit and the improvement of their country, and they might therefore consider her as belonging to New Zealand, but it was not intended that she should come to the island under the expectation of making profit, or securing any advantage from them. One of the chiefs observed, in answer, that they were convinced of the latter fact, because they had nothing to give!

I am of opinion that little good can be done among the New Zealanders without the aid of a vessel to ply regularly between that island and New South Wales, which would supply necessaries and secure the lives of the missionary settlers. It would also give opportunities for the native chiefs to visit Port Jackson, where, by seeing the habits and tasting the comforts of civilized life, they would acquire more useful knowledge in one month than they would in a long time in their own country, even when instructed by Europeans. A single view of our houses and furniture, our public buildings—such as churches, the King's stores, magazines, and granaries, &c.—and of our arts and method of cultivating the land, would make impressions on their comprehensive minds never to be forgotten, and would therefore materially assist the gradual process of missionary instruction. As an instance of such effects, I may state that when I took Tupee and Timmorangha to see our general hospital in Sydney their minds were greatly excited by surprise and astonishment. They immediately took the dimensions and particulars of it in their own way, in order to be able to describe what they had seen, and they contrasted the work with their own country labour, observing to me that their people were in an

1814  
Dec.

Terria and  
Tupee well  
disposed.

Brig quite safe  
on their coast.

Vessel needed to  
ply between  
New Zealand  
and New South  
Wales.

Advantageous  
for chiefs to visit  
New South  
Wales.



1814  
Dec.  
—

ignorant state—no work was done there ! but notwithstanding this remark of Tupee, I believe the natives are an active and industrious race of men.

Iron is greatly  
valued.

I think, however, that besides the labours of a few solitary European residents among them they will require to be frequently encouraged by visits and supplies of agricultural tools. Iron is the only article which they at present value (fire-arms excepted). They are bold and daring and will undertake very difficult enterprises, with little apparent means to accomplish them, having scarcely any means to cultivate the land for want of iron, and no grain of any kind (till supplied by the "Active"), nor any sort of commerce with other nations.

The only profession of the chiefs may be said to be solely that of war. It is no uncommon occurrence for the people of the North Cape to travel throughout the country to the East Cape, a distance of two hundred miles, to make war. This is a great undertaking when it is considered that there are no regular roads, no bridges over rivers, and little means of subsistence in an uncultivated country like New Zealand.

Long journeys  
taken to make  
war.

Jem, the Otaheitean, told me he had been three times within the last five years at the East Cape to war, accompanied by a thousand men each time. When, with all this travel and toil, they get to the territory of their supposed enemies, the spoils to be gained consist of nothing more than a few mats and the prisoners who may be taken in battle.

While the "Active" lay in the River Thames we observed a number of canoes on the beach, and were informed that they belonged to warriors who resided on the west side of the island, and that they had brought their canoes overland, and were going to war with some of the tribes at the East Cape. I wished much to visit their camp, and see the men who could undertake such an arduous task as to carry those large heavy canoes over a hilly and an uncleared country. Duaterra, however, recommended me not to visit their camp, as it would not be safe, and I took his advice. The camp appeared to be about three miles from our anchorage.

New Zealanders  
are all cannibals.

The New Zealanders are all cannibals, and appear to have no idea that it is an unnatural crime. When I expressed abhorrence at their eating one another they said it had always been customary to eat their enemies. I could not learn, however, that they ever eat human flesh merely to satisfy hunger or from choice, nor in cool blood, but solely from a spirit of retaliation and revenge for injuries sustained, and, as far as I could form an opinion of this horrid custom, I am inclined to believe that these people consider the eating of their enemies in the same light as we do the hanging of a criminal (condemned



by the laws of his country), and that the disgrace reflected on the surviving relations of the victim is nearly the same as that reflected on a family in Europe by the public execution of one of its members. When I informed them that this was a custom unknown in Europe, and considered there as a great disgrace to the nation which practises it, they seemed surprised, and Shunghee, tho' a man of great authority, has since told me that he thought it was wrong, and that his people would never be guilty of it again. A few others made a similar promise. I took opportunities as occasion offered to convince them of the inhuman nature of this practice by picturing the horror it excited in the bosoms of all good men of other nations, in whose opinion they were disgraced and dreaded on its account.

1814  
Dec.

Shunghee and  
others re-  
nounced the  
practice.

It may be proper to remark here that altho' we met a friendly reception on every part of the coast at which we stopt or touched, I should recommend masters of vessels who may visit New Zealand to be very cautious unless they can depend upon the proper behaviour of their respective crews. The New Zealanders will not be insulted with impunity, nor be treated as men without understanding, but will assuredly resent and revenge an injury as soon as opportunity permits.

At the Bay of Islands I would consider any ship as safe, in the event of a difference between the natives and the crew, as she would be at Port Jackson; but not so in any other port or harbour in the island. When I take an estimate of what I have seen of these islanders, and of what I have learnt from the numerous conversations on various subjects which I have had with them, I am inclined to believe and hope that under the blessing of an Omnipotent and Merciful God they may e'er long rank among the civilized and Christian nations of the earth.

Vessels safe at  
the Bay of  
Islands.

The want of iron is at present, however, a great obstacle to their further improvement, and without it I fear these people could scarcely rise much above their present situation; but if means be adopted to supply them with that essential article their country will soon produce to them all the necessaries and conveniences enjoyed in civil society, and as such comforts increase to reward their labour so will their wants increase to stimulate them to greater industry, and thus lay a solid foundation for their progressive, social, and mental improvement in the arts of civilization and in that which is the grand and most important object of all, a saving knowledge of Christianity, which is the ultimate and leading feature of all the proceedings contemplated by that benevolent and blessed institution, the Church Missionary Society, and the most hearty wish of all who love the Lord Jesus and sincerely pray for the prosperity of Zion.

Iron greatly  
needed.

Social and  
religious  
progress.

1815  
Feb. 24.

[Extract: The *Missionary Register*, August, 1816.  
NEW ZEALAND.

*Church Missionary Society.*

24/2/1815.

New Zealand  
grant to mission-  
aries.

In the Ranghee  
Hoo district.

THE grant was made out and executed, and the land publickly set apart for the Europeans, on Friday, the 24th of February, 1815, in the presence of a number of chiefs from different districts, who were assembled at Ranghee Hoo, to take their leave of the Active.

The signature of the grant, or deed, contains all the lines which are *tattooed* on the chief's face, according to their singular and curious mode of making thereon drawings and figures.

In return for  
twelve axes.

It is the following terms: "Know all men to whom these presents shall come that I, Ahoo-dee O Gunna, King of Ranghee Hoo, in the Island of New Zealand, have, in consideration of twelve axes to me in hand now paid and delivered by the Rev. Samuel Marsden, of Parramatta, in the territory of New South Wales, given, granted, bargained, and sold; and by this present instrument do give, grant, bargain, and sell unto the Committee of the Church Missionary Society for Africa and the East, instituted in London, in the Kingdom of Great Britain, and to their heirs and successors, all that piece and parcel of land situate in the District of Hoshee, in the Island of New Zealand, bounded on the south side by the Bay of Tippona and the Town of Ranghee Hoo, on the north side by a creek of fresh water, and on the west by a public road into the interior; together with all the rights, members, privileges, and appurtenances thereunto belonging; to have and to hold, to the aforesaid Committee of the Church Missionary Society for Africa and the East, instituted in London, in the Kingdom of Great Britain, their heirs, successors, and assigns, for ever, clear and freed from all taxes, charges, impositions, and contributions whatsoever, as and for their own absolute and proper estate for ever: In testimony whereof, I have to these presents thus done and given, set my hand, at Hoshee, in the Island of New Zealand, this twenty-fourth day of February, in the year of Christ one thousand eight hundred and fifteen."

[Proceedings of Church Missionary Society.

MISSIONARY LETTERS: THOMAS KENDALL TO REV. SAMUEL MARSDEN.

May 27.

REV. AND DEAR SIR,—

Bay of Islands, May 27, 1815.

Dunterra's last  
illness.

Our friend Duaterra was taken dangerously ill, as you will recollect, before you left the island. His illness continuing to increase, the attention of the settlers was peculiarly directed to

him. He was supplied with such things as he thought he could take for his nourishment, for which he expressed great thankfulness; but complained of want of breath, and bodily weakness and pain.

I had not repeated my visits above two or three times before the priest told me that he would not live; and on Thursday, March 2, he was conveyed from the town in a kind of bier to a hill at Tippona, on which he had proposed to you that the town should be built. A shed had been prepared for his reception; and there he was to die; for it is customary at New Zealand not to suffer a native to die in one of the villages. The natives say that if this should be allowed Atua would be angry, and some heavy calamity would befall them.

When Duaterra perceived the time of his departure at hand, he directed his little property to be distributed among his surviving relatives. I cannot learn that he made any particular consideration for his chief wife, Dahoo.

The cow which His Excellency Governor Macquarie had given him, with her calf, and the military raiment, were to be taken care of for his infant son (now named Duaterra), whom he commended to my notice, requesting that he might be sent to you as soon as he should be sufficiently strong to endure the passage, and that he might be brought up in the Orphan School at Sydney. He desired his wife to admonish the chiefs and the people of Tippona to be kind to us all when he was gone.

Duaterra lay but one night in the place prepared for him. He died on Friday, March 3rd, early in the morning. . . .

Kangooroa and Shunghee told me and my colleagues not to be afraid: Duaterra was dead, but they would be our friends.

1815  
May 27.

He was carried  
to a hill at  
Tippona.

His directions  
about his son.

He died on  
Friday, March 3.

---

G. BLAXCELL TO SECRETARY CAMPBELL.

SIR,—

Sydney, 17th June, 1815.

June 17.

Agreeable to His Excellency's kind promise of transmitting the memorial of the New South Wales New Zealand Company, and recommending it to the favourable consideration of His Majesty's Government, as communicated in yours of the 18th November last, we beg leave to hand you the same with two copies for that purpose, and have to request you will be pleased to inform His Excellency the Governor that in pursuance of the important objects set forth in the memorial, we have already dispatched the brig Trial and schooner Brothers properly equipt, and that we are now equipping the brig Endeavour also to be

1815  
June 17.  
—

employed in the same speculation, which we trust, thro' His Excellency's recommendation, will be encouraged and supported by His Majesty's Government.

We have, &c.,

S. LORD.

G. BLAXCELL.

Directors of the New South Wales  
New Zealand Company.

John Thos. Campbell, Esq., Secretary, &c., &c.

#### GOVERNMENT AND GENERAL ORDER.

Aug. 19.  
—

August 19th, 1815.

It being represented that the pine and other timber occasionally imported from New Zealand do not sell here at the high prices they were supposed to bring when certain duties were laid upon them, His Excellency the Governor has been pleased to order and direct, that instead of 1s. per solid foot being demanded for duty as affixed by the Government Order of the 26th June, 1813, on timber in log and plank from New Zealand, that from and after the present date the sum of 6d. per solid foot only shall be charged as duty on all timber, whether log or plank, that may be imported from New Zealand; the duty on spars to continue as established by the said Order of the 26th June, 1813.

LACHLAN MACQUARIE.

Sept. 20.  
—

[From *Evangelical Magazine*, June, 1816.

#### EXTRACT OF A LETTER FROM REV. MR. MARSDEN.

Parramatta, Sept. 20th, 1815.

I AM happy to inform you that the Active, brig, returned safe from New Zealand on the 21st August, after fully accomplishing the object of her voyage.

My wish was to open a friendly intercourse between the natives of that island and the missionaries previous to their final settlement among them. But as they were considered such monsters of cruelty, I did not think it prudent, in a public point of view, to send the missionaries' wives and families in the first instance, but to bring over some of the chiefs to Port Jackson, and to establish a friendship with them. My old friend Duattera, with two other chiefs and some of their relations, are now at Parramatta, living with me, and Messrs. Hall and Kendall. There are now here eleven natives of New Zealand.

Chiefs brought  
from New  
Zealand.



Duaterra is a man of a very superior mind. He is fully determined to improve his country, so far as his means and influence extend. Tools of agriculture are the only articles which he wants, and seeds to crop his ground. He assures me that he will do all in his power to prevent future wars amongst his countrymen, and turn their minds to cultivate the land. No man could ever be worse treated than Duaterra has often been by Europeans, but he has the strongest attachment to them, from the hope that through their means he may deliver his countrymen from their present degraded situation.

1815  
Sept. 20.

Duaterra a fine character.

From my own observation of the natives belonging to the different islands in these seas (excepting the natives of New Holland) I think they are originally the same people, their language being very similar. Should the natives of New Zealand receive the Gospel, all the other islands also may be expected to receive its blessings. As fair a prospect appears to me to be now opened as ever was for any heathen nation. The Divine Governor will, in His gracious providence, order all things well. Great objects are seldom obtained without great sacrifices and many difficulties. The civilisation of the natives of New Zealand, and the introduction of the Gospel among them, is a work of vast magnitude. I have no doubt but it can be accomplished, and I firmly believe that the time is now at hand.

Other tribes will follow.

A great work.

Shunghee is a very fine character; appears uncommonly mild in his manners, and very polite, and well behaved at all times. His districts are some distance from the Bay of Islands, in the interior. He had begun the cultivation of wheat, which I had sent to Duaterra.

The chiefs, coming over to Port Jackson, will, I trust, lay a firm foundation for the work of the mission and secure the comfort and safety of those who may be employed therein. Were I young and free, I should offer myself to this work. It would be my delight and my joy.

Chiefs will protect missionaries.

The chiefs are all happy with us at Parramatta, and their minds enlarging very fast. Beholding the various works that are going on in the smiths and carpenters' shops, and spinning and weaving, brickmaking and building houses, together with all the operations of agriculture and gardening, has a wonderful effect on their minds, and will excite all their natural powers to improve their own country. The idea of my visiting them is very gratifying to their minds. At present I spend all the time I can spare with them in conversing with them on all the different subjects that appear necessary for them to be acquainted with, particularly on the subjects of religion, government, and agriculture.

Learn much from Europeans.

1815  
Sept. 20  
Interested in  
agriculture.

I am fully convinced that the chiefs, and particularly Dua-terra and Shunghee, who commands seventeen districts, will apply all their strength to agriculture, if they can obtain hoes and axes.

[Mr. Marsden has since paid this proposed visit.]

---

EXTRACT OF A LETTER FROM THE REV. MR. MARSDEN, SENIOR  
CHAPLAIN OF THE COLONY OF NEW SOUTH WALES, TO THE  
CHURCH MISSIONARY SOCIETY.

Oct. 2.

Parramatta, Oct. 2, 1815.

Goods received  
for missionaries.

I RECEIVED the goods mentioned in your letter for the missionaries at Otaheite, which I will forward the very first opportunity. I should have sent the Active to visit them in September had I not received your packet, by which I learned that your Society was about to send some assistance to the brethern, who are much in want of aid. I therefore sent the Active to New Zealand, with orders to return as soon as possible, hoping that by the time she came back the missionaries would have arrived from Europe; and then I should forward them immediately to join the brethern.

Has sent  
"Active" to  
New Zealand.

The accounts I have received are very satisfactory, as far as the mission is concerned. They have sent me a spelling-book to get printed, and wish to have a thousand copies. I shall have it done immediately. No doubt they will give you every information relative to their wants, and what hope they entertain of success in their labours. I believe much good has been done, and that God has been with them in a very special manner.

Death of Mr.  
Shelley, mission-  
ary.

You will have heard by former letters of the death of Mr. Shelley. He was very desirous of going to the Friendly Islands, where he had resided three years, and begun the work of the mission; but death has ended all his labours.

---

THOS. KENDALL TO SECRETARY CAMPBELL.

Oct. 23.

SIR,—

Bay of Islands, 23rd October, 1815.

I have the honor to receive your letter bearing date 6th Sept. ult., and containing instructions from His Excellency Governor Macquarie respecting runaway convicts.

I am sorry to observe that the five prisoners who were left here by Captains Foldger, Barny, and Parker, as mentioned in my last letter to His Excellency, have all made their escape

from this settlement, and must either be gone into the interior of the country or otherwise have secreted themselves in the brig *Trial*, Captain Hovell, or in the schooner *Brothers*, Captain Burnett, but I conjecture the latter to have been the case.

On the 9th of Sept. I put Sturdy and Mulse, who had been very unruly, on shore, on board the said vessel, under a promise from Captain Hovell that he would either deliver them up to me again before he finally left the island, or take them in the *Brothers* as prisoners to Port Jackson. On the 3rd of October I wrote an official letter to him, requesting him to inform me how many prisoners he could take in the *Brothers*, which I understood would in a few days depart from hence, and on the 4th, as appears by the inclosed note received from Captain Hovell, Mulse and Sturdy made their escape. The other three prisoners—Rogers, Cantwell, and Jones—were missing at the same time.

The people here entertain no doubt but that the prisoners are gone in the *Brothers* or *Trial*, as the sailors belonging to the said vessels had previously proposed to them that Captain Burnett would take them with him if they would volunteer their services, but he was unwilling to take them all as prisoners.

The leg-irons and hand-cuffs mentioned in His Excellency's letter are not received.

I have, &c.,

J. T. Campbell, Esq.

THOS. KENDALL.

[Proceedings of Church Missionary Society, 1817.]

REV. SAMUEL MARSDEN TO REV. J. PRATT (26/10/15).

DEAR SIR,—

Parramatta, Oct. 26th, 1815.

Oct. 26.

I observe in Mr. Kendall's letter, when speaking of the death of Duaterra, that he remarks that Duaterra had imbibed strong prejudices in his mind against the missionaries. These prejudices originated at Port Jackson, just before I sailed with him to New Zealand, from some person or persons, with the most dark and diabolical design, telling Duaterra not to trust us, as our only object was to deprive the New Zealanders of their country, and that as soon as we had gained a footing there we should pour into New Zealand an armed force and take the country to ourselves. To make the impression the deeper, they called his attention to the miserable state of the natives of New South Wales—deprived by the English of their country, and reduced by us to their present wretchedness. This suggestion darted into his mind like a poisoned arrow, destroyed his confidence in Europeans, and alarmed his fears and jealousy for the safety of his country, for which he had the most unbounded love.

Duaterra's prejudices against missionaries.

Caused by false reports made to him at Port Jackson.

1815  
Oct. 26.

On our sailing from Port Jackson I perceived him to be dejected, with a constant melancholy on his countenance. I often enquired what was the cause of his grief, but he cautiously concealed the matter from me, and always evaded giving me a satisfactory answer. I repeatedly pressed him to tell me; and, a little before we arrived in New Zealand, he informed me that he was told at Port Jackson that it was our intention to take his country from him, and that the New Zealanders would be very angry with him if he should be the author of their country being taken and given to the English. I pressed him much to inform me who had told him these things, but no argument that I could use would induce him to tell me. I concluded that he was bound by some solemn promise not to reveal the author of this mischief. I frequently endeavoured to remove his fears, but to no purpose. The poison infused into his mind was too subtle and active ever to be destroyed.

He refused to  
say who told  
him.

Mr. Kendall mentions Warrackie also as having the same fears. He is the chief of whom the settlers purchased the last piece of land. This chief was Duattera's uncle. Warrackie is since dead, and I hope these groundless fears will die with them; and that the persons who thus intended to give a fatal blow to the mission will, by the overruling providence of God, be disappointed, and their wickedness be brought to an end.

Hopes evil in-  
tentions will be  
frustrated.

I have thought it necessary to explain that part of Mr. Kendall's letter which I have mentioned, as it cast a cloud over the character of a very great and extraordinary man, whose memory will long be precious to those who knew him.

I am, &c.,

SAMUEL MARSDEN.

[Museum.

#### MASSACRE OF THE BOYD, 1809.

(Letter from Mr. Kendall to the Church Mission in New Zealand, as given in the *Cork Missionary Miscellany*, 1815.)

Whites' cruelty  
in New Zealand.

"THE people of England, through a natural bias in favour of their own countrymen, can dwell on the cruelties and savage habits of the people of New Zealand. But the time is now arrived when they must hear of the cruelties of men who bear the Christian name among these very savages; and this by official documents, supported and established by respectable witnesses.

"We heard in England with horror of the massacre of Capt. Thompson of the Boyd and his men. I am not disposed to plead in favour of a law which does not discriminate the innocent from the guilty. Yet we were not at that time told the whole of the truth. Previous to this fatal catastrophe, some of our



countrymen had been committing great depredations at New Zealand. The tops of the growing potatoes had been pulled up. The stores had been broken open by force, and the potatoes which the natives greatly valued and wanted, and which they had preserved with such care for their own support until the next potato season, had been violently taken away. This conduct, added to the cruel behaviour of Captain Thompson in flogging a young chief whom he had on board, taking from him the property which he possessed and had procured at Port Jackson, and sending him naked on shore, led to the destruction of the Boyd."

1815

Caused the  
"Boyd"  
revenge.

EXTRACT: DESPATCH FROM EARL BATHURST TO GOVR.  
MACQUARIE.

9th April, 1816.

1816  
April 9.

I HAVE had much satisfaction in observing from Mr. Marsden's account of his residence in New Zealand the improved state of civilization of the natives of that country. The presents which you gave to the chiefs who visited that island have been entirely approved, as tending to conciliate them to British interests, and to secure a more favourable reception in the island to those of His Majesty's subjects who may be disposed to settle or trade there.

Approves pre-  
sents to New  
Zealand chiefs.

The plan of an exclusive trading company to New Zealand submitted in your Dispatch No. 7 is one which I am not disposed to recommend to His Royal Highness's sanction, since I see no advantage likely to result from it in a public point of view which would not be considerably enhanced by the trade being open to competition. If any set of merchants conceive that their own interests will be best consulted by erecting in that island a factory and a permanent mercantile establishment they are certainly at liberty to commence such an undertaking, provided that they obtain the consent of the natives.

Trading com-  
pany thither not  
approved.

But factory,  
&c., may be  
built.

I have, &c.,  
BATHURST.

REV. JOSIAH PRATT TO EARL BATHURST.

Church Missionary House, Salisbury Square,

MY LORD,—

London, June 25th, 1816.

June 25.

As Secretary of the Church Missionary Society, I am directed by the Committee very respectfully to state to Your Lordship that the Society has established, at a very great expense, settlers on the coast of the Bay of Islands in New Zea-

1816

June 25.

Church  
Missionary  
Society  
preparing  
stores, &c., for  
New Zealand.

Wishes to send  
them by  
" Lord  
Melville."

land, with a view to the civilization of the natives and to the ultimate introduction among them of letters and Christianity. and that the Committee are preparing various stores and goods, to be consigned to the Rev. Samuel Marsden, at Parramatta, for the sole use of the said settlers, and not for the purposes of trade.

They do, therefore, very respectfully solicit from your Lordship permission to ship such stores and goods, amounting to about 8 tons, on board the Lord Melville now taken up, as they understand, by Government, as a convict ship for New South Wales ; or on board any other vessel which may be employed on Government service.

I have, &c.,

JOSIAH PRATT, Clerk.

To the Right Honourable the Earl Bathurst, His Majesty's Principal Secretary of State for the Colonial and War Departments, &c., &c.

#### CAPTAIN HAMMONT TO SECRETARY CAMPBELL.

Oct. 4.

SIR,—

Sydney, Oct. 4th, 1816.

Agreeable to your commands, and to the best of my believe, I have subjoined a statement of the unpleasant circumstances attending my leaving this port.

I sail'd from Sydney Cove on the 9th Feby. ; wind N.E. After being at sea some distance I discovered that two men nam'd James Sullivan and William Jones, who had previously entered (but not having a clearance from the Indjin Office from the having detainers against them) were secreted on board the vessel. I experienced much surprise, and on questioning them as to the reasons for secreting themselves, their answer was they were determined on going the voyage although they would not obtain a clearance.

At 10 same evening another man nam'd Patrick Conway was discovered stow'd away among the firewood ; on his coming on deck I questioned him as to his motive in having in such a clandestine manner ; he said he was a runaway sailor from the Nancy, Capt'n. Wallis. I now thought it proper to call my officers and ask them their opinion as to the measures to be pursued, being a stranger in the colony, and unacquainted with the motives that could induce men to such conduct. Their opinion was that, being able to make Port Jackson, to bear for New Zealand, and deliver them to the Resident Magistrate there.

On the 11, being in latde. 36 53 S., I discovered another man nam'd Phillip Hollogan Drogheder. On my calling him aft he produced a certificate of freedom which answered his appearance.

He said his reason for leaving the colony was his embarrassed circumstances.

On 16, at 11 p.m., discovered another man nam'd Morris Fitzgerald stowed away amongst the firewood ; on his appearing on deck he produced a certificate of a free pardon from His Excellency Governor McQuarie, dat'd 3 Novr., 1812.

On 4th March arrived at New Zealand. Reported to the Magistrate my having five runaways on board, and my wish to deliver them into his charge. His answer was he could not receive them unless I would leave six months' provisions for them, but not having such quantity on board to spare without distressing my crew I could not comply with his wishes ; he therefore desired me to return them to Port Jackson.

On 6 March I sail'd from New Zealand with the intent of bringing these men to this port, but from contrary winds I again held a consultation of my officers, who where of opinion it was necessary to have many for the preservation of the ship, in consequence of a heavy gale from W. by N. I continued on till I made the Island of Dominick, one of the Marquesas Islands.

On 9 May, at 5 a.m., sail'd from Dominick ; the five runaways made their escape during the preceding night.

At 7 a.m. hove to ; sent the boat with two trinkets and other trade as a present to the chief, hoping to induce him to find the men and deliver them into my care, but having run for the woods could not be found. . . .

I have, &c.,

THOS. HAMMONT.

To John Thomas Campbell, Secry.

---

GOVERNOR MACQUARIE TO EARL BATHURST.

Government House, Sydney, N. S. Wales,

1st April, 1817.

MY LORD,—

Herewith I take the liberty of transmitting for Your Lordship's perusal and favourable consideration a memorial addressed to me by a very ingenious man named Robert Williams, rope-maker, in Sydney, on the subject of manufacturing the New Zealand flax or hemp into cordage and sail cloth for exportation to England and the other British dominions from this colony.

From my knowledge of the character of Robert Williams, and observation of the several specimens of this manufacture he has frequently produced at Sydney, I entertain not the least doubt of the statement made by him in his memorial being per-

1816  
Oct. 4.

1817  
April 1.

Manufacture of  
New Zealand  
flax by R. Wil-  
liams.

1817  
April 1.  
—

Must establish a  
settlement  
there.

Advantages  
outweigh  
expense.

Sends specimens  
of manufactured  
flax.

fectly correct, and that he is competent—if he had the required assistance—to fulfil all the promises held out by him in his memorial; but to enable him to do so, and to carry this branch of manufacture on with a certain prospect of success, it would be necessary to afford him sufficient protection from the eventual hostility of the natives of New Zealand, by the establishment of a British settlement there, with a small detachment of troops. How far Your Lordship would deem this good policy it is not for me to say; but I do not at present see that it would be attended with any bad consequences, except in regard to the expence of maintaining such a settlement, tho' I am inclined to think, if this manufacture proved successful, the advantages to be derived from it to the Mother Country would more than counterbalance any expence the establishment of a small British settlement in New Zealand would cost the Crown. I therefore take the liberty of submitting this measure to Your Lordship's most favourable consideration.

I do myself the honor to send Your Lordship, by this same conveyance, a box addressed to Your Lordship, containing several specimens of the New Zealand flax or hemp, prepared and manufactured in Sydney by Robert Williams—and alluded to in his memorial—from viewing and examining which Your Lordship will be able to form a tolerable good judgment of his art, and of the utility he attaches to this branch of manufacture.

- I have, &c.,

L. MACQUARIE.

The Right Honorable Earl Bathurst, Downing Street, London.

[Enclosure.]

TO HIS EXCELLENCY GOVERNOR MACQUARIE, ETC., ETC.

THE memorial of Robert Williams, ropemaker, most respectfully sets forth,—

Re manufacture  
of New Zealand  
hemp.

That memorialist having presented to Your Excellency specimens of his manufactory from the hemp, the growth of New Zealand, such as never before has been produced by any other person, tho' numerous have been the attempts since the establishment of this colony, and immense labour and large sums have been expended by Government and enterprizing merchants to no effect, its singular method of manufacture having disappointed the efforts of all former artists and mechanics. And this valuable plant rested in oblivion, tho' its productions were high in demand and an object of importance to the British Government. Memorialist humbly trusts Your Excellency is



well informed of his experience and ability in manufacturing the hemp of New Zealand, and his having visited that island for the express purpose of ascertaining the growth, extent, and method of collecting it; and the information acquired on that excursion and several years' experimental practice in manufacturing has enabled memorialist to lay the following statement before Your Excellency; and humbly trusts you will consider it an object worthy the notice of the British Government.

1817  
April 1.

Visited island to investigate its growth, &c.

The production of this plant has been an object of attention since the first knowledge of New Zealand, and from its silky appearance has borne the name of flax, but experienced judges will find it hemp of an excellent quality, adapted for cordage and canvas, which the sample sent herewith will testify. Mechanics in England have given their opinion that this hemp could not be manufactured, and was of no value. Memorialist feels no surprise at such report, having experienced difficulties innumerable in introducing his system of manufacturing this hemp, but he trusts the production will prove its value and vie with English manufacture. And memorialist states further his capability to perform every process of manufacturing with more speed than it is performed on such manufacture in England.

Suitable for cordage and canvas.

Great difficulties in manufacturing it.

Memorialist further states that the process of watering, brakeing, and cleaning is so different to the process on hemp and flax in Europe; persons well informed in that business will be surprised to hear that this hemp may be cut from the plant in the morning and manufactured into cordage the same day, and that the average labour of ten men and five boys will produce one ton of hemp per day in equal preparation to hemp imported from Russia.

Ten men and five boys produce 1 ton of hemp per day.

Memorialist begs leave to observe that the hemp grows spontaneously in great abundance; that he travelled thro' tracts abounding with hemp several miles in circumference, the hemp covering the surface from two to six feet in height. There are several qualities of hemp, according to the situation of the land. Among the rocks in view from the sea it grows from six to ten feet high—this is the most productive, and best adapted for making cables.

Its abundance and quality.

From one stool or root I cut 84 blades, which produced ten pounds of nett hemp (nine feet long when cleaned). This production did not cover a circumference of land more than three feet diameter. This will give an idea to what extent this hemp may be collected from the natural production, exclusive of propagation by transplanting, which may be carried to any extent by the following moderate simple means and expence.

1817

April 1.

Plant is hardy  
and grows in  
stools.

May be  
gathered in any  
month.

The plant is very hardy, grows in large stools. I have divided thirty distinct roots from one stool, and one of those sections or roots have laid exposed for several days in hot sun and wind, and have been then planted; and 18 months afterwards that plant produced nine, which I transplanted, and in eight months those nine plants produced eight pounds of nett hemp; and the following year trebled that quantity. I have endeavoured to distinguish the proper season of cutting the hemp, but find little difference in that respect, and am of opinion it may be gathered every month in the year, and the hemp of equal quality if cut in succession.

From this statement it will appear upon a moderate calculation in a few years every yard of land in New Zealand will produce six pounds of hemp annually. And this may be performed by the natives, if instructed and encouraged, which may be accomplished by very moderate means.

The plant requires no cultivation except to extend and propagate it. A piece of land planted, the plants three feet from each other, would be united in one mass in three years, and thrive equally well, and need no further attention.

Could supply  
large quantities.

Should His Majesty's Government think it wise to promote and encourage the growth and receive the hemp in British markets, these islands would in a few years render a general supply for manufacturing and naval purposes, exclusive of New Zealand. The plants may be extended to most of the islands in these seas. The plants may be stowed in bulk in small vessels, and a voyage of several weeks would not injure them. The plant produces seed in great abundance, but very different to the plant of a very tender nature, and requires great care and attention to bring it to perfection, and no dependance to be placed on it on a large scale. On the other hand, the plant is certain, and may be had to any extent.

Plants from  
seed are very  
tender.

Memorialist has cautiously calculated the expence and labour required to perfect this undertaking, as well as the distant situation from Europe, and feels confident the natural production and great abundance of the plant, and the simple means required to prepare it for the British market, must prove advantageous to the trade and manufacture of Britain, and likewise prove an article of commerce from the colony.

Could be  
assisted by  
natives.

Memorialist has calculated the undertaking almost independent of the natives, but by proper application few Europeans will be required in preparing the hemp for manufacture, if independent of the natives. Small establishments must be formed for protection, if dependent on the natives. Nature supplies the plant, and every other means to provide the hemp for a British market.

The natives are a hardy people, destitute of any of the comforts of life except a scanty allowance of food and clothing ; they are naturally ingenious, and want little inducement to industry except the example, with their interest in view.

1817  
April 1.

They are hardy and ingenious.

Memorialist's system of cleaning the hemp are by means of machinery principally constructed of wood, and worked by water, all which means are generally found by nature on the spot. The machinery is simple, and five carpenters and one blacksmith would erect machinery in three months that would employ a thousand of the natives, and one month's instruction to them they would be able to furnish immense quantities of hemp to such vessels as may be appointed to call for it. In this case the natives would gladly receive this information from the persons appointed, and likewise dispose of their hemp on very moderate terms in exchange for articles of British production, and custom would soon improve their barbarous habits of life.

Would dispose of hemp on moderate terms.

Memorialist humbly submits to Your Excellency's consideration his exertions to introduce the New Zealand hemp were at a time when that article was greatly in demand in the Mother Country, the original supplies being nearly cut off by the effects of war, and encouragement held out to most of the British Dominions.

Exclusive of such encouragements, he had a hope of introducing the hemp to the use of this colony, which has been in great distress for cordage. But divided parties have attempted the object without applying the proper means, and not in possession of the proper method, under which circumstances the object rests until more favourable arrangements, to be conducted under one principle and interest, otherwise nothing of importance can be effected.

Others have failed to make use of it.

Memorialist most respectfully prays Your Excellency's patronage and support in transmitting the specimens of this manufacture to His Majesty's Ministers, with such testimonies and recommendation as Your Excellency may think his exertions have merited.

Begs Governor's patronage and support.

And memorialist will ever pray.

ROBERT WILLIAMS.

Sydney, New South Wales, 1st April, 1817.

---

[The *Missionary Register*, December, 1818.

REV. S. MARSDEN TO THE CHURCH MISSIONARY SOCIETY.

Parramatta, May 2, 1817.

May 2.

THE "Active" sailed from Port Jackson on the 18th of last month, with Messrs. Carlisle and Gordon, and their families. Six

Sailing of Carlisle and Gordon.



1817

May 2.

Sends cattle  
over to breed.

New Zealanders, some of whom had been at Parramatta nearly a year and a half, accompanied them. I sent six head of horned cattle at the same time, as the introduction of cattle among the natives will be a great object to that country, and should any number of Europeans, at any future period, live among the native inhabitants, they will find them of the first importance.

A cow in this colony would have sold, since I resided in it, for one hundred pounds. Government have been at a very heavy expense in bringing cattle from India, the Cape, and even from England, to this colony. I was so fully sensible of the incalculable advantages that cattle would be of to New Zealand that I determined to send some for breeding; and I shall, therefore, from time to time send a few over, till there be a sufficient quantity to breed from. Milk, butter, beef, and labour these cattle will soon produce to the inhabitants; and if the number of settlers should be increased, they will greatly promote their support and comfort.

Prospect of  
civilising of  
New Zealand.

I hope and pray that this object may succeed, and that New Zealand may soon become a civilized nation. I see no difficulties in the way, so far as the heathen themselves are concerned. If those who are employed in the work will only do their duty honestly and faithfully, the work must prosper, whatever opposition may be raised against it. The greatest enemies of the Gospel must acknowledge that the natives of New Zealand are prepared for any instruction which the civilized world will bestow upon them, as they possess both talent and inclination for improvement.

I believe that the time is now come for these nations to be called into the outward church, at least. The way is clear; and Divine Goodness will provide the means for their instruction. I admit that many difficulties will be met with on all untried ground; and that the wisest men will sometimes mistake in their views of accomplishing their objects with respect to a nation which has had no intercourse with the civilized world: yet these difficulties will be overcome, under the blessing of God, by constant perseverance; and I have no doubt but that this will be the case in the present instance with regard to New Zealand. Time will make this matter more easy. The work is now begun: the foundation is now laid: and I hope we shall soon see the structure rise.

Agriculture the  
main object.

I have directed Mr. Gordon to apply himself wholly to agriculture till the settlement is independent of this colony for bread; and till they have it in their power to give a little bread to a hungry native, and to feed the children in the school. When the chiefs come to understand the value of wheat, which they will soon do, the inhabitants will then turn from the habits of war to the pursuits of agriculture; which will supply all their wants,



and will check that warlike spirit which they now possess. Those who have been at Parramatta, and have seen the advantage of bread, often tell me what they will do when they return to their home. I shall greatly rejoice to hear that they have turned their attention to agriculture. They have taken over with them fruit-trees of various kinds; and have already got peaches in perfection. I think vines would do well, from the nature of the soil and climate. I shall, from time to time, send over different plants, as they may be useful at some future day.

1817  
May 2.  
Prospects of  
native agri-  
culture.

---

GOVERNOR MACQUARIE TO EARL BATHURST.

New South Wales, Government House,

MY LORD,—

Sydney, 15th May, 1817.

May 15.

A long attention to, and serious consideration of the commercial and shipping interests of this colony, and an anxious desire to promote them, as well for the sake of the colony itself, as with a view to the eventually relieving the Mother Country from a portion of that burthen she now bears, in consequence of the few means hitherto possessed by this country to lessen its weight, have convinced me that the imposts or duties laid here on articles the produce of the South Sea Islands, or surrounding seas, are as impolitic in principle as they have been proved by the experience of several years to be unproductive in revenue.

Duties on  
South Sea  
produce.

The duties to which I allude are those on sandal wood, pearl shells, beche-de-mer, fish oil, seal, and kangaroo skins, all of which articles (the last excepted) being collected at a weighty expense in the outfit of the necessary shipping, and principally with a view to re-exportation to England or China, the subjecting them when brought hither to a weighty impost as at present renders it impossible for our merchants to send them to England on such advantageous terms as to hold out sufficient encouragement for them to persevere in the trade; and the consequence has been that the spirit of enterprize which prompted the merchants of Sydney a few years ago to equip vessels for the trade of these seas has been declining, and is likely to decline still further unless some relief be extended to it.

Unwise to levy  
them.

Cripples trade  
with England.

It is to be observed that at present this country is not so unfortunate as to furnish almost any one article of its own growth or produce worthy of export, and the consequence has been that its efforts to obtain exports have been turned to the procuring the oil, skins, shells, &c., which the surrounding seas and South Sea Islands produce, but then being taxed here, and afterwards on importation into England, the profits of the trade are unequal to the support of it.

No exports from  
New South  
Wales.

1817  
May 15.  
Duties re-  
mitted on  
exports.

Would make no  
difference to  
revenue.

On these grounds, my Lord, I conceive that the entire duty chargeable on the articles alluded to should be confined solely to that portion of them which may be consumed here, and that a draw-back of the duty should be allowed on what is re-exported.

This measure, would hold out a considerable encouragement to the trade and would not be felt in the amount of the revenue, for the weight of the duties at present acts nearly as a prohibition to it, and I therefore beg to recommend to Your Lordship's superior judgment the expediency of authorizing a draw-back on all the articles enumerated in the accompanying schedule to be made on being re-shipped for another market.

I have, &c.,

L. MACQUARIE.

The Right Honorable Earl Bathurst, His Majesty's Principal Secretary of State for the Colonies, &c., &c.

Scale of duties.

The following duties to be levied and collected by the Naval Officer on the articles named upon their arrival and landing, whether for colonial consumption or re-shipment :—

|   | £ | s. | d. |
|---|---|----|----|
| On each ton of sandal wood ..           | 2 | 10 | 0  |
| On each ton of pearl shells ..          | 2 | 10 | 0  |
| On each ton of beech-le-mer ..          | 5 | 0  | 0  |
| On each ton of sperm oil (252 galls) .. | 2 | 10 | 0  |
| On each ton of black whale or other oil | 2 | 0  | 0  |
| On each fur seal skin ..                | 0 | 0  | 1½ |
| On each hair do. ..                     | 0 | 0  | 0½ |
| On each kangaroo do. ..                 | 0 | 0  | 0½ |

(True copy.)

JNO. THOS. CAMPBELL, Secy.

#### MEMORIAL OF W. MORERAN.

Oct. 23.

To His Excellency Lachlan Macquarie, Esq., Governor and Commander in Chief in and over the Territory of New South Wales and its Dependancies, &c., &c.

THE humble petition of William Moreran most humbly sheweth—

That your petitioner, having, through Your Excellency's clemency, obtained an emancipation, and being by calling a seaman, is desirous of obtaining his living in that way, Mr. Isaac Nicholls wishing to engage with your petitioner to go to Macquarie Island in procuring skins and oil, and petitioner being

some time since engaged in Mr. Blaxcell's brig *Cumberland*, obtained Your Excellency's leave for that purpose, he again most humbly prays Your Excellency will be pleased to allow him to proceed on the present voyage, as your petitioner as no other means to support himself.

And your petitioner will, as in duty bound, ever pray, &c., &c.

The above petitioner have engaged himself to proceed in my brig *Endeavour*, provided it meets His Excellency the Governor's approbation.

ISAAC NICHOLLS.

Sydney, 7th October, 1817.

In the absence of His Excellency the Governor, I approve.

JAMES E. N. HIRN, L. Governor.

Sidney, Oct. 28th, '17.

1817  
Oct. 28.

# MEMORIAL OF THE COMMITTEE OF THE CHURCH OF ENGLAND MISSIONARY SOCIETY.

[The memorial bears no date, but it was made out in the year 1817.]

To the Right Honourable Earl Bathurst, His Majesty's Principal Secretary of State for the Department of the Colonies, &c.

THE memorial of the Committee of the Church of England Missionary Society for Africa and the East humbly sheweth,—

That the Church Missionary Society has been engaged for years in endeavouring to propagate the knowledge of the Christian religion among the idolatrous nations of Africa and the East, and thereby to promote their civilization, as well as their spiritual and eternal welfare.

That in the prosecution of these designs the Society has directed its attention to the inhabitants of the islands of the South Seas, and especially to those of New Zealand, whose active and intelligent character appeared to offer a favourable field for their exertions. In the course of the year 1814, having obtained a grant of land from one of the chiefs of the country, the Society established a settlement in the Bay of Islands in New Zealand, at which three missionary settlers, with their families, have been since resident.

Society's work  
in Africa, &c.

Settled in New  
Zealand in 1814.

That the efforts of these settlers, as far as it has been possible hitherto to extend them, have been attended with most encouraging success. They have found the natives in the vicinity of a frank and affectionate character, desirous to cultivate their friendship, and to receive instruction, and the Society entertain a confident hope that by the establishment of schools

Their efforts  
have been  
successful.

1817

Hope to  
Christianize and  
civilise the  
country.

and by other means of instruction they shall in due time be enabled, under the Divine blessing, to diffuse the knowledge of Christianity throughout this populous and benighted land, and to rescue a noble race of men from the horrible superstitions and savage customs by which they are now degraded. The Society feels warranted also to hope that its exertions will tend in other ways to meliorate the condition of the islanders. Their settlers have already introduced among them the cultivation of wheat and other grain, and a foundation may perhaps be thus laid for the agricultural improvement of this fertile and productive country, which may hereafter render it not an unimportant object of commercial attention.

Atrocities  
committed by  
European  
traders.

That the hopes which your memorialists thus entertain have been greatly checked by the intelligence continually received by them of the atrocities committed by the European traders in the South Seas, by which not only the most grievous injuries are inflicted on the natives, but their minds are exasperated to acts of barbarous revenge, all tendency to a milder and more civilized character is repressed, confidence in the character and designs of the European settlers is weakened, and the lives of themselves and their families are seriously endangered.

Documents  
annexed.

That your memorialists have received various documents from time to time from New South Wales, copies of some of which they hereunto annex, and to which they beg permission to refer Your Lordship, for proof of the numerous crimes, which are and have been for several years frequently perpetrated by the Europeans in those seas, and of which proof is established not only by private communications but by Judicial depositions and by General Orders issued by the Colonial Government. To a few of the more flagrant of these transactions your memorialists will beg leave shortly to advert.

Natives greatly  
ill used on  
"Boyd."

Crew  
murdered in  
revenge.

In the year 1810 the ship *Boyd* sail'd from Port Jackson to Whangaroa in New Zealand with some natives on board, one of them the son of the head chief of the place. These persons were very ill used during the voyage. The young chief, who had fallen sick and was unable to work as a sailor, was severely flogged, treated with great indignity, and sent on shore, lacerated with stripes. When the treatment which he had received became known to his friends and people it roused them to fury; they seized the ship, and put the captain and all the crew to death. Soon after this Tippiabee, a chief belonging to the Bay of Islands, and who was well known and respected at Port Jackson, was accused of having been concerned in the massacre. In consequence of this report, the whalers, who were on the coast, manned and armed seven boats, landed on the island of



Tippahee, and shot every man, woman, and child that came in their way. Tippahee was severely wounded. It has since been ascertained that this chief (who was accidentally at Whangaroa when the Boyd was cut off) so far from being guilty of the crime imputed to him, he exerted himself to save the lives of the crew. His people must have been known to be guiltless, for their territory was forty miles distant from Whangaroa; yet thus have the unoffending inhabitants of a whole island been exterminated by a lawless act of private vengeance. (See Appendix, No. 1.)

1817

Tippahee falsely  
accused of  
being concerned  
in it.

A year or two before this the captain of an English ship which was sailing by one of the islands fired, without any provocation, five or six large guns, loaded with grape shot, among a multitude of natives, men, women, and children, who were assembled on the beach to look at the vessel, and killed and wounded several of them. When remonstrated with for this act of wanton barbarity he only said it was necessary to strike terror into the minds of these natives, and convince them of what power we possessed. (No. 2.)

Shot fired  
without  
provocation.

In 1812 the schooner Parramatta put into the Bay of Islands, in distress, for provisions and water. She was supplied by the natives with potatoes, pork, and fish to the extent of their wants, and when they required payment they were thrown overboard, fired at, and wounded. The schooner immediately weighed anchor, but was soon after driven on shore in a storm, and the islanders revenged themselves by putting the crew to death. (No. 3.)

Barbarity of  
crew of  
"Parramatta."

In the same year the brig Daphne was off the Island of Riemattera when eighteen natives came off in three canoes with fruit; they were invited on board, behaved in the most friendly and respectful manner, and delivered their cargoes of supplies, for which they received a trifling remuneration. The captain then ordered the crew to turn them out of the ship; this was done in the most barbarous manner; they were beaten with ropes to force them over the sides of the ship into the sea; they swam to their canoes, which were swamped, and fourteen of them were drowned within sight of the brig. (No. 4.)

Also of  
"Daphne,"  
causing death  
of fourteen  
natives.

The settlers sent by your memorialists to the Bay of Islands had been established there only a few months when a dreadful slaughter and massacre of the natives by Europeans took place in the vicinity, by which the infant settlement was thrown into great alarm and peril, and a stop put to the erection of necessary buildings there by persons who had been sent out by your memorialists, at great expense, from Port Jackson, for that purpose, but who refused to continue in the settlement from apprehension of their lives. (No. 5.)

Settlement in  
great peril.

1817

Further  
depredations.

That your memorialists will not dwell on the various instances in which potatoe grounds (the chief culture of these islands) have been destroyed, and the produce stolen; in which the property of the natives has been forcibly taken or fraudulently obtained, under pretence of purchase, and no equivalent given; in which their chiefs have been imprisoned and ill treated in order to extort a ransom; and all these misdeeds too often accompanied by circumstances of wanton cruelty. (Nos. 6, 7, 8.)

That in a recent case proceedings have been instituted at Port Jackson against the captain of a trading vessel for acts of oppression and cruelty against the chiefs and other natives of one of the Marquesas Islands, in which after a full investigation a conviction took place on the whole of the charges; but the party convicted has escaped with impunity, on account of the inadequacy of the powers vested in the Magistrates to punish the offence. (No. 9.)

No power in  
New South  
Wales to punish  
offenders.

That your memorialists are informed that there is no competent jurisdiction in New South Wales for the cognizance and punishment of such offences as have been enumerated, nor any adequate means for their prevention; and that no remedy at present exists but sending persons charged with the perpetration of such enormities to be tried at the Admiralty Sessions in England.

Can only be  
tried in  
England.

That in the recent conviction before stated the party found guilty not only departed from Port Jackson with impunity, but was not even held to bail to appear before any Sessions in England.

That even the establishment of a tribunal with adequate power of punishment in New South Wales would not in all cases be effectual to remedy the evil, since it frequently happens that the vessels whose captains and crews have committed these atrocities do not return thither, and that some further measure seems therefore requisite for the protection of the islanders, and the prevention of the crimes by which the moral character of Great Britain is degraded by the conduct of her subjects trading in those seas.

That, in consequence of the want at present of any sufficient provision by colonial tribunals or otherwise for the prevention or the punishment of crimes committed in the islands of the South Seas, your memorialists submit that not only the lives of the missionaries and settlers in those islands are exposed to the most imminent hazard, but that all endeavors to extend the blessings of Christianity and civilization among the natives must thereby be in a great measure frustrated, and the reasonable hope of advantage which might be derived therefrom even to our own country is destroyed.

Lives of  
missionaries and  
settlers in  
danger,And hopes of  
advantage  
destroyed.

Your memorialists therefore, while they would not take upon themselves to suggest how far it may be requisite to investigate the criminal acts already committed, and to bring the perpetrators of them to justice, do yet, and humbly, pray Your Lordship to take the matters contained in this memorial into your earliest and most serious consideration, and to devise such measures for remedying the evils therein stated, and for preventing the recurrence of similar enormities as in Your Lordship's wisdom shall appear expedient.

1817

Begs evils may  
be remedied.

## APPENDIX.

(No. 1.)

*Extract of a Letter from Revd. S. Marsden to Revd. Josiah Pratt, Secretary to the Church Missionary Society, dated Parramatta, 25th Oct., 1810.*

I have three New Zealanders now living with me, one of whom was at New Zealand when the loss of the Boyd took place. According to this man's statement, the captain of the Boyd took four New Zealanders from Port Jackson, one of whom was the son of a chief of that part of the island to which the Boyd went for spars; that he flogged them all on the passage. When they arrived the son of the chief (who was very ill used) complained to his father of the cruelties that had been exercised on him and his companions. The old chief and one of his sons named *Tippahooee* determined immediately on revenging the injuries that had been done to his son and subjects by taking the ship and murdering all the crew, which they effected. Our friend *Tippahee* happened to arrive with a cargo of fish (which he owed to the chief of that part) just at the time that the business had taken place. Five men had run up into the rigging to save themselves. *Tippahee* told them to come down and come to his canoe, and he would save them. The sailors did so, and he took them on shore immediately, but was followed by the enraged party, and overpowered, and all the men murdered. *Tippahee* did all he could to save our countrymen, but was afterwards shot thro' the neck, and many of his subjects killed, by parties from the whalers, and the whole of the houses on his island destroyed.

Natives ill used  
on "Boyd."

Ship taken and  
crew murdered  
in revenge.

*Tippahee* tried  
to save them.

*The Deposition of John Besant relative to the Loss of the Boyd.*

Being duly sworn, deposes: That he arrived in the King George at the Bay of Islands in March, 1812. That in consequence of the master treating some of the New Zealanders ill,

1817

Captain flogged  
chief's son.

Crew murdered  
whilst collecting  
spars.

he, the deponent, was apprehensive the ship would be cut off: and, judging it safer to go on shore and live with the natives, he left the ship, and remained on the place twelve months during his residence among the natives. He received the following account of the loss of the Boyd from one of the chief's sons, who spoke English very well, having been on board the Star, Capt. Wilkinson, two voyages: When the Star sailed from Port Jackson to England, Capt. Wilkinson got Capt. Thompson, master of the Boyd, to take the chief and his companions on board the Boyd, under a promise of landing them at New Zealand, as he was bound there for spars; that the chief's son informed deponent that Captain Thompson had tied him up in the rigging, and flogged him, and kept all his things; that after the Boyd had arrived in the port of New Zealand he was flogged in the harbour, and sent on shore immediately; that the natives had procured a considerable part of the cargo of spars before the chief was flogged (which spars the deponent saw with the wreck of the Boyd when he was at New Zealand); after Captain Thompson had flogged the chief and taken his things, the natives would render no further assistance in procuring the spars, nor go near the ship; that Captain Thompson landed the ship's company to get the spars themselves, leaving only two men on board besides the passengers; on his landing, Tipphooke, a principal chief of Marygohroo, went up to Captain Thompson, told him that he had flogged his son, and that he would kill him, and immediately knocked him on the head with an axe, and the rest of the crew were immediately murdered. He farther informed this deponent that Tippahee, the then chief of the Bay of Islands, and his people were not concerned in the destruction of the Boyd.

his  
JOHN X BESANT.  
mark

Sworn before Saml. Marsden, Justice of Peace, Novr. 10, 1813.

(No. 2.)

*The Deposition of Mr. James Elder.*

James Elder, being first duly sworn before the Revd. Saml. Marsden, one of His Majesty's Justices of the Peace, deposes: That in the year 1807 the ship General Wellesley, Captain Dalrymple, touched at Otaheita, in which island this deponent was then resident, when Capn. Dalrymple requested deponent to go with him as interpreter in a cruise to the Palazeers and other islands, to ascertain what quantity of beech le mar and pearl shells could be obtained. To this requisition deponent gave his consent, and went with Capn. Dalrymple accordingly.



Was six weeks among the islands, and minutely explored nine of them, and was finally leaving them and coming past the end of one of them, called the Prince of Wales's Island, about sunset, with a light breeze and the vessel under sail; four or five hundred of the natives, composed of men, women, and children, came down on the beach to look at the ship as she passed; the captain, wantonly, barbarously, and without the least provocation whatever (as we had no communication with this island or the natives), fired five or six large guns amongst them, laden with grape shot. The deponent remonstrated with the captain before he fired the gun, and endeavoured to persuade him from such a wanton act of cruelty and inhumanity, but he paid no attention to his remonstrance, but observed it was necessary to strike terror into the minds of these natives, and to convince them what power we possessed. Perhaps he would have fired more guns than the number already stated had not one of his sailors, while loading a gun which had not been spunged, had his arm blown off near the shoulder, which occasioned his death. The captain showed no inclination to cease firing till the sailor had lost his arm. Some months after some of the natives visited Otaheita, and informed the deponent that several of the natives were killed and several wounded at the time Captain Dalrymple fired so wantonly on them.

1817

Captain fired or natives without provocation.

To strike terror into their minds.

(No. 3.)

*The Deposition of James Besent, relative to the Loss of the Parramatta, Schooner.*

Being duly sworn before Revd. Saml. Marsden, one of His Majesty's Justices of the Peace, deposes: That he arrived in March, 1812, at the Bay of Islands, in the King George (a ship belonging to Port Jackson); that he resided on the island twelve months, and that during his residence there he received the following account relative to the loss of the Parramatta, schooner: That the Parramatta, schooner, after leaving Port Jackson, put into the Bay of Islands in distress for want of provisions and water. The natives supplied them with pork, fish, and potatoes, as many as the vessel could stow. After the schooner had received her refreshments the natives waited to be paid for them. The people belonging to the schooner threw the natives overboard, and fired at them, and immediately weighed anchor. Deponent saw three of the natives who had been wounded with small shot by the crew of the Parramatta, schooner. A heavy gale of wind coming on immediately, which set into the harbour, blew the vessel on shore between Cape Brett and Terras district, where the remains of the wreck

Supplied with provisions and water.

Threw natives overboard and fired at them.

1817

Vessel blown on  
shore and crew  
murdered.

laid when the deponent was at New Zealand. After the vessel was wrecked the natives revenged themselves on the crew for firing at them and defrauding them of their provisions, and cut them all off.

(No. 4.)

*The Deposition of Abraham Hendricke (confirmed by the Depositions of John Jones, Thomas French, and John Randall).*

Deposition of  
Hendricke re  
"Daphne."

Natives brought  
fruit.

Turned out of  
ship, and four-  
teen drowned.

All duly sworn before Revd. Saml. Marsden, one of His Majesty's Justices of the Peace, deposes: That he, Abraham Hendricke, was, together with the other above named deponents, on board the brig Daphne (Michael Flodyer, master), and sailed from Port Jackson in September, 1812; that when they made an island called Reematterra three very small canoes came off to the ship, and eighteen natives; the canoes were so small that the natives were obliged to swim alongside them; they brought some fruit, bananas, yams, and plantains. The captain invited them on board. They quitted their canoes, let them adrift, and came on board. These natives appeared as if they never before had seen white people; they addressed the Europeans with the greatest reverence; fell down; clasped and kissed their feet. They got a small bit of iron hoop and a pearl shell each for the fruits. Their canoes were swamp'd alongside. The brig was standing out to sea; it blew fresh; the land was about seven miles distant. The captain ordered the mate to turn these islanders out of the ship, which was done in a very cruel manner; they were beat with a rope's end, turned over the side, and while hanging to the ship their hands were beaten. They then swam to their canoes, which were already swamp'd, and fourteen out of eighteen were drowned at a short distance from the vessel. And this deponent remonstrated with the captain, saying these men would be drowned unless they were assisted; and upon a tack being made towards where the canoes were, it was too late, they having been drowned.

(No. 5.)

*Extract of a Letter from Revd. S. Marsden to Revd. Josh. Pratt, Secretary, dated November 6, 1815.*

Natives cruelly  
used by colonial  
vessels.

Five sailors and  
100 natives  
killed.

I am sorry to inform you that the colonial vessels, as well as some of the whalers, treat the natives exceedingly ill, and may greatly endanger the lives of the settlers at the Bay of Islands. From the best information that I am able to obtain, it appears that the last colonial vessel must have committed the most dreadful crimes on the coast of New Zealand. Five men belonging to the vessel were killed in the quarrels they had with the natives, and

1817

from their own account not less than one hundred of the natives. This happened not far from the River Thames, an account of which had reached the settlers in the Bay of Islands, and has greatly distressed and alarmed them. After this affair the vessel touched at the Bay of Islands, on her return to Port Jackson, and it is more than probable would have been cut off there, for the crimes they had committed, had not the Active been lying in the harbour, and the settlers there. The natives of the Bay of Islands were much offended with the Europeans who had murdered so many of their countrymen. But it is in vain for me to attempt to bring any of these men to justice; nothing can be done, except the British Parliament will take into consideration the unprotected state of both the missionaries and natives in all the islands in these seas. The Europeans may, and at present do, commit every crime with impunity, and there is no law either to restrain or punish them. The natives have no means but to repel force by force.

(No. 6.)

(See Nos. 7 and 8, end of Appendix, for General Orders.)

The Government and General Orders, under dates of 1st December, 1813, and 9th November, 1814, will shew that the masters and crews of vessels trading on the coast of New Zealand were guilty of gross frauds and violence in their traffick with the natives. To which may be added the following extract from the journal of Revd. Samuel Marsden: "I told them (some of the principal chiefs) that Mr. Barnes, master of the Jefferson, whaler, when at Port Jackson had informed me that they had acted treacherously towards him, in attempting to cut off two boats belonging to the Jefferson when she was last at the North Cape, in company with the King George. I told them I was much concerned to hear these reports, as that if they continued to act in this manner no European vessel would visit them. In reply to this they stated that the masters of the Jefferson and King George had in the first instance behaved ill to them. They had agreed to give 150 baskets of potatoes and eight hogs for a musket. The potatoes and hogs were delivered, and divided between the two vessels, after which the Otaheitan and one of the chiefs went on board the King George for the musket, which was delivered; at the same time the master of the King George demanded more potatoes and hogs. The chief was detained on board, and the Otaheitan was sent on shore for more potatoes and hogs. The head chief said he had fulfilled the agreement for the musket by the 150 baskets of potatoes and eight hogs, and he would give no more. The chief that was detained on board

Government and General Orders.

Extract from Marsden's journal.

Breach of contract by "Jefferson" and "King George."

1817

Chief and  
Otaheitan kept  
prisoners.

the King George was the head chief's brother, and was at this time on board the *Active*. The Otaheitan was sent on board the King George to tell the master that no more potatoes and hogs would be given, and to request him to release the chief whom he had unjustly detained. This the master refused to do, and kept the Otaheitan a prisoner also. In two or three days they were both put on board the *Jefferson*. There they remained three or four days, till they were ransomed at 170 baskets of potatoes and five hogs. The people on shore were greatly enraged, and alarmed for the safety of their chief, as the vessels were out of sight some time. After the potatoes and hogs were delivered two boats were sent on shore, with the Otaheitan and the chief. Great numbers of the natives assembled on the shore to receive them. They were no sooner landed than the natives fired upon the boats; and I have no doubt but they would have massacred the people at the moment if they could, for their fraud and cruelty. The Otaheitan told me it was impossible to restrain the people from firing upon the boats. The chief spoke with great warmth and indignation at the treatment he had received. I assured them that both King George and Governor Macquarie would punish any act of fraud and cruelty committed by the Europeans, whenever they were informed of them."

Natives angry  
at this treat-  
ment.

Potatoes stolen  
by Captain of  
"Mercury."

Jacob Williams states upon oath before Revd. Saml. Marsden, one of His Majesty's Justices of the Peace, 19 November, 1813: That he was a seaman on board the *Mercury*, schooner, and was ordered by Capn. Walker, master of the *Mercury* (together with Mr. Dillon and another sailor), to go on shore at the Bay of Islands to steal potatoes from the potatoe grounds belonging to the natives; that they did land after dark, and Capn. Walker with them; that they went into the potatoe ground and tore them up—they were quite young and not fit to gather; that they pulled up a great many roots, but got very few potatoes.

### (No. 9.)

Trial of Capt.  
Martin, of  
"Queen  
Charlotte."

From an attested copy of proceedings held before the Bench of Magistrates on 20 December, 1815, and continued by adjournment until 6 January, 1816, it appears that Mr. John Martin, master of the *Queen Charlotte*, brig, stood charged by the Revd. Saml. Marsden, as agent for the London and Church Missionary Societies, with various acts of cruelty and oppression towards the chiefs and other natives of the Island of Santa Christiana on a late voyage thither.

Three charges  
by Revd. S.  
Marsden.

These charges were—First, with ordering, on or about the 28th July, 1815, some war-canoes to be brought off by force



1817

from the Island of Santa Christiana, and afterwards taking them away and selling them at other islands. Secondly, for ordering several chiefs to be confined in the hold of the Queen Charlotte on the above mentioned period, and placing over them an armed guard, by which act of violence they were deprived of their liberty, and put in bodily fear. Thirdly, for compelling, with loaded muskets, a number of natives who had been brought off in the war-canoes to leap into the sea, and struggle for life in the best manner they were able, after the war-canoes were fastened to the stern of the Queen Charlotte.

Witnesses having been examined in support of these charges, Captain Martin was called upon for his defence, which he delivered in writing, and supported the same by his witnesses; and, after questioning the power and competency of the Court, and protesting against Revd. Mr. Marsden's authority to bring these charges, he not having exhibited his authority from the societies which he professes to represent, or proved those societies were incorporated bodies, calls upon the Bench of Magistrates to acquit him upon the evidence before them.

Captain questioned power of Court.

Their decision is as follows :—

Bench of Magistrates, Sydney, 6 Jany., 1816.

“The Magistrates, having now to deliver their opinion on the charges preferred by the Revd. Samuel Marsden against Mr. John Martin, master of the Queen Charlotte, do adjudge the whole to be fully substantiated, and they feel it their duty to recommend that His Excellency the Governor will be pleased to take into his consideration the expediency of some measures being adopted that may prevent a recurrence of similar acts of fraud and violence.

Magistrates' decision.

“Certified to be correct—D. WENTWORTH.”

[Enclosure.]

#### GOVERNMENT AND GENERAL ORDERS.

Government House, Sydney, N. South Wales, 9th November, 1814.

#### *Civil Department.*

It having been represented to His Excellency the Governor that the commanders and seamen of vessels touching at or trading with the Islands of New Zealand, and more especially that part of them commonly called “The Bay of Islands,” having been in the habit of offering gross insult and injury to the natives of those places, by violently seizing on and carrying off several

Ill treatment of natives.

1817

Forcible carrying-off natives forbidden.

of them, both males and females, and treating them in other respects with injudicious and unwarrantable severity, to the great prejudice of the fair intercourses of trade, which might be otherwise productive of mutual advantages, and His Excellency being equally solicitous to protect the natives of New Zealand and the Bay of Islands in all their just rights and privileges as those of every other dependency of the territory of New South Wales, hereby orders and directs that no master or seamen of any ship or vessel belonging to any British port, or to any of the colonies of Great Britain resorting to the said Islands of New Zealand shall in future remove or carry therefrom any of the natives without first obtaining the permission of the chief or chiefs of the districts in which the natives so to be embarked may happen to reside, which permission is to be certified in writing, under the hand of Mr. Thomas Kendall, the Resident Magistrate in the Bay of Islands, or of the Magistrate for the time being in such districts.

Must get permission to land sailors.

It is also ordered and directed by the authority aforesaid that no master of any ship or vessel belonging to Great Britain, or any of her colonies, shall land or discharge any sailor or sailors within any of the bays or harbours of New Zealand without having first obtained the permission of the chief or chiefs of the place, confirmed by the certificate of the Resident Magistrate, in like manner as in the foregoing case.

Punishment will follow disobedience of order.

Any neglect or disobedience of these Orders by the masters or seamen belonging to ships or vessels trading from hence to or having any intercourse with New Zealand or the adjacent isles will subject the offenders to be proceeded against with the utmost rigour of the law on their return hither; and those who shall return to England without resorting to this place will be reported to His Majesty's Secretary of State for the Colonies, and such documents transmitted as will warrant them being equally proceeded against and punished there as if they had arrived within this territory.

And with a view to carry these Orders into due effect, His Excellency is pleased to direct that the following chiefs of New Zealand—viz., Dewaterra, Shungie, and Korra Korra—be and are hereby invested with power and authority for that purpose, and are to receive due obedience from all persons to whom these Orders have reference, so far as they relate to their obtaining permission to remove or carry away any of the natives of New Zealand or the adjacent isles, or to land or discharge any sailors or other persons thereon.

By command of His Excellency the Governor.

JOHN THOMAS CAMPBELL, Secy.

[Enclosure.]

1817

## GOVERNMENT AND GENERAL ORDERS.

1st December, 1813.

*Natives of the South Sea Islands.*

No ship or vessel shall clear out from any port within the territory for New Zealand, or any other island in the South Pacific, unless the master if of British or Indian, or the master and owners if of plantation registry, shall enter into bonds with the Naval Officer, under £1,000 penalty, that themselves and crew shall properly demean themselves towards the natives, and not commit acts of trespass on their gardens, lands, habitations, burial-grounds, tombs, or properties, and not make war, or interfere in their quarrels, or excite any animosities amongst them, but leave them to the free enjoyment of their rites and ceremonies; and not take from the island any male native without his own, his chief's, and parents' consent, and shall not take from thence any female native without the like consent, and without having first obtained the consent of His Excellency the Governor, or his Secretary, in writing; or in case of shipping any male natives as mariners, divers, &c., then, at their own request at any time to discharge them, first paying them all wages, &c., due to them. And the natives of all the said islands being under His Majesty's protection, all acts of rapine, plunder, piracy, murders, or other outrages against their persons or property will, upon conviction, be severely punished.

Natives of the  
South Sea  
Islands.

Not to be ill  
treated or lands  
trespassed upon.

All outrages  
will be  
punished.

SHIPPING.—SYDNEY TO NEW ZEALAND (SEPTEMBER, 1817, TO  
DECEMBER, 1820).

1817-20

*Vessels Inward.*

- 18 Sept., 1817. Harriett (James Jones, master); 417 tons; 12 guns; 22 men; from New Zealand. Cargo: 100 logs and spars, 5 cwt. flax.
- 1 Feb., 1818. Governor Bligh (sch.); 104 tons; from New Zealand. 10,841 fur seal skins, 500 hair seal skins, 200 gallons oil.
- 10 Feb., 1818. Campbell Macquarie; from Macquarie Island. 52 tons oil.
- 10 Feb., 1818. Elizabeth and Mary (sch.); 86 tons (Wm. Book, master); from Macquarie Island. 14 tons oil.
- 21 Dec., 1818. Elizabeth and Mary; from Macquarie Island. 26½ tons oil.

1817-20

- 29 March, 1819. Governor Bligh; from New Zealand. 10,516 fur seal skins.
- 3 May, 1819. Elizabeth and Mary; from Macquarie Island. 1,243 fur seal skins, 17 tons oil.
- 30 July, 1819. Active (brig); 108 tons; from New Zealand. 5,246 ft. plank, 3 tons salt pork.
- 1 Nov., 1819. Elizabeth and Mary; from Macquarie Island. 34 tons oil, 3,190 seal skins.
- 30 Nov., 1819. Active (brig); 108 tons (John Thompson, master); from N.Z. In ballast. Passengers: Rev. S. Marsden, Mr. Carlisle and family, Mr. Gordon and family, and 18 New Zealand natives.
- 13 Dec., 1819. Campbell Macquarie (brig); 135 tons (John Beveridge, master); 18 crew; from Macquarie Island. 12 tons oil.
- 27th Jan., 1820. Elizabeth and Mary; from New Zealand. 4,397 fur seal skins.
- 3 April, 1820. Governor Bligh; from Sealing Islands. 5,500 seal skins.
- 10 May, 1820. Elizabeth and Mary; from Macquarie Island. 30 tons oil.
- 30 May, 1820. Martha; 410 tons; 33 men; from fisheries, with oil for London market (quantity not given).
- 8 Aug., 1820. Cumberland; 268 tons; 25 men; from fisheries. 80 tons sperm oil.

*Vessels Outwards.*

- 21 June, 1817. Harriet; 417 tons; 12 guns; 28 men (James Jones, captain); bound for N.Z. In ballast.
- 9 Nov., 1817. Campbell Macquarie; for Macquarie Island. In ballast. (N.B. It is remarkable that no clearances are given for 1818.)
- 23 Feb., 1819. Martha; 410 tons; 36 men; South Sea fisheries. In ballast.
- 27 Feb., 1819. Harriet; 417 tons; 34 men; South Sea fisheries. In ballast.
- 17 Aug., 1819. New Zealander; 276 tons; 25 men; South Sea fisheries. Oil for London market.
- 14 Feb., 1820. H.M.S. Dromedary; 1,100 tons; 115 men; for N.Z.
- 22 Feb., 1820. Robert Quayle (brig); 356 tons; 24 men; South Sea fisheries. In ballast.
- 13 July, 1820. Saracen; 402 tons; 37 men; fisheries. In ballast.



- 25 July, 1820. Janus; 308 tons; 34 men; fisheries. In ballast. 1817-20
- 26 Aug., 1820. Cumberland; 268 tons; 25 men; fisheries. In ballast.
- 26 Aug., 1820. Vansittart; 297 tons; 27 men; fisheries. In ballast.
- 21 Oct., 1820. Woodlark (brig); 238 tons; 19 men; fisheries. In ballast.

## THE NAVY BOARD TO THE ADMIRALTY.

1818

SIR,—

Navy Office, 19th June, 1818.

June 19.

We duly received Mr. Barrow's letter of the 18th ultimo, accompanied by copies of the letters from Mr. Goulburn and Governor Macquarie, and of a memorial from Mr. Robert Williams, a ropemaker at Sydney, on the subject of manufacturing the New Zealand flax or hemp into cordage and sail cloth for exportation to this country, together with specimens of the cordage and flax in question.

In consequence of the directions of the Lords Commissioners of the Admiralty, contained in Mr. Barrow's letter, we sent the papers and specimens to Commissioner Mr. Robert Barlow, and desired him to cause experiments to be made on the strength of the articles compared with cordage of the same sizes manufactured in the rope yard at Chatham, and report his opinion of the character and quality of the New Zealand hemp; and the Commissioner having, with his letter of the 13th instant, transmitted a report from the Rope Yard Offices containing a table which shews the results of the experiments which he has caused to be made (and at most of which he was present) on the actual and comparative strength of the New Zealand flax or hemp and of Riga and Chili hemp, we transmit to you herewith, to lay before their Lordships, a copy of the report, by which it will be seen that the New Zealand article is weaker than the Riga and Chili hemp nearly in the proportion of one third.

The Commissioner has stated that he agrees with the officers in their observations on its quality and character.

We are, &amp;c.

J. TUCKER.

E. BOUVERIE.

E. STEWART.

1818  
June 10.

[Enclosure.]

SIR,—

Chatham Rope Yard, 10th June, 1818.

Agreeably to your directions of the 28th ulto., to make trial of the comparative strength of the specimens of line, twine, and yarn manufactured from New Zealand hemp, or flax, against similar sizes of those articles made from Riga and Chili hemp, and to report to you the results, with our opinion of the quality and character of the New Zealand hemp, we beg to state that we have tried their strength by suspension, and the following are the results of the trial, viz. :—

| Those tallied. |   | New Zealand.  | Riga.         | Chili.        |
|----------------|---|---------------|---------------|---------------|
|                |   | Cwt. qrs. lb. | Cwt. qrs. lb. | Cwt. qrs. lb. |
| No. 1.         | Lines, hawser laid 3 strands, suspended in the clear 3 feet, broke with | 12 3 15       | 18 1 15       | 18 2 1        |
| No. 2.         | Lines, cable laid 3 strands ..  | 2 3 12        | 3 1 16        | 3 2 26        |
| No. 3.         | Lines, hawser laid 4 strands, with a heart                              | 5 0 16        | 7 0 9         | 7 0 19        |
| No. 8.         | Single thread yarn, three twisted together into twine                   | 0 0 6         | None made     | 0 0 11        |
| No. 9.         | Twine, 3 thread, coarse ..  | 0 1 20        | 0 2 3         | 0 2 10        |
| No. 10.        | Twine, 2 thread, coarse ..  | 0 0 23        | 0 1 11        | 0 1 11        |
| No. 11.        | Twine, 2 do. ..   | 0 0 19        | 0 0 25        | 0 1 11        |
| No. 12.        | Twine, 2 do., fine ..   | 0 0 21        | 0 0 27        | 0 1 1         |

It will therefore appear that the lines and twine from the New Zealand hemp bore little more than two thirds the weight of those made from Riga and Chili hemp.

The specimens of hemp are too small for us to form a correct judgment as to their fitness for cordage; they appear much worked down for fine use, and none has been transmitted in a rough state clean from the stems or reeds to enable us to ascertain its length, natural fibre, and produce when worked down; however, the memorialist states its growth to be from two to six feet and even by the seaside 10 feet; the latter we would remark is the most likely to produce hemp fit for cordage—it is certainly flexible and fit for fine uses, and might be manufactured into canvas. We have tarred a small piece, and it appears to imbibe tar equally as well as Russian hemp.

We are, &c.,

J. M. HAITE.

W. FENWICK.

J. W. Croker, Esq., &c., &c.

[Proceedings of the Church Missionary Society.]

1819  
May 4.

EXTRACT FROM REPORT OF THE COMMITTEE DELIVERED TO THE  
ANNUAL MEETING HELD MAY 4, 1819, AT FREEMASONS' HALL,  
GREAT QUEEN STREET.

*Australasia Mission.*

\* \* \* \*

The Committee will proceed to report the state of the seminary established by Mr. Marsden at Parramatta, the place of his own residence in New South Wales. This seminary, formed for the instruction of New Zealanders, was mentioned in the last report. The subserviency of such a seminary to the plans of the Society in reference to New Zealand was obvious, as nothing can have a more direct tendency, according to the just sentiment of Mr. Marsden, to enlarge the minds of men in the situation of the natives of New Zealand than to witness the advantages of civilized life.

Seminary at  
Parramatta.

In May of last year there were twelve natives of New Zealand in the seminary, occupied in the acquisition of the useful arts. Some of these men were kept constantly at rope-making and twine-spinning; as their own flax will probably become, at no very distant day, an object of great importance. Nine of these natives were about to return to New Zealand on board the *Active*.

In September, a number of natives in the seminary were six. Two had sailed for England a short time before in the *Claudine*: these were the last whom Mr. Marsden intended should be allowed to visit this country.

Mr. Marsden considers it of great importance to continue this seminary for the benefit of New Zealanders, and proposes to improve it and extend its scale. It is his intention to put it on such a footing that the natives who enter it may be employed partly in agriculture and gardening, and partly in learning the simple arts, combined with moral and religious instruction.

This work  
should be  
continued.

Before the Committee proceeds to report the actual state of the settlement at the Bay of Islands, they beg to renew the acknowledgments of the Society to its able and unwearied friend Mr. Marsden, not only for his measures at Parramatta in reference to New Zealand, but for the watchful eye which he keeps on the interests of the mission, and the judicious steps taken by him in its favour.

Society's ac-  
knowledgments  
to Mr. Marsden.

Messrs. Carlisle and Gordon, mentioned in the last report, proceeded, with their families, in the *Active*, from Port Jackson to the Bay of Islands, in the latter part of April, 1817. They

Messrs. Carlisle  
and Gordon  
went to New  
Zealand in 1817.

1819  
May 4.

Cattle, fruit-trees, &c., also sent.

were accompanied by six natives of New Zealand, some of whom had been at Parramatta a year and a half.

Several head of horned cattle were sent over, the advantages to be expected from which were stated in the last report. "Milk, butter, beef, and labour," Mr. Marsden says, "these cattle will soon produce to the inhabitants; and if the number of settlers should be increased, they will greatly promote their support and comfort."

Fruit trees of various kinds have also been sent over by Mr. Marsden. The settlers have peaches in perfection. He thinks vines will succeed, and will send over from time to time plants of different sorts in order to the future benefit of the settlers and natives.

In May of last year Mr. Marsden was about to send a person to New Zealand, in order to make a trial of salting and curing fish. Great advantage to the people may be expected thereby, from the abundance of fish on their shores. Mr. Marsden had with him, in the same month, a chief from the River Thames who was anxious for some settlers to live among them on that part of the coast.

Mr. Marsden wished to visit the settlers again; and intended, when he should be able to accomplish his design, to examine more fully than he had done into the population and production of the country, particularly in the interior.

Schools at Bay of Islands.

In reporting the proceedings in the Bay of Islands the Committee will first refer to the state of the schools.

Mr. Kendall and Mr. Carlisle have paid every attention to the education of the native children which circumstances would allow. The school was opened in August, 1816, with 33 children; in September, there were 47; and in October, 51. In November and December, there being no provisions for the children, they were scattered abroad in search of food. In January, 1817, the number was 60; in February, 58; in March, 63; and in April, 70. These are the latest returns of numbers which have arrived.

Age of children range from seven to seventeen.

At first the girls were double in number to the boys, but latterly they became nearly equal. The age of the children was generally from 7 to 17. Among them were 17 orphans, and six slaves which had been taken in war. Several sons of chiefs were among the scholars, and one of them, Atowha, son of the late Tippahee, began, after a few months, to act as assistant in the school.

\* \* \* \*



[Church Missionary Society.]

REV. S. MARSDEN TO J. PRATT.

1819  
July 14.

REVD. AND DEAR SIR,— Parramatta, July 14th, 1819.

As the Revd. Mr. Butler and his colleagues will write to you, it will not be necessary for me to trouble you with any long statements. I am much struck with the singular providence of God that the same ship which brought them out should at the same time bring my leave of absence, a favour which I so very earnestly solicited about fourteen months ago. The reasons that then urged me to leave the colony do not so strongly exist as they did at the time I made application to return to Europe. As two asst. chaplains have been sent out, and permission for me to return home, I consider this a favorable opportunity to request the Govr. to allow me to accompany Mr. Butler to New Zealand in order to arrange the future plans for the permanent welfare of that settlement. I accordingly wrote to the Governor stating that it was not in my power to avail myself of the indulgence granted me to return home, as the *Surry* would sail immediately for Europe, by that ship; and therefore begged His Excellency would allow me to proceed to New Zealand for a short time, which favor the Governor granted me on condition that I would provide accommodations for the clergymen who did my duty in my absence free from all expense to the Crown. This condition I readily complied with. Had I not received leave of absence I should not have presumed to have asked permission to visit New Zealand. Having obtained the Govr's permission, and knowing the *Active* was too small to carry the passengers and their stores, and being absent on her voyage, I determined to take up the first vessel I could in the harbour in order that the Reverend Mr. Butler, &c., might, as soon as possible, arrive at their place of destination and begin their work. I therefore hired an American brig, 200 tons, who was in the cove, and the time appointed for our sailing is fixed for the 25th instant. The settlers for New Zealand would get no advantage in this colony; and heavy expense would have been incurred daily while they remained here where everything is at such a price, and the sooner they begin their work the longer time they would have to do it in. It is my intention to take over a few mechanics to enable them to put up the necessary buildings, church houses, &c., &c., and to form a regular government amongst them before I return, if my life is spared. I hope also to have a little more time to examine into the country and to see what are its capabilities. How wonderfully has God overruled the wills and affections of simple men with respect to this mission. If there was one object in

Received leave  
of absence from  
England.Asked to go to  
New Zealand  
instead, which  
was granted.Hired "General  
Gates" to take  
Mr. Butler, &c.

1819  
July 14.  
Greatly desired  
to visit New  
Zealand.

Hopes to assist  
the settlement.

Messrs. Hill and  
Cross appointed  
assistant  
clergymen.

life that I wished to attain more than any other it was this—that I might visit New Zealand. If I had not been compelled to apply for leave of absence for reasons I need not explain I never should have done so. But how has this turned out to the accomplishment of my wishes? I hope now to introduce Mr. Butler to all the leading chiefs, to conciliate their esteem, and to fix the settlement on a firm foundation. I cannot doubt the suitableness of the instruments you have sent out. Their wisdom on the voyage and prudence since their arrival convince me that they are fully bent upon their work, and if they can only begin at the right end, we may hope for a successful issue of their labors. I shall assist them to the utmost of my power. The evils that have existed at the settlement have comparatively been small, where every man did what was right in his own eyes. The place will now be changed, and I trust we shall be able to lay down such rules, and keep those who are employed in the work to their proper duty, so as to prevent the existence of any great differences amongst them. When the Active arrives at Sydney I shall leave orders for her to be fitted out, and to be sent for me. After my return from New Zealand it will depend upon existing circumstances whether I proceed to Europe or not. If I should see it necessary I shall come to London; if very cogent reasons do not urge me I shall remain. The change of Government would be the strongest inducement to remain. A continuance of the present system would urge, if not compel, my departure. I am happy that two clergymen have been appointed. The Revd. Mr. Hill, I have no doubt, will be a blessing to the colony. Mr. Cross wants solidity at least, if not something more. I should have been glad could I have entertained as favorable an opinion of him as I do of Mr. Hill; and wish most sincerely I may be able to do this at any future period. After my return from New Zealand, and any change of public measures is adopted, I then hope we may be able to give you some little assistance, and form a regular auxiliary society. At present things must remain as they are.

I have, &c.,

The Revd. J. Pratt.

SAMUEL MARSDEN.

[Church Missionary Society.]

REV. S. MARSDEN AND REV. R. CARTWRIGHT TO REV. J. PRATT.

Parramatta, N.S. Wales, July 24, 1819.

REVD. AND DEAR SIR,—

July 24.  
Dr. Reid offered  
services for  
New Zealand.

The bearer, D. Reid, Esq., surgeon in the Royal Navy, has offered his services as a medical man for New Zealand.

Perhaps there is not a gentleman of his profession in Europe better qualified for such an important situation. He is a man of great experience, solid judgment, and naturally tender and humane. He would in a little time be able to instruct some of the chiefs' sons in medicine and surgery, as many of the boys who are young would be readily taught. When the natives get their own medical men they will be exceedingly benefited, and in the end much expence would be saved to the Society. The sooner the natives can be instructed in the simple arts and all useful knowledge, the sooner will they be ranked with civilized nations.

If the Society can come to terms with Dr. Reid we shall be glad, as we think he would be of the utmost advantage to the settlement, not only as a medical man, but from his general knowledge and experience of men and things.

Under this impression we beg to recommend the subject to the kind consideration of the Committee, and have the honor to be, &c.,

SAMUEL MARSDEN.

ROBT. CARTWRIGHT.

To the Rev. Josiah Pratt, &c., &c., London.

1819  
July 24.

He would be of  
great service.

[Church Missionary Society.]

REV. S. MARSDEN TO REV. J. PRATT.

REVD. AND DEAR SIR,—

Sydney, July 28th, 1819.

July 28.

I am now on the eve of embarking for New Zealand, and expect to be on board as soon as I have closed this note to you. The Rev. J. Butler and all his associates are well and in good spirit. The *Active* is now off the Heads, and has sent her boat in, as she cannot get in herself, from the contrary winds. I am happy to say all the settlers are well at the Bay of Islands, and going on well. Twelve New Zealanders are come over now in the *Active*; 16 will be left at Parramatta. Two are learning to make bricks, 1 nail-making, another in the blacksmith shop, and the others will be employed in my absence, till the *Active* returns to N. Zealand, in some useful work. I found it necessary to take up the General Gates, as the *Active* was at New Zealand when Mr. Butler, &c., arrived. She could not have afforded room for the missionary stores, passengers, &c., and the expence of keeping the Rev. Mr. Butler here, with his colleagues, would have been very heavy, where every thing, lodgings, &c., are so dear; £300 would have gone a little way in this colony, and while here they would gain no good. In order to lessen the expenses and to get them upon the field of action as soon as pos-

"Active" has  
arrived at the  
Heads.

1819  
July 28.

Mr. Wylde sent  
£10 10s. to  
Church  
Missionary  
Society.

Governor very  
polite and civil.

Mr. E. Riley  
also sent £10.

sible I took up the General Gates, in which I take four head of horned cattle and some sheep, the mechanics and their families. The Active will come to New Zealand for me when fitted out to sea again. By the time she arrives, if all is well, we shall have made all the necessary arrangements for the future welfare of the settlement. Messrs. Butler, Hall, and Kemp are in great spirits. The young men who have arrived in the boat delighted them much. I hope all will be well. We have met with no discouragements as yet. I now hope the storm is broke in this colony, and the opposition subdued in a great measure. The Judge Advocate sent me £10 10s. as a donation with the accompanying note. I waited upon him, thanked him for his donation. He assured me that he would give every countenance and support to our plans, and I am convinced he will. We have got him now completely on our side. I wish to be thankful to Almighty God for His kind overruling providence. I waited upon the Governor to pay my respects to him previous to my embarking. He was very, very polite and civil, and think His Excellency will not oppose our views. So far well. Our cause is gaining ground in the colony, and will prevail. We shall get support in time. Mr. Edward Riley has given £10 to the C.M.S., which you have credit for in the accompanying accounts. I have drawn upon you for £511 19s. 2d., and have inclosed the voucher for the satisfaction of the Committee. Shall write again immediately on my return to the colony, or if I should fall in with a whaler for Europe. You will excuse great haste, as we are all in a hurry. The ladies are embarked, and I am just ready to follow them in the boat. I cannot wait for the Active's letters, as she cannot get in, and the General Gates cannot stay, as the cattle, &c., &c., are on board. Wishing every blessing may attend the labours of the Society,

I remain, &c.,

Rev. J. Pratt.

SAMUEL MARSDEN.

[Church Missionary Society.]

# MR. MARSDEN'S QUERIES TO THE SETTLERS OF THE BAY OF ISLANDS.

Nov 5.

Bay of Islands, Nov. 5, 1819.

## Queries.

## Answers.

1. How far, in your opinion, has a regular communication between New Zealand and Port Jackson thro' the medium of the Active contributed to your security and com-

1. Our security and comfort have been greatly promoted by a regular communication between New Zealand and Port Jackson through the medium of the Active during our



fort during your residence in the island ?

2. How far has the same communication contributed to the general improvement of those natives who have had an opportunity to visit Port Jackson and to see and taste of the comforts of civil life ?

3. Have the respective reports of those natives who have returned to their friends added to your influence and respectability amongst the inhabitants ?

4. How far would it be prudent or even practicable, from the spirit of enterprize and turn for commerce which the New Zealanders possess from their national character, to prevent them from visiting Port Jackson in any vessel which may be employed in the mission to dispose of their matts, &c. ?

5. What number of natives and under what regulations, so as to give the most general satisfaction

residence in the island. The constant attention that has been paid to us by our powerful friends at a distance has made a favorable impression on the minds of the natives in our behalf, and our temporal wants have been also regularly supplied, which could not have been done without a regular intercourse with Port Jackson.

2. The natives of New Zealand are men of strong intellects, and in general possess a spirit of enterprise and enquiry. Those who have visited Port Jackson have at all times expressed themselves highly gratified with what they have seen and heard in the colony, and with their various employments there. When they return to this island they will spend many hours and sometimes whole nights in telling their countrymen what the customs of Englishmen are, and what are their various occupations in civil life.

3. They have.

4. The natives consider the missionaries on shore, the owner of the vessel, the captain and ship's company as members of one body. They know also that the vessel is navigated chiefly of their friends the missionaries, and feel themselves more interested in the missionary vessel, than they would in any other. It would not therefore be prudent or even practicable to prevent the New Zealanders from visiting Port Jackson in a vessel employed in the mission. That spirit of enterprize and thirst for commerce which they possess would be checked by such a measure ; and they would be dissatisfied with the missionaries who lived in the land.

5. Generally speaking, two or three of the most intelligent youths might be permitted to visit Port Jackson

1819  
Nov. 5.

1819  
Nov. 5.

to the chiefs, should be permitted to visit Port Jackson. if it should be deem'd necessary for any to go ?

and remain there for some time, for the purpose of being instructed in reading, writing, or the arts. Also a chief or two might be permitted to pay a short visit. Should a greater number of natives be very importunate to embark at any one time it would be right to yield to their wishes as much as possible, if no other means could be adopted to pacify them

6. How far have the industry of the natives, the cultivation of the land, and other comforts of life increas'd since your residence amongst them ?

6. Their industry and the cultivation of their land have increased in proportion to the means which have been put from time to time into their hands, and have far exceeded our expectations. They have enlarged their fields, as they have procured implements of husbandry, and the comforts of life have increased accordingly.

7. Have the deaths of the natives for the last three years been in the same proportion to the two first years you liv'd amongst them ?

7. They have not. During the first year in particular there was a great mortality amongst the natives, but we now seldom hear of the death of a native. The natives live better. Many of them were formerly very much afflicted with boils, but since they have lived upon more wholesome food they are free from them, and at present appear healthy and well.

8. How far are their outward circumstances and general appearance improv'd since your arrival in this island ?

8. Their outward circumstances and general appearance are greatly improved.

9. Do they manifest a less thirst for war, and a greater desire to promote agriculture and commerce than formerly ?

9. They are still very fond of war, but manifest a greater desire to promote agriculture. The means now afforded to them to purchase hogs, potatoes, corn, matts, fish, lines, &c., with axes, hoes, and other European articles has awaken'd their native industry exceedingly.

10. Have they in any degree laid aside their ferocious habits, such as shouting, dancing naked, and sham fighting to inflame their passions, and to kindle their warlike ardor ?

10. The surrounding natives are not so much addicted to these habits as formerly. We seldom hear their shoutings, &c., except at a time when they are visited by parties from a distant part of the country.

11. With respect to their religion, do you consider them particularly attentive to their own ceremonies ?

11. They are particularly attentive to their own ceremonies, chiefly as we conceive from the fear of death.

12. How far do you conceive their superstitions may tend to obstruct the introduction of the Gospel amongst them ?

12. There appears to be no particular impediments to the introduction of the Gospel any further than the powerful effect of traditionary superstitions—principles implanted in their minds by their ancestors, and which we have no doubt will yield to the superior light of the Gospel, as soon as the missionaries shall be enabled under the Divine blessing and guidance to lay before them the solemn and important truths of Christianity.

1819  
Nov. 5.

13. Have they shewn any disrespect for, and aversion to, the forms of the Christian religion and Sabbaths ?

13. They have not; but, on the contrary, have on many occasions paid great respect to both.

14. Do you consider them as fully prepared for the reception of the Gospel as any other uncivilized nation ?

14. We consider them much more so than any other uncivilized nation which we have heard of.

15. Have you had any apprehensions for your personal safety while living amongst them ?

15. We have not all been free from apprehensions of this, but we are now under none whatever.

16. Can public schools be established for the rising generation ?

16. We believe they can.

WILLM. HALL.  
THOS. KENDALL.  
JOHN KING.

To the Revd. Saml. Marsden, &c., &c.

THOMAS KENDALL TO COMMISSIONER BIGGE.

SIR,—

Bay of Islands, Novr. 8th, 1819.

Nov. 8.

I have the honor to enclose, for your information, answers to the questions which you proposed to me, in which I have been assisted by my colleagues, Messrs. Hall and King, and am, Sir,

Yours, &c.,

THOS. KENDALL.

To the Honble. Commissioner Bigge, &c.

Queries and  
replies to New  
Zealand.

*Missionaries' Replies to Mr. Bigge's Queries.*

*Questions.*

*Answers.*

1. What is the number of European inhabitants settled in New Zealand ?

1. Fifty-two men, women, and children.

1819  
Nov 8.  
—

2. Are they settled in various places and districts, or do they reside entirely at the Bay of Islands ?

2. At the Bay of Islands.

3. What is the number of native inhabitants that have been converted to Christianity, and what is the disposition that they have manifested towards the profession of the Christian faith ?

3. None can strictly be said to be converted to Christianity, but they have shown no aversion to our religion.

4. What system of religious instruction has been adopted by the missionaries in converting the natives ?

4. The missionary settlers have explained to the natives as opportunity has offered the principal truths of Christianity, some catechisms and prayers and a spelling-book have also been sent to the Society which are written in the native language for their benefit when printed and returned.

5. What other instruction do they afford to the natives in language or in morals ? And what capacity do they show to acquire the former and observe the latter ?

5. Several natives have been taught to read the alphabet, some to read short easy words, and others to write. Their capacity to acquire instruction is very great either in their own or in the English language, and we endeavour to point out the ends attending any part of their immoral conduct as it affects the general welfare of society. As they generally admit the justice of our observations, we hope their moral conduct will improve in time, particularly when they attain to the knowledge of Divine revelation.

6. What are the principal moral defects, and what are the crimes most common amongst them ?

6. The moral defects of the natives are few. They are not void of natural affection, gratitude, and generosity: and making due allowance for their situation as heathen, they are a wise and understanding people. The crimes most common among them are theft, covetousness, and adultery. The two former may be accounted for partly from their extreme poverty, and partly from their own natural depravity. They are also very lascivious. Polygamy is universally allowed. Some of the chiefs have eight or ten wives. Murder, or, as the New Zealanders define the crime, "the killing a man without any just cause or provocation to do so," is very rarely committed. There have been only five



1819  
Nov. 8.

---

natives killed at the Bay of Islands during the past five years. Three of these were put to death for theft, and two innocent female victims were sacrificed as a satisfaction to the manes of a departed chief. When any individual or a tribe have sustained an injury they immediately appeal to arms for satisfaction, as they have no other way of obtaining the ends of justice, and in such cases they may carry their resentment further than a civilised nation would do. The eating of human flesh originated from a superstitious custom, and is considered a virtue rather than a crime. Unnatural crimes we have never heard of, nor do we know that they have any name for them.

7. Have they acquired much skill in the use of gunpowder and fire-arms, and do the European and other ships that frequent the coasts of New Zealand furnish these and other warlike instruments in exchange for wood and the productions of the soil?

8. Has the use of fire-arms stimulated the natural ferocity of their dispositions in the wars which they wage with each other, and would it be desirable to prevent the introduction of firearms by British ships engaged in the Southern Whale Fishery by heavy penalties and loss of the bounties now paid to them by the British Government?

9. What progress have the natives made in agriculture, and have they acquired any skill in the use of the agricultural instruments introduced by the missionaries?

10. Is the use of European grain and vegetables known to them?

11. What is the quantity of cattle, horses, and sheep possessed by the missionaries at present in New Zea-

7. They have acquired much skill in the use of gunpowder and fire-arms, and obtain them and other warlike instruments from the European and other ships that frequent the coast in exchange for wood and the productions of the soil.

8. This is a question of such importance and involving so many considerations both of a political and commercial nature that we do not feel ourselves at present competent judges to answer it. We are of opinion, however, that the use of a musket in battle has not such a tendency to destroy any civil feeling that may be inspired in the mind of a native as the use of a savage weapon.

9. The natives have made great progress in agriculture, and have acquired much skill in the use of agricultural instruments, such as hoes, spades, &c. More than ten times the quantity of land is now in cultivation than we observed when we first landed on the island.

10. It is.

11. There are twenty-five head of horned cattle and six sheep on the island. The natives have only three

1819  
Nov. 8.  
—

land, and have the natives become possessed of them shown a disposition to use or value them ?

head. Those chiefs who have seen the cattle and horses working in New South Wales are very anxious to obtain both and the means of working them.

12. Have the natives of New Zealand any manufactures of their own, and is the climate sufficiently severe to make the use of the coarsest sort of woollen manufactures or cloathing desirable to them ?

12. The manufactures of the natives are chiefly mats; woollen manufactures and warm cloathing would be desirable to them, especially in the winter season.

13. Have they shown any wish or power to imitate the buildings that have been erected by the missionaries ?

13. They wish to have similar buildings to the missionaries erected in their villages, but they have hitherto had no means of procuring the necessary materials.

14. Do the natives of New Zealand show a disposition for a seafaring life, and are they skilful in the management of canoes or coasting vessels ?

14. They are very fond of a seafaring life and are skilful in the management of canoes. They would generally make good sailors had they sufficient practice. Many are now employed on board the *Active* and other vessels, and have always behaved well.

15. What are the principal causes of the disputes that so frequently take place between the natives and the crews of vessels touching there ? Do they originate in the pilfering disposition of the natives or in the violence and immoral habits of the crews ?

15. The disputes between the natives and masters and crews of vessels may be attributed partly to the ignorance of Europeans in the native language, partly to their fraud and cruelty, and insults offered to the native females, partly to the sovereign contempt in which Europeans generally hold the natives, and partly to the pilfering disposition of the natives themselves.

16. What is the number of vessels that have touched at the Bay of Islands during the last three years, distinguishing their tonnage and national flag ?

16. Fourteen—namely, *Catherine*, of England, 200 tons; *Queen Charlotte*, of Port Jackson, tons; *Adamant*, of England, tons; *Daphne*, of Port Jackson, tons; *King George*, of Port Jackson, tons; *Enterprize*, of America, tons; *Harriet*, of Port Jackson, tons; *Rambler*, of England, tons; *Fox-hound*, of England, tons; *Anne*, of England, tons; *Indian*, of England, tons; *New Zealander*, of England, tons; *General Gates*, of America, tons.

17. Do they resort generally to the Bay of Islands, or to the other harbours of New Zealand ?

17. To the Bay of Islands.

18. Have any vessels been sent to Port Jackson in consequence of outrages committed upon native inhabitants since the Act of Parliament passed giving jurisdiction to the Courts of New South Wales to try such offenders ?

18. None.

1819  
Nov. 8.

19. What other measures, in your opinion, would be conducive to the protection of the natives against the outrages of European crews so much complained of, and would the employment of a small armed vessel be attended with beneficial effects, both in repressing the outrages and in manifesting an earnest desire on the part of the British Government to protect the natives ?

19. Generally speaking, we believe that the natives would be sufficiently protected were their cases brought before the Courts of New South Wales, but there is no means of carrying the provisions of the Act of Parliament into effect without an armed vessel.

---

*Answers of Missionaries to Mr. Marsden's Questions.*

Bay of Islands, Nov. 5, 1819.

*Queries.*

1. How far, in your opinion, has regular communication between New Zealand and Port Jackson through the medium of the Active contributed to your security and comfort during your residence in the island ?

*Answers.*

1. Our security and comfort have been greatly promoted by a regular communication between New Zealand and Port Jackson through the medium of the Active during our residence in the island. The constant attention which has been paid to us by our powerful friends at a distance has made a favourable impression on the minds of the natives in our behalf, and our temporal wants have also been regularly supplied, which could not have been done without a regular intercourse with Port Jackson.

2. How far has the same communication contributed to the general improvement of the natives who have had an opportunity to visit Port Jackson, and to see and taste of the comforts of civil life ?

2. The natives of New Zealand are men of strong intellects, and in general possess a spirit of enterprise and enquiry. Those who have visited Port Jackson have at all times expressed themselves highly gratified with what they have seen and heard in the colony, and with their various employments there. When they return to this island they will spend many hours and sometimes whole nights in telling their countrymen what the customs of Englishmen are, and what are their various occupations in civil life.

1819  
Nov. 8.

---

3. Have the respective reports of those natives who have returned to their friends added to your influence and respectability amongst the inhabitants ?

4. How far would it be prudent and even practicable from the spirit of enterprise and turn for commerce which the New Zealanders possess from their national character to prevent them from visiting Port Jackson in any vessel which may be employed in the mission to dispose of their mats, &c. ?

5. What number of natives, and under what regulations, so as to give the most general satisfaction to the chiefs, should be permitted to visit Port Jackson, if it should be deemed necessary for any to go ?

6. How far have the industry of the natives, the cultivation of the land, and other comforts of life increased since your residence amongst them ?

7. Have the deaths of the natives for the last three years been in the same proportion to the two first years you lived amongst them ?

3. They have.

4. The natives consider the missionaries on shore, the owners of the vessel, the captain and ship's company as members of one body. They know that the vessel is navigated chiefly for the accommodation of their friends the missionaries, and feel themselves more interested in the missionary vessel than they would in any other. It would not therefore be prudent or even practicable to prevent the New Zealanders from visiting Port Jackson in a vessel employed in the mission. That spirit of enterprise and thirst for commerce which they possess would be checked by such a measure, and they would be dissatisfied with the missionaries who lived in the land.

5. Generally speaking, two or three of the most intelligent youths might be permitted to visit Port Jackson, and remain there for some time, for the purpose of being instructed in reading, writing, or the arts. Also a chief or two might be permitted to pay a short visit. Should a greater number of natives be very importunate to embark at any one time, it would be right to yield to their wishes as much as possible, if no other means could be adopted to pacify them.

6. Their industry and the cultivation of their land have increased in proportion to the means which have been put from time to time into their hands, and have far exceeded our expectations. They have enlarged their field as they have procured implements of husbandry, and the comforts of life have increased accordingly.

7. They have not. During the first year in particular there was a great mortality among the natives, but now we seldom hear of the death



1819  
Nov. 8.  
—

of a native. The natives live better. Many of them were formerly very much afflicted with boils, but since they have lived upon more wholesome food they are free from them, and at present appear healthy and well.

8. How far are their outward circumstances and general appearance improved since your arrival in the island ?

8. Their outward circumstances and general appearance are greatly improved.

9. Do they manifest a less thirst for war, and a greater desire to promote agriculture and commerce than formerly ?

9. They are still very fond of war, but manifest a greater desire to promote agriculture. The means now afforded to them to purchase hogs, potatoes, corn, mats, fish-lines, &c., with axes and hoes and other European articles, has awakened their native industry exceedingly.

10. Have they in any degree laid aside their ferocious habits, such as shouting, dancing naked, and sham fighting, to inflame their passions, and to kindle their warlike ardour ?

10. The surrounding natives are not so much addicted to these habits as formerly. We seldom hear their shouting, &c., except at a time when they are visited by parties from a distant part of the country.

11. With respect to their religion, do you consider them particularly attentive to their own ceremonies ?

11. They are particularly attentive to their own ceremonies, chiefly, as we conceive, from the fear of death.

12. How far do you conceive their superstitions may tend to obstruct the introduction of the Gospel amongst them ?

12. There appear to be no particular impediments to the introduction of the Gospel any further than the powerful effect of traditional superstitious principles implanted in their minds by their ancestors, and which we have no doubt will yield to the superior light of the Gospel as soon as the missionaries shall be enabled under the Divine blessing and guidance to lay before them the solemn and important truths of Christianity.

13. Have they shewn any disrespect for and aversion to the forms of the Christian religion and Sabbaths ?

13. They have not, but on the contrary have on many occasions paid great respect to both.

14. Do you consider them as fully prepared for the reception of the Gospel as any other uncivilized nation ?

14. We consider them much more so than any other uncivilized nation which we have heard of.

1819  
Nov. 8.

15. Have you had any apprehensions for your personal safety while living amongst them ?

15. We have not all been free from apprehensions of this kind, but we are now under none whatever.

16. Can public schools be established for the rising generations ?

16. We believe they can.

WILLIAM HALL.  
THOMAS KENDALL.  
JOHN KING.

To the Rev. S. Marsden, &c., &c.

Nov.

Quarrel between  
sailors and  
natives.

MEMO. FOUND AMONGST THE PAPERS OF COMMISSIONER BIGGE.  
*New Zealand.*

MR. KELLY, Harbour Master at Hobart Town, formerly commanding the brig *Sophia*, at New Zealand, lost four or five of his crew in a quarrel with the natives, who murdered them, and eat one. About fourteen months ago.

Nov., 1819.

[Bigge's Appendix, Vol. 130.]

REV. S. MARSDEN TO COMMISSIONER BIGGE.

Dec. 28.

SIR,—

Parramatta, 28th December, 1819.

I take the liberty to state to your Honor the following observations, which will put you in possession of all the leading circumstances relative to the missions in the South Sea Islands, from their origin to the present period.

Missions in  
South Sea  
Islands.

In the year 1795 the Missionary Society was formed for the express purpose of sending the Gospel to the islands in the South Seas. In the following year the *Duff*, a ship which the Society purchased, was sent out with their missionaries, under the command of Mr. James Wilson. On the arrival of the ship at these islands nine missionaries were landed at Tongataboo, one of the Friendly Islands; eighteen men, five women, and two children were landed at Otaheite, one of the Society Islands.

Danger at  
Otaheite.

In 1798, nineteen, under apprehension of personal danger, left Otaheite in the *Nautilus*, brig, and returned to Port Jackson, where they were hospitably received by those who were friendly to their cause. Admiral Hunter, who was Governor of the colony at this time, was very kind to them, and administered to their wants from His Majesty's stores. After they had resided in the colony for some time their fears subsided, and a few of them returned to their station.

In the year 1798, after the Duff had returned from her first voyage, the Society fitted her out again, and sent her with a considerable number of missionaries intended for these islands. Unfortunately, the Duff was taken by a French privateer, and carried into Monte Video, in South America, where the missionaries were landed, from whence they returned to Europe. This was a serious loss to the Society, and great disappointment to the Christian world.

1819  
Dec. 28.

Mission ship  
taken by  
French.

In 1800, the Royal Admiral was taken up by Government to bring male convicts to this colony. The directors having lost their own ship, engaged with the owners of the Royal Admiral to take out twelve missionaries, and land them at Otaheite. One of these died at Port Jackson, and eleven were landed at the missionary settlement at the above-mentioned island. After the nine missionaries who had been landed on one of the Friendly Islands had resided there about three years, three of them were killed in the time of war. The other six escaped in a South Sea whaler, after suffering every privation and hardship. From the time the Royal Admiral landed the eleven missionaries at Otaheite, the body of the missionaries had no communication with the civilized world for five years. They were never visited by the Society, nor received so much as a letter from their friends. Untoward circumstances had prevented any intercourse. The missionaries' clothes were worn out, they went barefoot, they had no flour, tea, sugar, rice, or any comfort whatever. Sick, hungry, naked, and I may add forsaken, for five years, they continued at their work, living upon the native food in any manner they could. Commiserating their distresses, at length I took up a small sloop, without any instructions from the directors, and sent them some supplies. On the arrival of this little sloop they were much relieved in mind as well as in circumstances.

"Royal  
Admiral" took  
out twelve  
missionaries.

Cut off from  
world five years.

Marsden sent  
them supplies.

In the beginning of the year 1807 I returned to England, and on my arrival laid the situation of the missionaries before the directors, who expressed their gratitude for my attention to them in sending the sloop. I wished them to suggest some plan for keeping up a regular communication between Port Jackson and the islands, but the expense of such a measure presented difficulties to the directors that could not at that time be removed; at the same time they gave me authority to relieve the wants of the missionaries as much as local circumstances would admit when I returned to New South Wales again.

In the year 1795 I was ordered to Norfolk Island to do duty there for a short time, when I first formed my ideas of the character of the New Zealanders, two of them having visited that island.

First saw New  
Zealanders at  
Norfolk Island.

1819

Dec. 28.

Afterwards had  
some living in  
his house.

Wished Church  
Missionary  
Society to take  
up mission.

In about five or six years after my return to New South Wales I had an opportunity of becoming more intimately acquainted with the New Zealanders from some of them visiting the colony, whom I took to live with me, in order that I might gain a perfect knowledge of their characters and natural dispositions. At this time the Church Missionary Society had been formed about seven years. Being fully convinced that the New Zealanders were capable of any instructions that the civilized world would impart to them, I was anxious that the Church Missionary Society should take them under their patronage. I conceived it would then be in my power, being a minister of the established Church, to render more service to the New Zealanders than if they were under the patronage of any society that was not connected with the established Church. Shortly after my arrival in London, with this view, I waited upon the Rev. Josiah Pratt, Secretary to the Society, and stated my wishes to him. The Committee took the subject into consideration, and resolved to send out two or three lay settlers to try the experiment how far a mission to the islands of New Zealand would succeed.

Disasters during  
his absence.

Hopes greatly  
dashed.

In 1809 I left England for New South Wales, and took out with me as settlers for New Zealand two men and one woman. On my arrival at Port Jackson, in February, 1810, I found all the missionaries, with the exception of two, had left the Society Islands and returned to New South Wales, and that the ship Boyd and crew had been cut off at New Zealand. These were very painful circumstances, and created such difficulties as I was apprehensive it would not be in my power to overcome, as all hope of introducing the arts of civilization and the Christian religion amongst the different islands was now nearly extinguished. I was aware if anything could be done, nothing could be effected without the support of the Christian world, which could hardly be expected from the fatal disasters which had taken place. As far as my own private opinions went, I had no doubt but that the natives of these islands could be civilized; at the same time, no circumstances had occurred that would warrant me to hope that the Christian world would agree with me in that opinion, as the Christian world had not had the same opportunities as I had of judging of the characters of these heathen nations.

Assembled  
returned  
missionaries to  
give account.

My first step after landing at Port Jackson was to call the missionaries together who had returned from the Society Islands, in order that I might know the reasons which had induced them to leave their station. After hearing all that they had to say on the subject of their personal danger, which was the alleged cause, and their declaration that they could never muster resolu-



tion to return, for they totally despaired of ever succeeding in the mission, I clearly saw that they had no solid grounds of fear for their personal safety, nor had they any just reason to despair that their labours would be in vain. I saw that the real cause of their return was that their spirits were broke, their bodily health was impaired, and their missionary zeal damp't from privations and the effects of the climate; and that from the combination of all these together they had sunk under their burden, and sought relief in New South Wales. I pitied their distress, and the sufferings they had endured, but did not intimate to them that it was my intention to prevail upon them, if possible, to return to their work, for they were not able to bear the idea at that time. I was also aware, if they did not return before their report reached the directors, the directors probably would not see the subject in the same light as I did, but would also despair of success, and under that impression direct no further attempts to be made. I therefore resolved to send them back again, before any answers could be received to their letters transmitted to the society. In a few months their strength of body and mind was renewed. Pomare also sent a pressing invitation for them to return. I called them together, laid before them my views, and after mature deliberation they consented to return. I immediately took up two small vessels, fitted them out, and sent them off, previous to any directions being received from the directors.

1819  
Dec. 28.

Spirits and  
health broken.

Waited for their  
recuperation.

Then persuaded  
them to return.

From the privations which the missionaries at the Society Islands had suffered during thirteen years for the want of a regular communication between the islands and New South Wales, from the murders and robberies which had been committed upon the persons and properties of the natives, and from the Boyd having been cut off at New Zealand, I was convinced no permanent good could be accomplished without a vessel. I knew that without a vessel it would be in vain to attempt anything at New Zealand.

Regular com-  
munication  
needful.

I now entered into a correspondence with the Church and London Missionary Societies on the subject of the societies having a vessel to attend their missions. Three years past in fruitless correspondence. There were difficulties in the way which the societies could not meet. When I found there was no prospect of succeeding in my application for a vessel I recommended the missionaries at the Society Islands to build the Haweis, and I would assist them all I could. Many unforeseen difficulties opposed this undertaking, which is not necessary for me to write; suffice it to say that I found the work was more than the missionaries could do—they had not the means.

Mission vessel  
required.

1819

Dec. 28.

Bought  
"Active" on  
his own account.

Strong opposi-  
tion in colony.

Chiefs incited to  
jealousy and  
fear.

Success proved  
by experience.

Received orders  
to sell  
"Haweis."

Pomare had  
helped to build  
her.

At length the Active was offered for sale for £1,400. I had not the means to purchase her; I sold off nine hundred pounds' worth of sheep, and raised £500 by other means, and purchased her on my own account. It may be asked why I did not draw upon the Society for the amount of the purchase-money. I communicated to the secretaries of both societies what I had done; and in answer to my letter, I was authorized by the Secretary of the Church Missionary Society to draw upon him for the payment. But when this letter arrived the tide of opposition ran strong against me in this country. Attempts had been made to excite jealousies in the minds of the chiefs at New Zealand respecting the object I had in view. They were taught to believe that it was my sole intention to take their country from them, and reduce them to slavery. I could not calculate how far these attempts might eventually succeed to destroy the mission at New Zealand. I therefore determined to retain the Active in my own hands, and to take the risque upon myself, till these jealousies which had been so artfully kindled in the breasts of the chiefs died away, and length of time and positive experience by the residence of the settlers upon the island had proved the practicability of establishing the mission at New Zealand. After the settlement has now been formed five years, and every circumstance during that period has combined for its success, no doubt now remains upon the public mind but that these islanders can be civilized.

With respect to the brig Haweis, the missionaries informed me they could not launch and rig her when she was nearly built. Mr. Nicholson, master in the Royal Navy, coming out as first officer in a transport, I agreed with him to go to Otaheite and prepare the Haweis for sea, and bring her to Port Jackson. Shortly after her arrival in New South Wales I received instructions from the directors of the Missionary Society to sell the Haweis, wherever she was, or in whatever state she might be in, as they would have nothing to do with her. I was much surprized when I received these directions, and on the impulse of the moment I advertized her for sale; but when I began seriously to reflect upon what might be the probable consequences of such a measure I changed my intention.

I knew that King Pomare had given very considerable assistance towards building the vessel. He had calculated much upon the advantages which he and his people would derive from a constant communication between Otaheite and Port Jackson through the medium of the Haweis. I conceived if he was disappointed in his hopes the whole of the mission would be endangered. He might accuse the missionaries with the want of

public faith, and turn his back upon them. I was also anxious to get the coffee trees planted in all the Society Islands. I considered this an object of such vital importance to the future prosperity of the missions, and the natives in general, that it was worth retaining the *Haweis* till it was accomplished, whatever the expense might be. I therefore put off the sale of the *Haweis* and directed Robert Campbell, Esq., merchant, to fit her out again at my expense—her outfit amounted to more than £1,000. When she was ready for sea I gave orders to Mr. Nicholson to proceed to Norfolk Island, and take all the coffee plants he could, and plant them in all the islands. Mr. Nicholson implicitly obeyed my orders, and took five hundred plants with him, and planted some in the different islands, which were growing well when he left the islands. The *Haweis* returned when I was at New Zealand. Mr. Campbell sold her cargo, according to my directions, to repay the money I had advanced for her outfit. She had not one shilling worth of any article on my private account on board, and the whole of her cargo was disposed of before my return to Sydney.

1819  
Dec. 28.

Fitted her out  
for planting  
coffee.

Cargo sold to  
repay outfit.

Having thus explained the circumstances relative to the two brigs employed wholly in the work of the missions, I shall advert now to the time when I first purchased the *Active*. When I had got the *Active* I had the means of carrying my original views into execution, and immediately resolved to form a settlement in New Zealand. I made application to the Governor for leave to visit New Zealand for that purpose. His Excellency declined giving me his permission, for fear I should be cut off. I then asked His Excellency, if I sent the *Active* over to New Zealand to bring some of the principal chiefs to Port Jackson, in order that I might arrange matters with them, would he allow me to return with them for a short time to fix the settlers, who had been waiting at Parramatta for four years. To this proposal His Excellency consented. I sent the *Active*. The chiefs came over at my request; I returned with them, and visited the different parts of the coast, from the North Cape to the River Thames; explained to the chiefs my object, requested them to be kind to all the Europeans, and protect the ships and their crews when they put into their ports. From that time to the present not an European has been injured on any part of the coast, from the North Cape to the River Thames, and the settlement is prospering which I then formed.

Wished to visit  
New Zealand.

Returned with  
chiefs.

I can solemnly declare that during the five years I have never directly or indirectly sent one gallon of spirits to any of the natives either of New Zealand or the Society Islands, though I may be charged with doing so; nor do I believe that the natives have ever received to the amount of one gallon of spirits from the

Never sent  
spirits to  
natives.



|   |   |
|---|---|
| 1819                                      | <p>Active since I have had her ; nor have I ever sent a single pound of gunpowder to be sold to the natives ; nor have I ever sanctioned in any way the barter of muskets or other weapons of war. There have been but five muskets put on the <u>Haweis</u> for the protection of the vessel by me ; one of these was given to Pomare by my permission, and the other four are on board. I beg further to add that no private motives of gain induced me to purchase the <u>Active</u> or to build the <u>Haweis</u>, neither would the former have been purchased or the latter built if the societies could have provided a vessel for their missions. It is well known to the merchants here who have fitted out these vessels, and sold their returns, that there has been a very heavy pecuniary loss attending them, from many untoward and unforeseen circumstances. I may say with truth that for the last five years my character has been defamed in every possible way. Had these attacks upon my reputation been confined within the limits of these settlements where I am known I should have been deaf to all reproaches ; but when these calumnies were sent out into the world from the public office, with the apparent public sanction of this Government, I could not, in justice to my own character as a clergyman and officer, be silent any longer without forfeiting the good opinion of the Christian world, the esteem and confidence of my friends, and sinking for the remainder of my days into public contempt, and entailing upon my children everlasting disgrace. After what I have now stated, should any doubt remain upon your mind respecting the purity of my motives in endeavouring to promote the temporal and eternal welfare of the poor heathens in these islands, I beg to refer you to my statement upon oath when called into the witness-box on the criminal prosecution of Mr. Campbell for the libel upon me. I was most minutely examined for two hours the first day of the trial relative to all my private and public transactions with the missions, during which examination I could not help thinking that the Court was trying me, and not the defendant.</p> <p>In the midst of many difficulties, I trust it has ever been my study to do all I could for these poor ignorant savages, and Divine Goodness has blessed my feeble attempts an hundred fold more than I looked for. Whatever I may have done, I claim no merit ; I have done no more than my duty as a minister of the Gospel ; but in doing that duty I was not quietly to suffer my public reputation to be torn in pieces by the hand of power, and scattered in blotted scraps by an official engine over the face of the whole earth. I rely with the fullest confidence upon your wisdom and justice, and look forward with confident anticipation to the time when, after the fullest investigation into my public</p> |
| Dec. 28.                                  |   |
| Nor gunpowder or weapons.                 |   |
| No motives of gain.                       |   |
| Attacks upon his character.               |   |
| Obliged to defend himself.                |   |
| Mr. Campbell's prosecution for libel.     |   |
| Confidence in Bigge's wisdom and justice. |   |



and private life, you will have sufficient grounds to wipe away these blots and stains which have sullied my character, and also to remove from the minds of His Majesty's Ministers any unfavourable impressions which those may have made with whom I have had the misfortune to serve His Majesty in this colony during a long period of great trial and difficulty.

I have, &c.,

SAMUEL MARSDEN.

The Honourable Commissioner of Inquiry.

1819  
Dec. 28.

Investigation  
will clear  
character.

*Rules and Regulations for the Government of the Mission and Settlement formed by the Church of England Missionary Society at the Northern Island of New Zealand in the South Seas. Communicated by Rev. S. Marsden to Commissioner Bigge.*

1st. The Society supplying every person permanently engaged in this mission, not only with certain fixed annual salaries and regular sufficient supplies of provisions, but also being engaged to support the widows and orphans of any and every person dying in the service of the mission. It is ordered that no person engaged in this mission shall be allowed upon any account or pretence whatever to acquire or to hold any private or individual property—real, landed, or personal—in New Zealand, distinct from or other than such as shall and may be granted by the Society, their Superintendent or Agent; neither shall any trade or traffic whatever be carried on with the natives of New Zealand or with any ship or person touching there, but only for the general account and benefit of the mission, all private and individual trade and traffic being prohibited.

No trade with  
natives.

2nd. That the labour and services of every person engaged in this mission shall be considered as belonging to and be entirely devoted to the general purposes of the mission, and that the produce of every person's labour and services shall belong to the society, and be disposed of for the general use and benefit of the mission, as directed by the Superintendent. And every person shall do and perform whatever the Superintendent shall direct, according to the nature of his particular office, trade, and calling, and shall render an account thereof to the Superintendent from time to time, as he shall require.

Produce of  
labour to belong  
to mission.

3rd. That a sufficient number of dwellinghouses shall be erected as soon as it conveniently can be done for each person permanently engaged in the mission, and a sufficient quantity of land for a garden, yard, &c., allotted to each house; that every

Dwellinghouses  
to be erected.

1819  
Dec. 28.  
—

All property  
placed in store-  
house.

Weekly rations  
of provisions.

Medical atten-  
tion supplied.

Superin-  
tendent's  
decision final in  
disputes.

Rev. J. Butler  
appointed  
Superintendent.

family shall have a dwellinghouse, and be allowed to cultivate the allotment of land attached thereto for their private individual benefit, but to have no right whatever to the use of either house or garden land any longer than they shall continue faithfully in the service of the mission, and obedient to the regulations thereof, according to the judgement of the Superintendent.

4th. That all property of every description, either raised at the settlement, procured from the natives, and in every other way and manner whatever, shall be deposited in the mission store house, and from thence distributed to the persons engaged in the mission according to their wants, or otherwise disposed of to the best advantage for account of the mission; and that all supplies for the mission shall be also deposited in the mission store house, and from thence distributed in the same manner as above mentioned.

5th. That rations of provisions according to the following scale shall be weekly issued from the mission store by the store-keeper, to be appointed by the Superintendent, viz.: For every man, 8 lbs. flour, 5 lbs. salt pork or 7 lbs. fresh meat, 1 lb. sugar, 2 oz. tea, and  $\frac{1}{4}$  lb. of soap; for every woman, 6 lbs. flour, 4 lbs. salt pork or 6 lbs. fresh meat, 1 lb. sugar, 2 oz. tea,  $\frac{1}{4}$  lb. soap; and for every child, 4 lbs. flour, 2 lbs. salt pork or 3 lbs. fresh meat,  $\frac{1}{2}$  lb. sugar, 1 oz. tea, 2 oz. soap—per week respectively, or so much of other provisions as shall be equivalent thereto: the Superintendent to be at liberty to increase the ration if he shall find it necessary and prudent so to do: and all medical attention and medicine shall be supplied as well and sufficiently as means and circumstances will allow.

6th. For the preservation of peace, order, and good will, it is ordered that all disputes and differences between any person and persons engaged in or attached to this mission shall be examined and enquired into and determined by the Superintendent, whose decision shall be binding and conclusive on the parties, allowing an appeal to the Agent at New South Wales, or the Committee in England, to any party finding himself aggrieved by such decision.

7th. That the Superintendent shall once a month, or oftener if he shall think fit, convene a meeting of the men permanently engaged in this mission, with whom he shall consult and advise upon all matters of importance in any wise concerning or affecting the mission.

8th. That the Reverend John Butler, Superintendent of the mission appointed by the Committee of the Society, shall superintend, direct, order, and manage all and every matter and thing whatsoever and of every kind, nature, and degree belonging to, affecting, or concerning the mission at New Zealand; that all and every person engaged in and attached to the mission shall

be subject to and obey all his orders and directions according to their several offices, trades, and calling, and shall account to him for all their labour and time, and all matters entrusted to them shall receive orders from him, and make returns to him always in important matters, reserving the right of appeal as before mentioned to any party feeling themselves aggrieved.

1819

Dec. 28.

All to obey and  
account to him.

9th. That if the Superintendent shall at any time judge that the conduct of any person or persons engaged in or attached to this mission is unfaithfully and disobedient to the rules and regulations of the mission, and injurious and contrary or opposed to the great object and purposes of the mission, he, the Superintendent, shall thereupon convene a special meeting of the men permanently engaged in the mission, excepting the person or persons accused, to enquire into and decide upon the matter or accusation, and if two thirds of the members of the meeting are of opinion the person so accused ought to be suspended from the mission the Superintendent may suspend the party or parties accused until the decision of the Agent at New South Wales or Committee in England be made known thereupon, provided always that the charge or accusation be reduced to writing, as well as the opinion or decision of the said meeting, and an opportunity be given to the party accused to make his defence, the whole proceeding to be forwarded to the Agent at New South Wales and the Committee in London.

Suspension of  
unfaithful  
servants.

Send proceed-  
ings to New  
South Wales and  
London.

10th. That the Superintendent shall keep a regular journal of all the transactions of the Society and its several members, including himself, a copy of which shall be forwarded quarterly to the Agent at New South Wales and the Committee in London.

[Bigge's Appendix, Vol. 131.

REPORT ON NEW ZEALAND FLAX, BY R. WILLIAMS (ROPEMAKER).

No. 1.

REPRESENTATION of the New Zealand hemp up to 1814 after my going there, and intended to be continued up to this time, which would be very interesting.

R. WILLIAMS.

The anext papers will prove the facts of this statement.

[No date.]

[The report is without date, is not directed, and not signed. It is, most probably, an English copy of the ropemaker's statement.]

SIR,—I cannot give you a just idea of the hemp plant of New Zealand without going to great lengths by way of explaining the

Introduction of  
the plant.

1819

several trifling attempts that have been made use of to introduce it to public attention and service, and the reason why those attempts have not been carried into effect.

Phillip and King tried it at Norfolk Island. A failure for years.

Made different for it.

Mr. Lord's attempt failed.

New Zealand mode too tedious.

He always in rope trade.

Succeeded with New Zealand hemp.

Governor no attention to him.

The flax of New Zealand, more properly called hemp, has been an object of attention from the most early knowledge of that island. Governors Phillips and King were at much labour and expense and made great efforts to bring it to perfection at Norfolk Island, but the best mechanics in Europe have failed in their attempts to manufacture it at any moderate labour and expence, and all further attempts deemed useless for several years; the above-mentioned hemp requiring a different process of manufacturing to any before known or practised on hemp or flax in any part of the world.

In 1810 Mr. Lord sent an expedition with an able artist at the head of it with a great assurance of bringing it to perfection, but the vessels returned for the want of method of manufacturing it, and the only profit of the expedition was a few musters of the natives' dressing, whose method is too tedious to supply a large demand, and even what they could supply would not answer the purpose of British manufacture which has been well determined in England. Thus Mr. Lord gave up any further attempts.

I being bred from my infancy to the manufacturing of hemp and flax, and having as a flax-dresser and rope-maker performed those branches in several parts of the globe and made use of materials unknown in England, I determined in the same year to try some method with the New Zealand hemp, and was successful, and my next endeavours were to perform it by a speedy and simple method, and at such expence as would admit the exportation of the hemp to the British market. My means were very limited, and circumstances embarrassed, but well knowing the encouragement held out by the British Government for procuring hemp at this time, I persevered in the pursuit, and had the satisfaction to surmount all obstacles and satisfy myself that the hemp may be brought to use at less labour and expence than any hemp in the world. I then conceived my labour would meet with encouragement by the Governors, and knowing that hemp was an article of importance to the British Government at home and this colony in distress for cordage, and knowing myself capable of introducing a system of relief, I represented it to the Governor by memorial (No. 1), accompanied with samples of hemp and cordage in different stages of manufacture, but the Governor did not pay much attention to it, telling me he did not understand it. I then informed Mr. Lord what I was able to perform. Mr. Lord proposed an engagement, but not with such encouragement as I conceived myself entitled to. I declined it and represented the business to Messrs. Hook, Birnie, Blaxcell, and others, but my



proposals were coolly received, the business having met with many miscarriages, but they did not induce me to decline my pursuits, and having a few of the plants in the country, I continued to improve my methods and gain experience, and produced such samples that convinced the public that something might be done. Mr. Lord again made proposals, but we could not come to terms to my satisfaction for want of capital.

1819

Others cool on it.

Want of capital.

Messrs. Birnie, Hook, and Gordon requested me to make proposals which were agreed upon—viz., to send a vessel with twenty men and other means to perform such manufacture as I should point out if I gave proofs that my method of manufacturing would answer the purpose. If after signing our engagement I produced such proofs of my abilities to perform more than I had proposed that Mr. Birnie wished to commence on a much larger scale than had been proposed, but the question was whether there was a sufficient quantity of hemp plant in being, and such were the proofs I had given on my part that instead of commencing on the small scale proposed Mr. Birnie determined to send a vessel and explore the island, and if the hemp were in sufficient abundance to make choice of a suitable place for establishing our manufactory and return and then to commence on a very extensive scale, and make use of every means that could be applied.

Flax-hunting in New Zealand vessel of exploration.

This went beyond my engagement to go more than once, and Mr. Birnie proposed my waiting for the vessel's return, but having made my arrangements for the voyage, and desiring that some information might be acquired, I accompanied the voyage—Mr. Murry, master, with a good crew, Mr. Gordon, and Mr. Jones, to conduct the voyage and to represent what was possible to be done and to what extent. When we sailed I understood we were to coast the west side of the island to the South Cape, where we had been informed there was the greatest abundance of hemp, but whatever induced Mr. Jones to accompany the voyage I am at a loss to know (Mr. Jones was the clerk to Mr. Birnie), for we were not three days at sea when Mr. Jones expressed his regret at going, and heartily wished to fall in with some vessel to take him back, or that the weather might oblige us to return; this was the theme of our voyage for three weeks. Mr. Jones represented the west coast too dangerous to approach, so that the first land we saw was Solander's Island, in about twenty days. Very fine weather, but variable head winds. We fortunately had very fine weather to take five men off Solander's Island that had been from four to five years on it, destitute of relief, and hopeless of ever being taken off, and the same night came to anchor in Port Williams, in Foveaux Straits, a very safe and still harbour, landlocked on all sides. The next day came on to rain and blow very hard, but we lay very snug; yet Mr. Jones did not think so, he

Were there plants enough to work it in New Zealand?

He went on the voyage.

Took five off an island.

1819

New Zealand  
adventures.Search for  
hemp and  
working-station.

Foveaux Straits.

Natives and  
survey.

said as there was no hemp in Port Williams, and the weather continuing very bad for several days, there was no hope of doing any more, and as the wind was fair for Sydney we had better return. I was then at a loss to know which commanded our expedition; Mr. Gordon seemed very interested in it and would not consent to return. At length the weather clearing up a little Mr. Gordon and myself went on shore to try some experiments on the hemp, where Mr. Gordon had the misfortune to cut his leg very dangerously with the axe, and no boat on shore, and a long way from the brig, it was night before we could get a boat to take us on board. This was a misfortune to our expedition, for the only hope of seconding my exertions was Mr. Gordon, and he was now confined to his cabin. Mr. Murray (now pilot to this port) was well acquainted with this part of the island, and represented the hemp in great abundance on the opposite side the straits on the main, but no knowledge of anchorage for the vessel, and it was determined to cross the straits in the boat, Mr. Jones, Mr. Murray, and five hands in one boat, and Mr. Smith, the second officer, with five hands and myself, in the other, all armed with provisions for several days. We were in pursuit of five objects which are necessary to be combined in one view—viz., abundance of hemp, wood, and water, and means to collect them, and anchorage for the vessel. Foveaux Straits is about twenty-five miles over from Port Williams to Port Macquarie, as named by Mr. Jones, the entrance of which was unknown before to be capable of receiving a vessel. I have given a chart\* or view of this place as far as my abilities would admit from several very commanding views with the naked eye. The entrance of this harbour was supposed to be a reef of sand banks, but Mr. Murray sounded it from side to side and found plenty of water for vessels of burthen and anchorage inside. We met with a native at the entrance of the bay, who seemed glad to see us, but could get no information from him, having no person to speak his language. We were at a loss to know where to land. The tide ebbing, we grounded several times, and the native seemed so indifferent on the subject. At length we landed, and gave our new companion to understand that we wanted to find his village. He readily made signs to follow him. We left the boats in charge of four hands, and travelled several miles over swampy lands, covered with hemp, in general over the shoes in water—no timber of any kind; Mr. Jones wished to decline going any further; Mr. Murray and myself proceeded till we came to a large bay covered with water; the native informed us it was fordable here. Mr. Jones declined going any further, and returned with the car-

\* This chart has not been preserved with the papers.—F.M.B.

penter to the boat; Mr. Murray, myself, and the rest of the party proceeded, and crossed the bay, which did not exceed knee-deep; hard sandy bottom. We then crossed a ridge of hills and valleys covered with hemp, and on the opposite side found the native's village, chiefly of women and children, and a few old men. They gave us to understand that the men were gone on some expedition for some time, but I was apprehensive they were lying in ambush. We spent the night with them, keeping a watch during it, and they made us as comfortable as they could in their hut. In the morning Mr. Murray and myself examined the source of the bay we crossed the day before, and when we signified our intention of returning the women loaded themselves with large baskets of potatoes and accompanied us to the boat. We found the large bay we had crossed the day before completely dry and covered with paradise ducks, which induced me to name it Duck Bay. The natives took us a shorter cut back, and found Mr. Jones and the boat high and dry. When he found we were so well received by the natives he proposed going to their village the next day, after getting some refreshment. I asked Mr. Jones and Mr. Murray to accompany me in search of a nearer and better way to Duck Bay, which I thought was the case from the notice I took the day before, for though we had seen plenty of hemp, wood, and water, still there would be a difficulty in collecting them. In the afternoon we went and came to a thick brush where I expected to find a passage, but Mr. Jones and Mr. Murray declined attempting it. I proceeded alone and found it a complete barrier of brush and old timber fallen down from old age. On the eve of returning I fell in with an old beaten path that took me through to Duck Bay, where I found a large valley of the best hemp we had seen, and as regularly set as if planted by the hands of man. In the middle of the brush I found an old tent, but fallen with age, and it was visible that the trade from Duck Bay met here, which I considered an object of importance to our undertaking, as a little labour would open a passage from sea to sea in the centre of everything we wanted. I had some difficulty in making my way through the hemp and fern till I came to our first track from Duck's Bay to Jones Island, where the boat lay, and where I arrived at dusk, and informed Mr. Jones of the success of my journey. Next day our party went to the village. Mr. Jones, the carpenter, and myself went to the new road I had pointed out, as I wished them to give their opinions of what I thought our grand object; but I found our party more in pursuit of other amusements, and they left me and went the old road. We came to the village, and Mr. Murray and myself examined the channel that led to Duck Bay and found it navigable for boats. On our return from Duck Bay the tide was

1819

Native village.

Present of potatoes.

Duck Bay.

Bush travelling in New Zealand.

Found best hemp.

Prospect of settlement there.



1819

Difficulty with  
companions.

Exploration  
opposed.

Duck's Bay  
hemp.

Return to the  
brig at Port  
Williams from  
Port Macquarie.

Homeward  
bound.

flowing, and I asked Mr. Jones a second time to go the shortest way through the bush to ascertain the meeting of the tides, and to determine whether this would be a proper place to establish our manufactory. Mr. Jones told me he had enough of it, and that I might go myself, which I did with the carpenter. We met at the boat. Mr. Jones said he would go over to the vessel. In the morning, at daylight, I remonstrated with him that the bay seemed formed by nature to answer all our wishes, though we knew very little of it at present, and our principal object now wanted was a stream of water. He said he would stay no longer, and that we would find that the next time we came, and that we had spent enough time here. In the morning the tide would not allow us to depart till eleven o'clock. I then proposed to take a week round the west side of the bay, towards the Heads. Mr. Jones said he would wait no longer than dinner, being cooked at 10 a.m. I took a biscuit in my pocket, and went by myself, but not knowing what kind of travelling I should meet with, and intending to meet the boat at the Heads, and as I had an opportunity of seeing them about six or seven miles round the bay pass in the boat, I was to fix a signal to be taken on board in case I could not make my way to the Heads. I passed several large tracks of hemp and rivulets of water, but my time would not admit me to examine the source of them. I saw large quantities of hemp all round that side of the bay, and most of it from seven to ten feet long, and excellent soil. I found no difficulty in getting to the Heads, it being ebb tide and hard sandy bottom. I made the Heads about four o'clock, and made a fire on the hill. In this situation I was a little alarmed at not seeing the boat, and this the place where we took the native from the first day. In an hour after the boat arrived, having gone into a bay to look for me. It was then proposed to camp there for the night, and cross over to Port Williams in the morning. The only two men we saw among the natives came with the boat; the rest were gone for more potatoes, but Mr. Jones would not wait their return. At daylight the next morning we launched the boat. The two natives seemed much concerned to part with us. We did not wait the return of their companions with more potatoes, and the two natives bid us a very friendly adieu. We rowed most of the passage, and made the brig in the afternoon, all well. Mr. Murray and myself had a hope of taking the brig over and acquiring more knowledge of Port Macquarie and the neighbourhood round, and Mr. Gordon was of the same opinion, but Mr. Jones over-ruled all, and determined to get under weigh next day for Sydney, which was the case. We cleared the straits that night, and stood along the eastern shore, but scarcely saw it till we made Banks Island, and after standing towards it



from daylight in the morning till one or two in the afternoon, came within four miles of a fine harbour. We saw a large village distinctly. It was intended to go in, but Mr. Jones declined, saying it would be only loosing time. Stood along the land till we opened a large bay. Saw several large smacks. Stood under easy sail till daylight next morning. Found ourselves close in with Table Cape. Run seven or eight miles into the bay, fired a gun. Fires were lighted on shore. Saw the natives. Mr. Jones became timid and about ship again, and stood out of the bay. Mr. Murray having some knowledge of Table Cape stood close round it. Saw large tribes of natives on shore launching their canoes. Hove the vessel to. The natives brought potatoes and mats for trade; a spike nail would buy a hundred weight of potatoes, and a woman offered to sell her little boy, her son, for a tomahawk, but the child crying we would not take him, though the mother would part with him; but I saw no hemp. The natives gave me to understand that they had plenty of that article on shore, and they went for it, but we waited not their return, Mr. Jones thinking it not safe, but made sail along the shore. The canoes continued coming after us, trading as before. The natives in general all along gave me to understand that they had abundance of hemp on shore, which article (I am sorry to say) excited not the least attention of our party, for the grand object of our voyage seemed now totally forgot. We had a fine breeze from the west, and the vessel laid along shore under easy sail and smooth water. We had every opportunity of visiting every mile of the coast, sailing along, and I had no doubt of our being able to have collected some tons of hemp from the natives, which would have turned to good account; but Mr. Jones became impatient of getting home, said it was no use of creeping along shore, and that if we stood off the land we should have a fine breeze that would drive us home. Mr. Murray and Mr. Gordon were of a different opinion, but yet they gave way to him, and we soon felt the effects of a stiff breeze, which drove us to the north and east for several weeks, the vessel making great leeway. We nevermore saw the land any more. We might have made the North Cape, but all further attempts we declined, to come home. We made Port Jackson after a voyage of twelve weeks as wise as we went had not Port Macquarie fortunately formed by nature to answer all the purpose for a large establishment, and though I had been greatly disappointed in not having numerous choices of situations which most likely would have been the case had our means been made good use of, yet it gave me a deal of consolation that I accompanied the voyage, for I found Port Macquarie so well suited to answer all our wishes that I am positive much more might be done than ever was expected

1819

Eastern side of  
New Zealand.Timid Mr.  
Jones.Large tribes  
Table Cape.Nail for 1 cwt.  
potatoes and  
a child for a  
tomahawk.Jones opposes  
hemp collection.Out twelve  
weeks.His sense of  
good voyage.

|  |  |
|--|--|
| 1819                                   | before we sailed from the general information we had received  |
| His part in the search.                | And had I not been there nothing would have been known of it, for Mr. Jones would have returned with the boat to Port Williams had I not acted in opposition to his inclinations, and the short time I was permitted was always in search of such objects I knew requisite for an establishment, and every hour opened important objects in view; and though hurried away with great reluctance, still am satisfied that great means may be applied to great advantages. Near the native village is a very high sandy hill, commanding a view of lowlands as far as the eye could discern, covered with hemp, and I have no doubt it was the case where we travelled, and as far as we could discern there was no timber on the lowlands except in patches, and that very thick brush. The natives here seemed to be only a few families detached from the main. They were remarkably kind to us, though I was informed they had been ill-treated by some Europeans some time before. Mr. Murray had lived in Port Williams many months, and was dependent on them for fish and potatoes, and they would have given him as many as he pleased, but Mr. Murray had never been in Port Macquarie. I have no doubt but these natives, with proper treatment, would be of great service to a hemp establishment. They were very poor, but I saw great industry in their potato gardens, which were kept remarkably clean. Fish and potatoes seemed to be their chief dependence. Had we but spent six days at Port Macquarie instead of three I think many more favourable advantages would have presented themselves, but such were the ideas I had formed of the situation |
| The best locality.                     | on my departure that I had arranged every point of an establishment, independent of any further discoveries, and had not the least idea but it would have been cheerfully embraced on our return to Sydney, but so strange were the events of this expedition that the principal persons intended for conducting and representing the voyage, one was wounded and could not go on shore and the others seemed inclined to suppress every effort made. On my return I was asked why we had done so little. I then represented Port Macquarie as a suitable place for a large establishment, and by what means I was informed by Mr. Birnie that they had different accounts from Mr. Jones. I then gave such explanations as were requisite and referred it to Mr. Murray and officers of the vessel, whose opinion was nearly as my own, and tho' we had not done what was expected, I understood the business was to be proceeded in bound for England.   |
| Native conduct.                        | Mr. Birnie told me he wished to send a representation of the business to England, and requested me to send some musters home, but I was very ill provided for such a request, for we had no means for performing my work when we sailed; neither was   |
| Expected all to go on.                 |  |
| The obstructive man of Port Macquarie. |  |
| Make known in England.                 |  |

it intended till we commenced on a large scale, for all parties were fully satisfied my method of manufacturing was practicable, and to help with it would give others an opportunity who were anxious to act on our principles. Under these reasons I declined any experiments in New Zealand except a few stems of the raw plant I brought for curiosity, and to ascertain what effect the voyage would make on them. In this case I told Mr. Birnie I would construct a small machine and clean the plants we had brought, and as I had some hopes and stood in need of assistance from the Governor, I therefore would request him to see it put in practice, which would do away all doubts of the business and secure the merits of my own labour. I completed my machine and presented a memorial to the Governor, a copy of which I have accompanied with this, which will represent my idea, the import value of the New Zealand hemp. His Excellency was pleased to inspect the operation of cleaning and preparing the hemp, and was pleased to express his approbation by a promise of to give it every encouragement in his power to carry it into effect. Mr. Birnie now signified his intentions of postponing all further proceedings in the affair till he had heard from England; his reason for so doing was owing to the representation Mr. Jones had given of it. I now found myself much hurt at this information, having put myself to great expense and trouble, and the only recompense left me was to see others reap the benefit of my labours and exertions, and of sustaining great embarrassments by being led astray in my expectations from my usual pursuits. I was very unwilling of Mr. Birnie's sending these musters home which he had, being much damaged. They have been brought over in the green leaf and remained several weeks after our arrival, and were only intended to show the operation of the machinery by way of improvement. I informed Mr. Birnie the impropriety of sending them. If I had known when I sailed to New Zealand that it was intended to send samples to England I would have taken care to provide myself with the means to prepare such samples of hemp and cordage as would put them beyond the reach of doubts or prejudice. The musters which were sent were too trifling for inspection, and even the best of them were lost or made away before they were packed up in the case for England, and I then gave it as my opinion that if they were not properly explained at home they would lead judges of hemp astray in their opinion of the New Zealand hemp. This hemp has always been called flax, but it is hemp completely, which is easily discerned by proper judges of that article. And I shall now produce musters that will convey a just idea of the value of them, and represent from my own knowledge and experience by what means and to what extent it may be brought to

1819

Disappointment.

Appeal to Governor.

Governor encourages it.

Injured by Jones in prospect and resources.

Damaged specimens sent.

Could have sent good samples.

Not flax but hemp.



1819

use, I being now employed in furnishing the public with manufactured articles of an excellent quality, which I can perform with less labour than on any hemp in England.

Articles wanted for work.

Exclusive of furnishing the British market with hemp, this colony and others may be supplied with cordage and canvass with great advantage, for the cheap production of this hemp would admit of three articles to market at a moderate price for manufacturing. The only articles wanted from England would be six sets of hatchets, a few dozen of reeds for weaving duck and canvass, a set of looms compleat would be far better and cheaper for twine spinners, jacks of small sizes, a few dozen of wheel-bands; the whole of which would not exceed £100.

Hemp experiments.

The following experiments will give a good idea to what extent the hemp may be brought exclusive of its natural productions. I cut from one tuft or stool 80 blades of hemp which did not occupy more than four feet of ground in circumference, and when brought to Sydney seven of these blades produced a pound of nett hemp of 8 ft. long, and the whole of them would have produced the same had they not been damaged in the voyage. The pound of hemp was cleaned in five minutes, in presence of the Governor. One sapor plant transplanted from the Governor's garden in June, 1813, and cut that time in less than two years, and then I divided into nine slips, the whole of these plants producing young leaves an inch long in seven days. Three of these plants are going to England in the Sydney Packet, I understand, to ascertain the proper age and season for cutting this plant; but I find it may be cut all the year round, with very little difference in the quality of the hemp; and I am positive that before all the hemp in the neighbourhood of Port Macquarie could be gathered and cleared the first cut would be fit for cutting again and produce better hemp. There

Produce.

Sorts of hemp.

are several species of the hemp plant, some producing seeds and some not. I have seen those producing seeds 10 feet high, and others not exceeding 3 feet, which produced the finest hemp.

NEW ZEALAND HEMP.

To Mr. James Birnie. -

Williams to Birnie, 1813.  
Hemp proposals of Williams.

PROPOSALS of agreement to be entered into by the partys here named the one finding principal of money and evrey other requisite ships or vessels of such description as may be required men provishons &c. and such machinere has may be wanted to carrey into efect a hemp manufactory at New Zealand and to export the hemp to Port Jackson, England or such ports as may seeme most advantageous to the partys concerned for 7 years



and has the above hemp manufactory will prove advantageous to the partys concerned and renders grate assistance to this colnoey by a general suply of cordage of evrey discription in a few months and large cargos of hemp may be exported in twelve or eighteen months at most, wich most likely wold meet with some incuragement by Government has grate atention has been paid to it and no method discovered to manufacture it at any moderate expence ontell the person here named Rt Williams have discovered a method and entering into agreement and bond for seven years to put the above method into exercution and on the fowling conditions :—

1819  
Proposed agree-  
ment on  
Williams's side.

That a certain sum shall be aplyed to that perpos and per-  
mishon from His Excelece I will engage to go to New Zealand  
and make use of such arts and discovery that I ham in persession  
of to the best advantage of the concern and remain at New  
Zeland till such times the buissness there can be conducted  
with out me wich in three months I think may be done I will  
then return to Port Jackson and establish a rope and cordage  
manufactory at the expence of the partys I ingaged with wich  
manufactory I will superintend and direct the makeing of as  
much rope and cordage as shall suply this colonni by a suply of  
hemp from the concern I ingage with, and for such discovery  
arts and services, I will engage for the term of seven years, on  
the twentyth day of the general concern, the party I engage  
with supporting me with provishons, and logings has comfort-  
able has circumstances will admit, while on the passage to and  
from New Zeland and as long it shall be tought adviseable to  
remain there, and that I shall not be left at New Zeland with  
out a proper vessel remaining on the spot, unless by mutual  
agreement in wrighting under certain bonds which shall be  
afixed at a proper time but on my return to Port Jackson I will  
keep myself at my hone expence by receiving from the concern  
such supplys of mones or goods has shall be reasonable for the  
suport of my selfe and wife the same being chargeable to my  
account till a return from the general concern shall be suficient  
for a reasonable subsistance.

Payment for  
service.

Hard bargain.

If the above terms are not a grable I will popose the fowling :—

Viz. I will proceed to New Zeland under the same proposals  
of living on the expedition but instead of a lay I will receive  
two hundred and fifty pounds sterling in the fowling way.  
Under this restricktion if my plan of machinerey method and  
principal of working his deemed youceless and of know value  
to the concern and such being pronounced by proper persons  
apointed by both partys to examen such pice of machinere  
I will produce a complete model of which I will put in actual  
mothian upon a deminative scale and at the same time discribe

Alternative  
proposal.

Modest request.

1819  
---

such process has shall be required to put the hemp in a proper and paractable state for a regular bred rope maker to perform his work in such methods that are made youce of in London on the none performance of such statements my agreement shall be nul and void.

If plan con-  
demned, more  
conditions.

If approved,  
pay.

Pay on working  
it.

Will return  
money.

Help under  
sentence.

Cash wanted.

But if my method be condend the parties shall bind them selves in a bond and penalty of £1,000 sterlg. not to engage men to asist anney others on or under the same plan or princecipal of operation for the space of seven years but should the method be aproved the £250 required shall be rendered as follows one £150 six days prior to sailing of the vessel employed and on the return should the partys conceive it a prosperous undertaken I will then decline aney further clame at New Zeland on this principal I will have a privelege of carraing on a rope walk on my own account and then receive £100 wich sum will be required to complete a rope walk, and then as much hemp has I can make youce of in the colony at £30 per ton or at ten per cent less then such shall sell for in London the said hemp to be paid for one half in 3 months and the other in 6 months then I will supply the real concern with what rope and cordage they may want for their colonial vessels at ten per cent from prime cost of hemp to me and the expence of workmanship and has a supply of tar will be wanted I will supply cordage at prime cost on condishons of receiveing tar at prime cost and the expence of frate-age this for the term of seven years but on the return of the first vessel if it shall be determined to give up the bissness finding it will not answer I will not expect the last £100 but refund back £50 out of the £150 reed. in six months after my arrival in Port Jackson by working in my perfeshon and such goods I may have disposed of.

Thirdly I being under sentence of the law the partys engaged with shall do thear endavour to gain a maidagation by peticion the Governor or such way they may have in thiar power to request it with perprity ether in this colony or England.

The 150 required is to discharg Capt. Robinsons account with Mr. Jones and the remain for subsistance for my wife which will require nothing further till I return should this engagement be sanctioned and any premium or advantage privilege or otherwise be given each party concerned to share equally in the advantage.

[Agreement put aside.]

#### NEW ZEALAND HEMP.

Agreement pro-  
posed to  
Williams on  
rejection of his  
proposal, March  
25th, 1813.

THIS agreement made and fully agreed upon this 25th day of March 1813 by and between James Birnie of Sydney in His Majesty's territory of New South Wales merchant of the one

part and Robert Williams of Sydney aforesaid rope maker of the other part, witnesseth that whereas the said Robert Williams having discovered the method of cleaning, preparing, or manufacturing the flax plant growing on the islands of New Zealand doth hereby agree to and with the said James Birnie that he will engage himself to proceed in a vessel provided by the said James Birnie to such part of the said islands as may be deemed most advantageous for procuring the said plant there to erect his machinery for the purpose of cleaning or preparing it for a foreign market and that he will use his utmost skill and ability in instructing such persons as may be sent down by the said James Birnie in cleaning, preparing, and manufacturing the said article of flax and that he will discover and disclose to the said James Birnie and the persons so sent all the secrets or misteries thereof and also the machinery whereby it is to be so dressed or prepared the expences of which machinery in its construction is to be at the own proper cost and expence of the said James Birnie, and the said James Birnie hereby agrees to and with the said Robert Williams to find him in every necessary comfort of a passage with sufficient provisions and necessaries during the voyage to and from New Zealand. In consideration of the service and discovery of the secret or method aforesaid the said James Birnie binds and obliges himself to pay or cause to be paid to the said Robert Williams one full twentieth part of whatever flax may be brought up from New Zealand the voyage which he proceeds on immediately on its being landed at Sydney and he also binds himself and his assigns that he will after that period deliver to the said Robert Williams so long as he may find it beneficial to carry on the said speculation for flax to New Zealand whatever quantity of flax he the said R. W. may want for the supply of his rope walk he paying for the same at such reasonable rate as may be put upon it from time to time by two indifferent merchants resident in the Town of Sydney aforesaid.

1819

To tell secrets  
of work.Consideration  
one-twentieth  
flax.

[On the same sheet and in the rope-maker's hand is written below "Proposals not agreed to by me.—(Signed) R. WILLIAMS."]

#### HEMP OR FLAX QUESTION.

(Williams's Replies to Mr. Birnie's Proposals.)

SIR,—Having received a writing reply from my proposials to you of the 24th I find they have no correspondence with the principal heads of mine on which my interest depends at a future period and having well considered their principals I cannot without injury to my present circumstances retract from them

(Copied after  
correction ?)

Cannot retract.

1819

or otherwise give up what I am in possession of without any certain profits.

All one-sided  
bargain.

Competitors if  
no protection.

Poor prospect.

However it is my determination to enter into no agreement unless for a certain time (or otherwise) a certain principal of money applyed to that purpose, for this particular reason, in your proposals you have it at discretion on the return of the first vessel to decline the undertaking then others have the opportunity to carry on the concern on whom I have no claim on and with respect to receiving hemp for my use it must be at prime cost or others will have it in their power to manufactory cordage at a much cheaper rate than I shall unless a pattern or some priviledge be granted by Government or otherwise and if that is not given other speculative merchants have it in their power to surplant my manufactory by sending vessels to New Zealand to procure large supplys of hemp and work it up to a greater advantage and much cheaper than I can by receiving it at such price has shall be affixed by two indifferent merchants which brings it to very little short of market price and instead of receiving emoluments for discovering the important concern, I reduce myself from a comfortable business to seek an employ as a journey man.

#### PROPOSED AGREEMENT BETWEEN S. LORD, ESQ., AND R. WILLIAMS.

His inventive  
success.

To get 100 tons  
hemp for Lord.

I THE said Robert Williams having discovered a ready and simple method of claneing the hemp plant, of New Zealand, by harts means methods and mathineney, of my hone construction, peculiar to my self the same having been put in actual practis, by me and never performed or made youce of, by aney other person, the same aarts meanes methods and mathinery, haveing been put in practice in presence of several respectable persons, and, His Excelency the Governor, and aproved of, and found to answer the purpose of bring(ing) the above hemp, into the service of the British Navy, and to be procured in large quantities and moderate expence and I the said, Robert Williams, do bind and engage myself with the said Sim Lord Esqr. to proceed to such parts of New Zealand, and procure 100 tons of hemp on the following condishons:—

Wants ship,  
men, and arms,  
muskets, and  
cannon.

I R. W. will diinct the construction of such mathinary, and other apparatus needfull to perform the above services at verey moderate expence and the same to be lasting and duriable the same to be at the expence of S. Lord, who shall further provide the brigg Trial or anney other vessel of that discription properly equipt and in a condishon to perform such services, and the said S. Lord shall further provide R. W. with fifteen able men,



exclusife of the vessel crew, to be under his R. W. diriction, in procureing this above hemp, and the S. Lord shall provide R. W. with fifteen serviceable muskets, and 2,000 runds of ammunishon, one or more small cannon, or swivel, or such other aarms or meanes of defence to shall place the said R. W. in a state of defence, should the natives of New Zeland attempt anney hostile deperadations against the person or property under the charge of R. W. who shall make choice of such bay, port, or place he may think best calculated for fixing his machinerey, and buildings and collecting the gratest quantity of hemp and for the gratest length of time to best and grate advantage, of S. Lord, and to the real interest of the said S. Lord inlargeing the establisling, and the R. W. binds himself to act in concerting and adviceing with the master of the said vessel or vessels or anney other person the said S. Lord shall apoint, in fixing on the intended place of work, provided the said persons shall be not less intrested in the hemp, then R. W. who will pay no attention to anney other concern, he is not interested in, and after fixing and erecting such buildings needfull for the safety of the persons and property, under the direction of the said R. W. and for the futher storeing such hemp as may hereafter collect, and should the said S. Lord direct, the said vessel to anney other persuett, the master or anney other person apointed shall deliver to R. W. nine months provishons for himself and fifteen men of the same equality and proportion specified in the articles sined by the men with the above mentioned aarms and ammunition and such other stores, and articals of trade entered and put on board the said vessel, for the said R. W., and R. W. binds himself to teach instruct such person or persons the said S. Lord shall apoint, to superceed the R. W. in the management of the above work to the best of his judgemet during the time, he the said R. W. be collecting the 100 tons of hemp and packing and steweing the said hemp in a safe and sound condishon for delivering on bord such ship or vessel S. Lord shall apoint and the said S. Lord binds himself at the time the 100 tons of hemp shall be stored has above to cause a proper vessel at the S. Lord's expence to receive the said R. W. on board to gether with his lawful goods, and also six tons of the above 100 tons of hemp so collected by him to be put on a sund safe and trustworthey ship or other proper vessel bound direct for Port Jackson and on the arival of the said vessel in Port Jackson R. W. shall be at liberty to disembark with his lawful goods and the above six tons of hemp free of all charge and expence on condishors of R. W. first secureing the sum or sums advanced by the said S. Lord on account of R. W. entering in to this ingagement and the said R. W. shall

1819

Advice with  
captain.Provide for ship  
leaving.Will instruct  
others.He to have 6  
tons of 100.

|                               |  |
|-------------------------------|--|
| 1819<br>Hemp, £50 per<br>ton. | be at libert to pay the above advancement in hemp at fifty pounds sterling per ton and it is to be understood that the above six tons of hemp is considered has a remuneration for the above services of the said R. W. in this engagement. But should it be the case the said R. W. is not removed to Sydney at the expence of S. Lord wen the first 100 tons of hemp shall be ready for imbarcking the said R. W. will continy in his charge of the work and make youce of his exportations to the best advantage of has above and continue to do so for nine months if suplyd with provishons by the said S. Lord for the time. But should it so happen is not to according to intent of this engagement removed from the said place of work at the expiration of nine months the said R. W. receive the proportion of ten tons out of evrey 100 tons so procuered after the first 100 tons and at the expirations of nine months the S. Lord shall not cause the said R. W. be brought to Port Jackson to gather with his lawfull goods and his just proportion of hemp has above steted and provided and that in a ship or vessel proper adapted for such services and the said R. W. on the arival of such in Port Jacksen to be at liberty to disembark with his geods and hemp free of all charge and encumberance as above said in this clause at the time to be accountable to the said S. Lord for his conduct in fulfing this ingagement, and R. W. further binds himself in case anney vessel acttully employed in the fulling this engagement shall meet with anney accident and shall stand in need of the assistance of R. W. and such persons under his charge in substituteing cordage or anney other assistance in repairing anney damage the said may sustain in her services to the intrrest of this ingagement to render evrey asistance in power free of anney charge unless it should tend to defate the proscieuting of this engagement and in such case to youse evry to relive the said vessel in a reasonable being made in this engagement with all partys on a proper investigation and in case anney vessel not implan to the intrrest of this ingagement the said R. W. shall be at liberty to make the best barter or bargain he can to the interest of S. Lord and himself for such cordage he may have it in his power to suply or if nessiary to hevens the benefits of such barter to assistance of the said undertaking and in case of the nine moths provishons shall be expended and no suplys forwarded or arived the said R. W. binds himself to yose his exhotaions to encourage the men under his charge in making youce of evrey meanes of suport and to protect such hemp and stores then on the spot and if possable to continue the above imployment on condishons of being empowered to give them the half of what the other hemp and provishons shall be collect at their expense the same to be considered a reward for |
| His interest in<br>tons.      |  |
| Repair ship<br>accidents.     |  |
| If no supplies<br>come.       |  |

thiar endavours without anney clame to wages untill provissions shall arive and in case the said R. W. shall be releved at the expiration of twelve months and brought

1819

[The rest lost.]

### NEW SOUTH WALES.

ARTICLES of agreement had, made and fully agreed and concluded on the                      day of                      in the year of our Lord one thousand eight hundred and fourteen by and between Simeon Lord and Garnham Blaxcell of Sydney, merchants, on behalf of themselves and the New South Wales New Zealand Company of the one part, and Mr. Robert Williams of the same place, rope maker, hemp and flax dresser, of the other part: Witness that the said Simeon Lord and Garnham Blaxcell as aforesaid engage, undertake and agree to furnish such suitable ships or vessels as may be required for carrying on a hemp trade from New Zealand to Port Jackson, also to see that the said vessels are properly equipped and stored with provissions and stores and manned with a proper compliment of men for six months; also that the same Simeon Lord and Garnham Blaxcell bind themselves &c. as aforesaid to provide not less than sixteen effective men exclusive of the ship's crew above mentioned with stores and provissions for six months together with proper materials for building habitations for the men employed and such store houses as may be required, also that the said Simeon Lord and Garnham Blaxcell shall furnish such machinery and other implements and aparatus as the said Robert Williams shall give directions to be constructed for the purpose of cleansing and manufacturing the hemp plant of New Zealand; and the said Robert Williams aforesaid on his part engages, undertakes and agrees, as soon as the above-mentioned vessels, provissions, aparatus, and men are ready to embark on board the same, and to proceed to Port William in New Zealand or such other place in New Zealand as he shall judge best calculated for carrying on the said hemp manufactory, and will, after landing accordingly proceed to the erection of such buildings and machinery as are necessary for the above purposes; also, the said Robert Williams will exert himself in the use of such arts, methods and discoveries as he may have acquired or made in manufacturing the hemp plant of New Zealand, also in communicating according to the best of his skill and judgment the above mentioned arts, methods and discoveries to such persons as the said Simeon Lord and Garnham Blaxcell shall appoint to succeed him in conducting the said works which the said Robert Williams pledges himself to do within the space of six months after his arrival

R. Williams v.  
S. Lord and G.  
Blaxcell.  
Agreement,  
1814.

New South  
Wales and New  
Zealand  
Company.

They provide  
hemp ship for  
trade.

Settlement  
provided for  
New Zealand

Each part to  
do for Port  
William.



1819

To start trade in  
Sydney.

200 shares £50  
each in  
company.

Williams have  
twelve of £50,  
but in hand of  
S. Lord and G.  
Blaxcell.

To support  
Williams's wife.

£500 bond to  
keep deed.

after which time the said Robert Williams shall be at liberty to return by the earliest conveyance to Port Jackson, there to commence and carry on the manufacture of cordage and canvass for the benefit of the proposed company above mentioned. And for all such services to be well and faithfully performed by the said Robert Williams, the said Simeon Lord and Garnham Blaxcell for and on account of the said proposed company (which is not to consist of more than two hundred shares of £50 sterling each) promise, engage and agree that the said Robert Williams shall have and hold twelve of the above mentioned fifty pound shares which shall be made out and signed in his own name and that they the said Simeon Lord and Garnham Blaxcell will pay and advance the sum necessary for such shares for and on the account of the said Robert Williams. But it is clearly to be understood that the said twelve shares shall be and remain in the hands of the said Simeon Lord and Garnham Blaxcell until the said Robert Williams has repaid their first cost. It is moreover clearly to be understood that during the absence of the said Robert Williams from Sydney, in the employ of the aforesaid company, the said Simeon Lord and Garnham Blaxcell as aforesaid shall provide him with all necessary comforts and provisions free from every charge and expence whatever and that the same Simeon Lord and Garnham Blaxcell shall during the absence of the said Robert Williams from Sydney as aforesaid advance from time to time such sum or sums as may be required for the support of his wife Mary Williams, by the said Mary Williams the same being chargeable to his account, and payable in common, and in like manner with the money advanced as the purchase money of the twelve shares above mentioned, *i.e.* out of the profits arising from the proposed manufacture of the New Zealand hemp. Finally it is clearly to be understood that if this commodity be not sold at Sydney or no immediate returns be made and the said commodity be exported to a foreign market the said Simeon Lord and Garnham Blaxcell shall make such other arrangement for the constant support of the said Robert Williams and family as shall be concluded necessary till such returns be made. For the said performance of the several matters and things in these articles of agreement contained according to the tenor and true meaning and intent thereof, the said parties hereto mutually bind themselves each to the other in the penal sum of five hundred pounds sterling to be forfeited by and recovered from either party making default in the premises. In witness whereof the said parties have hereunto set their hands and affixed their seals the day and year first above written.

Signed, sealed and delivered in the presence of—[No names given].



[Church Missionary House.

1820

Jan. 12.

REV. S. MARSDEN TO REV. J. BUTLER.

MY VERY DEAR SIR,—

Parramatta, Jany. 12, 1820.

I have the pleasure to inform you that we had a fine passage in the Active to Port Jackson, where I found all my family well, and daughters shortly after at the Lord's table. I had suffered much anguish of mind when at N. Zealand at the very horrid idea which some entertained of my children; my spirits were more wounded than at any thing I had met with in my life. They devote their time to instruct the ignorant and to guide the poor wanderer; no wicked insinuations will ever cause me to relinquish my labours for the good of New Zealanders. . . .

Will always  
work for New  
Zealand.

With respect to myself, I can say but little as yet. I have not seen the Governor since my return, nor am likely to see him. How matters will end I cannot tell as yet—but I think I shall carry my point. Our differences is now before the House of Commons. The whole state of the colony will now come before the House. I think the Governor will not remain long in the colony. Whether I shall return to England or not is yet uncertain, but I rather think that I shall remain where I am. Several members of the House of Commons have warmly espoused my cause, and have pledged themselves to see justice done to my character. The Governor must be very angry. What will be done here I cannot tell as yet. No doubt every attempt will be tried to do me all the injury possible. I have determined to maintain the contest unto the end. The foundation upon which I stand is truth, and I only have to maintain my ground, and not to be driven from my post by any attacks, and then I must conquer. I may have hard to fight. We are expecting arrivals from England every day, when I shall know more. I think it probable two King's ships will come out, and after they have landed their prisoners will visit New Zealand for spars. If they do I shall visit you again if I can obtain permission. . . .

Matters now  
before the House  
of Commons.

Several  
members  
espoused his  
cause.

Expecting two  
King's ships.

I have had repeated conversations with the Commissioner respecting New Zealand, and I hope Government will attend to it when the present powers that be are removed. I shall embrace every opportunity to promote the interest of the country you live in, so that you may depend at all times upon my support while I remain in this colony. . . .

I remain, &amp;c.,

SAML. MARSDEN.

Rev'd. J. Butler.

1820

Jan. 14.

[Church Missionary Society.]

REV. S. MARSDEN TO REV. J. PRATT.

REVD. AND DEAR SIR,—

Sydney, January 14th, 1820.

Returned from  
New Zealand  
after four  
months' absence.

Mr. Butler  
pleased with  
the inhabitants.

State of colony  
will now be  
considered.

Has seen the  
Commissioner of  
Enquiry several  
times.

I just drop you a line to say that I returned from New Zealand after four months. I left all the settlers well and the Revd. J. Butler. As a vessel will sail direct for England, it is expected, on the 10th of Feby. next, I shall send by that conveyance all the different letters and my various reports. Nothing can be more encouraging than the prospect at New Zealand. I visited many districts. All the natives were very anxious for instruction. Mr. Butler did not expect to find them so ready for all improvements. He was very much pleased with his situation as far as respected the inhabitants. My visit to New Zealand will, I trust, be attended with all the benefits to the mission I could wish. With respect to my remaining in New South Wales I cannot say much as yet, as I am not aware how the public differences in this colony will be finally settled. If I can remain where I am with any prospect of support from the executive authority, or even living in any degree of peace, I shall not return, because I think my residence here will be of some importance to the cause of the missions and the general welfare of these settlements. I have felt the heavy hand of oppression; but have been greatly relieved in mind since the affairs of the colony are brought under the consideration of Parliament. If I should fall in the contest, the greatest public good will be produced; and this will be a great consolation to me. I am not under any apprehension for the issue, as I am conscious it has been my study and labour to promote the good of His Majesty's service and the eternal welfare of the inhabitants of these settlements. I feel most grateful to my friends who have vindicated my character, and am truly thankful to Almighty God, who has the hearts of all men in His hands, that He has, in His superintending providence, raised me up friends to advocate my cause, in which the future welfare of this colony is involved. By the ship direct for Europe I shall give you very full information upon all matters relative to the mission. I have seen the Commissioner of Enquiry several times since my return. He will lay open the state of this colony very fully to the British Government. I have a very high opinion of the Commissioner's character, but the generality of the inhabitants agree with Mr. Wilberforce, that *two* would have been better than one. However, facts must and will be stated, and I am much gratified that even one Commissioner is come out. Government will be compelled to know what they were very unwilling to acknowledge before. I have not seen the Governor since my return.

We have no communication at present, and I shall be happy if I should have no more to do with him ; but I expect we shall meet again in a little time upon some public grounds. I have merely sent you these few lines in case the vessel for England should be detained. I beg to return you my warmest acknowledgments for your kind attention to my interest, and hope you will in the end be satisfied that you have greatly promoted the good of these settlements and the missions to the heathens in these islands.

I am, &c.,

SAMUEL MARSDEN.

1820  
Jan. 14.

[*Sydney Gazette.*

GOVERNMENT AND GENERAL ORDERS.

Government House, Sydney, 5th February, 1820.

Feb. 5.

*Civil Department.*

His Excellency the Governor has been pleased to grant permission to the Reverend Samuel Marsden, Principal Chaplain of the Colony, to proceed per His Majesty's ship *Dromedary* to New Zealand, and to be absent from his official duties for the term of three months from the date of his embarkation.

Marsden to go  
to New Zealand.

His Excellency is further pleased to direct that the Reverend George Middleton do proceed to Parramatta, and take upon him the clerical duties at that station, in the room of Mr. Marsden, and during his absence.

Rev. G. Middleton to take  
duties.

By His Excellency's command,

J. T. CAMPBELL, Secretary.

[*Church Missionary Society.*

REV. S. MARSDEN TO REV. J. PRATT.

Feb. 7.

REV. AND DEAR SIR,—

Parramatta, Feb. 7th, 1820.

I must now write to you about the *Active*. As the Rev. J. Butler has come out Superintendent of the missionary settlement, I wish now to be relieved from all responsibility relative to the *Active* from the 1st of August 1819, the period she returned from New Zealand. I have to request the Society to take the vessel into their own hands from the above period, with all the profits and losses. I have had her valued ; the report of her survey and valuation I have forwarded to you, for the information of the Society. I have judged it best, with the advice of Mr. Robert Campbell, a merchant of great integrity and experience, to fit the *Active* out as a whaler. She can attend to all the concerns of the settlement, and still procure

Wishes Church  
Missionary  
Society to take  
"Active" into  
their own  
hands.

She is fitted out  
as a whaler.

1820

Feb. 7.  
—

Her interest will  
be forwarded in  
New Zealand.

Hopes she will  
pay her  
expenses.

Put natives and  
supplies on  
"Dromedary"  
for New  
Zealand.

oil for the benefit of the Society, towards lessening her expenses. Her outfit for the fishery has been very heavy, but I hope in a few months she will make some suitable return. There is nothing at New Zealand that will pay her expenses. The duty upon the timber, and the port expenses of various kinds, are so ruinous, that she ought not to come into this harbour more than once in a year if it can be avoided. Whether the Committee will approve of the measures I have adopted or not I cannot say. Mr. Butler is now in New Zealand, and can forward the interest of the vessel. Hitherto this has not been the case. Tho' the settlers were deriving every comfort from the vessel, yet they were totally unconcerned in general about her interest. Perhaps the Society may feel some hesitation in purchasing the vessel from the amount of the expenses. If this should be the case, I must dispose of her, when I hear from you. I think there cannot a doubt remain now upon any man's mind respecting the practicability of establishing a mission at N. Zealand, after more than five years' experience. Had any circumstances occurred to prevent the success of the mission, it was my intention to have sold the Active, and not to have called upon the Society for any part of her original purchase-money; but as there is now every reason to believe that success will attend the Society's labours in these islands, I am anxious to be relieved from such a great charge. I should hope, from the arrangements I have made with Mr. Kermode, of Liverpool, who is now returning to England, and whom I have requested to wait upon you on his arrival in London, that the proceeds of her present voyage will go pretty far towards paying for her, if she is at all fortunate. I had got all the supplies on board of her for the settlement, and also a number of the natives who were returning home when the Dromedary arrived; but as the Dromedary is going to the Bay of Islands I have taken out all the supplies, and the natives also, and put them on board the King's ship; at least the natives will accompany me, so that the Active will have nothing to do for nine months but to look after a cargo, which will be immediately sent to England or the amount of it to you. Should a regular communication be opened between Port Jackson and N. Zealand in time the Society may perhaps do without a vessel. Much has been done already towards the civilization of the natives in those parts of N. Zealand with which we have had any communication, and nothing has tended more to this object than the chiefs and their sons visiting N.S. Wales. It is very pleasing to see the sons of the rival chiefs living with me, and forming such mutual attachments. I have some very fine youths with me now, who are acquiring the English language very fast. I brought Mr. Butler's son back again with



me to take the charge of these boys, and to devote his time to their instruction. By the sons of chiefs living together in civil life, and all paid equal attention to, they will form attachments that will destroy that jealousy which has kept their tribes in continual war. As the work has gone on so far I am not afraid that it will stand for want of means. If the Active succeeds the expenses will gradually cease. Should the Society not approve of purchasing the Active I will thank you to have her insured for the amount she is valued at—£1,500. If they should take her they will take her for the valuation put upon her. I shall be obliged to draw upon you for about half of her purchase-money, and shall leave the Active as a security for that sum should she be returned to me again; or if she gets a cargo of oil, I shall send the amount to repay the £750, which I now draw upon you for. Her outfit as a whaler will also have to be charged to my account, but not her expenses in her last voyage to New Zealand—from the 1st of August to the 1st of December—as she was during that four months wholly in the service of the mission. I should not have drawn for any part of her purchase-money without your sanction being again obtained had I not found myself obliged to do this in order to settle some of my pecuniary matters previous to my sailing for N. Zealand. I deem the vessel and cargo, if she gets one, will be sufficient security to the Society for any advances they may make. I have endeavoured to express my meaning as well as I can, and hope you will clearly understand what my intentions are. I wish now to sell the Active, and to be relieved from so great a responsibility. I will give every personal assistance in any way in my power to promote the mission, and shall not think any toil too much to forward so great a work. Mr. Robert Campbell will manage the concerns of the Society so far as respects the vessel with great fidelity, and I have now hope that in a little time we may be able to form an auxiliary society in N.S. Wales as soon as the present Government is changed, and men are less afraid of the powers that be. I would here observe that I have been compelled to purchase nails, &c., &c., for the intended houses and churches, and also a variety of other articles, which you will see by the vouchers for purchasing animal food for the support of the settlement from the natives. The consumption of animal food is now very considerable. A very nice young man whom I have long wished to employ in the mission, truly pious and his heart engaged in the work, is going over with me. His name is James Shepherd, a native of the colony. His father is a very pious man; I sent him once to visit N. Zealand to see the natives,

1820

Feb. 7:

Chiefs' sons  
form attach-  
ment in New  
South Wales.

Wishes to sell  
the "Active"  
to Church  
Missionary  
Society.

James Shepherd  
visiting New  
Zealand.

1820  
Feb. 7.

and he has been very desirous of devoting himself to the work of the mission. He understands gardening, grafting trees, &c. A man of this kind will be of infinite service.

Rev. J. Pratt.

I have, &c.,

SAML. MARSDEN.

[Church Missionary House.

REV. S. MARSDEN TO REV. J. PRATT.

REVD. AND DR. SIR,—

Parramatta, Feby 7th, 1820.

His visit to  
New Zealand.

By the Surry I informed you of my intention to visit New Zealand with the Revd. J. Butler and his colleagues, which I did. I herewith forward you my journal for the information of the Society. I have not had time since my return to examine it, or make any corrections. You will make allowances for any errors or want of method, as I wrote my observations where I happened to be at the moment, often surrounded with natives, in the midst of noise and confusion. When I was with them in the different districts they let me have little rest, either night or day, as they would be continually talking upon various subjects. I hope the Christian world will now be convinced from positive facts that the New Zealanders are prepared for the Gospel, and ready for any instruction they can get. God has wonderfully blessed the feeble means that have been used for their good in spite of all the enemy could do.

Is going in the  
"Dromedary."

The only thing I regret is the expense, but I hope the Head of the Church will move the hearts of those who love Him to contribute their portion for His cause and interest. I pray to Lord Jesus that, in proportion as the Christian world becomes acquainted with the miseries of these poor heathens, they will willingly lend their aid to relieve them. I hope the observations I now send will be the means in some degree of increasing the Society's funds. I can only say that all has been done that I could possibly do to lessen the expenses. All new colonies are attended with heavy expenses at the first; and I now hope they will not in future be so much as they have been. I am now preparing to visit the settlers again in His Majesty's ship the Dromedary, agreeable to your wishes. The Honourable Commissioner of Enquiry wished me to go, as well as the captain of the Dromedary. I have put the Commissioner in full possession of all the affairs of the mission. He has seen the New Zealanders who are with me, and is much pleased with them, 25 in number. Some of them will accompany me in the Dromedary. I hope a good understanding will now be established between the chiefs and the

British Government. If the spars are found to answer, New Zealand will be of great national importance, and there can be little doubt of this. The nation may derive all the advantages they may wish for from New Zealand, without the expenses of forming a colony, and what Government will do will relieve the Society of part of the expense, and at the same time forward your views. Duaterra had often informed me of a fine river which run into the sea on the west side of the island. I had not time to visit it again with an officer of experience in the Dromedary, in order to settle this important point. What spars the Active has brought formerly are much approved of, and the gentleman whom Government have sent out to examine the timber gives it as his opinion that none can be better. Should Government succeed in their views, New Zealand will soon become a very great country. The Society will be aware what difficulties have opposed their labours, and will learn the real state of this colony from the examination before the Committee of the House of Commons, and from the reports of the Commissioner of Enquiry. Should you see a document published in the *Sydney Gazette* relative to the human heads brought from New Zealand, you will not, I trust, give credit to such a statement. It appeared about six weeks ago. It came from the old quarter. I have the fullest conviction, when the Honourable Commissioner returns, the Society will have the satisfaction to know that their labours have not been in vain, and that they may hope for every countenance from the British nation in the great work they are engaged in. Mr. Bigge is a man of great judgment and honor, and will clearly see into the spirit of the times. From the moment I learned that the affairs of the colony were to come under the consideration of a Committee of the House of Commons my mind was relieved. I was comforted with the prospect that some relief would be provided for the public evils, of which I had so long complained, and the private wrongs I had suffered. I am very thankful to my friends for their kind support. The lies and falshoods of every kind which were spread would never have obtained a confutation without a public enquiry. The truth will now rise from under the rubbish under which it has long been buried. When the Dromedary returns you will have then a full account of what may be looked forward to. I have had no communication with Governor Macquarie, excepting by letter, since my return; we have never spoke upon any subject. He will struggle hard, but the day of retribution will come. His superiors may aid him, but he cannot justify his measures; it is impossible. I have stood my ground hitherto, but with the greatest difficulty; and now I hope to stand. I shall not return

1820

Feb. 7.

New Zealand  
spars, if  
approved, will  
be very  
important.

Reports will be  
laid before the  
House of  
Commons.

Thankful for  
official inquiry.

Macquarie  
cannot justify  
his measures.

1820  
Feb. 7.

at present to Europe; as the Commissioner is come out my business may be settled without that. I could not have remained had there been no check put upon the enemy.

I remain, &c.,

Revd. J. Pratt.

SAMUEL MARSDEN.

[Church Missionary House.

REV. S. MARSDEN TO REV. J. PRATT.

1820  
Feb. 12.

REVD. AND DR. SIR,—

Feby. 12th, 1820, Parramatta.

Missionaries' families should assist in missionary work

As the families of the settlers at the Bay of Islands are now growing up, it will be necessary that they all should be employed in the work of the mission while they remain there as they come of age. Mr. Kendall has two daughters, who are very well able to teach the girls. It will require a positive order from the Committee that all the settlers' wives assist in instructing the natives in every thing they can, and their sons and daughters as they come of age. Mr. Kendall has now an £120 per annum and his ration for himself and family found. I told him his daughters ought to teach the girls now to do any thing they could. Mr. Kendall replied they should do so, if I would agree to allow them a salary in addition to what the Society allowed them at the present, which was £10 per annum each for their clothing. I did not like to do this without instructions from you, as this would be setting a precedent. Mr. Kendall wanted ten pounds per annum more for each of his daughters. The circumstances of the settlement are now improving, and what was absolutely necessary at the first will not continue to be so as the comforts of life become more general. The settlers do not seem to think that the Society have a just claim to their services, and to the services of their families. As the whole are maintained by the Society, I am inclined to think that the Society have a just claim to the services of their wives and children, as far as they can render any service. I directed Mr. Kendall's old son to be put into the carpenter's gang, and his daughters into the school. I shall see how they are going on when I visit them again. I shall be much obliged by the Committee stating to me what their wishes are on the above subject, and what they do expect from their missionaries. I had forgot to mention that I had purchased a large grant of land from Shunghee, and have sent you the deed. It is in a fine situation, rich land, and well watered, convenient for the harbour, as large ships can lay within about five miles of the settlement in safety, and small vessels can go up to the settlement, and land or receive

Mr. Kendall wants further salary for his daughters.

Purchased land from Shunghee.



any goods. I thought this land would answer well for any poor labouring families at any future period should any come out under the patronage of the Society or their friends.

1820  
Feb. 12.

Revd. J. Pratt.

I am, &c.,

SAML. MARSDEN.

CAPT. J. NICHOLSON TO COMMISSIONER BIGGE.

Bay of Islands, New Zealand,

SIR,—

March 11th, 1820.

March 11.

Feelings of pleasure, combined with a sense of the duty I owe, induces me to write you a few lines after a voyage of 32 days, during which period we had to contend with strong easterly winds. We arrived here on the 7th inst. To my mortification I found the Dromadary and Prince Regent here, having arrived several days before me. I have been very kindly treated by Capt. Skinner, of the Dromadary, with whom, in company with his lady and a few of his officers, I visited the new missionary settlement in the Regent a few days ago. The name of the place is Kidikidi; it is certainly an extended level plain of country, and were the Natives as kind and desirous as those good people seem willing and anxious, I believe they would accomplish their designs. English blood boils to see the indignities the natives shew to the missionaries who live among them, and to us they are unbearably insulting; and were it not for a regard to those who live among them, I hesitate not to affirm that they would meet with severe repulse from persons from whom they now receive civility. Powder and musquets are the only things for which they care. It looks dubious to me if the Dromedary will not return as she came. I hope to proceed on my voyage to-morrow, and hope if possible to visit the colony before you depart for England. If this should not be the case, I know I shall be borne on your mind, while I have the honor of subscribing myself your most

Voyage of  
thirty-two days  
to New Zealand.

Visited mission  
settlement.

Natives' insolence to  
Europeans.

Hopes to visit  
colony.

Obedient humble servt.,

JNO. NICHOLSON.

The Hon. the Commissioner of Enquiry.

WILLIAM SAVAGE TO EARL BATHURST.

MY LORD,—

Clapham Common, 20/3/20.

March 20.

Since I had the honor to address your Lordship for permission for a party to emigrate to New Zealand to form an agricultural settlement in that island circumstances have arisen

Wished to go to  
New Zealand.

1820

March 20.

Prefer now New  
South Wales or  
Van Diemen's  
Land rather  
than America.

which make it doubtful that it will be in the power of the individuals to carry their plans into effect.

As both myself and a few friends have made considerable preparations for this purpose, we are desirous of proceeding to an English colony in preference to going to America, as we cannot reconcile to our feelings as Englishmen the idea of renouncing our allegiance to our native country.

I respectfully beg leave to apply to your Lordship, on behalf of myself and family and a few friends, soliciting that His Majesty's Government would do us the favour to send us out to New South Wales or Van Diemens Land as free settlers, with a grant of land, and such other assistance as may have been given to other free settlers, or as may appear proper to His Majesty's Government.

I have &c.,

WILLM. SAVAGE.

The Earl Bathurst.

W. Savage, at the Rev. J. Ovington's, Clapham Common.

#### CAPTAIN SKINNER TO GOVERNOR MACQUARIE.

April 11.

SIR,— His Majesty's Store Ship Dromedary,  
Bay of Islands, New Zealand, April 11, 1820.

I beg leave to state to Your Excellency that the Rev. Samuel Marsden having been of essential service, from his knowledge of the natives, and may be still more so at the River Thames, I hope Your Excellency will be pleased to extend his leave of absence to the return of the Dromedary to Port Jackson.

I have, &c.,

R. SKINNER, Master Comg.

To His Excellency Governor Macquarie, &c., &c.

#### REV. S. MARSDEN TO GOVERNOR MACQUARIE.

April 15.

SIR,— Dromedary, April 15th, 1820.

Had Captain Skinner visited the River Thames I should have embraced the opportunity of returning to my duty by the General Gates. After the Dromedary returns from the River should an opportunity offer it is my intention to leave New Zealand. Captain Skinner and the Rev. J. Mullen will have communicated to Your Excellency all the particulars relative to the convicts which were taken away in the General Gates from Sydney. Some of them I saw when we had got to sea, and on my return reported them to Mr. Hutchinson, Superin-

tendent. There were five I knew nothing of. When we sailed it appeared singular that no constables came to search the General Gates after the gentlemen for New Zealand had embarked, which was the evening before. I saw the boat with the constables in as they appeared to me in the harbour, and expected them on board to search, but they did not come. If they had, the convicts were then on board, as no persons nor boats came after I was in the vessel but the naval officer's boat. I did not see one convict till we were some time at sea that I knew.

I have, &c.,

SAML. MARSDEN.

His Excellency Governor Macquarie, &c., &c.

1820  
April 15.

---

CAPTAIN SKINNER TO SAMUEL MARSDEN.

His Majesty's Store Ship Dromedary,

(Memo.)

April 19, 1820.

April 19.

IN my letter of the 10th was written, by mistake, that I went on board the American ship on the day W. Butler's letter was dated, viz., 11th, when it should have been the next day (12th).

R. SKINNER.

To His Excellency Governor Macquarie.

---

FROM CAPTAIN SKINNER TO GOVR. MACQUARIE.

His Majesty's Store Ship Dromedary,

SIR,—

Bay of Islands, New Zealand, April 21, 1820.

April 21.

I beg leave to acquaint Your Excellency that having sailed from Port Jackson on the 15th Feby., we made the Three Kings on the coast of New Zealand on the 25th, and anchored at the Bay of Islands on the 27th of the same month, having had remarkably fine weather. The next day after our arrival I sent persons up the Wycaddie and afterwards up the Coma Coma to examine the timber, where not having succeeded in procuring the cowdie [?kauri] of suitable dimensions, I determined sending a party overland to Sucheeangha, where I had every reason to believe from the information I had obtained from Mr. Marsden and others that spars of the cowdie of the dimensions required could be got, and accordingly sent the 2nd master and carpenter, accompanied by W. Marsden and other persons, who returned on the 18th Mar. with a report that the cowdie trees of the dimensions required were found growing on the banks of that river in great abundance, but the harbour extremely difficult of access for a ship of this class, there not being more than nine-

1820  
April 21.

teen feet water on the bar, at low water, with a rise and fall of tide of 8 or 9 feet. With this information I determined to go round with the ship, and if possible to get a cargo there, and accordingly proceeded to sea on the 25th in company with the Prince Regent, schooner; but the same night, having reached the North Cape, the wind increased before daylight the following morning to a hard gale at east, during which we lost sight of the schooner. It having moderated the next day, and not seeing her I imagined she had proceeded on to Sucheeanghe; and in the afternoon, it blowing hard from S.W., and a lee current, I could not get round Cape Maria, and in the morning of the 28th, finding we had lost nearly twenty-five miles during the night, and having scarce any fodder on board for the cattle, I determined to look into Wangaroa, to ascertain what timber could be got there, and having fetched into the road, and anchored, I sent a cutter, with an officer, accompanied by Mr. Marsden, on shore, and on the boat's arrival near the village they found the natives in great numbers, and very shy. The chief being known to Mr. Marsden, he was called for, but would not be seen till he found the boat would not land, when he came off in a canoe to the boat. It being by this time nearly dark, and the apparent shyness of the natives, the officer thought it prudent to return to the ship, the chief having promised to come on board on the following morning, which he did, and I again sent the boat on shore; but the natives showed the same suspicious shyness as before, which I believe proceeded from an apprehension that we were come to chastise them for their treachery to the Boyd. I however got some fodder for the cattle, and about 2.30 p.m. I got under weigh. At 4.45 the boat returned, without having gained any information respecting the timber, and I soon after made sail for the North Cape. The next day, a little before sunset, I got sight of the entrance of Sucheeanghee River, and at 4 o'clock in the morning of the 30th sent boats away for the purpose of sounding on the bar and entrance of the river, and soon after daylight had the satisfaction to discover the schooner at anchor in the river. I continued laying off and on, having all the boats continually employed in marking out and buoying a passage for the ship, but on the 2nd April, finding it would be attended with great risk in taking this ship in, and the barometer indicating the approach of bad weather, I made the schooner's signal to take up the buoys, and come out, having determined to abandon the place where I had the fairest prospect of selecting a cargo of the finest spars that New Zealand produces, and at 11 p.m. having got the boats on board, and schooner joined, I once more made sail for the Bay of Islands, where we arrived on the 5th, after having experienced a gale



from the N.E. on repassing the north Cape, when we again lost sight of the schooner, but joined at the Bay of Islands. I think a ship drawing from 12 to 15 feet water might generally go in and out of the river with safety; but as the shores are sandy, it is very probable the bar and banks in the river may shift, yet so anxious was I to procure a cargo of these spars that I would have taken in the Dromedary had the wind come fair and less swell on the bar, but as the tides were taking off and bad weather approaching, I deemed it prudent to get off that coast, which at this season of the year is stormy, very imperfectly known, and no harbour to run for.

1820  
April 21.

The natives of that part appeared very civil, and extremely anxious that the ship might get in, never having had a vessel of any description in the harbour before the schooner.

On my return to this anchorage I determined on examining minutely the different woods in the vicinity of the Bay of Islands, and having discovered a very fine and extensive grove of kike-teah, I intend loading with as many of these spars as will fill the hold, and shall endeavour to get those of the cowdie, either at Wangaroa or River Thames.

I have, &c.,  
R. SKINNER, Master Comg.

SIR,— His Majesty's Store Ship Dromedary,  
Bay of Islands, New Zealand, April 26, 1820.

April 26.

In my letter of the 16th instant, I mentioned to Your Excellency that it was my intention to send the Prince Regent to Port Jackson in four or five days, but she has been detained by the strong westerly gales which have prevailed for several days past; but hope she will be able to proceed to-morrow, and beg Your Excellency will be pleased to order her to rejoin this ship as early as possible, for the purpose set forth in my last letter.

I purpose sending this dispatch by W. Kent, whom I beg leave to recommend to the notice of Your Excellency as a young man whose conduct during his service under my orders merits my warmest praise, and to whom I beg to refer Your Excellency for any further particulars respecting our operations. Mrs. Skinner begs to unite with me in respectful compliments to Mrs. Macquarie and Your Excellency.

I have, &c.,  
R. SKINNER, Master Comg.

1820

Dec. 15.

John Lovett,  
Thomas Lewe,  
Hy. Cad-  
wallader,  
James Johnson,  
Nath. Ewer,  
James Purcell,  
Rbt. P. Storey.

His Majesty's Store Ship Dromedary, at sea,  
December 15th, 1820.

SIR,—

The convicts named in the margin taken out of the General Gates, having been employed in the laborious service of getting a cargo of timber for His Majesty's store ship under my command, on which their services were highly useful, and during a period of near eight months, behaved themselves so well that I feel it my duty to recommend their good conduct to the consideration of Your Excellency, from which, and the great temptations held out to them to escape, I earnestly hope Your Excellency will so far pardon their past offence as not to punish them.

John Lovett was employed with the seamen the whole time in the wood; Natl. Ewer and Thomas Lewe were particularly useful in trimming spars, both of whom unfortunately received a severe cut from the axe they were using. Ewer has recovered from his wound, but Lewe I regret to add still lingers under great pain, and will I fear lose the use of his ancle joint, if no worse consequence ensues. James Purcell is still very ill from a blow which he received from a capstern bar in heaving the timber out of the wood.

George Mason, a convict given up by the master of the merchant ship Cumberland to the Rev. J. Butler at the Bay of Islands, and sent by him on board for a passage to Port Jackson, has also behaved himself very well during the period he has been on board His Majesty's store ship the Dromedary.

I beg leave to enclose a list of slop clothing, &c., issued to the bullock drivers and other convicts, and have to request Your Excellency will be pleased to direct proper receipts to be given for the same or the articles to be returned in kind.

I have, &amp;c.,

R. SKINNER, Master Comg.

Dec. 21.

SIR,—

His Majesty's Store Ship Dromedary, at sea,  
Dec. 21, 1820.

I beg to acquaint Your Excellency that James Dunleary, Thomas Lynch, John Grady, and James Horan, private soldiers of the 84th Regt., having been committed by the Rev. J. Butler, Resident Magistrate at the Bay of Islands, charged with the murder of William Oldridge, seaman of this ship, on the evening of the 21st Nov., 1820, and the depositions having been enclosed by the said Magistrate to the Judge Advocate, I have to request Your Excellency will be pleased to give directions for their being taken out of this ship and lodged in prison.

I have, &amp;c.,

R. SKINNER, Master Comg.

To His Excellency Governor Macquarie, &c., &c.

[Church Missionary House.

1820

REV. S. MARSDEN TO REV. J. PRATT.

April 24.

Bay of Islands, April 24th, 1820,  
On board H.M.S. Dromedary.

REVEREND AND DEAR SIR,—

You will have learned from Mr. Kendall that I arrived in New Zealand in H.M.S. Dromedary on the 27th of Feby., just at the period Mr. Kendall was embarking for England. I was much surprised at the step he had taken, without any previous approbation either of his colleagues, the Society, or any other person. I cannot see the wisdom of his measure. According to human foresight, it was an hasty step—Divine Goodness may overrule all for good: and time will reveal the good or evil attending Mr. K. visit to England. However clear Mr. K. might see his way, to me it appeared dark and gloomy. His colleagues had only lately arrived: they were neither acquainted with the language, nor the characters, nor the manners of the natives; and on their account his presence was very much wanted. A new settlement was forming under the protection of Shunghee. Shunghee accompanying Mr. K. distressed the minds of his colleagues, as they considered him as their principal guardian, and were full of fear for their personal safety when Shunghee was gone. Mr. K. left his wife and eight children wholly at the mercy of the natives, and at an age when they, in a very special manner, require the eye of the parent, to prevent them from mingling amongst the heathen, and learning their ways. However, he was determined upon returning to England, let the consequences be what they may. Some individuals must think of and provide food for his family. I believe myself and Mr. Butler must take this trouble, or they will not be provided for. Tho' I cannot approve of Mr. K. leaving New Zealand at the present time, his reasons may perhaps be satisfactory to the Committee. If so it will be well.

Mr. Kendall  
gone to  
England.

His step  
appears unwise.

I wish now to state the situation I found the mission in on my arrival. Permit me first to observe with respect to New Zealand, there never was in my opinion a fairer field for missionary labours in any heathen nation. With respect to the personal danger of the missionaries, I think six years' experience is sufficient to remove any serious apprehensions upon that ground. Mr. K. leaving his wife and eight children in the power of the natives is at least a strong testimony what his opinion is upon this ground; also, no doubt but he thinks them safe from violence. There is every prospect, as far as concerns the natives, to encourage the Society in their labors. The great difficulty in establishing this mission has originated from civilized enemies, and

Aspect of the  
mission.

Natives very  
favourable.

1820

April 24.

Connections  
with shipping  
is detrimental.  
Two missionary  
settlers.

Barter for  
muskets and  
powder very  
injurious.

Caused strife  
among  
themselves.

from the missionaries having connections with the shipping, which has more or less tended to destroy that unity of spirit which is the bond of peace, and by their conduct to give just cause to the enemy to triumph. To do justice to Messrs. . . . and . . . they have both been very useful men in their respective stations ; but I apprehend they would have been much more so had they not lost sight of their duty to the Society and to each other. Their bartering with the natives and shipping for muskets and powder excited their avarice, and avarice excited jealousy, and both together destroyed all Christian love, and carried them so far out of their duty that they could not even meet at last to read the service of the Church on the Sabbath day together. When I visited them in August last I found them all in a state of confusion. I saw these evils to be exceeding great, but the difficulty was to find a remedy. I had for a long time been remonstrating with them by letter against the nefarious traffic of muskets and powder with the natives, and against all private traffic ; but notwithstanding the direction I had given, and the resolutions which they entered into against this barter, I found it was still continued and productive of every evil. I had a string of resolutions or rules drawn up, which were read one by one in the committee, and approved by the signature of them all. When these resolutions were past I hoped a death blow was struck to this abominable and disgraceful evil. Not many days after one of the old settlers purchased a quantity of hogs with a musket. I now despaired of ever preventing this evil, without all the missionaries who were concerned in this wickedness were dismissed from the service of the mission. This I had no authority to do ; and if I had possessed the authority, as an individual, I should not have exercised it, but should have referred the matter to the consideration of the honourable Committee at Home. I did suspend Mr. . . . as stated in a former letter. The Revd. J. Butler saw this evil in the same light I did, and also Messrs. F. Hall and Kemp. After this subject came again before the committee, they all unanimously agreed once more to abide by the rules which they had signed.

During my stay in New Zealand I experienced much distress from the misconduct of those employed in the mission. I hoped mutual friendship was restored amongst them in a certain degree when I left them in November ; at the same time, I was afraid the Revd. J. Butler would not be able to maintain his authority, and to carry on the mission with comfort to himself. I have had a deal of experience with missionaries for more than twenty years, and I have found them very difficult to do any thing with. As soon as they enter upon their work they feel independent ; they consider themselves their own masters, and will only do

Missionaries  
are difficult  
to manage.



what they please. In all missions some improper characters will be found. In the Otaheitean mission there were several worthless characters. In time, one after another left their stations, and returned to the world again. Some of them became drunkards, and guilty of other scandalous sins. But the conduct of the idle and abandoned did not prevent the Divine blessing from crowning the labours of the faithful missionary with success. We must not expect all to turn out well who come to New Zealand; we must be thankful if one in three do their work faithfully.

What also adds to the difficulty of the mission here is the distance New Zealand is from the Mother Country. It is probable had the missionaries been nearer home they would have behaved better, or the Committee would have removed them. Situated as this country is, there were none to supply their place, and had they come away the Christian world would have been discouraged from supporting the mission, and the enemies would have greatly rejoiced.

On my arrival in February I found the Europeans in great confusion and the tares were again sprung up amongst the wheat. The settlers had fallen into their old barter with the ships and natives for muskets and powder. Mr. Butler, either for want of authority or from fear or persuasion, had been prevailed upon to polute his hands with the same traffic, not on his private account, but to procure animal food for the support of the settlement. This trial I was not prepared to meet. I called a meeting again, stated my abhorrence of this traffic. Mr. Butler condemned it as much as I did. They contended that without muskets and powder the natives would not sell their pigs, that they could not get a log of timber, nor potatoes, or any article they wanted to purchase. I did not credit all they said, but told them I should be here for some time, and then I should be judge; that they should not purchase any while I remained with them, and if any one did I would not pay his salary, and he might apply Home for it. If I found that they could not get animal food without muskets and powder I would send them salt meat from Port Jackson till the subject was submitted to the Committee at Home. Mr. Butler was much distressed; told me he could not govern the Europeans, and if I had not come he should have returned to Port Jackson by the first opportunity. I was thankful to God that His providence had opened a way for me to visit them at this trying moment. Mr. Butler wants experience—he has had men under him, but not missionaries, who have no idea of subordination. I think the Dromedary will remain long enough for me to prove that they can get all the native productions without muskets or powder; and I hope I shall establish Mr. Butler upon a more comfortable foundation than he

1820  
April 24.

Distance from  
home adds to  
their  
difficulties.

Barter in  
muskets, &c.,  
renewed.

Refused to  
pay salary  
to any engaged  
in it.

Mr. Butler's  
difficulties  
were great.

1820

April 24.

A missionary  
settler.

was before. I know Mr. . . . will plead for this barter very strongly, and had he remained Mr. Butler would have found more difficulty in abolishing it than he will at present.

Notwithstanding Mr. . . . had signed the resolutions to barter no more with muskets and powder when I was here in November—and I believed he would do what he promised—yet to my great mortification he had some muskets sent down from Port Jackson in the Dromedary, by his agent, which I knew nothing of till after they were opened on board, and I was informed by the King's officers that this was the fact. Mr. Butler told me the same. I did not know this circumstance till Mr. . . . had sailed. Had I known I should have ordered them back again. I shall rejoice to give the missionaries credit for all the good they do, and to approve of their conduct as far as I can; and it gives me much pain to state the above complaints. I condemn the barter because its natural tendency is to defeat the grand object of the Society. It arms one tribe of natives against another, who are unarmed, for a man with a club has not the same means of defence that one has with a musket.

Reasons for  
condemning  
this traffic.

The morning Mr. Kendall sailed, I believe not less than forty canoes came into the harbour from a war expedition, with prisoners of war, and the heads of a number of chiefs, whom they had slain in battle. I went on shore, and saw the prisoners and the heads when they landed. The sight was distressing beyond conception. Arms and ammunition tend to inflame their warlike spirit, and to urge them to blood and slaughter. No man can, upon Christian principles, defend such a barter. Satan could not have had a more powerful instrument to overthrow the mission than this barter.

It inflames  
warlike spirit.

If the missionary settlers will do their duty, and follow the instructions of the Society, they will be blessed in their work, but if they do the work of the Lord deceitfully He will not bless them. They have suffered a little inconvenience, a few privations while residing amongst the heathens, but some of them must in the common course of things have suffered more had they lived in England and had their families to maintain there.

In any observations I have made I do not wish to damp the spirits of the Society. There is nothing to discourage the Christian world. I have no doubt that the time is at hand for God to visit these poor heathens. The New Zealanders are prepared for the Gospel. No difficulties lie on their side. It is the instruments I blame. I hope the time has now come when the great evil will be conquered. I shall do all I can to put matters upon a permanent footing. . . .

I am, &amp;c.,

Rev'd. J. Pratt.

SAMUEL MARSDEN.

[Bigge's Appendix, Vol. 130.]

1820

April 26.

REV. S. MARSDEN TO COMMISSIONER BIGGE.

On Board H.M.S. Dromedary, Bay of Islands,

HONOURED SIR,— April 26th, 1820.

You will have learned of the American vessel sent to Port Jackson by Captain Skinner that the Dromedary was in the Bay of Islands. We arrived here on the 27th of February. In a few days I went over with Mr. Morley, the second master, and Mr. Mart, the carpenter, to the Gambier River on the western side—the former to examine the harbour and the bar and the latter to see the timber. Mr. Mart very much approved of the spars on the banks of the river: they are very abundant, and fit for all naval purposes. Mr. Morley, after examining the harbour and the entrance, was of opinion the Dromedary could get into the river. In consequence of the report made by these officers on our return Captain Skinner went round with the Dromedary. We lay off the harbour mouth about four days, during which period a more accurate survey was made of the bar and entrance. After Captain Skinner had made his observations he made up his mind to go in, if he had a leading wind, but he was afraid to venture without the wind was favourable, in consequence of the Dromedary drawing so much water, and there not been sufficient room to work so long a ship in the channel during the time we were there. The wind was continually varying, and at length the weather threatened to blow hard, which induced Captain Skinner to bear away for the North Cape, and we once more anchored in the Bay of Islands, to the great mortification of all persons on board. Had we been able to get into the harbour, the Dromedary would have been soon laden with the finest spars, and we should probably now have been on our way, or nearly so, for Port Jackson. There are plenty of spars in the Bay of Islands such as we wanted as to length and thickness; but they are not equal in quality to those at the Gambier. I am sorry that the Dromedary is detained longer than what was expected from our disappointment in the Gambier. Vessels of 600 or 800 tons may enter the harbour with safety, according to the opinion of the officers, and the Dromedary probably might have got in, but as there was not a leading wind, it was thought more prudent to give up the attempt.

Visit to  
Gambier  
River.Thought  
"Dromedary"  
could enter.Wind not  
favourable.Fine spars  
at Gambier.Room for  
ships of 800  
tons.

I am very anxious to get home again, but as the Captain intends to visit the River Thames he wishes me to remain till he has been there, and has written to Governor Macquarie on the subject. There has been no misunderstanding between the natives and the Europeans, and I have reason to believe there will be none. I am fully convinced that New Zealand will supply His Majesty's navy with spars of every kind that can possibly

Abundance of  
spars for  
navy.

1820  
April 26.

be wanted, and of the best kind, when the country is a little more known by the Europeans. Gambier River will furnish spars for many years, if ships that draw less water than the Dromedary are sent for them. I shall embrace the first good opportunity to return, should any offer after the Dromedary has been at the River Thames. There have been four whalers in the harbour since we came in—three from England and one full ship, which is gone Home. I beg my respectful compliments to Mr. Scott, and have the honor to be, &c.,

SAML. MARSDEN.

The Honourable Commissioner of Enquiry.

CAPTAIN R. ELIVES TO COMMISSIONER BIGGE.

H.M. Ship Coromandel,

New Zealand, 12th Aug., 1820.

Aug. 12.

SIR,—

As you were pleased to express a wish to have my opinion "of the timber of New South Wales" (which I had the honor to leave for you, with Captain Piper), I have concluded that some few remarks on the timber of New Zealand would not be deemed obtrusive; and have taken advantage of the return of Mr. Marsden to Sydney to transmit you a hasty sketch of such trees as have fallen under my observation.

"The chief object of the voyage being to obtain spars fit for topmasts of large ships," my principal attention has been hitherto directed to that particular.

There are three species which from their growth and dimensions appear calculated for this purpose (and are deserving a trial), called by the natives "cowdie" (or "cowrie"), "remoo," and "krycataera." The cowrie is found chiefly on the sides of hills two or three miles inland and in deep valleys which renders it difficult to be brought to the beach for shipment. It is also scarce the length we require it (at least, in all the places I have seen); much of it is found in a state of decay at the heart, but when sound I think it of excellent quality, and suitable for topmasts. It attains a diam. of 6 or 7 feet and discharges large quantities of resin. The krycataera abounds most in swampy places and is a species of fine growth; but, from the appearance of its grain does not seem so well adapted for topmasts as the cowrie; neither do the natives speak in favour of its durability, and they construct their canoes from both these sorts. The remoo is a kind of which I have yet seen but little; the few trees I have met with were invariably entwined with a kind of vine (of great thickness), in some instances so closely knit to the trunk as to

Cowrie good  
for topmasts.

Krycataera  
used for  
canoes.



render it doubtful whether it did not form part of it. The grain of the remoo is close and the wood heavier than either the cowrie or krycatara.

1820  
Aug. 12.

There are many other species of timber, but I have yet met with none suitable for naval purposes (ships of the line or indeed frigates), for though some of them are sufficiently large, the singularity of their growth renders them unfit to convert for either frame timbers or beams.

Many other kinds unfit for ships.

In all my excursions in the forests of New Zealand I have not seen a single tree, of any description (except pine), that would cut a frame timber or a beam piece for a 74 gunship.

It must, however, be observed that my researches have been confined to the banks of the River Thames (and there are many places there I have not yet had opportunities for examining), so that no just estimation can be formed of the productions of the country from observations of so little extent.

His researches limited.

How we shall succeed in getting a cargo is at present doubtful. We have at this time about 35 spars cut, but require the assistance of the natives to bring them to the beach. They have hitherto shown the most friendly disposition towards us, but their services can seldom be relied on two days together. The chiefs are the only persons noticed on board the ship, but, if trifling presents were made to the people who labour (for every spar they get down), I have no doubt they would be stimulated to exert themselves much more in our service. The notice of Mr. Marsden's return to Sydney being too short to allow me to extend my remarks,

Presents must be made to natives.

I beg, &c.,

ROBERT ELIVES.

P.S.—I beg you will excuse the dirtiness of this sheet, which was occasioned by an accident, and I had not sufficient time to write another.

The Honourable the Commissioner of Enquiry, &c., &c.

---

CAPTAIN SKINNER TO COMMISSIONER BIGGE.

His Majesty's Store Ship Dromedary,  
Whangaroa Harbour, New Zealand,

SIR,—

September 12th, 1820.

Sept. 12.

I have the honor to acquaint you that, having anchored in this harbour on the 21st June, we have since been principally employed in making a road from the river to a fine grove of cowrie, situated near one mile distant, which being nearly completed, I hope we shall be able to get the spars drawn down by the ten Government bullocks, which I brought from Port Jackson, but

Have made road to timber.

1820

Sept. 12.

Natives not  
much help.Suspicious and  
ungrateful.Feed on  
slaves and  
prisoners.Delights of  
cannibalism.Female  
infanticide.

the process will be tedious, as I have at all times found the natives totally unequal to such labour as is requisite to get down spars of the large dimensions we require; they generally work tolerably well for a few days, but as soon as the novelty of their occupation has subsided, and they have got possession of a few trifling articles, we can get no further exertions from them; their chiefs, as they are termed, have not the least authority over their tribes, and it is indeed difficult to distinguish them from the other natives, as they all appear to dress, live, and work alike; they are extremely treacherous, and suspicious, and no force of argument will convince them of your intentions whenever they have a doubt, so much are they accustomed to deception in their neighbours; hence, promises have little or no weight with them; and I have in no instance discovered the least spark of gratitude among them, nor do they seem to possess such a feeling. There can be no doubt of their being cannibals, as there were two or three instances of their eating human flesh while we were laying at the Bay of Islands. I am not aware that any individual in this ship was actually a witness of this fact, but mangled limbs were seen near their huts by some of the officers, which appeared very lately killed. There indeed appears not the smallest doubt but they frequently kill what they term their slaves, or persons taken in war, for the sole purpose of eating them. These savages do not attempt to deny that it is the custom among them to eat their enemies, tho' some of them, at the Bay of Islands, deny having eaten it themselves, as they know it is not approved of by Europeans; but others speak with delight of eating human flesh, and appear to admire the flavour, and I really believe they prefer it to other food. It seems also a common practice among them to kill their female children when young, as they consider them of no use. I have been told by one of the Europeans who resides at the Bay of Islands that there is an old woman now living at or near Tipponah who is known to have killed six of her female offspring. There are several skulls and a heap of human bones laying on shore not more than four hundred yards from the ship, which we imagine are some of the remains of the unfortunate victims of the Boyd, as the Dromedary is moored very near the spot where that ship was taken. Her wreck, which shews itself at low water, now lays about a mile higher up the river; part of the crew were killed in a wood close to where we are employed in getting out timber. These natives are by no means that formidable race I was led to imagine. One hundred armed soldiers might march from one end of New Zealand to the other without the least apprehension from them; nor would they, I believe, attack twenty armed men unless it could be done by surprize. The timber here appears remarkably fine, and in great

abundance, particularly coddie, which appears by far the most useful wood I have seen on the island. Some of those we have got cut down are certainly as fine specimens as can be seen, but all the spars of large size are situated a considerable distance from the banks of the rivers, and none seems to grow near the sea; therefore to get them afloat with our limited means is attended with immense labour, but if one hundred working men could be employed, and a guard of forty or fifty armed soldiers, they could then work independent of the savages, and the process of getting a cargo would be quite simple and easy. Was this part of the country uninhabited, I could in that case employ the greater part of the ship's company in getting the spars down, but as we are now situated, I feel a reluctance in employing men in the woods among these treacherous cannibals, but am compelled to do so, or should not get a cargo.

1820  
Sept. 12.

Difficulty of  
transporting  
timber.

English  
workmen  
wanted.

Men's lives  
not safe.

Wangaroa affords an excellent harbour for any number of ships, but the country around appears unfavourable for cultivation, being composed of immense hills and almost everywhere covered with wood or fern, and scarcely a blade of grass to be found on any part of the island we have been at.

Land covered  
with wood  
and fern.

We got a few spars down from the Cowa Cowa, in the Bay of Islands, but it was attended with great labour and difficulty, and when we quitted that river in June the whole extent of the grove of kikutuah where the men were employed was inundated by the intense rains that had fallen for many preceding days and since our arrival here. We have had as much rain and stormy weather as might generally be expected in England in the month of November. We have frequently had storms of wind and rain continue for several days together, and the two months we have been here it has rained more than half the time, which has greatly retarded our progress in making the road, as it is situated upwards of six miles from the ship.

Wet and  
stormy  
weather.

I hope it will be considered I have done my duty in sending in the American ship General Gates, for having brought away eleven convicts from Port Jackson.

The Coromandel is at the River Thames, but seems to find great difficulty in getting spars of proper dimensions. Mr. Kent, who commands the Prince Regent, schooner, whose conduct during the period he has served under my orders entitles him to great praise, will be able to give you any further information you may desire, as he has been to the River Thames and several other parts of the island.

Mr. Kent  
has done well.

I have, &c.,

R. SKINNER, Master Comg.

To John Thomas Bigge, Esq., Commissioner of Enquiry, New South Wales.

1820

Nov. 20.

Space made  
on "Speke"  
for Kendall  
and New  
Zealanders.

## UNDER-SECRETARY GOULBURN TO REV. JOSIAH PRATT.

SIR,— Downing Street, 20th November, 1820.

A letter having been received from the Navy Board stating that it has been found practicable to make an arrangement on board the Speke, convict ship, for receiving Mr. Thos. Kendall and the two New Zealand chiefs on board that vessel, I have now been directed by Lord Bathurst to acquaint you that they may, in consequence, embark at Deptford immediately.

I am, &c.,

HENRY GOULBURN.

The Rev Josiah Pratt,  
Church Missionary House.

AN UNSIGNED PAPER FOUND IN COMMISSIONER BIGGE'S PAPERS, AND ENTITLED "COLONIAL VESSELS IN N. ZEALAND."

*Early part 1809.*—The crew of the colonial brig Endeavour plundered the Island of Tippoona of all the potatoes that had been stored for the winter by Tippahee and his people. Tippahee was absent at the time.

*Latter part 1809.*—The ship Boyd cut off by the natives in the Harbour of Wangaroa.

1810.—Ships Diana, Spring Grove, Speak, New Zealander, and Inspector, brigs Perseverance and Experiment, all in Bay of Islands together, the crews of which killed upwards of one hundred men and burnt all the houses on the Island of Tippoona.

1814.—The captain of the colonial brig Trial and schooner Brothers were both in the Bay of Islands together. They received a quantity of potatoes, hogs, and flax, but left the bay without paying for them. They went to the River Thames, where they were followed by the chief whom they had defrauded, who, with the assistance of his friends, endeavoured to cut off both vessels. Many lives were lost on both sides.

1814.—The ships Jefferson and King George were both in the Bay of Islands together, the crews of which behaved very bad towards the natives.

[NOTE BY TRANSCRIBER.—This information was evidently supplied to Bigge by the missionaries. It is not dated, but was amongst the 1820 papers.]



[Bigge's Appendix, Vol. 142.

1820  
Dec. 8.

EVIDENCE TAKEN BY COMMISSIONER BIGGE.

*Mr. Joseph Thompson.*

(Wednesday, 8th December, 1820.)

*Questions.*

*Answers.*

Q. How long have you been in the command of the brig Active and in the service of the Missionary Society?

A. Three years in both.

Q. To what islands have you usually proceeded?

A. I have made two voyages to the Society Islands and several to New Zealand.

Q. What is the ordinary voyage from hence to New Zealand?

A. I have been six weeks and also thirteen days—one within three weeks a fair passage. The winds are very variable.

Q. Have you yourself traded to the Bay of Islands?

[ A. Generally.

Q. What has been the chief articles you have carried there?

A. All sorts of ironmongery, linen, and woollen for the use of the missionaries.

Q. Have you been allowed to trade on your account?

A. I have never been prevented and I have brought up a few articles on my own account.

Q. Are the articles you carry from hence consigned to the missionaries?

A. All of them are, and when there whatever I want for the use of the ship I receive from them.

Q. What is the general description of articles that you receive in return from the missionaries?

A. Chiefly timber, a little flax, and some pork.

Q. Who keeps the accounts of the disbursements of the vessel and who defrays them?

A. Mr. Campbell has had the whole management since Mr. Jones left Sydney.

Q. Do you conceive that the cargoes which you have brought back furnish any means towards the expense of the vessel?

A. It assists in paying a part, but does not make any return to cover the expenses.

Q. Have you found that the produce which you brought back finds a ready market?

A. Nothing but pork, and that I am only enabled to procure in small quantities.

Q. Have you ever taken any spirits on board to New Zealand?

A. I never have.

Q. Have the natives there a fondness for it?

A. They have not. I have seen them taste it out of curiosity, and they have always disliked it.

1820  
Dec. 8.  
—

Q. Have you always understood that they have had the same aversion for it ?

A. Always since I have known the islands.

Q. Have you had an opportunity of observing the habits, character, and customs of the New Zealanders ?

A. I have at the different times I have been there.

Q. Are you of opinion that the intercourse which has been carried on between them and the inhabitants of this colony and other Europeans has had any considerable effect in civilizing and improving them ?

A. When I first frequented these islands about ten or eleven years ago they were in a constant state of apprehension thro' the ill treatment they had received from European seamen. I have seen instances of English captains and seamen taking their goods and provisions from them by force, and I have seen them flogged at the rigging on suspicion of theft. These occurrences were frequent ; but since the establishment of the missionaries they have greater confidence in their intercourse with Europeans. They approach the ships unarmed and traffic with us on amicable terms. I have never had any misunderstanding with them since I have had the command of the *Active*, tho' I have had nearly two hundred at once on board of the ship.

Q. Are the South Sea whaling vessels in the habit of touching often at New Zealand at present ?

A. They frequently do, and touch at the Bay of Islands.

Q. Do you think that they touch at the remote parts of the islands ?

A. At the North Cape and East Cape they do.

Q. Do you think that if all English vessels were bound under a heavy penalty to touch at no other part or port of New Zealand or such other place as there was a missionary establishment, that it would have the effect of preventing the outrages being committed on the inhabitants ?

A. I think it would have that effect.

Q. Since the establishment of the missionaries in the Bay of Islands have you recollected of any instance of outrage upon the inhabitants being committed by sailors or officers in that place ?

A. Sometime since the establishment I recollect a brig and a schooner left this port for New Zealand, and they took with them a young native chief, and on the passage he agreed to supply them with some flax, pigs, and potatoes which he had at New Zealand ; on his arrival he delivered the property and asked for payment.

1820  
Dec. 8.  
—

The captain got the property into the ship, refused the payment for it or restore it to him, saying he should keep it for the passage he had given him to New Zealand. This enraged the young man, who acquainted his friends with the circumstances, and on the ship's quitting their anchorage to proceed to Mercury Bay he proceeded overland with his friends, and these being joined by others attempted by force to take the ship. After a desperate struggle they were driven off, but not without lives being lost on both sides. I know also an instance of the ship *Harriet*, the second mate of which, of the name of Hunt, was desirous of obtaining the daughter of a chief who with others had been employed and assisted in loading the ship with timber. The chief, as well as the daughter, refused to comply with the wishes of the mate, and in his attempts to force her a scuffle ensued, and her head was beaten and wounded very severely. To revenge this outrage several other natives then on board planned an attempt to take the ship, which being overheard by a missionary on board and communicated to the captain, was prevented by the natives seeing the crew prepared. Otherwise, from what then passed and from what I have since heard from the chief, it was their intention to have seized the ship.

Q. Have you visited New Zealand since two of the missionaries have been appointed to act as Magistrates?

A. Yes, I have.

Q. Have you known any instances of their authority being interposed?

A. No other than for a dispute between the captain and ship's company of the *Admiral*.

Q. Do the missionaries interpose in the disputes of the natives?

A. They endeavour to persuade them not to go to war with each other and to reconcile their disputes that take place amongst them.

Q. Have the missionaries any means of enforcing their authority over Europeans or Englishmen who

A. They have not. They have been insulted by the crews and even by the officers of British

1820  
Dec. 8.  
—

may commit offences within their jurisdiction ?

whalers. One instance I recollect of the chief mate of the ship *Phoenix*, Captn. Parker, who, on the refusal of Mr. Kendall, the chief missionary, to allow a person to land who had sailed with him from this colony, and who had brought no passport from Govr. Macquarie, came up to his house from the ship, broke it open and damaged some of the furniture ; the boat's crew proceeded so far as to knock Mr. Kendall down, and the body of the natives would have instantly rescued him and attacked the crew if he had not prevented them.

Q. Then you conceive the missionaries possess authority to punish crimes with the means of enforcing it ?

A. I do.

Q. Does the present state of the whale fishery induce ships to remain long on the coast of New Zealand ?

A. It does from October till April or May. The ships remain in the offing catching whales and go into the Bay of Islands occasionally. They usually fish from the East Cape to the North Cape. They do not consider themselves safe in any other harbour than the Bay of Islands.

Q. Would the prohibition that I before hinted at be found prejudicial to the fishery so conducted ?

A. Not in the least.

Q. Do you consider that all the objects could be attained in the way of supplies to vessels by confining them to the Bay of Islands ?

A. I think they could and better than in any other part of New Zealand.

Q. Do you know in what ports in New Zealand the best species of timber is to be obtained ?

A. There is a great abundance in all parts, but a ship can obtain as much as she can load with at the Bay of Islands.

Q. Are there any natives settled round the Bay of Islands ?

A. A great many in private villages. One principal village is where the missionaries are established.

Q. Can the labor of the natives be obtained for loading the ships, and what are their terms ?

A. It can, and a certain portion of labor is performed by them for the different articles that they receive, and so much for a tomahawk, a hatchet, or a saw.



*John Hunter, Mate of the Brig Active.*

(4th January, 1821.)

1821  
Jan. 4.*Questions.*

Q. How long have you been employed in the brig *Active*, and in trading to New Zealand and Tahiti ?

Q. Who do you know to be the owner of the brig *Active*, and under whose directions does she sail ?

Q. What is the nature of the articles you have taken down to Tahiti and the Society Islands ?

Q. What is the greatest tonnage you have ever taken down to the Society Islands ?

Q. Has the brig ever taken muskets down to New Zealand and the Society Islands for the purpose of sale ?

Q. Are not muskets in great demand at Tahiti and New Zealand ?

Q. Have you not observed in your late voyage to New Zealand the natives using muskets ?

Q. What is the greatest number of muskets you have seen at any one time in New Zealand ?

Q. Have you any means of knowing whether the crew of the *Active* have ever sold muskets to the natives ?

Q. Are the cargoes you take to the Society Islands and New Zealand intended solely for the use and consumption of the missionaries there.

*Answers.*

A. I have been in her nearly eight years and was first employed as carpenter and have been mate these three years.

A. I believe her to be owned by Mr. Marsden and to be sailed under his directions.

A. We have taken tea, sugar, cotton, prints and shirts, chiefly Indian, but some part English ; also flour, and some wine and spirits, about ten or fifteen gallons of each ; all these were distributed amongst the missionaries.

A. The largest quantity was about twelve tons, which consisted of rice and flour ; besides those things I have before mentioned.

A. Never. We have only had three or four on board for our own protection.

A. Not at Tahiti ; but they are in New Zealand.

A. I have seen them frequently, but not in great numbers ; occasionally with bayonets fixed ; but they were only used for firing at targets or marks.

A. On the occasion of meeting of two or three hundred people for firing at marks, I never saw more than ten muskets together, nor in any of canoes did I ever see more than one or two.

A. I am certain they never did : they could not get them on board or reland them without my knowledge ; and from knowing a little of the language I am sure it would have come to my knowledge if any of them had sold them.

A. As far as my knowledge goes they are intended for the use of the missionaries. There are also stores put on board for the ship's use up to

1821  
Jan. 4.

or are they applied for the purposes of trade and barter with the natives ?

the islands, and there are printed calicoes put on board also to exchange for pork at Tahiti for the ship's use returning home. Sometimes a small quantity is brought down to Sydney and delivered over to Mr. Marsden by our own boats at Parramatta. I cannot say that it is for sale ; I believe it is for the use of his own people.

Q. Are not the missionaries in the habit of sending pork to Sydney for sale on their own account received in payment from the natives for goods delivered to them ?

A. The first voyage I made to Tahiti the missionaries sent some pork to Sydney on their own account, but I never knew of any being sent from the missionaries of New Zealand.

Q. Have you ever known in your voyages to Tahiti that printed copies of the Gospels in the Tahiti language have been distributed in the Society Islands, and that pork and other articles have been received in payment for them, and have been consigned for sale in Sydney, designated by the names of the several vessels ?

A. I have never heard of that name being given to the pork ; but I have to the oil that was taken in payment.

Q. Do you know that it is an invariable rule for the missionaries to receive payment for the copies of the Scripture they distribute to the natives ?

A. I have heard the natives say at Otaheite that they are obliged to pay the missionaries for the Scriptures which they received ; but the natives at New Zealand are not yet in a state to read them, and therefore none that I know of are distributed there.

Q. What is the greatest quantity of pickled pork you have ever delivered to Mr. Marsden at Parramatta ?

A. A ton was the largest quantity we ever delivered.

Q. From your observations in your voyages to Tahiti, and from what you have heard there, can you inform me whether the natives had the means of producing any spirit by distillation ?

A. The first voyage I made there about five years ago I observed them use the spirit made from the tea root, which is a large root growing in the ground like a potato with a broad leaf.

Q. What is the process of distilling this root ?

A. They dig it from the ground, and put it into the oven to bake, and then some cut it up and put it into a cask or tub with a little water and let it remain to ferment. They then put the whole into large iron pots which are covered over, and the spirit is collected thro' a bamboo placed in water and runs into some vessel put under it.

1821  
Jan. 4.

Q. Did you ever taste this liquor ?  
Is it palatable and strong ?

A. Yes, I have. It is very strong, but has an earthy flavour, not unpalatable.

Q. Were the natives fond of it ?

A. They were then very fond of it.

Q. Is intoxication a common vice amongst them ?

A. They used to drink but not to intoxication. I believe they could bear a good deal without being drunk.

Q. Did you ever see them make use of British spirits ? Do they prefer them ?

A. Yes, I have, and they prefer them to their own.

Q. What value are the Tahitians disposed to give for a bottle of rum ?

A. I have seen a bottle of spirits offered for a pig, but it could not be procured. It would only purchase a few cocoanuts or yams.

Q. In the last voyage that you made to Tahiti did you observe a great use of spirits ?

A. No, I did not. Many I have seen refuse even to taste it, and it is in general disuse. I have been told by several natives that the King sent his own people to break all the distilling utensils.

Q. To what cause do you attribute this change ?

A. To the interference of the missionaries and the influence they have used with the people.

Q. Does the King Pomarei continue to drink spirits as much as he used to do ?

A. Yes, he does ; but I never saw him drunk.

Q. Have the New Zealanders the same means of distilling spirits as the Tahitians, and is the art of distillation known to them ?

A. They have the same root, but they do not distil from it, and I do not think they are acquainted with the art.

Q. Were you in the Active the first voyage she made to New Zealand ?

A. Yes, I was, as carpenter.

Q. How many muskets had she then on board ?

A. I am uncertain, but I think not more than five or six ; it is eight years ago, and I cannot well recollect.

Q. Have you ever seen whaling vessels at and on the coast of New Zealand ?

A. Yes, I have.

Q. Have you seen muskets bartered for goods ?

A. I have not seen them bartered, but I have seen them go from the ship to the shore.

Q. Do you know what a musket would be exchanged for in New Zealand ?

A. They would give ten or twelve pigs for one.

1821  
Jan. 4.

Q. Have you ever seen any gunpowder put on board the Active ?

A. None, except a small quantity for the ship's use.

Q. From what source do you think the New Zealanders procure gunpowder ?

A. From the whalers with whom they barter.

Q. Did you observe any gunpowder at New Zealand the last time you were there ?

A. I saw a small quantity in the hands of the natives, about 2 or 3 lb.

Q. Are there any convicts who have escaped from this country established in New Zealand ?

A. I do not know of any. There are two carpenters Mr. Marsden took down, one of whom is a native born in the colony ; the other I never saw before. I heard that an American vessel had taken several convicts from Sydney, had touched at New Zealand ; but they all went away in her. About four years ago the Tryal which went from Sydney to New Zealand was seized there by some convicts which had already escaped ; and took her to Tahiti, from whence they made their escape in different ships.

Q. Have you seen the two natives Teetaddee and Toohei in New Zealand who returned from England ?

A. Yes, I saw them there.

Q. Were they benefited in any way by their instruction in English habits or manners ?

A. I do not think they have in habits, but they have better manners. When the ships leave New Zealand they put off their European clothes and take to their own dress and change it again on the arrival of a ship.

Q. Do you think they have taught their countrymen our language, or other knowledge they may have acquired in Europe ?

A. No, I do not.

Jan. 13.

*Evidence of Charles Hook.*  
(Taken 13th January, 1821.)

*Questions.*

Q. What was the nature of the trade in which the house of Robert Campbell and Co. were engaged when you managed their concerns ?

*Answers.*

A. Chiefly the oil, skins, sandalwood, and the produce of the Southern Seas, pearl shells and bêche de mer.

Q. What vessels were employed in this trade ?

A. With the exception of the brig Fox, the vessels were colonial.



1821  
Jan. 13,

Q. Of what tonage were they ?

A. The brig *Perseverance* was 140 tons, or thereabout.

Q. Was she navigated by colonial crews ?

A. Chiefly. Mr. Campbell always endeavoured to engage them in his service, and had several apprentices.

Q. Was the fish oil warehoused in this colony after it was taken and kept for export to England ?

A. It was, but the oil trade was nearly prohibited by the duties laid on in England as well as this colony.

Q. Were the vessels employed in the oil trade absent long on their voyages, or did they obtain their cargoes at a short distance from this coast ?

A. The periods of their absence were very different. They sold the black oil chiefly at the Derwent. The elephant oil and the skins were obtained at the different islands in the Southern Seas.

Q. How many men were employed in each vessel ?

A. The number varied. In the brig *Perseverance* I never had less than twenty men, officers included. There was also a gang of additional men on board to be left at the islands with provisions for the purpose of sealing. The vessel generally returned from her voyage without them and went to the islands with fresh supplies for the men and to receive their skins and oil they had collected.

Q. What wages did the men receive ?

A. They were always upon lays, a term used for a certain proportion of the earnings differing according to the qualifications of the men.

Q. At what islands was the greatest quantity of seals taken ?

A. Macquarie Island and Campbell Island, Kangaroo Islands, and those in Bass's Straits.

Q. From whence was salt obtained to pack and cure the skins ?

A. When the brig *Perseverance* had discovered Macquarie Island, she returned here and took a quantity of salt that I promised him, some from Government in exchange for animal food, and some from individuals in town for the purpose of curing the skins.

Q. Was any spermaceti oil obtained on the coasts of New S. Wales ?

A. Never by any of the colonial vessels that I have heard of. But some English vessels in which Mr. Campbell was connected, often touching here, and landing their outward bound cargoes, and taking refreshments proceeded to the sperm whale fishery.

1821  
Jan. 13.

Q. Do you know at what distance from the coast the sperm whales are found ?

A. I believe they generally proceed to New Zealand for sperm whales, although some are found here occasionally.

Q. What has been the principal cause of the cessation of the trade in sandalwood between N.S.W. and the Feejee Islands ?

A. I believe principally the outrages committed by the crews and masters of vessels engaged in the trade, and the spirit of vengeance that these outrages have incited.

Q. To what markets was the sandalwood carried ?

A. Sometimes to the China market, sometimes it was brought Home and exported from hence to Batavia and China.

Q. What articles of barter procured sandalwood ?

A. At first it was procured by coarse iron ware, scissors, tomahawks and articles of that kind. Latterly whales' teeth became a valuable article of trade to the Feejees.

Q. Was any cloth sent ?

A. Always some articles of coarse stuff, but not in any great quantity.

Q. Did the natives of the Feejees procure the sandalwood, or the crews of the vessels ?

A. The natives, I believe generally.

Q. Did you ever hear that any of the convicts escaped in these vessels to the islands ?

A. I never heard of any of them clandestinely escaping, but it was usual to request permission of the Governor for particular men that were wanted for the voyage to embark, and if the permission was granted security was taken for their return to N.S. Wales.

Q. They were small vessels that traded to the Feejees ?

A. The colonial vessels in this trade were small.

Q. How many do you think were engaged in the trade ?

A. I cannot say ; but until the duties were laid on both at Home and in the colony, the trade was rapidly increasing, and the shipping engaged in it.

Q. What price was obtained in the China market for sandalwood ?

A. 16 dollars per pecul (a weight of 133½ lbs.) was the highest average price that has been obtained, I think. But since the Americans have interfered in the markets the price has fluctuated.

*Evidence of Mr. Edward Riley.*

(Taken 2nd February, 1821.)

1821  
Feb. 2.

*Questions.*

*Answers.*

Q. Is there any export from hence to the China market ?

A. Yes, of seal skins, called pups in a dried state. They sell from a dollar to a dollar and a half. The market in China is at present glutted by the Americans.

Q. Where are the seal skins at present procured ?

A. At New Zealand and in the Islands of Bass's Straits ; but they are much diminished.

Q. Has any black oil been exported to India of late ?

A. Not much of late, but it is in demand there occasionally.

Q. What is the freight on oil from hence ?

A. Only £3 per ton. The ships are glad to take it at any price. It sells in India from £20 to £30 p. ton.

Q. What is the usual cost of it in this place ?

A. Generally £20 p. ton.

Q. From what place in these seas is the elephant oil principally procured ?

A. From Macquarie Island, where there is now from 150 to 200 tons of oil ready prepared.

Q. Have there been any exports of elephant oil from hence to England ?

A. Not since the *Surrey* sailed in 1819—that which she carried was landed in England owing to the duty.

*Evidence of Captain Beveridge.*

(9th February, 1821.)

Feb. 9.

Captain Beveridge "came out chief officer in the ship *Harriet* four years ago. Has been engaged in a schooner *Eliza* and *Mary*, J. Underwood, 80 tons, to Macquarie Islands to fetch away elephant oil. There is a gang of thirteen men collecting oil. Many are free and emancipated. Overseer has 1 out of 40 tons of oil. They have a supply of provisions six months.

Came in the "Harriet" four years ago Macquarie Island sealing.

Macquarie Island is 1,400 miles south ; is in lat. 54° 30' S., 159° 45' east. 30 miles long, 5 miles broad, very barren—no trees. Uninhabited. Abounds in sea elephants. Lagoons of fresh water on the top. No harbour. Dangerous for shippers. Black whale is not in abundance.

Macquarie Island and sealers.

Vessels of 150 tons would suit this coast. N. country built. To the south of V. Dieman's Island the weather is very stormy.

|                                   |  |
|-----------------------------------|--|
| 1821                              | Went in 1817 to the Society Islands, touching at N. Zealand        |
| Feb. 9.                           | and afterwards at the Marquesas. Went for a cargo of pork          |
| His South Sea visits.             | and sandalwood, and took one of Bengal prints, slates and pencils, |
| Musket trade.                     | gunpowder, muskets. Sold some muskets at all the islands. At       |
|                                   | the Marquesas they are so much supplied with muskets by the        |
|                                   | Americans that there is no sale for English ones. The Marquesas    |
| Marquesas and people.             | are a rendezvous for the Americans. The natives are black, but     |
| Sandalwood trade.                 | handsomer and lighter colour than those of the other islands ;     |
|                                   | good tempered. Very little sandalwood now to be procured.          |
|                                   | Formerly a ton of sandalwood used to be got for a musket. There    |
|                                   | have been no English there since the King George. There are        |
|                                   | good harbours. That of Noohera is very capacious and naturally     |
|                                   | strong.  |
|                                   | The sandalwood tree is sometimes two feet in circumference,        |
|                                   | grows on tops of high mountains.                                   |
| Dress and undress.                | The inhabitants wear a small cloth round their waists, made        |
|                                   | of the cocoanut tree. Women quite naked.                           |
| Saw Society Islands missionaries. | Visited the Society Islands in 1817 and 18. Saw the mis-           |
|                                   | sionaries. They cultivate little and are indolent. They pay        |
|                                   | great attention to the instruction of the natives in religion. The |
| Church and school.                | schools are well attended. The Otaheitian language is taught.      |
|                                   | Mr. Crook teaches on the Lancasterian principle. Some of the       |
|                                   | young natives wrote very well. Pomare's wife keeps a journal       |
|                                   | of all arrivals. She wears a better cloth than the other females.  |
|                                   | Has been at church on the Sunday. It is made of bread fruit        |
|                                   | tree posts and lowa tree, covered with mats and thatched with      |
|                                   | cocoanut.  |
|                                   | Never saw a native Otaheitian drunk except one, and he had         |
|                                   | received liquors from the King George.                             |
|                                   | Howe's Island is high. There appears to be some grass upon         |
|                                   | it. Saw no wood. No harbour. It lies in variable winds.            |
| Wages seamen, £3.                 | £3 per month are the usual wages for seamen in the colonial        |
|                                   | craft. It is frequently paid in property and it is very high.      |
| Prices.                           | Five guineas charged for a telescope that would be worth £2        |
|                                   | in England.  |
|                                   | Beef and pork 8d. and 9d. per lb.                                  |
|                                   | The boarding and fitting out of vessels is very expensive.         |
|                                   | Rope is bought from ships that arrive.                             |

---

*Evidence taken concerning Rope made from New Zealand Flax.*

Oct. 15.

Deptford, 15 October, 1821.

NOTES of a trial made of a piece of rope, manufactured by Messrs. Simins, two inches and a half circumference :—



Three strands containing 12 yarns in each strand were tried singly and not one broke with 84 lbs. weight.

1821  
Oct. 15.

Further trial was made by stretching a piece of New Zealand rope, and a piece of King's rope, each nine feet long, and the latter two inches and a half, and made of three strands, 14 yarns to each strand. The King's rope gave way under this trial, and the New Zealand flax rope stood.

Rope trial  
New Zealand  
hemp, 16th  
October, 1821.

Four single yarns of the coiled yarn bore 84 lbs. when suspended three feet in the clear.

The yarns of the first trial were suspended three feet in the clear, with 105 lbs. weight attached, and not one broke.

Three yarns out of the twelve of King's two inch and a half rope broke, when suspended to the same weight.

Beats navy  
rope.

Attested.

JOHN THOMAS BIGGE.

*New Zealand Hemp.—Account of the Manufactory of the New Zealand Hemp by Messrs. Simins and Co.*

| Weight of the lightest colour'd parcel in              |    |    |    | Cwt. | qrs. | lb.             |
|--|----|----|----|------|------|-----------------|
| the rough state  | .. | .. | .. | 0    | 0    | 23              |
| <hr/>  |    |    |    |      |      |                 |
| Dressed hemp from do.                                  | .. | .. | .. | 0    | 0    | 18              |
| Toppings   | .. | .. | .. | 0    | 0    | 4               |
| Waste  | .. | .. | .. | 0    | 0    | 1               |
| <hr/>  |    |    |    |      |      |                 |
|  |    |    |    | 0    | 0    | 23              |
| <hr/>  |    |    |    |      |      |                 |
| Weight of yarn spun from the dressed hemp when tarred  | .. | .. | .. | 0    | 0    | 23              |
| The darkest coloured parcel in the rough state weighed | .. | .. | .. | 0    | 0    | 6               |
| <hr/>  |    |    |    |      |      |                 |
| Dressed hemp from do.                                  | .. | .. | .. | 0    | 0    | 4               |
| Toppings   | .. | .. | .. | 0    | 0    | 1               |
| Waste  | .. | .. | .. | 0    | 0    | 1               |
| <hr/>  |    |    |    |      |      |                 |
|  |    |    |    | 0    | 0    | 6               |
| <hr/>  |    |    |    |      |      |                 |
| Weight of yarn spun from the dressed hemp when tarred  | .. | .. | .. | 0    | 0    | 4 $\frac{3}{4}$ |

*Captain Skinner to Commissioner Bigge.*

His Majesty's Store Ship Dromedary,  
Sydney Cove, Febr. 11th, 1820.

SIR,—

Agreeable to your wishes, I have examined and tried the rope made here by Mr. Robert Williams from the New Zealand

Trial of New  
Zealand hemp.

1821

Superior to  
English.

hemp, and I beg leave to state the particulars to you. About five fathoms of 3 inch New Zealand rope (untarred) dragged five tons thirteen hundredweight and broke with five tons nineteen hundredweight. Two coils of English manufactured rope was then tried of the same size, one of which broke with four tons three hundred, and the other four tons four hundred and three quarters weight.

Tarred or not,

I do not doubt in the least that the New Zealand rope would be found to answer for naval purposes, provided it would answer the same when tarred, and that it could be made at a price worthy the attention of Government.

I have, &amp;c.,

R. SKINNER, Master Comg.

---

*Wm. Fenwick to Chas. Graham.*

Aug. 16.

SIR,—

Chatham Yard, 16th August, 1821.

Trial of New  
Zealand hemp  
at Chatham.

Agreeably to your request to furnish you for the Comptroller's information with a statement of the result made of the New Zealand hemp lately landed from the Dromedary, I beg to inform you that we have not received any New Zealand hemp from the Dromedary (for Government). I obtained a small sample from a person on board the said ship, which I have dressed and made into a twelve thread line, also two other lines of the same size and weight, one from Petersburg, the other from Riga hemp.

Tested with  
Russian.

Undermentioned is a statement of their comparative strength, viz. :—

|   |      |      |       |
|---|------|------|-------|
| Line made from New Zealand hemp         | Cwt. | qrs. | lb.   |
| suspended three feet in the clear,      |      |      |       |
| broke with                              | ..   | ..   | 3 1 7 |
| Do. made from Riga hemp suspended 3 ft. |      |      |       |
| in the clear broke with                 | ..   | ..   | 3 0 0 |
| Do. from Petersburg hemp do.            | ..   | ..   | 2 3 2 |

Praise of New  
Zealand hemp.

It will appear from the above trial that the New Zealand hemp is the strongest, and if the small sample which I procured from the Dromedary is a fair specimen, I beg to observe, from the solidity of its fibre, that it will produce more prime hemp for the construction of cordage, lines and twine than Russian hemp.

The lines broken, together with a sample of the New Zealand hemp, will be sent by the coach to-morrow.

WM. FENWICK.

*New Zealand Hemp.—Extract of a Letter from Commissioner  
Sir Robert Barlow, dated 13 June, 1818.*

1821

In reply, I have to acquaint you that the accompanying letter from the rope yard officers contains a table shewing the result of experiments which have been carefully made in this rope yard by my direction (at most of which I was present) on the actual and comparative strength of the New Zealand flax or hemp and of Riga and Chili hemp, in which it will be seen that the New Zealand article is weaker than the Riga and Chili hemp nearly in the proportion of a third.

New Zealand,  
Riga, and Chili  
hemp.  
New Zealand the  
weaker.

I concur with the officers above mentioned in their observations and opinions relative to its quality and character.

A box containing the samples which were sent to me, together with samples of the cordage which was tried against them, will be forwarded to you by the coach this afternoon to Blossoms Sun.

*New Zealand Hemp.*

SIR.—

Chatham Rope Yard, 10 June, 1818.

Agreeably to your directions of the 26th ultimo, to make trial of the comparative strength of line twine and yarn manufactured from New Zealand hemp or flax against similar sizes of those articles made from Riga and Chili hemp, and to report to you the results, with our opinion of the quality and character of the New Zealand hemp, we beg to state that we have tried their strength by suspension, and the following are the results of the trials, viz. :—

Chatham report,  
10th June, 1818.

| Those tallied.  | New Zealand.  | Riga.         | Chili.        |
|---|---------------|---------------|---------------|
|   | Cwt. qrs. lb. | Cwt. qrs. lb. | Cwt. qrs. lb. |
| 1. Lines, hawser laid 3 strands, suspended in the clear 3 feet, broken with | 12 3 15       | 18 1 15       | 18 2 1        |
| 2. Lines, cable laid 3 strands ..   | 2 3 12        | 3 1 16        | 3 2 2         |
| 3. Lines, hawser laid 4 strands, with a heart                               | 5 0 16        | 7 0 9         | 7 0 19        |
| 8. Single thread yarn, 3, twisted into twine                                | 0 0 6         | ..            | 0 0 11        |
| 9. Twine, 3 thread, coarse ..   | 0 1 20        | 0 2 3         | 0 2 10        |
| 10. Twine, 2 thread, coarse ..  | 0 0 23        | 0 1 11        | 0 1 11        |
| 11. Twine, do., do. ..  | 0 0 19        | 0 0 25        | 0 1 11        |
| 12. Twine, do., fine ..   | 0 0 21        | 0 0 27        | 0 1 1         |

1821

New Zealand  
only two-  
thirds weight  
borne.

It will therefore appear that the lines and twine from the New Zealand hemp bore little more than two thirds the weight of those made from Riga and Chili hemp.

No rough sent  
to them.

The specimens of hemp are too small for us to form a correct judgment as to their fitness for cordage. They appear much worked down for fine uses, and none has been transmitted in a rough state, clean from the stems or reeds, to enable us to ascertain its length and natural fibre, and produce when worked down. However, the memorialist states its growth from two to six feet, and even by the seaside ten feet. The latter, we would remark, is the most likely to produce hemp fit for cordage. It is certainly flexible, and fit for fine uses, and might be manufactured into canvas. We have tarred a small piece, and it appears to imbibe tar equally as well as Russian hemp.

Imbibes tar as  
Russian.

*T. H. Armstrong to Commissioner Bigge.*

H.M. Sloop Shamrock, Spithead,  
March 28th, 1822.

1822

March 28.

SIR,—

Bore more  
weight than  
Government.

On the 25 of March I again tried the strength of your rope, and found to my satisfaction the New Zealand rope equally as strong as before. It had been wet with salt water. I done according to your desire, and spliced it to a piece of its own dimensions, and exposed it to salt water twelve hours every day for twenty-five days, which was sufficient to try its resistance of salt water; but I found that it grew remarkable stiff in salt water, as the lines made by the natives of New Zealand, but I think it is owing to there not being tar enough in it to resist salt water, but I would answer for anything in the dry remarkable well it is amazing strong, for it broke a piece of Government rope that by our calculation ought to hold in weight one ton more than the New Zealand rope, and from my opinion there is not a stronger piece of rope in England than it is of the same dimensions. I have sent you several pieces of the rope it broke as a specimen of the goodness of the rope. The rope was tried by a fair and equal strain, and I can assure you that it was fairly tried without showing favour to one rope or the other, yet in my opinion if there was more tar in the New Zealand rope that it would be more plyint in salt water. I will send the rope to you by the conveyance that it came, so the time is elapsed that you desire me to keep it, and if at any other time I can serve you I will do it with the greatest of pleasure, as I consider myself under an everlasting obligation to you, for the kindness that you have honoured me with is far from what I ever expected, and except my good wishes as it is all in my power to offer, and allow me to remain, &c.,

Wants more  
tar in it.

Goodness for  
past kindness.

T. H. ARMSTRONG.



*F. Hunt to Commissioner Bigge.*

1822

July 9.

3 Circus Minories, July 9th, 1822.

SIR,—

The piece of New Zealand rope has been put into use on board the *Eliza*, spliced to a piece of English patent new rope and rove as a burton fall, and has taken in the whole cargo. The present state of the two pieces as they stand to each other can be no criterion, as the N.Z. has been exposed to water, which of course reduced its substance, and the English was new from the maker with all its strength. It will be observed on examining the pieces that the N.Z. is somewhat stiffer than the other, but this is owing, in my opinion, to its having more turns in the strand or shorter laid, and being used in the last tryal as the standing part of the fall, consequently had not to travel so much through the blocks, and hence the stiffness, which if you observe is only in places. There is another fault the piece in question appears to have: observe between each strand the rope looks ruffled out, or as it was chafed like the friction of one strand over the other, or as we term it sprouted; now if this was general, it would be greatly against the N.Z. hemp; but I am not of that opinion. I think this arises from its having been exposed to water, because it is the same with any of our ropes, having been used in water put away and perhaps not carefully dried, has laid a couple of months, when put in use they invariably give way between the strands in the manner alluded to. There is a part stranded that was done before we had it. I am of opinion, also my chief mate, who has had an opportunity to see the N.Z. rope in use every day, that its strength is much greater than Europe rope, and if made in the same manner, the same quantity of tar, the same turn and lay in the strand, it possesses equal and every advantage of Europe, and I think by no means stiff, as may be seen in this piece, which is so much harder laid than the one accompanying it; but everything depends on the make. It looks much lighter coloured than the English; this may be from the hemp being finer and better coloured, but in the present state I should suppose from being exposed to water which has drawn a quantity of the tar from it. I cannot see why there should be an objection to its use owing to its stiffness. I really think it will answer every purpose of Europe rope as to plyability, and as for strength no one will dispute. It is a pity the pieces were not both new and the weather had been wet instead of dry. That would have proved them both to a great [illegible] and I think left the N.Z. the conqueror.

I am, sir, &amp;c.,

F. HUNT.

N.B.—A friend of mine mentioned a few days since of having seen in some of the papers an advertisement stating you had

Trial of New Zealand and English rope.

Trial scarcely fair, as New Zealand rope was not new and English was.

New Zealand stronger than English.

Should be made in English manner.

Where can his published inquiries of N.S.W. be found?

1822  
July 9.

published your enquiries of N.S.W. Should this be the case, as I am not able to trace the paper, will feel particularly obliged to you for information where to find it.—F.H.

1821  
Jan. 18.

Colony to be  
formed in New  
Zealand.

ROBERT SUGDEN TO EARL BATHURST (Vol. 108).

MY LORD,— East India Chambers, 18th Jan., 1821.

Hemp, timber,  
&c., to be  
exported.

Heavy duty on  
timber in  
New South  
Wales.

I trust Your Lordship will pardon the liberty I have taken in thus addressing you. A party about emigrating to New Zealand begs most respectfully to solicit the assistance of Government in their undertaking. I am (with several who have resided on the island) convinced an English colony would soon become flourishing and happy, the space being so ample for their industry, the soil so fertile, the climate salubrious, its capacious harbours and fine rivers—in fact they would have every natural advantage in their favour, aded to which the cause of humanity would be served in a twofold manner, provision would be made to a class of enlightened persons (now unoccupied from different causes), and the civilization of a fine race who are now sunk in utter ignorance would by such an event be rapidly accelerated, and eventually England would benefit by it in an eminent degree. The supply of hemp (of the finest quality) that could be sent to England would render her independent of Russia for that valuable article, and had upon quiet as reasonable terms. The settlement would be of infinite service to the South Sea whalers, in providing them with fresh provisions; and likewise of service to New South Wales, in furnishing them with ships, spars, and timber of fine growth, hemp, &c. I am persuaded the island offers so many advantages, if their is not speedily an English colony there will be one of some other nation.

One thing I must beg Your Lordship's most serious attention to—that is, the heavy duty (1/- per foot) on timber imported into N. S. Wales from Zeland. By taking of that duty it would render great service to both colonys. The Church Missionary Society will render every service in their power, and from an interview I have had with their Secretary I have collected some valuable information, which strengthens my former opinion of the place.

I am convinced Your Lordship will give the subject before you your most weighty consideration and (I trust) interest, and whatever assistance Government, in their judgement, may think fit to afford the intended colony it will be most gratefully received, and I trust e'er long be enabled to shew its gratitude for the service so rendered.

I remain, &c.,

RT. SUGDEN.

To the Right Honble Heny. Earl Bathurst, &c., &c.

ROBT. CAMPBELL TO COMM'R. BIGGE.

SIR,—

Campbell's Wharf, 5th Feby., 1821.

1821  
Feb. 5.

In transmitting the enclosed documents, relative to the employment of the brig Active in the whale fishery, which I promised on Saturday, and the only opportunity afforded me since my own former extensive speculations in the fishery ceased by misfortunes and other circumstances unnecessary to state, allow me to observe that when a comparison is drawn between the exorbitant lays or shares paid to the crews of our colonial vessels with vessels fitted out from London and other English ports, the difference in favor of the latter will in my opinion be found fully adequate to the superiority the colonists enjoy in being in the vicinity of the fishery, and consequently should the present duties on oil be repealed we will then be only on a par with the English whalers, the outfit of which may be considered at a third less than the colonial vessels in the present state of the colony as all the articles (provisions excepted) requisite for their equipment are imported from the Mother Country at an advance of at least 75 per cent.

Exorbitant  
shares paid to  
crews of  
colonial  
whalers.

Cost of outfit  
is one-third less  
in England.

If the foregoing observation is worthy of your notice it will be gratifying to me.

I have, &c.,

ROB. CAMPBELL.

The Honble. Commissr. of Enquiry.

[Enclosure No. 1.]

*Bigge's Appendix.—Duplicate.*

Invoice of oil, seal skins and whalebone delivered to Mr. James Leslie on board the Robert Quayle on account of the owners and crew of the brig Active, Joseph Thompson, master, viz. :—

| —   | Oil.  |     | Price. | Amount. |    |    | Total. |    |    |
|---|-------|-----|--------|---------|----|----|--------|----|----|
|   | Tons. | Gs. |        |         |    |    |        |    |    |
| The owner's share of sperm<br>in terms of my agree-<br>ment with Mr. Kermode* | 2     | 238 | £ 35   | £       | s. | d. | £      | s. | d. |
| The mates and crew ..   | 2     | 8   | 40     | 81      | 5  | 4  | 184    | 4  | 9½ |
| The owner's share of black<br>whale oil as per sd. agree-<br>ment             | 44    | 140 | 18     | 802     | 0  | 0  |        |    |    |
| The mates and crew ..   | 32    | 226 | 23     | 756     | 12 | 6½ | 1,558  | 12 | 6½ |
|   | 82    | 108 | ..     |         |    |    |        |    |    |
|   |       |     |        |         |    |    | £1,742 | 17 | 4  |

\* N.B.—As the duty is repealed Mr. Kermode will have to pay an additional price on this of £12 4s. 4½d. per ton.

1821  
Feb. 5.

The owners, mates and crew for 242 fur seal skins procured  
and sold by Mr. Thompson to Capt. Leslie at 7s. 6d. ea.      £   s.   d.  
90   15   0  
Do., do., for 1 ton 3 cwt. 2 qr. 2 lb. of whalebone at £20 per  
ton, as per my agreement with Mr. Kermode ..      ..      23   10   4

£1,857   2   8

Deduct for James Innes Cooper and harpooner's  
share, paid at the Derwent—

|                    | £  | s. | d. |
|--------------------|----|----|----|
| Whale oil .. .. .  | 79 | 2  | 4  |
| Sperm do .. .. .   | 8  | 14 | 7  |
| Seal skins .. .. . | 4  | 0  | 4  |
| Whalebone .. .. .  | 1  | 3  | 3  |
|                    | 93 | 0  | 6  |

Amount of bill remitted Revd. Josiah Pratt .. .. . £1,764   2   2

ROB. CAMPBELL, Agent.

Sydney, New South Wales, 2nd September, 1820.

[Enclosure No. 2.]

*Commr. Bigge's Inquiry.—Shares of Officers and Crew of Whalers.*

Abstract of advances to the crew of the brig Active, Joseph Thompson, master, bound to New Zealand and the whale fishery as pr. their respective acknowledgements the 4th day of Novr., and to be deducted from their lays of oil, viz. :—

| Names.             | Stations.         | Amount        |    |    | Lay. |
|--------------------|-------------------|---------------|----|----|------|
|                    |                   | £             | s. | d. |      |
| Joseph Thompson .. | Master ..         | ..            | .. | .. | 10th |
| John Oliveri ..    | Mate ..           | 10            | 0  | 0  | 25   |
| John Watson ..     | Do ..             | 9             | 0  | 0  | 35   |
| Wm. Geo. Thomas .. | Cooper ..         | 10            | 0  | 0  | 50   |
| William Dart ..    | Carpenter ..      | 10            | 0  | 0  | 50   |
| Matthew Graves ..  | Boat steerer ..   | 7             | 0  | 0  | 65   |
| Thomas Ferguson .. | Do ..             | 7             | 0  | 0  | 65   |
| Thomas Taylor ..   | Do ..             | 7             | 5  | 0  | 65   |
| Henry Bristow ..   | Seaman ..         | 7             | 0  | 0  | 80   |
| Henry Clark ..     | Do ..             | 10            | 7  | 6  | 80   |
| William Kelly ..   | Do ..             | 6             | 0  | 0  | 80   |
| William Hall ..    | Do ..             | 2             | 4  | 0  | 80   |
| James Carr ..      | Do ..             | 6             | 0  | 0  | 80   |
| George Johnston .. | Do ..             | 6             | 10 | 0  | 80   |
| George Allen ..    | Do ..             | 6             | 0  | 0  | 80   |
| George Coleman ..  | Do ..             | 6             | 1  | 0  | 80   |
| Saml. Bobarah ..   | Cook ..           | 5             | 16 | 0  | 80   |
| Francis Sargent .. | Ship's steward .. | 3             | 9  | 6  | 100  |
| Tommy Tekie ..     | Seaman ..         | 4             | 0  | 0  | 100  |
| Shoemaker ..       | New Zealander ..  | 1             | 10 | 0  | 200  |
| Toonahudoo ..      | Do ..             | 2             | 0  | 0  | 200  |
| Aakatie ..         | Do ..             | 1             | 10 | 0  | 200  |
|                    |                   | £128   13   0 |    |    |      |

Sydney, 10th Novr., 1820.

ROB. CAMPBELL, Agent.



[Enclosure No. 3.]

*Duplicate.*1821  
Feb. 5.

Abstract of the shares of oil, seal skin, and whale bone due to the mates and crew of the brig Active, Joseph Thompson, master, and paid by Mr. Robert Campbell, exclusive of the master's, delivered to himself, and John Innes Cooper's, deducted from the bill on the owners of the Quayle, viz. :—

| Names.                    | Stations.    | Shares. | Amount.   | An Advance. | Balance paid. |
|---------------------------|--------------|---------|-----------|-------------|---------------|
|                           |              |         | £ s. d.   | £ s. d.     | £ s. d.       |
| Mr. John Hunter           | Mate ..      | 25th    | 93 0 6    | 7 0 0       | 86 0 6        |
| John Oliveri ..           | Do ..        | 30      | 77 4 3    | 8 0 0       | 69 4 3        |
| John Watson ..            | Boat steerer | 40      | 65 10 1   | 6 0 0       | 59 10 1       |
| William Morrison          | Do ..        | 65      | 35 13 5   | 6 0 0       | 29 13 5       |
| Brewnie ..                | Do ..        | 65      | 35 13 5   | 8 0 0       | 27 13 5       |
| Mathew Graves ..          | Seaman ..    | 75      | 30 11 5   | 7 3 4       | 23 8 1        |
| Fisher Haunton ..         | Do ..        | 80      | 29 0 0    | 7 0 0       | 22 0 0        |
| George Fleeming           | Do ..        | 80      | 29 0 0    | 6 0 0       | 23 0 0        |
| Daniel McLean ..          | Do ..        | 80      | 29 0 0    | 7 0 0       | 22 0 0        |
| William Hall ..           | Do ..        | 80      | 29 0 0    | 4 0 0       | 25 0 0        |
| Walter Griffith ..        | Do ..        | 80      | 29 0 0    | 6 0 0       | 23 0 0        |
| William Kelly ..          | Do ..        | 80      | 29 0 0    | 6 0 0       | 23 0 0        |
| William Selwood           | Do ..        | 80      | 29 0 0    | 6 0 0       | 23 0 0        |
| Boborah ..                | Cook ..      | 80      | 29 0 0    | 6 2 6       | 22 17 6       |
| William Power ..          | Seaman ..    | 90      | 25 14 0   | 6 0 0       | 19 14 0       |
| Tommy Tokie ..            | Do ..        | 90      | 25 14 0   | 3 0 0       | 22 14 0       |
| Frances Sergeant          | Steward ..   | 100     | 23 2 7    | 3 0 0       | 20 2 7        |
| George Seringer ..        | Seaman ..    | 85      | 27 3 4    | 6 0 0       | 21 3 4        |
| Thomas Kidna<br>(Derwent) | Do ..        | 80      | 24 12 10  | ..          | 24 12 10      |
|                           |              |         | 695 19 10 | 108 5 10    | 587 14 0      |

E.E.—ROB. CAMPBELL, Agent.

Sydney, New So. Wales, 2nd Septem., 1820.

## PETITION TO EARL BATHURST.—WESLEYAN MISSION.

Wesleyan Mission House, 77 Hatton Garden,

MAY IT PLEASE YOUR LORDSHIP,— 6 Feby., 1821.

Feb. 6.

We beg to acquaint Your Lordship that, in consequence of an Order by Your Lordship's direction from the Commissioners of His Majesty's Navy, the Committee of the Wesleyan Missionary Society have been authorized to send on board the Minerva, male convict ship, household furniture and agricultural implements solely for the use of the Society's missionaries in New Zealand, but in consequence of the Commissioners of His Majesty's Customs not being able, on account of some recent regulations, to

Goods for  
New Zealand  
mission.

1821  
Feb. 6.  
Official  
obstruction.

admit them to be put on board, and the Lords Commissioners of His Majesty's Treasury declining to interfere, we are obliged, though reluctantly, to trespass on Your Lordship's attention, and to request that Your Lordship will please signify to the Lords Commissioners of the Treasury Your Lordship's wish that the articles may be permitted to pass the Customs.

We have, &c.,

JOHN BURDSALL,  
JOS. TAYLOR,  
RICHD. WATSON,  
Secretaries.

[Church Missionary House.

REV. S. MARSDEN TO REV. J. PRATT.

Parramatta, March 21st, 1821.

March 21.

REVEREND AND DEAR SIR,—

A whaler has just arrived from the Bay of Islands. The master informs me there were seventeen whalers on the coast. As they all barter with muskets and powder they will buy up all the animal food from the natives, and greatly distress the settlement for provisions for a time. It may seem strange that I have never been able from the first to convince the missionary settlers of the value of cattle. A moment's reflection ought to be sufficient to convince the most ignorant of the vast importance of cattle in a new country, for labour, milk, butter, animal food, &c. Had the missionaries only attended to the cattle that have been imported they would not now be in want of animal food. . . . At one time I sent over six heifers—very fine ones. They informed me they wanted a bull. I then sent over two very fine English bulls. They neglected to put these to the heifers, so that they never bred. When I returned in the Dromedary I took more cattle over with me. On my arrival I found the Revd. Mr. Butler had shot three of my heifers and two bulls, and also one cow in calf. When I asked him his reason for doing so he said he wanted to get them into the settlement, and finding he could not he shot five of them and Shunghee shot one. I was much hurt at this circumstance, as it was defeating my intention towards New Zealand. Mr. Butler had no right to kill my cattle: it was a wanton thoughtless act. The cattle could not have been worth much less than £100 in New South Wales. They had cost me considerable trouble and expense to get them into the country. Their beef was very fat. Had they acted properly from the first they would have had plenty of milk and butter, and a considerable quantity of beef by this time, and would not have been so dependent upon

Cattle not  
properly  
valued in  
New Zealand.

Six shot by  
Mr. Butler  
and Shunghee.

They were  
worth £100  
in New South  
Wales.

the natives. If the Society could meet with a pious farmer, or if a few families were settled upon the Society's land, this would be an excellent thing. I think there is little doubt but they might soon maintain themselves if they were industrious. Some measure must be adopted to render the missionaries independent of the natives, and there is none but agriculture that can furnish them with supplies. The whalers are likely to ruin the whole country by importing such quantities of fire arms and gun powder. How this evil can be remedied I know not. It is a very great one. . . .

1821  
March 21.  
A farmer  
should be  
sent out.

I remain, &c.,

Rev'd. J. Pratt, &c., &c.

SAMUEL MARSDEN.

# ADMIRALTY TO THE COLONIAL OFFICE.

SIR,—

Admiralty Office, 22 March, 1821.

March 22.

I am commanded by my Lords Commissioners of the Admiralty to transmit to you, for the information of Earl Bathurst, copies of two letters from the Navy Board, and of the several papers therein referred to, relative to the detention of an American ship called the General Gates at New Zealand by the commander of His Majesty's Store Ship Dromedary, for having carried away several convicts from New South Wales.

Detention of  
"General  
Gates."

I am, &c.,

Henry Goulburn, Esqre.

JOHN BARROW.

[Enclosures.]

SIR,—

Navy Office, 15th February, 1821.

Navy Office to  
Croker, 15th  
February, 1821.

We transmit herewith, for the information of the Lords Commissioners of the Admiralty, copies of two letters from Mr. Skinner, master commanding His M's. Naval Store Ship Dromedary, dated Bay of Islands, New Zealand, 19th April, 1820, detailing the particular circumstances attending his detention of the American ship General Gates, whose captain enticed and entered on board her as seamen several convicts from New South Wales, and which had induced Mr. Skinner to send the General Gates to Port Jackson, to be delivered up to the Governor of the colony, leaving all farther proceedings to his discretion.

Convicts  
carried from  
New South  
Wales by  
"General  
Gates."

We are, &c.,

RT. SEPPINGS.

J. D. THOMSON.

J. BOWEN.

J. W. Croker, Esqr.

P.S.—Copies of the declarations alluded to are in this office, and if required by their Lordships shall be forwarded to them.

1821

Skinner to  
Navy  
Commissioners.

Escaped  
convicts from  
New South  
Wales on  
"General  
Gates."

Captain  
declared he  
had only three.

Vessel  
pronounced  
seizable.

When he  
acknowledged  
he had eleven.

Nine had got  
on shore.

H.M. Store Ship Dromedary,  
Bay of Islands, New Zealand, 19th April, 1820.

HONORABLE GENTLEMEN,—

I beg leave to acquaint you that the Rev. J. Butler, Resdt. Magistrate at the Bay of Islands, having represented to me by letter dated 11th inst. (a copy of which is hereby transmitted), that several convicts had been brought away from Port Jackson by the Amern. brig (but now ship) General Gates in July last, which ship laying in a distant part of this bay, I went the next day (12th) accompan'd. by Mr. Butler and Mr. Marsden, on board her, and made a formal demand on Capt'n. Riggs to deliver them up to me, when he declared on his word and honor that he had but three then attached to the ship, the others having run away, and those three were employed on shore cutting wood, and he should not be able to get them on board, but promised on his word he would land them, and leave them in charge of Mr. Hall, a missionary, when he was going to sea.

I had taken in the boat with me a man named John Richardson, a convict, whom His Excy. Govr. Macquarrie had ordered on board for the purpose of collecting plants, &c., thinking it probable he might recognise some of the convicts, and on our way was told by him that he was certain the Genl. Gates had brought away twelve or thirteen convicts, and told me the names of three of them, which I having made known to the American captain, he still denied it in the same positive terms as before, on which I examined his port clearance, mustered the crew, and searched the ship, having reminded him that she was seizable, when he at length said he had deceived me, but would state the truth of the whole affair, when he shewed me his articles of agreement to which had been wafered on a piece of paper, containing the names of eleven men, a list of which is sent herewith, all of whom he had brought from Port Jackson, one of which, James, *alias* Will Macdonald, he said was a free man, and was then on board his ship as part of the crew, and had been mustered by the name of one of his men who had deserted at Port Jackson; David Clarke he said he had landed on the south coast with a sealing party; the others, nine in number, were on shore near the ship. I had observed a boat from her proceed to the shore and return as I approached, and had no doubt she was sent for the purpose of landing the convicts, and had therefore determined to search for them, and accordingly took Capt. Riggs in my boat, who conducted me to the spot where he said they were employed in cutting wood, but he having called to them several times, and no answer being returned, I sent a midshipman and five of the boats' crew in one



direction and went with the Amern. captain and two natives in another, and after a search of several hours succeeded in bringing them all off. I had previous to landing promised to leave Jas. McDonald on board, Mr. Marsden having said he knew him to be a free man, and the American captain seeming so much distressed at the thought of losing him, saying that the whole success of his voyage depended on that man; and there the matter would have ended had I not the following morning received the accompanying declaration, signed by five of the convicts, setting forth the means pursued by Captain Riggs to entice them on board his ship, when I, with the approbation of the officers of the Dromedary, determined to send her to Port Jackson, in order to put His Excy. the Governor in possession of the ship and captain, and consequently the means of securing the penalties incurred by so gross a violation of the laws of the Government of New Sth. Wales, and accordingly sent the 2d. master and party of men to take possession of her. It was with some reluctance I was brought to this determination, as from the important and laborious service in which this ship is employed, surrounded by treacherous cannibals, she is, as must be imagined, by no means in a state to spare officers and men to take another ship into port; but the whole of the transaction appeared too infamous to pass over, and I considered I should be wanting in my duty as a British officer was I not to use every exertion in my power in support of the laws of my country, which in the present instance has been so grossly insulted; and I hope the measure I have pursued will meet the approbation of your honble. Board. I have sent Mr. Simmons, master's mate, in charge of the ship, with orders to take her to Port Jackson, and deliver her up to His Excy. the Governor, and receive his instructions. He has under his orders Mr. Baskerville, midsn., and eight men belonging to this ship, and three belonging to the Prince Regent, schr.; Fras. Ewer, one of the convicts, and Henry Gordon, said to be a free man, together with Captain Riggs and two of the Americans, are also sent, being as many of them as I deemed it prudent to trust on board; and it is my intention to send the Prince Regent with part of the Amern. ship's crew (having taken out eight) to follow the ship in four or five days; and have requested His Excy. the Governor to be pleased to order the schooner to return, as she has been and still would be of essential service.

I beg leave to enclose a copy of the depositions made by the men taken out of the General Gates.

I have, &c.,

R. SKINNER, Master Comg.

The Principal Officers and Commrs. of H.M. Navy.

1821

Found, after several hours' search.

Decided to send vessel to Port Jackson.

Mr. Simmons in charge of her.

Part of crew will go in "Prince Regent."

1821

Butler to  
Skinner, 11th  
April, 1820.

Convicts from  
New South  
Wales.

Secreted on  
"General  
Gates."

Keedee Keedee, in Bay of Iselands,

New Zealand, April 11th, 1820.

SIR,—

In July last the brig General Gates, Captain Biggs, master, being in the Harbour of Port Jackson, the agent of the Church Missionary Society, the Revd. Saml. Marsden, took her up to convey me and my colleagues to the Bay of Islands, in New Zealand, the place of our destination. We sailed from Port Jackson July 29th/19, and shortly after we had got to sea several felons were discovered to be on board (I believe, five) belonging to the Colony of New South Wales. On my arrival at the Bay of Iselands, August 12th/19, there being no British ships in the harbour, nor any jail to confine these convicts in, I made no official demand on Captain Biggs to deliver them up, and the General Gates sailed from the Bay of Iselands on or about the 15 September, having these convicts on board. She has returned, and is now lying in the harbour. I therefore feel it my duty, as Resident Magistrate, to communicate to you the above circumstances, in order that necessary steps may be taken to secure and return them to the Colony and Government of New South Wales, for whom

I am, &c.,

JOHN BUTLER,

Resident Magistrate, Bay of Iselands, New Zealand.

Capt. R. Skinner, H.M.S. Dromedary, Bay of Iselands.

Skinner to  
Navy Office,  
19th April,  
1820.

Asks  
distribution of  
prize money.

H.M. Store Ship Dromedary, Bay of Islands,

HONBLE. GENTN.,—

New Zealand, 19 April, 1820.

I beg leave to state to you that the American ship General Gates, having been detained by His Majesty Store Ship under my command under extraordinary circumstances, and altogether novel to me, I was perfectly unacquainted with the mode of proceeding, but trust I have done my duty in sending her to Port Jackson to be delivered up to His Excellency the Governor, leaving all further proceedings to his discretion. I, however, transmitted a list of the persons actually serving on board to His Excellency the Governor, begging he would be pleased to grant the amount arising from such detention might be paid as prize money to the officers and crew of H.M. Store Ship Dromedary and colonial schooner Prince Regent, which I hope will meet the approbation of your hble. Board.

I have, &c.,

R. SKINNER, Master and Commanding.

The Principal Officers and Commissioners of H.M. Navy.

*The Deposition of Francis Ewer (Prisoner).*

1821

I, Francis Ewer, state that I met Captain Riggs in Sydney about three weeks prior to the General Gates sailing from Port Jackson, and asked him if he wanted any man in my line, meaning a painter and glazier, or to do any work on board his vessel. He told me he wanted a head pump fixed, and asked what I would do it for. I told him twenty pounds. He said it was too much money, and that he could not have it done. I then said I was a prisoner for life, and wanted to make my escape. On hearing that he told me he would consider of it. After that he met me near Mr. Middleton's house, and asked me if I was willing he was agreeable to take me. I told him, Yes. I had no other conversation with him until I met him by appointment at Mr. Storer's. On my arrival at Mr. Storer's I met Captain Riggs, Nat Ewer, Thos. Lewe, Henry Gordon, James McDonald, *alias* McDaniel, and a man named Smith. Mr. Storer came frequently in the room, attending to his business, bringing liquor, when the subject was dropped. I settled nothing finally that evening, but was requested to meet him again at Mr. Storer's the next day (Saturday) for the purpose of finally settling and arranging about being taken away. Having met and arranged, he desired me to go down to Campbell's wharf, and that he would bring his boat and take us off. After waiting about an hour Captain Riggs came with his boat and took us to the North Shore; landed us there, gave us provisions, and said he would use us as his own ship's company. He said the reason for his not taking us then on board was he was afraid the ship would be smoked, but that he would come and take us off; and as a signal for us to know it was him he would have a light in the boat. We remained in the bush from Saturday night until late on Wednesday or early on Thursday morning, when he came and took us all on board his vessel, with the exception of Smith. On arrival on board he stowed us away under some sails and different stores forward, where we remained until the ship was at sea. When let out, he ordered the steward to give us four pounds of bread a week, and I believe a pound of meat a day, and we remained on these provisions until we arrived at the Bay of Islands, when he added to our provisions three glasses of rum and three gills of molasses pr. week, and three gills of flower on Sunday. He told us he was in great expectation of seals, and that he wished us to sign articles, which we did, and sailed from the Bay of Islands as the ship's crew. Not finding any seals, he treated us severely, and reduced our provisions. When we arrived at Camel's Island the ship got on shore, and I was sent on shore with three more hands with empty casks and wood for the purpose of lightening the ship. Having worked very hard

Deposition of  
Francis Ewer,  
14th April,  
1820.

Told Captain  
Riggs he  
wanted to  
escape.

Met him  
several times.

Plan of escape  
arranged.

Took him and  
others on  
board.

Treated  
severely on  
finding no  
seals.

1821

Worked hard  
when ship got  
on shore.

Ill-treated by  
the captain.

Put in coal  
hole.

Received forty-  
eight lashes on  
back, and  
brine rubbed  
in.

Salt pork  
stolen.

on shore and on my return to the ship, I was given two glasses of rum, and after this I went to bed and told the men if I had known as much as I did now I would not have left the Sydney. The chief mate came down to call me. I told him I was unwell, being fatigued. He then went up and brought down a bucket of water, and threw it over me, and went up and told the captain, who came down with some rope nettles. He called me a convicted scoundrel, and made use of many other reproachful words; struck me on the face and neck with the nettles, which I took from him, when he began to kick me on the head, face, and ribs. I told him if he did not leave off I should be under the necessity of making him. The sealing knife and steel hanging up over my head, I took them down and told him again if he did not leave me I would make him, when he said, "Damn-me, I will settle you." He went on deck, brought with him a cutlass and pistol, and said, "Now, my boy, who has the largest knife?" I answered, "You have," and gave in. He then made a blow at me with the flat part of the cutlass. I told him that his cutlass would not frighten me. He then ordered me to be ironed hand and feet, but the chief mate said he did not like to iron me, in consequence of my legs being bad. I was then put in the coal hole, and ordered bread and water, where I remained on a biscuit a day for three days. When I was brought up, on the afternoon of the third day, I saw the captain, who had nettles in his hands, who told me he was going to flog me, and told John Lovatt if he did not seize me up to the gun he would flog him, when I was seized up, and received four dozen lashes on my back. After this he ordered the steward to get some brine. The brine being brought, one of the men said, "Throw it over his back"; but Captain Riggs said, "Damn him, rub it into him, iron him, and put him below." I was taken down; but Mr. Clarke, sealing captain, then solicited for me to be taken out of irons, as my back was so bad. I was taken out and remained sick below for a week. After this I did my duty on deck in the day, and ironed every night for about a fortnight, when he sent for me into his cabin, called Nat. Ewer and Cadwallader, and told them if I committed the least fault he would hang me at the yard arm. Not being successful in getting skins he sent for Storer, Lewe, Johnson, Purcell, and myself, in Dusky Bay, and told us that he understood we were going to take a boat away. I then said, "Captain Riggs, I hope you are not going to lay any more charges to me," when he answered, "Damn you, I have not done with you yet." He then ironed us, put us in the hold, and in the morning following called us up, brought some nails and pieces of salt pork, and asked me if I knew anything about it. When I told him No, he then asked the rest the same question, who all



answered No. He then told Johnson and me to strip. I asked him for why. He said again, "Damn you, strip." I then said, "You have no charge against me," when he replied, "I have not done with you for the last." After tying us both up in the rigging, he walked up and down the deck with nettles in his hand, asking if we knew anything about the pork. I told him I did not, and the ship's company knew the same. He then commenced flogging Johnson, telling him he would not leave off till he told him where he got the pork. Johnson then told him that, being starved, he took it. He then told him he would flog him for taking it, and, I think, gave him about four or five dozen lashes. After flogging Johnson he came to me, and punished me with nineteen lashes, when a hiss and kind of growling was heard among the ship's company. He then cast us off, ironed us, put myself, Storer, Lewe, and Johnson in the hold, and ordered us to have nothing served out to us, and only to be allowed one hour on deck in the day, for the purpose of catching fish; and if we did not catch fish, we might starve. The steward frequently solicited to have bread given us, but was not allowed. After remaining in this manner five weeks we made Chanchi Harbour, on the coast of New Zealand. We were released, and the hands being sent away sealing, we were allowed four pounds of bread a week, and a dram of spirits pr. day to do the duty of the ship.

1821

Johnson  
severely  
flogged.Several put in  
hold, and  
nearly starved.Remained so  
for five weeks.

Dated on board H.M. Store Ship Dromedary, Bay of Islands (New Zealand), the fourteenth day of April, one thousand eight hundred and twenty.

FRAS. EWER.

### *The Deposition of Thomas Lewe (Prisoner).*

I, Thomas Lewe, state that I met Captn. Riggs about three weeks before he sailed from Port Jackson, in the streets of Sydney, and asked him if he wanted any hands. He said "Yes," and asked me if I was a prisoner. I answered "Yes," and he told me to call on board his vessel on the Sunday following, which I did, when he ordered the people to give me some dinner, and that he had made up his mind to take me. He then ordered me to come frequently on board, to know when the ship was going to sail. I met him also by appointment at Storus [? Storer's], the blacksmith, residing at Sydney, several times, where I generally found four or five other prisoners, particularly on the day he carried us away; when he took me on board his vessel in his own boat, and kept me there until near twelve o'clock that night, when he ordered me in his boat, and took me to Campbell's Wharf, where we met Francis Ewer, Nathaniel Ewer, Henry Gordon, and a man named John Smith. He took them in his boat, and landed us all on the North Shore, nearly opposite the light-

Deposition of  
Thomas Lewe,  
14th April,  
1820.Captain Riggs  
planned his  
escape.Took him  
and others  
to North  
Shore.

1821

Fetched them  
on board.Concealed in  
bulkhead.Signed ship's  
articles.Accused of  
intention to  
steal a boat.Cruel  
punishments.

house, with provisions, water, &c., and when he left us said he would come and fetch us, and, as a signal, would shew a light three times, that we might not be deceived by any other boat. Late on Wednesday evening or early on Thursday morning following he came, made the signal, called us by name, particularly me, and when we were all down, took us in his boat, and carried us on board his vessel. On our arrival on board he gave us something to eat, and a glass of grog each. Being forward, I saw the carpenter, and second mate assisting him, holding a candle while he made a hole in the bulkhead. When the hole was finished, he, Captn. Riggs, ordered us in, and the bulkhead was again nailed up. After being clear of the harbour the carpenter came down and said to Henry Gordon, "The Captn. has ordered me to take you out of irons, steward," and told him he must go aft and do his duty as usual. Henry Gordon went aft, and we remained under the forecastle until Captn. Riggs came to us, when he said he should give us the same rations as his own ship's company, and treat us as such, and asked us personally if Mr. Marsden knew any of us. Some answered "Yes," some "No," and those that Mr. Marsden did not know were sent on deck to work. On our arrival at New Zealand he called us aft, read his articles, and asked us to sign them, put us on equally with his own men, and I, as one, signed the articles. I was sent for in Dusky Bay with Francis Ewer, James Johnson, Ralph Story, and James Purcell, and accused of an intention of taking away one of the boats to leave the ship. I denied it, and asked him who gave him the information. He would not tell me, and put me with the others in the hold. The next morning he called us all up, and tied Francis Ewer and James Johnson up in the rigging, and flogged them himself. He then liberated Purcell, but sent me with the other three in the hold, and there kept us, without allowing us any provisions, for five weeks, and only granted one hour per day for each man to come up and catch fish, but if we did not catch fish we must starve. Sometimes he sent us bread which was not fit to be issued to the crew, and has continued since that time to keep us on that kind of bread until we were taken out of the vessel by the Captn. of the Dromedary.

Dated on board H.M.S. Dromedary, Bay of Islands (New Zealand), this fourteenth day of April, one thousand eight hundred and twenty.

THOMAS LEWE.

### *The Deposition of Henry Gordon.*

Deposition of  
Henry Gordon,  
14th April,  
1820.

I, Henry Gordon, state that I was introduced to Captain Riggs of the then American brig General Gates by Philip Maclan, steward of the Greyhound, both vessels then lying in Sidney

Cove, about the latter end of June, 1819, to engage myself as his steward. He did not engage me then, but he, Captain Riggs, desired me to meet him in the market place of Sidney on the following morning. I went there, according to his request, with the steward of the Greyhound, and Captain Riggs sent his steward with me and the steward of the Greyhound. We went off to the brig General Gates in Captain Riggs' boat. Captain Riggs came on board about half an hour after, and told me the Governor would not allow him to take away any European from the colony. He then said if I would engage to go with him as steward he would give me five dollars p. month, and half a skin out of every hundred. I then engaged myself to go with him. He then said if I had determined to go he would stow me away on board the brig, and desired me to come on board on the following day. I told him I could not. He then asked me to come on the Sunday following to wait dinner, as he was going to have a party on board. I went on board on the Sunday morning, and remained there until about ten o'clock that night, and officiated as steward. I was frequently on board the brig after this, and met Captain Riggs on shore several times, when he told me he should be off to sea the first opportunity. This was prior to the Revd. Mr. Marsden having taken up the vessel to convey missionaries to the Bay of Islands (New Zealand). When he knew the missionaries were going he offered to defray my expences on shore, when I told him (Captain Riggs) I did not require it, as my board was paid for for three months. On Friday night I saw him (Captain Riggs) by appointment, at Mr. McQuieron's, and went with him from there to Mr. Storeis, blacksmith [publican]. On my arrival at Mr. Storeis we went into the blacksmith's shop, when he left me, and went into Mr. Storeis' dwelling-house, and walked into a room on the right-hand side coming from the blacksmith's shop, and desired me to follow him. I went into the room soon after, and there found Captain Riggs, Mr. Storeis, Nathl. Ewer, Fras. Ewer, Thomas Lewe, a blacksmith named Smith, and a man named McDaniel. Captain Riggs then asked all of us if we were willing to ship with him that he would behave to us the same that he would to his own ship's company. We then all agreed to go with him, and he told us to meet him again at Mr. Storeis' house on the following night, when he would take us all away. He told me personally to meet him the same night (Saturday) at Mr. Quiern's, where I met him, and we both went down to Mr. Storeis'. I remained outside while he went into Mr. Storeis' dwelling-house, and walked up and down near the house for about half an hour, when I again saw Captain Riggs. He then asked me if I had seen any of the men that were going. I replied I had not. He told me to go down to the

1821

Engaged as  
steward on  
"General  
Gates."Governor  
refused  
permission to  
leave colony.Captain offered  
to stow him  
away.Met him  
several times.Also agreed to  
assist others  
to escape.



1821

All taken to  
North Shore.

Thence  
fetched on  
board

and concealed  
in bulkhead.

Signed  
articles in  
Bay of Islands.

wharf, but not the same way as he did. Captn. Riggs overtook me before I got to the wharf, but had no conversation. On his arrival at the wharf he hailed the General Gates several times, for a boat to be sent on shore. His boat did not come, but the steward of the Greyhound being there, he told Capt. Riggs he would hail the Greyhound for a boat, and take me on board the General Gates with the steward of the Greyhound. The Captain did not go, but said he was going to see for the other men, and came on board about half an hour afterwards, and told the chief mate not to allow any of the passengers to come on deck after ten o'clock, and to have all the lights put out between decks. He then went on shore again, and returned about an hour afterwards, and told the chief mate to get some pork, bread, and water ready, and put into his boat, and desired me to go into the boat. He took me to Campbell's Wharf, where we met Nathl. Ewer, Frans. Ewer, Thos. Lewe, McDaniel, and Smith. The oars were muffled, and he conveyed us to the North Shore, close to the heads of Sidney, where he landed us with the provisions, tinder-box, flints, &c., and told us not to be decoyed by any other boat, as he would shew a light in his boat when he came to take us off; and if he would not take us off in the harbour, he would lower his colours going past us, and return that night with his boat to take us off. We remained on the North Shore until the Tuesday following, when he came in his boat and shewed a light in a lanthorn. He afterwards called us by name, when we went down to the boat. He then came on shore, and told us the constables had been on board the ship with smoking-pans, but did not smoke the ship, and that they had all gone on shore, but that two Government vessels were to convoy him out of the harbour; that he would take us on board, and stow us where we could not be found. We then all went into his boat, and arrived on board about two o'clock that morning, when he took us between decks forwards, where we found the carpenter and second mate of the ship removing casks and cutting a hole in the bulkhead. When the hole was made, he desired us to go in, which we did, and the piece was again put in; where we remained until the Thursday following, when he came forward and told the carpenter, as an excuse (Mr. Marsden and several missionaries being on board), to take the steward out of irons, meaning me. I then came out, and he desired me to go down into the cabin and do my duty, which I did. When the others came out I do not know, but saw them on deck during the day doing duty in the ship, when she was past the Heads. I did not sign any articles of the agreement until the night previous to our sailing from the Bay of Islands, in consequence of the missionaries being on board.

Dated on board H.M.S.S. Dromedary, Bay of Islands, New Zealand, this 14 day of April, 1820.

HENRY GORDON.



## MISSIONARIES TO EARL BATHURST.

Wesleyan Mission House, 77 Hatton Garden,  
23d. March, 1821.

1821  
March 23.

MAY IT PLEASE YOUR LORDSHIP,—

We take the liberty, in behalf of the Committee of the Wesleyan Missionary Society, of addressing your Lordship on the following subject :—

Our Committee are sending out missionaries to establish a mission on a part of New Zealand not far from the Bay of Islands, to promote Christianity and civilization among the savages in that country. The Committee also wish to send out articles of household furniture for the missionaries, and various implements of agriculture for the use of themselves, and the natives which they may employ; and we are directed to request the favour of being permitted to ship on board one of the transports now fitting out for New South Wales fifteen tons of the above mentioned goods, to be landed at Sydney, from which place the Committee will direct them to be sent to New Zealand.

Missionaries  
going to  
New Zealand.

Wishes to  
send goods on  
to New South  
Wales by a  
transport.

We have, &c.,

JOHN BURDSALL,  
JOS. TAYLOR,  
RICHD. WATSON, } Secretaries.

The Right Honourable Earl Bathurst, &c., &c.

## ROBERT BROWN TO HENRY GOULBURN.

SIR,—

Gerrard St., April 3, 1821.

April 3.

I have to acknowledge your polite letter and the valuable collection of specimens of plants from Van Diemen's Land and New Zealand which accompanied it.

May I beg that you will have the goodness to offer my grateful acknowledgments to Lord Bathurst for the honour he has done me in placing these specimens in my hands, and to state to His Lordship, if you think proper, that I have already observed among them several very interesting plants not yet in the Banksian Herbarium, to which I shall have great pleasure in adding them.

Thanks for  
specimens from  
Van Diemen's  
Land and  
New Zealand.

I have also to beg that you will accept my best thanks for the good offices to which I consider myself indebted for this truly acceptable present.

I have, &c.,

ROBERT BROWN.\*

Henry Goulburn, Esq., M.P., &c., &c.

\* This was the celebrated botanist friend of Sir Joseph Banks.—F.M.B.

1821

April 25.

H. GOULBURN TO R. SUGDEN.

Colonial Office (N.S.W.—Domestic),

Downing Street, 25th April, 1821.

SIR,—

Re settlement  
at New  
Zealand.

I am directed by Lord Bathurst to acknowledge the receipt of your letter of the 18 January last relative to the establishment of a colony in New Zealand, and I am, in reply, to acquaint you that he does not feel that he has the power of approving any particular encouragement to the establishment of a colony there.

With respect to the duties which at present are imposed in New South Wales on New Zealand produce, I am to acquaint you that the consideration of the duties imposed on the importation of the commodities of New Zealand into New South Wales will not take place until the report of Commissioner Bigge shall be received by Lord Bathurst.

I am, &amp;c.,

HENRY GOULBURN.

Mr. R. Sugden, East India Chambers.

[Proceedings of the Church Missionary Society.]

May 1.

EXTRACT FROM THE REPORT OF THE COMMITTEE DELIVERED TO  
THE ANNUAL MEETING, HELD MAY 1, 1821.

*Australasia Mission.—Seminary at Parramatta for New Zealanders.*

Seminary at  
Parramatta  
for New  
Zealanders.

It was stated in the last report that up to March, 1819, there had been twenty-four young New Zealanders under Mr. Marsden's care at different periods. In July following, when he was about to embark on a second visit to New Zealand, twelve natives came over, who, with four others before in the seminary, were left by him to be employed in learning to make bricks or nails or in blacksmiths' work or some other useful trade.

Mr. Butler's  
opinion of  
work done  
there.

On Mr. Marsden's return from this visit to New Zealand, in November, 1819, Mr. Samuel Butler, son of the Rev. John Butler, accompanied him, in order to act as teacher at Parramatta, until his services should be wanted in New Zealand. Five sons of chiefs went with them.

Mr. Butler writes, in reference to this seminary, "From what I have seen of these New Zealand youths who have been in that seminary, I am persuaded that it is a matter of the first importance always to have there some of the children of the principal chiefs, as they will not only have an opportunity of seeing, but of being initiated in the customs and manners of civilized life. Those who have been at Parramatta for any length of time do not appear like the same persons when they

return back. Their natural ferocity seems very much softened, their minds enlightened, and themselves more than ever attached to Europeans, and especially to the missionaries. They relate also to their own people the things they see and hear, which has a great tendency to make a favourable impression on their minds, and to open their eyes to see our intention in coming among them."

Of the influence of this seminary on the chiefs of New Zealand Mr. Marsden writes, in the early part of February of last year, "Much has been done already towards the civilization of the natives in those parts of New Zealand with which we have had any communication, and nothing has tended more to this object than the chiefs and their sons visiting New South Wales. It is very pleasing to see the sons of the rival chiefs living with me, and forming mutual attachments. I have some very fine youths with me now, who are acquiring the English language very fast. I brought Mr. Butler's son back with me, to take the charge of these boys, and to devote his time to their instruction. By the sons of chiefs living together in civilized life, and all receiving equal attention, they will form attachments which will destroy that jealousy which has kept their tribes in continual war."

1821  
May 1.  
—  
Mr. Marsden's  
opinion.

There were at this time twenty-five New Zealanders in the seminary, some of whom returned with Mr. Marsden on a third visit which he paid to the islands.

Twenty-five  
New Zealanders  
in seminary  
in February,  
1820.

\* \* \* \*

Mr. Marsden sailed on a third visit to New Zealand in His Majesty's Ship Dromedary, Captain Skinner, about the middle of February of last year, and arrived on the 20th of that month. The Dromedary was directed by Government to proceed from New South Wales to the Bay of Islands, and subsequently the Coromandel to the River Thames, to bring home cargoes of timber for trial in this country. In an interview which the Secretary had with Sir Byam Martin, Comptroller of the Navy, who wished information on the subject of New Zealand, Sir Byam agreed that Mr. Marsden should be requested to accompany the Dromedary, in order to facilitate the object of her visit to the islands. He gladly availed himself of this opportunity of renewing his intercourse with the settlements, and of taking out supplies.

Mr. Marsden's  
third visit to  
New Zealand.

In the supply of timber to the Dromedary Mr. W. Hall was of great service, devoting for several months the chief part of his time to this object. Mr. Marsden bears a strong testimony to him as a most industrious man, and a mechanic of great ability, exerting himself successfully for the good of the settlement.

Mr. W. Hall  
very industrious  
and useful.

1821  
May 1.

Messrs.  
Carlisle and  
Gordon left  
the Society.

Mr. Marsden took with him, in the Dromedary, a young man named James Shepherd, born in New South Wales, and well acquainted with gardening; he had previously visited New Zealand by Mr. Marsden's desire, and was anxious to devote himself to the work of the mission. His services were the more desirable as Mr. Carlisle and Mr. Gordon, who joined the mission in April, 1817, had left the Society's service, and returned to New South Wales.

### EVIDENCE GIVEN BEFORE COMMISSIONER BIGGE.

*Ensign McCrae, 84th Regt.*

(May, 1821.)

May.

#### Questions.

Q. What were the several places that you visited during the course of your stay at New Zealand?

#### Answers.

A. I was at first at the Bay of Islands, where we stayed four months. During that time I made a tour on foot to two extensive settlements—one I believe to the westward about 12 or 15 miles from the Bay of Islands, the other about 25 miles from that place and more to the southward. I also visited the bay river, called Shokey Hanga, which is 70 miles across to the western coast, and also visited Wangaroa, a fine harbor, situated between Doubtful Bay and the Cavalle Islands on the eastern coast, where we staid about five months. During my stay I also saw several branches of the River Shokey Hanga.

Q. Which of the harbors that you visited appeared to you to be the best?

A. The Bay of Islands is I should think the best. It is capacious, secure, and easy of access, with abundance of water for very large ships, and no dangers but such as are well known or visible. The entrance to Shokey Hanga is intricate, but there is plenty of water.

Q. Are there settlements of the natives at both these places?

A. There are, especially at Shakey Honga, where the native population is considerable, and the cultivation extensive.

Q. Are the branches of the Shakey Honga River deep and wide?

A. On the left branch a well-loaded boat's launch could go up the right bank, and those nearest the mouth are accessible to boats for a short distance, and all could float timber. The two smallest are nearest the harbour, and are suffi-



1821  
May.  

---

ciently rapid to turn mills, and their water is fresh. A number of small rivulets containing good water fall into the main river.

Q. Is the tide of the rivers rapid ?

A. It is.

Q. Does it appear to be subject to inundations ?

A. It does not.

Q. Do the banks of this river or other streams you have described abound in wood ?

A. Yes, they do.

Q. Of what kinds ?

A. Principally of the wood called cowdie. That generally grows on the sides of the sloping banks, and in one place we found growing on a flat of considerable extent, as far as my eye could reach in one direction.

Q. Do you conceive that these woods are evergreen ?

A. Undoubtedly they are.

Q. Are the trees of the cowdee very tall and strait ?

A. They are so.

Q. Have they many branches upon them ?

A. They have not; they carry up a clean stem to a great height and then suddenly branch out into a tufty bushy top, with leaves resembling those of the English box.

Q. Did you find the same abundance of wood at Wangaroa and the same facility of getting it ?

A. It was neither so plentiful nor so easy to be procured. What was procured for the Dromedary was brought along a road a mile long that was made on purpose.

Q. Did you hear of any other harbor than those that you have described ?

A. I heard of one on the west coast, to the southward of Shakey Hanga, described to be a great deal larger than that river, with a wider entrance and a bar harbor, but the depth of water is not known.

Q. Is the country that you travelled through generally well watered ?

A. Remarkably so. In the west part of the country and near the sea coast on the east side it is much broken into ravines, the sides of which are mostly too steep for cultivation by cattle, but there are vallies between those ravines and some of considerable extent that are now in a state of cultivation by the natives. In the interior of the country and along the east coast, except immediately on the shore where there is a range of sand hills, there are extensive flats of rich alluvial land, and clear of timber. The timber generally grows on the sides of hills and banks of rivers.

1821  
May.

Q. Was there any natural grass growing upon these tracts of flat land ?

A. In the interior I observed that the fern that grows naturally and to a great height on the flat lands had been burnt by the natives and had been succeeded by a natural grass of which cattle seemed to be very fond, and this I believe will always be the case until the fern, which in New Zealand is of a very great strength and size (about four feet in the best lands, two on the hills and bad land) rises above the grass and crushes it.

Q. Did you observe much flax ? Whereabouts does it grow ?

A. It grows generally in the interior and very plentifully on the banks of the Shakey Honga River. I passed through a valley six miles in extent between Wangaroa and Shakey Honga where there was great abundance.

Q. How does it grow ?

A. It grows naturally in stools and tufts close to each other and some of them covering a space of not less than six feet diameter.

Q. Did you observe several varieties of this plant ?

A. I observed two different kinds myself—the red and the common kind. The former is very scarce, and chiefly cultivated by the natives for its whiteness. There are five other kinds that grow in different parts of the country, and one is remarkable for the facility with which it is separated from the husk.

Q. Do the natives cultivate the flax ?

A. As much as they require for their immediate use, and near their own habitations.

Q. How do they cultivate it ?

A. They dig small trenches about a foot wide and nine inches deep and plant the flax between the trenches. They generally select moist lands for the flax, and when they wish to have it very long for any particular purpose they plant it on rich soil, but I don't believe the New Zealand flax requires a very rich soil.

Q. How is it propagated ?

A. Always by plants. We were told by the natives that it did not grow from seed.

Q. Did you observe the New Zealand flax that was growing in the Government gardens at Sidney ?

A. I did.

1821  
May.  
—

Q. Did it appear to you to be as strong and as large as that which grows in New Zealand ?

A. It appeared to me as long and as healthy as strong, but I was told by the native New Zealanders at Mr. Marsden's that it was not so fibrous as that which was grown in their own country.

Q. What is the mode that the New Zealanders pursue in dressing their flax ?

A. After it is cut down and without drying, the fibrous parts are stripped from the leaf with a shell, and it is then hung up to dry. For the purpose of making it soft and silky they beat it after moistening it.

Q. Can the New Zealanders dress much of the flax in one day ?

A. The women and children generally perform this operation, and they can do a good deal.

Q. During the ten months you were in New Zealand, did you observe the temperature of the climate ?

A. For the two first months I did notice, and for the remainder I kept a regular account of the barometer and thermometer and the state of the winds.

Q. Is the climate very changeable ?

A. I think it is. The variations are nearly the same as at Port Jackson.

Q. A good deal of rain falls in New Zealand, I believe ?

A. A great deal in the winter, and in the summer there are light showers that must greatly assist vegetation.

Q. Are there great storms of wind ?

A. There are frequent storms of wind and rain, chiefly from the north-east.

Q. Is there any frost and snow ?

A. A little frost, but I never saw any snow.

Q. Are there any high hills in the parts of the country that you visited ?

A. Yes, there are, and those are generally isolated, not in ranges.

Q. Are they woody ?

A. They generally are. I observed one on which all the wood was cut down, and it had been cultivated by the natives.

Q. Is the soil generally clay ?

A. On the hills it is and of a poor cold quality. The valleys are very rich, and contain a fine loose mould, sometimes black and sometimes red.

Q. Did you observe any iron-stone gravel ?

A. I did in some parts of the country.

Q. In what parts of the country did you observe the best soil ?

A. As we advanced into the interior we observed that the soil always improved.

1821  
May.

Q. Did you observe that the native population was numerous ?

A. Compared with the extent of the country they are not, but when we saw them they were in large bodies of two or three hundred each.

Q. Do they live congregated in this manner, or are they dispersed over the country ?

A. They live all together for mutual safety.

Q. Are the tribes under the orders and authority of one chief ?

A. Generally they are, but there are instances where this authority is divided amongst two or more of the same family.

Q. Is the authority of the chief over a tribe very considerable ?

A. They all obey him in war and his demand upon their military service, but in peace his only authority is over his own family and slaves, tho' his influence in many things may and sometimes is exercised over the tribes.

Q. Can the chiefs call upon their tribes to work for them ?

A. No, they cannot. They were applied to procure labor for the Dromedary and they could not procure or command it.

Q. Is the authority of the chief hereditary ?

A. It is, and they are very proud of it.

Q. Do the chiefs wear any mark of distinction ?

A. His clothes and implements may be a little better, and on State occasions some marks of respect are paid to them by their own tribes.

Q. Are they fixed in their abodes, or do they wander from place to place ?

A. They change their places of abode in their own districts which have known limits, but they are not a wandering people.

Q. What do you conceive to be the ordinary causes of their wars ?

A. In general some family feud, some insult, or old grudge between one tribe and another, and sometimes a strong tribe will plunder a weak one for the sake of making slaves and obtaining mats and plunder to sell to Europeans, and independent of this they have a national liking for war.

Q. Are they cruel in their wars ?

A. Very cruel. They kill as many as they can, and make slaves of the women and children.

Q. Have they become expert in the use of European fire-arms ?

A. Not so much as any one might suppose from the numbers they possess.

Q. You believe and have observed that gunpowder and arms are very common amongst them ?

A. Very common. I have been told that amongst the tribes of the Bay of Islands there are not less



1821  
May.  

---

than 500 stand of arms, with bullet moulds. It should be observed that a great many of these firelocks that have been received from the whaling vessels are of the oldest and worst description.

Q. Are their own weapons of a very deadly and destructive kind ?

A. They have no missile weapons. Those they have are all for close quarters. When they spear a man they always dispatch him with the stone weapon that they always carry in their belts.

Q. Do they use in war the iron weapons they have received from Europeans ?

A. They use both axes and bill-hooks, and are very expert in the use of them. They have also bayonets and iron pointed spears.

Q. Have you reason to believe that cannibalism still prevails amongst them ?

A. I am certain that it does, and at the Bay of Islands the missionaries informed us that while the Dromedary was at the Bay of Islands a female slave was killed opposite to their houses and carried to a neighbouring island and was devoured.

Q. Did you learn whether the practice arises from some superstition, or from the gratification of revenge on their enemies, or a fondness for eating human flesh ?

A. I cannot exactly say, for I have heard and known of instances where slaves have been killed and not eaten. I have asked them the question, but I believe they know the aversion and detestation in which the practice is held by Europeans, and they either laughed or evaded any precise answer. I was told by a chief at the Bay of Islands that after a battle between his tribe and another in Wauchara Bay at a late period his party who had been victorious feasted for three days on the bodies of their enemies.

Q. Is infanticide common amongst them ?

A. I have heard of one or two instances of mothers putting their children to death who were females, because they could not go to war. I have understood they generally procure abortion for the children that are born of an European intercourse. A few have been preserved, and on my asking the reason they said the fathers had promised to return and they allowed the children to live.

1821  
May.

Q. Do you believe that cannibalism has diminished of late in New Zealand ?

A. I believe they know the abhorrence of Europeans for the practice that it is kept out of sight as much as possible, but I know that it still exists.

Q. Is polygamy allowed amongst them ?

A. It is, but a chief has one wife esteemed superior to the others, and she must be the daughter of another chief.

Q. Are the families numerous ?

A. Very much so.

Q. Do they appear healthy and strong ?

A. They are exceedingly so. I only saw one deformed person in the island.

Q. Did you ever see persons of an advanced age ?

A. I did. I saw several who recollected Captain Cook's visit to that country, and who were grown up at that time.

Q. Upon what terms do the whalers sell their fire arms and gunpowder to the New Zealanders ?

A. They sell them for pork and potatoes and if they want spars for their vessels.

Q. Is there any fixed price ?

A. None. It used to be 25 hogs for a single musket. The price is now generally 15, or 200 baskets of potatoes.

Q. Do you hear many complaints of the conduct of the masters of the whaler in their intercourse and dealing with the natives ?

A. A great many dreadful acts of cruelty in flogging the men and in forcing the women to prostitute themselves. A very gross instance happened about three years ago towards a native who was the daughter of a chief. On board the Catherine, whaler, a chief was struck with a rope's end till he vomited blood, and to satisfy his vengeance against Europeans he plundered some salt works belonging to the missionaries at the Bay of Islands. I have heard of several other gross cruelties, but not at a late period, excepting the Vansittart, Captain Hunt, a whaler that was at the Bay of Islands when the Dromedary was at Wangaroa. The master was drunk and beat a chief named Tikohu most unmercifully who was always very friendly to the Europeans, and whom we found to be a most excellent character.

Q. Do you know whether the missionaries interfered in this matter, or made any representation of it ?

A. Mr. Marsden was on board this vessel at the time it happened. He remonstrated with the master of the Vansittart, but I don't know what other steps he took.

1821  
May.

Q. Do you know whether the whalers ever take away any of the natives in their vessels ?

A. I have heard of one or two instances, and a chief came to complain to me that six years ago his son was taken away by a whaler and gave me the description of his person to assist me in finding him out or recovering him in England. He was greatly affected when he made this complaint.

Q. Is prostitution considered a crime amongst the natives ?

A. I have no doubt that it was formerly, but now even the fathers offer their daughters for prostitution on such terms as they can make with Europeans for sums or articles of barter. In the places that have not been frequented by Europeans, at the River Thames for instance, the chiefs would not allow their daughters to prostitute themselves, but only the slaves. I do not think prostitution is common, and early marriages are common.

Q. I am informed that the venereal disease is prevalent amongst the natives, especially of those places that have been much frequented by Europeans. Did you observe any instances of it ?

A. Very many at the Bay of Islands.

Q. Is any cure of the disease known to them ?

A. None that I could hear of.

Q. Do you believe it to be fatal if virulent ?

A. I believe it to be very fatal, and I observed an instance where a young female died of it and another who was dying.

Q. Are they aware themselves of it and of the cause ?

A. Perfectly, and in most cases, and as soon as they discover the effect they leave the ship and do not approach it again until they are cured.

Q. Do you know whether any of the missionaries possess or administer medicine in the neighbourhood of the settlements ?

A. I do not know.

Q. Are the natives aware of the power of medicine ?

A. They are, and have great confidence in all European medicine and cures.

Q. Do you observe any prevalent or special disease amongst the natives of New Zealand ?

A. Pulmonary complaints I think are general amongst them.

Q. Have the natives imbibed any aversion towards Europeans, especially towards the English ?

A. They have not. I do not think they have formed their judgment of Europeans or of the English from the whalers that touch at New Zealand.

1821

May.

Q. In what light do they regard the convicts of New South Wales ?

A. The people of the Bay of Islands, the only ones who know them, have the greatest contempt for them. They know their condition, and treat them badly.

Q. Do you think that there are many runaway convicts now at New Zealand ?

A. I have only heard of one, a woman, who had been there several years, and lived with one of the inferior chiefs. The master of the ship General Gates, that brought away several convicts from Port Jackson in 1819, had bargained with a chief to leave him two of the convicts, for which he was to be paid in potatoes and pigs. The men were mechanics, and the master of the General Gates had persuaded the chief that they could make and mend firelocks.

Q. Are there any Europeans not belonging to the Missionary Society established in New Zealand ?

A. One family of the name of Hanson. The father commands the colonial brig Lady Nelson.

Q. Do they cultivate land or do they trade ?

A. They cultivate a very little land, and Hanson trades with the natives, and is a sort of agent for the whalers, and buys mats and curiosities.

Q. Have they obtained any knowledge of the English language ?

A. Some of them that have intercourse with the English have acquired a little.

Q. Are they avaricious or given to theft ?

A. They are.

Q. Are they cunning in their bargains that they make and very rigid in enacting the performance of them ?

A. Very much so.

Q. Have they a disposition to trade, or do they show a wish to become possessed of European manufactures ?

A. The only manufacture that they at present wish to possess are gunpowder and muskets. They are fond of dress, but won't give anything for it that is of value to them.

Q. What are the usual articles that they exchange with the whalers ?

A. Pigs, potatoes, wood, fish, and curiosities.

Q. What manufactures have they ?

A. Mats of various kinds, which they use as clothing ; their canoes, in making which they are very skilful ; and a few carved implements.

Q. Have any of them learnt to use English implements in their agricultural labors ?

A. Only our hoe, but they use it with a short handle.



1821  
May.

Q. Are axes and hoes much in demand ?

A. Not much.

Q. Have any of them learnt any trade or mechanical arts from the missionaries or elsewhere ?

A. The only work I have seen them do of this description is sawing wood. I did not see more than three pairs of sawyers.

Q. Are they persevering or regular in their industries ?

A. By no means. It is very difficult, almost impossible, to make them go on with their work for any time.

Q. What operations of their own do they excel in ?

A. In cutting timber of any size. In this they excel Europeans, I have been told.

Q. Of what does their agriculture consist ?

A. The cultivation of yams, the potatoes (sweet and English), a native plant or root called tarra (? taro), and the calabash. Their cultivation of these plants is very neat and careful, and their grounds are fenced with cattle fences, made of posts firmly driven into the ground. They have a very neat appearance, and they thus preserve their fields from the ravages of the pigs that are very numerous except at the Bay of Islands, where there has been a great consumption of it by the whalers.

Q. Do they compel their slaves to cook ?

A. They do.

Q. Do they form a separate class from their masters ?

A. They form a separate class, and are never allowed to eat with them.

Q. Are they cruel in the treatment of their slaves ?

A. Very cruel. They are also very badly clothed, and seem to be in a wretched condition. They are likewise put to death as offerings and a sacrifice for any person of the chief's family who happens to die.

Q. Do you know whether the slaves are ever sold or exchanged ?

A. Yes, they are, and are objects of barter. Prisoners of distinction are sometimes ransomed for articles of value, such as green jade stone and muskets.

Q. Are there any quadrupeds in New Zealand, wild or tame ?

A. None but the native dog that resembles that of New Holland, tho' in New Zealand it is capable of being domesticated and they are trained to catch the pigs. This and a species of small wild rat are the only quadrupeds. The natives have no cattle.

1821  
May.

Q. Are the pigs numerous and of a good breed ?

A. In the interior and on the west coast they are very numerous, and I think of a good breed. Their flesh when fed upon roots is very good, but when they are on the sea coast it has a fishy taste.

Q. Are the natives fond of animal food ?

A. They like it now and then, but prefer a vegetable diet or fern, of which they have and preserve a great quantity. They are also fond of rock oysters and cockles, which are in abundance on the coasts.

Q. Are they fond of bread ?

A. They are very fond of biscuit.

Q. Have they any European vegetables ?

A. They have turnips, greens, and in some places carrots and water melons; radishes likewise grow in the country, but the natives do not make use of them.

Q. Have they any fruit trees ?

A. I have seen one or two peaches, and I planted a few orange trees when I was there.

Q. Does New Zealand abound in birds ?

A. There are a great many pigeons, ducks, and wild fowls. There are likewise small emus and parrots, parraquets, and cockatoos.

Q. Is travelling easy in New Zealand ?

A. Footpaths are made in several directions, and the natives never leave them.

Q. Did you observe any reptiles ?

A. None whatever, nor did I hear that there were any, except to the southward, where I was told there were large lizards.

Q. Is it a country that horses and carts might travel ?

A. In some parts of the country horses would be stopped by ravines, and in the paths of the woods the roots of large trees run across them and would be dangerous for horses. Mules might get through them.

Q. How long were you travelling from the Bay of Islands to Shukey Hanga ?

A. Four days, and from Wangaroa only two days to the head of the river. From thence to the mouth of the river it would take another day.

Q. How long did you remain in the Harbor of Wangaroa ?

A. About five months.

Q. Is it very capacious and safe ?

A. It is for the largest vessels.

1821  
May.  
—

Q. Is it accessible ?

A. It is, and the entrance is narrow, not exceeding 300 yards. It is very deep, and there is no danger.

Q. Is the land in the neighborhood of good quality ?

A. Not very. The land in the valleys is good, but the country is generally hilly.

Q. What is the nature of the soil ?

A. In the vallies it appeared to me to be a light red sand with clay below. On the hills generally clay.

Q. Are there any natives in the neighborhood ?

A. There are only two tribes, and they are not very strong.

Q. Is there much cultivation ?

A. Very little.

Q. Did you observe any grass ?

A. I did near the places where the timber was cut, and near the banks of the river.

Q. Were the cattle fond of it ?

A. Yes, they were, and appeared to get fat upon it.

Q. Were the cattle in good condition when you came away ?

A. Very good—almost in killing condition.

Q. What were they fed on ?

A. I imagine chiefly on grass, which they picked up on the banks of the river where the timber was cut.

Q. I conclude that you had many opportunities of seeing the missionary establishment at the Bay of Islands ?

A. Yes, I had.

Q. Have they made any progress in the cultivation of the land near the settlement ?

A. Very little. There are two settlements—one in the Bay, the other higher up the river. They have about 14 acres cleared and cultivated, chiefly in wheat and maize. They have also small gardens, but they did not appear to be productive.

Q. Are their houses well built ?

A. Two or three of the houses are very good—built of wood and floored. The rest were put up in a hurry.

Q. Do any of the natives work for the missionaries, or are taught by them to cultivate the land ?

A. They hire some to assist them, and pay them—the natives would not otherwise work at all. They have also young females who take care of the children.

Q. Have they any ploughs ?

A. They had one, but they had no bullocks or horses that they worked till they received those that had been carried over in the Dro-medary.

1821  
May.

Q. Do you conceive that the land of New Zealand that is covered with fern could be easily cleared ?

A. Very easily. The fern need only be burnt, and the roots are easily taken up afterwards. This is the manner in which the natives work it.

Q. Does the fern grow in the woods ?

A. No, it does not ; it grows in places clear of woods ; but the woods are thick with underwood and vines that are very luxuriant.

Q. Upon the whole, do you think that you observed more land bearing fern or more land bearing wood ?

A. Double the quantity of land cleared of wood and bearing fern, and in the interior I am inclined to think that there is very little woody compared with cleared land.

Q. Did you see the natives attend the school of the missionaries ?

A. Mr. Kendall, who used to teach, was gone to England, and there was no school when we were there.

Q. Have any of the missionaries learnt the native language ?

A. One of them, Mr. Hall, is able to converse with the natives very well—the others speak a little.

Q. Did you ever hear the natives say that they had ever attended the school ?

A. I never did ; but I believe that they did attend the school.

Q. Did you ever see any of the books printed in their language ?

A. Never.

Q. Did it appear to you that the natives treated the missionaries with respect ?

A. Not in general. They had a disturbance with them when we were there, and I heard Mr. Hall say that the natives did not care a farthing for the missionaries.

Q. Are the missionaries compelled to take any precautions against the natives ?

A. Their houses are surrounded by high palisades, and the entrance is through a wicket door.

Q. Mr. Hall lives at some distance from the other settlements ?

A. He does not live at the principal settlement, but two other missionaries live near him.

Q. Has Mr. Hall succeeded in teaching any of the natives to work at his trade ?

A. He has learnt some of them to saw timber, but not more than that, I believe.

Q. Do the natives appear to refer their disputes to the missionaries or to listen to their advice ?

A. I do not think they do. I believe they settle their disputes in their own way.

Q. Did any instance come to your knowledge in which the natives had either threatened or ill-used the missionaries ?

A. Mr. Hall was driven from one settlement by the natives, and while we were at the Bay of Islands some of the natives attacked Mr. Buller's house for some cause or other, and I believe that they struck his wife.

Q. Did you understand what was the nature of the dispute ?

A. I think it originated about the payment of some work.



1821  
May.

Q. Have any of the missionaries purchased land of the natives ?

A. The missionaries purchased lately about 15,000 acres of land near the place they call "Gloucester Town," about 10 miles up one of the rivers that falls into the Bay of Islands. It is fine land, and it has a good deal of timber upon it, tho' not of the cawdie species. They have also bought some land at another settlement.

Q. Do they purchase the land of the chiefs or of individuals ?

A. The chiefs made the agreement, but the price he divided amongst the inferior chiefs of the tribe.

Q. Do you know what the price was ?

A. I have been told that it was purchased for axes.

Q. Do you think that the natives are willing to dispose of their land ?

A. I think they are, as they have much more than they seem to require for themselves.

Q. Have they any cattle or sheep ?

A. They have a few cattle, but no sheep. They have now three horses that were taken down by Mr. Marsden in the Dromedary, and they have the bullocks that were taken there for drawing the timber from the woods.

Q. Do they show any aversion to the arrival or permanent settlement of strangers amongst them ?

A. No, they do not ; they rather wish it. They frequently said that they would like to see Europeans in the country.

Q. Do you think that if a party of settlers from Europe were to establish themselves in any part of the country that you visited, and to begin to cultivate their land, making a fair agreement with the natives for it, that they would have to apprehend from their hostility ?

A. I should think it would be dangerous, especially if the settlement were dispersed, for in case of giving any offence to the natives their lives might be risked or lost. They are apt to take offence at the slightest thing, and are only appeased by presents. Amongst themselves they are very revengeful and never forget an injury.

Q. Do you think that the presence of an armed force would have any effect in repressing or controlling their desire of going to war amongst themselves ?

A. I think it would.

Q. By what means do you suppose that the missionaries have been able to protect themselves hitherto from the natives ?

A. From the desire of the natives to purchase of them or obtain from them articles of European manufacture, such as axes, hoes, and other things, and also from the hope that if they treated the missionaries well other persons might settle in New Zealand also, and that their trade would be extended.

1821  
May.

Q. Did the missionaries ever complain to you that the preference shown by the natives for muskets and gunpowder sold to them by the masters and crews of the whalers is prejudicial to the trade that they wished to carry on with them ?

A. They often made this complaint, and said that they could hardly obtain provisions from the natives for the goods that they were allowed to exchange.

Q. What are those goods ?

A. Axes, hoes, plane irons, fish-hooks, &c. The same difficulty was experienced by the ship's company of the Dromedary, and in consequence they were never able to procure by barter a fresh meal during the whole time that we were at New Zealand.

Q. How was the labor, then, of the natives in cutting and drawing timber to the ship paid for ?

A. I believe that the cutting the timber was paid for in axes. The natives had not strength nor indeed inclination on such terms to draw the timber when it was cut.

Q. Do the natives not like European food ?

A. They like bread and biscuit and tea and sugar, but do not buy them. They like pork, but they do not like salt meat. They seem to prefer their own food, fish and potatoes, to any other that can be supplied them.

Q. Are they fond of spirituous liquors ?

A. No, they are not. I never met with any New Zealander that liked spirits, even of those who had lived on board the whalers.

Q. Did you observe the missionaries had been successful in inspiring the natives with any sentiment of religion ?

A. I did not observe any.

Q. Did any of them attend Divine worship with the missionaries ?

A. I attended Divine worship once with the missionaries and a few of the natives attended, more from curiosity than otherwise.

Q. Had you any opportunity of knowing from the natives of their own religious notions ?

A. I was present once when the creation of the world was explained to them, and they listened attentively to it, but afterwards said it might be all very well, but they knew it was not the way in which New Zealand was made, for they knew that their god had fished it up with their fish-hooks, and as a proof they said that one of the natives present had seen one of the fish-hooks and that it was a large stone in the shape of a fish-hook in Cook's Straits.

1821  
May.

Q. Have they any temples of worship ?

A. None ; but they pray, and they believe in the existence of an invisible spirit.

Q. Have they priests ?

A. They have both priests and priestesses.

Q. Are the natives superstitious ?

A. Very much so, and they frequently say they hear the ghosts of their friends.

Q. I believe that you travelled thro' some part of the country with Mr. Marsden that had never been visited before by Europeans ?

A. I did, as well as by myself.

Q. Had you arms ?

A. When I was with Mr. Marsden I had no arms. When I went by myself I took a fowling piece, but merely for amusement.

Q. What was the sort of reception that you met with from the natives ?

A. The greatest kindness and hospitality.

Q. Had you ever any reason to apprehend danger to yourself or to those who accompanied you ?

A. Never ; no symptom of hostility was shewn to me.

Q. Did they make you presents, or did you always give something in return for the provisions they procured you ?

A. Generally, and always when I was with Mr. Marsden, or purchased anything. The last time I was by myself I took what they offered, and when I went away I made them a present.

Q. Did you observe any difference between the natives of the interior and those whom you saw on the coasts of New Zealand ?

A. I saw a great difference. The natives of the Bay of Islands are not so civil as those in the interior, and places where Europeans have not visited, are more cunning in their dealings, and have a sort of forward independence which those in the interior have not.

Q. Did any disputes take place between the natives and the crew of the Dromedary during her stay on the coasts ?

A. No disputes of any consequence.

Q. Did several come on board ?

A. Very few of the men except those who had business ; several women lived on board.

Q. Did you understand that several American ships had touched at New Zealand latterly ?

A. Yes, I understood that several had. I saw two there.

Q. Had they taken cargoes ?

A. One of them, a whaler, had been the most successful ship on the coast, and the master said that if he could not fill up his ship he would take timber for masts of China junks to Canton.

1821  
May.

Q. What sort of fish did you obtain at New Zealand ?

A. A great variety and abundance, and many of the fish are very good. There are snappers (schnapper), mullet, bream, soles, eels, and a great quantity of cockles, and some rock oysters. There is likewise abundance of lobsters, or a fish between a lobster and a craw-fish. There are many other fish than these, particularly a long fish like an eel with scales, which the natives dry for their food.

Q. What effect do you think that the visit of the Dromedary had upon the minds and dispositions of the New Zealanders ?

A. At first I think they were afraid on seeing the soldiers ; but when the object of their coming in the ship was explained to them they felt great confidence, and were very much attached to the soldiers.

Q. Did they seem to be impressed by the sight of any military manœuvre performed in their presence ?

A. They were very fond of seeing the soldiers parade, even without arms, and one day—on the King's Birthday—the detachment went on shore and fired, and they seemed greatly pleased.

Q. Did you see any of the natives that had been in England or at Port Jackson ?

A. I did.

Q. Had they preserved any remembrance of what they had seen or learnt there ?

A. They talked of it to us, and had preserved some knowledge of our manners and customs, but they did not seem to enjoy any distinction amongst their own countrymen in consequence of their visits.

Q. Did you observe that Mr. Marsden has acquired any influence over the natives ?

A. I think he has acquired more than any of the missionaries, and that the natives respect him more, as he is very kind to them, and promises to send more Europeans amongst them—an assurance that always gives them pleasure.

### *Dr. Fairfowl's Evidence.*

#### *Questions.*

#### *Answers.*

Q. During your stay at the Bay of Islands and at Wangaroa in New Zealand had you any opportunities of observing the natives of the country ?

A. Several, both on shore and on board the Dromedary.

Q. Upon the first arrival of the Dromedary in the Bay of Islands, did the natives come on board immediately ?

A. The chiefs only were allowed to come on board, and those who had relations amongst their countrymen passengers on the ship from New South Wales.



1821  
May.

Q. Did the arrival of so large a ship appear to create any surprize or alarm ?

A. The natives frequently expressed a jealousy of the soldiers that were on board, and seemed to hold them in great dread, and wished to be acquainted with the purport of their visit. They at first seemed to think that it was not necessary to have soldiers for the purpose of cutting wood, and they suspected that they had been sent to punish them for their cruelties to the crew of the Boyd. This apprehension seemed to exist more particularly at Wangaroa, where the crew perished.

Q. Did they seem to dismiss their apprehensions when the object of the visit was explained ?

A. At the Bay of Islands I consider that their apprehensions were soon quieted ; it took a longer time at Wangaroa.

Q. Was any hostility shown by them on the arrival of the Dromedary at Wangaroa ?

A. The chief at the mouth of the harbour had collected the whole of his force, and stood upon the defensive. A boat was then sent from the Dromedary to communicate with them. They made no friendly sign, but they allowed the boat to pull up to the shore, and then some old men and women came down and spoke to the party. We had no further communication with them at that time till one of the chiefs with whom we had been acquainted at the Bay of Islands invited us into the harbour. After that the chiefs came on board and expressed apprehensions of the nature of our visit, but soon became familiar.

Q. Did they show any disposition to prevent cutting of the wood ?

A. None.

Q. Did they show any eagerness to promote it ?

A. At first they did, but their eagerness soon relaxed, when they found they could not obtain the barter for the wood they wished.

Q. What barter was offered them ?

A. Hatches, axes, saws, spades, hoes, and a variety of iron tools. They soon were over-stocked with them, and became indifferent about them. Their constant talk was about muskets and gunpowder.

Q. Did the natives about Wangaroa appear to possess many muskets ?

A. I believe not. I think that their whole stock did not exceed five, and three of these seemed unserviceable.

1821  
May.

Q. Did they appear skilful in the use of them ?

Q. Did they understand the means of repairing them ?

Q. Do you know whether many South Sea whalers had visited Wanganaroa before the arrival of the Dromedary ?

Q. Did you see the natives when they were at work in cutting timber for the Dromedary ?

Q. Were they expert, and did they work well ?

Q. Do you know what were the terms upon which the trees were obtained ?

Q. What is the nature of the soil at the Bay of Islands ?

Q. Do the best trees grow upon the fine soil in the ravines ?

Q. Do you think that near the Bay of Islands there is a larger proportion of good than of bad soil ?

Q. Did you see any land that had been cultivated by the missionaries ?

Q. Had they a good appearance ?

A. By no means.

A. They did not, except the new stocking them.

A. None, I believe, since the affair of the Boyd.

A. I did frequently.

A. In cutting the timber they excelled our own people. They would fall it much quicker and do it neater. In drawing the timber out of the woods they gave very little assistance, except at first when the payment for their labor was new to them.

A. I think it was at first one axe for cutting a large tree, and payment in small flat pieces of iron and glass beads and fish-hooks for the labor of dragging it out of the roads. We soon found that this labour exceeded their strength. A party of our men assisted them with tackles, and at last performed the labor themselves.

A. The Bay of Islands is very hilly. The hills are composed of basalt, covered with a stiff cold and poor clay, with a considerable mixture of iron in it. There are a few vallies near the shore that contain good soil, and are well watered by small streams.

A. They grow in the rich soil, either in the vallies or on the steep sides of the hills.

A. The bad soil generally exceeds the good.

A. We saw some that had grown crops of wheat and barley and maize.

A. In general they were extremely thin, and two fields were obliged to be resown. I conceive that this was owing to bad agriculture. It was land that had never been turned up before, and it ought to have lain fallow for the first year.

1821  
May.

Q. Is the land much covered with fern ?

A. All the land that does not bear wood is covered with very thick and long fern, sometimes 13 or 14 feet long. This obstructs the growth of every other vegetation. When the fern approaches the height of six feet or so, the land may be considered to be of good quality.

Q. How many acres of land do you conceive that these missionaries have now in cultivation at the Bay of Islands ?

A. I think not more than eight before the Dromedary left this country. They had begun to do more, having the two teams of bullocks that belonged to Government.

Q. How were these bullocks fed during the time they were in New Zealand ?

A. They fed on the low banks of the small rivers at Wangaroa, where they found an abundance of canary grass growing on the old grounds of the natives, and the wild cabbage and other European garden seeds now grown wild. On this food they got fat.

Q. Were they in good condition when you came away ?

A. Very good working condition.

Q. Have the missionaries any cattle of their own at the Bay of Islands ?

A. Mr. Marsden has about 23 head that are grazing upon the missionary grounds, besides three or four cows that have escaped and are running wild in the woods.

Q. Did they appear to be in good condition ?

A. They appeared to be in very good condition.

Q. Was there a bull amongst them ?

A. The missionaries had killed one as it had got wild, but Mr. Marsden has carried another over in the Dromedary.

Q. Then no use had been made of these cattle in agriculture by the missionaries ?

A. They were chiefly heifers and cows, and besides there was no person to break them in.

Q. Did you observe the state of the missionaries' gardens, and had they any European vegetables ?

A. The garden was well worked and was bearing a very luxuriant crop of almost every European vegetable. This was when we left the Bay of Islands. It had much improved, and was indeed entirely made during the time we were in the island.

Q. Do the natives appear to cultivate and to like European vegetables ?

A. They cultivate potatoes and work the ground well, and clear it of weeds, but they do not seem to value other vegetables, tho' they gather them in their wild state. They also cultivate the water melon.

1821  
May.

Q. Are they to be found in abundance, and of what kind ?

A. They abound wherever land is found clear of fern, and they consist of the cabbage, turnip, and radish.

Q. Do the natives offer them to the ship's crew and bring them to sell ?

A. They brought them alongside in abundance, and sold them to the crew, who were furnished with fish-hooks to procure them.

Q. Did you find that the natives had a sufficiency of pork and potatoes to enable them to supply the ship's company with them from time to time ?

A. They had, I believe, a sufficiency of both, but they would not sell them for our articles of barter.

Q. Do you think that if gunpowder and arms had been offered them that they would have brought a sufficient supply ?

A. I have no doubt they would. If the neighbouring tribes had not a sufficient supply they could have obtained them from the more distant ones.

Q. Did you find the pork good that you tasted ?

A. Very good.

Q. Would an axe, do you think, purchase a well sized pig in New Zealand ?

A. I think it would.

Q. Did any difficulties or quarrels arise between the crews and guard of the Dromedary and the natives during their stay at New Zealand ?

A. Individual quarrels, I believe, did take place, and it generally ended by the New Zealander being knocked down while the others stood by. This occurred once or twice, not more, but it did not at all provoke any national feeling. I never observed that to be excited when the quarrel was between individuals, and even in quarrels that arose amongst themselves.

Q. Did the New Zealand women come willingly on board the Dromedary ?

A. Always. They were eager to get on board. Prostitution is not reckoned a crime or a disgrace amongst the unmarried women, and the chiefs come and offer their sisters and daughters for prostitution and expect a present in return.

Q. Did you observe that the women who thus offer themselves are very numerous at the Bay of Islands ?

A. Not particularly so ; but the whole unmarried female population appeared to be at the service of the ship.

Q. Did they offer any of their female slaves in this manner ?

A. I only saw one instance in which a master brought his female slave on board the ship one night, and he called the next morning for her, expecting to obtain her hire. She had received nothing, and I saw him beat her for it afterwards very cruelly.



Q. Did you hear any complaints from the natives of the ill-usage they had received from the whaling vessels?

A. Not many. I heard the circumstances of one that took place on board the Catherine, whaler. A native named Wycaddee had been on board, and he told me that he had been accused of theft, and had been taken up and flogged and beat about the shoulders with a rope till he spit blood, that at last the pain was so dreadful that he broke away from the lashings and jumped overboard. I saw Captain Graham of the Catherine a few months after this had happened, and spoke to him about it, and he told me that he was not on board at the time the chief mate had started the native with a rope for theft. The tribe to which the man belonged would not go near the ship afterwards till Captain Graham made it up with them and gave them a present. To this day I believe that murder even may be committed.

1821

May.

Q. Does much distrust appear to prevail between the crews of the whaling vessels and the natives?

A. No; on the contrary, much confidence. The ships are always crowded with the natives.

Q. Did you observe that there were many indications of the venereal disease amongst the natives at the Bay of Islands?

A. I think I observed fourteen or fifteen cases of that kind at the Bay of Islands. But it has not spread much amongst them, as they strictly taboo the infected persons.

Q. Have they any means of cure?

A. They have not.

Q. Do you believe that the disease is very virulent?

A. It acquires great virulence from want of care and medical assistance, and it almost always terminates fatally. The natives have a great dread of it, and call it the Europe god.

Q. What other diseases did you observe amongst the native Zealanders?

A. The most prevalent are pneumonia in its acute stage, and also terminating in consumption, inflammation of the bowels, cholera, dysentery, rheumatism, ulcers.

Q. Did you perform any cures yourself upon any of the natives?

A. I did several with acute complaints, not with chronic.

Q. Did they appear to be very sensible of the effect of medicine?

A. Very much so. I bled one chief, who exhibited his arm and the operations for several miles round.

1821  
May.

Q. Are there no medical men on board the South Sea whalers ?

A. I found none, and I believe it is not the custom to carry them.

Q. Do any of the missionaries at the Bay of Islands understand anything of medicine ?

A. Not in the least. They have medicines, however.

Q. Did you observe that the natives treated the missionaries with respect ?

A. The chiefs did, but in their absence the lower classes frequently take advantage of them, and sometimes insult them.

Q. Do you know from what cause this proceeds ?

A. Generally from the refusal of the missionaries to give them presents, or to give them more for their labor than they are willing or think it is worth.

Q. Do you know what the articles are in which the missionaries deal with the natives ?

A. All kinds of manufactured iron and a very small quantity of slops.

Q. Do you know whether the missionaries salt pork and send it to Sydney ?

A. I know that salt pork has been exported from New Zealand to Sydney. Mr. Marsden also has told me that a considerable quantity has been sent up.

Q. From your conversation with the missionaries at New Zealand, what hope do they appear to entertain of civilizing the natives ?

A. They entertain great hopes of civilizing the natives.

Q. By what means ?

A. By means of the schools.

Q. Did you attend any of their schools ?

A. There was no school open when we were there. Mr. Kendall was absent. The missionaries complained that they were obliged to give up their school as they were not able to feed their scholars, and they would not attend the school unless they were fed, as they live sometimes at a great distance.

Q. Do you believe that much progress has been made in teaching hitherto ?

A. Scarcely any. Those who have been at school appear to have forgot what they learned except the domestic servants of the missionaries. Some of the females who are in the houses of the missionaries have learned to sew, mark linen, and to wash, and they wear European cloaths.

Q. Did you learn from Mr. Buller that he had often acted as a Magistrate under the commission that he holds from Governor Macquarie in investigating the complaints of the natives against the outrages of the crews of British vessels ?

A. I never heard from Mr. Buller that any complaints of that kind had been made to him.

**Q.** Do you believe that the missionaries trade with the whalers ?

**A.** They have traded very much with them, but it is now forbidden. Mr. Marsden in his last visit expressly forbade them to trade. If, therefore, it is done now it is done clandestinely.

1821

May.

**Q.** In what articles do you believe they have traded with the whalers ?

**A.** The missionaries never made any secret of having dealt in muskets and gunpowder, and defended it by saying that they could not get provisions without, as the S. Sea whalers drove them out of the market by offering these articles, which the natives preferred to all others.

**Q.** Did the missionaries ever say that they had suffered from want of food ?

**A.** They never said that they suffered, but that their supply was less abundant, and less easy to be procured from not having muskets to give in return. I have known Mr. Buller to go 15 miles for the purpose of purchasing a few hogs, and at that time he said he had not a piece of pork in his house.

**Q.** Had you any opportunity of knowing whether the introduction of arms and gunpowder had made the native wars more destructive ?

**A.** From information from the natives, the regular pitched battles in which gunpowder is most serviceable are not bloody; one side generally gives way when a few fall. This also is effected when the armies are at some distance from each other and before they can come in contact or make use of their own destructive weapons. In attacking a fort or Hippah, those who have muskets have a decided superiority, and when one tribe that has muskets attacks a tribe that has none, the latter generally quit the field altogether. From this cause the tribes of the Bay of Islands are decidedly superior to the tribes that used to attack them before, and there has been no invasion of the Bay of Islands lately.

**Q.** But have these tribes of the Bay of Islands carried on war against others ?

**A.** They have, and are the invaders. There are always one or two parties about from the Bay of Islands on warlike expeditions. When we arrived there were not less than seven expeditions absent.

**Q.** Did the missionaries say that they had ever made any attempts to suppress this desire for war amongst the natives and had been successful ?

**A.** Mr. Marsden has frequently persuaded the natives not to go to war, and they have promised him to do so, but have not kept their words. War seems to be their delight, and nothing but a coercive force will keep them at peace.

1821  
May.

Q. What is the nature of the rocks on and near the shores of the Bay of Islands ?

A. Principally basalt, and running into a soft claystone, which is generally lost in a clay soil.

Q. Did you observe any limestone, or was any specimens of it brought to you ?

A. I saw no limestone, but there was a plentiful supply of cockle shells on the beaches, and in very many places above high water mark. The cliffs for several miles near the Harbour of Wangaroa are of a coarse pudding stone.

Q. Do you conceive the climate of New Zealand to be a healthy one ?

A. A very healthy climate, tho' when the winter season approaches it is changeable.

Q. What was the greatest degree of cold that you experienced, and what was the greatest degree of heat ?

A. Not below . . . but then filmy flakes of ice have been found in shady places in the months of June and July.

Q. Are the rains very heavy ?

A. They are.

Q. Do you conceive the summer season is very dry ?

A. I do not, except for two months in the year, and even then partial showers may be expected. I conceive it to be rather a humid climate, and remarkably well adapted for the growth of grass.

Q. Did you observe any high mountains ?

A. None. I did not see any that I conceived to be above 800 ft. high. The country, however, that I saw near the coasts consists of low steep hills irregularly placed, with ravines between them.

### *Mr. McDonald's Evidence.*

#### *Questions.*

#### *Answers.*

Q. You are a native of New Holland ?

A. I am. I was born at Parramatta about twenty-seven years ago.

Q. Are your parents alive ?

A. They are not.

Q. How long have you been in the sea service ?

A. About seven or eight years.

Q. In that period what service have you been engaged in ?

A. I served under Mr. Grone and I have served also Messrs. Riley and Jones in sealing voyages.

Q. What places did you go to to catch the seals ?

A. Off the West Cape of New Zealand and the South East Cape. I was also to Campbell's Island.



Q. What is the usual time of taking seals ?

A. There are two seasons. The best season for taking seals for the China market is when the pups are six months old. This is in April. The other season is about Christmas, when the females come to the males.

1821  
May.

Q. Are the seals yet very plentiful off New Zealand ?

A. They are in the bays, and may be caught if you are in a small vessel about 120 or 200 tons that can weather the coast.

Q. Is any expense incurred in fitting out a sealing vessel ?

A. I know of no other expense than knives and steels and salt to cure the skins. Those skins that are intended for the China market are dried on shore by laying them out with pegs on the shore. The skins intended for the English market are cured with salt.

Q. Is any oil obtained from the seals, and in what quantity ?

A. There is. A pup seal will give about 2 gallons more or less. A wig, that is an old male seal, will yield 5 or 6 gallons.

Q. How long are the vessels generally out on their sealing voyages ?

A. The first voyage I was out seventeen months on the coast of New Zealand.

Q. What part of the coast were you upon ?

A. Chiefly upon the east side and the south east.

Q. Did you land on the west side ?

A. Very frequently.

Q. Are there many harbours there ?

A. Several very good ones, and some very deep.

Q. Was there much wood growing upon the sides of the harbours ?

A. All covered with wood.

Q. Of what sort ?

A. Of white and red pine and a wood called "black oak."

Q. Is it of the species called "kaikatua" ?

A. It is.

Q. Did you see any of the species called "cowrie" ?

A. I did not.

Q. Did you see many natives ?

A. I only saw three, and they had been cast away. On the east coast there were very few natives.

Q. Did you go to the Bay of Islands during your voyage ?

A. No, we did not. We were afraid to go there on account of the natives. We went to Banks' Island, and staid a fortnight.

Q. Did the natives visit your vessel ?

A. They did, and traded with us for potatoes and mats.

1821  
May.

- Q. What was the name of the vessel you were in ? A. The Governor Bligh.
- Q. Was it a colonial vessel ? A. She was. She was built by A. Thompson. She now belongs to Messrs. Riley and Jones, and is on a sealing voyage at present.
- Q. How many men did she carry ? A. The first voyage we had sixteen, the second we had twenty.
- Q. Of these sailors how many were native born ? A. Three were of Port Jackson, the rest were English.
- Q. What wages did you receive ? A. The first voyage I went out on the 75th lay. The English sailors who had been on sealing voyages before were on the 60th. This means one skin out of every 75th.
- Q. What price did you obtain for the skins when you returned to Sidney ? A. Five shillings per skin. At present I believe they are 8 shillings a skin.
- Q. What wages were you offered on the last voyage that you were to have engaged in for Messrs. Riley and Jones ? A. The 65th lay.
- Q. Do you recollect how many skins you took in the first voyage ? A. We took 11,500 and upwards.
- Q. Do you believe that the skins are becoming scarce on the coast of New Zealand ? A. I do not. They only require to be well sought after.
- Q. Did you cut any wood when you were on those voyages ? A. We cut logs of the red and white pine and brought them to Sidney, when Mr. Grone cut them up to make boats for the ship's use.
- Q. Were they used for topmasts and yards ? A. Yes, they were.
- Q. Did they stand well ? A. They did.
- Q. Whereabouts do the red and white pine trees grow ? A. The white pine grows in wet swampy places. The red pine grows on the sides of hills.
- Q. Is the red pine like the cowrie ? A. It is the same grain, but not the same color.
- Q. Did any emancipated men from N. S. Wales ever accompany you on these voyages ? A. One ticket-of-leave man did, the master being under penalties to bring him back.
- Q. Did he bring him back ? A. He did.
- Q. On leaving Port Jackson on these voyages, were the crews mustered at Mr. Campbell's office ? A. They were.

1821  
May.

Q. Were the vessels searched by the constables ?

A. They were.

Q. At what time were they searched ?

A. When the anchor was up they were searched. Some constable remained on board till we got to the Sow and Pigs.

Q. Where and how were you concealed on the brig General Gates\* when she sailed from Port Jackson in July, 1819 ?

A. I was wrapped up in a sail which was laid upon the cable forwards in the ship's hold and within the forecastle bulkhead.

Q. Where were the other men ?

A. They were on the opposite side of the ship, and divided from the side where I was by bread casks.

Q. Were the bulkheads nailed up after you were put into this place ?

A. They were.

Q. Did the constables come and search on the day the ship went down the harbour ?

A. I do not believe they did. I did not hear them.

Q. Where were the baggage and cases of the missionaries and Mr. Marsden put ?

A. They were put into the hold.

Q. Did you see them when they were taken out at New Zealand and when you arrived at the Bay of Islands ?

A. I did. I helped to take them out.

Q. Of what did they consist ?

A. Furniture, axes, spades, hoes, tomahawks, &c.

Q. Did you observe any gunpowder amongst these things ?

A. Not to my knowledge.

Q. Any muskets ?

A. I did not see any.

Q. Had Captain Riggis any gunpowder on board ?

A. He had about six or seven barrels of gunpowder.

Q. Did he sell any of this to the natives when he was at New Zealand ?

A. He did ; and muskets, too.

Q. What did he get for them ?

A. Pigs and potatoes.

Q. What did he get for a musket ?

A. He got 18 pigs for a musket and some powder with it.

Q. Did Captain Riggis deal with the missionaries when he was at New Zealand ?

A. He did. One of the missionaries purchased some rum of him, and Captain Riggis let one of them have two barrels of gunpowder. I took them over from our side of the bay named Roni Roni, to the place where the missionaries live on the other side.

\* This was the American vessel that was detained by Capt. J. Rimer, of the Dromedary, for taking away convicts.

1821  
May.

Q. Did you go to the house to deliver the gunpowder ?

A. No, I did not myself, but I saw it taken out of the boat and carried on shore up to the house.

Q. Are you certain that you did not observe any barrels of the kind you have just described amongst the goods and baggage of the missionaries that were taken out of the General Gates ?

A. No, I did not.

Q. Was the brig made into a ship when she remained at New Zealand ?

A. She was, and a mizzen mast was obtained from the missionaries.

# REV. S. MARSDEN TO MAJOR GOULBURN.

July 22.

SIR,—

Sydney, July 22nd, 1821.

On the arrival of His Majesty's ship the *Coromandel* from New Zealand I found four New Zealand chiefs on board from the River Thames. These chiefs embarked, I believe, with an intention to proceed to England. On meeting with Shunghee and Whykoto they persuaded them not to go to Europe on account of the length of the voyage and the severity of the climate, telling them they would be likely to die, and never return. From what Shunghee said to them they were induced to leave the *Coromandel*, and afterwards they informed me that they would not proceed to England, but would return to their country. Finding that this was their fixed determination, I procured them a passage in the *Westmoreland*. When the *Westmoreland* was ready for sea they objected to go on board unless the captain would engage to land them in the Thames, alledging if they were landed in the Bay of Islands they would be cut off by the inhabitants there, as they were at war with their tribes at the Thames. I then promised when the *Active* returned from the Derwent I would send them in her to the River Thames. They therefore informed Shunghee that they would return home in the *Active*; and he was to communicate their intentions to their friends.

I have felt it my duty to state the above circumstances, as I have been informed the chiefs are now on board the *Coromandel*. Whether Captain Downie intends landing them at New Zealand or to take them on with him to England I cannot say. If he takes them to Europe against their inclinations, and any of them die, it will be unfortunate, as they are men of great influence in their own country. In consequence of the deaths of some of the New Zealanders who have gone to England, and the sore afflictions that all have suffered from the effects of the climate, in-



dependent of the immense expense and trouble that attended them while in Europe, I have been directed by the Church Missionary Society not to allow any more to go Home on their account without some very urgent cause.

I have deemed it necessary to make this official communication for my own justification. As Captain Downie takes these chiefs upon his own responsibility should they proceed to England, I have no further observations to make, but only to request you will have the goodness to lay my letter before His Excellency the Governor for his consideration.

I have, &c.,

SAMUEL MARSDEN.

Major F. Goulburn, Esq., &c., &c.

1821  
July 22.

UNDER-SECRETARY GOULBURN TO S. R. LUSHINGTON.

Colonial Office (N.S.W.—Domestic),

SIR,—

Downing Street, 13 July, 1821.

July 13.

Lord Bathurst having given permission to the Wesleyan Missionary Society to ship on board the *Minerva* (male convict ship to New South Wales) household furniture and agricultural implements, solely for the use of the Society's missionaries in New Zealand, I am directed by His Lordship to request that you will move the Lords Commissioners of the Treasury to give the necessary directions that the articles in question may be permitted to pass the Customs.

*Re Wesleyan Missionary Society's goods for New Zealand.*

I am, &c.,

S. R. Lushington, Esq.

HENRY GOULBURN.

[Wesleyan Mission House.

REV. S. MARSDEN TO REV. J. BUTTERWORTH.

HONOURED SIR,—

Parramatta, July 21st, 1821.

July 21.

I have learned that it is the intention of the Committee of the Wesleyan Missionary Society to send one missionary to N. Zealand. Tho' my opinion has not been called for on this subject, yet I trust you will excuse the liberty I now take in stating my sentiments on this matter to you. No person is so well acquainted with New Zealand as myself, and the characters of the inhabitants also. I was lately near fifteen months amongst them, and travelled over a great part of the northern island, crossed the country from the east to the west side four times. I think one missionary alone would be very solitary and uncomfortable. If he was a single man he would labour under great

*Re missionaries for the South Seas.*

*Knows much about New Zealand.*

1821  
July 21.

Separate fields  
should be chosen  
by the three  
large societies.

William Shelly  
laboured at  
Friendly  
Islands.

Regular  
communication  
should be  
opened between  
New South  
Wales and the  
islands.

temptations in such a society, and if he was married it would not be very comfortable for a single married woman to live amongst the natives; she would want the society of a female friend under the various trials and afflictions to which females are liable. As there are three great missionary societies in London—the C. M. Society, the London, and the Wesleyan Societies—it appears to me that it would be a wise and prudent measure for each society to select their separate fields for their missionaries to labour in. They are all large and extensive, and far beyond the united means the societies can command—New Zealand for the Church M. S., the Friendly Islands for the Wesleyan Society, and the Society Islands for the London M. S. These are fields so extensive that there is no prospect that they will, or can, be fully occupied for a long period, unless Divine Goodness should in a very wonderful manner bless the labours of the servants of our Lord and Saviour Jesus Christ.

From every account I have heard the Friendly Islands are exceedingly populous. Had a missionary named William Shelly lived, he would have now been there. He was originally sent out by the London Missionary Society, and resided three years at the Friendly Islands, but was compelled to retire to Port Jackson from the wars breaking out. It was his full intention to have returned had he lived, but he died at Parramatta. In order to secure the comfort and safety of the missionaries, I think the body of those who are sent out should in the first instance be sent there; and some of the chiefs or their sons brought back to Port Jackson, and remain for a time as hostages for the safety of the missionaries. A regular communication should at the same time be established between the Friendly Islands and N. S. Wales. This will have the best effect upon the natives, and cause them to be attentive and kind to the missionaries. This communication cannot be maintained without very considerable expense, as you may learn from the C. M. Society and the London M. S., who are well acquainted with this part of the subject. Neither can your Society depend upon the ship owners at Port Jackson. These things I feel it my duty to point out to you, and beg to refer you to the Revd. Josh. Pratt and George Brender for further information. The missionaries could have done nothing at N. Zealand if the Active had not kept up a regular communication with the missionaries. The masters and crews of whalers are generally so bad that they would have done great prejudice to the mission there by their misconduct to the natives. When the natives came over to N. S. Wales in the Active, where they were kindly treated, and after their arrival here they met with attentions they did not expect, these circumstances gave them a better opinion of our

national character than what they had formed from their intercourse with the whalers and other vessels. It is the object of the masters of ships to get their supplies for little or nothing if they can, and they will often take what they want by force when under no apprehension of danger from the natives. The Europeans are more to be dreaded than the savage inhabitants: they violate the wives and daughters of the chiefs, and commit every crime in these islands, when they come there.

1821  
July 21.

Evils committed  
by owners of  
vessels, &c.,  
visiting the  
islands.

If the Christian world would maintain a vessel as a missionary ship in these seas the greatest benefit would arrive from such a measure to the numerous inhabitants on the different islands scattered over the Southern Ocean. They must and will become the Kingdom of our Lord and His Christ. I do not apprehend the support of such would be any very great sum, allowing her returns to go towards her expenses. Such a vessel, under proper regulation, might probably pay her own expenses, as the way is now so completely opened. Admitting that there should be a deficiency of £500 or even 700 per annum, this would not be very much for the three missionary societies to pay if they were united in this single object, and their united bodies would give great political weight and influence in their favour should their cause ever want the aid of the British Government to protect it. I give you my sentiments very freely upon this subject. Should any useful hint be given by them I shall be glad, and if they should be considered of no importance no harm will be done.

Missionary  
vessel needed.

Expenses should  
be shared by the  
three societies.

I have formed my opinions upon long and painful experience; but yet they may not be correct; others may see objections to them which do not occur to me. I shall at all times rejoice when any thing can be done for the spread of the Gospel amongst the heathen nations. I perhaps may, when time will permit, give some little account of the natives in the different islands, if my life is spared.

I had the honor to receive a letter from the Committee of the Wesleyan Missionary Society, but shall not be able to acknowledge the receipt to them by this conveyance, as I am much pressed for time.

I have, &c.,

SAMUEL MARSDEN.

Joseph Butterworth, Esqr., M.P.

[Church Missionary Society.]

REV. S. MARSDEN TO REV. J. PRATT.

REVD. AND DEAR SIR,—

Sydney, July 24, 1821.

July 24.

I find it necessary to drop you a line in addition to my former letter. Capt. Downie brought from the Thames four

1821  
July 24.  
Four New Zealanders brought from Thames.

Tried to prevent their being taken to England.

New Zealand chiefs with him in the Coromandel, with an intention to take them to England. From what Shunghee said to them they declined to proceed any further. I suspected the officers were offended with me on the subject. I wrote to Captain Downie to provide for them when they left the ship, or to apply to the Government to do this. This he declined to do. I then wrote a letter on His Majesty's service to him on the same subject. He now found it necessary to lay my letter before the Governor. It was arranged between them that the New Zealanders should be put on board the Coromandel again. But as I did not know what Captain Downie's intention was, I wished to learn this, and wrote again an official letter to the Colonial Secretary, as I was not without my fears they might be taken to England. I enclose a copy and the answer for your information. Should Downie under any pretence take them with him, you will know how to act; or should the officers say any illnatured things of me, you will know the cause. Capt'n. Downie and the officers seemed not well pleased when the chiefs first declined to go any further.

I have thought good to give you this short explanation should any thing further be done.

I have, &c.,

SAML. MARSDEN.

[Church Missionary Society.]

REV. S. MARSDEN TO REV. J. PRATT.

Aug. 11.  
When he went to New Zealand.

REVD. AND DEAR SIR,—

Sydney, Aug. 11th, 1821.

On my application to the Governor to accompany the Revd. J. Butler and his colleagues to New Zealand, His Excellency complied with my request, on the condition that I furnished lodgings at my own expenses for the clergyman who did my duty till I returned. As Government were then paying rent both for the Revds. R. Hill and J. Cross, and had paid for several years £100 per annum, I thought this condition rather hard, but at the same time it would have been of no use to have made any objection. I therefore looked out for a house for Mr. Cross, which he approved, and I agreed to take for him. In a few days Mr. Cross, from something that had been said to him, informed me the house was not good enough for him. I could not get a better in the Town of Parramatta. Finding that I could meet with no house good enough that I could get for him—at least one that he approved, I was obliged to take him and his family into my own house. He had a wife, three children, and one man servant. This was attended with some inconvenience, as my own family was large. Mr. Cross remained in my house till my return.

Mr. Cross and family lived in his house.



Shortly after His Majesty's ship the *Dromedary* arrived from England, when Captain Skinner applied to the Governor, and wished me to accompany him to New Zealand, as I might prevent any difference between the natives and the ship's company. I also offered my services to Capn. Skinner. The Govr. consented to my going in the *Dromedary* upon the former conditions, that Government should not pay any rent for the clergyman who did my duty during my absence. The Revd. Mr. Middleton was appointed. He was a young man, with only one child, his wife dead. Mr. Middleton took up his residence in my house. I was almost a year absent. He lived at my table at my expense till my return, and four or five months afterward, till Government had provided him with a station of his own. Tho' Captain Skinner was very kind to me, yet I could not live at his table without making him some consideration.

1821  
Aug. 11.

During his second absence Mr. Middleton took his duty.

In my two visits to New Zealand I was put to considerable expense. The Revd. J. Butler also killed five head of my cattle, and served the meat to the settlement. Under the above circumstances I feel I have a claim upon the Society to remunerate me in some degree for my losses and expenses. It is not necessary for me to make out any regular account, but to leave the matter to the consideration of the Committee. I have therefore taken the liberty to draw upon you for the sum of £100 on the above account. I flatter myself the Society will not think that sum too much, as I conceive the cattle would have been worth nearly that sum in Port Jackson, independent of the expenses of sending them to New Zealand. Should the Committee not approve of the bill, I will thank you to honour it, and I will settle with you when I receive information from you on the subject.

Incurred considerable expense.

Has drawn on Society for £100 in part remuneration.

I am anxious to hear if the bill for the *Active* oil is paid which was forwarded when I was at New Zealand. The *Active* is now at the *Derwent*, and has been very successful, as you will hear from Mr. Campbell. I hope the vessel will not burden the Society with any material expense.

I remain, &c.,

Revd. J. Pratt.

SAMUEL MARSDEN.

P.S.—A Mr. Dixon, master of the *Regalia*, will deliver this, and if he should come out again, you may send anything by him, for he is a very careful man.

[Church Missionary Society.]

REV. S. MARSDEN TO REV. J. PRATT.

REVD. AND DEAR SIR,—

Sydney, Sep. 19th, 1821.

Sept. 19.

The *Brixton* has just arrived, and as a vessel is about to sail to the Isle of France, I embrace the opportunity of acknow-

Rev. Mr. Leigh arrived in "*Brixton*."

1821  
Sept. 19.

ledging the receipts of your letters by her. I have not seen the captain nor the Rev. Mr. Leigh as yet, and as the vessel is just leaving the harbour I shall not see them till my letter is closed.

I learn from Mr. Brown that he has accepted the bill for the oil sent in the Robt. Triale. I should not have allowed the Society to have run any risk of having the bill dishonored in the first instance if I had not been in New Zealand at the time the bill was drawn. The agreement was made with Mr. Kermode before any of the oil was procured, as I was leaving the colony for a time, and did not know what might happen in my absence. I shall be glad to hear of the safe arrival of the Shipley.

Proceeds of  
"Active's" oil  
will go towards  
general mission  
expenses.

The Active has just come in from the Derwent. It is my intention to sell what black oil she may procure while in the service of the Society at Port Jackson. The proceeds will go towards the general expenses of the mission: no risk will then be run, or any further trouble to the Society at Home. The oil she has brought in this voyage I have had it sold; but not for private bills upon England, but will give the Society credit for what sum may be due, after the master and crew are paid, and other expenses. The oil is now landing, and will amount to £1,400 or upwards when it is all delivered. I have not drawn for any of the missionaries' salaries for the present year, and hope to cover them by the proceeds of the vessel. As soon as the accounts can be made out I will forward them by the first opportunity.

Glad a new  
Governor is  
coming.

I am happy to learn for certain that a new Governor is coming out. I can give thanks to God and take courage. I feel exceedingly indebted to President and Vice-Presidents for their kind consideration in waiting upon Sir Thomas Brisbane on my account. I hope this will prevent any unfavourable impressions from being made upon Sir Thomas's mind by the Governor here. I have no doubt but he will remain till Sir Thomas arrives, and do all he can to injure those whom he does not esteem. I am much annoyed at the letter Gov. Macquarie has addressed to Lord Sidmouth and which has been printed and sent out here. In this letter he has not hesitated to make assertions relative to my conduct which he can never prove. He might as well have charged me with wilful murder at once. The letter is just arrived: I shall write to the Honorable Mr. Bennett on the subject and also to the Commissioner of Enquiry by the first opportunity.

Annoyed at  
Macquarie's  
letter to  
Sidmouth.

With respect to selling the Active, I am as anxious that this should be done as the Society can possibly be. I have always wished for one vessel to do all the necessary service for the Society Islands and New Zealand. I am in some hopes of arranging this business with King Pomare in a short time, if the enemies here do not defeat my plan. A bold attempt has been made, but has not finally succeeded.

I will thank you to inform Mr. Alert Hankey, Esq., that I have obtained a verdict in the Supreme Court against Edwards Eager for upwards of £1,200 in favour of Pomare. Eager has appealed to the Governor from this verdict, but I have no idea that he will even attempt to set it aside. Eager's conduct to Pomare will show how little dependence can be placed on owners of vessels here when employed in any concerns with the islands. When the appeal is heard I shall transmit the whole account to the London M. Society. The accounts I sent to Mr. Hankey before the trial will shew the dreadful extortions of Eager, and what his intentions were. He hopes still to carry his point, and has sent a vessel down to Taheite with this view. Should he succeed, I apprehend the mission in the Society Islands will be greatly injured, tho' at present in the most prosperous state. Should Eager come to London as a deligate from this country, appointed by the convicts or those who have been convicts, I do most sincerely hope he will meet with that reception from the religious world his conduct has so justly merited. The documents I forwarded to Mr. Hankey and to Lord Bathurst will shew the intentions he has in view. I am aware he will meet with the utmost support from the Governor, and all the influence he can exert will be called into action on his behalf. The Honorable Commissioner Bigge knows Eager well.

1821  
Sept. 19.  
Obtained  
verdict against  
E. Eager.

Eager's conduct.

I have wrote these hasty lines as the ship has moved down the harbour. Whether I shall catch her or not I am uncertain.

I am, &c.,

Addressed to Rev. J. Pratt.

SAML. MARSDEN.

#### THE ADMIRALTY TO THE COLONIAL OFFICE.

SIR,—

Admiralty Office, 20th Sept., 1821.

Sept. 20.

I am commanded by my Lords Commissioners of the Admiralty to transmit to you, for the information of Earl Bathurst, the accompanying extracts from a letter addressed to the Navy Board by Mr. Downie, master of the Coromandel store ship, containing information relative to New Zealand.

Sends  
information re  
New Zealand.

I am, &c.,

JOHN BARROW.

Henry Goulburn, Esq., Colonial Department.

[Enclosure.]

*Extracts from a Letter from Mr. James Downie, Master commanding the Coromandel Naval Storeship, dated River Thames, New Zealand, 12th August, 1820.*

I have found the natives in general much pleased with our visit. Though in themselves a warlike people, they are the last New Zealanders like Europeans.

1821

Sept. 20.

A very warlike  
people.

Mr. Hall a good  
man as settler  
there.

Now not a  
civilised being  
among them.

Traffic in fire-  
arms and  
ammunition.

Should be  
restricted.

to give offence to strangers. They appear to be delighted with the manners of Europeans, and wish for nothing so much as for some of these to reside among them, in order to learn agriculture and obtain a knowledge of mechanics. War has hitherto been their whole study, but at present they seem tired of it, and at this time I am employed in bringing about a peace between two principal chiefs, who have been long at enmity. From one of these I am getting spars : his name is Tippohee : that of his rival is Henacke, a resident of the west side of the Thames. This man has no less than 51 spear wounds in his body, is in the prime of life, and seems heartily sick of warfare. There are great tracks of rich land on the banks of this river, particularly on the west side within the isles. A resident settled on the banks of the Thames, under the protection of the Arcekee and chiefs, would be a very desirable plan, and as a suitable person for this purpose Mr. Marsden has mentioned Mr. Hall,\* the person alluded to in the first part of this letter, who is represented as a sensible, clever man, understands the language, agriculture, is a judge of timber, and has a particular turn for humouring the natives and bringing them into habits of industry. Mr. Marsden would settle him here, but has to receive the orders of the Church Missionary Society, by whom all the wants of Mr. Hall would be supplied, without any expense to the Government. There are about four or five thousand souls about this part and not a single civilised being among them to instruct them in anything useful. An active resident would have it in his power to get timber ready for any ships which might be sent for that purpose by keeping the natives employed, which their natural turn for good humour would tend to assist.

One thing I beg to draw your attention to is the improper traffic carried on by the South Sea whalers with the natives of the Bay of Islands in firearms and ammunition. These ships are supplied with a proportion of muskets, powder, and ball to barter for pigs and potatoes. The quantity thus disposed of is estimated at 5 cwt. of powder per annum. While this continues to be the case a fair trade with the natives cannot be carried on owing to the lawless spirit of those at the Bay of Islands, who while they are in possession of the means alluded to will never turn their minds to industry, but ravage and desolate the possession of others who having no other than native weapons are unable to stand before them. Such a trade, if possible, should be restricted, and particularly with those of the Bay of Islands, who may be considered as no other than a lawless banditti, living on the spoils of their slaughtered neighbours. The natives

\* A missionary resident at the Bay of Islands and a carpenter by trade.



of this place live in continual fear of those at the Bay of Islands, and since our being among them have expressed a wish that one of our ships of war should be stationed between this and Port Jackson to prevent the excursions of hostile tribes, as also that of the sale of firearms, and this they observe would keep the people at home to cultivate the land instead of being always at war.

1821  
Sept. 20.

[Church Missionary Society.]

REV. S. MARSDEN TO REV. J. PRATT.

New South Wales, November 17th, 1821.

Nov. 17.

REVEREND AND DEAR SIR,—

I am happy to inform you that Sir Thos. Brisbane arrived here on the 7th inst. I had an interview with him the day he landed, when he renewed to me the assurances of his countenance and support, which he had made to the deputation in London. I feel very thankful to the gentlemen who waited upon Sir Thomas previous to his leaving England, as their influence may in a great measure, if not altogether, prevent Gov. Mac. from making any unfavourable impressions upon the mind of his successor. When Sir Thomas will take the command is uncertain, as Gov. Macquarie is absent from headquarters at this time. I shall studiously avoid on my part every occasion of offence, and hope for better times. The struggle with my superiors has been very long and painful. I should long since have escaped from the colony if my way had not been hedged up. Whatever may be the result of the difference I have had with the Gov. as it respects myself, much public good must and will arise from it. I can truly say I never did a single act with an intention to offend the Governor, tho' he has done many to injure me. His public letter addressed to Lord Sidmouth contains the most false and scandalous assertions respecting myself. It was my intention to call upon him for an explanation before he left the colony, but, as I have nothing to apprehend from Sir Thomas Brisbane, it may not be worth my while at present to take any further notice of what he hath said, but wait for the Commissioner's report. He is well acquainted with the whole of my manner of life. As I am at a great distance, and cannot tell what may be the state of things at Home, I have sent three letters open for your inspection—one to the Bishop of London, one to the Commissioner, and one to Mr. Brereton—and shall leave it to your wisdom and existing circumstances to seal and forward them or to detain them. Should you forward my letter to the Bishop of London, be good enough to send all the accompanying documents with it, and the *Gazette*.

Sir Thomas  
Brisbane's  
arrival.

Governor  
Macquarie  
absent from  
headquarters.

Great opposition  
shown by him.

1821  
Nov. 17.

His defence of  
Pomare gave  
offence.

In the *Gazette* is Pomare's action—men who could attempt to take such unfair advantage of a savage chief in his very first attempt to introduce himself to the civilised world are unworthy of the Christian name. I felt it my duty to step forwards on behalf of Pomare and the missionaries in the Society Islands, which has also given great offence, and I must expect to be calumniated for this act. I am in great hopes, if the evils attempted to be done at Otaheite can be prevented, and Pomare can establish a regular communication between Port Jackson and the Society Islands, I shall be enabled to make arrangements with him to do all the necessary business for the C. M. Society at New Zealand, and thro' the medium of his vessel, to keep up a regular communication with the missionary settlements at New Zealand, and then the *Active* may be sold, and all the trouble and anxiety about her will be at an end.

It is my intention to close all the Society's accounts every six months, or at least on the 31st of Decr. every year.

Mr. Leigh will  
settle at  
Mercury Bay.

I have sold the *Active's* oil which she got at the Derwent at Sydney to save riscue, trouble, and expence. The vessel is now fitting out for New Zealand, and will shortly sail for that island. The Revd. Mr. Leigh has applied for a passage for himself and wife, and servants. I have recommended him to form his first settlement at Mercury Bay—the inhabitants there will receive him very kindly—and to make this his north boundary. The C. M. Society will then have about 200 miles on the east coast and the same distance on the west for their operations. Mr. Leigh will extend his plan to the south of Mercury Bay. If Mr. Leigh goes down in the *Active* the Wesleyan Society must pay a proportion of the expense of the vessel while employed in that service. I am expecting the Westmoreland in from the islands, when I shall write to you more fully, and transmit the accounts.

I have, &c.,

Revd. J. Pratt, S.C.M.S.

SAMUEL MARSDEN.

CAPTAIN DOWNIE TO EARL BATHURST.

H.M.S. Ship *Coromandel*,  
Spithead, 20th Decr., 1821.

Dec. 20.

Arrival from  
Port Jackson  
and New  
Zealand.

MY LORD,—

I arrived at this anchorage yesterday from Port Jackson and N. Zealand. At the latter place I succeeded, after great difficulty, in procuring a cargo of topmasts for H. Majesty's Navy. His Excellency Governor Macquarie put on board two boxes containing public dispatches and the Judge Advocate at Sydney one box, all addressed to Your Lordship. His Excellency has also given in my charge two emues for Your Lordship,

and suffering, I may say, two winters, the first round Cape Horn, they are lively and hearty. I wait Your Lordship's pleasure respecting the whole. The Coromandel is ordered into Portsmouth Harbour to discharge her cargo; afterwards paid off. I find there is not a package of any size or description but must first be taken to the Custom house, there opened and examined. Even a small box contained in the Sydney male was taken to the Custom house, and, although sealed and directed to the Postmaster-General in London, it was opened and examined.

I have, &c.,  
JAS. DOWNIE,  
Comg. H.M.S. Ship Coromandel.

1821  
Dec. 20.

REV. THOS. KENDALL TO EARL BATHURST.

Bay of Islands, New Zealand, 26 Decr., 1821.

Dec. 26.

MY LORD,—

Twice Your Lordship has most condescendingly complied with the request of the Church Missionary Society in my behalf—once in granting me and my family a passage from England to Port Jackson in the Earl Spencer eight years ago, and a second time in granting me and the two New Zealand chiefs, Shunghee and Waikato, a passage from England to Port Jackson last year. I therefore, as a token of my grateful recollection, send by the Cumberland, whaler, Captn. Brind, a box containing some specimens of metallic ore found in the territory of Shunghee and Waikato, and as New Zealand abounds in metallic ores it is my intention to send Your Lordship some more specimens should I receive orders from you to do it. I am entirely unacquainted with things of this nature myself. I therefore thought it best to send immediately to your Lordship, as a package of ores would be likely to fall into proper hands by sending them you should they ever be met with of a valuable description.

Missionary  
favours.

Send him New  
Zealand ores.

I remain, &c.,

THOS. KENDALL.

P.S.—Please to send me an answer directed to the care of the Rev. J. Pratt, Church Missionary House, Salisbury Square.

Asks for reply.

EXTRACT FROM THE "EVANGELICAL MAGAZINE" FOR 1821.

*New Zealanders Cannibals, as related by Mr. Samuel Leigh, Wesleyan Missionary, lately come from New Zealand.*

"While I continued in the island," says Mr. Leigh, "one day, as I was walking on the beach, conversing with a chief,

Mr. S. Leigh on  
New Zealand  
cannibals.

1821

Lad killed and  
being roasted.

Went to natives  
and demanded  
to see him.

Prevailed on  
them to give  
up the body.

Mr. Kendall's  
remarks.

my attention was arrested by a great number of people coming from a neighbouring hill. I inquired the cause of the concourse, and was told that they had killed a lad, were roasting him, and going to eat him. I immediately proceeded to the place, in order to ascertain the truth of this appalling relation. Being arrived at the village where the people were collected, I asked to see the boy. The natives appeared much agitated at my presence, and particularly at my request, as if conscious of their guilt; and it was only after a very urgent solicitation that they directed me towards a large fire at some distance, where, they said, I should find him. As I was going to this place, I passed by the bloody spot on which the head of this unhappy victim had been cut off; and, on approaching the fire, I was not a little startled at the sudden appearance of a savage-looking man, of gigantic stature, entirely naked, and armed with a large axe. I was a good deal intimidated, but mustered up as much courage as I could, and demanded to see the lad. The cook (for such was the occupation of this terrific monster) then held up the boy by his feet. He appeared to be about fourteen years of age, and was half roasted. I returned to the village, where I found a great number of natives seated in a circle, with a quantity of coomery (a sort of sweet potatoe) before them, waiting for the roasted body of the youth. In this company were shown to me the mother of the child. The mother and child were both slaves, having been taken in war. However, she would have been compelled to share in the horrid feast, had I not prevailed on them to give up the body to be interred, and thus prevented them from gratifying their unnatural appetite. But notwithstanding this melancholy picture of New Zealand, I believe they are very capable of receiving religious instruction, and a knowledge of the arts in general. They are very ingenious and enterprising, and discover a surprising willingness to receive instruction. I did not visit any one village, where the principal chiefs did not strongly urge my residence among them; and I believe that God is preparing them to receive the ever-blessed Gospel of peace."

"In the first year after our arrival," says Mr. Kendall, of the Church Missionary Society, "many New Zealanders died. They had not food sufficient to preserve life; and in this weak condition we could discern little of the native mind. Since then the natives in general at the Bay of Islands and in the adjacent country, eager to procure instruments of war and of husbandry, have exerted themselves so much in cultivating land for potatoes, Indian corn, &c., that they have not only obtained such articles as they wanted, but have lived much better themselves and have had but little mortality among



them. Their native disposition has, of course, been greatly revived ; and, being heathens still, they follow the customs and traditions of their forefathers with avidity. War is all their glory. They travel to the south, and kill great numbers. Although the natives in general shew no disposition to injure us ; yet, being so unsettled and unsteady, our situation among them is the more trying."

1821

---

JOHN BUTLER TO GOVERNOR BRISBANE.

To His Excellency Sir Thos. Brisbane, Governor New Sh. Wales and its Dependencies, &c., &c.

Sidney, Jan. 7th, 1822.

1822  
Jan. 7.

MAY it please your Excellency to take into consideration the following circumstances :—

Whereas on Tuesday morning, February 27th, 1821, Captain Wyer, of the ship Rambler, a whaler, from the Port of London, came to Kidder Kiddee, in Bay of Islands, New Zealand, having in his boat four convicts, whom he represented as having stowed themselves away on board the ship while lying at Vandiemans Land.

Stowaway  
convicts brought  
to him in New  
Zealand.

These men he wished to land, and to leave them in my charge as Resident Magistrate ; but this I could by no means consent to, as I had no means of restraining their persons, or of correcting their vices.

As His M. store ship the Coromandel was then lying in the River Thames, 200 miles from Kidder Kiddee, I requested Captn. Wyer to deliver them up to Capt. Downie, of H.M. ship. Captn. Wyer endeavoured to excuse himself by saying he did not know the place, and he did not like to risk his ship for the sake of four convicts. However, rather than they should be put on shore and left to the mercy of the savages, which he appeared determined to do, I offered my services to go and pilot the ship into Coromandel Harbour. This offer was accepted, and we proceeded on board. Next morning the ship put to sea with a light breeze, and on Friday morning we were at the entrance of the Thames.

Advised to put  
them on H.M.  
store ship.

Offered to pilot  
ship.

At this time the wind came on to blow hard and immediately in our teeth, and it continued so until Saturday afternoon. Captn. Wyer grew impatient, and altho' the wind became fair about 5 in the afternoon, he ordered the ship about and stood for the Bay of Islands, where we arrived about 10 on Sunday morning, at which time, contrary to my advice and that of his officers, he determined to land the prisoners and leave them to their fate.

Contrary winds.

1822

Jan. 7.

Captain landed  
them at Bay of  
Islands.

A boat was then manned, and Mr. Rivers, the first officer, was sent away with them, and he landed and left them on the beach near Cape Bret.

As soon as the boat returned I requested to be landed at the missionary settlement called Ranghee Hoo, which was on the other side of the harbour at 16 miles distant. My request was complied with immediately, and having landed me, the boat returned to the ship and she stood out to sea.

Savage wished  
to kill them.

Butler inter-  
ceded for them.

On Wednesday, March 7th, 1821, I had occasion to visit our saltworks, which are situated about 14 miles from the spot where the convicts were landed. When I arrived I found two of the aforementioned prisoners in the hands of a savage, who considered them as his property, and who was then in the very act of holding a consultation about killing them. I immediately interfered, and begged they would hear what I had to say. They replied, "These men are King George's *cookees* (slaves), and are very bad men." I said, "Truly they are so; but then you must not kill them by any means, for if you do King George will be very angry with you." After a good deal of polemical discourse their passions abated, and they assured me they would not kill them; but the chief said they should remain at his place four months, and work for him, and if they wrought well he promised to give them plenty of food, and then at the end of four months he would permit them to go on board any ship that would take them. I told him I should be glad to find his words true. I then made him a present of a tokkee and some large fishhooks, which pleased him much.

To work for  
chief four  
months.

The prisoners stood by begging for their lives, and of me to intercede myself for them. This I did, as my very heart ached for them. I also counselled and advised them to the best of my power to go with the chief, and endeavour to please him in every thing until an opportunity offered to send them away. They then got into a canoe, and the chief took them away; and thus they lived and dragg'd out a miserable existence for some months, when the Rambler returned into the Bay of Islands to refresh, having lost several hands at sea, and to my utter astonishment, when she went out of the harbour, Capt. Wyer took two of those very men he some months before so cruelly and wantonly put on shore among the savages of this island. The other two are gone away in whale ships.

Same captain  
who landed  
them took them  
off.

I consider such things as amounting nearly to the highest pitch of human wickedness, and have thought it my duty to inform Your Excellency of the whole of this affair, in order that Your Excellency may be enabled to take suitable steps for the punishment of such offenders.

I have, &c.,

JOHN BUTLER, J.P.

## SECRETARY LACK TO UNDER-SECRETARY WILMOT.

SIR,— Office of Committee of Privy Council for Trade,  
Whitehall, 14th Feb., 1822.

1822  
Feb. 14.

The Lords of the Committee of Privy Council for Trade having been informed that flax of a very valuable description is grown in New Zealand, I am directed by their Lordships to request that you will submit to Earl Bathurst the expediency of instructing the Governor of New South Wales to enquire into this subject, and to report thereon for the information of this Committee; and also to collect and send Home a small quantity of such flax by way of specimen, in order that its character and quality may be ascertained by proper experiments.

Want specimen  
of New Zealand  
flax sent Home.

I am, &c.,

R. Wilmott, Esq., &c., &c.

THOMAS LACK.

## SECRETARY OF STATE TO THOMAS LACK.

SIR,— Downing Street, 21st February, 1822.

Feb. 21.

Having submitted to Earl Bathurst your letter of the 14th instant, requesting that the Governor of New South Wales might be instructed to send Home a quantity of the New Zealand flax in order that its character and quality might be ascertained, I am directed by His Lordship to acquaint you, for the information of the Lords of the Committee of Privy Council for Trade, that the Commissioner of Enquiry has already directed the necessary experiments to be made on a quantity of this flax which he brought Home with him from New South Wales, the result of which will be duly laid before their Lordships when the report of the Commissioner is received.

Send New  
Zealand flax  
to examine.

Bigge brought  
some Home.

I am, &c.,

Thos. Lack, Esq.

R. WILMOT.

## THE NAVY BOARD TO UNDER-SECRETARY WILMOT.

SIR,— Navy Office, 22nd February, 1822.

Feb. 22.

Having received an application from the Revd. Josiah Pratt, Secretary to the Church Missionary Society, for permission to ship in the Guildford, convict ship, about 15 tons weight of stores, consisting chiefly of iron, wrought and unwrought, and intended for the personal use of various persons settled by the Society at the Bay of Islands, in New Zealand, for the purpose of promoting the moral and religious improvement of the natives, we acquaint you therewith, for the information of Earl Bathurst,

Mission stores  
for New  
Zealand.

1822  
Feb. 22.  
—

and that if His Lordship should have no objection to our providing conveyance for the stores in question, we will order them to be received on board one of the convict ships about to proceed to New South Wales.

We are, &c.,

J. TUCKER.

J. THOMSON.

J. BOWEN.

R. Wilmot, Esq.

[Church Missionary House.

REV. S. MARSDEN TO MISSIONARY SETTLERS, ETC.

*Copy of a Letter from the Revd. S. Marsden to the Missionary Settlers and Mechanics employed in the Service of the Church Missionary Society in the Bay of Islands.*

March 18.

Complaints of  
injustice  
towards settlers.

DEAR SIRS,—

Parramatta, Marc. 18, 1822.

As ———\* complained very much of my injustice towards himself and others employed in the service of the missions in charging to you, for the goods issued from the Society's stores, the shipping expences and insurance, which amounted to about 6½ p. cent., and which had been charged in the account current by the Society to me, I have to request you will inform me if you feel yourselves aggrieved by this charge, and whether you consider it just or unjust that you should pay the actual sum for the articles you receive that the Society have paid in London for them. I shall be happy to forward any complaint you have to make upon this subject against me to the Society. I thought it just, and I charged it. You may be of a different opinion. I derive no advantage from this. I do not make a gain of you. No part of the money ever comes to me, tho' a very deep impression has been made here upon the public mind to my prejudice from the statements of ———, so much so that some of my friends strongly recommend me to bring the matter before a Court of justice previous to Mr. ———'s return, in order that he might prove that I had acted wrong, if he could. I beg to refer you to Mr. Williams, who knows what has been said upon this subject.† If I have acted improperly in this matter, you had the Society to appeal to. There was no necessity to throw me into the hands of the enemy for the sake of a few pounds, and which I have not benefited by. I spend my time in looking after the concerns of the Society, in providing for your wants. I travel at my own expence; and have all the anxiety and responsibility

Gains no  
pecuniary  
advantage  
from them.

Charges are  
totally  
unfounded.

Even travels at  
his own expence.

\* One of the missionary settlers at New Zealand.

† Mr. Williams, when at New Zealand, being asked as to this matter, replied that Mr. ——— behaved in a very scandalous manner to Mr. Marsden.



of the mission upon me as far as it can be laid upon me. This is enough, without any criminal charges made against me by any of the missionaries, as they have the Society to appeal to to redress their wrongs.

I have only to request that you will state your complaints to me, and leave the Society to judge how far I have injured you as individuals; and give me an opportunity to reply to your charges, if you have any to make, and you will much oblige

Yours, &c.,

SAMUEL MARSDEN.

1822  
March 18.

JAMES DOWNIE TO EARL BATHURST.

London, 15 Duke Street, Adelphi,

21st March, 1822.

MY LORD,—

March 21.

Previous to my sailing from Port Jackson on the 25th of July last His Excellency Governor Macquarie informed me on take [taking] charge of his public despatches and the emms that he recommended me strongly to Your Lordship. On coming to London I took the liberty of sending in my name, supposing Your Lordship might be disposed to ask some questions about New Zealand, where I have been twelvemonths nearly, searching for such a quality of timber as I thought fit for topmasts for line of battle ships. In this, after suffering many privations and hardships, I succeeded, and brought home a cargo fit for the purpose. During our long stay in the River Thames, and constant intercourse and traffic with the natives, we had not a single skirmish with them, and parted good friends, wishing on their part that a few Europeans should be left behind with each of their tribes and settle among them. On the west side of the river there are thousands of acres of rich land, nearly level as far as the eye can reach, almost ready for the plough.

Been twelve months in New Zealand.

Getting cargo of timber.

Thousands of acres of good land.

I have, &c.,

JAS. DOWNIE.

[Church Missionary Society.]

REV. S. MARSDEN TO REV. J. PRATT.

REV. AND DEAR SIR,—

Parramatta, April 1st, 1822.

April 1.

As Dr. Reed of the R.N. is returning with an intention of visiting N. S. Wales with his family to reside amongst us, I embrace the opportunity of writing a line by him, as he will on his return take charge of any parcel you may have to send. Dr. Reed came out in the Baring with the Rev. J. Butler and his colleagues. . . .

Dr. Reed intends to reside in New South Wales.

1822

April 1.

Closed the  
school at  
Parramatta.

I have been compelled to relinquish the school at Parramatta for the natives of N. Zealand. Thirteen died who lived with me, principally chiefs' sons, either at Parramatta, or soon after their return home. The medical gentlemen were of the opinion that our food affected them. The last young man who died was opened and examined by Dr. Douglass and Sir John Jamieson, who were of opinion that our food occasioned bowel complaints. I was of opinion that they were affected by the heavy dews which fall in the nights after hot days. The New Zealanders sleep in their own country, when the weather is fine, in the open air, but there are not dews there as in N. S. Wales. They are not so heavy. It was not possible to prevent them from sleeping out at nights. The six youths on board the Active are well. One of the chief's sons, nephew to Shunghee, has been five years in the vessel, and has always behaved well, and has had good health. The natives of N. Zealand must become better acquainted with habits of civil life before they will be governed by them. You will learn the death of Pomare before this arrives. God has, in His goodness, done great things for these islands. The deputation sent out by the London M. S. will I am sure make a very satisfactory report to the Christian world. They cannot do otherwise. . . .

Announces  
Pomare's death.

With respect to this colony, I hope things will now take an happy turn. The missions will find a friend in Sir Thos. Brisbane, and also in the Colonial Secretary, Mr. Goulburn, brother to the Under-Secretary of State for the Colonies. Sir Thomas was kind enough to give nine head of cattle a few days ago for me to send to the Society Island. I told him how General Macquarie behaved about the bullocks. He was much astonished at such conduct. I am sure he would have acted a very different part. . . .

Brisbane and  
Goulburn  
friendly to  
missions.

I remain, &c.,

Rev. J. Pratt, &c., &c.

S. MARSDEN.

#### SECRETARY OF STATE TO WILLIAM JACKSON.

April 27.

SIR,—

Downing Street, 27th April, 1822.

No encourage-  
ment to settlers  
in New Zealand.

I am directed by Earl Bathurst to acknowledge the receipt of your letter of the 23rd inst., in favor of Thomas England, and I am in reply to acquaint you that no encouragement is given by Government to settlers to proceed to New Zealand.

I am, &c.,

R. WILMOT.

Wm. Jackson, Esq., Bolton Hill, West Teignmouth.

[Church Missionary Society Proceedings.

1822

EXTRACT FROM THE REPORT OF THE COMMITTEE TO THE ANNUAL  
MEETING, APRIL 30TH, 1822, AT FREEMASONS' HALL, GREAT  
QUEEN STREET.

April 30.

*Australasia Mission.*

The seminary at Parramatta, for New Zealanders, has been for the present suspended, the change of habits and climate being found injurious to the health of the natives, and to require a degree of attention to them which under present circumstances could not be paid. Mr. Samuel Butler left in the beginning of March, and returned in the Hope to New Zealand. The Committee feel, however, that such advantages have been already derived from the seminary, and are likely still to be derived when it can be placed under due management, that they wish every effort to be made to place it on a permanent footing. . . .

Seminary at  
Parramatta  
suspended.

Mr. Marsden's third visit to New Zealand . . . has been detailed in a copious journal, abounding, like his former journal, in the most interesting details respecting this extraordinary people.

Marsden has  
made his third  
visit to New  
Zealand.

. . . This visit occupied about nine months, from the end of February to the beginning of December, 1820. . . . In

Lasted from  
February to  
December, 1820.

March and April he first walked from the Bay of Islands to the Gambier, on the west coast of the island; and afterward he accompanied Captain Skinner, in the Dromedary, by the North Cape, to the same place. In May he visited various districts south-westward of Kiddeekiddee. The Coromandel having arrived in the Bay for timber, Mr. Marsden proceeded in her to the Thames, and spent the months of June, July, and August in visiting the inhabitants in the bays and creeks of that river, those of Mercury Bay, on the ocean, south of Cape Colville, and those on the western coast of the island, south-east of the Gambier. Returning to the Bay of Islands, he embarked for Port Jackson in a Government schooner on the 17th of September, but the schooner, putting back, on account of bad weather and being very deeply laden, Mr. Marsden determined to wait for the return of the Dromedary to Port Jackson. Finding that she would not sail for some weeks he improved the interval in revisiting the people in the Thames and on the western coast of the island. Returning by the way of the Gambier, he crossed the country to Whangaroa, and embarked there on board the Dromedary on the 25th of November.

---

D. ERSKINE TO EARL BATHURST.

At the Earl of Buchan's, Dryburgh Abbey,

By St. Boswell's, N.B., June 22d, 1822.

MY LORD,—

June.22.

I hope you will forgive a very humble individual presuming to suggest any measure to Your Lordship, but as I under-

1822  
June 22.  
Convicts for  
New Zealand.

Islands should  
be named after  
Cook.

Cook's de-  
scendants should  
have a seniority  
in New Zealand.

stand New Zealand is intended to be the destination of future (14 years) convicts and those for longer periods, as that island (or rather two islands very close together) was particularly paid attention to in exploring by Capt. Cook, I think some one colony of the British dominions should bear his name, one of the greatest circumnavigators this country ever produced. The one island, with submission to Your Lordship's better judgement, ought to be called Cook's Island and the other lesser one James's Island, the chief town Cooksborough, and the same in the lesser island Martinville, from Martin,\* in Cleveland, the place where Capt. Cook was born. This would be a proper compliment to the memory of the discoverer of the great South Sea Archipelago, and so great an honor as he was to his country.

My Lord, &c.,

DAV. ERSKINE.

(A former schoolfellow of Your Ldp. while Lord Apsley at Rebonvilles, 17 Cav. Str.)

P.S.—It would also be honorable to the memory of Capt. Cook, to offer a seniority, with any number of acres of land His Majesty might chuse to give, to any of his (Cook's) male or female descendents who continued to be called by his name and went to this new colony, making them next in rank to Kts., and taking the step of seniority to all others; it would introduce a rank in the coloney that would be useful to it. The straight, I believe, between the two islands are already called by Capt. Cook's name. I again intreat your Lordship will forgive ( . . . ) great a liberty as I have taken.

The Rt. Honle. the Earl of Bathurst,  
Secretary of State for the Colonial Department, &c.

[Wesleyan Mission House.

REV. B. CARVOSSO TO GENERAL SECRETARIES, WESLEYAN  
MISSION HOUSE.

Windsor, New South Wales,

July 15.

RESPECTED AND DEAR BRETHREN,— July 15th, 1822.

\* \* \* \*

Before Mr. Leigh sailed for New Zealand he was single in his opinion against the brethren, that no artificers should accompany the missionaries in the South Sea Missions. But he is now of another mind, as he has written to the managing committee at Sydney to send him two mechanics! But I doubt

Two artificers  
wanted by  
Mr. Leigh in  
New Zealand.

\* The village was named Marton.—F.M.B.



his request cannot be complied with, as mechanics in general are very scarce; suitable ones cannot be found, and nobody appears willing to venture on such a speculation. Had Brother Leigh used his influence before he left the colony he would probably have succeeded according to his wishes, as pious sympathy is a powerful motive on such occasions; but I fear he will now be disappointed. I do not know a single individual who has the necessary qualifications for the work, and who appears at all likely to enter on such a dangerous enterprise. Brother Lawry has also taken with him 8 cows, a bull, and 6 sheep to remain on the island for breeding: these were presented by His Excellency the Governor, out of the Government stock of this colony.

1822  
July 15.

Cows, &c., taken  
to Tonga by  
Mr. Lawry.

I am, &c.,

B. CARVOSSO.

General Secretaries, Wesleyan Mission House.

Colonial Office—Mis. Dom. XI.

UNDER-SECRETARY WILMOT TO THE NAVY COMMISSIONERS.

GENTLEMEN,—

Downing Street, 6th August, 1822.

Aug. 6.

I am directed by Earl Bathurst to desire that instructions may be given to the Agent for Transports at Deptford to receive on board any vessel sailing for New South Wales in which there may be room a further supply of stores to the amount of fifteen tons for the use of the Church Missionary Society's mission in New Zealand.

Send stores to  
Church Mission-  
ary Society in  
New Zealand.

I am, &c.,

R. WILMOT.

The Commissioners of the Navy.

MESSRS. TAYLOR AND UPTON TO EARL BATHURST.

7 Walcot Place, Lambeth,

MY LORD,—

October 9th, 1822.

Oct. 9.

The undersigned, having before solicited to be sent as settlers to New Zealand, and learnt by Your Honor of the 2nd of April last that Government do not intend sending settlers to that place, think it our duty to inform you that we intend going by the first conveyance we can meet with, and should Your Lordship please to honor us with dispatches for Mr. C. Hall, Mr. King, or other missionaries, no one would be more proud to execute your commands than

Settlers for  
New Zealand.

Your, &c.,

TAYLOR & UPTON.

The Honble. Earl Bathurst, &c.

1822  
Oct. 10.

UNDER-SECRETARY WILMOT TO MESSRS. TAYLOR AND UPTON  
GENTLEMEN,— Downing Street, 10th October, 1822.

Does not write  
to New Zealand.

I am directed by Lord Bathurst to acquaint you, in reply to your letter of the 7th inst., stating your intention of proceeding to New Zealand, and offering to convey any dispatches that His Lordship may have to send to that place, that, as His Lordship does not hold any correspondence with any of the missionaries there, he has not any occasion to avail himself of your offer.

I am, &c.,

R. WILMOT.

Messrs. Taylor and Upton, 17 Walcot Place, Lambeth.

JOHN THOMSON TO HENRY DUNDAS.

Nov. 22.

22/11/92.

The Right Honourable Henry Dundas, one of His Majesty's  
Principal Secretaries of State.

Thomson to  
Dundas.

HEARING that superintendants of the agriculture at Botany Bay were needed, and having had a good deal of experience in various parts of S. and N. Britain, I offer myself for that service, if in other respects it can be made agreeable; if the State needs such a servant, one of your Secretaries or Clerks may find me at Burford, Oxfordshire, where any letter directed to me by name will find me.

I am, &c.,

JOHN THOMSON, A.M., Ed.

Scheme for  
reducing New  
Zealand.

If the Ministry should think fit now, in profound peace, to settle a colony in New Zealand or Nootka with fifty sober men, one hundred seapoys, and 100 convicts, and with provisions for one year and military stores for twice the number of men, I think I could effect it. If you please to see the scheme, it follows.

Inhabitants to  
furnish a town  
and district.

The inhabitants of New Zealand are just in that state of civilisation proper to be made useful. By coming upon the coast in a friendly manner, and observing the state of the people, an opportunity may be found to join one tribe against another, which last, on conquest, would be obliged to submit to your own conditions, which must be to furnish a town and district, with an engagement to refrain from war unless when in alliance with you. This unheard of clemency in that country would have a great effect on the neighbours, more might be reduced and hostages received, who, by being taught and well treated, would introduce civilisation and render the country, now so inhospitable, then an asylum for distressed mariners. By introducing the European grains and roots in addition to those already cultivated it might be an emporium for many nations, and by

Cultivation of  
European  
grains.

strengthening the garrison in proportion to the value of the island, I doubt not but it might be equally protected and equally useful with the Sunda or Philippine Islands ; and the inhabitants once brought under command, would favour the settling many places in New Holland where pearl fisheries would be established. My method of bringing the natives under command is this : By the superiority of firearms there is no doubt of subduing the most powerful kings ; bring him under by confining himself or taking hostages ; make him give orders to his people and share the revenues. A fleet of canoes by no means formidable to armed ships, yet powerful in these seas, might be equipped, with stationary shields, prows, awnings, slings, cows, and other European machinery quite unknown in that country ; a discipline might be introduced (without firearms) which would make them superior to their neighbours ; thus they would subdue each other, and we be their master ; hence peace would ensue, and subjection, and agriculture, a little known, almost eradicated by wars, would thrive, and the King of England would enjoy a fine country, from whence he might conquer the greatest part of the South Sea Islands, and conquest would bring peace, hence improvement and civilisation, &c.—a work worthy of so great a King, distinguished for his philanthropy. This I, with an ensign's commission, with the number of men mentioned above, drawn from any sober regiments, would effect in a few years, to the honour of you, and good of mankind in general. Indians when treated with honour will be so many more faithful subjects of the Crown, as who cannot escape in a rude extended country. I should be happy if from the hint it were practised by any other, but I should have no fear to engage and succeed.

1822  
Nov. 22.

Discipline with-  
out firearms.

Advantages to  
Mother-country.

[Church Missionary House.

REV. S. MARSDEN to REV. J. PRATT.

Parramatta, January 15th, 1823.

1823  
Jan. 15.

REVEREND AND DEAR SIR,—

The time is now come when I should state to you my object in sending cattle to New Zealand. My wish was that the missionaries in time should be supplied with milk, butter, cheese, and animal food, which would in a great measure render them independent of the natives for support. Their number must now be fifty or upwards, and many of them females of the best breed. I now wish to present them as a donation to the Missionary Society, for the comfort and support of their missionaries, reserving two cows and one bull for the Wesleyan

Presents cattle  
in New Zealand  
to Church  
Missionary  
Society.

1823  
Jan. 15.

missionaries, for them to take with them to the station where  
they may settle. . . . I am, &c.,  
Revd. J. Pratt, &c., &c. SAMUEL MARSDEN.

[Church Missionary House.

REV. S. MARSDEN TO REV. J. PRATT.

REV. AND DEAR SIR,— Parramatta, January 15th, 1823.

I have the pleasure to inform you that Mr. and Mrs. Clark arrived here a few months ago. They are very promising young people. I have deemed it prudent for the present to detain them in the colony until things in New Zealand are a little more settled. When remonstrating with Mr. Kendall on the impropriety of his conduct in bartering muskets with the natives he attempted to justify the measure by informing me that the Society was going to send out to Shunghee a gunsmith named Mr. Clark. I told him Mr. Clark would not be allowed to come to N. Zealand upon those terms, for I should retain him in the colony. I am persuaded it will be better for the present to keep him here until I write to N. Zealand, and inform Mr. Kendall and Shunghee that Mr. Clark must not come to N. Zealand, if they expect him to be employed in making muskets. It will be better to settle this point with them while Mr. Clark is here. I have put him in charge of the native institution from the first of January where he is usefully employed, and will be no expense to the Society while he remains on that situation. I beg to refer you to Mr. Francis Hall for further information about Mr. and Mrs. Clark. Though there are and have been great difficulties in the mission at N. Zealand, yet time will remove them. They will daily diminish, and I think the worst is over. I wish Mr. Francis Hall would be prevailed upon to return, to take charge of all the stores and to manage the secular interests of the Society. He is so excellent a character, he could not be more usefully employed. Should the Rev. Mr. Williams come out it is my present intention to fix him, and Mr. and Mrs. Clark, with another tribe at some distance from the present missionaries. I purpose also to direct Mr. William Hall to accompany them. Mr. Kendall and Mr. Hall will never be happy together. . . . I have not time to write much as I am going off this morning to the Derwent. Should a suitable person be met with to fill Mr. Clark's present situation at the native institution it would be well to send him out as soon as possible. Whoever comes must be a married man: . . .

I am, &c.,  
SAMUEL MARSDEN.

Rev. J. Pratt.

Mr. and Mrs.  
Clark kept in  
New South  
Wales.

As Mr. Clark  
expected to  
make muskets  
in New Zealand.

Wishes Mr. Hall  
would return.



[Bigge's Appendix, Vol. 142.]

COMMISSIONER BIGGE TO EARL BATHURST.

1823  
Feb. 27.

MY LORD,—

27th February, 1823.

Having been directed by Mr. Goulburn's letter of the 24th April, 1819, to enquire into the best means of preventing the commission of outrage and violence on the persons of the inhabitants of the islands of New Zealand by the crews of vessels navigating the Pacific, as well as to obtain information respecting the state of the inhabitants and the progress that has been made in their civilisation, and I have the honour to submit to Your Lordship the result of my enquiries on these subjects.

New Zealand  
outrages.

By the visit of His Majesty's ship *Dromedary* to the Bay of Islands, and to the Harbour of Wangaroa, on the eastern coast of New Zealand in the year 1820, for the purpose of procuring a cargo of mast timber for the use of His Majesty's Navy, I was unable to procure more correct information than I could have expected to receive from the persons composing or connected with the missionary establishments. In the evidence of Mr. McCroe, a very intelligent officer of the 84th Regiment, and who in the course of service with his detachment on board the *Dromedary*, had an opportunity of making tours in the interior (in one of which he was accompanied by Rev. Mr. Marsden), I have been able to obtain information upon the present state of New Zealand, upon which I am justified in stating that the greatest reliance may be placed. The intelligence and activity of Mr. McCroe, and his impartiality and candour, are fully admitted by Rev. Mr. Marsden whenever any appeal was made upon questions of doubtful authority, and it is certain that no person that ever visited the island enjoyed so many opportunities of observing the character of the country, as well as of its inhabitants.

His inquiries.

Mr. McCroe and  
Rev. S. Marsden  
good authorities.

The two principal harbours that have been frequented by European vessels are those of the Bay of Islands and Wangaroa, both of which are situated on the north-east coast of New Zealand. A capacious harbour, formed by a river called the Thames, to the south of the Bay of Islands, has latterly been explored, and an attempt was made by the commander of His Majesty's storeship *Dromedary* to enter another harbour on the western coast of the island, that lies nearly in the same parallel of latitude as the Harbour of Wangaroa.

The two ports.

The Bay of Islands contains good and safe anchorage for vessels of the largest description, and it is on the northern shore of the bay that the principal settlement of the missionaries has been fixed.

Missionary  
settlement.

The Harbour of Wangaroa is situated in the 35th degree of south latitude and in 172° 52' east longitude. It is four miles in length, and of irregular breadth, containing several inlets, that

1823  
Feb. 27.  
—

have from five to six fathoms of water. The harbour is perfectly landlocked, and the entrance, although narrow and not exceeding 300 yards, is very deep, and free from all danger. In this harbour there is a rise and fall of tide from six to eight feet.

The Harbour of Suheiha is situated in latitude  $33^{\circ} 32'$  south and longitude  $173^{\circ} 47'$  east. There are three and a half fathoms depth of water on the bar, upon which the sea breaks whenever the wind blows directly in, and there is a perpetual surf and breakers upon the sand hills, both above and below the entrance. In the entrance of the harbour there are seven fathoms water for a distance of 12 miles.

The principal resort of European vessels is to the Bay of Islands, where they anchor during the season which is unfavourable for the fishing of the spermaceti whale. They here exchange old muskets and implements of iron for pigs and sweet potatoes that are furnished by the inhabitants. Promiscuous intercourse of the crews of these vessels with the females is offered rather than prohibited; and except where violence or seduction takes place of the wives or daughters of the chiefs of any tribe, their resentment is never excited by the infidelity of their women with strangers. The disputes that arise between the natives of New Zealand and the crews of European vessels proceed from their mutual ignorance of the language that they speak, the numerous instances of bad faith in the European, and the summary resort to severe punishment in cases of breach of faith in the natives, or on the discovery of petty thefts. The power, as well as the extent of punishments being placed in the hands of persons little qualified to adjust it, violence and personal injury have been frequently inflicted upon the inhabitants of New Zealand, and instances are not wanting where the injury has been unprovoked and the violence excessive.

With a view to prevent the forcible abduction of the natives by the masters and crews of vessels that sailed out from Port Jackson for New Zealand, the former were required to execute bonds, under which they engaged in penalties not to carry or take away any of the inhabitants of New Zealand without the consent of their chiefs, signified to one of the missionaries. As these bonds were not taken in duplicate, or transmitted to England, it would have been impracticable to put them in force, in case of any breach of their conditions, except in the single and very improbable case of the return of the offending parties to Port Jackson. One of the missionaries resident at New Zealand, the Rev. Mr. Kendall, has received a commission to act as a Magistrate, but it does not appear that he possesses the means of rendering effective assistance to the natives against the oppressions of the crews of European vessels, and of controlling in any

Crews and  
women.

New Zealand  
difficulties.

Bad treatment  
of natives.

New South  
Wales laws to  
protect natives.

Missionary  
made  
Magistrate.

degree the intercourse that subsists between them. The influence of the missionaries over the New Zealanders has suffered considerably from the disregard in which their authority is held by the crews of European vessels, and from their unsuccessful interposition in disputes between them and the natives. The introduction of firearms, and the use of gunpowder, both of which the natives very eagerly purchase from Europeans in exchange for pork, mats, and vegetables, has enabled those tribes that inhabit the vicinity of the Bay of Islands and the eastern coast to acquire a manifest superiority over the inhabitants of the interior. Since the use of firearms has increased, and the natives have become sensible of the superiority it has given them in all struggles for power, or in the gratification of their revenge, the influence of the missionaries has greatly declined, and they have themselves been exposed to insult and ill-treatment, as well as to some degree of personal danger. The progress that the missionaries have hitherto made in the civilisation or instruction of the New Zealanders has been very inconsiderable, and it cannot be expected that their influence over the dispositions of the inhabitants can ever successfully compete with the powerful incentives to war and commerce that are perpetually presented by the increasing intercourse of Europeans. Altho' the use of firearms has rendered the contests of New Zealanders more frequent, yet it is not to be inferred that they have become more destructive than formerly. The weapons to which they are accustomed are calculated only for personal contests, and when once a New Zealander is speared in battle he is speedily despatched by a heavy weapon, made of stone, that the natives always carry about their persons. Those who are made captive in war become the slaves of the conquerors, and it appears that they are treated with great cruelty by their masters, and form a separate class of the population. They are frequently sacrificed as offerings at the death of any individual of the family of a chief, and are sold or exchanged, and sometimes ransomed for articles of value.

Compared with the extent of the country, and the general fertility of the soil, the native population of New Zealand is not numerous. The inhabitants are congregated in bodies varying from two to three hundred, and apparently for the purposes of mutual defence or protection. They change their places of abode within their own districts, to which known limits are assigned, but they are not a wandering people. The authority of the chiefs is hereditary, but it is limited to the right of demanding the military services of the tribe in case of war. In peace, the power of the chief is merely influential. The checks upon the increase of population in New Zealand proceed directly from the

1823

Feb. 27.

Mission  
influence and  
crews.Buy arms, &c.,  
for fighting  
other tribes  
afar.Less missionary  
progress.Weapons old  
and new.Cruelty to  
slaves.Life in the  
tribe.Why small  
population.



1823

Feb. 27.

Still cannibal-  
ism there.Food and  
disease.Agriculture  
and animals.Mr. Marsden's  
farming efforts.

destructive wars that they wage with each other ; from the practice of infanticide, cannibalism, and slavery. It appears certain from every account that cannibalism still exists among the New Zealanders, but from the abhorrence with which they now know that the practice is now regarded by Europeans they are unwilling to avow it, and are rather studious in concealing it. Want of food cannot be reckoned amongst the incentives to this practice, or to that of infanticide, for the soil of New Zealand is generally fertile, the temperature mild, and the summer heats are frequented by gentle showers. A great portion of the interior of the island is covered with a high fern, the roots of which are eaten by the natives. The sweet potato and the yam are generally and very carefully cultivated, and wild spinach, celery, and carrots (seeds of which were left by Captain Cook) are now growing wild in most of the districts of the interior. Pigs, derived from the breed that he left, are becoming very numerous and nearly wild. The inhabitants occasionally eat them, but dried fish and potatoes constitute their ordinary subsistence, and their nutritious qualities are very apparent in the healthy temperaments and robust frames, both of the men and women. Pulmonary diseases appear to be frequent amongst the New Zealanders, and the intercourse of Europeans with the tribes of the sea coast has occasioned the introduction of another disease, which from the want of means of cure is attended with fatal and calamitous effects.

The families in New Zealand are described to be numerous and healthy, and many persons are observed of an advanced age, and some of them who recollected the visit of Captain Cook. The New Zealanders are of an active and enterprising disposition, capable of great exertion when under the influence of any strong excitement, but like most other savage tribes averse to any continued labour.

The cultivation of their lands is very neat and careful, and the necessity of giving them protection against the ravages of the pigs has taught them the art of making substantial fences. The only quadrupeds that have been discovered, or that now exist, in New Zealand consist of pigs, a species of dog resembling the native dog of New Holland, but more easily domesticated, and field rats ; no venomous reptiles have yet been discovered.

The missionaries have made some attempts to introduce cattle, but from want of care and superintendence they have been dispersed. The draught cattle that were taken from Sydney to assist in the conveyance of the wood for loading the Dromedary were purchased by the Rev. Mr. Marsden, and for the first time the plough was made use of in New Zealand under his direction, in the year 1820. The surface of that portion of the



island that has been visited by Europeans is varied, on the sea coast broken into valleys and ravines, that are watered by fine streams, and that contain large deposits of rich, alluvial soil. That which covers the sides of the hills consists generally of a poor and tenacious clay, with a considerable admixture of iron. In the interior of the island there are extensive tracts of flat land, unencumbered with timber, but covered either with the fern or the New Zealand flax (*Phormium tenax*). Mr. McCroe states that he passed through a valley of six miles in extent, the surface of which was covered with this plant. It grows in stools or tufts at a little distance from each other, some of them covering a space of six feet in diameter. Two species of this plant were observed, one having leaves of a reddish colour, and one that was more common, the leaves of which were of a light bluish green. The former species is scarcer, and is cultivated and esteemed by the natives on account of the whiteness of the flax. As it cannot be propagated by seed, the roots of the plant are set in small trenches about one foot broad and nine inches deep. Moist soils are generally chosen for this purpose, and it appears that although, both in New Zealand and New South Wales, the *Phormium tenax* does not require a rich soil, yet that the leaf acquires a greater degree of vigor and expansion in moist alluvial land than in dry clayey and sandy soils.

The preparation of the plant for the manufacture of mats or cordage consists of stripping the fibrous and mucilaginous parts from the leaf in its green state by means of a sharp shell or a vitrified substance that is found in many parts of New Zealand. The flax is then hung up to dry, and when required to be made soft or silky it is beaten, after undergoing a partial immersion in fresh water.

The climate of New Zealand is remarkably mild and favourable to vegetation. In the winter season the rains are heavy and continued, and gentle showers are frequently experienced in the summer. From the observation of the thermometer, registered by Mr. McCroe from the 1st of May, 1820, to the 7th of December, the variations during the winter months appear to have been between 39° and 60°, and at noon in the month of December they did not exceed 68°. Except on the sides of the ravines, the surface of the country may be pronounced to be susceptible of easy cultivation. In these ravines, and along the sides and shores of the rivulets, the trees are numerous and lofty. Their value as timber appears yet to be doubtful. In the early visits that were made, both to the Northern and Southern Island of New Zealand, timber seems to have been cut without any attention to the quality and character of the two species of trees that were found to be most abundant, and that

1823

Feb. 27.

Country  
described.

Flax.

Flax  
manufacture.

Climate.

Trees doubtful  
value.

|                                   |  |
|-----------------------------------|--|
| 1823<br>Feb. 27.<br>—             | appeared to be the most adapted to naval purposes. The names given to these trees by the natives are the cowdie and kaikatina. The former is greatly superior to the latter in durability, and from both there exudes a considerable quantity of resin. The cowdie is chiefly found on the sides of hills at a distance of two or three miles from the coast, but large quantities were observed to grow on the inlets of the River Shukuhanga, of large dimensions, and in situations from whence they might be transported without difficulty. Both of the species now mentioned are evergreens. They have very few branches, and carry up a clean stem to a great height, suddenly branching out into a tufty and bushy top, bearing leaves resembling those of the English box-tree. The crews and military guard of His Majesty's store-ship the Dromedary obtained 120 spars of the species called the cowdie during the period of their stay on the coasts of New Zealand. They were assisted in cutting them by the natives, who are remarkably expert in that operation, until they began to undervalue the articles that were given them in remuneration, and which consisted of hoes, hatchets, glass beads, and fish-hooks. Fifty of the spars were from 20 to 23 inches in diameter, and in point of dimensions were considered by the officers of the Dromedary to be well adapted for topmasts of ships of the line. The value of the timber I have not had an opportunity of ascertaining, as it was deposited in His Majesty's dockyard at Chatham on the arrival there of the Dromedary in June, 1821. |
| Cowdie trees.                     |  |
| Two species described.            |  |
| Native pay for work.              |  |
| Spars used.                       | Several small spars and booms of the timber called cowdie were used on board the Dromedary in her voyage from New South Wales to England in the year 1821, and were found to be quite equal to spars made of Baltic timber. The greatest portion of the timber imported from New Zealand into the Colony of New South Wales has consisted of the inferior species called kaikatina, and it has been easily used either for naval or domestic purposes. The Americans, who have visited New Zealand, consider it well adapted for the China market, and have also used it in the repairs of their own vessels. The large quantity however that has been imported in the Dromedary and Coromandel, and that has been deposited in His Majesty's dockyards, must have afforded ample opportunities of forming a correct judgment of the value of the New Zealand timber.  |
| Inferior sort by New South Wales. |  |
| Mineral productions.              | The mineral productions of the island have hitherto attracted but little observation. The presence of iron has been ascertained by the discoloration of the clay, as well as of the water of several springs, and the active agency of fire, as indicated by the appearance of several substances that have been found in a state of calcination. Large masses of pure sulphur were found in the interior by Mr. Marsden in his last tour, at a little distance  |
| Volcanic action.                  |  |

from a hot spring, the waters of which had a strong sulphurous taste. Green jadestone is found in most parts of the island, and is cut into ornaments by the natives and exchanged for muskets and gunpowder with the crews of European vessels. Within the last few years this intercourse has increased, and Mr. Kendall, one of the missionaries, reported to me that during the three years ending November, 1819, fourteen vessels had touched at the Bay of Islands, five of which belonged to New South Wales, two are Americans, and the remainder are English vessels employed in the South Sea fishery. The New Zealanders manifest a great disposition for the sea service, are themselves very expert in the management of their canoes, and several have made voyages between the islands and New South Wales in the missionary brig *Active*. The number of persons composing the missionary establishment in New Zealand, including women and children, did not exceed 45 in the year 1819, and there is one family unconnected with them, consisting of an English mechanic, his wife, and five children, settled at a little distance from the Bay of Islands. The New Zealanders have already become acquainted with the condition of the convicts in New South Wales, and regard them with contempt and aversion. The commander of the American ship the *General Gates*, who succeeded in landing three convicts before he was discovered by Captain Skinner of His Majesty's store-ship the *Dromedary*, had made an agreement with one of the chiefs to receive pork, potatoes, and wood in payment for the labour of the convicts, whom he described as armourers, and capable of making and repairing fire-arms. The New Zealanders, however disposed to commercial intercourse with Europeans, were not likely to afford an asylum to the fugitive convicts of New South Wales, or to connive at their concealment. Should that intercourse be confined in future to the occasional visits of vessels employed in the South Sea fisheries, it is to be apprehended that the progress of civilization will be retarded, and that the knowledge of the European character in New Zealand will be derived from the vices and bad passions, which have, unfortunately, found there so many opportunities of uncontrolled indulgence. The use of spirituous liquors has fortunately no attraction for the New Zealanders, and it is stated by Mr. McCroe (but upon what grounds I am unable to conceive) that the opinion they have formed of the European character is in no wise affected by the conduct of the crews of the vessels that from time to time have visited their shores.

With a view to prevent a repetition of the outrages that have been committed by them, it will certainly be advisable to declare by a legislative Act that they, as well as all persons serving on

1823

Feb. 27.

Jadestone.

Ships at Bay  
of Islands.Mission  
establishment.Bad American  
captain and  
convicts.Fugitive  
convicts.Effect on New  
Zealanders.No love of  
drink in New  
Zealand.All under New  
South Wales  
who on board  
British ships.



1823

Feb. 27.

New Zealand  
not King's  
dominion.

Act not affect  
foreigners.

Alter Act  
preamble *re*  
New Zealand  
in dominions.

Jurisdiction of  
New South  
Wales vague.

Magistrates for  
New Zealand.

The Dromedary  
effect.

New Zealand  
better than  
New South  
Wales.

board British vessels, are amenable to the Criminal Court of New South Wales, and liable to be tried by it, for any crime committed on the persons of the inhabitants of New Zealand. By the first legislative Act that was passed on this subject, the punishment of offences committed in New Zealand was limited to those of murder or manslaughter, and at the same time it was declared in the preamble of this Act that New Zealand was a place not within the dominions of His Majesty. Altho', therefore, an Act of the British Legislature might be binding upon such of the subjects of His Majesty as committed offences upon the persons of the New Zealanders, yet it may be doubtful whether it would justify the punishment of foreigners for those offences. The protection of the Act must therefore be limited to cases of outrage or violence committed by the subjects of the King unless the preamble of the Act before mentioned is repeated or a positive declaration is made that New Zealand is included in and forms part of the British dominions. The jurisdiction conferred on the Governors of New South Wales extends to the islands adjacent to the eastern coast of that colony, an expression too vague to support the exercise of criminal authority in New Zealand, which is situated one thousand miles from it. To remedy these doubts, therefore, it would be advisable to give an express authority to the Governor of New South Wales to appoint magistrates, as well as constables, in the Islands of New Zealand; and with a view to give efficiency to the Magisterial authority, it would be expedient to give salaries not exceeding £20 per annum to any two respectable persons who might be selected for filling the offices of constables. The occasional presence of an English ship of war in the harbours of New Zealand, and during the season in which they are visited by the South Sea whalers, would greatly tend to check the licentiousness and outrages of the crews of English vessels, and to increase the respect that the natives already feel for the naval and commercial superiority of the Dromedary upon the coast and at the Bay of Islands; and upon the sight of the military guard, the natives expressed some apprehension, and appeared to entertain a belief that they were sent for the purpose of avenging the dreadful calamity that befel the crew of the ship Boyd. When the object of the voyage was explained they made no opposition to the cutting and exportation of their wood, and expressed great satisfaction in the prospect that it held out to them of an enlarged intercourse with Europeans, and especially with the subjects of Great Britain. From the limited information even that had been obtained of the character and resources of the Northern Island of New Zealand, it appears to possess a great superiority over the settled districts of the



Colony of New South Wales. In rivers, harbors, climate, soil, and natural productions, the superiority of New Zealand is manifest, and the only impediment that presents itself to the colonisation of the island arises from the savage and revengeful disposition of the inhabitants. It does not appear that they are averse to the settlement of Europeans—on the contrary, their natural shrewdness has already pointed out to them the advantages they derive from the presence and intercourse with strangers. The missionaries have hitherto confined their settlements to the Bay of Islands, but they were in treaty, when the Dromedary left the island, for a large and fertile tract of land, in which it was intended to make a settlement that was to receive the name of Gloucester. It is the opinion of Mr. McCroe that although the natives would not hostilely oppose the settlement of a body of Europeans, or of English in New Zealand, landing with pacific and friendly objects, yet that their indiscriminate revenge and sensibility to injury would expose individuals to a great degree of personal danger. During the period in which the crew and guard of the Dromedary were engaged in cutting wood, and in making a road for carrying it to the harbor, they were encamped on shore; they were frequently visited by the natives, but were never molested by them, and several of the men, as well as women, remained on board the Dromedary when the crew was greatly diminished in number without any symptom or disposition to violence. Quarrels took place between the natives and the sailors, but by the prudence and discretion of Captain Skinner, the commander of the Dromedary, indemnity or satisfaction in some shape or other was rendered to the injured parties, and all feeling of national insult was appeased. Among a body of English settlers not subject to any control the same discretion is not to be expected, and it is on this account, and for the purpose of affording protection against the sudden movements of revengeful passion in the natives, that Mr. McCroe considered that a small military force would be necessary, in case it should be deemed expedient to give encouragement to the colonisation of New Zealand. Whenever the China market shall become accessible to English vessels, the value of New Zealand, as a place of deposit for the produce of the whale and seal fisheries, cannot fail to attract them to its harbours. The Americans, who are freely admitted to the China market, are already sensible of the advantages to be derived from an intercourse with the New Zealanders, and will succeed in establishing it, notwithstanding the partiality and preference that the natives entertain for the subjects of Great Britain, and the knowledge they have acquired of the distinction between these and the Americans. The exchangeable produce of New Zealand is at

1823

Feb. 27.

Danger from  
native savagery.

Desire for  
Europeans.

Missionaries'  
lands.

Settlements  
and natives.

Settlers and  
natives.

Military force  
suggested.

Future use of  
New Zealand.

Americans to  
China market.

1823

Feb. 27.

Native prospects in trade.

Military to New Zealand.

present limited to the articles of wood, mats, and provisions, but if they can be prevailed upon, either by the example of the missionaries, or by settlers, to adopt the more simple modes of raising stock, and cultivating grain, they will not fail to find ample opportunities of exchanging them for the useful and common implements of agriculture, and for coarse woollens, the use of which is already perceived to be very acceptable to them. At the present moment any military force that might be sent to New Zealand must for the first 12 months be subsisted from Port Jackson, but I conceive that a detachment of troops might receive supplies by one or other of the colonial vessels, and that under their protection a sufficient quantity of New Zealand flax, in its dressed state, might be purchased of the natives and returned to Port Jackson for sale and manufacture to defray the expenses of the voyage.

Refers to Ensign McCroe.

Other New Zealand evidence.

I am not aware of any other points of information that I have in my power to submit to Your Lordship respecting the objects of enquiry to which my attention was directed by Mr. Goulburn's letter, but in case Your Lordship should wish to possess any further or more detailed information, I beg leave most respectfully to refer you to the evidence of Ensign McCroe, and to that of Dr. Fairfowl, surgeon of His Majesty's store-ship Dromedary, that I have the honor to enclose, together with the replies of Mr. Kendall and two other missionaries to certain queries that I addressed to them by the first opportunity that occurred after my arrival in New South Wales. All which is very humbly submitted to Your Lordship.

JOHN THOMAS BIGGE.

To the Right Honorable the Earl Bathurst, K.G.

REV. JOSIAH PRATT TO EARL BATHURST.

Church Missionary House, Salisbury Square,

June 4.

My LORD,—

June 4, 1823.

Passage for two missionaries to New Zealand.

I am directed by the Committee of the Church Missionary Society respectfully to solicit that Your Lordship will have the kindness to grant a passage to Mr. Richard Davis, his wife, and five children, and to Charles Davis, to New South Wales, in one of the ships which the Committee are informed His Majesty's Government have recently taken up to convey convicts to that colony.

All the parties are to be employed in the Society's mission in New Zealand (Mr. Richard Davis as a farmer, and Charles as a carpenter), though the services of both will at the same time be rendered subservient to the instruction of the New Zealanders in the principles of Christianity.

I am further directed to request Your Lordship to grant permission to the Committee to ship about ten tons of stores, principally ironmongery, for the use of the same mission.

1823  
June 4.

I have, &c.,

JOSIAH PRATT, Secretary.

The Right Hon. Earl Bathurst.

REV. S. MARSDEN TO GOVERNOR BRISBANE.

SIR,—

Parramatta, June 28th, 1823.

June 28.

When the Revd. Mr. Williams arrived in the Lord Sidmouth he brought me a requisition from the Church Missionary Society in which they solicit me to visit New Zealand to settle their affairs belonging to that mission, provided I could obtain Your Excellency's leave of absence for a short time. I have now to request Your Excellency's sanction for me to proceed to New Zealand as soon as I can obtain a vessel for the purpose. The Rev. Thos. Hassall will officiate for me during my absence, which I hope will not exceed three months.

I have, &c.,

SAMUEL MARSDEN.

His Excellency Governor Sir Thos. Brisbane, &c., &c.

*Letter indorsed on Foregoing.*

The Governor has pleasure in acceding to your request for three months' leave of absence from Parramatta to visit the Church Missionary establishment in New Zealand.

[New South Wales, Vol. 148.

JAMES BUSBY TO EARL BATHURST.

3 Red Cross Square, Aldersgate Street,

MY LORD,—

London, 1st July, 1823.

July 1.

My father having been appointed by Your Lordship to go out to New South Wales as Mineral Surveyor and Civil Engineer, it is my intention, with Your Lordship's permission, to accompany him; and as I shall carry with me capital amounting to considerably more than £500, and which in the event of my recovering debts due to me before my departure may amount to £1,000, I pray Your Lordship that I may be considered as a settler, and have a grant of land made to me in the colony.

Father to New South Wales as Mineral Surveyor.

Wishes to go as settler.

I have, &c.,

JAMES BUSBY.\*

\* This was the New Zealand Busby.

1823  
Sept. 20.

[Church Missionary Society.

REV. S. MARSDEN TO REV. J. PRATT.

Bay of Islands, 20th Sept., 1823.

REVD. AND DEAR SIR,—

As it is probable that a letter may reach you from New Zealand before I can write to you from New South Wales I have judged it prudent to drop you a few lines. I sailed from Port Jackson on the 23rd of July in the Brampton, with the Revd. Mr. Williams and family, and we arrived in the Bay of Islands on Sunday, Aug. 3rd. . . . Mr. Kendall consented to return with me to Port Jackson. I took a passage for him and his family in the Brampton, and when the ship was ready they all embarked. On Sunday the 7th of Sepr. we attempted to get out of the harbour. There was a strong gale from the east. In working out the ship missed stays, and was driven amongst the rocks, where she was wrecked. No lives were lost, tho' our situation was very awful. This was a very distressing calamity to all. The bottom of the vessel was soon beat out, so that we had no hopes of ever returning in the Brampton. There was no other vessel in the harbour, nor none expected for some time. In a few days we were all landed again with our baggage, as the vessel did not go to pieces. We met with no loss excepting the ship. The natives behaved exceedingly well, and did not take from us the smallest article. Upon the whole it was a merciful shipwreck. I shall send you the particulars from N. S. Wales. I had also Mr. Cowell and family on board. The whole number under my charge were 16 Europeans and 12 natives. We have had a very anxious time. . . .

I am, &c.,

Rev. J. Pratt, &c., &c.

SAML. MARSDEN.

[New South Wales, Vol. 147.

LIEUT.-COLONEL NICOLLS TO EARL BATHURST.

Nov. 8.

8th Nov., 1823.

To the Right Honorable the Earl Bathurst, Principal Secretary of State for the Colonial Department.

THE memorial of Lieutenant-Colonel Edward Nicolls, of the Royal Marines, respectfully sheweth,—

That the attention of your memorialist having for many years been peculiarly turned to the subject of colonization, he has employed the leisure afforded by peace in serious reflection on the observations which long experience in various parts of the world had enabled him to make, and in endeavouring to reduce into a practical form the results of that experience.

Arrived in New Zealand in Brampton.

Were wrecked on their return.

All escaped safely to shore.

Interested in colonization.



Your memorialist, having been long impressed with the conviction that in many cases the parent State might, and ought to, be relieved from the expence, vexation, and trouble to which colonization has hitherto subjected it, begs leave to submit to Your Lordship's favourable consideration a plan which he humbly conceives would not only exempt the Mother-country from the expence usually incurred in such undertakings, but which also in a peculiar degree embraces objects of vital importance to the naval consequence and commercial interests of the British Empire.

182  
Nov. 8.

Relief to  
parent State.

Benefit English  
commerce.

It has long been a matter of deep national concern that, whilst the independence of Great Britain was established in every other respect, it was compelled to rely on the northern Powers for a supply of several articles of indispensable necessity to the existence of its navy. A colony planted in a country whose natural productions (by abundantly supplying our deficiency in these important materials) could at once free the British Empire from this irksome dependance on foreign aid, and amply repay the debt necessarily incurred at its commencement, your memorialist humbly submits would be an acquisition of the highest value to this Kingdom.

Naval requisites  
from foreign  
Powers.

That your memorialist, after much time devoted to personal inquiry, and to the perusal of those authors who from their own inspection have treated on the peculiar advantages of New Zealand in point of situation, soil, climate, and productions, and the numerous safe and commodious harbours by which it is surrounded, feels convinced that the northern part of that country possesses all the requisites for the establishment of a colony of the above valuable and singular description. Captain Cook, in his several visits to New Zealand in the contemplation of a British settlement there, not only circumnavigated the two islands, of which the country is composed, but passing thro' the straight which has since borne his name, ascertained the extent and maritime boundaries of each division, to the northernmost of which the following propositions and observations are intended exclusively to apply:—

Advantages of  
New Zealand.

Captain Cook  
explored coasts.

This division, extending from the North Cape, in latitude  $34^{\circ} 20'$  S. to Cape Palliser in  $41^{\circ} 36'$ , is about 430 miles in length, whilst its breadth varying from 5 to 180, but taken on an average at 60 miles will give, as its superficial contents, upwards of 16 millions of statute acres, and is called by the natives Caheino-mane. The delightful climate with which it is favored, joined to the uncommon fertility of the soil, produces an unfading verdure all the year round, and qualifies this island for bringing to perfection all the necessaries and most of the luxuries of civilized life. A range of high mountains running thro' the

Good soil and  
climate.

1823

Nov. 8.

Mountains  
bring rain.

whole length of both islands, with little variation of distance from their western shores, ensures such a constant succession of moisture, even thro' the summer months, as gives the climate of this country a decided advantage over that of New South Wales (where sometimes there is no rain for ten months together), and the occasional soft and genial showers in summer prevent the heat from being inconveniently felt by Europeans, altho' the rays of the sun fall almost vertically. -

Flax plant  
grows freely.

Clothed in many parts with forests of the finest timber, and watered by numberless rivers, this favored country produces to an apparently unbounded extent a plant called the *Phormium tenax*, or flax plant. Of this flax, prepared by a very simple process, cordage and sail-cloth of an excellent quality have been manufactured, equal (if not superior) to those articles made from the produce of any other country. The soil, which varies in quality, is represented by persons of unquestionable authority to be admirably adapted to the growth of grain, and in a few instances where European missionaries have planted some of the garden vegetables known to us, they have attained to a degree of perfection fully equal to those in our English gardens; in short, from the best authenticated accounts, there is no country on earth more favorably circumstanced for the operations of agriculture than New Zealand, which already abounds in the common and sweet potato, without other cultivation than that bestowed upon it by the rude efforts of the natives, unassisted by iron tools.

Grain and  
vegetables  
flourish.

Cattle and fish.

Iron; perhaps  
other metals.Character of  
natives.Their cruel  
deeds.

European cattle and poultry thrive and multiply abundantly, whilst the seas surrounding the island, and the rivers which intersect it, afford the finest fish of every species. Demonstrations of iron-ore brought down by the currents of fresh water were discovered by Captain Cook at the mouth of every little stream or rivulet, which warrants the belief that other metallic substances would be found in the more mountainous parts of the country. The New Zealanders are represented as a brave and warlike race of men, with the important addition to their characters of being as affectionate, intelligent, and industrious as they are hardy, active, and ingenious, possessing minds capable of receiving, and profiting by instruction, and hearts that bear a grateful sense of any kindness they receive. It must however be acknowledged that great odium attaches to them in consequence of the abhorrent custom of eating their war victims, and of the commission of other acts of cruelty, practiced on the crews of some of the European ships which have occasionally touched on their coasts; but your memorialist is confident that the plan which he is about to propose for the colonization of this island would (by removing the causes of these evils) entirely put a stop to such ferocious acts.

Your memorialist having thus, in the briefest manner he is able, submitted to Your Lordship a sketch of the country, and character of the people, whom he is desirous of being the humble means of rendering less savage and more happy, will now take the liberty of presenting for Your Lordship's consideration the plan which appears to him best calculated to secure the most beneficial results, and for the adoption of which he feels assured he can offer unanswerable reasons.

1823

Nov. 8.

Will present his plan.

Your memorialist, believing (for reasons to be hereafter stated) that the most thriving colonies are those founded on military principles, proposes,—

1st. That a corps shall be raised of strong, composed wholly, or as far as may be, of pensioners. A military colony

2ndly. That Government shall find a passage for these men, together with their families, and supply them with provisions and clothing for the space of one year, also with a proportion of live-stock, seeds, agricultural and other instruments.

3rdly. That Government shall allot to each private 100 acres of land, 50 for his wife and 25 for each child, with a similar proportion, according to their rank, for each officer, non-commissioned officer, their wives and families, the land to be obtained by Government in the manner hereafter specified. Land allotted to each.

4thly. That the said colony shall, for a certain time, be governed by military law, the extent of which time is to be determined by the local circumstances of the settlement.

5thly. That the colony shall agree to repay to Government, in raw materials the produce of New Zealand, all the expence incurred at its commencement as soon as shall be possible after its establishment. Repay expence in produce.

Your memorialist will now proceed to lay before Your Lordship the reasons which have induced him to believe that a colony founded at its commencement on military principles is best adapted to promote the interests, both of the settlers and the Mother-country. The success which has uniformly attended military settlements formed by the Russians on their Georgian, the Persian, and Turkish frontiers have particularly attracted the attention of your memorialist, and confirmed the opinion, which his experience had led him to form, as to the decided advantages possessed by such an establishment. Success of Russian colonies.

At the commencement of a colony it is most essential that the efforts of all the individuals composing it should be exclusively directed to the promotion of the general good—the evils which have arisen in most infant colonies from the clashing of private interests are too well known to require repetition—strifes have invariably sprung up; in all instances injurious, and not unfrequently fatal, to their well-being. The discipline of a



1823

Nov. 8.

Advantage of  
military  
settlers.

military settlement would effectually cut off this fruitful source of misfortunes; the members of it, trained in long habits of submissive obedience to one competent authority, and guided by one mind earnestly bent on promoting the welfare of all, would find difficulties vanish before their united strength, which individually encountered must be insurmountable.

Best for natives.

A military establishment, whilst it tended to promote the good of the settlers, would also be best calculated to benefit the uncivilized natives of New Zealand. The furious struggles amongst the chiefs for the maintenance of their imagined rights, and the consequent destruction of human life, would be speedily terminated by the presence of such a force. Many of their leaders have expressed an ardent desire to retire from their predatory mode of life, but have at the same time lamented the utter impossibility of doing so whilst some of the more powerful and ambitious chiefs remain unsubdued or unawed by a regular military power, which in the event of its becoming necessary might compel their agreement to such pacific terms as should best serve the general interest.

One fierce  
dominating  
chief.

The aspiring ambition of one very warlike chief called Shungi has already caused the most calamitous events; he is at the head of two thousand followers, who are in possession of one thousand musquets, and altho' the combined power of the chiefs in opposition to this warrior would be greatly superior in point of numbers to his adherents, yet these parties, being nearly destitute of firearms, and dreading his ferocious disposition, have been reluctantly compelled to join his standard; thus his power is daily augmenting, whilst the cultivation of the soil and the civilization of the natives, so wisely promoted by the resident missionaries of that excellent institution the Church Missionary Society in London, is hourly declining.

Pensioners  
best settlers.

In the choice of pensioners to form the proposed colony, your memorialist has been guided by a belief that the expence of forming the establishment would be quickly diminished by this measure, as their active services would thereby be secured to the State without adding to its burthen. It also appears expedient that a large proportion of this body should consist of disbanded seamen and marines of sound constitutions, as they are, in general, more used to work hard, and more ready in availing themselves of presented resources, than troops of the line. For the same reasons a preference should be given to marine artillery men, whom frequent occasions may call forth into harbours, along the coast or in the rivers. Used to the oar, they would not deem this employment too laborious, and your memorialist has ever found these men a most useful description of troops. This corps of pensioners might be

Resourceful  
in service.

Where to get  
officers.



officer from the half-pay list, or by such as choose to volunteer from serving corps.

1823  
Nov. 8.

It has been too commonly the practice for settlers from this country, either forcibly to dispossess the natives of those lands which have devolved to them from their forefathers, or to obtain the peaceful resignation of them on certain stipulations which they afterwards deemed it unnecessary to fulfil. This violence in the first or breach of faith in the latter instance has been productive of the worst consequences to the settlers themselves, by provoking a just tho' savage retaliation, and has equally injured the natives by affording them an example and excuse for their ferocious acts.

Unjust treatment of natives.

During the last year, in the midst of an Indian population as wild and sanguinary as the natives of New Zealand, your memorialist learned the absolute necessity of adhering to the strictest rules of equity in all his transactions with them. Their experience of the perfect justice of his dealings induced an equal return of good faith on their part, and he had the happiness by this means of producing amongst them much civilization, and an abandonment of many of their barbarous customs. It is therefore essentially necessary to the success of this plan of colonization that Government should obtain from the natives of New Zealand by fair barter a sufficient portion of land to locate the settlers. This may be accomplished by giving in exchange iron tools or implements of husbandry, and at a much smaller expence than that usually incurred in the purchase of those presents so lavishly bestowed by Europeans in their dealings with savage nations. Of the pernicious effects of those gratuitous distributions, your memorialist has had such strong reasons to be convinced that, altho' furnished with upwards of twenty thousand pounds' worth of presents for the Indians in Florida, he bestowed them exclusively as payment for services performed, and the Indians were made happy by the rewards which their own exertions alone had enabled them to obtain, whereas, had he acted otherwise he might have entreated but would not have commanded their services.

Honest dealings win return.

Barter land for tools.

Payments better than presents.

From the nature of the indigenous productions of New Zealand, peculiar facilities would be afforded to the settlers for the repayment of the expence incurred at the commencement of the colony. To this country exclusively belongs the production of flax without cultivation, and requiring little manual labour to fit it for immediate use. This material would supply exports of such value to the parent State as in a short period completely to liquidate the debt due by the establishment for its outfit. (See Note No. 1.)

Flax plant indigenous.

1823  
Nov. 8.  
—

Price of raw  
material.

Great advan-  
tage to British  
manufacturers.

Ample supplies  
of food.

Useful to South  
Sea traders.

Divert emigra-  
tion from  
United States.

Would like to  
take charge.

*Note 1.*—Your memorialist further begs leave most respectfully to impress on the mind of Your Lordship that however great may be the advantages derivable from the power of machinery combined with the abilities and adroitness of superintendants and competent capital employed in any species of manufacture, he has reasonable ground to believe that the primary consideration of the manufacturer is the price at which the raw material can be obtained, and that on this alone depends the successful competition of British fabricks in foreign markets. A cheap and certain supply of the *Phormium tenax* from New Zealand in substitution of hemp and flax from the Baltic and other European sources would not only in a rational point of view render the country independant of other States for all national stores connected with these articles, but would in a commercial light give to the British manufacturers of hemp and flax a decided superiority in the excellence and cheapness of their goods, which by no possibility could be met with in the foreign market.

Your memorialist takes the liberty of submitting that at no future period could the colony possibly become a burthen to the Mother-country for the subsistence of the emigrated inhabitants, it being, from the excellence of its climate and prolific nature of the soil, together with the quantity of fish furnished by the sea shores and rivers, amply supplied with food and the other requisites of human life. To our traders engaged in the South Sea commerce the greatest advantages would be afforded by the safe and commodious harbours of this island—its timber for the repair of their ships, and abundant provisions for the refreshment of their crews; and your memorialist is humbly of opinion that a colony thus favourably situated, and organized according to the before-mentioned plan, must soon become one of the most important foreign establishments belonging to the British Empire.

Those useful and gallant emigrants from the northern counties of Ireland and Scotland who are daily flocking to the shores of the United States of America would soon be tempted to seek an asylum in New Zealand; their abilities and industry, which at present are worse than lost to the parent State by strengthening the hands of a formidable rival, would then become of the highest value to their native country, and the knowledge possessed by these individuals from their early experience in the rearing and dressing of flax would fit them in a peculiar manner for bringing the staple comodity of this island to perfection; whilst they would carry the practices of their youth to a profitable market in the preparation of the indigenous flax for all the British manufactures in which hemp or flax is employed.

Your memorialist, impressed with a conviction of the accuracy of these his views on the subject of colonization, begs leave to state that it is his anxious wish to be considered by Your

Lordship as eligible and competent to be intrusted with the colonization of New Zealand. Should the proposed plan be favored with Your Lordship's approbation, he hopes and believes that the exhibition alone without the exercise of whatever force His Majesty's Government may think fit to place under his command, would be sufficient to put a stop to the sanguinary quarrels amongst the native chiefs, whilst it should be his constant endeavour, by every means of conciliation in his power, to promote a spirit of mutual kindness and confidence between them and the settlers.

1823  
Nov. 8.

Stop quarrels  
between chiefs.

Your memorialist trusts that 30 years' services will be a sufficient warrant for his future zeal and activity in promoting any undertaking which may conduce to the welfare of his country.

His thirty  
years' services.

EDWARD NICOLLS, Lt.-Col., R.M.

Woolwich, Nov. the 8th, 1823.

[Enclosure No. 1.]

*Estimate of the Expence for the Outfit, Victualling, and Transport of 350 Officers, Non-commissioned Officers, and Privates of a Military Colony to be established in New Zealand.*

|   | Amount. |    |    |
|---|---------|----|----|
|   | £       | s. | d. |
| 1 lieutenant-colonel, at 17s. per diem .. ..  | 310     | 5  | 0  |
| 1 major, at 15s. per diem .. ..   | 273     | 15 | 0  |
| 3 captains, at 10s. 6d. per diem .. ..  | 574     | 17 | 6  |
| 3 1st lieutenants, at 7s. 6d. per diem .. ..  | 410     | 12 | 6  |
| 6 2nd lieutenants, at 6s. per diem .. ..  | 657     | 0  | 0  |
| 1 adjutant, at 4s. per diem .. ..   | 73      | 0  | 0  |
| 1 quartermaster, at 6s. per diem .. ..  | 109     | 10 | 0  |
| 1 surgeon, at 12s. per diem .. ..   | 219     | 0  | 0  |
| 3 assistant surgeons, at 6s. per diem .. ..   | 328     | 10 | 0  |
| 1 chaplain, at 15s. per diem .. ..  | 273     | 15 | 0  |
| 12 serjeants .. ..  | ..      | .. | .. |
| 12 corporals .. ..  | ..      | .. | .. |
| 300 privates .. ..  | ..      | .. | .. |
|   | 3,230   | 5  | 0  |
| Expence for a transport of 600 tons for the above,<br>at 15s. p. ton p. month .. ..             | 2,700   | 0  | 0  |
| Arms, accoutrements, and necessaries for 330 men,<br>at £10 p. man .. ..                        | 3,300   | 0  | 0  |
| Expence of victualling the above 350 men, at 8d.<br>p. man p. diem .. ..                        | 6,576   | 0  | 0  |
| Cattle, implements of agriculture, grain, seeds,<br>tradesmen's tools, goods for barter, &c. .. | 3,800   | 0  | 0  |
|   | £19,606 | 5  | 0  |

1823  
Nov. 8.

Expense of  
transit.

Should the above men be sent out in three 400 ton ships, with 100 convicts, as far as New South Wales, and from thence go on to New Zealand with the colonists, such plan would be attended with less expence and more advantage, for the following reasons: The transport of the convicts would pay the difference between the tonnage of a large ship of 600 tons and the three small ships of 1,200; three ships would be safer and a more convenient method than one, and when the colonists were landed one or two of the ships must be detached for cattle, &c.; by the time they came back the ship that remained would have been detached Home with a cargo of large spars for line of battle ships' topmasts (the most difficult spars to procure and the most expensive), together with 150 tons of the phormium, the value of which would be as follows:—

|                           |   | £       | s. | d. |
|---------------------------|---|---------|----|----|
| Value of cargo sent Home. | 100 spars, at £198 ea. . . . .                | 19,800  | 0  | 0  |
|                           | 150 tons of phormium, at £40 p. ton . . . . . | 6,000   | 0  | 0  |
|                           |   | £25,800 | 0  | 0  |

The cargoes of the two other ships carrying one hundred spars between them, and 300 tons each of the phormium, the accompt between the colony and the Mother-country would then stand at follows:—

| <i>Dr.</i>   | £       | s. | d. |
|--|---------|----|----|
| To outfit and all expences of colony . . . . .           | 19,606  | 5  | 0  |
| 8 months' tonnage of transports Homeward bound . . . . . | 3,600   | 0  | 0  |
|  | £23,206 | 5  | 0  |

| <i>Cr.</i>   | £      | s. | d. |
|--|--------|----|----|
| By 750 tons of the phormium, at £40 p. ton . . . . . | 26,000 | 0  | 0  |
| 200 spars, at £198 p. spar . . . . .                 | 39,600 | 0  | 0  |

|            |         |   |   |
|------------|---------|---|---|
| <i>Cr.</i> | £65,600 | 0 | 0 |
| <i>Dr.</i> | £23,206 | 5 | 0 |

Sum left to be distributed among the colonists £42,393 15 0

EDWARD NICOLLS, Lt.-Col., R.M.

Woolwich, 14th Novr., 1823.

[Enclosure No. 2.]

Woolwich Royal Rope Yard,

SIR,—

30th July, 1823.

In answer to the letter which you have done me the honor to address to me respecting New Zealand flax, I beg leave to say



to you that what I have seen of it has been fit for use, either as cordage, or for lines, and also for twine.

About two years ago some flax of the kind in question was sent to this department to be made into rope for trial. A trial was made accordingly, and in conjunction with the other officers of the Dock-yard, we reported thus:—

1823  
Nov. 8.

New Zealand  
flax sent for  
trial.

“ 26th January, 1822.

“ The New Zealand flax spins well into yarn, it takes the tar (about  $\frac{1}{8}$  in.), and retains it well. The New Zealand and the Russian hemp each take about  $\frac{1}{8}$ th of tar and retain it very similarly, both in the yarn and in the rope. The quality of this flax is such that it will beat for fine twine also.

Report on its  
qualities.

|                   |               |
|-------------------|---------------|
| “ THOMAS BROWN,   | } Dock-yard.  |
| “ EDWARD POWNOLL, |               |
| “ JOHN PEAKE,     | } Rope-yard.” |
| “ JOS. PARSONS,   |               |

The above is an extract from the official letter written to the Navy Board on trials of other ropes also, at that time.

The following is a copy of a private memorandum I made at the time for the purpose of referring to in case there should at any future period arise a question on the flax of New Zealand growth, and the hems mentioned in the said report:—

Private memo-  
randum on  
hems.

“ On the whole view of the Manilla and Rajapoor hems, and flax from New Zealand, it is quite safe to consider the strength of these ropes in the untarred state as greater than in ropes made from Russian hemp. But as to tarring the Manilla a doubt might arise as to durability. The portion of tar that remained, or was retained, from its not readily imbibing it, not being so great as in ropes made from Russian hemp; and hence its preservation, in that respect, must be left for time to decide on. The New Zealand flax, however, as taking the tar equally well with the Russian hemp, may be confided in for similar durability. The Rajapoor 3 tarred was also stronger than the Russian tarred.”

Manilla,  
Russian, and  
New Zealand  
compared.

Now, sir, these observations were made eighteen months ago, and I have since had no reason to alter them. Your letter on the subject has recalled them to my mind, and now seeing the small lines which have been made from the parcel of flax you gave me for that purpose I still hold as good my former opinion—that the New Zealand flax is fit for all cordage. The lines now made (to-day) will, I so imagine, speak very favorably for the quality of the flax.

New Zealand  
flax favourably  
considered.

I have, &c.,

JOHN PEAKE.

I should beg leave to premise, if such flax is in contemplation to be sent to England from New Zealand, care should be taken to clean it, so as to insure its reception here.

Lieut.-Col. Nicholls.

1823

Nov. 8.

[Enclosure No. 3.]

[New South Wales—Vol. 147.]

SIR,—

London, 16 Sept., 1823.

We have great pleasure in answering your letter, and in giving you our opinion of the very great advantages which we think those shipowners who send ships to fish for whales off the coast of New Zealand will gain by the establishment of settlements on that island.

Advantage to  
whalers.

We feel the fullest confidence from all the accounts we have received from the masters of our whaling ships that the soil and climate of New Zealand, with the articles of flax, timber, masts, which are the natural productions of the island, and all descriptions of vegetables growing most luxuriantly there, that New Zealand will afford everything which a ship and crew in distress or sickly can require.

Could go for  
repairs and rest.

Many British ships fish for whales, which are found in great numbers off the coast of New Zealand, but the weather on the coast is at all times very rugged, and even in their summer months heavy gales of wind are very frequently by which the ships and crews suffer so much that they require a near friendly port to resort to for repairing their damages and to restore the health of the crew after encountering such bad weather and having been long at sea.

New Holland  
women  
demoralize  
crews.

The settlements on the coast of New Holland are at a considerable distance from the eastern coast of New Zealand, where our ships fish. If a ship meets with damage, or her crew become sickly, to run to New Holland takes up considerable time, with some risk of loss of ship or deaths of crew. The greatest evil we experience, and which we dread from our ships going to the settlements in New Holland, is that the convict women so demoralize the crews as to make them in a short time, from the best of sailors, become extremely mutinous, and we scarcely know an instance of any of our ships going there without greatly altering the conduct of the crew, many of whom desert, which is attended with serious evil to a whaling ship, and more particularly so when the fishermen desert, which is very common.

Conciliate New  
Zealand natives.

The intercourse at present between the natives of New Zealand and the crews of ships is attended with some risk, from many individuals having been killed. If it is considered as good policy by our Government to attempt the colonizing New Zealand with the consent of the native chiefs we feel confident that we shall soon have great numbers of the natives who will be very glad to be taken on board our ships and in a very short time become most valuable seamen, being very powerful, brave, and with strong natural abilities. There are a very few New

They would  
make good  
seamen.

Zealanders at this time in British whalers, and their conduct is such as to merit the best treatment. If New Zealand falls into the hands of any other power with whom we should be at war the natives will be found a most powerful ally for our enemy and a bad neighbour to New Holland.

1823  
Nov. 8.

If the natives of New Zealand will allow of British settlements it is not improbable but many of the most respectable settlers in New Holland will remove there, as they have some fine rivers, which run into the sea from the interior of the island.

Attract settlers from New Holland.

The expence of colonizing New Zealand will be very considerable compared with that of any other place, as they will be able to obtain all they stand in need of, such as every kind of cattle, poultry, corn, and all descriptions of fruits, vegetables, &c., which have been imported from every part of the world, and which are now seasoned to the climate of New Holland, which is in the same latitudes as New Zealand.

Provisions from New Holland.

We are, &c.,

SAML. ENDERBY & SON.

WILLM. MELLISH.

DANL. BENNETT & SON.

To Coll. Nicolls, Royal Marines.

[Enclosure No. 4.]

SIR,—

Greenwich Ropery, 12th Nov., 1823.

In reply to your letter of the 11th inst., I can have no difficulty in giving you my opinion of the *Phormium tenax* or flax plant of New Zealand, of which I have seen several specimens; and, as a rope-maker, I can say, with much truth, that it appears to me to be infinitely superior to the best Baltic hemp; its strength is much greater, and from the readiness with which its fibres may be minutely divided, I am of opinion, as a sail-maker, also, that it would answer admirably well for canvas and other strong cloths, provided it could be afforded at such a price as to allow it to compete with the different kinds of flax now used for that purpose.

Opinion on New Zealand flax.

Good for ropes and canvas.

I have, &c.,

To Lieut.-Coll. Nicoll, &c., &c.

PETER YOUNG, JR.

[Enclosure No. 5.]

SIR,—

London, 14th November, 1823.

In reply to your letter of the 11th instant, requiring my opinion of the *Phormium tenax* or flax plant of New Zealand, from the various specimens of this plant which I have seen and particularly tried and examined, I can with confidence pro-

Praises New Zealand flax plant.

1823  
Nov. 8.  
Advantages  
over Baltic  
hemp.

nounce it a valuable material for the manufacture of ropes and sail-cloth, and for either of these purposes much superior to any Baltic hemp and flax that I have seen. In my opinion, its advantages over them are these: It is stronger, and from containing less colouring-matter (which when abundant encourages rot and putrefaction), this superior strength will be longer maintained; from its silky nature its fibres can be readily and minutely divided, which is a great advantage, as it can be equally well applied to the largest cable and the finest kind of twine, and also for making sail-canvas and other cloths that require strength and resistance to mildew.

I can be no judge at what price this useful plant could be afforded, but if it could be imported at the average rate of the hemp and flax now in use, I have no doubt that it would be generally preferred.

I remain, &c.,

CATHCART DEMPSTER.

Patentee for the Sail Cloth known in the Navy by the name of Dempster Patent Canvas.

Lieut. Colonel Nicoll, Royal Marines.

[Church Missionary House.

REV. S. MARSDEN TO REV. J. PRATT.

Nov. 10.

REVD. SIR,—

Kiddee Kiddee, November 10th, 1823.

I wrote to you in September last, in hopes that some vessel might touch at New Zealand for Europe, but none has done so yet. As I am now just on the point of embarking this morning I have thought proper to add a few more lines. Several circumstances have occurred since the loss of the Brampton which could not be foreseen at that time. A small brig has come in to the harbour, on her way to Otaheite, which the master of the Brampton, in conjunction with myself, have taken up to convey us to New S. Wales. I must return to my public duty as soon as possible, as my leave of absence has expired some time. Mr. Kendall gave me reason to believe that he would accompany me to Port Jackson, as I did not take up the brig until he informed me that he would follow my direction, when I applied to him to know what his intentions were. After I had engaged a passage for him and his family, he then informed me he was determined to remain in N. Zealand. I am therefore constrained to leave him. Several circumstances have happened which have rendered the Rev. J. Butler's removal necessary. I shall communicate the particulars to you on my arrival in N. S. Wales. Mr. B. accompanies me as well as his son. . . .

Taken up a brig  
for New South  
Wales.

Mr. Kendall  
refused to go.



I am happy to say the natives behave well : there is nothing to be apprehended from them : they are very attentive to the missionaries, and there never was a fairer prospect of usefulness than there is at present amongst this extraordinary nation. Their minds are enlarging very fast ; and very great alteration is made in their manners and general conduct. They are most urgent to introduce themselves into civil society. The Society's labours have already been an infinite blessing to this people. . . . Cultivation has been greatly increased. In Wy-

1823

Nov. 10.

Natives  
behave well.Cultivation  
much increased.

mattee, Shunghee's principal district, there is at this time more, it is said by Mr. Shepherd (who constantly visits this settlement), than two hundred acres in sweet potatoes. In every district there is more than 40 acres to one in cultivation from what there were before tools of agriculture were introduced amongst them, in those places where the influence of the Society's benevolence has been felt. . . .

I remain, &amp;c.,

Rev. J. Pratt.

SAMUEL MARSDEN.

[New South Wales, Vol. 147.]

LIEUT.-COLONEL NICOLLS TO UNDER-SECRETARY HORTON.

SIR,—

Woolwich, 20th Nov., 1823.

Nov. 20.

Herewith I have the honor to enclose for your information a tender made by Wm. Law Ogilvy Esqre. for the transport of the proposed military colony to New Zealand. Mr. Ogilvy has authorised me to say that no difficulty will exist as to the procuration of the sum contained in my estimate No. 5, and he will do himself the honor of waiting on you and giving you personal assurance thereof when you are at leisure to receive him. I have also to acquaint you that I am ordered to proceed to Portsmouth and embark in H.M. ship Victor for a passage to my command at Ascension. I must be there on Wednesday next. I shall have the honor of calling at the office in Downing St. on Monday to await any further orders you may have to give, but Mr. Ogilvy and myself will be ready at your call at any period between this and Monday.

Tender for  
transport of  
colony.Ordered off to  
Ascension.

I have, &amp;c.,

EDWARD NICOLLS, Lt.-Col.

[Enclosure.]

[New South Wales, Vol. 147.]

SIR,—

London, 18th November, 1823.

In reply to your letter requiring a tender of 3 ships about 300 tons each to convey 100 soldiers and 100 convicts each to

1823  
Nov. 20.  
Tender for  
three ships.  
  
With Govern-  
ment guarantee.

New South Wales, and from thence to New Zealand to load spars, &c., home to England, I am prepared to tender you the ships, to be approved by the Government agent, at 20/- p. ton p. month, and to take my payment from the sale of the return cargoes. Altho' the nett proceeds may far exceed my demand for frt., yet as Government will have at your credit the charge for conveyance of 300 convicts you will give me their guarantee for any deficiency.

On the ships' arrival at New South Wales, should you wish to detach one or two of them for supplies of cattle, &c., while you with the others proceeded to the settlement to prepare their cargoes, of course anny on monthly charter are at your command.

Yours, &c.,

For JOHN MOORE,

WM. L. OGILVY.

To Lt.-Col. Nicolls.

[New South Wales, Vol. 147.]

#### NOTE BY UNDER-SECRETARY HORTON.

THIS is an examination of a man which I made with reference to Colonel Nichol's proposal.

R. W. H.

Q. When did you go out to New Zealand, and in what capacity?

A. I was sent out in October, 1819, from Woolwich Dock-yard, as purveyor, principally for the purpose of selecting a cargo of masts.

Q. How long did you reside in New Zealand?

A. Rather more than eleven months—from June till May.

Q. In what part of the island did you reside?

A. In the vicinity of the River Thames, towards the northern part of the Northern Island.

Q. Under what circumstances is that country placed, as to the probability of aggression on the part of the natives in case a settlement should be formed there?

A. That part of the country in which I resided is populous: whether the natives there would make any aggression I do not know; but I believe they are desirous that some settlement should be formed, which might protect them from the aggressions of those who reside at the Bay of Islands, where the people are more numerous, and in possession of fire-arms. The chiefs from whom we obtained our cargoes have been cut off since we left the country, principally, as we suppose, in consequence of the articles which we gave them, and of the introduction of the fire-arms at the Bay of Islands.

Col. Nicholl here stated that the fire-arms introduced into New Zealand, and particularly into that part of the country called the Bay of Islands (which is at the northern extremity of the Northern Island, and 100 miles to the north of the River Thames), were conveyed thither by a missionary named Kendall, who contrived to introduce them as cases of leather, and who has since been dismissed by the Church Missionary Society for that reason.

*Q.* Have you an opportunity of understanding precisely the nature of the establishment proposed by Colonel Nicholl ?

*A.* Yes.

*Q.* Do you think that the establishment would be sufficiently strong to resist any aggression on the part of the natives ?

*A.* I think it would, if carried to the extent which I understand Col. Nicholl to propose, namely, 300 men at first, with a progressive augmentation.

*Q.* Do you feel convinced that your local knowledge enables you to state conclusively that flax grows there indigenously in such quantities as to justify the expectation that such a settlement would be able to procure any quantity that might be demanded by the Mother-country ?

*A.* To so great an extent I am not prepared to state. My own observation has been confined to the River Thames, but from what I have heard from other persons, who have visited other parts of the country, and who represent flax to be growing there in great abundance, I should presume that a very great supply might be afforded.

*Q.* Am I to understand that the flax, if taken from the ground there, will be reproduced without any process of cultivation ?

*A.* If it is cut it will reproduce itself ; if torn up by the roots the process of reproduction might not be so rapid ; but the cultivation may be carried on to an indefinite extent.

*Q.* In what manner do you anticipate that the trade in flax would be carried on ? For example, what British or other production do you propose to barter with the natives for the flax ?

*A.* The only things necessary for that purpose would be shoes, axes, and other iron tools, and blankets and cloth. The outer and inner cloaks now worn by the chiefs (specimens of which are in the Colonial Department) require an incredible length of time to prepare them, and the time so employed, if applied to the production of flax, to be exchanged for English cloth (which would equally satisfy the demands of the natives) would furnish a considerable quantity.

*Q.* Can you state what quantity of flax, in your opinion, might be exported from New Zealand at the end of the first

1823

and second years after the establishment of the settlement proposed by Col. Nicholl ?

A. I cannot undertake to state what quantity might be exported, though I know it is very abundant.

Col. Nicholl : I think almost any quantity that might be required.

Q. What kind of trees applicable for the purpose of naval timber grow in New Zealand ?

A. There are two sorts of the cowree and the kakaiterre. There is more difficulty in obtaining the cowree than the other.

Q. When the spars are estimated at £190 each, in the paper drawn up by Col. Nicholl, are these of the cowrie ?

A. They must be. The others are not nearly so valuable.

Q. If dependence is to be placed on Mr. Cruise's account, the cowrie is very difficult to obtain ?

A. It is ; but the crews of the Dromedary and the Coromandel stayed in the country a very short time, and were unacquainted with the natives ; and therefore had not that assistance from them which was necessary to enable them to procure those trees.

Q. You have no doubt that 300 would be sufficient ?

A. I have no doubt that they would.

Q. (Col. Nicholl) : What are the books to which you would refer as confirmatory of the views that you entertain respecting New Zealand ?

A. Mr. Nicholas's " Voyage to New Zealand, performed in 1814 and 1815 in Company with the Revd. Saml. Marsden," printed in 1817, Vol. 2, pages 119 and 135 ; " Some Account of New Zealand, particularly the Bay of Islands," by John Savage, Esq., surgeon and corresponding member of the Royal Zennerian Society ; the *Missionary Register* for 1817, pages 71, 345, 427, 518, 521, and 535 ; " Proceedings of the Church Missionary Society for 1818," pages 73 and 93 ; do. for 1818 and 1819, Vol. 7, pages 195 and 345 ; do. for 1820, pages 221 and 305 ; do. for 1821 and 1822, Vol. 10, pages 193 and 347.

---

[New South Wales, Vol. 147.]

#### BARON DE THIERRY TO EARL BATHURST.

Dec. 2.

Has purchased  
land in New  
Zealand.

THE Baron Charles de Thierry has the honour to present his respects to the Right Honourable the Earl Bathurst, and having purchased a considerable tract of land in the Island of New Zealand, to which a number of persons are desirous to proceed for the purpose of colonization, he begs to submit the following questions to His Lordship, and will feel particularly obliged by his early notice of them :—



1. Will His Majesty's Government grant to British subjects in New Zealand the same protection as it grants to settlers in New South Wales, who have gone there of their own free will?

1823  
Dec. 2.

2. Will land purchased from the natives be considered the property of the purchaser in case the island is taken possession of by the British Government; and in case such lands are again sold, will the sale of them be considered lawful and binding?

Are transactions binding?

3. Will the children of English settlers (or having an English father or mother) be considered as British subjects?

4. Will the raw or manufactured produce of such British subjects be allowed to be imported into England on the same footing as the produce of other British colonies?

Importation of produce.

5. Should settlers in New Zealand have trading vessels, will they be allowed to carry the British flag, and receive the same protection as is extended to ships of other British colonies?

Upon a favourable answer being received to these important questions, a number of colonists will venture upon their speculations in the New World, and their industry may prove a source of considerable wealth to this country, particularly after the working of the rich gold and silver mines which are known to exist in New Zealand, and from which pieces of fine ore have been received as specimens.

Colonists ready to go.

New Zealand flax and hemp are infinitely superior to any grown in England, and indeed H. M.'s Government will find that the field which is so unexpectedly opened to the British revenue deserves every protection, and the Baron C. de Thierry has no doubt but that he will receive from the Earl Bathurst unequivocal assurance of its being granted.

Deserves every protection.

Read's Hotel, 75 Lower Grosvenor Street, 2 Decr., 1823.

UNDER-SECRETARY HORTON TO BARON CHARLES DE THIERRY.

SIR,—

Downing Street, 10th December, 1823.

Dec. 10.

I am directed by Earl Bathurst to acknowledge the receipt of your letter of the 2nd inst., and to acquaint you, in reply, that as the questions which you have proposed to His Lordship respecting the Island of New Zealand are founded upon the assumption that that island is considered as a possession of the Crown, it seems necessary to apprise you that you have been misinformed on the subject.

New Zealand not a Crown possession.

I am, &c.,

R. WILMOT HORTON.

1824

Jan. 13.

[Church Missionary House.

REV. S. MARSDEN TO REV. J. PRATT.

REVD. SIR,—

Parramatta, Jany. 13th, 1824.

Mr. Butler  
suspended.

I have this day suspended the Revd. J. Butler from all connexion with the C. M. Society until the pleasure of the Committee is known at Home. It was my intention to have sent him to England if I could have prevailed upon him to have gone, as I did not know what step to take with him excepting this. When I received your letters on the 10th inst. I was much relieved. I then saw my way clear. I had an interview with Mr. Butler this morning, after I had written my letter to suspend him, a copy of which I have forwarded to you. I have determined upon purchasing a small estate immediately, about 34 miles from Port Jackson, in the interior. On this I shall establish the seminary for the general instruction of the New Zealand youths, and in which also the children of the missionaries may be maintained and educated together. I have no doubt but the allowance granted for the support and education of the missionaries' children will be sufficient to meet all the expenses. Judge Field will explain all my views on that subject. . . . I informed Mr. Butler . . . that as he was now suspended from all connexion with the Society he was at liberty to act as he thought proper until his case was laid before the parent Committee; that I would hire him myself if he would quietly retire into the interior, and put the New Zealanders under his care. He consented to my terms.

Purchased land  
for seminary.Mr. Butler will  
take charge of  
New Zealanders.Difficulties  
encountered  
in the colony.

I may here remark that the last year has been a year of toil, dangers, and anxieties both by sea and land, at home and abroad—continual fighting without and fears within. In the beginning of the year I spent near three months in Van Dieman's Land, where I travelled across the island from sea to sea, 160 miles, and in different directions thro' the land. We met with storms at sea both going and returning. I had many vexations when at home from the Magistrates at Parramatta; was brought before the Bench, convicted without information or evidence, fined, and an execution put into my house, and my property sold to the amount of the fine, merely to degrade me. Tho' these are matters of trifling importance, yet they serve to vex and annoy. They are amongst the all things which work for the Christian's good. The Magistrates convicted me of a flagrant breach of the Colonial Regulations when I had done no wrong—violated no regulation. I appealed to Cæsar, and obtained redress. As Judge Field can tell you, I was about 20 weeks absent on my voyage to New Zealand. Here I had both pleasure and pain, as my journal will shew. I am not a little surprised that my strength should be equal to my day,

that I have gone thro' so much fatigue of body and anxiety of mind, and am still alive and well. God is still good to Israel. His care over me has been very great. I was weak and weary when I embarked for N. Zealand, but returned strong and healthy. I may say with the Psalmist "Of judgments and of mercies unto Thee O Lord will I sing."

1824  
Jan. 13.

I remain, &c.,

Rev'd. J. Pratt, &c., &c.

SAMUEL MARSDEN.

BARON C. DE THIERRY TO EARL BATHURST.

Jan. 16.

THE Baron Charles de Thierry, late of the 23rd Lancers, has the honor to present his respects to the Right Honourable the Earl Bathurst, and take the liberty to address His Lordship upon an affair of very considerable importance, which he has already on a former occasion submitted to him in a different shape.

The Baron Charles de Thierry has an estate of 40,000 acres in New Zealand, with the means of adding considerably to its extent, and is desirous of sending off a colony of a large number of useful persons who are anxious of going to settle there with their families, under the directions of his brothers, one of whom is at present a half-pay officer of the Royal Marines, and another who was for eight years midshipman in the Royal Navy. The Baron has been informed that the Government gives £500 to each person going to settle in New South Wales, and, upon the great encouragement which they receive, he begs to submit a request to His Lordship's consideration, which, if granted, will secure the fortunes and happiness of a large body of persons who are now unemployed, will open a new source of wealth to this country, and will afford the Royal Navy the means of obtaining large spars of the cowrie tree and the native flax, which are allowed to surpass any other in the world.

Possesses 40,000 acres in New Zealand and wishes to form a colony.

Understands settlers to New South Wales receive £500 each from Government.

The Baron C. de Thierry solicits His Majesty's Government to grant him an advance of eight to ten thousand pounds to enable him to put into immediate execution the object which he has in view, of sending off a colony to New Zealand. This money would be repaid Government within three years, by means of spars from 74 to 84 feet long, and from 21 to 23 inches in diameter, or larger if required. And as a security for the due performance of the contract, the deeds of the estate, executed by the native chiefs and witnessed by the resident British Magistrate and missionary Mr. Kendall, and other British subjects at the Bay of Islands, would be left in custody of H. M.'s Government.

Asks loan of £8,000 or £10,000.

Repayment of loan and security.

The Baron Charles de Thierry intends proceeding with his family to New Zealand after the arrival of his brothers; he hopes that the assistance which is so liberally bestowed upon

1824  
Jan. 16.  
—

British subjects wishing to colonize in New South Wales will be extended to him, and that the immense advantages which the colonization of New Zealand by British subjects promises to the Mother-country he will experience that bounty which is so much wanted in order to realize the desired objects.

75 Lower Grosvenor Street, Grosvenor Square, 16th Jany.,  
1824.

[Wesleyan Mission House.

REV. S. MARSDEN TO REV. J. BUTTERWORTH.

DEAR SIR,—

Parramatta, January 29th, 1824.

Jan. 29.  
—

I cannot deny myself the pleasure of writing a few lines to you by our mutual friend Mr. Justice Field, whose return to England I most sincerely regret. I know he has been a very powerful check upon many public evils, and a protector of the characters and property of the injured and oppressed in his official situation. He will continue to be esteemed by the purest and best part of society in these settlements while the remembrance of his upright conduct as a judge remains.

Mr. Justice  
Field held in  
high esteem.

Mr. Leigh's  
health fast  
declining.

I am very sorry to inform you that the health of the Revd. Samuel Leigh is declining very fast. On my arrival in New Zealand in August last he intreated me to visit him at Wangaroa, where he was stationed, as he was very ill. Wangaroa lays about 50 miles to the north of the Bay of Islands. I complied with his wishes. When I arrived I found him very ill. It was the opinion of his colleagues that he should be removed as soon as possible from Wangaroa, as he could neither get medical assistance nor any other comfort that his case required. I perfectly agreed with his colleagues, and took him back with me to the Bay of Islands, where every attention was paid to him that was in our power. He still continued to grow worse, and it was before resolved that he should return with me to Port Jackson to see what a change of situation, with medical advice, would do for him. We embarked together, but were shipwrecked, tho' no lives were lost. When an opportunity offered, we returned to N. S. Wales. Mr. Leigh still continues to decline, and I have no hopes of his recovery myself. He is a worthy man—has laboured hard in this part of the world, and has been a very faithful missionary. He is very much attached to the natives of N. Zealand, and is anxious to return if it was possible. Mr. Leigh has had much anxiety upon his mind. The young men who are preachers have acted very contrary to his wishes, and have not been so frugal as they ought, but have followed their own wishes, contrary to his advice, which has brought on a heavy expence to the Society, which he was always anxious to avoid. I know well what young men who are missionaries

Has returned  
to New South  
Wales.

Much attached  
to New Zealand  
natives.



generally are ; I have had five-and-twenty years' experience of them, and I have always found them very difficult to govern—many I have seen, and have had to do with, who put little value upon the public money—never thought that it was collected from the widow's mite and the schoolboy's penny. There is a turn in most young men to be extravagant and free from all restraint. I need not make these observations, because I am sure the Wesleyan Committee will know this from the bills that must be drawn upon them. Missionaries will do wrong at such a distance, whatever the society may be to which they belong. I have much trouble with many who are connected with the C. M. Society. Notwithstanding all the evils that exist amongst them, the work of the Lord will go on. If one man will not do what is right, the Lord will find another, that the cause must not be relinquished. With respect to the C. M. Society, I, as agent, have been compelled to suspend some, to dismiss others, and severely to censure others. The same happened to the missionaries belonging to the London M. S. in the Society Islands : some behaved well, and some very bad. I always love to see a missionary careful of the public property. When he is careless about his expenses it is a bad sign. Every article of food is very cheap here—bread, meat, &c., &c.—so that a missionary may now live much more comfortably upon a small sum than what he could a few years ago. I should be glad to see some of your missionaries manifest a different spirit ; but I fear there are some who never will. They have not been sufficiently careful of the society they formed in this colony, and this, I fear, will do them no good in the end. I think it would be well if you should have a little conversation with Mr. Justice Field on this subject. You may converse with him freely and confidentially on any subject you wish to gain information upon. He will, from his local knowledge, be able to satisfy your inquiries. I know, from long experience in this colony, that little is to be expected from any association with men who have been convicts but fraud and imposition, and this is an error into which some have fallen. I have not entered into particulars, as Mr. Justice Field, to whom I refer, will see you in London.

I have, &c.,

SAMUEL MARSDEN.

1824  
Jan. 29.

Young missionaries difficult to govern.

Mr. Field can give information.

[Wesleyan Mission House.

REV. N. TURNER TO SECRETARIES, WESLEYAN SOCIETY.

Wesley Dale, Wanga-roa, New Zealand,

REV'D. AND DEAR FATHERS,— January 31st, 1824.

Jan. 31.

In addition to the six sheets of extracts from my journal I send you the following particulars, which chiefly relate to our expenditure of trade with the natives, &c., &c.

1824  
Jan. 31.  
Accounts of  
expenditure, &c.

No regular  
account kept.

Trifling stock  
in hand.

According to our instructions for this station, I know that the Committee require that we keep a regular account of all articles of expenditure, stock in hand, what is wanting, &c., and transmit the same to them in order; but hitherto this hath not been altogether attended to, nor am I able by this opportunity to send you so regular an account as I could wish.

Previous to Mr. Leigh's leaving us, which was three days after my arrival, no regular account of expenditure had been kept from the time of their leaving Rangahoo, nor had it scarcely been possible. A few days after Mr. Leigh's departure we endeavoured to overhale our stores to take an account of the stock in hand, but such was their lumbering state that it was impossible for us to look at every thing for want of room (nor are we any better yet, but hope to be soon), but were able to take some account of the principal articles, and from the 23rd of August have kept an account of the expenditure of the same.

When Bro. White left us on the 5th of November to accompany Mr. Leigh to the colony, he took with him all particulars for Mr. L. and him to submit to you jointly, and I am sorry to say he has not left me a copy, nor am I able to overhale the stores on purpose, and therefore I cannot send you an account of the stock in hand, but am certain it is very trifling (excepting small trade and old lumber which we shall scarcely be able to barter away at all), nor indeed any at all if our debts were paid, for we have had to borrow much from our brethren at the Bay of Islands.

The following is an account of the principle articles of expenditure from August 23rd to the 31st of December, 1823 :—

| From the 23rd of August,<br>1823, to the 31st December.<br>1823. | Hatchets. | Axes. | Spades. | Bill Hooks. | Saws. | Hoes. | Chisels. | Frg. Pans. | Iron Pots. | Slop. Cts.<br>Suits. |
|--|-----------|-------|---------|-------------|-------|-------|----------|------------|------------|----------------------|
| Provisions .. ..   | 14        | 2     | 4       | 4           | ..    | ..    | ..       | ..         | 1          | ..                   |
| Native servants' wages   | 5         | 3     | ..      | ..          | 1     | 3     | ..       | ..         | ..         | 3                    |
| Fencing timber for house<br>and garden                           | 7         | 18    | ..      | ..          | 1     | 1     | ..       | 4          | 15         | ..                   |
| Trees bought for sawing  | 1         | 1     | 5       | ..          | ..    | 2     | ..       | ..         | ..         | ..                   |
| Natives pulling the boat   | 1         | 1     | ..      | ..          | 1     | 2     | ..       | ..         | ..         | ..                   |
| Labour at hoeing, &c. ..   | 4         | 3     | ..      | ..          | ..    | 1     | ..       | 1          | 2          | ..                   |
| Letter-carriage to Kiddee<br>Kiddee, &c.                         | 8         | ..    | ..      | ..          | 1     | ..    | ..       | ..         | 1          | ..                   |
| One canoe and paddles  | ..        | ..    | 2       | ..          | ..    | ..    | ..       | ..         | ..         | ..                   |
| Land purchased ..  | 1         | 4     | ..      | ..          | ..    | ..    | ..       | 1          | ..         | ..                   |
| Sundries .. ..   | 1         | 3     | 2       | ..          | 2     | 1     | 8        | ..         | 5          | ..                   |
| Total .. ..  | 42        | 35    | 13      | 4           | 6     | 10    | 8        | 6          | 24         | 3                    |

In addition to the above there have been many old articles and much small trade, as knives, scissors, buttons, and fish-hooks in an abundance disposed of, of which no regular account has nor could very well be kept. These have been disposed of principally for the following purposes: Carrying fencing timber up from the river to the land we have enclosed; carry or fetching water, which for these last three months we have had to fetch from a considerable distance; seeking after the cow in the bush, which since the rivers and swamps have dried up has rambled many miles away; carrying us over the river from time to time, which they will never do without pay, and we have no bridges to walk over. These with a variety of other incidental occurrences have taken away much of our small trade, and will continue so to do.

1824  
Jan. 31.

Articles of trade  
expended.

With respect to the articles we are wanting, it is needless for me to say much, for I suppose my brethren will have written you jointly on the subject before now, but I will just say we are badly in want of the following articles: Axes, hatchets, spades, hoes (large and small), middle sized iron pots, chissels; tin pots of different sizes would be good trade, as well for our own use; we brought a good many with us from the colony, but they have stolen nearly the whole. Saws, drawing knives, and several other articles that we have on hand they will not barter for at all at present. We are also much in want of slops, particularly duck frocks and trowsers and check shirts for men and something dark and very strong to make up into dresses for native girls.

Articles greatly  
needed.

For the use of the mission we are wanting strong linnen for sheeting, huckaback for table cloths and towels. We also want several very large iron pots for the use of the mission. Several bales of common blankets should also be sent for bartering with.

In writing to my friends by this conveyance, I have written to Mr. Benjamin White, of Nantwich, to send me a box of shoes and other articles for my own use, and directed him to commit the same to the care of the Resident Secretary at the Mission House, and to draw upon him for the amount, the same to be placed to my account; and by kindly attending to which, and sending the box by the first conveyance, will be doing me an essential service, as we shall soon be very much in want of shoes.

Articles needed  
for personal use.

Rev'd. and dear fathers, submitting the above to your notice,

I remain, &c.,

NATH. TURNER.

To the Secretaries of the Wesleyan Missionary Society, 77  
Hatton Garden, London.

1824

Feb. 13.

[Wesleyan Mission House.

REV. G. ERSKINE TO REV. R. WATSON.

Sidney, February 13th, 1824.

REVEREND AND DEAR SIR,—

A few days ago I wrote you by the ship Competitor. A copy of our D. minutes not having been then ready, it is forwarded by this opportunity. I enclose for the Committee's satisfaction a certificate from Dr. Bland, who attends on Mr. Leigh in his illness. I am happy to say that in the course of the few last days there appears a manifest change in Mr. Leigh, which promises recovery. I have drawn a bill order of Messrs. Carvosso, Lawry, and Mansfield, £300, towards the liquidation of the debt on Macquarie Street chapel. This will reduce the £1,000 kindly lent us by the Committee to £700. . . . which sum in due time we hope to pay.

Mr. Leigh's illness.

New Zealand mission will cost £500 per annum.

By this opportunity you will receive a clear account of the various articles taken by Mr. White to the New Zealand mission. This supply is for a full year. Mr. Leigh authorizes me to inform the Committee that the New Zealand mission cannot be carried on with that energy likely to secure success for less than £500 . . . pr. annum. I hope the Committee will approve of the way in which the breth'n on this mission are stationed. We have done what we could, and acted for the best.

Revolutions among the preachers here, to avoid expence, should not without good cause be more frequent than two years, particularly with respect to Hobart Town. I wish for a word from the Committee as my authority against unnecessary changes.

Thank God we are well, and, I may venture to say, in a general way doing well. A revival in the Sidney Ct. I trust is near. O help us by your prayers. With my dutiful respects to the Committee.

I remain, &amp;c.,

The Revd. R. Watson.

GEO. ERSKINE.

[Church Missionary Society.

REV. S. MARSDEN TO REV. J. PRATT.

Feb. 21.

Seminary to be built at Parramatta.

REV. D. AND DEAR SIR,— Parramatta, Feby. 21st, 1824.

Changed plan of building it in the interior.

I have taken the liberty to forward to you a plan of the seminary I propose to build at Parramatta for the instruction of the New Zealand youths and the missionaries' children. When I wrote to you I mentioned in a former letter that I purposed to purchase a piece of land in the interior, and to erect a seminary upon it. Since that time I have considered the subject more maturely, which has induced me to alter my views. I have no person at present to take charge of the institution in



whom I can place confidence. For that reason the seminary would be too far from my observation. The children could not attend upon the public ordinance of religion on the Sabbath. In time of sickness there would be no medical aid near. The Governor was kind enough, when I spoke to His Excellency on the subject, to offer me an acre of ground near my own house to build upon. I thought that might answer, but upon further consideration there were serious objections to this situation. The land was bad, there was no water near, and some other objections. I have fixed upon a situation where the land is good, water in great plenty, and other local advantages. I purchased this land some years ago; it is in sight of my own house, a little distance from the town. When the seminary is built, if it is found to answer I will make over to the Society as many acres as may be deemed necessary, so that the whole may become the property of the Society should the Committee approve of it hereafter. I have little doubt but it will answer. I purpose to have the New Zealand youths taught shoe-making, tailoring, weaving, flax-dressing, and spinning, with gardening and farming, &c., &c. The buildings will be of free stone. I have not planed large and extensive buildings: these will be sufficient to make a trial with. Should any unforeseen circumstances prevent the accomplishment of the object in view, the loss to the Society will not be much. The buildings will be valuable, and the land will always be worth what it is now, and the Society need not pay for it until the institution is finally established. If the chiefs' sons are educated in this seminary along with the children of the missionaries they will form attachments, and the work of the mission will be much promoted thereby. I have not got the estimate of the expense of these buildings; but I should apprehend £400 will go very far towards completing them, tho' labour is high in the colony. I shall consider myself responsible for all expenses until approved by the Committee. I hope to have the whole completed before I hear again from you upon this subject. The workmen are now at work, and will continue until it is finished. I have six New Zealanders with me now who are much rejoiced to see the foundation marked out. They are all young men of family. The Revd. J. Butler has the charge of them, under my directions.

I remain, &c.,

Revd. J. Pratt.

SAMUEL MARSDEN.

BARON C. DE THIERRY TO EARL BATHURST.

30 Budge Row, Cannon Street, March 2, 1824.

THE BARON Charles de Thierry has the honor to present his respects to Earl Bathurst, and would be extremely obliged if

1824  
Feb. 21.

Subjects to be  
taught New  
Zealanders.

Intended for  
chiefs' sons and  
missionaries'  
children.

March 2.

1824  
March 2.  
Inquiries re  
passports, &c  
for New  
Zealand.

His Lordship would have the goodness to inform him whether labouring persons emigrating to New Zealand must be provided with a passport to enable them to proceed, and if any permission is necessary, that they may take out their tools. Should any formality be requisite Earl Bathurst will particularly oblige the Baron C. de Thierry by allowing it to be pointed out to him and also the means by which the difficulty may be obviated.

[New South Wales, Vol. 157.

BARON C. DE THIERRY TO EARL BATHURST.

75 Lower Grosvenor Street,  
Grosvenor Square, 9 March, 1824.

March 9.

Sends papers re  
colonization of  
New Zealand.

THE Baron Charles de Thierry has the honor to present his compliments to Mr. Horton, and having noticed in the *Times* paper of the 4th inst. Mr. Hume's extraordinary amalgamation of "Poyais" with "New Zealand" (as if they belonged to each other), he takes the liberty to send him such papers as will give him every information on the subject of the colony now raising, in addition to the letters which he has from time to time had the honour to address to Earl Bathurst. The Baron C. de Thierry will court every opportunity of affording His Majesty's Govt. any further information which may be desired, and he sincerely hopes that if the subject is again started in the House of Commons Mr. Horton will do him at least the justice to state that the Baron C. de Thierry made known his views and intentions to Government long before he took upon himself to make them public.

The Right Honourable Mr. Horton, Under-Secy. of State for the Colnl. Dept., &c., &c.

[New South Wales, 13/3/24, Vol. 157.

March 13.

BARON C. DE THIERRY TO UNDER-SECRETARY HORTON.

Re escape of  
convicts to  
New Zealand.

THE Baron Charles de Thierry has the honor to present his compliments to Mr. Horton, and having been informed that some persons under Government have expressed fears that the convicts from New South Wales and Van Dieman's Land will be induced to escape to his colony at New Zealand, he begs to assure Mr. Horton and His M.'s Governnt. that so far from allowing it, he will instantly cause such convicts to be placed in safety and sent back by the first ship going to either of the above places.

This assurance the Baron C. de Thierry hopes will set at rest any doubts on the subject.

30 Budge Row, City, March 13, 1824.

1824  
March 13.

[Wesleyan Mission House.

THE REV. W. WHITE AND REV. N. TURNER TO SECRETARIES,  
WESLEYAN MISSIONARY SOCIETY.

Wesley Dale, Wangaroa, New Zealand,  
April 2, 1824.

April 2.

REV. AND DEAR FATHERS,—

\* \* \* \*

Before you will have received these communications of Brother Leigh's and Brother White's visit to the colony and of Brother White's return to New Zealand. He arrived here on Sunday, 22 February, after an absence of 15 weeks and two days. Brother Leigh remained in the colony, and was very ill when Brother White left, so that we do not expect that he will ever return to New Zealand. Indeed, it is the opinion of all who know Mr. L. and who know New Zealand that Brother Leigh is not at all fitted for usefulness in this land, and we therefore most earnestly intreat you to send us a zealous, active, experienced, and prudent superintendent, and if possible a person will acquainted with the principles of language, and not forgetting his constitution. . . .

Leigh unsuited  
to missionary  
work in New  
Zealand.

W. WHITE.

N. TURNER.

Addressed to the Secretaries of the Wesleyan Missionary Society.

[New South Wales, Vol. 157.

BARON C. DE THIERRY TO EARL BATHURST.

MY LORD,— 30 Budge Row, 21st April, 1824.

April 21.

After the nature of the answers to the letters which I have had the honour at various times to address to Your Lordship, I would not again intrude upon your time respecting the Islands of New Zealand if it were not that I claim an act of justice from His Majesty's Government, to obtain which I cannot better address myself than to Your Lordship, whose impartiality and justice are so well known.

Seeks justice  
from Govern-  
ment.

The act of justice which I plead for is, that should any privileges be granted to any individual in New Zealand that His Majesty's Government will bear in mind that I was the first to seek their assistance, and the first to set on foot the colonization of New Zealand. I should not therefore be the last to be listened to with a favourable ear.

1824

April 21.

Captain Stewart's request for grant of Stewart island.

He is a deserter from the Navy.

A Captain Stewart, of the whale trade, is to wait upon Your Lordship to request that Government will grant him the island which bears his name, on the southern extremity of New Zealand. I will not enter into any length on the hostile tendency of the step towards myself, and will confine myself to two facts—the one, that he deserted from His Majesty's Royal Navy, and only dared return to England on the general pardon some years back; and the other, that he has deserted me, who had employed him, not knowing his former offence.

I write not to you, my Lord, as an informer, but simply that Your Lordship may be enabled to draw a line between an aspirant who deserted the service of his King and a claimant who has served him faithfully and will ever be at his disposal.

I have, &c.,

C. DE THIERRY.

P.S. After deserting H.M.'s service Mr. Stewart was prize-master on board a privateer.

[Church Missionary House.

(The *Missionary Register* for April, 1824.)

LINES ON NEW ZEALAND, BY WINTHROP MACKWORTH PRAED, ESQ., OF TRINITY COLLEGE, CAMBRIDGE.

\* \* \* \*

The poet pays a just tribute in the following beautiful lines to that unwearied friend of New Zealand whose benevolent visits to its shores we have repeatedly recorded :—

But not thy death shall mar the gracious plan,  
Nor check the task thy pious toil began ;  
O'er the wide waters of the bounding main  
The Book of Life must win its way again,  
And, in the regions by thy fate endeared,  
The cross be lifted and the altar reared.  
With furrowed brow and cheek serenely fair  
The calm wind wandering o'er his silver hair,  
His arm uplifted, and his moistened eye  
Fixed in deep rapture on the golden sky—  
Upon the shore, through many a billow driven,  
He kneels at last, the Messenger of Heaven !  
Long years, that rank the mighty with the weak,  
Have dimmed the flush upon his faded cheek ;  
And many a dew, and many a noxious damp.  
The daily labour, and the nightly lamp  
Have reft away, for ever reft, from him  
The liquid accent and the buoyant limb :



Yet still within him aspirations swell  
 Which time corrupts not, sorrow cannot quell;  
 The changeless zeal, which on, from land to land,  
 Speeds the faint foot, and nerves the withered hand,  
 And the mild Charity, which, day by day,  
 Weeps every wound and every stain away,  
 Rears the young bud on every blighted stem,  
 And longs to comfort where she must condemn.  
 With these, through storms and bitterness and wrath,  
 In peace and power he holds his onward path,  
 Curbs the fierce soul, and sheathes the murderous steel,  
 And calms the passions he hath ceased to feel.  
 Yes! he hath triumphed! while his lips relate  
 The sacred story of his Saviour's fate,  
 While to the search of that tumultuous horde  
 He opens wide the Everlasting Word,  
 And bids the soul drink deep of wisdom there,  
 In fond devotion and in fervent prayer;  
 In speechless awe the wonder-stricken throng  
 Check their rude feasting and their barbarous song.  
 Around his steps the gathering myriads crowd,  
 The chief, the slave, the timid, and the proud,  
 Of various features, and of various dress,  
 Like their own forest-leaves, confused and numberless.

\*

\*

\*

\*

[Church Missionary House.

REV. S. MARSDEN TO REV. J. PRATT.

DEAR SIR,—

Parramatta, June 4th, 1824.

June 4.

In reply to your request for my opinion relative to the formation of a colony by Col Nicholls in New Zealand, there will be some difficulties to meet, according to my judgment, of a serious nature. The greatest obstacle will be the government of the Europeans. By what authority can they be kept in subordination there? If the Europeans commit any act of violence, such as violating the wives of the natives, striking the natives, taking any of their property by force, firing upon them with muskets, if only with powder, or any other wanton act, such conduct might prove fatal to the whole of the Europeans. If a body of good men were to sit down as colonists, at the River Thames, or perhaps more to the southward, they would prove a great blessing to the island. I am at a loss to know what kind of effective government they can have in New Zealand. They cannot establish a colony there without penal and civil laws. Crimes will be committed, both by the Europeans and the natives,

(Obstacles to  
forming settle-  
ment in New  
Zealand.

Difficulty of  
governing  
Europeans.

1824

June 4.

Some form of  
government  
would be  
necessary.

New Zealanders  
desire a king.

Colony cannot  
be formed with-  
out a Govern-  
ment also.

and if these crimes cannot be punished the colony would be soon overturned. As a missionary alone I could live in great safety, but a colony would not be safe unless established under some regular form of government. From the errors and misconduct of some in the mission, I have often been astonished that the missionaries have not been murdered. The natives have shewn great forbearance on many occasions, and if a few missionaries cannot be kept in subjection without a Government, it will be difficult to manage a greater number of different characters. At the mouth of the fresh water of the River Thames, about 20 miles perhaps from the sea, there is a very fine situation for a colony—could be easily fortified, and would be a very commanding post. I have little doubt but the ground might be purchased. The New Zealanders themselves are very sensible of the want of a protecting Government, and would rejoice if anything could be done to prevent the strong from crushing the weak. The New Zealanders want a head. I had many conversations with the chiefs on this subject when I was in the island last year. They told me no chief would be willing to give up his authority to another, and they could not agree amongst themselves to nominate any one chief as king. I am afraid this desirable object will never be effected by persuasive means. If it is done, it most probably will be done by force. Shunghee has conquered many tribes, to the extent of more than two hundred miles, but he has no means of retaining his conquests. Shunghee was wont to tell me the conquered tribes would behave very well while he was in their districts, but when he left them they respected him no longer. He had not the means of leaving a force to keep them in subjection. If the chiefs could be brought to act together, under some regular Government, much might be done. They would sometimes say, if King George would send them a king they would attend to him. Shunghee had impressed the natives with a very great idea of the power of King George—he used to tell the chiefs that if King George was to go to war with them there would be only one battle, and New Zealand would be conquered. Many of the chiefs are very proud men, and afraid of parting with any of their consequence. The late Act of Parliament, authorizing the Courts of justice in N. S. Wales to punish offences committed in New Zealand, would be favourable to the establishment of a colony, as the natives would know that they would obtain protection from the Government here. If an effective Government can be established in New Zealand to punish crime, a colony may be established, and benefit the natives, but if an effective Government cannot be established, neither can a colony, in my judgment, without much danger. Before any colony is attempted, the island

should be more surveyed. We know little of it yet, and there may be many situations more suitable for a colony than any we have seen. As I am wholly ignorant of the views of Lieut.-Col. N., and upon what plan he proposes to form his colony, I cannot say more upon the subject. It had been communicated to me that Lieut.-Col. N. had such an intention before I received your letter, but nothing more stated.

1824  
June 4.

I remain, &c.,

Rev'd. J. Pratt.

SAMUEL MARSDEN

[New South Wales, Vol. 153.]

UNDER-SECRETARY CROKER TO UNDER-SECRETARY HORTON.

SIR,—

Admiralty Office, 24th July, 1824.

July 24.

My Lords Commissioners of the Admiralty having referred your letter of the 19th instant, with its enclosures (relative to an enquiry which took place in the month of December, 1823, in the Bay of Islands, New Zealand, as to the cause of the death of Thomas Perryman, a seaman belonging to the ship Rochester, Worth, master), to Mr. Bicknell, their Lordship's solicitor, I have it in command to send you herewith a copy of Mr. Bicknell's report on this case, and to request that you will lay the same before Earl Bathurst for His Lordship's information.

Enquiry into  
death of  
seaman.

I am, &c.,

J. W. CROKER.

R. Wilmot Horton, Esq., Downing Street.

[Wesleyan Mission House.]

REV. N. TURNER TO REV. J. ETCHHELLS.

Wesley Dale, Wangaroa, New Zealand,

REV. AND DR. SIR,—

Sep. 30th, 1824.

Sept. 30.

\* \* \* \* \*  
On the 30th April, 1823, we left Hobart Town for Port Jackson, where we waited about eight weeks before we could obtain a passage for the place of our destination, and after much difficulty, expence, and exercise, on the 15th August, '23, we arrived safe at our destination, where we found our brethren Leigh and White, and when we saw them "we thanked God and took courage." Our brethren had been here about 8 weeks, and had just got a rush hut built into which to receive us. . . .

Arrived at  
New Zealand,  
15th August,  
1823.

Deplorable indeed is the condition of this people in every sense of the word. The words of the Apostle, "without God and without hope in the world," were never more applicable to any people than to the New Zealanders. Of the one true and living God they have not the most distant idea; but of imaginary deities they have numbers—of birds, reptiles, and fishes. But

1824  
Sept. 30.  
Deities of the  
natives.

Cannibals are  
considered  
deities.

Their ideas of  
stars and the  
future state.

Moral character  
very debased.

Temporal  
state—  
huts, food, &c.

their greatest deities are the souls of their departed relations, of whom they feel the most superstitious dread. To them they always pray before they go to war, and entreat them to impart their anger to them, to enable them to fight and conquer their enemies. Those that fall in war are roasted and eaten by the victorious party; the captured are taken for slaves, and it is no uncommon thing for these to be butchered and eaten, to gratify the diabolical passions of their ungodly masters, or to appease the anger of some departed relative, who they fear will come and destroy them, if his anger be not appeased. They that have eaten human flesh are considered as deities even while they are alive, and by the name of Atua (god) they are often addressed, and even the body itself, when the spirit is fled, is called a [torn out] Atua, so that according to their view they are themselves deified body and soul, dead and alive. When any are afflicted among them, they say, the Atua has got within and is eating them. And in this way, according to their view, all their affliction and death is brought about. When they die they tell us that their left eye becomes a star. The bright ones are those of their great men, the dim ones those of their slaves. They have an idea of a future state, but not of rewards and punishments for moral actions; they tell us they all go to one place called Raing or Po, there to feast on sweet potatoes, &c., &c. Of pure spiritual pleasures they have no conception; their heaven is all in carnal delights. Their moral character is such as might naturally be expected from a mind so dark and polluted. I may venture to affirm there is no crime of which they are capable of which they are not guilty. Reason is completely dethroned, and the reins of government are given up to the passions altogether, and by these they are carried to the greatest extremes. Their temporal condition is equally bad; they are filthy in the extreme, never wash themselves, but as often as they can besmear themselves with red ochre and oil, which in the hot weather makes them very offensive. Many of them literally swarm with vermin. Their huts in general are nothing better than poor people's pigsties in England—are much the same heighth and size, and into them they creep through a little hole at one end. They have neither furniture nor cooking utensils, and the poor filthy mats that serve them for cloths by day serve them for bedding by night. Their food in winter consists chiefly of fish and fern root; in summer they have potatoes, sweet and common. They have many pigs among them, but they are principally reserved to trade with whalers, for muskets and powder, things of great value to them. . . .

I remain, &c.,

To the Rev. J. Etchells.

NATHL. TURNER.



[Church Missionary House.

REV. S. MARSDEN TO REV. J. PRATT.

1824  
Nov. 4.

[Extracts.]

REV. AND DEAR SIR,—

Sydney, 4th Nov., 1824.

I have drawn upon you for supplies sent to New Zealand to the amount of £406 12s. 6d. sterg. At the end of December you shall have a complete statement of the accounts up to that period. You will have seen Barron Field, Esq., who arrived in England 20th of June, and from him you would receive all my documents and other information. I have little doubt but things will go on much better in New Zealand, and that the mission will succeed in the end. I am getting on with the seminary very fast; I have 6 youths with me at present, who improve well, and behave well. I had ten, but four are returned to New Zealand. In about one month or less I shall have the N. Zealanders in the new building, as there will be enough to accommodate them, with the schoolmaster. A man and his wife who is a weaver, and can instruct them in all the branches of the flax business, is now living in the school untill the other parts of the building are completed. When I went to New Zealand I took over 1 horse and 2 mares; all young: one mare got into swamp and died. The entire horse and mare were very fine. I directed Mr. Davis to take charge of them for the Society, and use them in agriculture. The sum I charge for them is £80, if the Society take them.

Baron Field  
arrived in  
England, June  
20, 1823.Seminary pro-  
gressing fast.

I am, &amp;c.,

SAML. MARSDEN.

I have written my letter in great haste. You perhaps will not understand what I have said about the horse and mare. I wish them now to become the Society's property. The value of them at this time in the colony would be £100 or upwards. The one that unfortunately died I must bear the loss of; the two that are living I charge £80 for, should the Society take them; if not, they will remain there my property. Having stated the above, you will understand what I mean.

Offers to sell  
horses to Church  
Missionary  
Society.

Rev. J. Pratt.

[Wesleyan Mission House.

REV. D. TYERMAN, ETC., TO REV. G. ERSKINE AND REV. S. LEIGH.

Sydney, Novr. 5th, 1824.

Nov. 5.

DEAR AND ESTEEMED XTIAN FRIENDS AND BRETHREN,—

When we had the pleasure of seeing our mutual friends your worthy missionary brethren at New Zealand, we intimated our intention to write to the Secretary of your Society at Home, hoping that it might afford some gratification to him and the

Visited  
brethren at  
New Zealand.

1824  
Nov. 5.

Society to have our views of that interesting mission. But as you are in immediate communication with your own Society, we have thought it preferable to write a few lines to you, leaving you at full liberty to make what use of them you think proper.

Formed high  
opinions of  
Messrs. Turner  
and White.

Also of Messrs.  
Hobbs and  
Stack.

The mission-  
aries should  
marry.

Though the time we spent with your friends at Wangaroa was short, it was to ourselves truly pleasant and highly interesting, and animated us with the lively hope that God is about to do some great things for the people among whom they dwell. We formed a high opinion of the piety, the good sense, and the missionary talents of the Rev. Mr. Turner and his coadjutor in office the Rev. Mr. White, and also of Mrs. Turner. They appeared to us well chosen for such an undertaking. We also think highly of their two young friends and fellow-labourers, Messrs. Hobbs and Stack, who seem to be pious and diligent young men of ingenious minds, and well adapted to great usefulness in various ways, and it is our opinion that it is highly advisable that they be recommended to marry; and should they make choice of women of piety and appropriate talents, that they should be fully identified with the mission as preachers of the Gospel. We are also fully convinced that Mr. White should be advised to marry as soon as possible, persuaded to no young man should be sent into the missionary field single, nor suffered to remain there without a wife. The ages of all these young men are also appropriate, for the difficulties of acquiring a foreign language so as to preach with acceptance are so great that they are seldom conquered after the age of three or four and twenty. All our societies have fallen into the error of sending men to missionary work too far advanced in life; but we hope that past experience will teach them all useful lessons to guide their future operations. We think it much better, should not persons be at hand of suitable talents, and age, and connexions, to defer the commencement of a mission, or sending it fresh supplies of labourers, rather than risk its success by employing unsuitable persons.

They are  
making progress  
in language.

Most of your friends were doing well at the language, and appeared to us to have made considerable progress; and we doubt not that they will soon acquire it so as to preach to the New Zealanders in their own tongue the wonderful work of God. We presented them with several books in the Tahitian language, with the hope that they would find them of essential service, as the New Zealand language is radically the same.

Missionary  
buildings.

Your worthy friends had built themselves a comfortable house, which possesses those characters of neatness and good style which are desirable among a heathen people; and its surrounding accompaniments of a good garden, outhouses, &c., are all highly appropriate. They have erected two school-

1824  
Nov. 5.

houses also which answer the purposes of chapels, in different parts of the settlement, and they appear to be possessed of the esteem and confidence of the natives among whom they dwell, and from whom they had no apprehension of danger. They appear to have established themselves in their good opinion, and to have made some progress in removing their pagan superstitions, and gaining their attention to the truths of the Gospel. We confidently anticipate their ultimate success.

In the Bay of Wangaroa there is an island which contains a numerous tribe, who, we believe, are desirous of having missionaries, and it appears to us most highly important that some of your friends should be placed there. This island is, in fact, the key of the harbour; and while the desire of the chief and people to have missionaries among them will justify the hope of both their security and of their success in preaching the Gospel, their residence on this island would prevent the recurrence of those misunderstandings with foreigners when they come into the harbour, to one of which we ourselves had nearly fallen a sacrifice. We have already written to your friends to advise them that so soon as their confidence of their full security in their present situation will justify it, two of their party should remain, and the others to go and to settle on this island. But if they cannot separate, we think it very advisable that the Society at Home should send out two other young men with their wives to occupy this very interesting spot, where we think missionaries may reside in full security.

The kind and friendly attentions of all your friends at Wangaroa to us excite in our minds the liveliest feelings of gratitude and esteem; and it is our fervent prayer that the Great Head of the Church may constantly preserve and greatly bless them, and give them soon to see the pleasure of the Lord prospering in their hands.

We are, &c.,

DANIEL TYERMAN.

GEORGE BENNET.

P.S.—Were some of your pious and worthy friends in England to send to your good missionaries in New Zealand some cotton prints of lively and attractive colours they would be very useful both for the purchasing of such things as they want and also as presents to the chiefs. This might excite among them a desire for better and more decent clothing, and secure to your friends the greater influence. We offer an apology for presuming to give our advice in a case where it is not immediately our duty; but feeling the cause in which you have embarked and our own to be the same, we are happy to offer any hint that may be useful; and should we have taken a liberty, we rely on your kindness to be forgiven.

An island in the  
Bay of  
Wangaroa.

Presents  
suitable for  
missionaries.

1825

March 29.

[New South Wales, Vol. 167.]

EARL BATHURST TO E. LITTLETON.

Stanhope Street, 29th March, 1825.

DEAR MR. LITTLETON,—

His commercial  
projects.

On thinking over what passed yesterday, when I had the honor of seeing you and Mr. Lambton, I think it desirable to enter into an explanation with regard to some particulars. I understood you to say that your intentions were purely commercial—that you disclaimed military occupation and projects of conquest; but afterwards one of you (if I recollect right Mr. Lambton) observed that the interests of New South Wales might possibly be compromised by a demand being made upon the Government for military assistance in the event of the natives not allowing you peaceable possession. Now if all which you meant by this is that should the natives not allow you to carry on your commercial concerns you will apply to the military to enable you to withdraw in safety, I see no objection to the troops being so employed; but if you consider the Government pledged to protect you against the natives, and to employ the military to enforce your occupation of the territory, it appears to me that the character of your enterprise will be changed—at any rate, I ought to apprise you that I am by no means prepared to give you assurances of military support for such objects, and I should be very sorry to have encouraged you in this undertaking by such a misapprehension of what passed yesterday.

Employment of  
military.

I have, &amp;c.,

BATHURST.

[New South Wales, Vol 167.]

E. J. LITTLETON TO EARL BATHURST.

March 30.

Intentions in  
New Zealand  
purely  
commercial.

MY DEAR LORD,— Portman Square, 30th March, 1825.

I have shewn your letter to Mr. Lambton. He concurs with me in begging to assure Your Lordship that we disclaim all projects of conquest in New Zealand, our intentions being purely commercial. And we fully admit the reason and propriety of all the remarks contained in Your Lordship's letter.

I have, &amp;c.,

The Earl Bathurst, &amp;c., &amp;c.

E. J. LITTLETON.

April 5.

[Wesleyan Mission House.]

REV. N. TURNER TO SECRETARY, WESLEYAN SOCIETY.

Kiddie Kiddie, New Zealand, April 5th, 1825.

REV. AND DEAR FATHERS,—

Our brethren of the Church Missionary Society, who have just held their quarterly meeting here, at which meeting



I read them the account transmitted to you in my letter of March the 25th, the contents of which they approve, but think that the case of the death of George's father ought to be more fully explained, in order that the subject may appear in its proper light. He was not killed in the act of taking the Boyd, as might be supposed from the manner in which I have stated the subject. After the vessel was taken, and the captain and crew murdered, the natives got the powder-casks up into the cabin, and having exposed the powder, they began to try the musketts over the same, when it took fire, and blew up eight of them, amongst whom was Pepe, the father of George, and in this way he came by his death, when no European was near him. And for this circumstance in connection with the death of George (in case of his death), his will is that our property, if not our lives, are to fall into the hands of the natives.

1825  
April 5.  
Death of Pepe,  
George's father.

Caused by  
explosion of  
powder.

From a serious review of the whole affair, it still remains the unanimous opinion of our friends that we ought not to remain at Wangaroa.

Things are now again wearing a more gloomy aspect, and I fear we shall all have to quit our post, and that very soon.

Serious  
situation of  
missionaries.

In great haste.

I remain, &c.,

NATHL. TURNER.

To the Secretaries of the Wesleyan Missionary Society, 77  
Hatton Garden, London.

CAPTAIN REYNOLDS TO EARL BATHURST.

*New Zealanders.*

MY LORD,—

Liverpool, April 18th, 1825.

April 18.

The purport of this is to inform you more particularly about Tippahe Cupa, a chief of New Zealand who came to England in the *Urania*, under my command, from that country. As I was passing through Cooks Straights on the 26th February, 1824. I was becalmed about 5 or 6 miles from the land, when I perceived three canoes, full of savages, coming towards the ship. I then prepared the ship ready for action. The grand war-canoe then came within hale, and by motions I made them understand to keep off. This chief (Tippahe Cupa) shewed every sign of peace, and I perceived shortly after they were all peaceably inclined.

New Zealand  
chief comes to  
England.

Canoes come  
alongside.

This chief in his great war-canoe, came close alongside, which I could not prevent unless I had fired into them; and if I had, a great deal of mischief might have been done. The man jumped on board naked (except a matt over his body,

Chief boards  
" *Urania* "   
peaceably.

|                                 |  |
|---------------------------------|--|
| 1825<br>April 18.<br>—          | leaving the remainder of his dress in the canoe), and made signs for arms, and I gave him to understand that I had none to give him, and then he gave me to understand that he would stay on board, and go to Europe, and see King George, which words he pronounced plain enough to be understood. I then ordered him to go into his canoe again, but he had ordered her off, and would not allow her to come near the ship. I attempted to heave him overboard, so as the canoes might pick him up. But he, perceiving my design, put it out of my power. A breeze at that time springing up, he ordered all the canoes to leave the ship and return to the shore, and told them he was going to Europe, and that he would soon return again (as he hath told me since). The next day I attempted to put him on shore near the eastern mouth of Cooks Streights, and in so doing I only just escaped loosing the ship; therefore I was obliged, much against my inclination, but to his satisfaction, to make sail and leave the island for my port of destination, Lima. I might perhaps have kept the canoes off if I had fired into them, but I did not wish to commence hostilities, for the good of England at large, having a desire that England might stand high in their ideas, and likewise that English ships hereafter might find protection in case of distress in some of the fine harbours that lye open to receive ships of any size sailing in these seas. And I am certain that if this man gets out again safe (as he is the first chief from the south end of the Island of New Zealand that ever came to England), and get supplied with all the necessary articles that he wants, it will be the saving of many men's lives should they ever visit these parts, or caught in a gale of wind and be obliged to run for a harbour in that part of the island. This man, when he came on board, was a complete savage; but I have taken a great deal of pains with him to civilize him, for when I was in Lima he lived with me on shore, where ever I went he went with me, he lived on shore with me at Monte Vedio and Buenos Ayres, and all the time he was on board he lived at my table, and I cloathed him, and hath kept him cloathed in European fashion ever since he came under my care. He has been a very heavy expence to me these last 13 months, and I could not help myself in no way, but by firing into their canoes, which I would not do, for the good of others who might sail in those seas. The man is now cevelized, and is become quite tractable, and his partiality for me is great. I told him the other day that Mr. Huskinson had wrote to G. B. Brown, Esq., residing here, to take care of him, and he said that if he was seperated from me before he got a passage out again he would put an end to his existance, which I verily believe he would. His affection for me is very great. Since I arrived in England |
| Wished to see King George.      |  |
| Will not return to New Zealand. |  |
| "Urania" sailed for Lima.       |  |
| Protection for English ships.   |  |
| Efforts to civilise chief.      |  |
| Great care and expense.         |  |

His New Zealand Majesty hath been very ill. I have had doctors attending him, and I have had him vaccinated for the cow-pox, for fear of his catching that dreadful complaint the small pox. He is now perfectly recovered, and in a good state of health, and living with me. I therefore hope, under all these circumstances, that Government will remunerate me for the very heavy expence that I have unavoidably been at since he came under my care, and as he is so much attached to me, and I feeling an affectionate regard for him during his stay in this country, which would contribute much to his happiness and comfort, for I have learnt a little of his language, and without me he would be destitute and miserable, and as I have before said, I could not be answerable for the consequences of his being separated from me at this time. But there would be no difficulty in our separation on his going on shipboard and finally leaving me for his own country. He can therefore live with me until an opportunity offers, of getting him a passage from hence, or if an opportunity offers sooner from London I can come up with him and see him take his departure from thence. He has made no progress in the English language, altho' when he first came on board he distinctly mentioned King George and Europe. The district where he presides as chief is on the south end of the North Island of New Zealand, near Entry Island, Cooks Streights.

1825

April 18.

Attention to his health.

Hopes for remuneration.

Mutual affection.

Will keep him until departure.

His special domain.

I am, &amp;c.,

R. K. REYNOLDS,

Commander Ship Urania,

Care of G. B. Brown, Esq., Merchant, Water Street, Liverpool.

---

#### UNDER-SECRETARY HORTON TO SECRETARY HARRISON.

SIR,—

Downing Street, 6th May, 1825.

May 6.

I am directed by Earl Bathurst to transmit to you, for the information of the Lords Commissioners of the Treasury, the enclosed copy of a letter from a person of the name of Reynolds, commanding the ship Urania, lately arrived from New Zealand, stating the circumstances under which he had brought to England a chief of that island; and I am to request that you will submit to their Lordships Lord Bathurst's recommendation that, as Capt. Reynolds appears to have used every means in his power save that of absolute force to induce the chief to return on shore, he should receive an allowance for his maintenance at the rate of a sovereign a day from the date of the ship's arrival at Liverpool until a passage can be provided for

Captain R. Reynolds to receive £1 per day for maintenance of New Zealand chief.

1825  
May 6.

him to his own country, which the Commissioners of the Navy have been directed to do by the earliest opportunity.

I am, &c.,

R. W. HORTON.

[New South Wales, Vol. 165.

G. HARRISON, UNDER-SECRETARY, TO R. W. HORTON, Esq.

May 30.

SIR,— Treasury Chambers, 30th May, 1825.

Payment for  
New Zealand  
chief.

Having laid before the Lords Commissioners of His Majesty's Treasury your letters of the 6th and 25th inst., relative to the payment of an allowance to Captain Reynolds, of the ship *Urania*, for the maintenance of a New Zealand chief whom he had brought with him to this country, I have it in command to acquaint you, for the information of Earl Bathurst, that my Lords have directed Mr. Hill to pay to Captain Reynolds the sum of one hundred pounds on account of such expenses, as recommended.

£100 to Captain  
Reynolds.

I am, &c.,

GEO. HARRISON.

R. Wilmot Horton, Esq., &c., &c.

[New South Wales, Vol. 165.

NAVY COMMISSIONERS TO UNDER-SECRETARY HORTON.

June 14.

SIR,— Navy Office, 14th June, 1825.

Tippahee may  
embark on  
"Henry  
Porcher."

With reference to your letter of the 20th ultimo, and its enclosure, we acquaint you, for the information of Earl Bathurst, that Tippahee, a New Zealand chief, may embark on board the *Henry Porcher*, convict ship, at Deptford on the 25th instant for a passage to New South Wales, or he may join the ship on her arrival at Dublin if it be desired by His Lordship, respecting which we request to be favored with your answer.

We are, &c.,

RT. SEPPING.

R. G. MIDDLETON.

J. BOWEN.

R. Wilmot Horton, Esq.

[Colonial Office—New South Wales Domestic, Vol. 14.

SECRETARY HORTON TO CAPTAIN R. H. REYNOLDS.

June 18.

SIR,— Downing Street, 18th June, 1825.

I am directed by Earl Bathurst to inform you that, by information received on the 14th instant from the Navy Office,



a passage can be provided for Tippahee, the New Zealand chief, on board the *Henry Porcher*, convict ship, for New South Wales, if he is sufficiently recovered in health to undertake the voyage, of which I request you will be so good as to inform me.

The ship will be ready to receive passengers on the 25th instant, at Deptford.

I have, &c.,

R. W. HORTON.

R. H. Reynolds, Water Street, Liverpool.

NOTE.—Captain Reynolds was master of the ship *Urania*, in which Tippahee was conveyed to England, and on board of which he remained from the date of her arrival at Liverpool (13th Feby., 1825).

1825

June 18.

Passage for  
New Zealand  
chief.

#### CAPTAIN REYNOLDS TO UNDER-SECRETARY HORTON.

SIR,—

Liverpool, June 21st, 1825.

June 21.

I here acknowledge the receipt of your letter dated the 18th inst., in which I notice what you say concerning the *Henry Porcher* being ready to receive passengers on the 25th inst. With respt. to Tippahe Cupa (the New Zealand chief), he is not yet recovered from the effects of his late illness to make it safe for him to travel. Since I was in London he has had a spitting of blood and the chicken poc, and is yet in a very weak state. The Doctor (Dr. Traill) has given him leave to walk out a little, and I hope now he will soon recover.

New Zealand  
chief too ill to  
travel.

I have, &c.,

Wilmot Horton, Esqr.

R. K. REYNOLDS.

[New South Wales, Vol. 166.

#### JOHN GLADSTONE TO UNDER-SECRETARY HORTON.

MY DEAR SIR,—

Gloster, 30th June, 1825.

June 30.

The object of this note is to introduce Captain Reynolds, with his protegee Tippahe Cupa, the New Zealand chief, with whose history you are already fully and well acquainted. One of his great objects and causes of an anxiety to visit England was to see His Majesty the King. I hope it may not be difficult to gratify him in this respect.

Introduce  
Captain  
Reynolds with  
New Zealand  
chief.

As the New Zealand Commercial Company are now preparing a ship to sail soon for New Zealand, I should suppose it would be a very favorable opportunity for sending the chief home, as he is desirous to return. I understand his part of the island abounds in flax and fine mast timbers, which may afford a further inducement to them. Perhaps you will take the trouble to send to Mr. Lyall, or mention the matter to him. If this plan

New Zealand  
Company  
sending ship  
there.

1825  
June 30.  
—  
Hopes chief  
taken home.

should not be agreeable to them, and that you send him by the way of Port Jackson, I hope you will be good enough to instruct the Governor how he is to be forwarded from thence to New Zealand, as I am informed the opportunities are otherwise rare and uncertain.

Believe, &c.,

JOHN GLADSTONE.

R. Wilmot Horton, Esq., &c., &c.

And Captain  
Reynolds  
reimbursed.

Captain Reynolds has been put to a heavy expence in various ways on the chief's account. I hope means may be found by the Government to indemnify him. How this may best be done you know much better than I do.—J. G.

July 18.

[Newspaper Extract.—*Glasgow Herald*, July 18th, 1825.]

[British Museum.

### SOUTH SEAS.

(From the *Missionary Chronicle* for July.)

Tyerman and  
Bennet.

*Extract of a Letter from Messrs. Tyerman and Bennet, Deputation from the Society to the South Sea Islands, &c., containing a Narrative of their Voyage from the Islands to the Colony of New South Wales, dated Sydney, 12th Nov., 1824, addressed to the Secretary.*

Made for New  
Zealand.

We left Bartonga on the evening of the 19th, and having completed our work in these seas, we stood for New Zealand. We had to encounter the most tempestuous and distressing weather and adverse winds; and did not make New Zealand till the 9th of July, off the Bay of Islands, into which we hoped to enter next morning; but a heavy gale blowing from that bay rendered it impossible to reach it, and the captain resolved to abandon the hope of reaching the shore, and to proceed on his voyage for the colony; but here the winds opposed us again, and after beating about off the northern extremity of that country for nearly a week, and finding we could make no head against contrary winds, and becoming short of water, fire-wood, vegetables, &c., we determined to put into some port in New Zealand, and reach the Harbour of Whangarooa on the 15th, where we came to an anchor with the intention of spending a week or ten days there. At the head of this beautiful and capacious bay the Wesleyans have established a mission, about twelve miles from the entrance of the harbour. Not knowing the perils which awaited us, we were apprehensive of no danger; having no means of defence, we took no precautions to guard against any attack. So soon as we came to an anchor several canoes came round, many natives came on board, and all behaved well, and left us at the setting of the sun. Early next

Anchored in  
Whangarooa  
Harbour.

morning a considerable number of canoes of great size, and containing multitudes of people surrounded us. Soon our main deck was crowded by men, women, and children, bringing with them various articles for sale ; and we were busy buying their curiosities, &c., when a scene of almost unparalleled horror immediately occurred. The captain had been informed that they were stealing whatever they could reach, and had broken open a trunk of clothes, and had taken most of them off ; he became indignant, and resolved to remove them all from the deck. In the confusion a native fell overboard into the sea, and the rest, supposing that he had been struck and injured, immediately fell upon us. Many of them had axes, and the rest armed themselves with billets of firewood ; the whole were armed in a few seconds ; the women and children were removed into the canoes, into which many of their men threw their mats, prepared for action, and commenced their war-songs, accompanying them with all their horrid gesticulations and grimaces. Their faces, rendered hideous by their tototoings, became by anger more hideous, and the whole had more the appearance of infernals than men. Our crew fled to the rigging, while we waited our doom on the quarter-deck. They surrounded us, placing themselves behind us, with their weapons uplifted, ready, as soon as the signal was made, to strike ; and we expected nothing else but to be killed, baked in their ovens, and eaten by these dreadful cannibals. They handled our persons, to see what sort of food we should be for them, and behaved in the most rude and insolent manner. At one moment the captain had four spears pointed at his breast. We used every effort to hide our fears, and prevent them from perceiving that we were apprehensive of danger. But this was impossible, for we were entirely in their hands. What aggravated our misery and apprehension was the recollection that the ship *Boyd*, Capt. Thompson, about fifteen years before, and in this very place where we were at anchor, had been cut off, the captain, crew, and passengers (in all nearly 100 persons) killed and eaten. The wreck of the vessel was within our view ; but we cried to the Lord in our distress, and He heard and delivered us. They were restrained by an invisible hand, while we remained in this condition of indescribable horror for about an hour and a half. At length our boat, which had been sent up to the missionary settlement the night before, hove in sight at the distance of about a mile. This threw a ray of hope over our desponding minds : and we waited its arrival with the greatest anxiety, but expected to be despatched before it could possibly reach us. But God was better than our fears. At length the boat came alongside, and we found to our inexpressible joy that she had brought

1825

July 18.

Deck crowded with natives.

Native overboard by accident. Crew, &c., attacked by natives.

Threatened with instant death.

" Boyd " cut off there, fifteen years before.

1825

July 18.

Mr. White  
(missionary)  
and George  
(native chief).

Deck cleared  
and peace  
restored.

Mr. White, one of the missionaries, and George, a native chief of great power and influence here. It was the very chief who instigated the cutting off the Boyd, but he was sent by a kind Providence to be our deliverer. They immediately came on deck. So soon as they had learnt what had happened Mr. White addressed the people, and George became highly indignant with them, and spoke to them with great vehemence on the evil of their conduct. He soon cleared the deck; the people fled to their canoes, and a good understanding was restored.

. . . . A few days ago a vessel arrived in this colony whose captain, with a boat's crew of six men, in another part of New Zealand, had been cut off and killed soon after the affair happened in Whangarooma which we have described. It is but just to say that we do not believe the people had any bad designs when they came on board, and that what happened arose from the accident of the man's having fallen overboard. By various presents we succeeded in detaining this chief on board the vessel so long as we remained in the harbour, as the only means of her safety.

#### CAPTAIN REYNOLDS TO UNDER-SECRETARY HAY.

4 Exmouth Street, Commercial Road,

Oct. 10th, 1825.

Oct. 10.

SIR,—

Chief returned  
to New  
Zealand.

I take the liberty of informing you (as also Earl Bathurst, per accompanying letter) that the New Zealand chief was taken on board His Majesty's hired ship *The Thames* on Thursday last, agreeable to directions forwarded me, and that he took with him a considerable quantity of wearing apparel, carpenters' tools, agricultural utensils, with sundry other articles necessary for his passage out and comfort when at New Zealand.

Visited public  
buildings, &c.

Since his arrival at Liverpool he has visited with me the principal manufactory's and public buildings in Liverpool, Birmingham, Gloucester, and London, and in so doing he took particular notice of the various scenes which claimed his attention.

Expenses  
during his visit.

I assure you the illness of the New Zealand chief and the expences I have been put to in attending him (independant of having necessarily been out of employ) have been very great.

Should you or His Lordship, therefore, think me worthy of any remuneration such will be thankfully received and acknowledged

By, sir, &c.,

R. K. REYNOLDS.

W. H. Hay, Esq., Under-Secretary of State, &c., &c.



[New South Wales, Vol. 168.]

CAPTAIN REYNOLDS TO EARL BATHURST.

1825

Oct. 10.

No. 4 Exmouth Street, Commercial Road,  
London, Oct. 10th, 1825.

MY LORD,—

I take the liberty of making known to Your Lordship that the New Zealand chief was taken on board His Majesty's hired ship *The Thames* on Thursday last, agreeable to directions forwarded me, and that he took with him a considerable quantity of wearing apparel, carpenters' tools, agricultural utensils, and sundry other articles necessary for his passage out, and which will be of the most essential service to him and his fellow countrymen at New Zealand, and will, I trust, tend much towards the civilization of that numerous body of savages, particularly as I have endeavoured to instill in the mind of the chief the importance and comfort of living peaceably when he reaches his native shores, and I have taught him to the utmost of my power the use of the various implements which accompany him.

Chief returns to  
New Zealand.With clothing  
and  
implements,  
&c.

By reference to my letter of the 19th March last to Your Lordship, stating the various circumstances attending the unavoidable boarding of the chief in Cooks Straights, New Zealand, it will appear he has been under my protection from the 26th Febr., 1824, and during such time he has been the subject of much affliction, particularly during his stay at Liverpool, where I was induced to intrude upon Your Lordship's attention and make known such event, and to trust an allowance would be made for his support during the time he should be in England.

Allowance  
requested  
during visit.

In answer to that application Your Lordship was kind enough (and for which I shall ever feel gratefull) to recommend to the Lords Commissioners of the Treasury that a sovereign a day should be allowed for his maintenance from the date of the arrival of the ship *Urania* at Liverpool untill a passage should be provided for his reconveyance to his own country.

£1 per day  
recommended.

In order that Your Lordship may be aware of the manner in which the time of the chief and myself had been occupied, I beg leave to say we have visited the principal manufactory's and public buildings in Liverpool, Birmingham, Gloucester, and London, and in so doing the chief took particular notice, and was much pleased with the various scenes which claimed his attention.

I beg to forward the accompanying account, which includes the sum allowed for the chief's maintenance, as also various items for wearing apparel and other necessities supplied to him

Forwards  
account.

1825  
Oct. 10.

prior to his departure, which I trust Your Lordship will deem expedient, and order the sums so expended to be re-embursed to

Yours, &c.,

R. K. REYNOLDS.

To the Right Honorable Earl Bathurst, &c., &c.

SECRETARY HAY TO SECRETARY HARRISON.

Oct. 14

SIR,—

Downing Street, 14th Oct., 1825.

Expenses of  
New Zealand  
chief's visit.

Chief supplied  
with clothes,  
tools, &c.

Pay Captain  
Reynolds £200.

With reference to Mr. Wilmot Horton's letter of the 6th May last, stating the arrangement which Lord Bathurst had recommended should be adopted for the purpose of remunerating Captain Reynolds for the expenses incurred by him in the support of the New Zealand chief during his residence in this country, I am directed by His Lordship to acquaint you that previously to his embarking for his native country the chief was supplied with various implements of husbandry, carpenters' tools, wearing apparel, and other articles which it was thought desirable that he should be provided with.

I am therefore to request that you will acquaint the Lords Commissioners of His Majesty's Treasury that Lord Bathurst, in consideration of the advantages which may reasonably be expected to accrue from the liberal treatment which the chief has thus experienced, is induced to recommend that the sum of two hundred pounds should be paid to Captain Reynolds in reimbursement of the expenses which have been incurred by him on account of the chief, including a gratuity to the amount of £48 which His Lordship is of opinion should be given to Captain Reynolds in remuneration for the trouble to which he has been subjected in taking charge of that person.

I am, &c.,

G. Harrison, Esqr.

R. W. HAY.

[Church Missionary House.

REV. S. MARSDEN TO REV. E. BICKERSTETH.

Parramatta, 2nd February, 1826.

1826  
Feb. 2.

REVD. AND DEAR SIR,—

I received the various dispatches by the Revd. Wm. Williams, to which I shall pay particular attention. I hope we shall now be able to form a corresponding committee with some success. After the last committee was constituted, a gentleman in the colony of great influence at that time solicited me to allow him to become a member. I declined to comply with his request in as delicate a manner as I could, from a conviction

that both his principles and conduct rendered him an improper person to be admitted into such a situation. My refusal offended him exceedingly, but I hoped his anger would cool. I was not aware that he would have carried his resentment to the length he did at that time, and would have continued to do so ever since to the present period. I cannot doubt but that it was thro' his baneful influence that I was compelled to dissolve the committee : he had raised such a spirit of opposition secretly against me. Tho' he is still in the colony, his influence is not so great as it then was, and is never likely to be. He will never attempt again to become a member of the corresponding committee. I have never thought it prudent to mention this circumstance before. I may do it now, as I have nothing, neither has the Society anything, to apprehend from that quarter. I considered it very unfortunate to be compelled to dissolve the corresponding committee without daring to state my secret reasons. It requires great wisdom and caution in acting with men in power whose vindictive feelings are secretly burning and ready to burst into a flame on the smallest occasion. If I had not dissolved the committee at that very time circumstances afterwards soon occurred which would have obliged me to have done so. The seminary is now occupied by Messrs. Shepherd and Hamblin, with their families. Mr. Williams resides with the Revd. Mr. Wilkinson, a former acquaintance. . . . With respect to the seminary at Parramatta, I beg to observe that it is now ready, and has been some time occupied by the New Zealanders and the family of Mr. Shepherd. Mr. Shepherd will now return to his duty, as his eye is better. Some of the New Zealanders will return who have resided at Parramatta now more than two years, as they returned with me from New Zealand. I have not drawn upon the Society for any part of the expenses attending its erection. Before the Society are put to that expense I should wish sufficient time to be given to ascertain how far it will answer the purpose intended. If on trial it is found to answer I will then give the Society a legal title to it, with the necessary ground for a suitable garden. If on the other hand any circumstance should occur to render such a building unnecessary I take the expense upon myself, the Society paying me legal interest while it appropriate to the service of the mission for the money I have expended. I am satisfied that all the female children of the missionaries at the age of five years should be removed from New Zealand. The scenes which they must daily behold amongst the natives will naturally tend to destroy female delicacy, which is the strongest guardian to female virtue. I have seen with much pain the effects of young females been exposed to indelicate scenes in the

1826

Feb. 2.

Difficulties and  
enmity in  
colony.

Which caused  
dissolution of  
corresponding  
committee.

Seminary ready  
and occupied.

Expenses paid  
by Marsden.

1826  
Feb. 2.

Education of  
missionaries'  
children.

New Zealand  
mission  
stations.

Hospital to be  
built.

Society Islands. The same may be expected to take place in New Zealand while the inhabitants remain in their present state of degradation. . . . Should the missionaries in New Zealand wish to have their children preserved from the unavoidable effects of living amongst savages, they must have them educated for some time to come in New South Wales. The children also of the chiefs might be instructed here. I think one young man who lives with me (named Shaw) will have made so much improvement as to be able to render much assistance to the Revd. Wm. Williams. I have suggested the above hints to you for the consideration of the committee. In time the missionaries' children may be instructed in New Zealand; at present this cannot be unless their parents devote a great part of their time to their instruction. . . . When the missionaries who are here arrive at New Zealand I purpose to fix them in the following stations: Messrs. Kemp and Clarke will remain at Kiddee Kiddee; Mr. King, where he is at Rangheehoo; the Revd. H. Williams will remain at Pyhea; the Revd. Wm. Williams I purpose to fix him on the bank of the main river leading up from Motoroa to Kiddee Kiddee with Mr. Hamlin—they will be about three miles from Kiddee Kiddee, at a place called Towhee's Point; Mr. Shepherd, with the two Mr. Davises, will be fixed at Kowakowa, about 14 miles up the river above the Revd. Henry Williams. On the west end of the Island Motoroa I purpose a small house to be built, as it is the common resort for the natives of different tribes passing to and from the southward, as well as to the shipping. The house will be convenient for all the missionaries to hold their meetings in occasionally, being by water five miles from the Revd. Wm. Williams's station, 6 from his brother, 5 from Rangheehoo, 8 from Kiddee Kiddee. It will be particularly convenient for the natives to come to at appointed times for medical assistance. On this point of land the Revd. Wm. Williams may have his hospital for the natives, as they can all come by water, and he can visit them by water. In stormy weather the missionaries can always put up there for the night when on their passage from different settlements, instead of lying exposed upon the sea-beach, which has often been the case with myself when I was there. I am persuaded Mr. W. Williams will gain the affections and confidence of all the natives far and near, from the mildness of his manners, and his medical knowledge. The last time I took my leave of the natives they begged I would not send them an angry man. In Mr. Williams they will have got the man they wished for. It gives me much satisfaction that the Society are sending out persons qualified for their work. You will find things go on well. We may look with confidence for the Divine blessing. . . .



Before I conclude this letter I beg just to mention that we have not been able to meet with a proper person for the aborigines. I think we shall raise funds in the colony so as to make the attempt. I have little hope of being able to render much assistance to them; they are so degraded. It is our duty to try what can be done; but the prospect is very dark as yet. I think they will gradually waste away, until few remain. I am happy to say that I have a brighter prospect before me as far as concerns my temporal peace. The Archdeacon and myself are upon good and I may add friendly terms. I shall be very comfortable with the Colonial Secretary. My enemies have greatly abated their fury since the arrival of the Archdeacon, and have turned shafts against him. I am apprehensive he will not remain long amongst us, unless he . . . [Remainder of letter missing].

1826  
Feb. 2.

Missionary to  
aborigines  
wanted.

[Addressed to] Revd. E. Bickersteth.

---

BOARD OF INQUIRY TO GOVERNOR DARLING.

Board Room, Bent Street, Sydney,  
13th February, 1826.

Feb. 13.

THE Board for General Purposes, having assembled in conformity with His Excellency the Governor's minute, dated the 8th inst., No. 25, to consider on the remuneration claimed by Mr. J. Busby, Mineral Surveyor, for services set forth in his memorial dated the 9th ultimo, and having taken into consideration the circumstances of Mr. Busby's volunteering on the occasions alluded to (a service totally unconnected with his official duties); considering also the length of time he was employed, the great danger and personal inconvenience to which he was exposed, together with the nature of the vessel and the stores he saved, after the failure of the officers and crew of His Majesty's ship *Tees*, and thus effecting the object which Government had in view, in fitting her out, the Board beg leave to recommend that Mr. Busby should receive a gratuity of three hundred pounds sterling (£300) in addition to his salary as Mineral Surveyor.

John Busby.

WILLIAM STEWART.

ALEX. MCLEAY.

H. DUMARESQ.

W. WEMYSS.

WM. LITHGOW.

Approved.—R. DARLING.

---

SIR,— Pitt Street, Sydney, 20th January, 1826.

Returning to you the enclosed letter and memorial of Mr. John Busby, I have the honor of acquainting you, in reply

1826  
Feb. 13.

to your inquiry of the 13th instant, that the object of the last voyage of the brig Elizabeth-Henrietta to New Zealand was to promote the civilization of the inhabitants of that island, by supplying them with British manufactures in exchange for their flax.

I have, &c.,

F. GOULBURN.

Honble. Alexander McLeay, Colonial Secretary.

*Endorsement in Governor Darling's Handwriting on Back of foregoing Letter to Alex. McLeay.*

WITHOUT entering into Mr. Busby's claims, as set forth in his memorial, he certainly appears entitled to some remuneration in addition to the allowance he receives from Government while employed, and which I conclude he received in this. How could the amount be fixed? I mean on what principle.—R.D.

*Note in Alexander McLeay's Handwriting in Reply to above.*

FROM the manner in which Mr. B. states his case, it appears to me that he looks for some percentage on the value saved, by way of salvage, but as an officer of the Govt. this cannot of course be granted to him. There is no doubt however that he is entitled or rather that he deserves to receive something beyond his pay in this case, and whatever it may be I submit that it should be by way of gratuity. In valuing the property saved Mr. B. includes an item of £1,000 as his estimate of the importance of saving the vessel and flax, independent of the actual value of both, but such an item cannot possibly be allowed. When this therefore is deducted, the actual value of the property saved by him, according to his own account, is about £16,000. Perhaps 5 per cent. on that sum would be a reasonable gratuity. £1,000 would be only  $6\frac{1}{4}$  per cent.

CAPTAIN THOMAS COE TO GOVERNOR SIR T. BRISBANE.

His Majesty's ship Tees at Sydney Cove,

SIR,—

5th June, 1824.

I am sorry to inform Your Excellency that H.M.S. Tees has returned to this anchorage without having the good fortune to bring the Elizabeth Henrietta with her. On my arrival at Port William every assistance that could be given was sent from this ship, and on our first trial we had the pleasure of moving her about five feet, but it not being spring tides we

1826  
Feb. 13.

stood fast, the officer which was with the party having represented to me that if the Tees could remain until the springs he had no hesitation in saying she might easily be got off. I therefore determined to wait for that period, but unfortunately a gale of wind came on about the 10th May, which drove the brig fifteen feet higher up than when we began. We did not then despair and made every preparation for the approaching springs, but the whole of our strength could not move her, and I was under the necessity of leaving her, having carried away every purchase I have.

I have thought it prudent, at the suggestion of Mr. Kent, her commander, to leave him and two men to take care of her stores and cargo (which is quite complete) until you have an opportunity of sending a vessel down to convey them to Sydney.

I must beg leave to recommend to Your Excellency's notice Mr. Kent, her commander, who I think is a young man deserving your patronage, although this unfortunate accident has taken place, which he assures me was in consequence of the brig not being supplied with sufficient ground tackle.

I also beg leave to inclose a list\* of men belonging to the Wellington, brig, who, after they heard of the accident, immediately repaired to their assistance, and never left them, which appears to me the only reason the natives were kept from the Henrietta's crew, and, should the colonial service allow it, they deserve some remuneration, as an encouragement to other seamen to assist those in distress.

I have, &c.,

THOMAS COE.

His Excellency Sir Thomas Brisbane, Governor in Chief, &c.

MR. J. BUSBY TO GOVERNOR SIR THOMAS BRISBANE.

SIR,—

Sydney, 19th June, 1824.

Having accidentally learned the circumstances under which H.M. colonial brig Elizabeth Henrietta, now on shore at New Zealand, was about to be abandoned, and having had some experience in taking off stranded vessels, it occurred to me that the application of means with which I am acquainted might be successful in getting her off. I communicated my opinion to Major Ovens, by whom I was favoured with the perusal of Captain Coe's (of H.M.S. Tees) letter on the subject. I have also conversed with the officer who commanded the party em-

\* The list is lost.

1826  
Feb. 13.

ployed to get her afloat ; and after fully considering the information I have procured, I am of opinion that were the vessel my own property, I would hazard a considerable sum in making the attempt, and therefore, should Your Excellency think fit to send me to New Zealand, I am ready to exert my best efforts to save her. I am induced to offer my services in this undertaking from the consideration that there is a vessel about to sail for the purpose of bringing off the stores and cargo, and that the crew of the vessel, consisting of sixteen men, with the assistance of two ship-carpenters, appears to me to be sufficient to bring into action the means I would employ. Were it to be attended with any considerable expense I should not have advised the measure, nor ventured to incur the responsibility.

I have, &c.,

JOHN BUSBY.

His Excellency Sir Thomas Brisbane, K.C.B., Governor in Chief, &c., &c.

MR. JOHN BUSBY TO GOVERNOR SIR THOMAS BRISBANE.

SIR,—

Sydney, 20th July, 1825.

When, in reply to my application to Your Excellency for remuneration for the time I was employed at New Zealand beyond the period for which my services for the year were engaged to H.M. Government, I was verbally informed by Major Ovens that Your Excellency's instructions would not allow you to deviate from the letter of the despatch respecting me, I was of course bound to acquiesce for the time in Your Excellency's view of the subject.

As, however, from my written communication with H.M. Government previous to my leaving England, copies of which I did myself the honour to lay before Your Excellency, I conceived I had an undoubted right to be remunerated, not only in the moderate measure in which with a view to the subsequent matter of this letter I proposed to Your Excellency, but to make a charge proportionate to the danger and difficulty of my undertaking and the merit of my success, and I accordingly expressed a hope that when I came to submit the matter to my Lord Bathurst I might be favoured with Your Excellency's testimonial to my zeal and industry in the discharge of my duties.

In my communications, however, with Your Excellency on this subject I have hitherto, in delicacy, avoided the mention of any reward independent of my pay in the shape of an acknowledgement of the merit of the undertaking I accomplished, because such coming spontaneously from Your Excellency would



have been more gratifying to my feelings, and because I calculated with confidence that when Your Excellency came to consider the matter the mention of such by me would have been unnecessary.

Aware of the many important matters which have of late pressed upon Your Excellency's attention, I have continued to defer the matter, most unwilling to conclude that it had altogether escaped your remembrance; and from a persuasion that to come to a favourable determination it would only be necessary for you to give it a fair hearing, I have again come to the determination of intreating your attention to it. And as in my letter to Your Excellency, proposing to endeavour to save the vessel, I stated experience in such matters as one of the reasons inducing me thereto, I shall illustrate the subject by a reference to a case in which I was once engaged.

In the year 1808, the smack *Earl of Dalkeith*, a Leith and Hull trader, was cast away on the coast of Northumberland with a valuable cargo on board. The vessel was sunk in twenty feet of water, and her decks had been lifted off by the surge, the bottom only being retained by the weight of the cargo resting upon it. A committee of engineers appointed by the consignees of the goods have examined the situation in which she lay, and pronounced as hopeless any attempt to save any part of the cargo. About two months afterwards I happened to be on a visit to some of my friends in that neighbourhood, and having been attracted by curiosity to visit the place where the vessel lay, it occurred to me that I could apply means which would be successful in saving a part of her cargo. I immediately proposed to the underwriters and consignees that, with their permission, I would endeavour to save a part of the cargo, that I should be at every expense, and that I should give over to the respective proprietors one fourth of the goods saved. Having obtained full authority from all parties interested, I proceeded with the undertaking, which occupied me a whole summer. But after deducting an immense expense for machinery applied before I succeeded in adopting what was at length successful, I saved property which cleared me about £1,000 stg., the underwriters and many of those whose goods were not insured having handsomely declined to receive their share of the proceeds. With this case of a parallel nature, which I have documents in my possession to prove, I would beg of Your Excellency to look at the facts of the case on which I have now the honour to address you.

H.M. colonial brig *Elizabeth Henrietta* was driven on shore at New Zealand. H.M.S. *Tees* was sent to her relief, but returned unsuccessful: Captain Coe's letter to Your Excellency,

1826  
Feb. 13.

1826  
Feb. 13.  
—

stating "that their whole strength was insufficient to move her," and "that they were under the necessity of leaving her, having carried away every purchase they had." H.M. colonial cutter *Mermaid* was about to sail to bring home her stores and the flax she had on board when I accidentally heard of the circumstance. I inquired into the situation in which the vessel was left, and I instantly determined to volunteer my services to save her.

I was not deterred by the consideration that since I had been similarly engaged sixteen years had wasted my energies, and begun to bring on the infirmities of old age. I was not deterred by the consideration of the ridicule which might attach to me if unsuccessful, or of the reflection success might throw upon those who had previously failed. My professional character would, I thought, save them from any. I was not deterred by the consideration of the dangers and hardships of a sojourn on a stormy coast and among a race of cannibals. I was not withheld by all these considerations. I looked only to the possibility of saving the vessel, and resolved to make the attempt.

My letter to Your Excellency on my arrival does injustice to myself in stating only a part of my services; and it makes no allusion to my privations and dangers. These I thought would reach Your Excellency through other channels. It is but justice to myself now to state that by saving the vessel I saved also a cargo of New Zealand flax, as both vessels returned with cargoes. To look on the other hand at the expense by which all this was accomplished, Captain Coe recommended that I should not take less than fifty men, as that number would be required. I was aware that if my means were applicable a much smaller number would suffice. In addition to the *Mermaid's* crew of sixteen, I required only a carpenter and a blacksmith. On the arrival of the *Mermaid* where the *Elizabeth Henrietta* lay, I determined on not even detaining her. I took six individuals, and said to Mr. Kent, You are at liberty to go and collect your cargo of flax; these men will serve my purpose. We were left with ten weeks' provisions. In 26 days we got the vessel afloat. The *Mermaid* did not return till upwards of fourteen weeks had elapsed, and we were reduced to lengthen out our scanty provisions with the addition of shellfish and fern-root. The cordage and stores expended could not exceed £10 in value.

I now solicited Mr. Kent to despatch the *Elizabeth Henrietta* with her cargo, and follow himself when the cutter should have obtained hers. He was, however, anxious to bring both vessels home with him, and we were detained by adverse winds upon

1826  
Feb. 13.

the coast, at one time out of sight of land with only one day's provisions on board, till eight months after I had left my family, who never during all that time heard of me, and who were now in extreme distress.

Mr. Kent, who commanded the vessel when she went on shore, on his arrival, in addition to his pay and I believe other allowances, had 940 dollars paid him, being one fourth of the value of the flax, for his merit in collecting it; and a great part of which could not have been purchased but for the hatchets made by the blacksmith I took with me. Even his inferior officers have been indebted to Your Excellency's bounty. It must surely have been from the pressure of other business abstracting Your Excellency's attention from this that you have never yet signified to me your approbation of my having saved the property of the Crown.

Mr. Kent is a young man, and without connexions here to suffer on his account. It is otherwise with me; and, though the vigour of my constitution has enabled me without much injury to overcome the privations I have suffered, my wife's health in my absence received a shock for which no remuneration can compensate.

In thus stating these circumstances to Your Excellency, and again intreating your consideration for them, I hope you will believe that I am influenced by an extreme unwillingness to refer the determination of them to any other than yourself.

I have, &c.,

JOHN BUSBY.

P.S.—If after a consideration of the circumstances stated in the accompanying letter Your Excellency should recognise my claim on H.M. Government, I hope you will receive with favour a proposal, which will essentially benefit me, and instead of expense be attended with advantage to Government. From my report on the Newcastle Coal Works, Your Excellency will perceive that the expense of conducting that establishment is greater than the return it yields. In that report I pointed out improvements which would have gone far to have rendered the Coal Works profitable to Government, but verbally suggested to Your Excellency the expediency of letting them, as I conceived that it would be difficult for Government to manage them on the same economical terms as a private individual. The manner in which the working of the coal has since been continued, as shewn by their quality, is a proof that even with such minute directions as I then gave, a system of gross mismanagement has prevailed, and which will render a steam engine much earlier necessary than under a different system would

1826  
Feb. 13.  
—

have been required. And it will readily occur to Your Excellency that the addition of a steam engine, besides the increase of expense would only open the door to further mismanagement. At the time I reported to Your Excellency on the Coal Works, I had no intention of proposing to take them myself. But within these few weeks my oldest son has arrived from England, and as my knowledge of mining would allow me to work the coals with profit under circumstances which would perhaps be unprofitable to any other individual in the colony, it occurred to me, that with his assistance I could manage them without interfering with the remaining time of my engagement to Government, or being prevented from affording my advice and assistance when it should be required, after the period of my engagement had expired. Without entering into particulars, which it would require a minute examination into the past management and present circumstances of the Coal Works to furnish, I would propose to take them on the following principle, viz.: I would furnish to Government the coals required by them at a price which, besides the improvement in their quality, would be an absolute saving on what they have hitherto cost, or would cost, were the management of them still continued in the hands of Government. But as in any circumstances a steam engine will very shortly be required, it will be necessary for the Government to advance the capital for its purchase, and for the sinking of the engine pit, and receive the repayment in coals gradually and at a distant period.

---

FROM MR. JOHN BUSEY TO COL. DUMARESQ, PRIVATE  
SECRETARY.

SIR,—

Sydney, 9th January, 1826.

I have the honour to inclose a memorial on the subject of the Elizabeth Henrietta, the vessel I saved at New Zealand, which I am anxious should be submitted for the consideration of His Excellency the Governor previous to the departure of Major Goulburn from the colony, as he is perhaps the only person fully acquainted with the object of the voyage on which the vessel was sent, and the other circumstances connected with my undertaking.

In forwarding my wishes in this respect you will much oblige.

Yours, &c.,

JOHN BUSBY.

Colonel Dumaresq, Private Secretary, &c., &c.



To His Excellency Lieutenant-General Darling, Captain General, and Commander-in-Chief in and over the Territory of New South Wales and its Dependencies.

1826  
Feb. 13.

THE memorial of John Busby, Civil Engineer and Mineral Surveyor, sheweth,

That your memorialist volunteered his services to take off H.M. colonial brig Elizabeth Henrietta, stranded on the coast of New Zealand, at great risk of danger to his person and professional character, conceiving that he should thereby perform an acceptable service to the Government.

That your memorialist fully succeeded in his undertaking, after encountering great dangers and privations.

That although upwards of ten months have elapsed since the return of your memorialist from New Zealand he has never been able to bring the case under the notice of the Colonial Government, to whose favourable consideration he conceives himself entitled for the following reasons :—

1. That such a service lying out of the line of his duty, the undertaking was altogether voluntary.
2. That in accomplishing such an undertaking he conceives he has afforded an example which, in similar cases, may prove important in saving the property of the Crown.
3. That, in consequence of the undertaking, the pecuniary gain to Government has been very considerable, to a large share of which your memorialist would have been entitled by law had the property been private, even had it been considered recoverable, but it was abandoned after the fruitless endeavours of H.M.S. Tees to take her off.

That in addition to the saving of the vessel the undertaking was otherwise the means of large gain to Government.

1. In accomplishing the object for which the Elizabeth Henrietta was fitted out and sent on the voyage, at an expense which must be underrated at £1,000.
2. In being the means of procuring the greatest portion of ten tons of flax, valued at £1,000, which flax but for his undertaking could not have been procured, nor supposing it procured, could have been brought home.

That although your memorialist did not receive even an approval of his conduct and exertions in having saved the vessel, yet in the same business Government recognised a claim for hazardous employment by allowing the master and officers of the Elizabeth Henrietta, in addition to their pay, a share of the value of the flax, although merely engaged in the execution of their duty.

1826  
Feb. 13.

That your memorialist submits the following statement of property saved to Government :—

|                                 | £     | £     |
|---------------------------------|-------|-------|
| Value of Elizabeth Henrietta .. | 1,600 |       |
| Do. of flax .. ..               | 1,000 |       |
| Do. of object attained .. ..    | 1,000 |       |
|                                 |       | 3,600 |

From which deduct—

|   |     |     |
|---|-----|-----|
| Value of stores which the cutter could have brought away ..   | 500 |     |
| Salary of memorialist while employed on that service—say, 3 months .. ..  | 90  |     |
| Expense of 2 carpenters and 1 blacksmith (prisoners) for 3 months, say .. ..  | 50  |     |
| Materials, say .. ..  | 50  |     |
| The cutter having been sent expressly to bring home the stores, her time can only be valued while employed in collecting flax—say, 3 months | 300 |     |
|   |     | 990 |

Value saved .. £2,610

That your memorialist humbly and respectfully solicits that Your Excellency would be pleased to cause an investigation to be made into the circumstances of the case, in order that such remuneration may be rewarded him as the merits of it shall be found to warrant.

And your memorialist will ever pray, &c., &c.  
Sydney, 9th January, 1826.

GOVERNOR DARLING TO EARL BATHURST.

New South Wales, Government House,  
4th March, 1826.

March 4. MY LORD,—

I have the honor to transmit to Your Lordship the accompanying copy of the proceedings of the Board appointed to investigate the claim of Mr. Busby, the Mineral Surveyor, for remuneration for his services in proceeding to New Zealand, and recovering the Government brig Elizabeth Henrietta, which was stranded on that island, and I have in consequence granted a warrant for the payment of three hundred pounds sterling to Mr. Busby, of which I hope Your Lordship will approve.

Busby saves  
brig; paid £300.

2nd. I have not thought it necessary to forward Mr. Busby's memorial, as the proceedings of the Board point out the grounds on which the remuneration was recommended.

1826  
March 4.

3rd. I understand Mr. Busby is not satisfied with the award, but I have not felt myself justified in exceeding the sum recommended by the Board, though I am fully sensible of the zeal which Mr. Busby (who was employed eight months) manifested on this occasion, in voluntarily subjecting himself to the fatigue and privations necessarily attendant on such an undertaking, and of his skill, by which the vessel was saved, after the failure of His Majesty's ship Tees.

Zeal in service  
and success on  
the eight  
months in New  
Zealand.

4th. From the conversations I have had with Mr. Busby I am satisfied his services may be rendered extremely advantageous to the colony, and I shall not fail to avail myself of his assistance as soon as I can pay the necessary attention to those objects which appear to be within the line of his professions.

Pleased with  
Mr. Busby.

I have, &c.,

R. DARLING.

To the Right Hon. the Earl Bathurst, K.G.

[Minute.]

*R. Darling to A. McLeay.*

8th February, 1826.

LET the Board for General Purposes take into consideration the report on the claim set forth in the accompanying memorial of Mr. John Busby, Mineral Surveyor, for services rendered the Government, in proceeding to New Zealand and getting off the colonial brig Elizabeth Henrietta, which was stranded on that island in the month of February, 1824.

Busby's  
recovery of a  
brig in New  
Zealand.

R. DARLING.

To the Colonial Secretary.

Board Room, 13th February, 1826.

THE Board for General Purposes, having assembled in conformity with His Excellency the Governor's minute, dated the 8th instant, No. 25, to consider on the remuneration claimed by Mr. Busby, Mineral Surveyor, for services set forth in his memorial dated the 9th ultimo, and having taken into consideration the circumstances of Mr. Busby's volunteering on the occasion alluded to (a service totally unconnected with his official duties), considering also the length of time he was employed, the great danger and personal inconvenience to which he was exposed, together with the value of the vessel and the stores he saved, after the failure of the officers and crew of His

Board's report  
on Busby's  
claim for saving  
the brig.

1826

March 4.

Recommended  
him £300 in  
addition to  
salary.

Majesty's ship Tees, and thus effecting the object which Government had in view in fitting her out, the Board beg leave to recommend that Mr. Busby should receive gratuity of three hundred pounds sterling in addition to his salary as Mineral Surveyor.

WILLIAM STEWART.

ALEX McLEAY.

H. DUMERESQ.

W. WEMYSS.

W. TETHGON.

Approved.—R. DARLING.

[New South Wales, Vol. 179.

J. C. LITTLETON TO R. HORTON, SECRETARY OF STATE.

March 22.

Portman Square, March 22nd, 1826.

MY DEAR WILMOT,—

Mr. Lyall's  
proposal to  
establish fort  
in New Zealand.

Mr. Lyall, who is our active New Zealander, wishes to see you, and will call on you early to-morrow morning at the Colonial Office, to submit to you a proposition relative to establishing a fort and small complement of men at New Zealand. Our hope of obtaining from Gov. a grant of an exclusive privilege being now destroyed by a refusal on the part of Huskisson, we are desirous of ascertaining whether we can expect any encouragement from your Department. I confess for my own part that in the present state of the money market in England I see no hope of success for our project. An exclusive privilege might have carried us through our difficulties; but in my judgment nothing else can, and yet our project was of real national importance.

Sees no hope  
of success.

I remain, &amp;c.,

J. E. LITTLETON.

[Church Missionary House.

REV. S. MARSDEN TO ALEX. McLEAY AND OTHERS.

April 25.

Parramatta, April 25th, 1826.

Wishes to form  
a corresponding  
committee.

GENTLEMEN,—

I have long wished that a corresponding committee might be formed in this colony to co-operate with the Church Missionary Society in promoting the Society's benevolent intentions towards the natives of New South Wales and New Zealand. As an auxiliary C.M.S. is now established here, the parent Committee consider that this circumstance affords a fair opportunity to form a corresponding committee, and have expressed their views on this subject in one of the last communications I have received from London, which I will take the liberty to lay before you. I shall also solicit your permission



to submit to you an epitome of the present state of the mission in New Zealand. I need not tell you what difficulties that mission has had to struggle with from those who are nominally called Christians.

1826  
April 25.

Had it not been for the special protection of Divine Goodness this mission would long since have ceased to exist. I flatter myself that the great difficulties and dangers which have threatened this mission are now over, unless the number of Europeans who are now likely to take up their abode amongst the natives stir them up again. The missionaries have experienced comparatively few difficulties from the natives. The natives have generally behaved kindly to them, nor is there much danger to be apprehended from the natives in future. The evils that have affected the mission have originated from the misconduct of the Europeans, and these evils are still to be feared. From the increasing communication with New Zealand both from Europe and this colony, and from the more frequent visits the natives make to Port Jackson, render it a matter of great importance to have an efficient corresponding committee established here, to give strength, stability, and duration to the exertion of the parent Society.

Difficulties of  
New Zealand  
mission.

Evils originated  
with Europeans.

At present there is none but myself in this country acquainted with the particular state of the mission, and if I should be removed before some other friends to the cause should gain the necessary knowledge of the Society's concerns, the interest of the mission might be seriously injured. A corresponding committee would watch over the interests of the Society, and greatly strengthen the hands of the parent Committee, and afford encouragement to the missionaries in New Zealand in the faithful discharge of their respective duties.

Friends in New  
South Wales  
needed.

I have already mentioned my intention of laying before you a short statement of the concerns of the mission, in doing which I shall first give you the names and duties of the persons in the actual service of the mission :—

The Revd. Henry Williams and the Revd. William Williams : These gentlemen are employed in the exercise of their clerical duties ; Wm. Williams has studied medicine, and also contributed to the benefit of the natives in that capacity. John King, by trade a shoemaker, is employed in teaching the natives at Rangheehoo and the neighbouring villages as a catechist. James Kemp is a smith, and acts as a storekeeper ; he also teaches the natives at Kiddee Kiddee, as his time will admit, in conjunction with George Clarke, who is also a smith. Richard Davis is a farmer, and attends to agriculture and the instruction of the natives at Kowa Kowa. William Fairburn, Charles Davis, and William Pucky are carpenters, and employed gene-

List of  
missionaries  
and their  
duties.

1826  
April 25.

rally at their trades. Hamlin is a flax dresser and weaver. James Shepherd, no trade; he is generally employed in itinerating amongst the different tribes, instructing them in the Christian religion, as he understands the language better than any of the other missionaries. William Spikeman, herdsman. William Hall is a carpenter, and at present resides at the seminary at Parramatta, on leave of absence for the benefit of his health.

The total number of men is 13; of women, 10; and children, 36: total, 59.

Salary and  
other  
allowances.

Each man and woman have £20 per annum salary allowed for cloaths, wine, spirits, and other little comforts, and also a ration; £10 per annum with a ration is allowed for each child. The estimated expense of 59 men, women, and children is £28 each per annum, inclusive of everything, amounting in the whole to one thousand six hundred and fifty-two pounds. This sum will vary a little according to circumstances, but I apprehend not materially.

Education of  
their children.

It may not be improper for me here to submit to you the official rules, regulations, and instructions which the parent Society have established for the government of this mission, as these documents will put you in full possession of the Society's views and intentions relative to it. I beg further to observe in 1823 I was in New Zealand; several of the missionaries' children at that time required instruction such as they could not receive in their situation. I consulted with some of their parents, to know what could be done for them to prevent their children from becoming heathenish in their principles and behaviour. It was thought that the most prudent means that could be adopted was to establish a seminary in New South Wales for them and some of the chiefs' children who might be disposed to visit Port Jackson. On my return to the colony I consulted some of my friends here, who very much approved of the proposition. I immediately wrote to the parent Society, informing the Committee what my intentions were, and without waiting for their answer began the building on my own responsibility. In due time I received the sanction of the Society for establishing the seminary.

Seminary to be  
established in  
New South  
Wales.

When the building was ready for the reception of the New Zealanders who were then living with me they removed into it, and some have continued in it ever since.

Mr. and Mrs. Shepherd and Mr. and Mrs. Hamlin resided there while they remained in the colony, and Mr. and Mrs. Hall and family are there at the present time. In the accompanying letter which I addressed to the Society, my views and intentions are more fully stated.

The building is still my property, no part of the expense attending it has been charged to the Society, nor for the support of the New Zealanders, who from time to time resided in it. As it was a concern entirely under my own direction I was unwilling to make any demand upon the Society until the premises had been surveyed by competent judges, and some sanction given by persons of respectability in the colony for me to draw upon the treasurer of the Society for the value of the building.

1826  
April 25.  
Building  
completed at  
his own expense.

Should a corresponding committee be formed, and the seminary found upon trial to answer the intended purpose, in that case I shall leave it to the option of the Society to purchase the building or to pay the colonial interest for the amount of the money that has been expended, so long as the seminary may be required for the original purpose. I shall with this view make out an account of expenses and lay them before the Committee, and the Committee may then form their own determination on the subject.

If successful  
would wish  
Church  
Missionary  
Society to  
buy it.

I have, &c.,

SAMUEL MARSDEN.

To Alexander McLeay, Esqre.; Saxe Bannister, Esqre.;  
Revd. Wm. Cowper; Revd. Richard Hill.

R. TORRENS TO DOWNING STREET.

North End, Fulham,

July 4th, 1826.

July 4.

MY DEAR SIR,—

I enclose a copy of my letter on the subject of New Zealand, with one verbal alteration. Instead of asking for the direction of the force in the character of Commandant or Military Commissioner resident in England, I simply apply for the command of any detachment which may be ordered to New Zealand. I did not contemplate being placed at the head of a committee or commission for the colonization of New Zealand; but the shipowners having sent in a strong memorial for a protecting force in that quarter, I was desirous, in the event of the prayer of the memorial being granted, to have the selection and command of this force, because I conceived it would enable me to make preliminary arrangements which would facilitate the future colonization of these islands upon sound economical principles.

Asks command  
of detachment  
for New  
Zealand.

In my former letter I did not sufficiently explain why, in sending protection to New Zealand, marines should be preferred: 1st, they are by far the cheapest description of force, a fact which a reference to the public accounts will immediately establish; 2nd, when off military duty they could, from their habits, be much more serviceable to the shipping than other soldiers; 3rd, as there are several thousands of them at Plymouth, Ports-

Marine force  
preferable.

1826  
July 4.

Reasons for  
preference.

His appoint-  
ment as  
commanding  
officer.

mouth, Chatham, and Woolwich, they afford a far more extensive range than any single regiment of the line for the selection of sober and industrious men, capable of supplying that skilled labour which is of so much value and importance in a new country.

In conclusion, I wish to be understood as having applied to be made commanding officer of any force which may be ordered to New Zealand. My situation and duties would be in no respect different from those of whatever other officer might hold the command, with the exception of my having rather more power conferred on me in selecting the officers and men; of my endeavouring, under the sanction and approval of the Colonial Office, to suggest regulations which, if it should hereafter be deemed expedient, might tend to promote an extensive colonization of New Zealand without entailing expence upon the Government; and of my remaining in England until the accomplishment of these objects, when I should resign my temporary command, abundantly rewarded in having obtained an opportunity of giving practical application to principles of colonization long ardently cherished, and recently, by my intercourse with you, brought under my consideration in a state matured and extended far beyond any previous conception of my own.

I am, &c.,

R. W. Horton, Esq., M.P.

R. TORRENS.

R. TORRENS TO DOWNING STREET.

North End, Fulham,

June 27th, 1826.

DEAR SIR,—

Memorial from  
shipowners  
for force to be  
sent to New  
Zealand.

I understand that the shipowners connected with the trade and fisheries of the South Seas have presented to Earl Bathurst a very earnest memorial, praying that a small protecting force may be stationed in the Northern Island of New Zealand, and that Lord Bathurst has referred the matter to Mr. Huskisson, who has reported favourably upon it.

Asks command  
of it.

In the event of this force being sent to New Zealand, I should be exceedingly desirous of obtaining the command of it. I have bestowed no inconsiderable portion of attention on the subject of colonization, and I am impressed with the conviction that were I entrusted with the authority I seek I should be able to make those preliminary arrangements which, should the Island of New Zealand prove of the importance which the shipowners suppose, would allow of their being colonized on an extensive scale without entailing upon Government the heavy expenditure which new settlements have in most instances involved.



For the purpose which the shipowners contemplate in their memorial two hundred marines would be amply sufficient, and they might be stationed in New Zealand as cheaply as they are now stationed at Portsmouth or Plymouth.

1826  
July 4.

Two hundred  
marines would  
be sufficient.

With respect to myself, I do not desire that this command should be accompanied with any extra pay, salary, or emolument whatever. My only object in this application is to have such a selection of, and such an authority over, the defensive force to be sent to New Zealand as may enable me to give practical application to those sound principles of colonization which I conceive to be of vast and growing importance to this country.

Wants no extra  
pay.

I am, &c.,

R. W. Horton, Esq., M.P.

R. TORRENS.

#### MEMORIAL.

To the Right Honorable Earl Bathurst, K.G., His Majesty's Principal Secretary of State for the Colonial Department.

THE humble memorial of the undersigned merchants, shipowners, and others interested in the South Sea fisheries, and in the trade of the South Pacific Ocean, sheweth,—

That your memorialists beg leave to state to Your Lordship that for some years past a very valuable and extensive whale and seal fishery has been carried on in the seas adjacent to the Islands of New Zealand.

Fisheries near  
New Zealand.

That these islands, being on every side indented with secure harbours and navigable rivers, their climate being in the highest degree genial and salubrious, and their soil of extraordinary fertility, they are become of the utmost importance to the shipping engaged in those fisheries, whose crews, from the great length of the voyages, invariably require refreshments and supplies, which are found in the greatest abundance in those islands, besides that they afford the means of refit and equipment when our vessels are dismasted, or disabled by other disasters, to which, in those latitudes, they are frequently exposed. Of these inestimable advantages, however, the commanders of your memorialists' vessels are prevented availing themselves to the fullest extent, from the dangers frequently attending their intercourse with the natives, between whom and the crews of European and other vessels fatal quarrels have arisen, from the wanton outrages offered in many instances by them to the New Zealanders, who, although easily managed by good and judicious treatment, are a high-spirited and intelligent people, and extremely susceptible of injury and insults.

Islands of great  
value to  
shipping.

Dangers of  
intercourse  
with natives.

1826  
July 4.

Growth of the  
*Phormium*  
*tenax*.

That the *Formium tenax*, which is indigenous to these islands, and which is produced without culture in apparently exhaustless abundance, has been proved by actual experiments, made in His Majesty's dock-yards, to be superior to Petersburg hemp in strength, and at the same time to answer all the purposes of the finest flax.

Fine timber  
abounds.

That the Islands of New Zealand also abound with the finest naval timber in the world, the cowdie tree in particular (which is found on the banks of the navigable rivers) supplying spars of the largest dimensions, fit for the topmasts of ships of the line, and equal, if not superior, to those now obtained with increasing difficulty and expense from Riga and Virginia, as appears from the reports made upon them to the Commissioners of His Majesty's Navy by the commanders of the several vessels in which they have been distributed for trial.

Natives make  
good seamen.

That the natives of New Zealand are a robust and enterprising yet docile race, and when your memorialists' vessels are deficient of hands they readily volunteer their services, and prove orderly and powerful seamen, and that at the present time there are no less than 12 New Zealand men on board one single whale-ship.

Increase of  
trade.

That there is already established a considerable trade amongst the Sandwich and Society Islands and the various clusters of islands in the adjacent seas, the produce of which consists of many very valuable articles well suited for the China, as well as European markets; and the natives themselves, advancing in civilization, are gradually getting more inclined to the use of our cotton and woolen goods, with many other articles of importance to the manufacturers of this country; and there is every prospect of a rapid increase in the trade with these islands, under the countenance and protection of the British Government, which could not be given so effectually from any station as from the Northern Island of New Zealand.

Important  
commercial  
station.

That the consideration of these authentic and important facts has deeply impressed your memorialists with the conviction that the Islands of New Zealand have become objects of great and growing importance not only to the individuals who may engage in the trade and fisheries of the South Seas, but also to the shipping and mercantile interest of the country at large, their position, their harbours, their climate, and their peculiar productions all concurring to render them in an especial manner eligible as a commercial station and depot for affording shelter and refreshments to our shipping, and for rendering not only our mercantile marine, but the Royal Navy, independent of Russia and of the United States of North America for these indispensable articles of naval equipment—hemp and spars.

That under this conviction your memorialists, with great submission to Your Lordship, venture to urge the great advantage and expediency of forming a settlement in New Zealand, for which purpose they most respectfully solicit that a military force may be stationed in those islands for the security of the various British interests which are springing up therein, and which must rapidly increase under its protection.

1826  
July 4.

Settlement  
should be  
formed under  
a military force.

That such a force, restrained from every attempt at conquest or aggression, and acting solely for the defence of persons and property, would be equally advantageous to the natives as to His Majesty's subjects, inasmuch as, while it secured British subjects frequenting these islands from being assailed and plundered by the natives, it would protect the latter from the insults and outrages which the crews of European vessels have sometimes perpetrated, and which have proved the occasion of exciting the natives to murderous and indiscriminate retaliation.

That a British protecting force, which several of the most intelligent chiefs have expressed a strong desire to obtain, while it gave security to persons and property, as between His Majesty's subjects and the native inhabitants, would have a powerful tendency to check that barbarous warfare which the several independent tribes are perpetually waging against each other, and would thus prove the only effectual means of introducing amongst this interesting people the peaceful pursuits of industry and the blessings of civilization and of religious and moral instruction.

Advantages of  
military force.

That, above all, your memorialists are exceedingly desirous that the important British interests connected with New Zealand should, as soon as may be found practicable, be placed under the formal protection of His Majesty's Government, because from the information they have received there is too much reason to apprehend that the French have it in contemplation to establish themselves there, and that it would be a most invaluable colony for France, with reference to all the most important and favorite objects of her present maritime policy, no doubt can be entertained, as it is admitted by navigators and others who have visited New Zealand that any such Power in possession of its safe and capacious harbours, with the naval stores and powerful seamen which it would supply, could not fail eventually to obtain a complete ascendancy in the eastern seas and South Pacific Ocean, and would obviously have the means, in any future war, not only of preventing your memorialists and the Colonies of New South Wales and Van Dieman's Land from carrying on their trade and fisheries on these coasts, but would render the security of those valuable colonies them-

French  
contemplate  
settling there.

1826  
July 4.

Government  
protection  
requested.

selves, and their trade and intercourse with the Mother-country, very precarious.

That your memorialists therefore earnestly solicit that the British interest in New Zealand may be placed under the protection of His Majesty's Government, and that such a military force as may be deemed adequate for this purpose be immediately stationed in these islands.

And your memorialists, as in duty bound, will ever pray.

Sam. Enderby & Son.  
Willm. Mellish.  
Hill, Bontick, & Hill.  
Edward Jarvis.  
Buckles, Bagster, & Buchanan.  
John Chapman & Co.  
L. Marjoribanks & Co.  
M. D. Dowson.  
Tho. Warde.  
Donaldson, Wilkinson, & Co.  
Rickards, Mackintosh, & Co.  
Arthur Willis & Co.  
Geo. W. Lyall.  
Pitman, Mackillip, & Co.  
Joseph Somes.

London, 24 April, 1826.

[Colonial Office—New South Wales, Entry Book 7.

COLONEL BATHURST TO GOVERNOR DARLING.

(No. 50.)

[July 16.

SIR,—

Downing Street, July 16th, 1826.

Mr. Busby to  
receive £300.

I have the honor to acknowledge the receipt of your dispatch, No. 9, of the 4th March, accompanied by the proceedings of a Board appointed to investigate the claim of Mr. Busby\* to remuneration for his services in recovering the Government brig Elizabeth Henrietta, which was stranded on the Island of New Zealand; and I have to approve the payment of three hundred pounds, which you had desired to be made to Mr. Busby, in consideration of the zeal which he had manifested on that occasion.

I have, &c.,

BATHURST.

Lieut.-Genl. Darling.

\* This was John Busby, C.E., father of James Busby, British Resident at New Zealand.—F.M.B.



[New South Wales, Vol. 178.]

LIEUT.-COLONEL R. CRUISE TO UNDER-SECRETARY HAY.

1826  
Oct. 22.

London, 22nd Octr., 1826, c/o of George Yuitt, Esq.,  
SIR,— No. 44 Warren Street, Fitzroy Square.

Having accidentally heard that Government had an idea of establishing on the coast of New Zealand a military force for the protection of the settlement formed there by the New Zealand Company, I made an offer of my services to Sir Herbert Taylor, who desired me to present myself at the Colonial Office.

Military force  
in New  
Zealand.

I had a conversation yesterday with Mr. Wilmot Horton, who referred me to you; but as I am obliged to go to the Continent for the winter, may I beg you to signify to Lord Bathurst that my visit to New Zealand in 1820 [the journal of which was afterwards published] interested me so much in the fate of that part of the world that should His Lordship require the services of an officer of my rank either at New Zealand or in any of the colonies in the Southern Hemisphere, I shall consider myself highly honoured by being employed.

Offers his  
services.

I have, &amp;c.,

RT. CRUISE,

Lt.-Colonel (unattached).

To Robert W. Hay, Esqr., &amp;c., &amp;c.

[Wesleyan Mission House.]

REV. N. TURNER TO SECRETARIES, WESLEYAN SOCIETY.

Sydney, New South Wales,  
February 10th, 1827.

1827  
Feb. 10.

REVD. AND DEAR SIR,—

I just write to inform you that by the mercy of God we are safely arrived here. In the Bay of Islands I wrote you at some length, giving you the particulars of our afflicted and trying situation, and of my intention to sail for the colony with my family immediately. At the time I wrote to you, it was thought best for my brethren to remain with the friends of the Church Mission in New Zealand untill they heard from the colony; but it was afterwards thought by all that they ought to proceed with me without delay.

Missionaries  
returned from  
New Zealand.

We have been 13 days on our passage, and upon the whole our voyage has been agreeable, considering the characters with whom we sailed. Time will not now allow me to give you any particulars relative to our voyage, &c., &c. And you will not be surprised when I inform you that I feel almost incapable of writing or anything else, from the powerful effect that our late distressing affairs have had upon my mind. I hope, however, now soon to get my strength, both of body and mind, renewed.

1827  
Feb. 10.

Our brethren and all friends here sincerely sympathize with us, and think we have done perfectly right in coming to the colony. As it is likely that another vessel will shortly be sailing for England, I shall endeavour to write you therefore more particularly by her.

Hoping to be guided by unerring Providence in my future path, and begging an interest in your prayers,

I remain, &c.,

NATHANIEL TURNER.

To the Secretaries of the Missionary Society, London.

[Church Missionary House.

REV. S. MARSDEN TO REV. D. COATES.

Feb. 24.

Wesleyan  
missionaries  
left New  
Zealand.

DEAR SIR,—

Parramatta, 24th Feb., 1827.

Before this reaches you you will have heard that the Wesleyan missionaries have left their station in Wangoroa, and returned to this colony, on account of some civil commotions which have occurred amongst the natives. They have suffered the spoiling of their goods, but no personal injury. I have not heard the real cause of the late disturbance amongst the natives. The following is one account: Shungee has lately suffered very great personal as well as family afflictions; some of his own tribe have behaved ill to him, in taking one of his favourite wives; his oldest son was shot in war; a near relation hung himself; his daughter died; and other heavy calamities came upon him: in consequence of which he resolved to leave his tribe, at least that part which he was not upon good terms with. As Wangoroa originally belonged to his father, he determined to go and reside there. If the inhabitants would allow him to take quiet possession of a portion he wanted, he would not disturb them, but if they refused he would take it by force. The natives did refuse to give up the land. Shungee then went to war. He was shot thro', near his shoulder, as we hear, but not killed, and gained a victory. Part of Shungee's people plundered the missionaries, and destroyed their premises, when the missionaries now came away, being greatly alarmed. The following circumstance occurred at or near the same time at the Bay of Islands: The brig Wellington had been sent from Port Jackson with 65 fellows to Norfolk Island. The sentence of death had been recorded against many of these men for crimes committed in the colony. The fellows took the Wellington, and carried her into the Bay of Islands, when 45 of these fellows landed, and got amongst the natives, which alarmed our missionaries. The Sisters, a whaler, made an attack upon the

Shungee  
claimed part of  
Whangoroa.

Fellons on  
Wellington  
seized her and  
went to Bay  
of Islands.

Wellington and retook her, and the natives delivered up the 45 who were on shore, when they were all brought to Port Jackson. Some of them have been tried, and are now under sentence of death. The Sisters came with them. As soon as I received the missionaries' letters, and saw the Wesleyan missionaries, I determined upon going to New Zealand as soon as possible, in order to arrange the concerns of the mission, see the chiefs, and settle their disputes as far as I could. The missionaries have sent up several tons of their goods to Port Jackson in the Sisters, from the alarm they were in at the time the Sisters was there.

It was my intention to have gone in the Sisters; but while I was thinking upon it, His Majesty's ship of war the Rainbow came in, and will sail soon for New Zealand. I immediately applied to the Capn., the Hon. Rous, for a passage, who accommodated me immediately. On obtaining a passage I wrote to the Archdeacon and the Govr. for leave of absence, which was readily granted. I am not under any apprehensions for the personal safety of the missionaries; at the same time, there are many important considerations which induce me to visit them at this time. I want to point out to the natives the greatness of their crimes in robbing the Wesleyan missionaries; to learn from the chiefs what security they will afford to the persons and property of the missionaries; what further civil commotions are likely to take place; and how they may be prevented; to rectify some hasty opinions which appear to have been formed amongst the missionaries relative to forming a colony of New Zealanders in N.S.W. (this subject requires great consideration before any movement is made, unless the state of New Zealand should be such that the missionaries could remain no longer in safety, which in my judgment is not likely to happen). . . .

Mr. Norman and also Mr. Lisk will both remain in the colony until my return. The committee will then determine their station and employment, agreeable to the instructions received from the parent Committee. Before the present disturbance the prospect of success in the mission was very gratifying. Peace and union of spirit prevailed amongst the body. The Revd. Wm. Williams is a man of rare talent, piety, zeal, and Christian wisdom, and promises to do much. His heart is in the work, and so is his brother's. Their wives are both devoted to the work, and most amiable and valuable women.

The mission has now been established about 13 years, and no man, woman, or child who were sent out to the work has died or had a bone broken, tho' living in the midst of cannibals.

I remain, &c.,

D. Coates, Esq.

SAML. MARSDEN.

1827  
Feb. 24.

Retaken by  
Sisters.

Will go to  
New Zealand.

Mr. Norman  
and Mr. Lisk  
remain in  
colony.

New Zealand  
mission  
established  
thirteen years

1827

March 8.

[Wesleyan Mission House.

REV. N. TURNER TO SECRETARIES, WESLEYAN MISSION.

Parramatta, March 8th, 1827.

DEAR FATHERS AND BRETHREN,—

It is with no small degree of diffidence I proceed to address you on a subject which to me is of the greatest importance.

Cannot acquire  
New Zealand  
language.

After three years and six months' residence amongst the heathen of New Zealand I am fully satisfied that I shall never acquire their language, and the principle reason is because I have little or no natural talent for such an undertaking. The same opinion is entertained by my two brethren who have lived and laboured with me ever since I went down to New Zealand. This they have publicly given as their opinion in the presence of our brethren labouring in Sydney, who, I expect, will write you on the subject. The same sentiment is entertained by some of my most sincere friends of the church establishment in the Bay of Islands, who assured me before I left for the colony it was their opinion that it would be wrong for me to return again amongst the heathen, for the reason above stated.

Wishes to  
remain in  
New South  
Wales.

It is therefore my sincere wish and fervent prayer that you would allow and appoint me to labour as an English preacher in some part of the New South Wales District.

There is another reason which is to me of some importance, though I feel some reluctance in mentioning it, viz., the enfeebled constitution of my wife. The various exercises, trials, and labours through which she has had to pass have so reduced her frame and enervated her system that I have too good reason to believe she will never be able to endure that which will unavoidably be her portion if we are again appointed to labour amongst the heathen. It is indeed a great consolation to me to be blessed with a partner who possesses a truly missionary spirit and who would willingly live and die amongst the heathen, yet, if I may be allowed to judge from past experience, I am satisfied that her life amongst savages will be but little better than a lingering death.

I trust that you will not consider my wish to be appointed to labour in the colonies as an English preacher as the effects of our late calamities. No. It has long been a growing conviction with me that I should never be an efficient missionary amongst the heathen. Previous to our late distresses I had intended, after the arrival of Bro. White, to write you on the same subject, and to request the same favour from you.

As a secular man I might be of considerable service in New Zealand or any such station, but I am satisfied my fathers and brethren do not wish me to labour amongst the heathen in such



a capacity, nor could I be contented so to do, for I should ever have the conviction I was not doing the work appointed me of Heaven.

1827  
March 8.

Hitherto I hope I have endeavoured to prove myself worthy the confidence you placed in me, and by the grace of God I still intend so to do, and shall, I believe, be willing to go back to New Zealand, or to any other heathen station which you may think well to appoint me unto. Still, I must say, that with my present views and feelings, I shall go to such a station with a full conviction that I am not going according to the will of Heaven.

Willing to go  
wherever  
appointed.

Dear fathers and brethren, hoping and believing that you will favourably regard my request, I shall patiently wait an answer from you,

And remain, &c.,

NATHANIEL TURNER.

To the Secretaries of the Wesleyan Missionary Society.

[New South Wales, Vol 181.

GOVERNOR DARLING TO EARL BATHURST.

(No. 41.)

MY LORD,—

Government House, 13th March, 1827.

March 13.

I do myself the honor to transmit to your Lordship copy of a petition from Mr. Robert Duke, master of the ship *Sisters*, by whom the brig *Wellington*, which had been piratically seized by the prisoners of the Crown in their passage to Norfolk Island, was recaptured, praying for remuneration on the part of himself, the owners, and crew of the said ship in consequence of the loss which they sustained in being prevented from prosecuting the object of their voyage.

Recapture of  
the *Wellington*;  
compensation  
required.

Being myself unable to determine what would be a reasonable allowance in such a case, I availed myself of the presence of the Honble. Captain Rous and Captain Wetherall, of His Majesty's Navy, and requested they would meet Mr. Jones, a respectable merchant of Sydney who is engaged in the whale fishery, and consider the remuneration to which the persons concerned in the *Sisters* might be entitled.

Consult others  
on payment.

I have now the honor to forward a copy of the report of these gentlemen, by which it will be seen they are of opinion that £1,800 will be a sufficient remuneration for the time lost by the *Sisters*, and for the salvage of the hull and cargo of the brig *Wellington*, to which they may be considered asking a claim.

I have informed Captain Duke that, instead of settling his claim here, I should refer the report and his petition for Your Lordship's consideration, in order that such remuneration as might be determined on should be paid to the owners at Home.

To be paid in  
England.

1827

March 13.

New Zealand  
natives seize  
the pirates.

I beg leave to add that, having represented that he required an advance of £300 to provide the necessary supplies for his voyage, I have authorized that sum to be issued on account of his claim, and I have further directed him to be supplied with 524 lbs. of gunpowder and three musquets to replace the issue of those articles to the natives at New Zealand as rewards for apprehending and delivering up the pirates who had absconded.

I have, &c.,

R. DARLING.

The Right Honble. the Earl Bathurst, K.G.

[New South Wales, Vol. 181.

[Enclosure No. 1.]

# MEMORIAL.

To His Excellency Lieutenant General Ralph Darling, Governor-in-Chief, &c., &c.

THE humble petition of Robert Duke, master of the ship Sisters, of the Port of London, sheweth,—

Sisters on  
whaling  
expedition,  
New Zealand.

That the ship Sisters was fitted out for the southern whale fishery, and sailed from London on the first of January, 1826, and on the 26th December last she went into the Bay of Islands, in New Zealand, for the purpose of refitting for the whaling season, then about to commence, at which place your petitioner found the ship Harriat, whaler, undergoing some repairs.

How he saw the  
pirates.

The pirates' tale to him.

That on Friday, the fifth day of January, a brig came into the harbour which your petitioner immediately recognized to be the ship Wellington, belonging to Mr. Joseph Underwood, he having before seen her in this port; your petitioner accordingly proceeded on board, when he was informed that she was proceeding with troops to make a settlement in the River Thames, in New Zealand.

How  
recaptured.

That your petitioner, from many circumstances, suspected the truth of this statement, and after some correspondence discovered that she had left this colony with prisoners bound for Norfolk Island, and that they had captured her on the voyage, on which your petitioner, with the concurrence of Mr. Clark, the master of the Harriat, and the missionaries, made preparations for retaking her, which object was accomplished on Sunday the eleventh, when your petitioner extricated the military guard from imprisonment, and took measures for the general security of the vessel, and for the apprehension of such of the prisoners as had escaped into the woods of New Zealand.

That the whole of the prisoners, with the exception of five persons, having been retaken, your petitioner, at the request of Mr. Harewood, the master of the brig Wellington, received into

the ship Sisters thirty-two of the prisoners, and on the 28th January proceeded from New Zealand, in company with the brig Wellington (which vessel had on board twenty-seven of the prisoners), to this port, where she arrived on the 9th February instant.

1827

March 13.

Thirty-two and twenty-seven taken to Port Jackson in Sisters and Wellington.

That your petitioner begs to submit to Your Excellency the statement contained in the log-book of the ship Sisters, and also your petitioner's private log, and entreat that Your Excellency will afford to your petitioner an opportunity of offering the testimony of the master and passengers of the brig Wellington and other persons respecting the transaction as to Your Excellency may seem meet.

That your petitioner, in proceeding to this port, was compelled to quit the whaling station at New Zealand at the commencement of the season, and which will be over before the return of your petitioner to that or any other whaling station, and that your petitioner, in proceeding to this port, has occasioned a deviation in the voyage of the ship Sisters that will make it necessary to effect a fresh insurance on the vessel.

Whaling: His loss in their capture.

Require a fresh insurance.

Your petitioner therefore humbly prays that Your Excellency will take your petitioner's case into consideration, and that Your Excellency will make your petitioner such allowance on behalf of himself and the owners and the crew of the said ship Sisters for the losses sustained by them as to Your Excellency may seem meet.

Asks compensation.

And your petitioner will ever pray.

ROBERT DUKE.

Sydney, New South Wales, 19th February, 1827.

[New South Wales, Vol. 181.

[Enclosure No. 2.]

H. J. ROUS AND OTHERS TO THE COLONIAL SECRETARY.

SIR,—

Sydney, 24th February, 1827.

In answer to your letter of the 23rd instant, transmitting us the petition of Mr. Robert Duke, master of the ship Sisters, and His Excellency's desire that we should estimate and report the sums to which Mr. Duke, the owners and crew of the vessel under his command, are equitably entitled to for the capture of the brig Wellington, piratically seized by convicts in her passage from here to Norfolk Island, we are of opinion that the sum of one thousand eight hundred pounds will cover the salvage of the hull and cargo of the said brig Wellington, and remunerate the master, owners, and crew for their loss of time

Report on the Sisters' loss, &c.

Suggest £1,800 compensation.

1827  
March 13.

and the amount of cargo which during the space of three months they would have procured had they remained on the fishery.

We have, &c.,

HENRY JOHN ROUS, Captn., H.M.S. Rainbow.

F. A. WETHERALL, Captn., H.M.S. Fly.

RICHARD JONES, Merchant, Sydney.

The Honble. A. McLeay, Esqr.

[New South Wales, Vol. 186.

REV. D. COATES TO VISCOUNT GODERICH.

Church Missionary House,

Salisbury Square, May 31, 1827.

May 31.

MY LORD,—

Passages to  
New South  
Wales wanted  
for Mr. Yate  
and Mr. and  
Mrs. Baker.

I am directed by the Committee of the Church Missionary Society respectfully to request that Your Lordship will have the kindness to grant passages to New South Wales to the Rev. William Yate and Mr. Charles Baker and Mrs. Baker on board the Sovereign or the John (convict ship), both of which the Committee are informed have been taken up by His Majesty's Government, and are likely to sail [from] the river about the middle of June. The Rev. Wm. Yate is proceeding as a missionary from the Church Missionary Society to New Zealand, and Mr. Baker is going out in the same mission in the capacity of a catechist. Should Your Lordship approve of it, Mr. Yate will very gladly perform the duties of chaplain during the voyage.

Going as  
missionaries to  
New Zealand.

I am also directed to request a grant of tonnage for twenty tons of stores for the use of the Church Missionary Society's mission in New Zealand on board the same ship in which Mr. Yate and Mr. Baker may go out. The stores in question are designed exclusively for the objects of the mission.

I have, &c.,

DANDESON COATES, Asst. Sec., C.M.S.

The Right Honourable Lord Viscount Goderich, &c., &c.

[New South Wales, Vol. 186.

THE NAVY COMMISSIONER TO SECRETARY HAY.

June 6.

SIR,—

Navy Office, 6th June, 1827.

In return to your letter of the 31st ultimo, transmitting a proposal from Colonel Torrens for facilitating the emigration of families to New South Wales, we have to offer the following observations for Viscount Goderich's consideration:—

New Zealand  
cowdie spars.

The quality of the cowdie spars procured in New Zealand is such as to render them exceedingly desirable for naval pur-



poses, and we think they are equal, if not superior, to those of Russia or America, but we have been deterred from following this source of supply on account of the expense attending it, for although we adopted, in a great measure, the plan now suggested by Colonel Torrens, but on a less extravagant scale, it was found that the cost of masts so procured was much beyond those of an excellent quality which we have since imported from Virginia.

The cowdie spars from New Zealand of a size suitable to naval purposes are by no means in abundance, and are not found in the neighbourhood of the harbours, so that the toil and difficulty in procuring them, and transporting them to the ship, is immense, and the two ships we sent out were detained ten and twelve months in procuring for the one ship a cargo of ninety eight, and for the other of one hundred and five masts.

Our object in the equipment of the two large store-ships in question was to procure these large masts at New Zealand, and, in order to diminish the expense of the undertaking, the ships were first employed to carry convicts to New South Wales; but, notwithstanding this set off against the expense of the ships (for we must otherwise have procured convict ships), the masts cost at least £50 per cent. more than those from Virginia.

Colonel Torrens proposes that the ship, having on board one hundred families, estimated at five in each family, besides the crew, should touch at New Zealand on the voyage to New South Wales, in order to have the labour of the emigrants in procuring the masts. We apprehend it is scarcely necessary to trouble His Lordship with an observation upon so impracticable a proposition, it being evident that a ship already filled with human beings does not admit of being also filled with a cargo of spars; besides which it is of the first importance that a ship so crowded should meet with the least possible delay in reaching her destination, in order to prevent sickness; and we cannot make ourselves accessory to the hazard attending the confinement of so many persons in a transport for not less than three quarters of a year by recommending this measure, even if it were practicable, to take in a cargo of spars while the emigrants remain in the ship.

It may be proper to observe that, according to the report of those persons whom we employed in our store-ships, the natives of New Zealand are exceedingly apprehensive that their island will be taken possession of by the English, and the arrival of a ship with so many people would, we fear, excite unfriendly feelings, and probably disappoint the expectations held out by Colonel Torrens.

In procuring naval stores it is necessary to use the utmost economy, and to secure punctuality in the delivery, neither

1827  
June 6.

Desirable, but  
too expensive.

Suitable trees  
distant from  
harbours.

Experiment  
proved cost to  
be 50 per cent.  
more than  
Virginian spars.

Colonel  
Torrens's  
proposition  
impracticable.

No room in  
emigrant ship  
for spars

New Zealanders  
would resent  
arrival of  
emigrant ship.

1827

June 6.

of which is likely to result from the measure in question; and His Lordship is well aware that the grants for the naval service do not admit of payment for casual supplies of stores beyond such as are contracted for in each year; we may indeed truly say that the estimates of the navy are so curtailed as to occasion great difficulty in providing for the common wants of the service.

Proposed mode  
of payment.

The mode of paying for masts and hemp from New Zealand by granting navy bills to bear an interest of £4 per cent., as recommended by Colonel Torrens, might prevent the inconvenience of an immediate payment, but such a mode cannot be adopted without a special Act of Parliament, as the law forbids our issuing bills bearing an interest.

We have not had the same proof of the quality of the hemp of New Zealand as of the spars, but the report of its quality, as far as our experiments have gone, is satisfactory.

We are, &c.,

RT. SEPPINGS.

H. LEGGE.

J. M. LEWIS.

R. W. Hay, Esqre.

[New South Wales, Vol. 189.

ROBERT TORRENS TO UNDER-SECRETARY HORTON.

June 14.

SIR,—

June 14th, 1827.

*Re pauper  
emigration to  
New South  
Wales.*

Having perused with great attention the substance of the report of the Navy Board upon the plan of emigration to New South Wales which I had the honor to propose, I request permission to make a few observations upon that report.

In the plan proposed, the expence of the emigration was to be mainly defrayed by collecting and preparing the hemp which is indigenous in the Islands of New Zealand, and which, by the contracts of the Navy Board, would be worth £40 per ton when brought to this country. It was proposed, indeed, to bring home cowdie spars, but it is obvious that this proposal was added not as the most eligible mode of defraying the expense of the emigration, but for the national object of securing an important article of naval equipment independently of Russia and of the United States.

*Reason for  
proposing  
cowdie spars.*

A transport of 500 tons would bring home a cargo of New Zealand flax worth £20,000, and a cargo of New Zealand spars worth no more than £8,500. If the expence of the emigration could be defrayed by one cargo of flax and one of spars it would be much more than defrayed by rejecting the spars altogether, and lading both transports with the flax. The grounds which the report of the Navy Board assigns for not recommending

*Both cargoes  
could be flax.*

this plan are precisely those which, if we confine our view to the replacing of the expence of locating the emigrants in New South Wales, would go to shew that the plan would prove more decidedly beneficial than even its calculations have set forth.

From information subsequently received from a part of New Zealand not visited by the storeships of the Navy Board, I am convinced that the objections urged by the Board on account of the difficulty of procuring cowdie spars would now be found to be invalid. But it is unnecessary to examine these objections in detail, because, by rejecting the cowdie spars altogether, and lading the transports only with the native flax, the plan, considered as a scheme for defraying the expence of emigration, would be rendered more efficient.

The Commissioners state that the report of the quality of the hemp of New Zealand, so far as their experiments have gone, is satisfactory. This, I conceive, is quite sufficient to establish the propriety and expediency of giving at least a trial to the plan of emigration which I have had the honor to submit. The *Phormium tenax*, which the satisfactory experiments here referred to have proved to be equal to the finest Russian hemp, grows without culture, and in great profusion throughout the Islands of New Zealand. Under such circumstances, can there exist any reasonable doubt that one hundred Scotch or Irish families familiar with the process of preparing flax would, within a moderate time, load one transport of 500 tons with the New Zealand flax? Now, this single cargo, at the contract prices paid by the Navy Board, would be worth £20,000; that is, would replace the whole expence of locating one hundred families in New South Wales.

The Commissioners observe that the natives are exceedingly apprehensive of the English taking possession of their island, and that the arrival of a ship with so many people would excite unfriendly feelings, and operate to defeat the object in view. In reply to this objection it is sufficient to state the fact that when, as frequently happens, several British whalers arrive at the same time in a New Zealand port no alarm or unfriendly feeling is excited in the natives. Whatever vague apprehensions may now exist amongst them of the English taking possession of their islands, instead of being excited, would be altogether removed, as experience convinced them that no usurpation was contemplated, and that the emigrants came and departed for purposes purely commercial.

The Commissioners state that the proposition that the ships should proceed to New Zealand with the emigrants would not be desirable, inasmuch as the length of the voyage, and the long confinement of the passengers, would inevitably endanger their

1827  
June 14.

No difficulty  
in obtaining  
spars.

New Zealand  
flax quite  
satisfactory.

This flax grows  
without culture.

Natives might  
prove  
unfriendly.

Natives would  
soon cease  
to fear  
English  
usurpation.

1827  
June 14.  
—

Employment of  
emigrants on  
shore of New  
Zealand.

Will arrive in  
better health in  
New South  
Wales.

Practicability,  
ease, and  
efficacy of plan.

health. This objection proceeds from a misconception of the plan. The voyage to New Zealand is not longer than that to New South Wales; it is not intended to confine the emigrants on board during the stay of the vessels; on the contrary, the object is to employ them on shore to collect and clean a cargo of the native flax. It is not possible to conceive that this easy employment, performed under one of the most salubrious climates of the world, and while supplied abundantly with potatoes, fresh pork, and fish, could endanger the health of the emigrants. On the contrary, they would be refreshed by their short residence in New Zealand, and would arrive at their destination in better condition than if they had made a direct voyage to New South Wales.

In conclusion, I beg to say that after having given my best consideration to the report of the Navy Board, I feel a more decided conviction of the practicability and efficacy of the plan of emigration which I have had the honor to propose. Nothing can reasonably be feared, either on account of the disposition of the natives or for the health of the emigrants; and by admitting the objections of the Board with respect to the difficulty of procuring cowdie spars, and confining the labour of the emigrants to lading the transports with the native flax, the replacement of the expence of their emigrating would be rendered perfectly easy and certain.

I have, &c.,

ROBERT TORRENS.

The Right Hon. R. Wilmot Horton, M.P., &c., &c.

[New South Wales, Vol. 186.

SECRETARY, NAVY BOARD, TO SECRETARY HAY.

June 19.  
—

MY DEAR SIR,—

Navy Office, June 19th, 1827.

I have read the letter addressed to you by Colonel Torrens, dated the 14th instant, and reconsidered every point adverted to in our official report, and the more I think of the plan the more I am convinced that persons of a less sanguine disposition than the Colonel will at once see that our objections are reasonable and well founded, and, indeed, I should say unanswerable except as answered by Colonel Torrens—namely, that “the grounds which the report of the N. Board assigns for not recommending this plan are precisely those which would go to shew that the plan would prove more decidedly beneficial than even its calculations have set forth.” I make no comment upon this, but simply assure you that I would readily and heartily assist the zeal and good intentions of Colonel Torrens if I could do so with propriety and fairness to the public service, but as

Still objects  
to Colonel  
Torrens's plan.



the facts stand I must entreat that the stinted grants for naval purposes may not be subject in any degree to so speculative and unsound a proposition.

1827  
June 19.

Begs naval grants may not be so used.

Colonel Torrens certainly contrives, for a time, to get rid of the objection to the confinement of the emigrants to the ship during her stay at New Zealand by proposing to employ them on shore in collecting and cleaning the hemp, but he does not state, even supposing the successful efforts of these unsheltered labourers on a savage island, how, after loading the ship with hemp and spars, any space is to be found for 500 persons on the ship's voyage to N. S. Wales on her return to England.

No room for people when ship loaded.

Colonel Torrens thinks the easy employment assigned to the emigrants during their stay at New Zealand would tend to refresh them, and enable them to reach their destination in a better condition than if they had made a direct voyage to N. S. Wales, particularly as he says the climate is the most salubrious in the world; but a person now at my elbow who was there a whole year declares he never was in any climate where the rain was so heavy and so frequent.

I am, &c.,

T. B. MARTIN.

P.S.—I need scarcely call to yr. recollection that there will be a large proportion of women and children to be landed at N. Zealand, and I should think their condition would be truly pitiable.

Pitiable condition of women and children.

[Church Missionary Society.]

REV. S. MARSDEN TO REV. E. BICKERSTETH.

Parramatta, 12th Novr., 1827.

Nov. 12.

REVD. AND DEAR SIR,—

My colleague the Revd. R. Hill will transmit to you the several documents relative to the concerns of the mission. With respect to Mr. Lisk, he has not been able to remove from Sydney, on account of the indisposition of Mrs. Lisk. She was obliged to remain there for medical assistance; and I fear she will never recover her health, so that we are at a loss to know what to do with Mr. Lisk. We must wait a little longer, and see whether Mrs. Lisk can remove or not. Mr. Norman informs me he is much better. He is in a very important station, and a prudent pious man. Mrs. Norman has had a cancer in her breast, and has undergone an operation for it, and is doing well. I trust the Society will approve of our sending Mr. and Mrs. Norman to Van Diemen's Land. We considered the weak state of Mrs. Norman did not warrant us in sending him to New Zealand. We have had a communication with the

Mr. Norman filling an important situation.

1827  
Nov. 12.

Objectionable  
clause in grant  
of land.

Colonial Government relative to the 10,000 acres of land for the aborigines. According to the instruction transmitted from the Colonial Office this land was to be located under similar conditions that 10,000 acres had been promised to the London Missy. Society. I beg to remark that there is one clause in the grant to the London M. S. which clause I severely object to its being put into the grant to the C. M. Society. I told the Colonial Secretary if the same clause was put into the intended grant it would not be worth acceptance. The clause to which I allude prevents the Society from allowing any individuals to feed their cattle and sheep on this land, or to make any use of it but for the natives. Instead of this clause the trustees should be authorised to rent any part of it for grazing, or any other purposes of agriculture, to raise a fund for clothing and victualling the aborigines, and to support a missionary and his family. Unless Government grant it upon this just and liberal principle it will be of no benefit. In this opinion the Colonial Secretary, Mr. McLeay, fully agreed. I have not seen the Governor since upon this point. We all fully agree with your Committee that the trustees of the land should be in England, for many reasons which I need not explain; but they should have power to rent it, so long as the produce of the land, whether from feeding cattle or sheep, &c., is applied to the sole benefit of the aborigines. It can be of no advantage to possess land, unless it can be made use of. I think the Governor will see the propriety of omitting the clause objected to, when he makes the grant.

Trustees should  
be in England.

Mr. Threkeld  
has left Lake  
Macquarie.

There is another circumstance which I wish to mention. The Revd. Mr. Threkeld, missionary from the London M. S., has lately left Lake Macquarie, that station which had been fixed upon by the late deputation from that Society to establish a mission for the aborigines, and where the 10,000 acres were selected for their grant. That mission has been attended with more expense than the directors approve. I think it is more than probable that this mission will be relinquished. You are already acquainted with the wishes of some of the New Zealand chiefs to emigrate with their families to N. S. Wales. Should the London Missionary Society relinquish Lake Macquarie and the chiefs of New Zealand come over to this colony, this lake would probably be a suitable station for their settlement, as the lake abounds with fish, and has a communication with the sea. I have not seen the land, and therefore cannot judge of its quality, but as the New Zealanders live much upon fish, in that respect it would be a very desirable spot. I merely mention the subject to you, and have mentioned it to Mr. Hankey in a postscript of my letter to him. The directors have authorised the disposal of the improvements made upon the land; but they can give

Would do for  
New  
Zealanders'  
settlement.

no title, and therefore the property cannot be sold, unless an establishment is formed there. . . .

1827  
Nov. 12.  
—

I am happy to say we go on here very quietly now. Some of my bitter enemies have sunk into great contempt. Divine Providence is requiting their works upon their own heads. . . . From falsehood, misrepresentation, and powerful interest exerted against me to save individuals from public disgrace Lord Bathurst was so far imposed upon as to write a stray letter to General Darling expressive of his high disapprobation of my conduct. Had I been guilty of what His Lordship had been led to believe I should have merited his censure; but as I was not, and this is well known to the present Govt., it has produced no effect to my prejudice. The Archdeacon and I have been upon very friendly terms: he has been much annoyed and complained of at the Colonial Office from the same influence that I suffered from. I am much mistaken if Mr. James Stephen, in the Colonial Office, has not been deceived by some of my calumniators.

I remain, &c.,

Rev. Ed. Bickersteth.

SAML. MARSDEN.

[New South Wales, Vol. 197.

AN ANONYMOUS LETTER.

SIR,—

Pauls Wharf, April, 1828.

1828  
April.

I have to request you will pardon my intruding some crude ideas on the subject of an emigration to New Zealand in preference to any other part of the world from the small expense at which colonies could be established there, besides many other important advantages which would be derived from colonizing that island.

Advantages of  
colonising New  
Zealand.

I have no interest in any way whatever in now once more troubling you on this subject. I believe it is very generally admitted that the Islands of New Zealand are the best in the South Pacific Ocean, in soil, climate, timber, trees, rivers, and in a population of intelligent natives, brave, active, and, I believe, partial to the English, and many of the minor chiefs wishing to put themselves under the protection of Great Britain. The natives are an enterprising and powerful race of people, fond of the sea, and numbers of them going out in English whalers for one or more voyages. One whaler had 12 New Zealanders, and we have some who have been three or four years in our ships who behave themselves perfectly to our satisfaction.

Best islands in  
the South  
Pacific.

Desire  
protection of  
Great Britain.

Natives often  
go out in  
English  
whalers.

I confess I feel considerable anxiety into whose hands New Zealand will be placed, as I am satisfied that the possession of the Islands of New Zealand by Great Britain, France, or Ame-

Possession of  
New Zealand  
means  
command of  
South Pacific.

1828  
April.

rica will give that Power the command of the South Pacific, and if in the hands of either of the latter Powers will soon disturb the peace of our colonies in New Holland. If we colonize New Zealand we shall be able to keep our convict colonies under some controul, and it will be impossible (or improbable) for any naval Power to send any expedition to trouble New Holland or New Zealand. If France takes possession of New Zealand, which she appears dispos'd to do, from the number of her cruizers which we see by the public papers are continually visiting all parts of that ocean, it will be almost impossible to retain for any length of time New South Wales as a colony, as it would be a great object with France to cripple so large a British colony, so full of bad dispos'd and combustible a population, and so near to their colony in New Zealand. France would upon all occasions endeavour to keep alive all disaffection, and with such materials to work upon they would find no difficulty in making the colony miserable. France, with the disposal of the effective population of N. Zealand for becoming useful as seamen, would, in the event of a war with G. Britain, capture all the whaling and trading ships outward or homeward bound from New South Wales, as they must pass N. Zealand in their voyages to or from New Holland, without their passages are much lengthened by going through Torres Straits.

Consequences if  
France takes  
possession.

Great expense  
in founding  
Colony of New  
South Wales.

When a colony was first sent out to New South Wales it was attended with an expence far beyond any possibility of calculating. The direct passage out and home of transports to the colony is 10 months. It took several years, by trials of live-stock from Europe, Rio Janeiro, Cape of Good Hope, Batavia, and allmost from all our settlements in India, to find out which improv'd in New So. Wales. The same in trying all sorts of grain, seeds, vegetables, fruit-trees, poultry, &c., &c. By degrees, but at an immense expence by death of live-stock and failure in many articles, they at length succeeded in having every article and live-stock which all thrive in New South Wales.

Little expense  
if New Zealand  
colonised.

New Zealand is about 7 to 10 days run from Port Jackson; that the expence of sending live-stock and the risk of death must be small, and both islands being in the same latitude, there can be no doubt of every thing thriving at New Zealand as well as they do at New So. Wales. All the above advantages must be most beneficial to those who intend to settle in New Zealand, and I think that many of the respectable settlers at Port Jackson will be glad to purchase land in New Zealand, and have a farm there, in case any insurrection of convicts should at any time take place; but if convicts are sent there, or allowed to go there, that description of settlers would soon create dissensions with the natives, and end in a war of extermination to

Convicts should  
be excluded.



one party. If the respectable settlers go to New Zealand many of the small chiefs will be glad to part with their land on terms on being admitted within what may be called protected missionary districts.

1828  
April.

By establishing any number of districts, or by any other name of description, or as protecting districts along the coast at certain distances, which would not allow room for any foreigners to settle, and as missionaries they can settle all places or islands without giving just cause for jealousy, as it will not appear to be a Government or national settlement, but to be visited as heretofore by H.M. cruisers which visit those ports.

Wisdom of  
establishing  
missionary  
districts.

I am quite satisfied that a British settlement in New Zealand will be the greatest protection to our settlement from foreign attack or the internal rising up of the convicts in New S. Wales.

Would be  
great protection  
to New South  
Wales.

I am quite ashamed of having taken up so much of your time, and writing so decidedly on a subject of which I can know so little.

I have, &c.,

[Unsigned.]

[NOTE.—Apparently addressed to the Under-Secretary of the Colonial Office.]

JOHN CROKER TO UNDER-SECRETARY TWISS.

SIR,—

Admiralty Office, 2nd Sep., 1828.

Sept. 2.

I am commanded by His Royal Highness the Lord High Admiral to transmit to you the accompanying copy of a letter from Mr. Samuel Curtis, recommending the culture of New Zealand flax for the use of the Royal Navy, together with a copy of a report from the Navy Board on the flax; and I am to request you will lay the same before the Secretary, Sir George Murray.

Curtis on New  
Zealand flax.

I am, &c.,

H. Twiss, Esq.

JOHN CROKER.\*

NAVY BOARD TO JOHN CROKER.

SIR,—

Navy Office, 30th August, 1828.

We return Mr. Curtis's letter (referred to us on the 12th instant), respecting the cultivation of the New Zealand flax, and we beg to state, for the information of H.R.H. the Lord High Admiral, that we have frequently had this subject under our consideration, and that there is no doubt, from the result of trials made at Woolwich and Chatham in the years 1821 and 1822, as well as on board the Wellesley at a subsequent period,

Report on flax  
growth.

\* John Croker was Secretary to the Admiralty.—F.M.B.

1828  
Sept. 2.

New Zealand  
flax as good as  
Russian.

of which we received a report from the captain in February, 1827, that both the hemp and flax of the growth of New Zealand are equal in quality to the same articles imported from Russia.

The question, however, raised by Mr. Curtis—namely, the extensive cultivation of these articles—has also already been well considered by us, in consequence of a letter from Viscount Goderick, to whom, on the 27th May, 1827, the Emigration Committee submitted a plan for the accomplishment of this object, but as in procuring naval stores it is necessary to use the utmost economy and to secure punctuality in the delivery, neither of which we conceived likely to result from the proposed measure, we felt it expedient to withhold our concurrence therein, and we see no reason now to induce us to alter our opinion.

Why nothing  
done.

We therefore request you will submit to H.R.H. that the vast expense which the cultivation on an extensive scale must occasion, the uncertainty of the crops, and the delay and difficulty which must necessarily attend the importation of hemp and flax from so distant a source as New Zealand, when they can be readily obtained both from the Baltic and from Italy, are circumstances which we presume will be considered sufficient with the reasons before mentioned to render it wholly unadvisable for the Naval Department to give countenance to Mr. Curtis's project.

Plan too  
expensive.

We are, &c.,

T. TUCKER.

R. MIDDLETON.

J. W. LEWES.

The Right Hon. G. W. Croker.

#### S. CURTIS TO THE LORD HIGH ADMIRAL.

SIR,— Glazenwood Nest, Coggeshall, 25 July, 1828.

In a conversation with the Revd. Mr. Page, the brother of Admiral Page, on the subject of the New Zealand flax, at his suggestion I promised to lay before Your Royal Highness a few remarks on it, with a view of bringing it into extensive culture for the navy of this Kingdom.

Flax culture  
for navy.

The plant is the *Phormium tenax*, or New Zealand flax, not uncommon in our collections of exotic plants, although not hardy enough to bear our severest winters. It would not be worth the expense of cultivating a half hardy plant on so extensive a scale (as it must be to be useful) in the most temperate parts of Great Britain, where land and labour would be too valuable, but it might nevertheless be advantageous to cultivate it on a scale sufficient for trying experiments as to the best mode of cleaning the fibre suitable for cordage and canvass.

Not to be  
grown here but  
for  
experimenting.

Cleaning the  
fibre.

In hemp and flax, the plants now in use, the stem only is used, in this plant the leaf; consequently there is ligneous and

much extraneous matter to separate from the former, whilst nothing but the coating and the parenchyma or flesh-part of the leaf is to be separated from the latter; and whether this would be best effected by water entering, drying and brackling, I need not give an opinion.

1828  
Sept. 2.

Leaf is  
ligneous.

The plant thrives luxuriantly in the moist grounds of New Holland, making foliage about four feet long, which, being produced in the form of a fan, a few leaves on each side may be torn off annually without material injury to it.

Moist ground  
of New  
Holland.

The women of New Zealand, ignorant of any better mode, fix the end of the leaf betwixt their toes, and scrape the outside and fleshy part away with mupel shells near a stream, washing the fibre, which is dried and tied in hanks, like the sample sent, and made into mats and clothing.

I beg to suggest for Your Royal Highness's consideration whether a plant of such easy culture in a climate where land and labour is cheap would not be of national importance, and whether the convicts of New Holland could not be most advantageously employed in producing an article very much superior to any European hemp.

Convicts  
should grow it.

I beg Your Royal Highness will believe I only take the liberty of troubling you on the presumption of its being a public good, and that Your Royal Highness, in your zeal for promoting the best interests of the country, would cause enquiry to be made into an affair of so much importance.

All for public  
good.

I am, &c.,

SAMUEL CURTIS.

To His Royal Highness the Lord High Admiral.

#### LETTER FROM GOVERNOR DARLING TO SIR G. MURRAY.

New South Wales Government House,

1829

SIR,—

4th Jany., 1829.

Jan. 4.

I do myself the honor to transmit herewith a letter addressed to you by Mr. Thomas Raine, merchant of Sydney, on the subject of registering a vessel at this port which was built at New Zealand.

Raine's  
shipping letter.

Mr. Raine has stated the case so fully in the enclosed letter that I am not aware, sir, I can add anything which would be useful on the subject. I beg, however, to express my opinion that in a political point of view it appears highly desirable that Mr. Raine, and such persons as are disposed to form establishments at New Zealand, should receive every possible encouragement. The intercourse which would take place between our people and the natives would tend more than anything else

New Zealand  
trade  
establishments.

1829

Jan. 4.

New Zealand  
ship no  
register.

to the civilization of the New Zealanders, and promote a friendly understanding which at some future period may be of importance.

I beg to enclose the opinion of the Crown lawyers of this Government, that the vessel in question could not legally receive a register at this port.

I have, &c.,

R. DARLING.

The Right Honble. Sir Geo. Murray, G.C.B., &c., &c.

[Enclosure.]

THOMAS RAINE TO SIR GEORGE MURRAY, G.C.B.

SIR,—

Sydney, Jany. 3, 1829.

New Zealand  
part of New  
South Wales.

Under the full impression that the Islands of New Zealand were a dependency of this colony, I, about two years ago, formed an establishment on the north-west part of the Northern Island, at a place called E. O. Kianga [Hokianga], which has now risen in consequence to a place of some consideration. With such views and impressions I have built two vessels, one called the Enterprise, and the other the New Zealander. The former, on her arrival, I obtained a register for; that vessel has since been unfortunately wrecked on the coast of New Zealand.

At Hokianga  
built two  
vessels.

One refused  
registry.

The New Zealander, a brigantine of 140 tons, arrived in this port early last month, and when I applied for a certificate of registry for her I learnt from the authorities here that no such registry could be granted. I am consequently now obliged to sail that vessel on my own responsibility between this colony and New Zealand exclusively. For the more perfect information of the Home Government, I have the honor to enclose copies of my correspondence and communications on the subject, and beg most respectfully to solicit that this case may be taken into consideration, and a register ordered to be given for the vessel.

Asks for  
register.

Building  
another.

And I beg further to state that I am still prosecuting ship-building at my establishment, and have now men engaged for the purpose of building a vessel of 300 tons register, which I hope will be launched by the time I shall have the honor of being favoured with a reply to this letter. The persons employed are British subjects; the materials, with the exception of the timber, are all from and belonging to the Mother-country.

Exports  
timber Home.

Perhaps it would not be considered impertinent nor irrelevant in my here mentioning the other main pursuits I am following at New Zealand—namely, the procuring of flax and spars. Of the former I have sent a considerable quantity to England, and of the latter I have sent one whole cargo, viz., per ship Harmony, and from the experience thereby gained I shall this year import into England a cargo of spars that will, I trust,



be found to answer, and be of importance to His Majesty's navy.

I cannot let this opportunity pass without respectfully drawing your attention to my exertions at New Zealand, with the hopes that His Majesty's Government will be pleased to consider them meritorious and deserving of encouragement.

I have, &c.,

THOMAS RAINE.

To the Right Honble. Sir George Murray, H.M. P. Secretary of State for the Colonies, &c., &c.

1829

Jan. 4.

His services there.

ATTORNEY-GENERAL AND SOLICITOR-GENERAL TO HON. A. McLEAY.

Court House Chambers,  
26th December, 1828.

SIR,—

We have the honor to acknowledge the receipt of your letter of the 19th instant, transmitting a letter from the Acting Collector of Customs, enclosing an application made by Mr. Thomas Raine for a register for the New Zealander, built at Ho Kiango, New Zealand, and requesting us to report our opinion with as little delay as possible, whether a register can legally be granted at this port to a vessel built at the above-mentioned island, observing that it was there built by British subjects in the actual employment of persons resident in this colony.

Ship register question.

Their opinion asked.

2nd. In reply, we have the honor to enclose the communications transmitted to us, and at the same time to report, for the information of His Excellency the Governor, our opinion to be that no register can be legally granted at this port to the vessel in question under the Act of 6 Geo. 4, c. 110.

Register not legal.

We have, &c.,

A. M. BAXTER, Attorney-General.

JOHN SAMPSON, Solicitor-General.

The Honorable Alexander McLeay.

A NARRATIVE OF THE SUFFERINGS AND MOST MIRACULOUS ESCAPE OF MR. JOHN F. ATKINS, SECOND OFFICER OF THE BRIG HAWEIS, WHICH WAS TREACHEROUSLY CAPTURED BY THE NATIVES OF NEW ZEALAND, ON THE 2ND OF MARCH, 1829, AND A PART OF THE CREW MASSACRED, INTERSPERSED WITH SOME DESCRIPTIONS OF THE ISLAND AND THE MANNERS OF THE INHABITANTS.

March 2.

On the 17th November, 1828, I sailed from Sydney as second officer in the brig Haweis, of 110 tons, and 14 men, commanded

1829  
March 2

by Captn. John James, having also a gang of sealers, whom we were instructed to land, part on the Antipodes and the rest on the Bounty Islands. Having landed them according to our orders, we made sail for New Zealand on a trading voyage. We arrived at the Bay of Islands in December, and, after wooding and watering, sailed for the East Cape, distant about 500 miles from the bay. On our arrival, a great number of natives came off in large canoes, and, through the medium of our interpreter (an Englishman taken on board at the Bay of Islands), we endeavored successfully to induce them to trade. Eager as these people are for the possession of anything European, we regarded their disinclination to trade as an extraordinary circumstance, but the mystery was soon unravelled by our interpreter informing us that they were singing their war-song and preparing for an immediate attack on the vessel. We instantly flew to arms, removed the caps and aprons from our cannon, and determined on a vigorous resistance; but the savages, whose success depends on surprising their victims, as soon as they perceived we were aware of their intentions, fled with the greatest precipitation. Disappointed at this place in the object of our voyage we weighed anchor, and sailed along the coast until we entered the Bay of Plenty. The natives are very numerous and warlike, having a strong propensity for theft, and of a most treacherous disposition. Our captain permitted a few of the principal chiefs to come on board, treating them with much attention, hoping by a conciliatory disposition to induce them to trade with us. This plan succeeded very well, for in the course of two days as much flax was obtained as we required. The utmost vigilance was observed during this period, as the natives made several attempts to seize the ship, but our continued watchfulness, and the timely notice given by our interpreter, frustrated their intentions. We returned to the Bay of Islands to re-stow the hold, and make room for the quantity of pork required for our provisions, and, after coopering the casks, sailed to a place called Towrenga, at the head of the Bay of Plenty, several miles from our recent trading-place, and under the government of a chief who, we were informed, was of a more friendly disposition. Towrenga is a very good harbour for small vessels, with three fathoms in the channel at low water. The country is hilly, and much diversified with woods, not of any great extent, but so numerous and so delightfully dispersed as to present the appearance of a park, arranged by a tasteful hand. The hills in the distance are covered with verdure, and through every valley runs a beautiful stream, sometimes meandering in graceful silence, and at others rushing over the opposing fragments of rocks and trees in the cataracts without number.

1829  
March 2.  

---

Here the natives informed us hogs were abundant, but being wild in the bush, it would require some time to catch them. We cast anchor, and our interpreter, having had an interview with the natives, apparently confirmed the favourable account we had previously received of their friendly disposition, and for several days we obtained a tolerable supply, which, however, was soon discontinued; for at the end of seven weeks we had procured but five tons of potatoes and five tons of cleaned and cured meat. Our interpreter recommended the captain to send the boat to a settlement called by the natives *Walkeetanna*, about fifty miles from *Towrenga Harbour*, where the ship lay, being assured an abundance of provisions could there be obtained. In consequence of this advice, the boat was rigged, and placed under my command, and early on the following morning I left the ship, accompanied by the interpreter and one of the crew, and at midnight anchored in a small cove close to the entrance of the settlement. At daybreak we got under weigh, and, after steering about a quarter of a mile up the river, we brought up abreast of the *pah*, or village, of the natives, who were here very numerous. This *pah*, like all the others I had seen in New Zealand, is situated on a steep lofty and conical hill of great natural strength, fortified by an embankment of earth, approached by a narrow and circular pathway, so difficult that an European climbs it with much danger, while the barefooted New Zealander ascends without inconvenience, running over the sharpest rocks and most rugged ways with great facility. A number of natives collected at the place of our landing, and received us with the *herremi*, or "salutations of friendship" (the principal of these are their joining noses). On being informed by our interpreter of the object of our visit, they welcomed us with excessive joy, dancing and singing around us with violent and grotesque gesticulations, declaring their readiness to do all in their power for our assistance. They conducted us to the dwelling of their chief by the pathway before described. This was a small hut constructed of stakes driven into the ground, the sides and roofs of reeds so completely arranged as to be impervious to rain. A small space in the front was neatly paved, and the only aperture for light and air was a little sliding door of reeds scarcely large enough to admit a grown person, and the interior of the dwelling was so low that a man could not stand upright therein. It was surrounded by a sort of a verandah, covered with rude carvings, painted red, designating the rank and family of the chief. The huts of the common people are wretched in the extreme, very little better than pig-styes; but the practice of sleeping in the open air is so prevalent that the weather must be inclement indeed to force

1829  
March 2.

the natives to the shelter of their hovels. They sleep in a sitting posture, with their legs bent under them, enveloping themselves in their coarse upper mat, so that during the night they have the appearance of a number of small cocks of hay scattered about the side of the hill. To return to my narrative. We were introduced to their chief, named Enarraro (or "the lizard" in their tongue); he was a tall, well proportioned man, of great personal strength and commanding aspect, and his body profusely tattooed; he was seated on the ground in front of his dwelling, with a handsome mat thrown over his shoulders, his face and body besmeared with oil and red ochre, and his hair, after the fashion of his country, tied in a bunch at the top of his head, and ornamented with the plumes of the albatross or gannet. On informing him of our errand we were shown a number of fine hogs, which he was willing to let us have. I requested him to send them overland to the ship, but this he said was impossible, as he was at war with several of the intervening tribes. Under these circumstances I had no alternative but to return to the ship. Unfortunately the wind was foul, with a very heavy sea on, and we could make no way, except to leeward, so that I was compelled to stand out to sea. Night now closed fast, with a gale of wind from the north west. We close reefed the sail, and our little bark made better weather than we could have expected, but at daylight we found ourselves so much to leeward of the river that we were under the necessity of returning to Walkeetanna, and on the wind dying away we took to our oars, and the same day, about 3 p.m., regained the settlement which the day before we had left. Previous to leaving the vessel the captain had instructed me to send a man with a guide overland with my report if I should be detained by contrary winds, or any other circumstances, and as I judged the north west winds had set in, and there appearing no probability of reaching the vessel in the boat, I requested the interpreter to undertake this commission. He felt no inclination either to walk such a journey or trust himself with the natives he might meet on the road, and for the same reasons the man with me belonging to the ship refused to attempt the hazardous task.

I therefore determined on the journey myself, and, engaging a chief to conduct me, set out early on the following morning. I found the country very mountainous, intersected with numerous rivers, which greatly increased the length of our journey, as we were frequently compelled to traverse their banks for several miles before they were fordable. On the sides of these streams flax is growing in great abundance, and many small patches are under cultivation, producing cabbages, potatoes, parsnips, carrots, and a small sort of turnip. They also grow



1829

March 2.  

---

water melons and peaches, and I met with a few orange trees, which have been introduced with success. The principal trees are the ronkaterra and the cowry, which grow to an immense height without a branch, and are of such magnitude as to be fit for the masts of large ships. The ronkaterra is found in marshy grounds and on the banks of rivers; it appears to be an evergreen, and bears a red berry. The cowry, which is much preferred, grows in a high and dry soil, has a beautiful foliage, and yields abundance of rosin. A great part of our road lay along the sound, which I found extremely heavy to walk on, and after travelling hard for two days and nights, cautiously avoiding the natives on our way, we at length reached the ship, when I gave my conductor a couple of tomahawks and a small portion of powder, with which he seemed much satisfied. On acquainting the captain that provisions were to be obtained at the place I had visited, he gave orders immediately to weigh anchor, which was readily obeyed, and we bore away for Walkeetanna, where we arrived the next night, to the seeming joy of the natives, who came off in large canoes with a plentiful supply of hogs, which we purchased of them without bringing the ship to an anchor. The chief (Enarraro) came on board, and welcomed us with much apparent cordiality, the same feeling seeming to actuate his people, who, in obedience to the orders of their chief, kept at a distance from the ship, which he would not allow them to board. After stowing our decks with live-stock as thickly as convenient, and the wind suddenly changing to the S.E., we bore away again for Towrenga Harbour, where we killed and salted our pigs; but not finding our quantity complete, we sailed again for Walkeetanna, where we arrived on Sunday, March 1st, 1829. The weather being very fine, we anchored between the Island of Matora and the main, and we had not brought up ten minutes before the natives came off in great numbers as before, from whom we obtained twenty more hogs, which were all we required. On Monday, March 2nd, about 6 a.m., the boat was sent on shore with the chief officer and eight hands, including the interpreter, to a boiling spring in the beach but a short distance from the vessel. At 1 p.m. we hailed them to come on board to dinner, but not hearing us, the captain left me in charge of the vessel with three hands, little imagining the treacherous intentions of the natives. At the time of his departure Enarraro was on board, with about ten natives alongside. I noticed them several times in earnest conversation about the *kebooke* (or ship), and, suspecting some treachery, I desired the steward, who was an Otaheitian, to hand up the cutlasses, keeping a strict watch on the chief, who I saw cock his piece, and put it under his *kakahoo* (or upper garment). His men at this

1829  
March 2.

---

signal sprang in the main chains, each having a musket, which they had secreted in their canoes. At this critical juncture we had no pistols on deck, and I was well aware if but one of us went below for them, they would immediately take advantage of his absence by commencing their attack. As our muskets were placed in the tops, not only as a security, but as a precautionary measure in the event of an attack, I ordered one of the crew to go in the fore top and shoot the chief. They each positively refused, not being so convinced as I was of the designs of the savages, and, seeing that not a moment was to be lost, I went up myself, giving strict orders to keep a sharp look out, to which they unfortunately paid but little attention, telling me I was meditating the life of an innocent man. As I was ascending the fore rigging they were joking with each other with great indifference, regardless of the motions of the natives, although I kept cautioning them; but as soon as the chief saw me in the fore top unlashng the muskets he fired at the oldest man, who had his back turned to him, playing with his cutlass, at about two paces from him, and shot him through the head, and with his *maree* (a short stone club, with a sharp edge) he split his skull. At this signal the whole number jumped on board, and in a moment another poor fellow met with the same fate. The steward was shot at several times before he left the deck, and then he made for the fore top with me. They then fired a volley at us, seeing me prime my piece, but in so doing the chief, Enarraro, broke my arm with a bullet, which I afterwards learnt went through the upper part, above the elbow, and shivered the bone, which caused me to lay down in the fore top; when with the most hideous howlings they immediately commenced their war-dance, but ere this three large war-canoes were alongside, which had been laying concealed behind the rocks, so that I am confident it was a premeditated piece of business, and I was extremely glad the captain had left the ship, or he would have fallen the first victim to their barbarity. They then began the plunder of the ship, and although I was lying in the fore top in extreme agony, I could plainly perceive that in the height of their depredations they paid but little attention to the authority of the chief, retaining their acquisitions with such tenacity that several, refusing to relinquish them, were speared through the body, and died on the spot. They speedily filled the canoes alongside, and the chief ordered one of the natives to fetch me down, but being unable to do it himself he called for assistance, when I was dragged down, and placed in a canoe with the Oteheitian. The sun having set, and the day closing fast, they paddled towards the harbour with all possible expedition, which we gained without accident, although our way led us through a tremendous

1829  
March 2.  

---

surf. Some of the canoes more heavily laden, and containing the greater part of the arms and ammunition, were swamped, the natives saving their lives with much difficulty, with the loss of their canoes. Considering the horrible situation in which I was placed, ignorant of the fate of my worthy captain and the crew, who I suspected were all cut off, believing myself the only survivor of our ill-fated number, in the hands of cannibals, who I doubted not were reserving me for more cruel tortures, and at last to be made the victim of their appalling gluttony for human flesh, it might be expected that I should regard with apathy the loss of the canoes; but such was not the case, for, notwithstanding my extreme pain of body and mind, I beheld their destruction with exultation, considering it an act of retributive justice.

On arriving at the settlement the women surrounded us, singing and dancing, and with every demonstration of extravagant joy welcomed the return of their heroic lords, who in their estimation had achieved such valiant deeds. After landing their plunder they conveyed me to a place where they had kindled several very large fires, around which they collected, the glaring flames displaying with increased effect the horror of their distorted countenances. I observed them in eager consultation, and knew sufficient of their language to be fully aware that I was the subject of their deliberation. I considered my fate to be inevitable, but although many violently contended for my sacrifice, Almighty God had mercifully ordered it otherwise. I am indebted for my preservation at that moment to the chief who had been my conductor to the ship, who earnestly interceded for me, and at length succeeded in obtaining my respite, making a promise that if I was not ransomed by a certain period he would himself kill me, at the same time remarking that a musket would be of much more importance to them than the taking my life, with which they at length acquiesced. He then took me to his hut at the pah, where, ruminating on the occurrence of this eventful day, I offered my grateful thanksgiving to the Almighty for my miraculous preservation, imploring His protection and merciful deliverance. For the first two nights I could not even close my eyes, the terror of the circumstances I have detailed, and the increasing agonies of my arm, totally precluding the possibility of sleep, and my groans so disturbed the chief that he put me out of his hut, and I took shelter in a shed hard by. During this period no one had offered any assistance to alleviate my pain. I at length found a piece of pump leather, which I placed round my shattered member, after the manner of a splint, and using my stocking for a bandage, which the chief bound round the arm. This



1829  
March 2.  
—

I was frequently obliged to remove, when I went to the river, accompanied by a native, and washed the wound in the best manner I could. I found a bullet had passed completely through the bone, and was assured some slugs remained in the wound, which it was impossible for me to remove. On the second morning of my captivity I was taken to that side of the pah which faces the harbour, and my attention was directed to a sail to windward. I could only just perceive her. On approaching the wreck of our unfortunate vessel, which by this time was entirely dismantled, I observed the natives abandon her in great haste, and she was shortly after taken possession of by a schooner, which proceeded to tow her out of the bay. In the most urgent manner I entreated to be taken on board, but all my assurance of ransom and indemnity were unavailing, and I had the extreme distress to witness the vessel's departure, from whence appeared the only chance of ransom. After this I endeavoured to resign myself to the fate which seemed inevitably to await me, although the natural love of life, and a reflection on my past preservation, sometimes produced a gleam of hope that I should still escape. On the third day of my capture an incident occurred not in any way calculated to diminish the distress of my harrowed feelings: A native brought me the head of one of my unfortunate shipmates; it was the Otaheitian steward, who came on shore with me. He died the next morning, having received five bullets in his body. It was preserved by a method peculiar to themselves, and elaborately tattooed (many such are in their possession, as they are an article of their trade). I shuddered at the reflection that my own ere long might add to their number. On the fourth morning I was greatly alarmed by seeing all the natives flock round me, and anxiously enquired the reason. They told me the people of Towrenga (a neighbouring tribe) were coming to attack them with numbers far exceeding their own, and the report evidently created great consternation among them. Shortly after Enarraro made his appearance with the captain's sextant, which he gave me, desiring me to look at the sun, and inform him truly if the Towrenga people would come down on them. To refuse would have been fatal, and equally so an untrue prophesy; but, judging from the well-ascertained disposition of the natives of this island that the report of the plunder of our vessel would awaken the cupidity of some neighbouring tribe, I obeyed his commands, and, after taking an observation, requested to have a book, which I appeared to consult. I told him the Towrenga people would come against him with hostile intentions. He inquired "When," with much agitation, and, scarcely knowing what I said, I replied "Tomorrow." He seemed much satisfied with me, and prepared



1829  
March 2.  
—

for a vigorous defence. They built a clay bank about four feet high on the side of the river, at the foot of their pah, where they mounted our cannonades and swivels, and in conscious security awaited with impatience the dawn of the following day. At daybreak I heard a general discharge of musketry, and in a few minutes Enarraro came running to my hut, informing me of the attack of the Towrenga people as I had predicted, and, having now a high opinion of my gift in prophesy, implored me to tell him if the defence of his settlement would be sufficient. I told him "Yes," which greatly animated the spirits of himself and people, amongst whom my last prediction spread with rapidity. By this time the enemy were on the opposite side of the river, and had commenced a brisk fire, which was well returned by the assailed. A native conducted me to the back of the settlement, where they imagined I should be out of danger, my preservation appearing now an object of their solicitude. Shortly after this I heard the report of one of our cannons, when a song of joy was raised by the defenders, for the discharge of this gun had produced so much consternation among the enemy that they took to their heels with great precipitation, the attack having lasted about an hour. After this repulse Enarraro, accompanied by several chiefs, came to me, and were extravagant in my praise, saying I was an *Attoah* (a god). After the battle several wounded assailants were taken prisoners, whose heads were immediately cut off, their bodies were then embowelled and cooked, and, from the satisfaction displayed by both sexes at this horrible repast, I am persuaded they prefer human flesh to any other food. As the manner of preserving heads so effectually as to prevent decay must be a subject of curiosity, perhaps it may not be amiss here to describe it. After the head has been separated from the body, and the whole of the interior extracted, it is enveloped in leaves, and placed in an oven made of heated stones, deposited in a hole in the ground, and covered over with turf; the heat is very moderate, and the head is gradually steamed, until all the moisture, which is frequently wiped away, is extracted, after which it is exposed to the air until perfectly dry. In some of these heads the features, hair, and teeth are so perfect as in life, and years elapse before they show any symptoms of decay. The practice of preserving heads is universal among the New Zealanders; they bring them as trophies from their wars, and in the event of peace restore them to their families, this interchange being necessary to their reconciliation. They now frequently barter them with Europeans for a little gunpowder. The inhabitants I observed to be in general tall, well made, and active, of a brown colour, and black hair, which sometimes is curling, and their teeth are white and regular.

1829  
March 2.

They are divided into two classes, viz., *ranghateeroos* (or chiefs) and their relations of different degrees of consanguinity, and *cookees* (slaves), who are nearly black, and much shorter, and appear a different race of people. The features of a New Zealander before they are tattooed are pleasing, and many remarkably handsome. When a young man arrives at the age of what they suppose maturity, he must submit to the painful operation of tattooing, or be considered unmanly. They generally bear it with the greatest fortitude. It is performed in the following manner: The person performing the operation takes the head of the subject into his lap, on whose face the peculiar lines of his tribe are first marked out. A small chisel, made of the bone of a fish, is used to cut these lines through the skin, just entering the flesh, when a preparation of charcoal is rubbed into the incisions. The inflammation which is invariably produced by this operation is so great that but a small portion can be done at a time, so that it is many months before the man is completely tattooed. The same operation is performed on the women, but in a much less degree. The natives wear a mat made of a fine silky flax, very curiously woven by the women, which is thrown over their shoulders, and a similar mat is fastened round their waist by a girdle. They have also another mat which they wear in bad weather that completely covers them. Before going to war they paint their bodies with oil and red ochre, oiling their hair, which they form into a bunch at the top of their heads, decorated with the feathers of the albatross. The ears of both sexes are pierced in their infancy, which is gradually increased in size by the introduction of a stick, and is considered more ornamental as it becomes larger. The superior classes suspend the tooth of a scarce fish, which distinction is so tenaciously observed that a *cookee* (or slave) is not on any account permitted to wear it. They wear also round the neck a grotesque image, carved in green talc, which they seem to prize very highly, and which is preserved in a family for many generations. The dress of the females is precisely the same as the men, and they are generally very modest in their deportment. In complexion they are as fair as Italians, are generally short, but well made and handsome. They are subject to great brutality from their husbands, which they bear with exemplary fortitude and patience. They are faithful and affectionate wives, and regard the children they rear with the greatest fondness. An appalling practice, however, prevails among them—that of destroying their female infants should they exceed in number the male issue. This is done by the mother herself at the birth of the child, and is effected by pressing her finger on the opening of the skull. Still there are some mothers who

1829  
March 2.  
—

regard this custom with becoming abhorrence. Plurality of wives among the chiefs is universal, but there is a decided distinction between the head wife and the others. The union with the head wife is a union of policy, being the daughter of a chief, and the offspring of this union takes precedence of the children of the other wife or wives, whose situation to the head wife is merely that of domestics. At the death of a chief it is frequently the custom for the head wife to hang herself, which is considered an act of the most sacred character.

But to return to my narrative. Nothing occurred to myself until the 9th of March, when to my inexpressible joy I was informed of my ransom; but before detailing the circumstances which produced my liberation I must return to the captain and boat's crew, who were on shore at the time the ship was captured. On the captain's reaching the shore, the first object he observed was a native running away with the knives of our people, and on joining the crew he was informed the natives had made off with the hatchets and knives. He gave orders immediately to launch the boat, thinking at the time all was not right. They discovered that the oars had also been stolen. On looking round they discovered a native on the top of a high rock with them in his possession. Our people pursued him with speed and determination, which so terrified him that he threw the oars down and made off. On their return to the boat the natives kept up a brisk fire at them from behind the rocks, happily without effect. After they had left the shore the catastrophe on board the brig was soon discovered, but, seeing her in the possession of the natives armed, and themselves weaponless, it was useless then to attempt her recapture; they therefore stood towards the N.W., and after rowing hard all the day and the following night, they fortunately fell in with the schooner *New Zealander*, Capt. Clark, from Sydney. Our people were received on board, and on hearing the fate of the brig, Capt. Clark determined to retake her, which he effected in the manner already described. On boarding her they were shocked with the appalling spectacle of fragments of human flesh scattered about the decks, with the remains of a fire, from which they immediately concluded their shipmates had been all of them massacred, and devoured by the natives. They sailed for *Towrenga*, where they were informed I was alive, and detained a prisoner at *Walkeetanna*. The captain dispatched two chiefs overland, with muskets for my ransom, which they happily effected, and in the morning of the 9th of March I immediately set out with them on their return, amidst expressions of esteem and regret at my departure. This journey overland I have before described, but owing to my weak and exhausted state it

1829  
March 2.

was most tedious and painful. The hills being covered with fern, I found it extremely difficult to travel, and on account of the heavy dews [dews] which fall every night, it was impossible to rest upon them. My conductor procured me intervals of repose by making holes in the sand, where I layed down, until feeling cold and chilly I again renewed my journey, which was still further protracted by the necessity of avoiding the hostile tribes on the roads. After three days and nights of painful travelling we reached Towrenga, where I had the inexpressible happiness of rejoining my kind captain and crew, and, with mutual congratulations on our providential escape, we related to each other the events which had transpired since the time of our departure. On the 15th of March we arrived at the Bay of Islands, where Capn. James took me on shore to the Rev. Mr. Williams, a missionary residing there, but, as he was not a medical man, the only assistance he could render me was to administer a powder, for the purpose of preventing the accumulation of proud flesh. I sailed for Sydney on the 17th of March, in the New Zealander, Capt. Clark, and arrived on the 25th, after having been three weeks and two days without any surgical aid. At Sydney three slugs and several pieces of stone were extracted, and so bad was the fracture that the medical men strongly recommended me to have my arm taken off, to which I could not be prevailed on to consent. After remaining 11 weeks in Sydney my wound was tolerably healed, but, despairing of ever recovering the use of my arm, so as to be able to resume my duties on board ship, I returned to England in the barque Vesper, and arrived after a passage of four months and a half.

[Church Missionary House.

REV. S. MARSDEN TO REV. D. COATES.

Oct. 14.

DEAR SIR,—

Parramatta, 14th Octr., 1829.

The Revd. Mr. Brown has just arrived, from whom I learn that it is finally arranged by the Society that the missionary children are to be educated in New Zealand. In consequence of this determination, the seminary at Parramatta, intended for the missionaries' children, will not now be required. Mr. Lisk and his family will leave Parramatta in a day or two in order to embark for England, and leaves the seminary where he has hitherto resided. From this arrangement I must prepare to refund the amount of the money I received from the Society on account of the building. The seminary cost me about £1,200; upwards of £800 I received from the Society,

Seminary not  
required.

Cost about  
£1,200.



which sum I am very willing to return as soon as convenient. I think in 18 months or less I may be able to pay the whole, unless I should be greatly disappointed. Until it is paid I shall allow the Society what interest may be right. I will thank you to communicate to me the wishes of the Society by the first opportunity on this subject. I had made a provision some months ago for the payment of the whole amount should the children remain in New Zealand, but the person in whose hands I had deposited the funds has, unfortunately for me, become involved in his circumstances; in consequence I shall suffer a very serious loss; but the Society will not suffer by me, only a delay.

1929  
Oct. 14.  
Proposes to  
repay it.

I may here observe that the whole of the corresponding committee perfectly agree with me in opinion that the missionaries' children should be educated in civil society. We form our judgment partly from what we have seen of the children who have come to the colony from the different islands in the South Seas. All that we have seen appeared to have suffered much from their intercourse with the children of the heathens amongst whom they lived. . . .

Children should  
be educated in  
civil society.

I did what appeared to me to be absolutely necessary when I prepared the seminary for the welfare of the children; but, as the plan does not meet the views of the missionaries themselves, I have no more to say on the subject. . . .

With respect to the sum advanced to me by the Society on account of the seminary, I shall begin to refund it at the end of this quarter, and continue until that it is all paid, as I may find it convenient. The Revd. R. Hill will write to the Society by Mr. Lisk. Our new Archdeacon has arrived. I have had some conversation with him about the mission. He promised me he would do all in his power to promote the views of the Society, and I believe he will. I am much pleased with him, and I think we have the prospect of going on well. Our late Archdeacon, the Revd. Thos. Hobbs Scott, dined with me to-day for the last time. Mr. Scott has been traduced in the public papers, and in every possible way, as much as any man could be. We have agreed pretty well. The publishing of my last pamphlet produced a very extraordinary effect in the colony in my favour amongst all ranks. The truth had been concealed from the public mind. And it was not credited that the Legislative Council, the Court of enquiry, and the Magistrates could have done such acts of injustice towards me as were done. Archdeacon Scott was a member of the Court of enquiry, and also a member of the Legislative Council, and was supposed to have sanctioned all those proceedings against me which were so unjust, and so void of truth. Mr. Scott being my superior in the Church,

Archdeacon  
promised to  
aid Church  
Missionary  
Society.

Effect of  
Marsden's  
pamphlet in  
colony.

1829  
Oct. 14.  
Many high  
officials  
against him.

his manner gave weight to the many false statements against me, both in the colony and in the Colonial Office. I had Sir Th. Brisbane, Chief Justice Forbes, Archdeacon Scott, the Colonial Secretary, the Lieut.-Governor, Col. Steward, and the Clerk of the Council, Dr. Douglass, all supported by the Editor of the *Government Gazette*, to contend with, in vindication of my character. I was obliged to bear every reproach at the time, and to wait for an opportunity to set my character right, and I embraced the first that offered. My original offence was reproving public crime. I bless God I am now quiet, and enjoy the testimony of a good conscience.

I remain, &c.,

D. Coates, Esq.

SAML. MARSDEN.

[Church Missionary House.

REV. S. MARSDEN TO REV. D. COATES.

1830  
Feb. 8.

DEAR SIR,—

Parramatta, 8th February, 1830.

Intends visiting  
New Zealand.

Has repaid £450  
on account of  
seminary.

The missionaries have long solicited me to visit them in New Zealand, but it was not in my power until one of the clergymen came over to do my duty. The Revd. Mr. Yate has arrived, in consequence of which I intend to embark on the 12th instant.

I have paid into Mr. R. Campbell's hands, on account of the repayment for the seminary, the sum of £450, and shall pay the remainder as soon as I possibly can. The Revd. R. Hill will account with you for the allowance he makes his mother annually from the 31st of December, 1828. Having learned that the Secretary to the Society for the Propagation of the Gospel in Foreign Parts is dead (the late C. Bicknill, Esq.), I have forwarded to you a particular statement of my accounts with the Society. If you have received nothing from the Society on my account, there is a balance due to me up to the 31st December, 1829, of £50, which I will thank you to apply to the Society for, and when you receive it give me credit in your account with me, and when I receive your accounts I will arrange for the payment of what may be due.

Education of  
missionaries'  
children.

I am happy to say the missionaries in New Zealand are all well, and the mission is prospering. There is one subject of great importance which I have often adverted to in my public correspondence with your Society and the missionaries—namely, the situation of the missionaries' children. As the children grow up I am apprehensive that improprieties will take place between the natives and the European children. What has happened to other missionaries' children may happen to theirs. There are two things to be considered: the heavy expenses that will be incurred in supporting the children when they come to a

1830  
Feb. 8.

certain age, and the danger of their morals being corrupted. It will be painful in the extreme to any pious parent to see his son or daughter form improper intimacies with the native youths. I am aware that the Society wish those children to be employed in the mission who promise fair to promote the great object. It should not be forgotten that temptations are very powerful, and the passions of youth are strong, and the danger great, where the means of indulging them are always at hand. I have thought that if 2,000 acres of land (more or less) were obtained from the Government at Home or here for the express purpose of forming a permanent establishment for the missionaries' children in N. S. Wales, it might afford protection and support for them until their real characters, talents, and inclinations were ascertained. Such a man as Mr. Davis should have the superintendence of such an establishment. Two or three New Zealand families might accompany them, in order that they might keep up their knowledge of the New Zealand language, and be prepared for the future service in the mission, when their habits were more permanently fixed and their knowledge of civil life increased. I have no doubt but the land would be readily granted by the Crown for such a purpose. I merely suggest the above from not knowing any other plan I can think of. Some of the young people as they grow up would get married in the colony, others would find different situations, and those who loved the mission would return in time to the work. Tho' the Society could hold no land, not being a corporate body, yet I apprehend it might be granted to trustees for the benefit of the missionaries' children, who might reside upon it. Perhaps the Society may think of some better plan than what is here proposed. Something I think should be done.

Establishment  
should be  
formed in New  
South Wales.

I am happy to say the Revd. Archdeacon Broughton will be a warm friend to the mission. He has become a member of our corresponding committee. On the 6th instant he sailed to Van Dieman's Land to hold a visitation there in His Majesty's ship *Crocodile*, and intends to return by New Zealand. The Archdeacon may perhaps arrive before I return from the Bay of Islands. It will be very desirable for us to meet there. Should he come before I return I shall endeavour to have the whole state of the mission laid before him. He is an amiable man, and a lover and a preacher of the Gospel. I have been very happy with him ever since he arrived in the colony.

The avarice of the merchants are filling N. Zealand with muskets and powder. I expect there will be some very bloody wars amongst the natives, tho' I am under no apprehensions for the safety of the missionaries. . . .

Dear sir, &c.,

Dandeson Coates, Esq.

SAMUEL MARSDEN.

1830  
March 13.

[Church Missionary House.  
REV. S. MARSDEN TO REV. E. BICKERSTETH.

Bay of Islands,  
13th March, 1830.

DEAR AND REVD. SIR,—

Arrived in  
New Zealand on  
8th March,  
1830.

Found natives  
at war.

Requested  
him to act as  
mediator.

Warmly  
received by  
both parties.

As a vessel is on the point of sailing for England from hence, I take the liberty to write a few lines by her. I arrived in the Bay of Islands on the evening of the 8th inst., and am happy to say I found all the missionaries well, but we have had no tidings of Mr. and Mrs. C. Davis and Mrs. Hart. We are very apprehensive that some accident has happened to the vessel, unless she has been taken by some of the convicts, who might have secreted themselves on board. When I arrived at the Bay of Islands I found the missionaries in considerable agitation: the natives were up in arms against each other in great numbers. On the 6th inst. they had had a battle on the opposite beach, in which it appears 70 were killed or wounded. Their bodies were then lying on the beach. My arrival at this trying moment afforded the greatest relief to the missionaries, as they were in hopes I should have influence with the contending tribes to make peace between them. Messengers had been dispatched to different parts to their respective friends and allies, and it was expected that some thousands would be in the bay in a few days. Some of the chiefs immediately waited upon me, and requested I would interfere between them. Both parties were equally our friends, and I was well acquainted with the leading chiefs of both. I promised that I would, along with the Revd. Henry Williams, visit both their camps the following morning, and hear what each had to say. Accordingly, early on the 9th we proceeded to the camp of those who had obtained the victory. They received us with the greatest cordiality. We immediately entered upon the subject of our mission, and after a long discussion, which was maintained by the chiefs with much ardor and warmth, it was agreed that we should proceed to the camp of their enemies, and state to them the substance of what had taken place. Their camps were about 4 miles apart from each other. On our arrival we were received with much respect by the chiefs; and they were willing to hear any thing we had to advance. The Revd. H. Williams opened the business, and after many arguments it was determined that we should proceed, along with one of the principal chiefs, to the Island of Matoroa, about 5 miles off, where a large body of their friends were encamped, and take their sentiments, which we consented to do, and immediately set off for the island. When we arrived we found the beach covered with war-canoes, and natives prepared for action. We stopt some hours with this party. Many of the chiefs spoke with much force and dignity, but yielded to



our wishes so far that we were authorised to proceed to their enemy's camp and to make some friendly propositions to them. After these matters were arranged we returned home about 9 o'clock in the evening. The terms of peace are not yet finally settled. I have been negotiating for peace ever since my arrival, and I hope it will shortly be accomplished. I am not under much concern for the missionaries, as all parties are most friendly to them; but they have never had such a trial before. They have lived in much peace until now. I think when this difference is settled it will extend their influence far and wide. Many of the distant chiefs will see who and what they are, and what their object is.

1830

March 13.

Friendly  
proposal made.

The origin of this present war proceeds from the most infamous conduct of one of the masters of a whaler. The chiefs contended that, as the war did not originate with them, but with an European, the Europeans were answerable for all the consequences as a nation. They wished to know what satisfaction we would give them for the loss of their friends who had been killed. It was their right to demand satisfaction, and it was just that the Europeans should give it. It was not their own quarrel. I replied, all that I could do was to write to England to prevent the return of the master to New Zealand again. They requested I would not do this. They wished to get him into their possession, which they would do should he return, and they would take satisfaction themselves. The immoral conduct of some of the whalers is dreadful. In the midst of all difficulties the mission is going on well. The natives where the missionaries reside are greatly improved in every respect, and some of them appear to be very pious.

War caused  
by Europeans.Natives demand  
satisfaction.

As I was aware the news of war in the Bay of Islands would reach England, I thought the friends of the missionaries might be uneasy, and therefore have stated the above.

I remain, &amp;c.,

SAML. MARSDEN.

P.S.—As the ship has been detained for want of supplies until now, gives me an opportunity to inform you that peace was ratified on the 18th inst., to our great satisfaction. We have had much to do since I arrived. I have no doubt but this war will greatly extend the influence of the missionaries, and turn out well.

Peace ratified  
on 18th March.

[Church Missionary House.

REV. S. MARSDEN TO —.

DEAR SIR,—

Kerikeri, April 28th, 1830.

April 28.

I take the liberty to drop you a few lines before I return to N. S. Wales, in case a vessel should sail for England. After

1330

April 23.

Anxious for a station in the interior of New Zealand.

It will promote agriculture.

Will also be removed from shipping.

To be formed by Messrs. Clarke and Hamlin.

Success of missionary labours.

I have submitted my proceedings here to the corresponding committee they will be forwarded to London. I have been most anxious to establish a station in the interior, for many important reasons. As about 50,000 lb. of flour is required for the support of the mission annually, and as the climate of N. S. Wales is not very favourable to the growth of wheat, I consider it of great moment that the missionaries should not depend upon that colony for their supplies of flour, but to use every means in their power to provide for themselves. Whenever they can supply themselves with bread the Society will be greatly relieved of part of the expenses of the mission, besides, the great advantages the natives will derive from agriculture. Their cattle are increasing very fast, and supply them with milk and butter, and occasionally with very fine beef. They have slaughtered three since my arrival, and are going to salt down several for their winter supply. This will tend to reduce the expenses. In the interim the missionary will be in the centre of his work, and removed from the annoyances of the shipping. This will save them much labour, which they now have to undergo in travelling to visit the natives. They may go with safety, as the most perfect confidence and friendship exist between them and the chiefs. The land selected is very good, and the inhabitants numerous, on account of the goodness of the soil. They will very willingly part with a portion of their land, as they are so anxious to get the missionaries to live with them. Messrs. Clarke and Hamlin are nominated to form the interior station; two most excellent men, active and laborious. Mr. Hamlin has an extraordinary talent for learning the language, much superior to any other, I am informed. These young men are amiable in their dispositions, industrious in their habits, and firm in their conduct with the natives, and wholly devoted to the work of the mission. I have great hopes that they will succeed well. When once the missionaries have got an interior station, and grow what grain they want for their own consumption, I shall consider the mission permanently established; but not until then. At and near the stations the natives have made very great improvement, and some of them are deeply impressed with the importance of true religion. I could produce some very strong facts in confirmation of this statement. On my return to N. S. Wales I may then perhaps make a few selections from my diary for the information of the Society, which will be gratifying to the Committee. The Spirit of God is evidently at work more or less at every station. Every encouragement is now held out to the missionaries to labour. They see they are advancing daily, and that a spirit of grace and supplication is poured out from above upon the heathens around them. One

thing I have long wished to see in New Zealand, and that is a mill to grind their maize. About three days ago I saw a chief's wife sitting upon the bank of the river scraping a cob of maize with a shell, and reducing it into meal as well as she could; she could only just take the tops of each grain off, and was a long time before she got a little meal, which she mixed with water, wrapped it up in a small basket, and put it into her oven to cook with steam. They grow a good deal of maize; but the old people and the young children cannot eat it unpulverized. They soak it in water for several days to soften it, but before it becomes soft it is offensive. A miller who could make and work a mill would be of very infinite service to the mission and to the natives. I have no doubt but the natives would pay in maize for grinding. Mrs. Baker informs me she has two brothers who are millers, and that one can both make and work a mill. I merely mention the circumstance. A mill must be had in time, or much of the grain grown will not turn to so good account. All the missionaries are well. No doubt but you will hear from them.

1830  
April 28.

Primitive mode  
of grinding  
maize.

Mill and miller  
much needed.

I remain, &c.,

SAMUEL MARSDEN.

[New South Wales, Vol. 214.]

REV. S. MARSDEN TO GOVERNOR DARLING.

Parsonage, Parramatta, 2nd August, 1830.

Aug 2.

MAY IT PLEASE YOUR EXCELLENCY,—

I have taken the liberty of communicating the following circumstances to Your Excellency.

Having obtained permission from the Venerable the Arch-deacon to visit the missionary stations at New Zealand belonging to the Church Missionary Society, I sailed from Port Jackson on the 16th of February, and anchored in the Bay of Islands on the 8th March. On my arrival I found the whole of the inhabitants around the bay in the utmost alarm, a battle having been fought two days previously between the neighbouring tribes at a settlement on the east side of the bay named Korakika, two miles distant from the missionary station on the west side. In this contest above 70 were killed or wounded. The bodies of the conquered men who were killed were lying on the beach, and those of the chiefs had been taken away by their friends, while the wounded were carried to the missionary station.

Visited Church  
Missionary  
Society station  
at New Zealand.

Natives at war;  
battle fought.

On landing I was informed by the chiefs and the missionaries that messengers had been despatched in all directions to summon the allies of the hostile parties, and that several thousand men

Hostile armies  
summoned.

1830  
Aug. 2.  
Attempts at  
conciliation.

were expected to join the two armies in two or three days to renew the contest.

I conceived it was a matter of the first importance to bring about a reconciliation between the hostile chiefs before their friends arrived, and therefore had a consultation the same evening with some of the chiefs along with the missionaries, who were both anxious to prevent more bloodshed. It was resolved that on the following day we should visit both armies, which we did, and stated the object of our mission.

Satisfaction  
demanded by  
chiefs from  
Europeans.

The chiefs wished to know what satisfaction we would give them for the loss of their friends who had been killed in the battle, as the war originated wholly with the Europeans. We replied, it was not in our power to do more than to represent the bad conduct of Mr. Brin to his owners, and to prevent his return ; and contended his bad conduct was no reason why they should continue to kill one another, and leave their children orphans and their wives widows. They admitted the force of this argument, but still contended for satisfaction from the Europeans, as they were amenable for the conduct of the masters of their vessels, and said if Mr. Brin returned to the bay they would take payment from him themselves. Their discussion continued for several days.

Vowed  
vengeance  
against  
Mr. Brin.

I may here notice that the proprietor of the settlement where the battle was fought had defeated his opponents and killed several of their chiefs, while none but common men were killed on his part.

The settlement  
a valuable  
trade centre.

I may here observe that this settlement is the most valuable spot in the country for trade, as the harbour is safe and convenient for shipping, and where they generally anchor.

Forced to  
surrender  
settlement to  
conquered  
party.

As a condition of peace the party who had been conquered required the settlement to be surrendered up to them, as a compensation for the loss of their chiefs who had been killed. This at length was acceded to, as there was no alternative but either to risk another battle, which would have been very destructive, or to give it up. As soon as this arrangement was settled the allies of the parties began to return to their respective homes.

Peace made  
and armies  
dispersed.

During the whole period of our negotiation large bodies of armed men were daily arriving to join their respective friends, but we did not allow more than two chiefs from each party to accompany us in our visits to the camps, in order to guard as much as possible against any act of violence being committed on either side during the discussions until peace was restored.

War caused  
by Mr. Brin's  
conduct.

Having stated the circumstances which occurred, I shall now refer to the cause of the war. The chiefs of both parties, as well as the missionaries, informed me that Mr. Brin, master of one of



the whalers, several of which were at that time in the bay, was the sole cause of the public disturbance. The Rev. Henry Williams told me Mr. Brin had fifty native women on board his vessel, among whom there were three young women, daughters of chiefs belonging to the districts. Some difference took place between these young women and the head chief's wife. It was said that Mr. Brin espoused the cause of his favourites, and urged the natives to murder the head chief. As soon as this was known to the natives belonging to the chief they would allow no supplies to go on board Mr. Brin's vessel, in consequence of his bad conduct to them. Mr. Brin became very violent, and wrote to the masters of all the vessels, stating that he deemed it necessary that they should bring their ships nearer shore, hoist their colours, and fire upon the natives. They all refused to comply with his request. Mr. Brin immediately weighed his anchor and put to sea, after kindling the flame of war among the natives on account of the women that had been on board.

1830  
Aug. 2.

During dispute  
he urged murder  
of head chief.

The masters of the whalers were much alarmed lest the natives should proceed to acts of violence and fire upon the ships. A boat belonging to one of them happened to be on the beach with the master when the natives began to fight. The chief's wife and daughter ran to the boat in order to escape on board. As soon as they got into the boat they were fired upon, and the young woman was shot dead by her mother's side. One of the masters had loaded his guns with cannister shot, to be ready to fire upon the natives. Mr. Davis, a catechist, happened to go on board at the time, and entreated the master not to fire upon the natives unless they should fire upon him. The masters of the ships were much alarmed, and all their supplies were stopped until peace was restored.

Supplies refused  
to whalers.

From what I have stated Your Excellency will judge what might have taken place if the angry feelings of the natives, excited by the death of their friends and the violence offered to their women, had not been appeased.

Your Excellency is aware there is no legal authority, civil, military, or naval, to restrain the bad conduct of the masters and crews of those ships which put into the harbours of New Zealand, nor to notice their crimes, however great; and from the great quantity of arms, powder, and ammunition now in the possession of the natives there is much reason to apprehend that they will at some period redress their own wrongs by force of arms, if no remedy is provided to do them justice.

I am of opinion that it would not be advisable to form at New Zealand a military establishment, as the soldiers would be too much exposed to temptation from the native women; a small armed King's vessel, with proper authority, would be

A small armed  
King's vessel  
needed.

1830  
Aug. 2.

the most likely to prevent much mischief, as she might visit all the harbours into which the European vessels enter. The whaling vessels do not come into the Bay of Islands until the season on the coast is over. About March they put in for water and provisions; when they have obtained their supplies they either return home, or go to the northward to fill up in the winter season.

I may further observe, from the constant communication between New South Wales and New Zealand, it will be impossible to prevent the convicts from making their escape to these islands, where they commit every crime until an opportunity offers for them to return to Europe or America, which is not difficult for them to meet with from the number of vessels which put into the different harbours. These runaway convicts would be easily apprehended by a King's vessel, whereas at present they go where they like, and none can interfere with them. These evils will increase with the increased communications if no legal check is put to them. Having made the above observations, I respectfully submit them to Your Excellency's consideration.

And have, &c.,

SAMUEL MARSDEN.

His Excellency Governor Darling.

Would also  
check convict  
escapes from  
New South  
Wales.

[Wesleyan Mission House.

STATEMENT BY REV. S. LEIGH.

*New Zealand Temple.*

Aug. 4.

Description:  
Size,  
materials, &c.

Sydney, August 4th, 1830.

*Description of.*—The New Zealand Temple is a box made of wood, the size of which is as follows: The length is 2 feet, the width 15 inches, the height 16 inches. The roof is of a circular form, and is covered with thatch, like unto the roof of a cottage. On one side is a small door way about four inches wide, which is shut by a small piece of wood suspended by a nail, or a peg of wood which admits the door to be removed either to the right or to the left.

Origin: Charm  
to cure potato  
disease.

*Origin of.*—In the year 1816 the New Zealanders were much afflicted with an apprehension of experiencing a favour [failure] in their potatoes. The cause of this appearance of a decrease of this valuable part of their food was by a vast number of caterpillars falling upon their plantations and destroying the leaves and stems of the potatoes. In this alarm the principal persons among them applied to the neighbouring priest for a remedy. After the priest had heard their complaint, he directed them to make a temple, according to the above description, and

when they had made it, to place it upon a post 4 feet high from the ground in the centre of the village next to the plantation. After they had done this he assured them he would come and *tabbatab* (consecrate) the temple, and put into it the *Atua* (with some potato), after which the *Atua* (their god) would be fed with the same, and then they might expect that the caterpillars would all go away, and the potatoes would grow again.

The people were very attentive to the directions given by the priest. The temple was soon made, and placed upon a post exactly to order. The priest was informed that all things were ready according to his will. The priest approached the place and *tabbatabed* (consecrated) the temple, put in the *Atua* (the god), and put in some potato on which the *Atua* was to feed. I asked them if the *Atua* was in the temple. They assured me he was. I removed the small door and looked, but of course could not see anything. I observed to them that I could not *tickee tickee* (see) *Atua*; is he in the corner? To which they said 'You cannot *tickee tickee* (see) our *Atua* (our god); our god cannot be seen, nevertheless god is in the temple.' They assured me that soon after the temple was erected that the caterpillars fled away, the potatoes grew in abundance, and all of them were very good.

I asked them if they would sell me the temple, as I should like my friends in New South Wales to see it. They assured me they could not. I said I was their friend, and had come a great way to see them; if they would not sell it me, I would not come to visit them any more. They observed they could not let me have it, for if they did all their pickaninnies (their children) would all die, but if I wished to have a temple to take to my friends they would make one for me like unto the one I saw, but it would not be *tabbatabed* (consecrated). I told them I did not object to its not being *tabbatabed*, and that as soon as they had made me the temple I would pay them for it, to which they consented. In about three days after my interview with them they brought me an exact likeness of the temple I had seen. At the time they brought it the very priest that *tabbatabed* theirs was with me, and I requested him to *tabbatab* my temple, to which he said, I cannot *tabbatab* yours; you are not a New Zealand man; you come and live at New Zealand, and have potato plantations, then I will *tabbatab* your temple, and put into it *Atua*. I cannot do that, I observed; your temple is nothing good; there is but one God! The Great God of Heaven and Earth! The priest said he would show me how he performed the ceremony. He went through it, all of which appeared to be empty and vain. The conversation ended. I paid the natives for the temple, and we parted in friendship.

1830  
Aug. 4.

Consecrated  
by priest.

Model of  
temple given  
him.

SAMUEL LEIGH.

1830

Aug. 4.

His account  
with Church  
Missionary  
Society.

[Church Missionary House.

REV. S. MARSDEN TO REV. D. COATES.

DEAR SIR,—

Sydney, August 4th, 1830.

On my return from N. Zealand I received your letter with my account. The balance against me was £844 9s. 6d. Towards the payment of this sum I now enclose a bill drawn by the Revd. Dr. Land for £418 13s. 4d. I paid also to Robt. Campbell, Esq., £425 16s. 2d.—£844 9s. 6d. These sums balance the account. The Revd. Dr. Lang will wait on you, after his arrival, to retire his bill.

Heavy expenses  
in visiting  
New Zealand.

After Mr. Lisk left the seminary I paid on account of the Society to Mr. Campbell £450, part payment of what I received on account of the seminary. The Rev. Mr. Wilkinson informs me that his father has been instructed some months ago to repay to you the £200 which was advanced to him, and he has no doubt but the money has been paid. Should this be the case, you will give me credit for the £200, which will make up 650. I would have paid more at present, but my expenses in visiting New Zealand have been more than I expected. I expected to have obtained a passage back to Port Jackson in the King's ship, but in this hope I was disappointed. The vessel in which I went down in was to have called for me again on her return if I did not get in the King's ship; but she was blown off the coast, and bore away to N. S. Wales, which obliged me to remain longer in N. Zealand, and at last I was compelled to write to the west side for a vessel to come for me to the Bay of Islands, which increased my expenses. I shall pay over to Mr. Campbell as soon as convenient the balance due to the Society from the money advanced on account of the seminary.

I need say nothing about the mission, as the Society will receive full information by this conveyance.

I remain, &amp;c.,

SAML. MARSDEN.

P.S.—Revd. Dr. Lang will return to Port Jackson when he has settled his business in London. He will be heard of at Mr. Abn. Birnie's.

[Church Missionary House.

REV. S. MARSDEN TO REV. E. BICKERSTETH.

Aug. 7.

Sent  
information re  
New Zealand.

REVD. AND DEAR SIR,—

Parramatta, August 7th, 1830.

I wrote to you from N. Zealand, and on my return to the colony laid all my observations before the corresponding committee. These documents will be transmitted to you thro' the Secretary, the Revd. R. Hill. You will see from the papers that I have entered pretty fully into the concerns of the mission.



I have stated my views of Rangihoua, Paihea, Kirikiri, Waimate, the water mill, and the school, as I was anxious to give your Committee all the information I could for their future guide. We have had the various subjects under consideration in our committee. The Archdeacon, the Colonial Secretary, and the other members fully accord with the views I have taken of the different subjects. Perhaps your Committee may see reasons to differ with us in some points ; we shall leave the final decision of every thing to your Committee. I beg to make a few brief remarks upon the different subjects I have noticed.

1. Rangihoua : I would observe that the houses of the two catechists (King and Shepherd) are situated on the east side of the village. Tupona is situated on the west side, about one mile and a quarter higher up the harbour. Their houses stand at present on the side of a very high clay hill, not fit for cultivation. Tupona is situated on a flat piece of land, which is good, and fit for gardens, &c., &c., and a very eligible situation.

Here the catechists had begun to erect their houses. The burial-ground was marked out, the place for the chapel, &c., &c., agreeable to a resolution of the local committee, and the land was purchased. Why they afterwards altered their intention I cannot say. I think it had been done without due consideration. I refer you to my letter on the subject.

In another statement you will find my views of Paihea, and my reasons why I conceive it would not be advisable to collect such a body of missionaries there. This station may be kept under some order during the residence of the Revd. H. Williams ; but if he was removed, it would be likely to suffer greatly from the shipping. The shipping is an evil that cannot be remedied.

Kerikeri is a good station, being about 12 miles from the shipping, and the great high road passing through it gives the missionaries daily opportunities of conversing with the natives from the interior, as well as visiting the neighboring districts. One clergyman and two catechists are sufficient for this station. Waimate, on account of the goodness of the land, the abundance of timber for all purposes, and the numerous inhabitants, and distant so far from the ships, promises to be a very important station. Should the present catechists remain there a greater expense will be incurred in building the house at Kirikiri for those who have none than building them at Waimate, where the timber is on the spot. The object of raising their own supplies of grain on the spot will be of great importance to the general interest of the mission in every respect. Messrs. Clarke and Hamlin are well suited for this station—men of very strong minds, and great activity. I was astonished to find Mr. Hamlin speak the native language so well ; he excels all in that respect ;

1830  
Aug. 7.

Remarks on  
the different  
stations.

Rangihoua  
and Tupona.

Paihea and  
Kerikeri.

Waimate.

1830

Aug. 7.

Water-mill  
needed.

and he has a most amiable natural temper, which gives him much influence with the natives.

The next object is a water mill. Little can be done with the grain without this. At the present time there is the greatest abundance of maize, but they have no means of grinding it. This subject I have more fully stated . . .

I remain, &c.,

SAML. MARSDEN.

Land for  
missionary  
station should  
be purchased.

P.S.—When any missionary station it is of great importance to purchase the land from the natives. When this is done, the land becomes neutral ground, and natives from any part will come without hesitation to reside with the missionaries. The natives do not like to live from their own tribe, because they are liable to be insulted, but on neutral ground they can meet and unite together. This will tend greatly to reconcile the different tribes. I found chiefs' sons and daughters living with the missionaries from different parts of New Zealand, some 140 miles from their own district. On the neutral ground they were at home, and were not liable to be offended. When these youths have learned to read the Scriptures, and write their own language, they may spread the knowledge far and wide amongst their own tribes.—S.M.

# GOVERNOR DARLING TO SIR GEORGE MURRAY.

New South Wales, Government House,  
22nd September, 1830.

Sept. 22.

SIR,—

Trade between  
New South  
Wales and New  
Zealand.

It has occurred to me, with reference to the subject of my despatch of 12th August last, No. 50, that you might be desirous of being informed more particularly with respect to the trade between this port and New Zealand. I accordingly do myself the honor to transmit, for your information, the copy of the statement which has been furnished, at my desire, by the Collector and Comptroller of Customs shewing the number of vessels which have entered from and cleared out for New Zealand between the 1st January and the 14th August last, as also the description, quantities, and values of the articles imported and exported in the said vessels.

New Zealand  
frequented by  
English whalers  
and American  
vessels.

It appears that many of the English whalers which do not touch here go to New Zealand for refreshments and to refit, and that American vessels frequent that place in numbers, where they are free from restraint, and obtain the supplies which they require at the expense of a few muskets and a little ammunition.

I have, &c.,

RA. DARLING.

Right Honble Sir George Murray, G.C.B., &c., &c.

[Enclosure.]

1830

AN ACCOUNT SHEWING THE TRADE BETWEEN THIS PORT AND  
NEW ZEALAND, SPECIFYING EACH QUARTER FROM THE 1ST  
JANUARY LAST TO THIS DATE, UNDER THE FOLLOWING HEADS,  
VIZ. :—

*Number and Tonnage of Vessels entered Inwards.*

| From 1 January to<br>31 March. |       | From 1 April to<br>30 June. |       | From 1 July to<br>14 August. |       | Total from 1 Jan. to<br>14 August. |       |
|--------------------------------|-------|-----------------------------|-------|------------------------------|-------|------------------------------------|-------|
| Number.                        | Tons. | Number.                     | Tons. | Number.                      | Tons. | Number.                            | Tons. |
| 11                             | 969   | 10                          | 946   | 7                            | 698   | 28                                 | 2,513 |

*Number and Tonnage of Vessels entered Outwards.*

| From 1 January to<br>31 March. |       | From 1 April to<br>30 June. |       | From 1 July to<br>14 August. |       | Total from 1 Jan. to<br>14 August. |                      |
|--------------------------------|-------|-----------------------------|-------|------------------------------|-------|------------------------------------|----------------------|
| Number.                        | Tons. | Number.                     | Tons. | Number.                      | Tons. | Number.                            | Tons.                |
| 8                              | 801   | 13                          | 1,321 | 10                           | 1,396 | 31                                 | 3,158<br><i>sic.</i> |

TOTAL QUANTITIES, DESCRIPTION, AND VALUE OF GOODS  
IMPORTED.

| Description.                  | Total from 1 January to 14 August. |          |
|-------------------------------|------------------------------------|----------|
|                               | Quantity.                          | Value.   |
| Flax .. .. .                  | 500½ tons                          | £ 12,513 |
| Salt provisions .. .. .       | 69,136 pounds                      | 798      |
| Lard .. .. .                  | 3 cwt.                             | 5        |
| Pine boards and spars .. .. . | 35,200 feet                        | 273      |
| Potatoes .. .. .              | 36 tons                            | 189      |
| Maize .. .. .                 | 40 bushels                         | 10       |
| Seal skins .. .. .            | 4,091                              | 4,480    |
| Whale oil .. .. .             | 500 gallons                        | 40       |
| Pigs .. .. .                  | 75                                 | 81       |
| Curiosities .. .. .           | Sundry                             | 17       |
| Fishing-lines .. .. .         | 1 bundle                           | 20       |
|                               |                                    | 18,426   |

1830

TOTAL QUANTITIES, DESCRIPTION, AND VALUE OF GOODS  
EXPORTED.

| Description.                          | Total from 1 January to 14 August. |        |       |
|---------------------------------------|------------------------------------|--------|-------|
|                                       | Quantity.                          | Value. |       |
| Bread .. .. .                         | 203½ cwt.                          | £      | s. d. |
| Bricks .. .. .                        | 7,000                              | 260    | 0 0   |
| Beer .. .. .                          | 730 gals                           | 10     | 5 0   |
| Cedar .. .. .                         | 1,793 feet                         | 75     | 0 0   |
| Cheese .. .. .                        | 335 pounds                         | 33     | 0 0   |
| Flour .. .. .                         | 87,992 do                          | 14     | 0 0   |
| Shingles .. .. .                      | 24,970                             | 787    | 0 0   |
| Cartouche boxes .. .. .               | 142                                | 25     | 0 0   |
| Corks .. .. .                         | 30 gross                           | 39     | 0 0   |
| Earthen and glass ware .. .. .        | Sundry packs.                      | 7      | 0 0   |
| Flints .. .. .                        | 12,000                             | 75     | 0 0   |
| Groceries .. .. .                     | Sundry packs.                      | 18     | 0 0   |
| Gunpowder .. .. .                     | 11,052 pounds                      | 44     | 0 0   |
| Hardware .. .. .                      | Sundry packs.                      | 862    | 0 0   |
| Muskets .. .. .                       | 2,120                              | 639    | 0 0   |
| Rope .. .. .                          | 80 cwt.                            | 2,938  | 0 0   |
| Salt .. .. .                          | 249 cwt.                           | 220    | 0 0   |
| Tobacco pipes .. .. .                 | 65 gross                           | 51     | 10 0  |
| Salt provisions .. .. .               | 87 cwt.                            | 26     | 0 0   |
| Shot .. .. .                          | 836 pounds                         | 200    | 0 0   |
| Water casks .. .. .                   | 260 tons                           | 8      | 0 0   |
| Slops .. .. .                         | Sundry packs.                      | 235    | 0 0   |
| Staves .. .. .                        | 3,400                              | 458    | 0 0   |
| Woollens .. .. .                      | 1,426 yards                        | 300    | 0 0   |
| Rice .. .. .                          | 2,540 pounds                       | 104    | 0 0   |
| Rum and whisky .. .. .                | 2,429 gallons                      | 21     | 0 0   |
| Brandy and gin .. .. .                | 1,607                              | 424    | 0 0   |
| Sugar .. .. .                         | 7,149                              | 300    | 0 0   |
| Tea .. .. .                           | 1,696                              | 138    | 0 0   |
| Tobacco .. .. .                       | 5,062                              | 115    | 0 0   |
| Horned cattle .. .. .                 | 2                                  | 310    | 0 0   |
| Blankets .. .. .                      | 78 pr.                             | 10     | 0 0   |
| Iron .. .. .                          | 8 tons                             | 76     | 0 0   |
| Linen .. .. .                         | 2,700 yards                        | 152    | 0 0   |
| Cutlasses .. .. .                     | 50                                 | 220    | 0 0   |
| Leather manufactured .. .. .          | Sundry packs.                      | 15     | 0 0   |
| Wine .. .. .                          | 120 gals                           | 67     | 0 0   |
| Sundries not enumerated above .. .. . | ..                                 | 18     | 0 0   |
|                                       |                                    | 297    | 0 0   |
|                                       |                                    | 9,591  | 15 0  |

M. B. COTTON, Colr.  
BURMAN LANGA, Contr.

Custom House, Sydney, 14th August, 1830.



[Church Missionary House.

REV. S. MARSDEN TO REV. E. BICKERSTETH.

1830  
Oct. 7.

REVD. SIR,—

Parramatta, 7th Octr., 1830.

\* \* \* \*

I have in former letters stated to you my objections to making Paihea the principal station. It is a necessary and important one as a check to the shipping, as it may be considered the chief seaport in New Zealand; but I could not view it in the same light that the Revd. H. Williams did; and on that point we differ. We were also of a different opinion with respect to Rangihoua. Mr. W. thought it should be relinquished; I could not see one reason for this, but many against it; and I think Mr. W. will agree with me in time. . . . I am very glad that the Revd. Mr. Brown is going to Keri-Keri to open the school for the education of the missionaries' children. When in N. Zealand I urged this measure much upon the Revd. Mr. Williams for the sake of the children; but our views were at variance on this subject. My chief reasons were that your Committee could not approve of three clergymen being stationed at Paihea. There was no house for the Revd. Mr. Brown, nor any accommodation for the children, where they could be lodged and educated there; and to provide proper accommodations would take a long time to build them, and would be attended with a very heavy expense; while at Keri-Keri there was a good house, and every accommodation could be made in the long house built in Mr. Butler's time, which would be at liberty when Mr. Clarke removed to Waimate. Besides, Keri-Keri would be in the very centre of all the mission stations, so that their children could be visited by their parents with much more convenience than at Paihea. I am glad to learn that they have mutually settled this amongst themselves since I left them. I am sure the measure will give general satisfaction to all parties and to your Committee. The Christian world would not have been satisfied with three ordained clergymen living at one station, while two stations had none. The Revd. Mr. Yate going to Waimate and Mr. Brown to Keri-Keri will remove all difficulties upon this head.

*Differs opinion with Mr. Williams re Paihea and Kerikeri.*

*School to be opened in Keri-Keri.*

*Glad this is settled.*

I remain, &amp;c.,

SAMUEL MARSDEN.

[Church Missionary House.

REV. S. MARSDEN TO REV. D. COATES.

1831  
April 18.

DEAR SIR,—

Parramatta, 18th April, 1831.

\* \* \* \*

I lament to say that there are many Europeans now in New Zealand whose conduct is most scandalous. I had two inter-

*Conduct of Europeans in New Zealand.*

1831

April 18.

Appealed to  
Governor  
Darling to  
protect natives.

Fourteen chiefs' heads brought to Port Jackson for sale.

Resident should be stationed in New Zealand.

His accounts re seminary.

views with Governor Darling last week on this subject, and have written to him to-day. Copies of my representation I purpose to forward to the Society, unless some effectual measures can be adopted here to restrain the infamous acts of the Europeans. I have two chiefs with me now—one from the Bay of Islands, who is come at the request of the chiefs to seek redress; the other was taken away by force from the middle. I have no doubt but Governor Darling will do all in his power to afford them protection. Whether the law as it now stands will enable the Governor to do them justice appears a matter of doubt. You will have heard of the conduct of Captain Brind; he has been the cause of much bloodshed; many have been killed to the southward in consequence of what took place at the Bay of Islands, and the heads of the chiefs have been brought to Port Jackson by the Europeans for sale. When the chief who is with me went on board the Prince of Denmark he saw 14 heads of chiefs upon the table in the cabin, and came and informed me. I waited on the Governor, stated the circumstance, and requested His Excellency to use every means to recover them, in order that they might be sent back to their friends. The chief knew the heads; they were his friends; when he retired he said, "Farewell my people, farewell my people." The circumstances to the southward are more fully explained in my statements to the Governor. I intend to call upon His Excellency again in a day or two. On my return from N. Zealand I recommended that a vessel commanded by a naval officer should visit the different places to which the Europeans resort, in order to check the conduct of the masters and crews who visit these islands. A copy of my letter I forwarded to your Committee. In my present communication with the Governor I am of opinion that a resident should be stated [stationed] in New Zealand, with proper authority to notice the misconduct of the Europeans, and to whom the natives can appeal for redress. If no measures are taken the New Zealanders will redress their own wrongs, and take life for life, tho' they are most unwilling to injure the Europeans. With respect to my repaying the Society for the seminary, as the children did not come to the colony as was originally intended, I beg to say the amount was £844 9s. 6d.; paid Mr. Campbell for the Society, August 4, 1830, £426 16s. 2d.; ditto, 2d ditto, transmitted to you a bill drawn by Dr. John Dunmore Lang to be paid in London for the amount of £418 13s. 4d.; balancing my account for the seminary, £844 9s. 6d., or, rather, the Society's former claim. It further appears from your account made up to the July 18, 1830, the Society had a claim upon me for a balance of account £304 9s. 6d., as stated by you. The Revd. Frederick had by my order from the Society at £50 per

annum, £200, which Mr. Wilkinson informed me his father had paid, but as I have not received from you any information on this subject I cannot tell. I shall pay to Mr. R. Campbell this week £100, when I get your final account. I will settle with Mr. Campbell. I will pay the remainder. I paid £10 to the schoolmaster for the propagation of the Gospel. . . .

I remain, &c.,

S. MARSDEN.

1831  
April 18.

[Church Missionary House.

REV. S. MARSDEN TO REV. E. BICKERSTETH.

REVD. SIR,—

Parramatta, 25th April, 1831.

April 25.

A few days ago I wrote to Mr. Coates giving him some account of the recent occurrences which have taken place at New Zealand for the information of your Committee. . . . The Governor as well as the Archdeacon are desirous to do all that can be done to prevent the repetition of similar acts of murder and cruelty. The Governor has issued a General Order prohibiting the importation of the heads of the New Zealanders into N. S. Wales, many having been brought to the colony. I have no doubt but the Governor will point out the necessity of a Resident being appointed to New Zealand to whom the natives may appeal for redress for acts of cruelty, &c., done upon them by the Europeans. Something must be done, or all commercial connexion must cease between N. Zealand and this colony. The natives will most assuredly revenge their own wrongs unless some protection is afforded them. I am not under any apprehension for the safety of the missionaries, as their characters and views are well known by the natives, and their persons respected. . . .

General Order  
issued  
forbidding  
importation of  
New Zealand  
heads.

European  
cruelty must  
be checked.

The original cause of the difference between the tribes on the Middle Island and Kappetee, on the north side of Cook's Straits, appears to be the following: A chief named Tupai-Cupa, who visited England a few years ago, and who was at Liverpool with Doctor Traill, and kindly treated by him and other friends in that town, which was a subject of his constant conversation when he returned to Parramatta, where he remained with me until an opportunity offered for his return to New Zealand. When he arrived at home he visited the inhabitants on the Middle Island; on his third visit he was killed. His friends have sought satisfaction for his death ever since, and by the assistance of the Europeans they have obtained it to the full. What the New Zealanders are indignant against the Europeans for is their joining either party in their wars. This conduct they will resent, unless those in authority in New South Wales or in

Cause of recent  
differences.

1831  
April 25.

Escaped  
convicts mix  
with natives.

England take measures to prevent. It appears nothing could be more horrid than the conduct of the Europeans in these transactions. The British Government must take notice of them, or expose their own subjects who visit that island to the constant danger of murder. I am fully aware that there may be great difficulty in obtaining legal evidence against the Europeans concerned in the business, as the evidence of the natives may not be admitted, and it seems to be the prevailing opinion that the law as it now stands will not extend to crimes of the above nature committed in New Zealand. Should this be the case some Act should be passed by the British Parliament to redress the wrongs of natives. Many desperate characters who either are or have been convicts escape to New Zealand, and mix up with the natives, and are capable of committing any crime. I have thought it my duty to state what has taken place, and I hope our Colonial Government will immediately adopt some measures to check the conduct of the Europeans in future.

I have, &c.,

Rev'd. Edward Bickersteth.

SAMUEL MARSDEN.

[Church Missionary House.

REV. S. MARSDEN TO REV. D. COATES.

1832  
Sept. 18.

DEAR SIR,—

Sydney, 18th Sept., 1832.

I herewith enclose you my private account. You will examine it, and inform me if there are any errors for or against me. It is possible there may, but I do not know that there are, and therefore must leave the account to you to settle.

I feel much concerned that the Active is so expensive.

Mr. Busby to  
be Resident in  
New Zealand.

Perhaps when Mr. Busby comes out as Resident in New Zealand on account of Government some arrangement may be made with the Colonial Government to dispense with the vessel, or at least to reduce her expenses. When Mr. Busby arrives I will do all I can upon this subject.

I remain, &c.,

S. MARSDEN.

[Church Missionary House.

REV. S. MARSDEN TO REV. D. COATES.

1834  
May 13.

DEAR SIR,—

Parramatta, 13th May, 1834.

As I have an opportunity to write a few lines by Sir Edward Parry, I embrace it. From the last accounts we had from New Zealand a short time ago the missionaries and families were all well. I expect you will have heard of the arrival of the



Archdeacon in England before this reaches you. I flattered myself the mission in New Zealand would have met with his support ; but he took offence at some part of the Revd. William Yate's conduct, and withdrew his name and support from the corresponding committee, and left us to do as we liked. Sir Edward Parry knows what gave offence to the Archdeacon. The Rev. Mr. Yate is a very pious man, and labourious missionary. New Zealand is now visited by a great number of ships, and several Europeans are settling there, which will increase the difficulties to the missionaries. However, they are every where on good terms with the natives. . . .

1834

May 13.

Archdeacon  
gone to  
England.Europeans  
settling in  
New Zealand.

I must admire the piety and zeal of Sir Edward Parry and his lady ; they are true friends to the Gospel, and have done all in their power to promote the cause of religion in the important station which Sir Edward fitted in N. S. Wales. I pray that the Divine blessing may preserve and prosper them whither they go. Sir Edward is in possession of the reasons the Archdeacon withdrew from the corresponding committee. Perhaps you may see Sir Edward, and he will give you his opinion of the Rev. Mr. Yate.

Friendship of  
Sir Edward  
Parry.

I remain, &amp;c.,

D. Coates, Esq.

SAMUEL MARSDEN.

[Church Missionary House.

REV. S. MARSDEN TO —.

REVD. SIR,—

Parramatta, Sept. 25th, 1834.

Sept. 25.

I have taken the liberty to write to you as Secretary of the C. M. Society on the behalf of a young man named Langhorne. He is a clerk in the Australian Bank. I believe he is a native of Clapham. I have known him since his arrival in the colony. Mr. Langhorne brought a letter of introduction to me from Dr. Dealtry, minister of Clapham. Mr. L. is a very pious young man, well informed, and very prudent in his whole conduct. He has for some time past expressed a strong desire to be employed in the New Zealand mission, and I believe from the best of motives. He has been very useful in copying the proceedings of the auxiliary committee, and is well acquainted with the affairs of the mission in New Zealand. Mr. L. got a situation as clerk in the bank soon after his arrival, in which situation he has given much satisfaction. Should the parent Committee think it prudent to appoint him to any situation as clerk or catechist I believe he would be found faithful and attentive to his duty. The auxiliary committee will write to the Society about him. I beg to refer your Committee to the Revd. Dr. Dealtry, who knows his family.

Mr. Langhorne,  
clerk in  
Australian  
Bank.Desirous to join  
New Zealand  
mission.

1834

Sept. 25.

Man-of-war  
sent to New  
Zealand.

You will probably hear that there has been some serious disturbances between the Europeans and the natives, and some lives have been lost. The Government have sent a man-of-war and another small vessel to New Zealand to settle the differences, if they can. I suspect some of the Europeans have been behaving ill to the natives, which has excited them to acts of violence. Twelve Europeans were killed, and about the same number taken prisoners, with the captain's wife and two children. The vessel belonged to this colony, and was driven on shore in a gale of wind, and wrecked.

Natives desire  
missionaries.

The disturbance happened on the west side, near Mount Egmont, far from any of the missionary stations. I have had some chiefs with me lately, begging for missionaries. They told me wars would never cease amongst them unless they had some missionaries. They then would live in peace. The merchants and the Government should aid the Society in this great work. New Zealand will be a place for our whalers and other ships if they are (I mean the natives) treated with common civility. If they are not they will take their own redress.

Missionaries  
perfectly safe.

A man-of-war and a smaller vessel are gone to New Zealand to recover the Europeans who were taken prisoners by the natives. How the matter will end I cannot say. There is nothing to be apprehended to be done by the natives to the missionaries. I am confident they will be perfectly safe. Since I began my letter a chief and his wife have arrived from the South Cape, and are with me. His object is to get a missionary to reside at his settlement. I introduced him to the Governor, in order that he might tell his own story. The Governor received them very kindly, which gave them great satisfaction. I intimated to His Excellency that the Government and merchants ought to assist the Society with means to supply the natives of New Zealand with instruction, as that island promises to be of such great importance to N. S. Wales and the whale fishery. The Governor promised the chief some presents of several articles he wanted. . . . The chief . . . told me he wanted no guns ; he wanted missionaries. . . .

I remain, &c.,

SAMUEL MARSDEN.

[Church Missionary House.

REV. S. MARSDEN TO THE REV. D. COATES.

1837

March 27.

DEAR SIR,—

March 27th, 1837.

\*

\*

\*

\*

I resolved to visit New Zealand as soon as I could . . . but I could not hire any clergyman to do my duty, as there were

none in the colony who could leave their parish. At length the Revd. Mr. Bobart arrived, on his way to England, in a very weak and feeble state of health. He came and resided at the parsonage with me, and began gradually to recover strength. I told him I wished to go to New Zealand, if he thought he could do my duty until my return, or at least be an assistant to the Revd. Mr. Forrest during my absence. Mr. Forrest would take the laborious duty. To this proposition Mr. Bobart agreed. I applied to the Bishop for leave of absence, which I obtained. I agreed to allow Mr. Bobart £100 per annum and to live in my family until my return. I left him very weak, but Mr. Forrest will relieve him all he can. On the 7th of February I embarked on board the *Pyramus*, a very fine ship, which was going to the west side of N. Zealand for spars. As I was very weak and feeble I took with me one of my daughters to assist me. I purposed to cross by land from the west side of the island to the east.

1837  
March 27.

Mr. Bobart  
undertook his  
duties.

Marsden  
embarked for  
New Zealand  
on the 7th  
February.

On the 23rd we crossed the bar of Okanga River. The sea broke awfully upon the bar. The captain was much alarmed, as we had no pilot, and were in great danger of being overwhelmed by the heavy violent waves constantly breaking about the vessel, and one rolled upon deck. Through the Divine Protection we escaped a watery grave. After we crossed the bar we came to anchor for the night. Next morning we proceeded up the river, and came to anchor again near the Wesleyan missionary station, when I went on shore and visited the Revd. Mr. Turner, whom I had formerly known. I remained here 13 days. Saw many of the chiefs whom I had formerly known. I found many were enquiring after the Saviour, and a large number attended public worship. . . . When I left Okeanga a number accompanied me, upwards of 70. Some met us from Waimati. We had to travel about 40 miles by land and water. The road lay through a very thick wood. The natives carried me on something like a hummock for 20 miles. We reached Waimati as the sun went down, where we were kindly received by the Revd. William Williams and colleagues. One principal chief who has embraced the Gospel, and has been baptized, accompanied us all the way. He told me he was so unhappy at Okianga; that he could not get to converse with me from the crowds that attended; that he had come to Waimate to speak with me. . . . The schools and church are well attended, and the greatest order is observed amongst all classes. On the opposite side of the harbour a number of Europeans are settled along with the natives. Several Europeans keep public houses, and encourage every kind of crime. Here drunkenness, adultery, murder, &c., are committed. There are no laws, Judges, or Magistrates, so that

Stayed thirteen  
days at  
Okeanga.

Carried twenty  
miles by  
natives.

Peace and  
quietness at  
Waimate.

State of  
European  
settlement.

1837  
March 27.

Satan maintains his dominion without molestation. Some civilized Government must take New Zealand under its protection, or the most dreadful evils will be committed from runaway convicts and sailors and publicans. There are no laws here to punish crimes. When I return to N. S. Wales I purpose to lay the state of New Zealand before the Colonial Government, to see if anything can be done to remedy these public evils. From weakness and want of light I cannot write correctly.

I remain, &c.,

SAMUEL MARSDEN.

[Church Missionary House.

REV. S. MARSDEN TO REV. D. COATES.

May 25.

DEAR SIR,—

Parramatta, May 25th, 1837.

Death of  
Rev. R. Hill.

I received your letter this day with the duplicates of former documents, accompanied by the late Rev. R. Hill's account. Mr. Hill died about a year since, and left his private accounts in a very unsettled state. It will be about 14 months from this period before his private affairs can be arranged, on account of his will. . . . His income was equal to £600 per annum, and he had no family. He has left a poor afflicted wife. . . . He was a pious and labourious minister, and his loss is much felt in the colony. We are greatly distressed for clergy. I am very old and infirm, and my eyes have greatly failed me. It is with difficulty I can write at all.

His loss much  
felt in the  
colony.

I informed you in my last letter of my visit to New Zealand. I was very feeble when I left Port Jackson, and I was strongly urged not to go, but . . . I felt it my imperious duty to visit New Zealand again, and see what state the mission was in. Both the Wesleyan missionaries, as well as the Church and the natives, everywhere received me most cordially. I was happy with them and they with me. My voyage was very beneficial to my health. More missionaries are wanted. . . . I recommended the missionaries to teach the native children the English language, as this in my judgment would contribute much to their advancement in civilization. . . .

Voyage to New  
Zealand  
beneficial to  
his health.

There is a Frenchman (he says he is related to the late Royal family) now at Port Jackson, who is on his way to N Z. He is going to take possession of 40,000 acres of land purchased from the late Thomas Kendall when he was in London. His name is Barron De Teirny. He expects to do great things there. Whether he will give the missionaries any trouble or no I know not. I shall write to put them on their guard. I have had an interview with the Barron, and shall see him again before he sails. He tells me he purchased for the purpose of

Baron de  
Thierry going  
to New Zealand.



improving the natives of N.Z. I fear he will be greatly disappointed in the end. I merely write these few lines in case my former letter should not have arrived. I fear you will not be able to make out my writing; I am so blind. I beg my best respects to the Committee. I put the Committee to no expense in my voyage to New Zealand. It was an act of my own, and therefore I felt myself bound to pay all expense to and from New Zealand.

I remain, &c.,

D. Coates, Esq.

SAMUEL MARSDEN.

1837  
May 25.

[Church Missionary House.

REV. S. MARSDEN TO MR. JOWETT.

DEAR SIR,—

Parramatta, August 11th, 1837.

Aug. 11.

The last year has been very trying to me, and almost more than I could support. . . . I determined to visit the Bay of Islands and other missionary stations upon that island, and see what state the missionaries were in, and applied to the Governor for leave of absence, and obtained His Excellency's sanction. A ship named the *Pyramus* sailed from Sydney Cove for the west side of N. Zealand; in her I took my passage, and on the vessel arriving at Okinga I crossed overland to the Bay of Islands. . . . The natives as well as the missionaries were greatly rejoiced to see me. . . . You are aware there are no laws in N. Zealand; there is no king. They feel the want of this, and they cannot make a king from their own chiefs, as every chief would think himself degraded if he should be put under the authority of a chief of their own. There is a British Resident there, but he has no authority to act. Why he is stationed there without powers I cannot tell. . . .

His visit to  
New Zealand.

British Resident  
there has no  
authority.

I wished to visit all the stations, but the stormy weather was against me. I visited at the Thames, and some of the missionaries there. From the Thames I proceeded to Cloudy Bay and Cook's Straits. A missionary is wanted in Cook's Straits. I was informed there were 1,500 natives in the Straits. Besides natives, there are se [torn out] Europeans settled in the Straits and at C [torn out] Bay. Cloudy Bay is not less than 700 miles from the Bay of Islands. I would have landed at the different stations of the east side to the south of the Thames, but could not. The weather was very stormy. . . . When I visited the North Cape I found that mission in a very prosperous state. The place was becoming in every respect like an European settlement. The natives working as sawyers and carpenters, &c., &c.

I shall now conclude, as my eyes are bad.

SAML. MARSDEN.

1837  
Aug. 18.

Bishop  
Broughton  
willing to visit  
New Zealand.

[Church Missionary House.

REV. S. MARSDEN TO REV. M. JOWETT.

REVD. SIR,—

Parramatta, Augt. 18th, 1837.

I communicated to Bishop Broughton the request of your Committee that His Lordship would visit N. Zealand. He showed his readiness to meet the wishes of your Committee to the utmost of his power. As His Lordship will write to you by this conveyance I need say no more upon the subject.

The sudden death of the Revd. R. Hill left the largest church and the most populous parish in the colony without a clergyman. I therefore detained the Revd. Mr. Taylor for the present in this colony, until the arrival of a clergyman from England. I wrote for an assistant for myself some time ago, but none has arrived. The Bishop has also written for clergy. Mr. Taylor while here will be no expense to the Society.

Rev. Mr. Taylor  
succeeded to  
Rev. R. Hill.

It would be desirable that your Committee send out a clergyman to reside at Sydney, in order that he may carry on all the correspondence between your Committee and the corresponding committee here and at N. Zealand—a good pious man. The Bishop has promised he will ensure him a salary of £200 per annum from Government and a free passage. Should one come out for the above purpose, perhaps it would be as well not to appoint him a member of the corresponding committee. Let him be a gentleman equal to the duties.

I am now upwards of 70 years old; my eyes are dim with age; it is with difficulty I can write a word; you must therefore excuse all errors.

I remain, &c.,

Revd. M. Jowett.

SAMUEL MARSDEN.

# LETTER FROM BARON DE THIERRY TO THE EDITOR OF THE SYDNEY GAZETTE.

Mount Isabel, Hokianga, N.Z.,  
17 Dec., 1837.

Dec. 17.

SIR,—

Baron de  
Thierry arrives  
at Hokianga.

I arrived here on the 4th ultimo, and received the compliment of a salute of 21 guns from the ships in the river, which were dressed out in their colours, a compliment quite unexpected, and which augured those good feelings which I had every reason to hope would lead to the speedy establishment of order and prosperity in this interesting part of New Zealand. —, with feigned sincerity, offered me the use of his establishment for myself and followers, and we repaired to his habitation, where for three or four days there was that warmth on his part which impressed me with a conviction that he was a different person than had been represented to me in Sydney and on my arrival

An anonymous  
host.

here. I was soon to discover my error. After assembling some of the native chiefs I found my claim to my territories warmly opposed, under the influence of some of the white residents. The Wesleyan missionaries had purchased a portion of my lands over me, and Mr. Russell and Captain Young had also purchased, in full knowledge of my previous claim. The natives were thus induced to say that they fully acknowledged having signed the deed obtained for me by Mr. Kendall, but that they did not receive the 36 axes mentioned in it. They however acknowledged having at a later period received 24 Sydney axes, but none of those which I sent by Mr. Kendall as part of the £800 property which I entrusted to his care. The white residents declare their belief that I gave that amount to Mr. Kendall, since many remember his telling them of his having received the property from me; they also grant that the deed was actually signed on board the ship *Povidence*, as witnessed by Captain Herd; but yet their own interests induce them to refuse me that possession to which I am so justly entitled. Nene (now called Thomas Walker) at length agreed to give me possession of a district, part of which had been re-purchased by Captain Young, who acceded to the arrangement on condition of receiving £100 to withdraw his pretensions. A few days after landing I took some of my men to the land, where I purchased a large native hut for them, and commenced erecting a temporary house on a fine commanding elevation, which I named after my little daughter. During my absence from ——'s place, he began the most diabolical tissue of false representations, and seduced the greater part of my emigrants from my service. He offered to find them in provisions for twelve months, to build them good residences, to give them lands and furnish them with oxen to plough them. Two or three deserted at a time in defiance of their written contracts. Each individual was to have repaid me his passage money, and that of his wife and children, if he left my employ before the expiration of twelve months, but —— told them that they "might snap their fingers" at me, for that there was no law in New Zealand. He employed my boat-builder to repair his boats, my painter in painting his long boat, my tailor in making clothes, &c., and without permission or compunction appropriated all those to his service whom I had brought at such heavy cost for my own. He then demanded of me provisions for the families of the deserters, which I of course refused, and wrote me the most impudent letter, taunting me with being an oppressor, whose aim was "to grind the hungry into submission." Most undoubtedly I refused to be at the expense of feeding the families of those who had deserted, and were employed by him. Thanks to this . . .

1837

Dec. 17.

Claim to his  
territories  
opposed.

Land at last  
obtained.

Settlement  
begun at  
Mount Isabel.

Emigrants  
induced to  
desert.

1837  
Dec. 17.  
—

Several acres  
ready for  
planting.

Trial by jury  
introduced.

Difficulty of  
establishing law  
and order.

High opinion  
of the Maoris.

and plausible man, I have been left without carpenters to erect my houses; without blacksmiths to work the iron I brought with me, and I am reduced to the necessity of employing my farming men as rough carpenters. —'s aim was the frustration of my expedition, but he has failed. I have a few men remaining who are faithful, and having already gained the confidence and affection of the natives, whom I treat in all respects as white men, I have a sufficiency of laborers. My white farming men have already done what had never before been accomplished in New Zealand—they have broken up and dressed off several acres of land, now ready to receive the corn and potatoes. I have cleared a road upwards of a mile long, and about twenty feet broad, and have cut two other smaller roads. We have a house and outbuildings. I have sunk a deep well, and have given this previously wild place a civilised appearance.

I have done more than all this, however. I availed myself of the opportunity afforded by the loss of a few bars of soap to introduce for the first time in this country trial by jury, and the natives have since promised to resort to this mode of trial in future, within my territories, instead of the club-law system now in vogue with the whites. I am glad to have it in my power to say that many of the respectable residents here are friendly to the idea of establishing a code of laws and acknowledging some form of civilised government, but something still lurks behind which they cannot at present conquer—there is evidently, though they do not tell me so, a shyness at accepting a stranger as the leader of the community, and yet they know full well that honest and intelligent as many may be, and undoubtedly are, there is not at present another person here whose experience and qualifications fit him for the office. Captain McDonnell, who was at a former period "additional British Resident," and who has declared to me that his instructions were full and explicit on the subject, says that "there is but one king in New Zealand," and that king is the King of England. This I do not hesitate to deny. I am an Englishman at heart, but the study of my life will be to support the independence of New Zealand under some civilised ruler, be he who he may, and to save this fine people from the degradation and destruction which would inevitably follow its subjection to the British Crown. Good as my opinion has ever been of the New Zealanders, it is greatly improved by a closer connexion with them: they are mere children it is true, but they are gifted with kind and friendly feelings, and I find them both intelligent and trustworthy, and that they are willing to work cannot be better proved than by the greater portion of labour which in a few brief weeks has been done on this place. The greatest bar to



their improvement is the blanket, which they prefer to other garments because they are poor and unprovided, and it serves them for clothing by day and covering by night. If properly paid, and receiving a fair remuneration for their labour, they would soon be supplied with covering for the night and proper clothing for their persons; it is their incessant aim, and I find that those who possess a few articles of dress wear them till they no longer hold together. They all look with great anxiety to the introduction of money amongst them, and it is to be hoped that it may ere long be brought into circulation, which will enable them to work for pay, and purchase those articles which they require. As for the idea that the most civilised of the New Zealanders are in a fit condition to govern themselves, it is perfectly ridiculous—their perfect ignorance of worldly affairs renders self-government quite unintelligible to them, and would subject them to all the dangers to which the uneducated and ignorant are subject. The country abounds with natural resources—the timber is magnificent, and I am surrounded by thousands of acres ready for the plough. On my own lands I have shell for lime, abundance of fine timber, stone enough to erect houses for centuries to come, fine gravel for roads, river sand for mortar, clay for bricks, and potters' clay for earthenware, abundance of clear land and delicious water. Of the climate I can say nothing as yet; to one who has spent a few years in the tropics it is pleasant by day but uncomfortably cold at night.

1837  
Dec. 17.

Self-  
government  
quite  
impossible.

I have lost about £200 passage money by deserters, and the conduct of Mr. — and Mr. —, his son-in-law, has been most shameful, as it unites at once duplicity, dishonesty, and ingratitude. I gave cabin passage to Mr. —, including Mr. and Mrs. —, and supplied them with about £20 worth of clothing, &c., previous to their departure. I refer to my landlady in Pitt-street for my conduct to Mr. and Mrs. — at a period when they threw themselves unsought upon my hands, and those who may take the trouble to inquire into these particulars will be best able to conceive what must be my feelings at the scandalous conduct which —'s influence has occasioned towards me. Some of the deserters are returning to Sydney, without permission or paying me what they owe me; it is very probable that they may make out their own version, and endeavour to bring discredit on my establishment; in this respect they may do as they please. Those who witness what I have already done in this country, and who have it in their power to ascertain the feelings of the people of New Zealand towards me, will some day or other make known the truth, if this plain statement should fail to establish it. I am about erecting a few comfortable cot-

£200 passage  
money lost by  
deserters.

1837

Dec. 17.

Cottages  
erected for  
future settlers.

tages for the use of persons who may come to join me, and shall feel happy in promoting the welfare of such as may be willing to join me. The Rev. Mr. Marsden foretold with prophetic truth what has happened with the bulk of my emigrants, and had his advice to me been given before I had engaged to take them I would have saved much money and still more vexation by trusting my first efforts chiefly to the New Zealanders, and leaving to Sydney the unprincipled people whom I was unfortunate enough to bring away.

I remain, &c.,

CHARLES, BARON DE THIERRY, SOV. C.

1838

Feb. 18.

REV. S. MARSDEN TO REV. D. COATES.

DEAR SIR,—

Parramatta, February 18, 1838.

\* \* \* \* \*

I have some intention of visiting New Zealand again, if my health will permit. I am very weak and feeble, and cannot preach now to regular congregation, but can only visit the hospital and prison gangs and the sick in their homes. My eyes are very dim with age. I have now been appointed chaplain to N. S. Wales forty-five years, and have gone through many toils and hardships, and have often to contend with unreasonable and wicked men's power. I have gone through many dangers by land and by water, and amongst the heathens, and amongst my own countrymen in New South Wales, and have both suffered shipwreck and robbery, but the Lord in His mercy at all times delivered me. . . .

I remain, &c.,

D. Coates, Esq.

SAML. MARSDEN.

EXTRACT OF REV. S. MARSDEN'S LAST LETTER TO THE CHURCH  
MISSIONARY SOCIETY.

April 26.

DEAR SIR,—

Parramatta, April 26, 1838.

\* \* \* \* \*

I have wished for some time to pay another visit to New Zealand, but I have been very unwell, and not able to preach in my church, and am still weak and feeble. My eyes are dim with age, being now upwards of seventy years old. It will be a great gratification to me to visit New Zealand once a year, as well as to the missionaries. . . . Mr. Bobart is doing my duty, and I pay him his salary. Government allow him nothing. Mr. Bobart is married to one of my daughters. Mr. Bobart is a

man of a weak constitution, and is not suited to a savage nation ; he is very useful in my parish, and much approved by the inhabitants. I have now been appointed as chaplain to N. S. Wales upwards of 45 years, since the 1st day of January, 1793 (forty-five years), and I now feel my strength perfect weakness. . . . I am not able to preach in the church ; my eyes are very dim ; it is with difficulty I can read or write ; you must therefore excuse my errors. I mentioned this in the former part of this letter. I have an intention to visit the missionaries in New Zealand if my strength will permit.

I remain, &c.,

Mr. D. Coates.

SAMUEL MARSDEN.

1838  
April 26.

DESPATCH (WITH ENCLOSURES) FROM THE SECRETARY OF STATE  
(THE MARQUESS OF NORMANBY) TO GOVERNOR GIPPS.

(No. 118.)

*New Zealand.*

SIR,—

Downing Street, 15th August, 1839.

1839  
Aug. 15.

I transmit, for your information and guidance, the copy of instructions which I have addressed to Captain Hobson, of Her Majesty's navy, on his embarkation to assume the government of the British settlements in progress in New Zealand. Those instructions leave me nothing to add in addressing yourself on the same occasion, beyond the expression of my confident belief that you will afford to Captain Hobson and to Her Majesty's Government, on this occasion, the full benefit of all the knowledge and experience which you have gained during your long course of public service, and that you and the members of the Legislative Council of New South Wales will cheerfully undertake those additional duties which Her Majesty has thus been pleased to commit to you and to them.

14th August,  
1839.  
15th August,  
1839.

I have, &c.,

Governor Sir George Gipps, &c., &c.

NORMANBY.

[Enclosure No. 1.]

MARQUESS NORMANBY TO CAPTAIN HOBSON.

(No. 1.)

SIR,—

Downing Street, 14th August, 1839.

Your appointment to the office of Her Majesty's Consul at New Zealand having been signified to you by Viscount Palmerston, and His Lordship having conveyed to you the usual instructions for your guidance in that character, it remains for me to address you on the subject of the duties which you will

1839  
Aug. 15.

be called to discharge in a separate capacity, and under my own official superintendence.

The acquaintance which your service in Her Majesty's navy has enabled you to obtain with regard to the state of society in New Zealand relieves me from the necessity of entering on any explanation on that subject. It is sufficient that I should generally notice the fact that a very considerable body of Her Majesty's subjects have already established their residence and effected settlements there, and that many persons in this Kingdom have formed themselves into a society, having for its object the acquisition of land and the removal of emigrants to those islands.

Her Majesty's Government have watched these proceedings with attention and solicitude. We have not been insensible to the importance of New Zealand to the interests of Great Britain in Australia, nor unaware of the great natural resources by which that country is distinguished, or that its geographical position must, in seasons either of peace or war, enable it in the hands of civilised men to exercise a paramount influence in that quarter of the globe. There is probably no part of the earth in which colonization could be effected with a greater or surer prospect of national advantage.

On the other hand, the Ministers of the Crown have been restrained by still higher motives from engaging in such an enterprise. They have deferred to the advice of the Committee appointed by the House of Commons in the year 1836 to enquire into the state of the aborigines residing in the vicinity of our colonial settlements, and have concurred with that Committee in thinking that the increase of national wealth and power promised by the acquisition of New Zealand would be a most inadequate compensation for the injury which must be inflicted on this Kingdom itself by embarking in a measure essentially unjust, and but too certainly fraught with calamity to a numerous and inoffensive people, whose title to the soil and to the sovereignty of New Zealand is indisputable, and has been solemnly recognised by the British Government. We retain these opinions in unimpaired force, and though circumstances entirely beyond our control have at length compelled us to alter our course, I do not scruple to avow that we depart from it with extreme reluctance.

The necessity for the interposition of the Government has, however, become too evident to admit of any further inaction. The reports which have reached this office within the last few months establish the facts that about the commencement of the year 1838 a body of not less than two thousand British subjects had become permanent inhabitants of New Zealand; that



amongst them were many persons of bad or doubtful character—convicts who had fled from our penal settlements or seamen who had deserted their ships—and that these people, unrestrained by any law, and amenable to no tribunals, were alternately the authors and victims of every species of crime and outrage. It further appears that extensive cessions of land have been obtained from the natives, and that several hundred persons have recently sailed from this country to occupy and cultivate those lands. The spirit of adventure having been effectually roused, it can be no longer doubted that an extensive settlement of British subjects will be rapidly established in New Zealand, and that unless protected and restrained by necessary laws and institutions, they will repeat unchecked in that quarter of the globe the same process of war and spoliation under which uncivilised tribes have almost invariably disappeared, as often as they have been brought into the immediate vicinity of emigrants from the nations of Christendom. To mitigate, and, if possible, to avert these disasters, and to rescue the emigrants themselves from the evils of a lawless state of society, it has been resolved to adopt the most effective measures for establishing amongst them a settled form of civil government. To accomplish this design is the principal object of your mission.

I have already stated that we acknowledge New Zealand as a sovereign and independent State, so far at least as it is possible to make that acknowledgment in favor of a people composed of numerous dispersed and petty tribes, who possess few political relations to each other, and are incompetent to act or even to deliberate in concert. But the admission of their rights, though inevitably qualified by this consideration, is binding on the faith of the British Crown. The Queen, in common with Her Majesty's immediate predecessor, disclaims for herself and her subjects every pretension to seize on the Islands of New Zealand, or to govern them as a part of the dominions of Great Britain, unless the free and intelligent consent of the natives, expressed according to their established usages, shall be first obtained. Believing, however, that their own welfare would, under the circumstances I have mentioned, be best promoted by the surrender to Her Majesty of a right now so precarious, and little more than nominal, and persuaded that the benefits of British protection and of laws administered by British Judges would far more than compensate for the sacrifice by the natives of a national independence which they are no longer able to maintain, Her Majesty's Government have resolved to authorise you to treat with the aborigines of New Zealand for the recognition of Her Majesty's sovereign authority over the whole or any part of those islands which they may be willing

1839  
Aug 15.  
—

1839

Aug. 15.

to place under Her Majesty's dominion. I am not unaware of the difficulties by which such a treaty may be encountered. The motives by which it is recommended are of course open to suspicion. The natives may probably regard with distrust a proposal which may carry on the face of it the appearance of humiliation on their side and of a formidable encroachment on ours; and their ignorance even of the technical terms in which that proposal must be conveyed may enhance their aversion to an arrangement of which they may be (?) comprehend the exact meaning or the probable results. These, however, are impediments to be gradually overcome by the exercise on your part of mildness, justice, and perfect sincerity in your intercourse with them. You will, I trust, find powerful auxiliaries amongst the missionaries, who have won and deserved their confidence; and amongst the older British residents, who have studied their character and acquired their language. It is almost superfluous to say that, in selecting you for the discharge of this duty, I have been guided by a firm reliance on your uprightness and plain dealing. You will, therefore, frankly and unreservedly explain to the natives, or their chiefs, the reasons which should urge them to acquiesce in the proposals you will make to them. Especially, you will point out to them the dangers to which they may be exposed by the residence amongst them of settlers amenable to no laws or tribunals of their own, and the impossibility of Her Majesty extending to them any effectual protection, unless the Queen be acknowledged as the Sovereign of their country, or at least of those districts within or adjacent to which Her Majesty's subjects may acquire lands or habitations. If it should be necessary to propitiate their consent by presents, or other pecuniary arrangements, you will be authorised to advance at once to a certain extent in meeting such demands, and beyond those limits you will refer them for the decision of Her Majesty's Government.

It is not, however, to the mere recognition of the sovereign authority of the Queen that your endeavours are to be confined, or your negotiations directed. It is further necessary that the chiefs should be induced, if possible, to contract with you, as representing Her Majesty, that henceforward no lands shall be ceded, either gratuitously or otherwise, except to the Crown of Great Britain. Contemplating the future growth and extension of a British colony in New Zealand, it is an object of the first importance that the alienation of the unsettled lands within its limits should be conducted from its commencement upon that system of sale of which experience has proved the wisdom, and the disregard of which has been so fatal to the prosperity of other British settlements. With a view to those interests it is ob-

1839  
Aug. 15.

viously the same thing whether large tracts of land be acquired by the mere gift of the Government or by purchases effected on nominal considerations from the aborigines. On either supposition the land revenue must be wasted, the introduction of emigrants delayed or prevented, and the country parcelled out amongst large land holders, whose possession must long remain an unprofitable or rather a pernicious waste. Indeed, in the comparison of the two methods of acquiring land gratuitously, that of grants from the Crown, mischievous as it is, would be the less inconvenient, as such grants must be made with at least some kind of system, with some degree of responsibility, subject to some conditions, and recorded for general information. But in the case of purchases from the natives, even these securities against abuse must be omitted, and none could be substituted for them. You will, therefore, immediately on your arrival announce, by a Proclamation, addressed to all the Queen's subjects in New Zealand, that Her Majesty will not acknowledge as valid any title to land which either has been or shall hereafter be acquired in that country which is not either derived from or confirmed by a grant to be made in Her Majesty's name and on her behalf. You will, however, at the same time take care to dispel any apprehensions which may be created in the minds of the settlers that it is intended to dispossess the owners of any property which has been acquired on equitable conditions, and which is not upon a scale which must be prejudicial to the latent interests of the community.

Extensive acquisitions of such lands have undoubtedly been already obtained; and it is probable before your arrival a great addition will have been made to them. The embarrassments occasioned by such claims will demand your earliest and most careful attention.

I shall in the sequel explain the relation in which the proposed colony will stand to the Government of New South Wales. From that relation I propose to derive the resource necessary for encountering the difficulty I have mentioned. The Governor of that colony will, with the advice of the Legislative Council, be instructed to appoint a Legislative Commission to investigate and ascertain what are the lands in New Zealand held by British subjects under grants from the natives; how far such grants were lawfully acquired and ought to be respected; and what may have been the price or other valuable consideration given for them. The Commissioners will make their report to the Governor, and it will then be decided by him how far the claimants, or any of them, may be entitled to confirmatory grants from the Crown, and on what conditions such confirmations ought to be made.



1839  
Aug. 15.

The propriety of immediately subjecting to a small annual tax all uncleared lands within the British settlements in New Zealand will also engage the immediate attention of the Governor and Council of New South Wales. The forfeiture of all lands in respect of which the tax shall remain for a certain period in arrear would probably before long restore to the demesne of the Crown so much of the waste land as may be held unprofitably to themselves and the public by the actual claimants.

Having by these measures obviated the dangers of the acquisition of large tracts of country by mere land jobbers, it will be your duty to obtain, by fair and equal contracts with the natives, the cession to the Crown of such waste lands as may be progressively required for the occupation of settlers resorting to New Zealand. All such contracts should be made by yourself, through the intervention of an officer expressly appointed to watch over the interests of the aborigines as their Protector. The resales of the first purchases that may be made will provide the funds necessary for future acquisitions, and beyond the original investment of a comparatively small sum of money, no other resource would be necessary for this purpose. I thus assume that the price to be paid to the natives by the local Government will bear an exceedingly small proportion to the price for which the same lands will be resold by the Government to the settlers; nor is there any real injustice in this inequality. To the natives, or their chiefs, much of the land of the country is of no actual use, and in their hands it possesses scarcely any exchangeable value. Much of it must long remain useless, even in the hands of the British Government also, but its value in exchange will be first created, and then progressively increased by the introduction of capital and of settlers from this country. In the benefits of that increase the natives themselves will gradually participate.

All dealings with the aborigines for their lands must be conducted on the same principles of sincerity, justice, and good faith as must govern your transactions with them for the recognition of Her Majesty's sovereignty in the islands. Nor is this all: they must not be permitted to enter into any contracts in which they might be ignorant and unintentional authors of injuries to themselves. You will not, for example, purchase from them any territory the retention of which by them would be essential or highly conducive to their own comfort, safety, or subsistence. The acquisition of land by the Crown for the future settlement of British subjects must be confined to such districts as the natives can alienate without distress or serious inconvenience to themselves. To secure the observance of this rule will be one of the first duties of their Official Protector.



There are yet other duties owing to the aborigines of New Zealand, which may be all comprised in the comprehensive expression of promoting their civilisation, understanding by that term whatever relates to the religious, intellectual, and social advancement of mankind. For their religious instruction, liberal provision has already been made by the zeal of the missionaries and of the missionary societies in this Kingdom, and it will be at once the most important and the most grateful of your duties to this ignorant race of men to afford the utmost encouragement, protection, and support to their Christian teachers. I acknowledge also the obligation of rendering to the missions such pecuniary aid as the local Government may be able to afford, and as their increased labours may reasonably entitle them to expect. The establishment of schools for the education of the aborigines in the elements of literature will be another object of your solicitude; and until they can be brought within the pale of civilised life, and trained to the adoption of its habits, they must be carefully defended in the observance of their own customs, so far as these are compatible with the universal maxims of humanity and morals. But the savage practices of human sacrifice and cannibalism must be promptly and decisively interdicted; such atrocities, under whatever plea of religion they may take place, are not to be tolerated in any part of the dominions of the British Crown.

It remains to consider in what manner provision is to be made for carrying these instructions into effect, as for the establishment and exercise of your authority over Her Majesty's subjects who may settle in New Zealand, or who are already resident there. Numerous projects for the establishment of a Constitution for the proposed colony have at different times been suggested to myself and my immediate predecessor in office, and during the last session of Parliament a Bill for the same purpose was introduced into the House of Commons, at the instance of some persons immediately connected with the emigrations then contemplated. The same subject was carefully examined by a Committee of the House of Lords. But the common result of all inquiries, both in this office and in either House of Parliament, was to show the impracticability of the schemes proposed for adoption, and the extreme difficulty of establishing at New Zealand any institutions, legislative, judicial, or fiscal, without some more effective control than could be found amongst the settlers themselves in the infancy of their settlement. It has, therefore, been resolved to place whatever territories may be acquired in sovereignty by the Queen in New Zealand in the relation of a dependency to the Government of New South Wales. I am, of course, fully aware of the objections which may

1839  
Aug. 15.  
—

1839  
Aug. 15.

be reasonably urged against this measure, but after the most ample investigation I am convinced that for the present there is no other practicable course which would not be opposed by difficulties still more considerable, although I trust that the time is not distant when it may be proper to establish in New Zealand itself a local legislative authority.

In New South Wales there is a Colonial Government possessing comparatively long experience, sustained by a large revenue, and constituted in such a manner as is best adapted to enable the legislative and executive authorities to act with promptitude and decision. It presents the opportunity of bringing the internal economy of the proposed new colony under the constant revision of a power sufficiently near to obtain early and accurate intelligence, and sufficiently remote to be removed from the influence of the passions and prejudices by which the first colonists must in the commencement of their enterprise be agitated. It is impossible to confide to an indiscriminate body of persons, who have voluntarily settled themselves in the immediate vicinity of the numerous population of New Zealand, those large and irresponsible powers which belong to the representative system of colonial government. Nor is that system adapted to a colony struggling with the first difficulties of their new situation. Whatever may be the ultimate form of government to which the British settlers in New Zealand are to be subject, it is essential to their own welfare, not less than that of the aborigines, that they should at first be placed under a rule which is at once effective, and to a considerable degree external.

The proposed connexion with New South Wales will not, however, involve the extension to New Zealand of the character of a penal settlement. Every motive concurs in forbidding this, and it is to be understood as a fundamental principle of the new colony that no convict is ever to be sent thither to undergo his punishment.

The accompanying copy of my correspondence with the Law Officers of the Crown will explain to you the grounds of law on which it is concluded that by the annexation of New Zealand to New South Wales the powers vested by Parliament in the Governor and Legislative Council of the older settlement might be exercised over the inhabitants of the new colony. The accompanying Commission under the great seal will give effect to this arrangement, and the warrant which I enclose, under Her Majesty's sign manual, will constitute you Lieutenant-Governor of that part of the New South Wales Colony which has thus been extended over the New Zealand Islands. These instruments you will deliver to Sir George Gipps, who, on your proceeding to New Zealand, will place them in your hands to be published

30th May,  
1839.  
4th June,  
1839.

Commission.  
Warrant.

there. You will then return it to him, to be deposited among the archives of the New South Wales Government.

In the event of your death or absence, the officer administering the Government of New South Wales will provisionally, and until Her Majesty's pleasure can be known, appoint a Lieutenant-Governor in your place, by an instrument under the public seal of his Government.

It is not for the present proposed to appoint any subordinate officers for your assistance. That such appointments will be indispensable is not indeed to be doubted. But I am unwilling at first to advance beyond the strict limits of the necessity which alone induces the Ministers of the Crown to interfere at all on this subject. You will confer with Sir George Gipps as to the number and nature of the official appointments which would be made at the commencement of the undertaking, and as to the proper rate of their emoluments. These must be fixed with the most anxious regard to frugality in the expenditure of the public resources. The selection of the individuals by whom such offices are to be borne must be made by yourself from the colonists either of New South Wales or New Zealand, but upon the full and distinct understanding that their tenure of office, and even the existence of the offices which they are to hold, must be provisional and dependent upon the future pleasure of the Crown.

Amongst the offices thus to be created the most evidently indispensable are those of a Judge, a Public Prosecutor, a Protector of Aborigines, a Colonial Secretary, a Surveyor-General of Lands, and a Superintendent of Police; of these, the Judge alone will require the enactment of a law to create and define his functions. The Act now pending in Parliament for the revival, with amendments, of the New South Wales Act will, if passed into a law, enable the Governor and Legislative Council to make all necessary provision for the establishment in New Zealand of a Court of justice and a judicial system separate from and independent of the existing Supreme Court. The other functionaries I have mentioned can be appointed by the Governor in the unaided exercise of the delegated prerogative of the Crown.

Whatever laws may be required for the government of the new colony will be enacted by the Governor and Legislative Council. It will be his duty to bring under their notice such recommendations as you may see cause to convey to him on subjects of this nature.

The absolute necessity of the revenue being raised to defray the expenses of the government of the proposed settlement in New Zealand has not of course escaped my careful attention. Having consulted the Lords of the Treasury on this subject, I

1839  
Aug. 15.

1839  
Aug. 15.

have arranged with their Lordships that until the sources of such a revenue shall have been set in action, you should be authorised to draw on the Government of New South Wales for your unavoidable expenditure. Separate accounts, however, will be kept of the public revenue of New Zealand and of the application of it; and whatever debt may be contracted to New South Wales must be replaced by the earliest possible opportunity. Duties of import on tobacco, spirits, wine, and sugar will probably supersede the necessity of any other taxation; and such duties, except on spirits, will probably be of a very moderate amount.

The system at present established in New South Wales regarding land will be applied to all the waste lands which may be kept by the Crown in New Zealand. Separate accounts must be kept of the land revenue, subject to the necessary reductions for the expense of surveys and management, and for the improvement by roads and otherwise of the unsold territory, and subject to any deductions which may be required to meet the indispensable exigencies of the local government. The surplus of this revenue will be applicable, as in New South Wales, to the charge of removing emigrants from this Kingdom to the new colony.

The system established in New South Wales to provide for the religious instruction of the inhabitants has so fully justified the policy by which it was dictated that I could suggest no better means of providing for this all-important object in New Zealand. It is, however, gratifying to know that the spiritual wants of the settlers will, in the commencement of the undertaking, be readily and amply provided for by the missionaries of the Established Church of England and of other Christian communions, who have been so long settled in those islands. It will not be difficult to secure for the European inhabitants some portion of that time and attention which the missionaries have hitherto devoted exclusively to the aborigines.

I enclose, for your information and guidance, copies of a correspondence between this Department and the Treasury, referring you to Sir George Gipps for such additional instruction as may enable you to give full effect to the views of Her Majesty's Government on the subject of finance. You will observe that the general principle is that of maintaining in the proposed colony a system of revenue, expenditure, and account entirely separate from that of New South Wales, though corresponding with it as far as that correspondence can be maintained.

The accompanying volume of Rules and Regulations for the Colonial Service will place you in possession of many details for the guidance of your official conduct. You will, however, understand that so much of that volume as relates to correspond-

Mr. Stephen to  
Mr. Spearman,  
13th June,  
1839.

Enclosures :  
Colonial Office  
to Foreign  
Office, 12th  
December,  
1838; Foreign  
Office to  
Colonial Office,  
31st December,  
1838; Colonial  
Office to  
Treasury, 4th  
July, 1838;  
Captain  
Hobson, 24th  
June, 1838;



ence with this Department will not be strictly applicable to your situation. Your correspondence with myself will, as far as may be practicable, be carried on through the Governor of New South Wales. You will, in fact, be one of the officers of that Government; and you will apply to the head of it for instructions in all those cases in which he would himself address a similar reference to Her Majesty's Government in this country. This rule, however, is not to be so strictly construed as to prevent your transmitting to me direct reports of every occurrence of which Her Majesty's Government should be informed as often as opportunities may occur of communicating with this country more rapidly than such communications could be made through Sydney, and whenever the occasion shall appear to you of sufficient importance to justify this deviation from the general rule. It will, however, be your duty to transmit to the Governor copies of all despatches which you may thus address directly to this office. He will also convey to me transcripts of all his correspondence with you by the first opportunity which may present itself after any branch of that correspondence has reached its close.

I have thus attempted to touch on all the topics on which it seems to me necessary to address you on your departure from this country. Many questions have been unavoidably passed over in silence, and others have been adverted to in a brief and cursory manner, because I am fully impressed with the conviction that in such an undertaking as that in which you are about to engage much must be left to your own discretion, and many questions must occur which no foresight could anticipate or properly resolve beforehand. Reposing the utmost confidence in your judgment, experience, and zeal for Her Majesty's service, and aware how powerful a coadjutor and how able a guide you will have in Sir George Gipps, I willingly leave for consultation between you many subjects on which I feel my own incompetency at this distance from the scene of action to form an opinion.

I have, &c.,

Captain Hobson, &c., &c.

NORMANBY.

---

[Enclosure No. 2.]

MARQUESS NORMANBY TO MR. ATTORNEY-GENERAL.

(No. 2.)

SIR,—

Downing Street, 30th May, 1839.

Circumstances have recently occurred which impose on Her Majesty's Government the necessity of establishing some system for governing the numerous body of British subjects

1839  
Aug. 15.

Treasury to  
Colonial Office,  
22nd June,  
1838; Ditto,  
24th June,  
1838.

1839  
Aug. 15

who have taken up their abode in the New Zealand Islands, and who are still repairing thither.

It is proposed to obtain from the chiefs of New Zealand the cession in sovereignty to the British Crown of the territories which have been, or which may be, acquired by Her Majesty's subjects by proprietary titles, derived from the grants of the different chiefs. It is further desired, if possible, to add the sovereignty thus obtained to the Colony of New South Wales as a dependency, in the same manner as Norfolk Island, which is nearly equidistant from Port Jackson, and is now a dependency of the same colony. This arrangement, however, proceeds on the assumptions—first, that it is competent to the Crown thus to enlarge the limits of the colony; and secondly, that the authority of the Legislative Council established under the statute 9, Geo. IV, c. 83, would be extended to the settlements in New Zealand so soon as any such annexation should have been made. The accompanying draft of a new Commission to the Governor of New South Wales has been framed on these assumptions. I have to request that you and Mr. Solicitor-General would consider and report to me your joint opinion whether it would be lawful for Her Majesty to annex to the Colony of New South Wales any territory in New Zealand of which the sovereignty might be acquired by the British Crown, and whether the Legislative authority of the Governor and Council of New South Wales could then be exercised over the British subjects inhabiting that territory, and whether the accompanying draft is properly framed to give effect to these intentions.

I am, &c.,  
NORMANBY.

To Mr. Attorney-General.

[A similar letter to Mr. Solicitor-General.]

[Enclosure No. 3.]

JAMES STEPHEN TO A. Y. SPEARMAN, ESQ.

(No. 3.)

SIR,—

Downing Street, 13th June, 1839.

Mr. Stephen,  
12th December,  
1838;  
Mr. Backhouse,  
31st December,  
1838.

I am directed by the Marquis of Normanby to request that you will lay before the Lords Commissioners of the Treasury the enclosed copies of a correspondence which has passed between this Department and the Foreign Office relative to the establishment of some competent British authority within the Islands of New Zealand.

The letter, which was addressed by Lord Glenelg's direction to Mr. Backhouse on the 12th of December last, will inform their Lordships of the general state of society in those islands, and

since that date circumstances have transpired which have further tended to force upon Her Majesty's Government the adoption of measures for providing for the government of the Queen's subjects resident in or resorting to New Zealand.

With that view it is proposed that certain parts of the Islands of New Zealand should be added to the Colony of New South Wales, as a dependency of that Government, and Captain Hobson, R.N., who has been selected to proceed as British Consul, will also be appointed to the office of Lieutenant-Governor. It is further proposed to instruct Governor Sir George Gipps to recommend to the Legislative Council of New South Wales the enactment of all necessary laws for raising in New Zealand a revenue adequate to the maintenance of the Lieutenant-Governor, and of such other officers as may be indispensable for his assistance in the administration of the affairs of the settlement. Lord Normanby proposes to authorise the payment to Captain Hobson from the revenue so to be raised of £500 per annum, in addition to his salary as Consul. It will probably be also necessary to provide for the appointment of a Judge, of a Public Prosecutor, of a Colonial Secretary, of a Police establishment, of a Treasurer, and of the subordinate officers of revenue. In the present stage of the business it is impossible to state with any degree of exactness the number or emolument of these officers. Lord Normanby can, therefore, only request the concurrence of the Lords of the Treasury in delegating to Sir George Gipps a general authority to make all the necessary arrangements on the most moderate scale, and on the express condition that the expense shall be defrayed entirely from a revenue to be raised within the settlement itself. In the meantime there are some inevitable expenses for the passage and outfit of Captain Hobson for which Lord Normanby is of opinion provision should be made; and with the concurrence of the Lords Commissioners His Lordship would propose that this expense should be defrayed by the Agent for New South Wales, as the settlement would be a dependency of that colony; but conceiving that there should be separate accounts of the revenue of New Zealand, His Lordship would propose that the advance thus to be made should be considered as a debt to be repaid to the Treasurer of New South Wales from that of New Zealand on the earliest opportunity.

Although Lord Normanby is unable now to state with precision the precise amount of this expenditure, it would be as low as possible. In addition to the expense of the voyage, it must involve the purchase of a frame house for the immediate reception of the Lieutenant-Governor, and of some articles which would be required for his immediate use in the public service, such for

1839  
Aug. 15  
—

1839  
Aug. 15.

example as stationery; and of these, an estimate will be sent to the Lords Commissioners as soon as their Lordships' acquiescence in the general principle shall have been signified to Lord Normanby.

I am, &c.,

JAMES STEPHEN.

To A. Y. Spearman, Esq., &c., &c.

[Enclosure No. 4.]

FROM J. STEPHEN, ESQ., TO JOHN BACKHOUSE, ESQ.

SIR,—

Downing Street, 12th December, 1838.

I am directed by Lord Glenelg to request that you will bring under the consideration of Viscount Palmerston the expediency of appointing an officer invested with the character and powers of British Consul at New Zealand.

The Islands of New Zealand have long been resorted to by British subjects, both as possessing peculiar advantages for refitting whaling ships in the South Seas, and on account of the supplies which they afford of timber, flax, and other articles of value. They have also, from their proximity to the penal settlements of New South Wales and Van Diemen's Land, furnished an asylum to fugitive convicts, who, associated with men left in these islands at different times by the whalers and other vessels, have formed a society much requiring the check of some competent authority.

In consequence of representation from the local authorities of New South Wales, it was thought advisable, in the year 1832, to appoint a person in the character of British Resident at New Zealand. The object of making this appointment was twofold—to repress acts of fraud and aggression practised by British subjects against the natives, and of acquiring a beneficial influence over the various chiefs; to protect the lives and property of British subjects engaged in fair trade with the natives. The officer appointed was placed on the civil establishment of New South Wales, and wholly under the direction of the Governor of that colony. Enclosed are copies of the instructions which were furnished to him by Governor Sir Richard Bourke. It has happened, however, that the authority of the Resident has from various causes proved the most part inoperative. At the same time the chiefs have severally evinced a strong disposition to place themselves under British protection. In the year 1835 a declaration was adopted, and subscribed by the chiefs of the northern parts of New Zealand, when their country was threatened with aggression by Baron de Thierry, in which declaration they set forth the independence of their



country, and declared the union of their respective tribes into one State, under the designation of the tribes of New Zealand. They also came to a resolution to send a copy of that declaration to His late Majesty, to thank him for his acknowledgment of their national flag, and to entreat that in return for the friendship which they had shewn, and were still prepared to shew, such British subjects as had settled in their country, or resorted to it for the purpose of trade, His Majesty would continue to be the parent of their infant State, and its protector from all attempts on its independence.

But the existing arrangement having failed to answer the purposes contemplated in its adoption, Lord Glenelg is of opinion that these purposes will be more effectually attained by the appointment of a British Consul to reside at New Zealand. If Lord Palmerston should concur in this opinion Lord Glenelg would suggest that His Lordship should communicate with the Lords Commissioners of the Treasury, in order that provision be made for the appointment in the estimates for consular establishments.

As it will be necessary that the Consul should not be allowed to trade, the amount of his salary will of course be fixed with reference to that circumstance. Hitherto there has been provided annually from the revenue of New South Wales a sum of £500 for the salary of the Resident and £200 on account of donations of provisions and clothing to the chiefs and natives generally; but as the object is one of a national character, and not limited to any interest connected with New South Wales, Lord Glenelg does not think the charge of the proposed consular establishment could probably be enforced on the revenue of that colony, but Lord Glenelg is disposed to think that it will be necessary in the new arrangements to issue a larger sum than £200 for disbursements of different kinds which the Consul might be obliged to make.

Lord Glenelg would further propose that until the state of society in New Zealand shall have become more settled, and until the relations with the native chiefs shall have been placed on a more permanent footing, the Consul should communicate direct with this Department.

I enclose, for Lord Palmerston's further information, a copy of a despatch from the Governor of New South Wales, bearing date the 9th September, 1837, which covers two reports illustrative of the present state of New Zealand—one from Captain Hobson, commanding H.M.S. *Rattlesnake*, the other from the British Resident.

I am, &c.,

J. STEPHEN.

John Backhouse, Esq., &c., &c.

1839  
Aug. 15.

1839  
Aug. 15.

[Enclosure No. 5.]

J. BACKHOUSE, ESQ., TO JAMES STEPHEN, ESQ.

SIR,—

Foreign Office, December 31st, 1838.

I have laid before Viscount Palmerston your letters of the 12th and 24th inst., suggesting the expediency of appointing a Consul at New Zealand; and I am to state in reply that Lord Palmerston concurs in the opinion expressed by Lord Glenelg upon this subject, and will take the necessary steps for including the salary and expenses of that Consul in the consular estimate.

Lord Palmerston further directs me to state that, considering the purposes and objects for which this appointment is to be made, His Lordship would be glad to know if there is any person whom Lord Glenelg thinks peculiarly qualified for the situation.

I am, &c.,

James Stephen, Esq., &c.

J. BACKHOUSE.

[Enclosure No. 6.]

J. STEPHEN, ESQ., TO A. Y. SPEARMAN, ESQ.

SIR,—

Downing Street, 4th July, 1839.

With reference to my letter of the 13th ultimo, respecting the colonization of New Zealand, I am directed by the Marquis of Normanby to transmit to you, for the consideration of the Lords Commissioners of the Treasury, a copy of a letter from Captain Hobson, enclosing an estimate of the expenses for the first establishment of a colony in those islands. Lord Normanby would recommend this estimate, amounting to four thousand and five pounds, for the sanction of the Lords of the Treasury.

I am, &c.,

A. Y. Spearman, Esq., &c.

J. STEPHEN.

[Enclosure No. 7.]

CAPTAIN W. HOBSON TO THE UNDER-SECRETARY OF STATE,  
COLONIAL DEPARTMENT.

34, Great George's Street,

SIR,—

Westminster, 24th June, 1839.

I have the honor to transmit, for the information and approval of the Right Honourable the Marquis of Normanby, an estimate of the expenses for the first establishment of a colony in New Zealand.

The estimate for the house is offered by Mr. Manning, builder, No. 25, Holborn, who has constructed and sent abroad many houses for settlers in the new colonies. Judging by the rude and imperfect plan he has shown me, he will furnish a very

24th June,  
1839.

good temporary residence for the Lieutenant-Governor, which may be sold and removed when a more permanent one can be erected.

1839  
Aug. 15.

I have estimated the costs of the presents for the natives at one thousand pounds. I hope that sum will not be considered large, bearing in mind the fact that no negotiation can be carried on with them unless propitiated by a present.

The estimate for furniture and stationery are the same in amount as was supplied to Captain Hindmarsh when proceeding to South Australia.

I have, &c.,

W. HOBSON, Captain, R.N.

The Under-Secretary of State, Colonial Department.

London, 24th June, 1839.

*An Estimate of Expense for the First Establishment of a Colony in New Zealand.*

|   | £      | s. | d. |
|---|--------|----|----|
| A wooden frame house for the Lieutenant-Governor .. ..                          | 1,200  | 0  | 0  |
| Furniture for drawing-room, waiting-room, entrance hall, and water-closet .. .. | 630    | 0  | 0  |
| (Probable) freight .. ..  | 300    | 0  | 0  |
| Stationery .. ..  | 150    | 0  | 0  |
| Iron chest .. ..  | 25     | 0  | 0  |
| Presents for natives .. ..  | 1,000  | 0  | 0  |
| (Probable) passage-money .. ..  | 700    | 0  | 0  |
|   | <hr/>  |    |    |
|   | £4,005 | 0  | 0  |

W. HOBSON, Captain, R.N.

[Enclosure No. 8.]

G. J. PENNINGTON, PRO SECRETARY, TO JAMES STEPHEN, ESQ.  
SIR,—

Treasury Chambers, 22nd June, 1839.

The Lords Commissioners of Her Majesty's Treasury have had before them your letters of 13th and 18th instant, and their enclosures, relating to the British subjects resident in New Zealand, and to the establishment of a British consulate in those islands, and have also referred to the provision for defraying the expense of that consulate, which has been inserted in the estimate for consular services for the year 1839–40, now before the House of Commons.

With reference to the proposition brought under the consideration of this Board by your letter of the 13th instant, that,

1839  
Aug. 15.

for the purpose of providing for the government of British subjects resident in or resorting to New Zealand, certain parts thereof should be added as a dependency to the Colony of New South Wales, and that the officer selected to proceed to New Zealand as British Consul should likewise receive an appointment as Lieutenant-Governor of the dependent settlement thus contemplated, and with a view to provide for the maintenance of this officer, and of the other public functionaries whose assistance would be requisite for the due administration of the affairs of this dependency, that His Excellency Sir George Gipps should be instructed to recommend to the Legislative Council of New South Wales the enactment of all necessary laws for raising an adequate revenue in New Zealand; and with reference likewise to the request that this Board will concur in delegating to the Governor of New South Wales a general authority to make all necessary arrangements on the most moderate scale for giving effect to those propositions, on the express condition that the expense shall be defrayed entirely from revenue to be raised in New Zealand; I have it in command from my Lords to request you will state to the Marquis of Normanby that, concurring in opinion with His Lordship as to the necessity of establishing some competent control over British subjects in the New Zealand Islands, they would be prepared upon the contemplated cession in sovereignty to the British Crown of territories within those islands which have been or may be acquired by Her Majesty's subjects under grants from the different chiefs being obtained; also to concur in the proposed arrangements for the government of the ceded territory, and for raising a revenue to defray the expense of the establishments it would be necessary to maintain for this purpose. But I am to request that you will further observe to Lord Normanby that, adverting to the peculiar circumstances which have attended the location of British subjects within the territory in question, my Lords deem it necessary to suggest that the annexation of any part of that territory to the Government of New South Wales, and the exercise of the powers it is intended to confer to the Governor and Council of New South Wales, or to the officer about to proceed to New Zealand in his capacity of Lieutenant-Governor, or any assumption of authority beyond that attaching to a British consulate, should be strictly contingent upon the indispensable preliminary of the territorial cession having been obtained by amicable negotiation with and free concurrence of the native chiefs.

I am, &c.,

G. J. PENNINGTON, Pro Sec.

To James Stephen, Esq., &c., &c.



[Enclosure No. 9.]

G. P. PENNINGTON TO JAMES STEPHEN, Esq.

1839  
Aug. 15.

SIR,—

Treasury Chambers, 24th July, 1839.

Having laid before the Lords Commissioners of Her Majesty's Treasury your letter dated 4th instant, transmitting the copy of one from Captain Hobson enclosing an estimate of the expenses for the first establishment of a colony in New Zealand, I am commanded by their Lordships to request that you will signify to the Marquis of Normanby my Lord's sanction for the advance by the Agent-General for New South Wales from funds appertaining to the Government of that colony of the amount required to defray the expenses of the officer proceeding to New Zealand, as specified in the estimate furnished by Captain Hobson, and submitted to my Lords in your letter, with the understanding that such an advance is to be repaid from the revenues of the territory it is proposed to annex to that Government. But you will at the same time state to the Marquis of Normanby that, as the proceedings about to be adopted in regard to New Zealand, in the event of failure of the anticipated cession of sovereignty and of the contemplated revenue, may involve a further expenditure from the funds of this country beyond the salary of the Consul already included in the estimate for consular services for the current year, my Lords have considered it necessary that the arrangement should be brought under the cognizance of Parliament, and they have therefore directed that a copy of their minute giving the sanction now notified to Lord Normanby shall be laid before the House of Commons.

I am, &amp;c.,

G. P. PENNINGTON, Pro Sec.

James Stephen, Esq., &amp;c., &amp;c.

[Enclosure No. 10.]

W. FOX STRANGWAYS TO RIGHT HON. H. LABOUCHERE.

SIR,—

Foreign Office, 11th August, 1839.

I am directed by Viscount Palmerston to acquaint you, for the information of the Marquis of Normanby, that, in compliance with His Lordship's request, a Commission has been made out for Captain Hobson as Her Majesty's Consul in New Zealand; and I transmit to you herewith copies of the instructions which have been addressed to Captain Hobson. Nos. 1 and 2.

I am, &amp;c.,

W. FOX STRANGWAYS.

The Right Honorable Henry Labouchere. &amp;c., &amp;c.

1839  
Aug. 15.

[Enclosure No. 11.]

LORD PALMERSTON TO CAPTAIN HOBSON, R.N.

No 1, Foreign Office,

13th August, 1839.

SIR,—

The Islands of New Zealand have long been resorted to by British subjects, on account of the valuable articles of commerce which those islands produce, and by reason of the peculiar advantages which they offer to whaling ships requiring repair; but the nearness of those islands to the British penal settlements of New South Wales and Van Diemen's Land has also led to their being resorted to as an asylum for fugitive British convicts, and such persons, having associated with men left in New Zealand by whaling ships and other vessels, have formed a society which indispensably requires the check of some controlling authority. Her Majesty's Government have therefore deemed it expedient to station at New Zealand an officer with the character and powers of a British Consul; and I have the satisfaction to acquaint you that the Queen has been graciously pleased to select you for that appointment.

I enclose you herewith the Queen's Commission as Her Majesty's Consul in New Zealand.

You will lose no time in making yourself practically conversant with the details of the consular service, and with the nature and extent of your duties.

The general instructions to Her Majesty's Consuls, of which a copy is herewith enclosed, contain full directions for the guidance of your official conduct on all ordinary occasions; and special instructions on particular points will be given to you from time to time as occasion may require. I also enclose to you copies of circular despatches dated 30th Sept., 1833, and 1st Oct., 1836, and I have to call your particular attention to the direction contained in these despatches enjoining the careful preservation of the archives of the consulate.

You will be punctual in forwarding at the regular periods the returns required by the general instructions; and it will be your duty to avail yourself of every favorable opportunity for collecting and transmitting to me any useful or interesting information relative to commerce, navigation, agriculture, and any other branch of statistics.

You will receive a salary of £500 a year, commencing ten days before the day of your embarkation, and you will consider yourself restricted from engaging in mercantile pursuits.

I am, &c.,

Captain Hobson, R.N., &c., &c.

PALMERSTON.

[Enclosure No. 12.]

LORD PALMERSTON TO CAPTAIN HOBSON, R.N.

1839  
Aug 15.

No. 2, Foreign Office,

13th August, 1839.

SIR,—

The object which Her Majesty's Government have in view in stationing a Consul at New Zealand is intimately connected with the colonial policy of this country, with the Colonial Department as well as with the Foreign Office. I have accordingly to desire that you will obey whatever instructions you may receive from the Secretary of State for the Colonial Department, and that you will report to him from time to time as occasion may require.

You will confine your reports to me to the consular matters which are adverted to in my Despatch No. 1 of this day's date.

I am, &amp;c.,

PALMERSTON.

To Captain Hobson, R.N., &amp;c., &amp;c.

[Enclosure No. 13.]

J. CAMPBELL AND R. M. ROLFE TO THE MARQUIS OF NORMANBY.

MY LORD,—

Temple, 4th June, 1839.

We have to acknowledge the receipt of Your Lordship's letter of the 30th ultimo, transmitting to us the draft of a proposed new Commission to the Governor of New South Wales, and requesting us to report our opinion whether it would be lawful for Her Majesty to annex to the Colony of New South Wales any territory in New Zealand the sovereignty of which might be acquired by the British Crown, and whether the legislative authority of New South Wales could then be exercised over British subjects inhabiting that territory, and whether the draft so transmitted to us is properly framed to give effect to Your Lordship's intentions.

We have considered this subject, and are of opinion that Her Majesty may lawfully annex to the Colony of New South Wales any territory in New Zealand the sovereignty of which may be acquired by the British Crown, and that the legislative authority of New South Wales created by 9 Geo. IV., c. 83, p. 21, may then be exercised over British subjects inhabiting that territory. The object of the statute, as appears by the 20th section, was to create a legislative authority extending to the Colonies of New South Wales and Van Diemen's Land, and the dependencies thereof; and although this, if construed independently of the context, might perhaps be confined to places

1839  
Aug. 15.

constituting the dependencies at the time of the passing of the Act, yet as it is clear from the 3rd section that the Courts of justice were to have jurisdiction not only over the then existing dependencies, but also over all islands and territories which might thereafter be dependent on the Government of New South Wales, we think the word dependencies, in the 20th section, must receive an extended construction so as to include future as well as then existing dependencies. It could hardly have been the intention of the Act to give a different extent of jurisdiction to the Courts of justice and the local Legislature.

We have further to add that the draft transmitted to us appears properly framed for giving effect to Your Lordship's intention.

We have, &c.,

J. CAMPBELL.

R. M. ROLFE.

To the Marquis of Normanby, &c., &c.

---

[Enclosure No. 14.]

CAPTAIN HOBSON TO THE UNDER-SECRETARY OF STATE, COLONIAL DEPARTMENT.

SIR,— 34, Great George's Street, August, 1839.

In order to avoid any misunderstanding of the view of Government in respect of the duties confided to me as Consul and Lieutenant-Governor of New Zealand, I have the honor to call your attention to some passages of my instructions upon which I beg the favor of further explanation.

To facilitate a reference to this document I have numbered the paragraphs in pencil from one to twenty, commencing at the close of the preamble.

The first paragraph, according to that arrangement, relates to the acquisition of the sovereign rights by the Queen over the Islands of New Zealand, and appears to have reference to other instructions which I may expect to receive from Lord Palmerston. Under this head I perceive that no distinction is made between the Northern and Southern Islands of New Zealand, although their relations with this country, and their respective advancement towards civilization, are essentially different.

The declaration of the independence of New Zealand was signed by the united chiefs of the northern part of that island, and it was to them alone that His late Majesty's letter was addressed on the presentation of their flag; and neither of these instruments had any application whatever to the Southern Islands.



It may be of vast importance to keep this distinction in view, not as regards the natives, towards whom the same measure of justice must be dispensed, however their allegiance may have been obtained, but as it may apply to British settlers who claim a title to property in New Zealand as in a free and independent State.

I need not exemplify here the uses that may hereafter be made of this difference in their condition; but it is obvious that the power of the Crown may be exercised with much greater freedom in a country over which it possesses all the rights that are usually assumed by first discoverers than in an adjoining State which has been recognised as free and independent; and in the course of my negotiations, too, my proceedings may be greatly facilitated by availing myself of this disparity, for with the wild savages of the Southern Islands it appears scarcely possible to observe even the form of a treaty; and there I might be permitted to plant the British flag, in virtue of those rights of the Crown to which I have alluded.

The second and third clauses are quite explicit, but I beg to suggest that the Proclamation to be issued on my landing be drafted in this country, in order to convey exactly the views of Government, and to guard against misconception.

In the 4th clause my attention is directed to the acquisition of lands by British subjects; and in the following clause the whole power of interference is confided to Commissioners who are to be appointed in New South Wales, and who are to report their proceedings to Sir George Gipps. I do not disapprove of this regulation, but, on the contrary, am glad to be relieved from all interference in matters of dispute which would have a tendency to place me at issue with so large a number of persons over whom I am appointed to preside; but I am at a loss to know to what point I am to direct my attention beyond the mere preservation of the peace.

The 6th clause is quite understood. In the latter part of the 7th and in the 8th clause allusion is made to the Protector of Aborigines. Were the functions of this officer confined to the protection of the natives from physical injury or injustice there could not be two opinions on the subject of his duty; but in matters which relate to their general welfare he and I, with equal zeal in their cause, may entertain very different ideas. I sincerely hope that the duties of this officer may be exactly defined, and that the Government may be secured from the effect of captious opposition.

9th clause: To the missionaries may be safely confided the religious instruction of the natives; but I cannot bring myself to believe that they will consent to give any portion of the time

1839  
Aug. 15.

1839  
Aug. 15.

they have hitherto devoted exclusively to that subject for the benefit of the British subjects.

In this part of my instructions I am likewise directed to interdict the savage practices of cannibalism and human sacrifice. May I request more explicit instruction on this important subject? Shall I be authorised, after the failure of every other means, to repress these diabolical acts by force; and what course am I to adopt to restrain the no less savage native wars, or to protect tribes who are oppressed (probably for becoming Christians) by their more powerful neighbours?

Clauses 10 and 11 relate to the form of government under which New Zealand is to be colonised.

Clause 12 forbids the introduction of convicts. There is nothing I would more regret than the extension to New Zealand of the character of a penal settlement; but I do think, with every possible deference for the superior judgment that dictated the prohibition, that convict labour on roads and public works, under the direction of Government, may be most beneficially applied. At the Mauritius Indian convicts are so employed, and the great prosperity of that colony is mainly attributable to the facility of communication to all parts of the island that is thus obtained. Such will be the demand for labour in New Zealand that I despair of getting roads made without the aid of convicts.

Clause 13 relates to the Commission under the great seal addressed to Sir George Gipps and to my warrant as Lieutenant-Governor. May I request to be informed, if I have the power, whilst holding a warrant as Lieutenant-Governor, under the Governor of New South Wales, to appoint or suspend Magistrates, to embody and call out Militia, or to direct the movements of the military force? If I do not possess this power by virtue of my warrant from the Crown it will be highly essential that provision should be made by the Governor and Legislative Council of New South Wales to vest me with authority in these important matters.

Clause 14 provides for the appointment of public officers of my selection by the Governor of New South Wales, and refers to the establishment in New Zealand of a Court of justice and of a judicial system. I should like to be informed in this case, as in the last, whether, in my capacity of Lieutenant-Governor, I am authorised to execute or remit the punishment of criminals.

Clause 15 relates to the revenue, and recommends, amongst other duties, one on tobacco. It should be recollected that tobacco is at present almost the circulating medium, and a duty on it will bear very hard upon the natives, who indulge freely

1839  
Aug. 15

in its use. And as this people will naturally estimate our interference with their country by its first practical results, I fear they will look upon us with distrust or suspicion if they suffer any inconvenience from our enactments.

Clause 16, regarding waste lands, is very clear and satisfactory.

Clause 17 relates to the religious instruction and the spiritual wants of the British settlers in New Zealand. I trust, if it shall be found that the missionaries have already full occupation, and if, as I have before observed, they object to withdraw any part of their attention from the duties they have hitherto discharged, that an early provision may be made for these important objects by the appointment of chaplains and teachers from New South Wales.

The concluding part of my instructions is perfectly clear and explicit. There are one or two subjects that have not been noticed which I hope may still engage the attention of the Secretary of State. No allusion has been made to a military force, nor has any instruction issued for the arming and equipping of Militia. The presence of a few soldiers would check any disposition to revolt, and would enable me to forbid in a firmer tone those inhuman practices I have been ordered to restrain. The absence of such support will, on the other hand, encourage the disaffected to resist my authority, and may be the means of entailing on us difficulties that I am unwilling to contemplate.

I have, &c.,

W. HOBSON.

To the Under-Secretary of State, Colonial Department.

---

[Enclosure No. 15.]

LORD NORMANBY TO CAPTAIN HOBSON, R.N.

SIR,—

Downing Street, 15th August, 1839.

Mr. Labouchere has laid before me your letter to him of the 1st instant, requesting an explanation of some questions which have occurred to you on the perusal of my letter of instructions. I have to return the following answer to your inquiries :—

1. The remarks which I have made respecting the independence of the people of New Zealand relate, as you correctly suppose, to the tribes inhabiting the Northern Island only. Our information respecting the Southern Island is too imperfect to allow me to address to you any definite instructions as to the course to be pursued there. If the country is really, as you suppose, uninhabited except by a very small number of persons

1839  
Aug. 15.

in a savage stage, incapable from their ignorance of entering intelligently into any treaties with the Crown, I agree with you that the ceremonial of making such engagements with them would be a mere illusion and pretence, which ought to be avoided. The circumstances noticed in my instructions may perhaps render the occupation of the Southern Island a matter of necessity or of duty to the natives. The only chance of an effective protection will probably be found in the establishment by treaty, if that be possible, or if not, then in the assertion, on the ground of discovery, of Her Majesty's sovereign rights over the island. But in my inevitable ignorance of the real state of the case I must refer the decision in the first place to your own decision, aided by the advice which you will receive from the Governor of New South Wales.

2. I enclose, according to your desire, the draft of the Proclamation to be addressed to the Queen's subjects at New Zealand, referring it, however, to Sir George Gipps and to yourself to introduce any alterations which the facts of the case, when more clearly ascertained, may appear to you and to him to prescribe.

3. It is my intention that the Governor of New South Wales, or the Commissioners to be appointed by him, should conduct the whole investigation and settlement of the question regarding lands which may have been occupied in New Zealand by British subjects; and that you should be thus rescued from a position which might otherwise bring you into unfriendly relations with large numbers of those over whom you would be called to preside.

4. The Protector of Aborigines cannot be brought into any relation to you which would throw any doubt on the respective limits of your authority and his, because he would be in the fullest sense of the term your subordinate officer, yielding implicit obedience to all your lawful instructions, and reporting to you all his proceedings.

5. If the missionaries should not ultimately be able to undertake the religious instruction of their fellow-countrymen, measures must of course be taken to supply the religious wants of the future colony. But in the uncertainty under which Her Majesty's Government are at present compelled to act, I think it more safe to rely on the temporary assistance of the various missions in the island than to embark on any ecclesiastical arrangements which it might be ultimately impossible to complete, and the non-fulfilment of which might involve the ruin of any clergyman embarking in them.

6. It is impossible for me to prescribe the course to be pursued for the prevention of cannibalism, human sacrifices, and war-



1839  
Aug. 15.

fare among the native tribes ; but I have no difficulty in stating that if all the arts of persuasion and kindness should prove un-availing, practices so abhorrent from the first principles of morality and so calamitous to those by whom they are pursued should be repressed by authority, and, if necessary, by actual force, within any part of the Queen's dominions. I am, however, convinced that habits so repulsive to our common nature as cannibalism and human sacrifice may be checked with little difficulty, because the opposition to them will be seconded by feelings which are too deeply rooted in the minds of all men, the most ignorant or barbarous not excepted, to be eradicated by customs, however inveterate, or by any errors of opinion, however widely diffused. The New Zealanders will probably yield a willing assent to your admonitions when taught to perceive with what abhorrence such usages are regarded by civilized men.

7. However much immediate advantage may be derived from convict labour, the benefit is purchased at last at so heavy a price that even if the welfare of the colony were alone in question I should regard the conversion of New Zealand into a penal settlement as a short-sighted policy ; but when I advert to the effect of that measure on the aborigines, and on the administration of the criminal law in this Kingdom, my opposition to it is fixed and unalterable.

8. All the powers necessary to the proper conduct of your office will be conferred on you by Acts of the Government and Legislature of New South Wales, who will also make the necessary provision for the establishment of Courts of justice and a judicial system in New Zealand.

9. The Governor and Council will deliberate with you on the proper articles on which to impose import duties. It is a question which I must refer in the first instance to their judgment.

Lastly, I am perfectly aware of the great advantage which you might derive from a military force, and of the inconvenience to which the want of it may expose you. This, however, is a difficulty which must be encountered. It is impossible at the present time to detach any of Her Majesty's troops to New Zealand, nor can I foresee any definite period at which it will be practicable to supply that deficiency. It will probably, therefore, be necessary to raise a Militia, or to embody an armed police. But this also is amongst the questions which must be reserved for consideration after your arrival, and upon which it will be your duty to consult with the Governor of New South Wales.

I have, &c.,

Captain Hobson, R.N., &c., &c.

NORMANBY.

1839

A LIST OF VESSELS WHICH HAVE VISITED THE BAY OF ISLANDS, NEW ZEALAND, DURING THE SIX MONTHS  
ENDING 31ST DECEMBER, 1839.

| Date of Arrival. | Name and Description of Vessel. | Name of Master. | Country to which belonging. | From whence.      | Cargo.                  | Date of Departure. | Remarks.    |
|------------------|---------------------------------|-----------------|-----------------------------|-------------------|-------------------------|--------------------|-------------|
| 1839.            |                                 |                 |                             |                   |                         |                    |             |
| July 11.         | Ship Thomas Williams            | Jones           | America                     | Sperm fishery..   | 1,400 barrels sperm oil | Aug. 6..           | For Sydney. |
| " 16.            | Brig Hind                       | Croker          | New South Wales             | River Thames      | Timber and potatoes..   | " 6                |             |
| " 18.            | Ship General Jackson            |                 | America                     | Sperm fishery..   | 2,000 barrels oil       | " "                |             |
| " 18.            | Ship Pallas                     |                 | France..                    | Black oil fishery | 400 ditto               | " "                |             |
| " 19.            | Brig Caroline                   | Sullivan        | New South Wales             | Sydney            | Merchandise             | " "                |             |
| " 19.            | Brig Parachute                  | Walnut          | America                     | Sperm fishery..   | 600 barrels oil         | " "                |             |
| " 19.            | Ship Royal William              |                 | St. John's, N. Brunswick    | Ditto             | 30 ditto                | Aug. 10            |             |
| " 19.            | Ship Meuse                      | Pettiere        | France..                    | Black oil fishery | 1,800 ditto             | " 15               |             |
| " 20.            | Ship Arion                      | Baxter          | Ditto                       | Ditto             | 1,200 ditto             | " 15               |             |
| " 20.            | Ship Xenophon                   | Halsey          | America                     | Sperm fishery     | 2,000 ditto             | " 22               |             |
| " 20.            | Ship France                     | Peters          | Ditto                       | Ditto             | 100 ditto               | " 15               |             |
| " 20.            | Ship Ecstare                    | Smith           | Ditto                       | Ditto             | 1,200 ditto             | " "                |             |
| " 20.            | Ship Harvest                    | Godfrey         | Ditto                       | Ditto             | 600 ditto               | " "                |             |
| " 15.            | Brig Lady Leith                 | Coutts          | New South Wales             | Ditto             |                         | Aug. 31            |             |
| " 30.            | Ship Concordia                  | Woodward        | America                     |                   |                         | Sept. 3            |             |
| Aug. 1.          | Schooner Jess                   | Clayton         | New South Wales             | Sydney            | Merchandise             | Sept. 3            |             |
| " 1.             | Ship Bourbon                    | Reid            | France..                    | Hayre, for the    | Black oil fishery       | " "                |             |
| " 6.             | Schooner Hope                   | McLaine         | Tahiti ..                   | Sydney            | Merchandise             | Sept. 8            |             |
| " 5.             | Ship W. Hamilton                | Swain           | America                     | Sperm fishery..   | 1,000 barrels oil       | " "                |             |
| " 6.             | Ship Hannibal                   |                 | Ditto                       |                   |                         | Sept. 8            |             |
| " 15.            | Ship Augustus Caesar            | Lacy            | England                     | Sydney            | Merchandise             | Sept. 8            |             |
| " 20.            | Schooner John Dunscombe         | McLean          | New South Wales             | Ditto             | Ditto                   | Aug. 26            |             |
| " 20.            | Ship Nere                       | Tapalle         | France..                    | Black oil fishery | 1,600 barrels oil       | Sept. 3            |             |
| " 23.            | Brig Adelaide                   | Devlin          | England                     | South Australia   | Merchandise             | " 5                |             |
| Sept. 6.         | Brig Hind                       | Jones           | New South Wales             | Sydney            | Ditto                   | " 12               |             |
| " 8.             | Ship Narwal                     | Fautrel         | France..                    | Black oil fishery | 2,200 barrels oil       | " 22               |             |
| " 10.            | Schooner Jess                   | Clayton         | New South Wales             | East coast.       | Potatoes and pork       | " "                |             |
| " 13.            | Cutter Acquila.                 | Francis         | Ditto                       | Ditto             | New Zealand produce     | " "                |             |
| " 17.            | Schooner Atlas                  | Pensell         | America                     | Ditto             | Ditto                   | " "                |             |
| " 18.            | Brig David                      | Hart            | England                     | Sydney            | Merchandise             | " "                |             |

A LIST OF VESSELS WHICH HAVE VISITED THE BAY OF ISLANDS, NEW ZEALAND, DURING THE SIX MONTHS  
ENDING 31ST DECEMBER, 1839—continued.

SHIPPING.

757

1839

| Date of Arrival. | Name and Description of Vessel. | Name of Master. | Country to which belonging. | From whence.      | Cargo.              | Date of Departure. | Remarks.  |
|------------------|---------------------------------|-----------------|-----------------------------|-------------------|---------------------|--------------------|---|
| 1839.            |                                 |                 |                             |                   |                     |                    |   |
| Sept. 18..       | Barque Achilles                 | Veale           | England                     | Sydney            | Merchandise         | Sept. 30           | For a cargo of spars, Mercury Bay, 4 months from England. |
| Oct. 1..         | Barque Nourwal                  | Brind           | Ditto                       | Sperm fishery     | Clean               | ..                 | ..  |
| " 2..            | Schooner Currency Lass          | Bennet          | New South Wales             | Sydney            | Merchandise         | ..                 | ..  |
| " 3..            | Schooner John Dunscombe         | McLean          | Ditto                       | East coast        | New Zealand produce | ..                 | ..  |
| " 8..            | Brig Christina                  | Munro           | Ditto                       | Sydney            | Merchandise         | ..                 | ..  |
| " 8..            | Schooner Jess                   | Clayton         | Ditto                       | East coast        | New Zealand produce | ..                 | ..  |
| " 8..            | Ship Mercator                   | Mayhew          | America                     | Sperm fishery     | 1,600 barrels oil   | ..                 | ..  |
| " 8..            | Ship Ediza                      | ..              | Ditto                       | Ditto             | 130 ditto           | ..                 | ..  |
| " 16..           | Ship Benzet                     | Stitson         | Ditto                       | Ditto             | 600 ditto           | ..                 | ..  |
| " 16..           | Ship Franklin                   | Stitson         | Ditto                       | Ditto             | Clean               | Oct. 22            | ..  |
| " 21..           | Barque Hope                     | Richardson      | New South Wales             | Sydney            | Merchandise         | ..                 | ..  |
| " 25..           | Ship Adele                      | Welsh           | France                      | Black oil fishery | Clean               | ..                 | 4 months from France.                                     |
| " 25..           | Ship Triton                     | Parker          | America                     | Sperm ditto       | 500 barrels oil     | Nov. 8             | ..  |
| Nov. 1..         | Brig Melrose                    | Nicholson       | New South Wales             | Sydney            | Merchandise         | ..                 | ..  |
| " 1..            | Brig Adelaide                   | Devlin          | Ditto                       | East coast        | Timber, &c.         | ..                 | 4 months out from Bay of Islands.                         |
| " 3..            | Ship Toki-Raw                   | Saunders        | New Zealand                 | Sperm fishery     | Clean               | ..                 | ..  |
| " 6..            | Ship Diana                      | Harvey          | England                     | Ditto             | 480 barrels oil     | ..                 | ..  |
| " 7..            | Ship Mount Vernon               | Shearman        | America                     | Ditto             | 3,400 ditto         | ..                 | ..  |
| " 9..            | Barque Mary Hay                 | Vollum          | England                     | Sydney            | Merchandise         | ..                 | ..  |
| " 9..            | Brig Guide                      | Stitt           | New South Wales             | Sperm fishery     | ..                  | ..                 | ..  |
| " 9..            | Schooner Ariel                  | ..              | Ditto                       | Sydney            | Merchandise         | ..                 | ..  |
| " 14..           | Schooner Susannah Ann           | ..              | Ditto                       | East coast        | New Zealand produce | ..                 | ..  |
| " 10..           | Barque Psyche                   | Wilson          | Ditto                       | Sydney            | Merchandise         | ..                 | ..  |
| " 20..           | Ship Nathaniel                  | Talmudge        | America                     | Sperm fishery     | 3,800 barrels oil   | ..                 | ..  |
| " 20..           | Ship Catos                      | ..              | France                      | Black oil fishery | 1,400 ditto         | ..                 | ..  |
| " 22..           | Ship Nere                       | Tapalle         | Ditto                       | Ditto             | 2,000 ditto         | ..                 | ..  |
| " 30..           | Schooner John Dunscombe         | Hampton         | New South Wales             | Sydney            | Merchandise         | ..                 | ..  |

1839

A LIST OF VESSELS WHICH HAVE VISITED THE BAY OF ISLANDS, NEW ZEALAND, DURING THE SIX MONTHS  
ENDING 31ST DECEMBER, 1839—*continued.*

| Date of Arrival. | Name and Description of Vessel. | Name of Master. | Country to which belonging | From whence.      | Cargo.              | Date of Departure. | Remarks. |
|------------------|---------------------------------|-----------------|----------------------------|-------------------|---------------------|--------------------|----------|
| 1835.            |                                 |                 |                            |                   |                     |                    |          |
| Dec. 3..         | Ship Dartmouth                  | Starbuck        | America                    | Sperm fishery..   | 2,000 barrels oil   | ..                 |          |
| " 4..            | Barque Mary Hay                 | Vollun          | England                    | East coast        | New Zealand produce | ..                 |          |
| " 5..            | Schooner Currency Lass          | Wilson          | New South Wales            | Sydney            | Merchandise         | ..                 |          |
| " 5..            | Ship Concordia                  | ..              | America                    | Sperm fishery..   | 1,400 barrels oil   | ..                 |          |
| " 10..           | Brig Martha                     | Lancaster       | New South Wales            | Sydney            | Merchandise         | ..                 |          |
| " 14..           | Ship Leonidas                   | Higgleston      | America                    | Salem             | Ditto               | Dec. 31            |          |
| " 14..           | Schooner Jess                   | Clayton         | New South Wales            | East coast        | New Zealand produce | ..                 |          |
| " 20..           | Ship Ferdinand                  | ..              | France..                   | Black oil fishery | 1,200 barrels oil   | ..                 |          |
| " 23..           | Ship Speculation                | Robson          | Portugal                   | Sperm oil fishery | 350 ditto           | ..                 |          |
| " 23..           | Ship White Oak                  | Barney          | America                    | Ditto             | 1,700 ditto         | ..                 |          |
| " 23..           | Schooner Ariel                  | Stewart         | New South Wales            | East coast        | New Zealand produce | Jan. 1             |          |
| " 23..           | Ship Meuse                      | Pettiere        | France..                   | Black oil fishery | 1,800 barrels oil   | ..                 |          |
| " 25..           | Ship Orion                      | Baxter          | Ditto                      | Ditto             | 1,800 ditto         | ..                 |          |
| " 25..           | Ship Falcon                     | Russel          | America                    | Sperm oil fishery | 2,400 ditto         | ..                 |          |
| " 25..           | Ship Riflemen                   | Davis           | England                    | Ditto             | ..                  | ..                 |          |
| " 25..           | Ship Hoogly                     | Chase           | America                    | Ditto             | 1,400 ditto         | ..                 |          |
| " 25..           | Ship Wiscasset                  | Horton          | Ditto                      | Ditto             | 1,700 ditto         | ..                 |          |
| " 25..           | Ship Janus                      | Tropel          | France..                   | Black oil fishery | 1,500 ditto         | ..                 |          |



# INDEX.

## **"Active," brig—**

Purchased by Marsden, 344.  
Marsden sails for New Zealand, 348.  
List of passengers and cargo, 348.  
Full account Marsden's first visit, 348-99.  
Proposed sale by Marsden, 477, 478.

## **Admiralty Lords—**

From Sydney : Conveyance of convicts, 56.  
From Grenville : Expedition survey, &c.,  
122 *et seq.*  
From Dundas to secure flax-dressers, 128.  
From Navy Board : Williams's flax proposals, 431.  
To Colonial Office : Detention of "General Gates," 521.  
To Colonial Office : New Zealand and inhabitants, 569.

## **"Adventure," H.M.S. —**

Cook's orders, 16.  
Condemned stores, 19.  
Cook sails without her, 20.

## **Agriculture—**

Marsden's efforts to introduce, 414-5.  
State of, in New Zealand : Marsden's report to Pratt, 611.  
*See also* McCrae (evidence).

## **Ahoodea O'Gunner—**

Chief, Itangheehoo, 392.

## **"Albion," whaler—**

Duaterra on board, 338.

## **Americans—**

In New Zealand trade, 595.

## **Anchor Island Harbour—**

Raven reaches, 178.

## **"Ann," ship—**

Duaterra placed on board at London, 339.  
Arrives Sydney with Marsden and Duaterra, 341.

## **"Ann," whaler—**

Rescues Duaterra at Norfolk Island, 342.  
Lands Duaterra at his home, 343.

## **"Argo," whaler—**

Duaterra on board, 338.

## **Arms and ammunition—**

James Downie reports, 570.

## **Armstrong, T. H.—**

To Bigge : Tests New Zealand hemp, 514.

## **Atkins, J. F., brig "Haweis"—**

Account of sufferings and escape, 687-98.

## **Attorney and Solicitor General—**

To McLeay : Registration New-Zealand-built ships, 687.

## **Attorney-General—**

To Sydney : Mr. Matra's plans, 45.

## **Backhouse, J.—**

To Stephen : Appointment of Consul, 744.

## **Baden, John—**

Captain "Argo," 260.

## **Bain, Rev.—**

Accompanies King, 184.

## **Bampton, W. W.—**

Return awaited, 197.  
To Paterson : Arrival of "Endeavour," 198.  
Left vessel at Dusky, 204.  
To King : Wreck of "Endeavour," 204.  
Reports escaped convicts, 205.

## **Banks, Sir Joseph—**

From Cook : Drawings of spruce, 23.  
From Cook : Botanical descriptions, 29.  
From Bligh : Voyage and mutiny, 92-104.  
From Bligh, 92, 94, 305.  
From Menzies, 143.  
From Menzies : Vancouver's expedition,  
143 *et seq.*  
From King : New-Zealanders' chart, 219.  
From King, 219, 236.  
From Governor King : Whale fishing, 236.  
To King : Flax, 249, 250.  
Seals on New Zealand coast, 273, 274.  
New Zealand sealing, 277.

## **Banksian herbarium—**

R. Brown acknowledges receipt of specimens of plants, 531.

## **Barlow, Sir R.—**

Letter on New Zealand rope, 513.

**Bass, G.—**

To Waterhouse : Visit to Dusky, 225, 240.  
Visits Dusky, 225, 242.  
To King : New Zealand fishing scheme, 244.

**Batavia—**

New-Zealand-built vessel at, 230.

**Bathurst, Earl—**

To Macquarie : Trade to New Zealand, 407.  
From Rev. Pratt : Despatch missionary stores, 407.  
From Macquarie : Williams's flax-manufacture, 409.  
From Macquarie : Duties on South Sea produce, 415.  
Church Missionary Society memorial, 417.  
From Savage : Proposed emigration scheme, 483.  
From Sugden : Proposal to found colony, 516.  
From Wesleyan Mission : Transport of goods, 519, 531.  
From Downie : Cargo of spars, 572.  
From Rev. Kendall, forwarding specimens metallic ores, 573.  
From Downie : Reports land and timber, 579.  
From Erskine : Convicts for New Zealand, 581.  
From Taylor and Upton, intention to go to New Zealand, 583.  
From Bigge : General report of country, &c., 587 *et seq.*  
From Rev. Pratt : Passage of missionaries, 596.  
From Busby, praying to be considered settler, 597.  
From Nicolls : Proposal to colonise, 598 *et seq.*  
From De Thierry : Scheme of settlement, 614-17, 625.  
To Littleton : Colonising scheme, 634.  
From Littleton : Colonising scheme, 634.  
From Reynolds : Arrival in England of Tipapa, 635.  
From Darling : Compensation to Busby, 656.  
To Darling, approving £300 to Busby, 666.  
From Darling : Compensation to master ship "Sisters," 671.

**Bay of Islands—**

"Britannia" visits, 171.  
Resort of whalers, 254, 262.  
S. R. Chace at, 299.  
Dillon to proceed to, 318, 320.  
Cruel treatment of Natives at, 321.  
Natives protected at, 328.  
Marsden reaches, 337.  
"Santa Anna" visits, 338.  
Bigge's Commission, evidence, 441-44.  
Shipping, 444, 593, 756-58.  
Captain Skinner ("Dromedary") reports on timber, &c., 485-6.  
Marsden to Bigge, 493-4.  
McCrae describes, 534.

**Bell, Mich., A.B.—**

Killed at Queen Charlotte Sound, 19.

**Bennett and Son—**

Whaling report, 608.  
Approving Nicolls's scheme, 608-9.

**Berry, Alexander, City of Edinburgh—**

Massacre of "Boyd," 293, 295, 308, 312.

**Berteret from Johnstone—**

Vancouver's expedition, 136.

**Besant, J.—**

Massacre of the "Boyd," 421-2.  
Massacre of crew "Paramatta," 423-4.

**Bickersteth—**

From Marsden : Seminary, mission stations, &c., 644.  
Mission and missionaries, 679.  
Native war, 702.  
Various mission stations, 710.  
Conduct of Europeans, 715.  
Cruelties to Maoris, 717.

**Bigge, Commissioner—**

From Kendall : Answer to questions, 441.  
From Marsden : General report, 448.  
Marsden's opinion of, 481.  
From Captain Nicholson : Missions and Maoris, 483.  
From Marsden : Harbours and supply of spars, 493.  
From Elives's report on quality timber, 494.  
From Captain Skinner : Timber, Maoris, and New Zealand climatology, 495.  
Colonial vessels in New Zealand, 498.  
Evidence taken before, 499.  
Thompson's evidence, 499.  
Hunter's evidence, 503.  
Hook's evidence, 506.  
Riley's evidence, 509.  
Beveridge's evidence, 509.  
Evidence : New Zealand flax, 510.  
From Skinner : Tests of hemp, 511-12.  
From Armstrong : Tests rope, 514.  
From Hunt : Tests rope, 515.  
From Campbell : Sharing of whaling profits, 517.  
McCrae's evidence, 534.  
Dr. Fairfowl's evidence, 550.  
McDonald's evidence, 558.  
To Bathurst : Report missions, Natives, &c., 587.

**Birnie, James—**

Master, "Star," 279.  
Master and owner, "Commerce," 279.  
To Macquarie : Facilities for unloading, 314.  
Sailing of "Perseverance," 315.  
From Williams : Flax, 466.

**Birnie and Co.—**

Owners "Star," 279.  
Owners "Concord," 309.

**Birnie, Hook, and Gordon—**

Sent vessel for flax, 459.

**Blaxcell, G.—**

Owner "Parramatta," 304.  
To Secretary Campbell : Import of timbers, 401.  
Owner "Cumberland," 417.

**Blaxcell, G., and others—**

New Zealand Company, 323-27.

**Bligh—**

- To Stephens : Voyage of "Bounty," 73, 74, 76.  
 Discovers Bounty Islands, 76, 77, and note 95.  
 To Banks : Voyage of "Bounty," 92, 94.  
 To Castlereagh : Maori youth safe, 289.  
 To Banks : Colonel Foveaux at New Zealand, 305.

**Board of Inquiry—**

- To Darling : Claims of Busby, 647.

**Board of Trade—**

- South Seas and East India Company, 216.

**Bosanquet, J.—**

- To Fawcner, W. : Extension of whale-fishing limits, 310.

**Bounty Islands—**

- Discovered by Bligh, 76, 77.  
 Description of, 77 note, 95.

**Bowen, J.—**

- "General Gates," 521.

**"Boyd"—**

- Massacre of, 293, 294, 296, 298, 299, 304.  
 Long-boat sent in "Perseverance," 303.  
*Sydney Gazette* account of, 306.  
*Calcutta Gazette* account of, 310.  
 Survivors' names, 311.  
 Church Missionary Society's account of, 313.  
 Lord's account of, 323.  
 Marsden's account, 336, 350, 352, 356, 357, 389.  
 Kendall to Church Missionary Society, 406.  
 Church Missionary Society memorial, "Boyd" massacre, 418, 421.  
 Natives' account of massacre, 421.  
 John Besant's account, 421-2.  
 Fairfowl's evidence, 551-2.

**"Brampton," ship—**

- Lost, Bay of Islands, 598.

**Bream Cove—**

- Visited by Marsden in "Active," 378.

**Brin—**

- Blamed for Maori war, 706-7.

**Brisbane—**

- From Butler : Escaped convicts and their treatment, 575.  
 From Marsden : Leave to visit New Zealand, 597.  
 From Coe : "Elizabeth Henrietta," 648.  
 From Busby : "Elizabeth Henrietta," 649-50.

**"Britannia"—**

- Chartered for New Zealand, 147, 148.  
 Grose reply *re* charter "Britannia," 148.  
 To return flax-dressers, 169.  
 To take King to New Zealand, 175-6.  
 Raven's account of voyage, 177, 179.  
 Takes Chapman to New Zealand, 185.  
 King's reasons for employing, 192-3.  
 (Turnbull), in whaling trade, 234, 235.  
 Visits New Zealand, 333.

**British Resident—**

- Wants more authority (Marsden), 723.

**British Government's Policy—**

- See Consul (British), appointment of Hobson, 729-55.

**Broughton, Bishop—**

- To visit New Zealand, 724.

**Brooks, Richard—**

- New Zealand Company, 327.

**"Brothers," schooner—**

- Despatched to New Zealand, 401

**Broughton, Betsey—**

- Rescued from "Boyd," 294, 311.

**Brown—**

- To Goulburn, plants, &c., New Zealand, 531.

**Bruce, George—**

- Memorial from, 322.  
 History of, 322.

**Buckingham—**

- From King : Flax-dressing, 137.

**Bunker, E.—**

- Master of "Elizabeth," 279.

**Busby—**

- To be Government Resident, 718.

**Butler—**

- From Marsden : New Zealand matters, 475.  
 To Skinner : Convicts on "General Gates," 524.  
 Opinion of seminary, 532.  
 To Brisbane : Abandoned prisoners, Bay of Islands, 575.

**Butterworth—**

- From Marsden : Establishment Wesleyan Mission, 563.  
 From Marsden : Rev. S. Leigh's health, 618.

**Bustamante, Captain—**

- At Sydney, 161.

**Church Missionary Society—**

- From Marsden : Kendall's visit to New Zealand, 319.  
 From Marsden : New-Zealanders, 321.  
 To Bathurst : Memorial reviewing missionary work, &c., 417.  
 Report, 1821, 532.  
 Report, 1822, 581.  
 From Marsden : State of health, 728.

**Call, James—**

- Cultivation of flax, 72.

**Camden—**

- From King : Whalers at New Zealand, 253.

**Campbell, Secretary—**

From Blaxcell: New South Wales New Zealand Company's memorial, 401.  
 From Kendall: Escape of convicts, Bay of Islands, 404.  
 From Hammont: Escape convicts, 408.  
 To Bigge: Division of whaling profits, 517.

**Campbell and Co.—**

Owners of stores, 314-5.

**Campbell and Rolfe—**

To Normanby: Annexation of New Zealand, 749.

**Campbell and Wilson—**

Owners of "Elizabeth," 279.

**"Campbell Macquarie"—**

Wrecked at Macquarie Island, 318.

**Cannibalism—**

Marsden's remarks on, 398-9.  
 Skinner's remarks to Bigge, 496.  
 McCrae describes, 539.  
 Leigh, missionary, reports on, 573.  
*See also* McCrae (evidence).

**Canoes—**

Of New Zealand found at Norfolk Island, 107.  
 Marsden describes race of war-canoes, 370.  
 Description of, 395.

**Carlisle, Missionary—**

Sails for New Zealand, 413.

**Carvosso—**

To Wesleyan Mission House: Skilled workers for mission station, 582.

**Castlereagh—**

From Bligh: New Zealand youth safe, 289.  
 From Macquarie: Capture of "Boyd," 296.

**Cattle—**

Introduced by Marsden, 434.  
 Their value in New Zealand, 520.  
 Fairfowl describes, 553.  
 Presented to missionaries by Marsden, 585.

**Cavanagh, John, A.B.—**

Killed at Queen Charlotte Sound, 19.

**Cavalles—**

Marsden visited, 352, 355, 360, 372.

**Chace, Captain S. R.—**

Brings news of "Boyd," 296.  
 Deposition, loss of "Boyd," 298.

**Champions—**

Owners "Venus," 236, 248.  
 Owners "Albion," 249.

**Chapman—**

Accompanies King to New Zealand, 184.  
 To Chapman, describing Natives of North Cape, 185.

**Chatham Dockyard—**

Report on New Zealand hemp, 513.

**Christianity—**

Marsden's first sermon in New Zealand, 363.  
 Marsden hopeful for South Sea missions, 403.

**Church Missionary Society—**

Buys lands for mission station, 392.  
 Copy of deed of grant of land, 400.  
 Kendall to Marsden, 400.  
 Marsden on Church matters, 404.  
 Kendall on "Boyd" massacre, 406.  
 Request to Earl Bathurst shipping stores, 407-8.  
 Marsden on civilisation in New Zealand, 414.  
 Memorial to Earl Bathurst: Outrages on Natives, 417-21.  
 Annual meeting, May, 1819, 433.  
 Rules and regulations, 455.  
 Report of 1st May, 1821, 532-34.  
 Report annual meeting, April, 1822, 581.  
*See also* Pratt, J., Rev.; Coates, D., Rev.

**Climatology of New Zealand—**

*See also* Fairfowl, Dr. (evidence).  
*See also* McCrae (evidence).

**Colonial Office—**

To R. Sugden: Establishment of colony, and duties on produce, 532.

**Colonial Secretary—**

From Captain Rous and others: Compensation to ship "Sisters," 673.

**Colonisation—**

Sugden's scheme, 532.  
 Lieutenant-Colonel Nicolls's scheme, 598-611.  
 De Thierry's full scheme, 617.  
 Marsden's opinion Nicolls's scheme, 628.

**Commerce—**

*See also* Shipping.

**"Concord"—**

Sails for Macquarie Island, 309.

**Consul—**

Appointment of Captain Hobson, 729-55.

**Convicts—**

Suggested for New Zealand, 65.  
 Punishment of, suggested to Phillips, 69, 71.  
 Kendall reports escape of, 404.  
 At Bay of Islands, 405.  
 Marsden to Macquarie: Convicts on "General Gates," 484.  
 Desperate position of, 575.  
 Treatment by Natives, 593.  
 Question of escape of, 624, 718.  
 Convicts, undesirable, 682.  
 Convicts, Hobson on, 752.  
 Carried to New Zealand: *See also* McDonald's evidence.

**Cook, Captain—**

To Stephens: Account of voyage, 1.  
 On board "Endeavour," 1.  
 Discovered New Zealand, 2.



**Cook, Captain—continued.**

From Perry, on treatment for scurvy, 7.  
 To Stephens : List of curios, 15.  
 To Furneaux : Directions for voyage, 15, 17, 18.  
 To Furneaux, scurvy, 16.  
 Visits Queen Charlotte Sound, 21, 30.  
 Report from Queen Charlotte Sound, 21.  
 To Banks : Drawings of spruce, 23.  
 Secret instructions mention New Zealand, 24.  
 To Banks : Plates (botanical), 29.  
 To Stephens : General account of voyage, 29.  
 Thanks for Royal Society medal, 29.  
 Visits New Zealand, 33.  
 Matra mentions visit, 39.  
 Visit described to Marsden, 365.

**Cooke—**

From King : Visit of Tippahee to Sydney, 258.  
 From Collins : Whaling at New Zealand, 288.

**Cook Strait, 303.****Cork Missionary Miscellany—**

"Boyd" massacre, 406.

**"Coromandel," ship, at Thames—**

Master of, to Navy Board, 569-70.

**Crime amongst Maoris—**

Punishments, 381.

**Croker—**

To Horton : Inquiry into death of seaman, 629.  
 To Twiss : Growth of flax for navy, 683.

**Cruise—**

To Hay : Military force in New Zealand, 667.

**"Cumberland," ship, 295.****Curios—**

Collected by Cook, 15.  
 King sends box to Nepean, 181.

**Curtis—**

To Lord High Admiral : Growth of flax for navy, 684.

**"Dædalus"—**

To call for flax-dressers, 130.  
 Orders, 133.  
 Vancouver to Phillip : Voyage and arrangements, 156.  
 Natives to be returned, 176.  
 Touched at New Zealand, 333.

**Darling—**

From Board of Inquiry, "Elizabeth Henrietta," 647.  
 To Bathurst : Busby and "Elizabeth Henrietta," 656.  
 From Bathurst, *re* Busby, 666.  
 To Bathurst : Recapture of "Wellington," 671.

**Darling—continued.**

To Murray : New-Zealand-built vessels, 685.  
 From Marsden : Native troubles, 705.  
 To Murray : New Zealand trade, 712.

**Davis, Thomas—**

Rescued from "Boyd," 294.

**Davison, Thomas—**

Saved from "Boyd," 311-2.

**De Lancey, James—**

To Matra, J. M., *re* settlement, 44.

**"Descuvierta"**

At Dusky, 161 *et seq.*

**De Thierry, Baron—**

To Bathurst, inquiring as to land titles, 614.  
 To Earl Bathurst : Colonising of New Zealand, 614-5.  
 From Horton : New Zealand not a Crown colony, 615.  
 Particulars of colonising scheme, 617.  
 To Bathurst, asking loan, 617.  
 To Horton, *re* escaped convicts, 624.  
 To Bathurst, *re* claims, 625.  
 To Bathurst : Claims of himself and Captain Stewart, 625.  
 Marsden on his prospects, 722-3.  
 To *Sydney Gazette* : Experiences, 724.

**"Diana," Parker—**

At Bay of Islands, 300.

**Dillon—**

From Marsden : Instructions for voyage, 318.  
 To proceed to Bay of Islands, 318.  
 Takes command of "Active," 337.

**"Discovery"—**

To form expedition, 113.

**Doubtless Bay—**

Hanson to call at, 159.

**Downie, Captain—**

Marsden reports, 562-65.  
 To Navy Board (extract), 569-70.  
 To Bathurst, reporting arrival, 572.  
 Reporting on timber and land, 579.

**Downing Street—**

From Torrens : Command of military force, 661, 662.

**Duaterra, son of Duaterra—**

Duaterra's requests concerning, 401.

**Duaterra, Chief—**

Dies, 337.  
 Memoir of, 338-46.  
 Marsden describes last illness, 390-1.  
 Marsden refers to his fears, 405.

**Duke—**

Petitions Governor Darling, 672.

**Dumaresq—**

From Busby, *re* "Elizabeth Henrietta," 654.

**Dundas, Right Hon. H.—**

To Phillip, notifying despatch of convicts, 127.

Instructions to procure flax-dressers, 130.

From Grose, *re* Spanish ships, 161.

From Grose: Arrival of "Dædalus," 164.

From King: Report on New Zealand, 169.

From King, explaining reasons for trip, 189.

From Paterson: Report, 195.

From Thomson, *re* forming settlement, 584.

**Dusky Bay—**

Cook issues orders from, 17.

Menzies reports arrival, 144.

Spanish ships at, 161.

Francis will sail for, 167.

Raven tells King his plan, 177.

Timber, fish, and fowl at, 178.

Endeavour left at, 204.

Bass at, in "Venus," 225, 242-45.

Bass's fishing concession, 243.

"General Gates" in, 528.

**Eaheinomane—**

Flax to be got at, 168.

**East Cape—**

"Mary" founders at, 299.

"Experiment" proceeds to, 303.

**Education—**

Kendall's school in operation, 387.

Report on schools, 433.

Causes for closing school at Paramatta, 580.

Description seminary at Paramatta, 623.

Missionaries' children to be educated in New Zealand, 698.

Marsden advocates education in New South Wales, 700, 701.

Keri-Keri School for missionaries' children, 715.

Missionary: *See also* McCrae (evidence).

*See also* Seminary.

**Elives, Captain R.—**

To Bigge, *re* timbers, 494.

**"Elizabeth," E. Bunker—**

Movements of, 279.

**"Elizabeth and Mary"—**

Movements of, 260.

**"Elizabeth Henrietta"—**

Flotation of, and claims of Busby, 647-58.

Final settlement, Busby, 666.

**Emigration—**

Torrens's plan, 676.

Torrens's plan criticized, 678.

Anonymous scheme, 681.

**"Endeavour," Cook's—**

At Onrust, 1.

Quitted New Zealand, 2.

List of crew, 5.

**"Endeavour," Cook's—continued.**

State and condition of, 10.

Voyage described, 10.

Health of, 13.

**"Endeavour," Bampton's—**

Arrives at Sydney, 198.

Wrecked at Dusky, 204.

Wreck reported to King, 204.

Terms of relief, 205.

Survivors rescued by "Mercury," 219.

Bass visits wreck, 242, 245.

**"Endeavour," brig—**

Equipped for New Zealand, 401.

**Enderbys—**

Owners of "Speedy" and "Britannia," 236.

Owners of "Greenwich," 248.

**Enderby—**

From Ramsay, W.: Extension of whaling limits, 312.

**Enderby and Son—**

Whaling report, 609.

**Erskine—**

To Bathurst: Naming New Zealand Cook's Island, 581.

To Watson: Rev. Mr. Leigh and cost New Zealand mission, 622.

To Tyerman and Bennet: Missionary work, 631.

**Etchells—**

From Turner: Impressions New Zealand Natives, 629.

**Evangelical Magazine, 402, 573.****Ewer, F., prisoner—**

Deposition "General Gates," 525-27.

**"Experiment"—**

Leith writes from, 303.

**Exports to New Zealand—**

Official tables: *See* Trade.

**Facey, William, A.B.—**

Killed at Queen Charlotte Sound, 19.

**Facile Harbour—**

Raven landed at, 177.

Survivors "Endeavour" left in huts, 204.

**Factories and trading centres—**

May be established, 407.

**Fairfowl, Dr.—**

Evidence before Commissioner Bigge, *q.v.* for the following (pp. 550-58): Maoris' disposition towards strangers, Timber trade, Prostitution, Venereal disease, Medical treatment, Climatology, &c.

Evidence before Bigge, 550.

**"Fancy," Snow—**

Visits Norfolk Island, 203.  
Sailed with "Endeavour," 204.

**Farewell Cape—**

Mentioned, 292.

**Fauna of New Zealand—**

See also McCrae (evidence).

**"Favourite," John Paddock—**

Movements, 278.

**Fawkner, W.—**

From Bosanquet, J.: Extension of whaling-limits, 310.

**Feen, C., master of "Sally and Mary," 309.****Fenwick, William—**

To Graham, Charles: Tests of New Zealand hemp, 512.

**Firearms and ammunition—**

Trade in: See also McDonald's evidence.

**Firearms—**

Marsden's opinion of missionaries bartering, 586.

**Fish—**

Plentiful in Dusky, 178.  
In New Zealand waters: See McCrae's evidence.

**Fishery—**

Bass's scheme for south of New Zealand, 243-45.

**Flax—**

Engraved in Cook's book, 29.  
Matra's proposal, 36.  
Culture of, in Sydney's memorandum, 54.  
Mentioned: Anonymous scheme, 61.  
Plant, Phillip suggests sending for, 71.  
Grows in Norfolk Island, 120.  
King: New-Zealanders to dress, 126.  
Dundas gives instructions to procure dressers, 130.  
Hergest to obtain dressers, 134.  
King: Flax-dressing at Norfolk Island, 138.  
King asks for New Zealand Natives, 140, 168.  
Phillip sorry nothing done, 153.  
Hanson ordered to get dressers Doubtless Bay, 160.  
New-Zealanders at Norfolk Island, 169.  
Samples of manufactured, 174.  
Plants of, sent to Banks, 180.  
Method of working, 182.  
Specimens sent Home, 185.  
King defends visit to New Zealand, 190-93.  
Hunter instructed, 195.  
At Thames, 197.  
Process described, 215.  
Capabilities of, 215.  
Mentioned by King to Foveaux, 221.  
Makes linen, 250.  
Grows in Australia, 285.  
King's views on, 287.  
Lord's scheme, 297.

**Flax—continued.**

Quantity small Bay of Islands, 302.  
Thread sent to Jacob, 304.  
Sydney expedition for, 313.  
Seed sown, 314.  
"Perseverance" leaves for, 315.  
New South Wales New Zealand Company formed for, 324.  
Marsden trades for, 352.  
Macquarie to Bathurst, 409.  
Williams's memorial, 410, 431.  
Specimens sent by Macquarie to Earl Bathurst, 410.  
Navy Board on specimens to Admiralty, 431-2.  
Experiments on, 432.  
Williams's report on, 457.  
Williams's proposals, 467.  
Birnie's proposals, 468.  
Williams replies to Birnie, 469.  
Lord and Williams's agreement, 470.  
Williams's agreement with Company, 473.  
Skinner's tests, 511.  
Fenwick's tests, 512.  
Chatham Ropeyard tests, 513.  
Armstrong's tests, 514.  
Hunt's tests, 515.  
Sugden's scheme, 516.  
McCrae describes, 536.  
Experiments directed, 577.  
Lack asks for sample, 577.  
Bigge's report, 591.  
Nicolls's scheme, 603, 613.  
Report on, to Navy Board, 606.  
Young's report, 609.  
Dempster's report, 609.  
In Tippihaee's country, 639.  
Petition of merchants, 664.  
Proposed cargoes of, 676.  
Torrens's plan for obtaining, 676.  
Curtis recommends cultivation, 683-4.  
Curtis to Lord High Admiral regarding, 684.  
See also McCrae (evidence).  
See also Rope.

**Flora—**

Report on, by Menzies, 144.

**Folder, Thomas—**

Master of "Vulture," 278.

**Fort William—**

Establishment at, 325.

**Fortifications of Maoris—**

Marsden describes a typical fort, 368.

**Foveaux—**

From King: Instructions, flax and pork, 221.  
Ships from Bay of Islands, 302.  
Receives samples of flax, 304.  
Sails in "Experiment," 305.  
Sails in "Speke" from New Zealand, 305.

**Foveaux Strait, 303.**

Trade at, by flax company, 325.

**Fowl—**

Plentiful at Dusky, 178.

**Fox Strangways—**

To Labouchere: Hobson appointed, 747.

**"Francis"—**

Parted from "Britannia," 179.  
Reached Dusky, 179.  
Need of repair, 179.

**"Frederick," whaler—**

Duattera ships on, 340.  
Leaves Duattera at Norfolk Island, 341.

**French—**

Contemplate settling in New Zealand, 665.

**French intentions, 681-2.****Furneaux—**

From Cook : Orders for voyage, 15.  
Instructions, scurvy, 16.  
Cook's orders to, 16, 17.  
Memorandum *re* rations, 18.  
Parts with "Resolution," 18.  
To Stephens : Account of voyage, 18.  
Visits Queen Charlotte Sound, 18.  
Loses boat's crew, 19.  
To Stephens : Condemned stores, 19.

**Garbutt, T.—**

Master of "Concord," 309.

**Gardiner and Co.—**

Owners "Favourite," 278.

**Gardiner, Barnabus, "Venus"—**

Answers King's queries, 234.

**General order—**

Return and treatment of Natives, 267.

**"General Gates"—**

Chartered by Marsden : Particulars of passengers and cargo, 435-37.  
Skinner sends to Sydney, 497.  
Admiralty on detention of, 521.  
Skinner, R., report on "General Gates," 522-3.  
Butler, J., Magistrate, report on "General Gates," 524.  
Deposition of F. Ewer, 525.  
Deposition of T. Lewie, 527.  
Deposition of H. Gordon, 528.  
*See also* McDonald's evidence.

**George—**

Account of "Boyd," 358.

**Gips—**

From Normanby : Hobson's instructions, 729.

**Gladstone—**

To Horton : Tippihaee, 639.

**Goderich—**

From Coates : Passages for missionaries, 674.

**Gordon, Missionary—**

Sails in "Active," 413.  
Gordon on flax expedition, 459.

**Gordon, Henry, prisoner—**

Deposition "General Gates," 528-30.

**"Gorgon"—**

To form expedition, 113.

**Goulburn—**

To Pratt : Passage for Kendall and chiefs, 498.  
From Brown, acknowledging specimens New Zealand, 531.  
To Sugden : Colonising and Customs duties, 532.  
From Marsden : Visiting chiefs to England, 562.  
To Lushington : Shipment of mission goods, 563.

**Government and General Order, 402, 427, 429, 477.****"Governor Bligh," schooner, 302, 304.**

Sealing on coast, 558-62.

**Graham, Charles—**

From Fenwick, William : Tests of hemp, 512.

**Grenville, W. W.—**

To Phillip : Voyage of "Discovery" and "Gorgon," 113.  
To Admiralty Lords : Objects of Vancouver's voyage, 122.

**Grose—**

To Dundas, *re* Spanish ships, 161.  
Arrival of "Dedalus," 164.  
Arrival of Maoris, 165.  
To King, censuring New Zealand visit, 187.  
From King, defending New Zealand visit, 193.

**Gwynn, James—**

Captain "Ann," 260.  
Informs Chace of "Boyd" massacre, 298.

**Hall, E. S.—**

Petition to form company, 327.

**Hall, W.—**

Accompanies "Active," 319-20, 330, 348-60.  
Replies to Marsden, 441-45.  
Industry of, 533, 546.

**Halletts and Co.—**

Owners of "Argo," 260.

**Hammond, Captain—**

To Campbell : Escape of convicts, 408.

**Hampshire Telegraph—**

Wreck of "Campbell Macquarie," 318.

**Hanson, Lieutenant—**

From Vancouver, instructions, 158.  
Ordered to call Doubtless Bay, 159.  
Took away New Zealand Natives, 331.



**Hanson, Mr.—**

Sailed in "Active," 348.

**Harbours—**

*See also* McCrae (evidence).

**Harrison—**

From Horton: Payment Tippahee's expenses, 637-8.

From Hay: Payment Tippahee's expenses, 644.

**Hasselberg, Frederick, master "Perseverance"—**

To Macquarie, *re* "Boyd," 300.

**"Haweis"—**

Story of capture, 687.

**Hay—**

From Reynolds: Tippahee in London, 642.

To Harrison: Tippahee's expenses, 644.

From Cruise: Military force in New Zealand, 667.

From Navy Commissioner: Cost of New Zealand spars, 674.

From Navy Board: Torrens's scheme, 678.

**Heads—**

Preserved Maori: Method of preparing, 695.  
Marsden reports on, 716-7.

**Hergest, Lieutenant—**

Instructions to call for flax-dressers, 130, 133, 134.

**Hill, Thomas, A.B.—**

Killed at Queen Charlotte Sound, 19.

**Hill, Rev. R., Missionary—**

Death, 722.

**Hingston, William—**

Ordered to be seized, 222.

To touch at New Zealand, 224.

**Hobart—**

From King: Whale fisheries, 246.

**Hobson—**

From Normanby: Instructions on assuming consulship, 729.

Normanby to Gipps: Hobson's consulship, 729.

Report on New Zealand, 743.

To Under-Secretary of State: Estimate expense of founding colony, 744.

Pennington to Stephen: Formation of colony, 747.

Commission as Consul, 747-8.

From Palmerston: Appointment as Consul, 748.

From Palmerston: Under Colonial Department, 749.

To Under-Secretary of State: Explanation required of instructions, 750.

From Normanby, explaining instructions, 753.

Correspondence regarding appointment, 729-55.

**Hokianga—**

McCrae describes, 534.

**Hongi—**

*See* Shungee.

**Hoodoo, 333, 346****Hook, Charles—**

Evidence before Bigge, 506-8.

**Horton—**

To De Thierry: New Zealand not a Crown colony, 615.

From De Thierry, *re* escaped convicts, 624.

From Croker: Death of Perryman, seaman, 629.

To Harrison: Support Tippahee in London, 637.

From Harrison: Support Tippahee in London, 638.

From Navy Commissioners: Support Tippahee in London, 638.

To Reynolds: Passage for Tippahee, 638.

From Reynolds: Tippahee's health, 639.

From Gladstone: Tippahee, 639.

From Littleton: Establishment of fort, 658.

From Torrens: Emigration, 676.

**Houpa, Chief, Thames district—**

Visits Marsden, 373.

**House, William—**

Sent to Sydney in "Dædalus," 158.

Given command "Francis" 167.

**Hovell, W. H.—**

Petition to form company, 327.

**Howe—**

To Sydney: Matra's emigration scheme, 45.

**Howell—**

Leith appoints, 303.

**Hunt, F., "Eliza"—**

Letter *re* New Zealand rope, 515.

**Hunter—**

Lands South Cape in "Sirius," 75.

Cultivation flax, 195.

From Portland: King's visit, 199.

Reports rescuing "Endeavour's" crew, 219.

To King on resources of New Zealand, 227.

**Hurrys—**

Owners of "Alexander," 248.

**Imports, New Zealand—**

Official table: *See* Trade.

**India Government Officials—**

To King, 221.

**"Inspector," Walker—**

At Bay of Islands, 300.

**Jackson—**

From Secretary of State: Emigration not encouraged, 580.

**Jacobs, John and William, merchants—**

"Boyd's" cargo assigned to, 295.  
Flax thread sent to, 304.

**"Jefferson," whaler—**

Calls Bay of Islands, 343.  
Attack by Natives on, 350.  
Near Terria's villages, 387.  
Trouble with Natives, 387.  
Marsden's account of trouble, 425.  
Barbarities of, 426.

**Johnstone—**

To Berteret, *re* "Chatham" and "Discovery," 136.

**Jones—**

On flax expedition, 459.

**Jones, James, A.B.—**

Killed at Queen Charlotte Sound, 19.

**Jowett—**

From Marsden: Resident no authority, 723-4.

**Kangoroo—**

Shungee's brother, 369.

**Kauri—**

McCrae describes, 535.

**Kelly—**

Master of "Sophia," 448.

**Kendall—**

Accompanies "Active," 319-20.  
Magistrate at Bay of Islands, 328.  
Accompanies Marsden to New Zealand, 330, 348.  
To Marsden: Duaterra's death, 400.  
To Campbell: Escaped convicts, 404.  
"Boyd" massacre, 406.  
To Marsden, 438, 445.  
To Bigge: Answers to queries, 441.  
Marsden reports to Pratt his departure, 489.  
To Bathurst, sending New Zealand ores, 573.

**Keri Keri School—**

To be opened, 715.

**King—**

Description flax-plant, 119.  
To Nepean: Flax-manufacture, 126.  
To Buckingham: Dressing flax, 138.  
To Nepean: Flax for clothing, 140.  
From Phillip: Flax for clothing, 153.  
To Nepean: Flax and settlement, 168.  
To Dundas: Flax-dressers, 169.  
To Nepean: Visit to New Zealand, 175.  
To Raven: Return of Maoris, 176.  
From Raven: Visit to New Zealand in "Britannia," 177.  
To Nepean: Settlement in New Zealand, 179 *et seq.*  
From Grose: Visit to New Zealand condemned, 187.  
To Dundas: Visit to New Zealand, 189.  
To Grose: Defends visit to New Zealand, 193.  
Visit condemned by Portland, 201.

**King—continued.**

To Portland: Wreck of "Endeavour," 201-3.  
From Bampton: Wreck "Endeavour," 204.  
To Clark: Stores for Bampton, 205.  
Flax-manufacture, 215.  
To Banks: Plants, &c., on shipboard, 219.  
To Foveaux: Growth and manufacture of flax, 221.  
From Indian Government officials: Hingston's arrest, 222.  
To Wellesley: Hingston's conduct, 224.  
Reports six vessels whaling at New Zealand, 224.  
Ship-building, 230.  
To Portland: Whaling industry, 233.  
Questions whaling captains, 234.  
On New Zealand whaling, 239.  
From Bass: Fishing scheme, 242.  
To Hobart: Whale fishery, 247.  
From Banks: Flax-manufacture, 249.  
To Camden: Whaling and Natives, 253.  
To Cooke: Visit of chief, 258.  
Memo. on Natives, 261.  
Presents medal to Tipahe, 266.  
Tipahee's territories, 266.  
Tipahe's cannibalism, 267.  
Tipahe's return, 268.  
On timbers, 286.

**King, Missionary—**

Accompanies Marsden to New Zealand, 330, 348-60.  
First white native baptized, 392.  
Replies to Marsden, 438, 445.

**"King George," S. R. Chace—**

Brings news of "Boyd," 296.

**"King George"—**

Massacre of the "Boyd," 298-99.  
Conduct towards the Natives, 350.

**Kingston, John, Captain—**

"Elizabeth and Mary," 260.

**Kingston, John, master "Speke"—**

Intimates loss of "Boyd," 300.

**Knuckle Point—**

King to proceed to, 175-6.  
Grose refers to King's visit, 137.

**Korokoro—**

Recognised as chief by Macquarie, 328.  
Accompanies Marsden, 352.  
Visits Marsden at Bay of Islands, 360.  
Declared a chief, 428.  
See Marsden's first visit to New Zealand, 348-99.

**Labouchere—**

From Fox Strangways: Hobson's appointment, 747.

**Lack—**

To Willmot: Specimens of flax, 577.  
From Secretary of State: Specimens flax, 577.

**"Lady Nelson"—**

Visits New Zealand, 334.

**Lambton, Mr.—**

*Re* colonising, 634.

**Land—**

Deed of grant to Church Missionary Society, 400.

Agricultural: Report of Downie, 579.

Purchase of, for mission stations (Marsden), 712.

**Land-purchase—**

*See also* McCrae (evidence).

**Leigh—**

From Tyerman and Bennet: Establishment of seminary, 631.

**Leigh, Rev. S.—**

New Zealand priesthood, 708.

**Leith, "Britannia"—**

Remained at Dusky, 177.

Met Raven again, 178.

**Leith, W.—**

To Lord, Williams, and Thompson, visit to New Zealand, 301.

**Lewe, Thomas, prisoner—**

Deposition, "General Gates," 527-8.

**Littleton—**

From Bathurst: Commercial and military projects, 634.

To Bathurst: Military project, 634.

To Horton: Establishment of fort, 658.

**London Missionary Society—**

*See* Church Missionary Society.

**Lord, Simeon—**

Goods per "Boyd," 295.

Proposed settlement, 297.

Petition to form company, 327.

Director of company, 402.

Flax agreement, 470.

**Lord High Admiral—**

From Curtis: Cultivation of hemp, 684.

**Lord, Williams, and Thompson—**

From Leith: Visit to New Zealand, 301.

**Lushington—**

From Goulburn: Missionary goods, 563.

**Luttrell—**

Southern sealing, 282.

Growth of flax, 285.

**Lyall, Mr.—**

Proposal to establish fort, 658.

**McCrae, Ensign—**

Evidence before Bigge, 534.

Bigge's opinion of, 587.

Evidence before Commissioner Bigge, *q.v.* for particulars on cannibalism, missionaries, venereal disease, trade, agriculture, fish, harbours, flax, climatology, Maori manners and customs, education, slavery, fauna, flora, land-purchase, religion, &c., 534-50.

**McDonald—**

Evidence before Commissioner Bigge, *q.v.* for particulars *re* seals, timber, firearms trade, convicts, "General Gates," &c., 558-62.

**McLeay—**

From Marsden: New Zealand mission, 658.

From Attorney and Solicitor General: Registration New-Zealand-built vessels, 687.

**Macquarie—**

From Berry: Loss of "Boyd," 295.

To Castlereagh: "Boyd" and New Zealand generally, 296.

From whalers: "Boyd" massacre, 299.

From Birnie: Refitting "Mary Anne," 314-5.

Order, "Perseverance," 315.

To Under-Secretary of State: Bruce memorial, 322.

Order: Authority of New Zealand chiefs, 328.

Order: Marsden's visit, 329.

Appoints Kendall Magistrate, 330.

Order, *re* timber, 402.

From Bathurst: Presents to New-Zealanders, 407.

To Bathurst: Manufacture of flax, 409.

To Bathurst: Duties, 415.

From Skinner: Marsden, &c., 484, 485.

From Marsden: Convicts, "General Gates," 484.

**Macquarie Island—**

"Concord" sails for, 309.

"Sally and Mary" sails for, 309.

"Campbell Macquarie," wrecked, 318.

Hook's evidence, seals, 507.

Riley's evidence, 509.

Beveridge's evidence, 509.

**Malaspina—**

At Dusky (notes) 161-65.

**Mattarra, Prince—**

Connection with "Boyd" massacre, 299.

**Maoris—**

King's gifts to, 174.

Differ from New South Wales Natives, 293.

Native explanations of outrages, 350-1, 356-7.

Superstitions regarding the sick, 385.

Treatment of women and children, 397.

Method of signature, 400.

Outrages on, by traders, 417-21.

No use as labourers, 496.

Condition, manners, and trade, 569-70.

Turner's picture of, 630.

Outrages, brig "Haweis," 687-98.

Proposed emigration, 680.

**Maoris—continued.**

Description by officer, brig "Haweis," 696.  
 Appearance and religious ceremonies, 708-9.  
 Disposition towards strangers: *See also*  
 Fairfowl, Dr. (evidence).  
 Manners and customs: *See also* McCrae (evidence).

**Marsden—**

To Dillon: Instructions for operations, 318.  
 To Church Missionary Society: Kendall and visit, 319, 321.  
 List of voyages, 327.  
 Leave granted to visit, 329.  
 To Pratt: Visit and prospect of mission, 330.  
 First visit, 331.  
 Visits England, 335.  
 Reaches Bay of Islands, 337.  
 Embarks on "Active," 337.  
 Charters the "Active," 344.  
 Describes first voyage, 348.  
 Visit to North Cape, 349.  
 Night with Natives, 359.  
 Presents to Natives, 359.  
 First sermon in New Zealand, 362.  
 Visited Waimate, 366.  
 Sails for Whangaroa, 372.  
 Proceeds to Thames, 373.  
 Visits Houpa's village, 376.  
 Visits Weeve's village, 384.  
 Visits the "Jefferson," 388.  
 Purchases land, 391, 400.  
 Sails from New Zealand, 392.  
 Reaches Sydney, 396.  
 From Kendall: Death of Duaterra, 400.  
 Description of visit, 402.  
 To Church Missionary Society, mission news, 404.  
 To Pratt: Duaterra's prejudices, 405.  
 To Church Missionary Society: Cattle and agriculture, 413-4.  
 To Rev. J. Pratt, enclosing evidence traders' outrages, 424-26.  
 Establishes a seminary, 433.  
 To Pratt: Visit in 1819, 435.  
 Hires "General Gates," 435, 437.  
 And Cartwright to Pratt, medical man, 436.  
 To Pratt on eve of 1819 visit, 437.  
 Questions Hall, Kendall, and King, 438, 445.  
 To Bigge: General mission-work described, 448.  
 Defends his actions, 453.  
 Sends rules and regulations to Commissioner Bigge, 455.  
 To Butler: Charges against himself, 475.  
 Devotion to New Zealand, 475-76.  
 To Pratt, reporting after 1819 visit, 476.  
 To Pratt: Sale of "Active," 477.  
 Leave of absence granted, 477.  
 Leave to visit, 477.  
 Prospects of New Zealand, 481-2.  
 To Pratt: Missionaries' families, 482.  
 To Pratt: Salaries to missionaries, 482.  
 To Macquarie, "General Gates," 484.  
 Of great use to Skinner, 484.  
 From Skinner: Date of letter, 485.  
 To Pratt: Difficulties with missionaries, 489.  
 To Pratt, on the state of the mission, &c., 489-92.  
 To Bigge: Bay of Islands spars, 493.  
 To Pratt, inattention to value of cattle, 520.  
 Opinion of seminary, 532.  
 Third visit, 533.

**Marsden—continued.**

To Goulburn: Returning chiefs, 562.  
 Objects to chiefs visiting England, 562-3.  
 To Butterworth: Management of missions, 563.  
 To Pratt: Mission matters generally, 565, 566, 567, 571, 579, 583, 586.  
 To missionary settlers, 578.  
 Relinquishes seminary, 580-1.  
 To Pratt: Cattle, 585.  
 To Pratt: Kendall bartering firearms, 586.  
 To Brisbane: Leave of absence, 597.  
 To Pratt: Seminary and mission matters, 598, 610, 616, 622.  
 Shipwrecked in "Brampton," 598.  
 After wreck, 610.  
 Suspends Butler, 616.  
 Bad state of Leigh's health, 618.  
 Seminary, 623, 631.  
 To Pratt: Some form of government, 627, 631.  
 To Bickersteth: Education of missionaries' children, 644.  
 Seminary, 645, 660.  
 To McLeay: Difficulties in working mission, 658.  
 To Coates: Necessity for another visit, 668.  
 To Bickersteth: Emigration of chiefs, 679.  
 To Coates: Seminary, 698.  
 To Coates: Education matters, 700.  
 To Bickersteth: Native war, 702.  
 To ———, *re* inland mission station, 703, 719.  
 To Darling: Maori war and cause, 705.  
 To Bickersteth: Report on mission stations, 710.  
 To Coates: Finance, 710, 718.  
 To Bickersteth: New Zealand mission, 715.  
 To Coates: Traffic in heads, 716.  
 To Bickersteth: Traffic in heads, 717.  
 To Coates: His last visit, 720, 722.  
 To Coates: Baron de Thierrv, 722.  
 To Jowett: Resident no authority, 723.  
 To Jowett: Missionary changes, 724.  
 To Coates: Failing health, 728.  
 To Church Missionary Society, last letter, 728.

**Marsden's Seminary**, 433, 532, 533, 580, 581, 598, 616, 622, 623, 631, 645, 660, 679, 698, 700.

**"Mary," Simmons—**  
 Foundered, 299.

**"Mary Ann"—**  
 Special unloading, 314, 315.

**Matengaro, Chief—**  
 Seeks "Boyd" survivors, 293.

**Mathers and Co.—**  
 Owners of "Scorpion," 253.  
 Owners of "Vulture," 278.

**Matra, James Maria—**  
 Proposal, New Zealand, 36-42, 43, 44  
 Howe on scheme, 45.

**Mayhanger—**  
 Visited Marsden, 379.



**Medical treatment—**

*See also* Fairfowl, Dr. (evidence).

**Mellish, W.—**

Approving Nicolls's scheme, 608-9.

**Menzies—**

Draft of instructions, 115.

To Banks : Report on flora, 143.

**"Mercury," schooner—**

Theft of captain, 426.

**Mercury Bay—**

Anonymous scheme, 61.

Headquarters of Leigh, 572.

**Meryck, And.—**

Master "Aurora," 278.

**Metangangoa—**

Rescues survivors of "Boyd," 311.

**Military protection—**

Memorial for, 663-66.

Lieut.-Colonel Cruise offers services, 667.

**Milton, William, A.B.—**

Killed at Queen Charlotte Sound, 19.

**Minerals—**

Kendall sends specimens, 573.

Bigge's report, 591, 592.

**Missions—**

Regulations, 455.

Statistics, 593.

Marsden describes position, 658-60.

Inland station, 704.

Marsden's report, 705-8.

Marsden's expenses, 710.

Remarks on various stations, 710-11.

Paihea made principal station, 715.

Settlements on Marsden's 1st visit, 721.

Marsden's forty-five years, 728.

Marsden's last letter, 728-9.

**Missionaries—**

Replies to Bigge, 441.

Answers to Marsden's queries, 445.

Duties of members and their families, 482.

Treatment by Maoris, 483.

To Bathurst : Leaving for New Zealand, 531.

Marsden on Wesleyan, 563.

Passages asked for, 596.

Frugality of, 618.

Location of, by Marsden, 646.

List and occupations of, 659.

Passages and stores, 674.

Natives desire, 720.

General particulars : *See also* Fairfowl, Dr. (evidence).

*See also* McCrae (evidence).

*See also* Church Missionary Society and Wesleyan Missionary Society.

**Missionary Chronicle, July, 1825—**

Tyerman and Bennett, 640-41.

**Missionary Register—**

Verse on New Zealand, 626-7.

**Missionary Settlers—**

From Marsden : His defence, 578.

**Moody—**

Commands "Santa Anna," 337.

**Morals of Europeans—**

Marsden's complaints, 716.

**Morirau—**

Desires to visit Macquarie Island, 416.

**Morley, Mrs.—**

Rescued from "Boyd," 294, 311.

**Morris, Josh., master "Atlanta"—**

Statement to Macquarie, 300.

**Mowhee—**

Marsden's memoir of, 346-48.

**Murphy, Francis, quartermaster—**

Killed at Queen Charlotte Sound, 19.

**Murray—**

Captain of flax-vessel, 457.

**Murray, Sir G.—**

From Darling : Registration of vessels, 685.

From Raine : Registration of vessels, 686.

From Darling : Account of trade, 712.

**Myhanga—**

Friendly at Bay of Islands, 301.

**Natives—**

Seen by Raven, 179.

Not seen by Leith, 179, 182.

Huts described, 183.

Never molested Bampton, 197.

**Navy Board—**

To Admiralty : Manufacture hemp, 431.

To Wilmot : Inquiries flax, 577.

To Hay : Torrens's proposals, 678.

**Natives of South Seas—**

Marsden's views of, 403.

**Navy Commissioners—**

From Wilmot : Missionary stores, 583.

To Horton : Passage for Tippahee, 638.

To Hay : New Zealand timbers, 674.

**Nepean—**

From Matra : On scheme, 43.

New South Wales scheme for settlement, 58-66.

From Phillip, asking instructions, 71.

From King : Flax-manufacture, 126.

From Vancouver : Expedition, 131.

From King : Flax-manufacture, 139.

From King : New Zealand appointment, 168.

From King : Instructions, 175.

From King : Visit to New Zealand, 179.

**New South Wales New Zealand Company—**

Petition to form, 323.  
Memorial of, 401.  
Sanction refused, 407.

**New Zealand—**

Described, 292.  
Scheme of conquest, 584.  
Outrages on Natives, 587-96.  
Not a Crown possession, 615.  
A sovereign and independent State, 731.

**New Zealand Commercial Company, 639.****"New-Zealander," whaler—**

Some of crew shot, 367.

**New-Zealanders—**

Deportation of, prohibited, 257.  
Bond to secure treatment of, 316.  
Cruelly treated, 321.

**Nicholas—**

Accompanies Marsden, 348-61.

**Nicholls—**

Marsden's opinion of, 627.

**Nicholson, Captain J.—**

To Bigge : Account of voyage, 483.

**Nicolls—**

To Bathurst : Scheme of colonisation, 598, 611.  
Ogilvie's tender, 611.  
Evidence in support of scheme, 612.

**Nomenclature for New Zealand—**

Suggestions by Erskine, 581.

**Normanby—**

To Gipps : Instructions to Hobson, 729.  
To Hobson on his appointment, 729.  
To Attorney-General : Sovereignty of New Zealand, 739.  
From Campbell and Rolfe : Annexation of New Zealand, 749.  
To Hobson : Guiding instructions, 753.

**North Cape—**

Raven, abreast of, 184-5.  
Leith visited, 301.  
Marsden calls at, 348.

**Odoo—**

New Zealand Native flax-dresser, 183.  
Returned home, 183-85.

**Ogilvy, W. L.—**

Tender for transport, 611-12.

**Outrages on Maoris—**

See New Zealand, Outrages on Natives.

**Outrages—**

By traders on Natives, 417-21.

**Paddock, John—**

Captain of "Favourite," 278.

**Pah—**

Description of, 689.

**Paihea—**

Made the principal mission station, 715.

**Pallas—**

To Pennant : Cook's last voyage, 32-35.

**Palliser, Cape—**

"Resolution" and "Adventure" separate, 18.

**Palmerston—**

To Hobson : Conditions, &c., appointment, 748-49.

**"Paramatta," schooner—**

On New Zealand coast, 304.  
Barbarity of crew, 419, 423.

**Parker, William, master "Diana"—**

"Boyd" massacre, 300.

**Paterson—**

To Dundas : Flax-manufacture, 195.  
From Bampton : Arrival of "Endeavour," 198.

**Pattison, Simeop—**

Master "City of Edinburgh," 295.

**Pattison—**

Loss of "Boyd," 308, 312.

**Peaches—**

Grow in perfection, 434.

**Penantipodes Isle—**

Bass's fishing concession, 243.

**Pennant—**

From Pallas : Cook's last voyage, 32.

**Pennington to Stephen—**

Appointment of a Consul, 745, 747.

**Pepe, Maori—**

Killed in "Boyd" explosion, 635.

**Perry—**

To Cook : Treatment for scurvy, 7.

**"Perseverance," Hasselberg—**

Rescues Siddons, 318.  
At Bay of Islands, 300-1.  
Application to leave Sydney, 315-6.

**Pethi, Chief—**

Nephew of Haupa, Thames, 375-6.

**Phillip—**

Proposed punishment of convicts, 69.  
To Nepean : His instructions and power of exile, 71.

**Phillip—continued.**

- Canoes at Norfolk Island, 107.
- From Grenville: Voyage "Gorgon" and "Discovery," 113.
- From Dundas: Vancouver's expedition, 127.
- To Dundas: Hire of "Britannia," 147.
- From Grose: Bad provisions, 148.
- To King: Flax-manufacture, 150.
- From Vancouver: Sailing of "Dædalus," 154.
- From Vancouver: Provisioning expedition, 156.

**Pigs—**

- For Bay of Islands, 255.

**Poenammoo—**

- Natives of, not seen, 179.

**Port Jackson—**

- New-Zealand-built vessel at, 230.

**Port Macquarie—**

- Flax at, 460.

**Port Williams—**

- Flax at, 462, 473.

**Portland—**

- To Hunter: King's visit to New Zealand, 201.
- From King: "Endeavour" wreck, 204.
- From Hunter: "Endeavour" survivors, 217.
- From King: Whaling, 233.

**Praed, W. M.—**

- Verses on New Zealand, 626-27.

**Pratt—**

- From Marsden: Prospects of mission, 330.
- Duatterra's prejudices, 405.
- To Bathurst: Shipment stores, 407.
- From Marsden: Leave of absence, 435.
- From Marsden: Dr. Reid as missionary, 436.
- From Marsden: Arrival "Active," &c., 437.
- From Marsden: Charges against himself, 476.
- From Marsden: Missionary matters, 477, 480, 482, 565, 566, 567, 571, 579, 585, 586, 598, 610, 622.
- From Goulburn: Passages on "Speke," 498.
- From Marsden: Cattle in New Zealand, 520.
- To Bathurst: Missionaries' passages, 596.
- From Marsden: New Zealand mission matters and government, 627, 631.

**"Prince Regent," schooner—**

- In Thames with "Coromandel," 497.

**Privy Council—**

- See also Lack.

**Prostitution, Maori—**

- See also Fairfowl, Dr. (evidence).

**"Providence," schooner—**

- Visits Norfolk Island, 203.

**"Pyramus," ship—**

- Takes Marsden west coast, 721.

**Queen Charlotte's Sound—**

- Cook's instructions, 16.
- Cook issues orders from, 17.
- Furneaux calls at, 18.
- Furneaux loses boat's crew at, 19.
- Cook visits in "Resolution," 20.
- Cook reports at, 21.
- Mentioned in New South Wales scheme, 61.
- Phillip's proposal, 71.
- Leith's directions, 303.

**Quested, George, "Speedy"—**

- Answers King's queries, 234.

**Raine—**

- To Murray: Ship building and registration, 686.

**Ramsay, W.—**

- To Enderby: Whale-fishing limits, 312.

**Raven—**

- From King: Return of Natives, 176.
- To King: Left gang at Dusky, 177.
- Anonymous account, 182.

**Reld, Dr.—**

- Offers services to Marsden, 436-37.

**Religion—**

- McCrae describes, 548

**Religion in New Zealand—**

- See also McCrae (evidence)

**"Resolution"—**

- Cook's orders for dietary on, 16.
- Parts with Furneaux, 19.

**Reynolds—**

- To Bathurst: Tippahe Cupa, 635.
- From Horton: Passage for Tippahe, 638.
- To Horton: Illness of Tippahe, 639.
- To Hay: Departure of Tippahe, 642.
- To Bathurst: Cost incurred for Tippahe, 643.

**Richardson, Cuth.—**

- Master of "Albion," 279.
- Treats Duatterra well, 338.

**Riley, Edward—**

- Evidence before Bigge, 509.

**Riley and Jones—**

- Owned sealing-vessels, 558, 560.

**Rock, William—**

- Owner of "Ann," 260.

**Rope (New Zealand Flax)—**

- Evidence given concerning, 510-15.

**Rous—**

- To Colonial Secretary: Report on "Sisters" loss, 673.

**Rowe, John, master's mate—**

Killed at Queen Charlotte Sound, 19.

**Ruatara—**

Dillon to negotiate with, 318.  
 Marsden writes to, 320.  
 Recognised as chief by Macquarie, 328, 428.  
 Visits Sydney, 334.  
 Left on Bounties, 337.  
 Sails for England, 337.  
 Cruelly treated on "Santa Anna," 339.  
 On board the "Frederick," 341.  
 On board the "Ann," 342.  
 Took seeds away, 343.  
 Applies for a mill, 344.  
 Ambitious to civilise New Zealand, 346.  
 Meeting with Marsden, 356.  
 Sickness of, 389, 400.  
 As a farmer, 390.  
 Death of, 401, 405.  
 Marsden describes, 403.  
 Prejudiced against missionaries, 405.  
*See also* Duaterra.

**Russell, Mr.—**

"Boyd" massacre, 293.

**Russell, James, mate "City of Edinburgh"—**

Account of loss of "Boyd," 295, 312.

**"Sally and Mary"—**

Sails for Macquarie Island, 309.

**"Santa Anna," whaler—**

Duaterra ships on, 338.  
 Sails for England, 339.

**Savage, W.—**

To Bathurst: Emigrating to New Zealand, 483.

**"Scorpion"—**

Dates of sailing, 253.

**Scurvy—**

Three cases, 9.

**Sealing—**

McDonald describes, 558.  
 Petition of merchants, 663.

**Seals—**

Skins for China market, 177.  
 Number taken by Leith's gang, 178, 182.  
 Banks's description of numbers, 273-4.  
 Luttrell mentions destruction of, 282.  
*See also* McDonald's evidence.

**Seal-fishery—**

May be carried on, 292.

**Secretary of State—**

To Lack: New Zealand flax, 577.  
 To William Jackson: No encouragement to emigrate, 580.  
 To Governor Gipps: Instructions to Hobson, 729.

**Secretaries, Wesleyan Missionary Society—**

From White and Turner: Leigh's qualifications, 625.

**Seminary—**

*See* Marsden's Seminary.

**Seppings, R.—**

Reports on detention of "General Gates," 521.

**Settlement—**

Savage proposes to form agricultural, 483.  
 Marsden on state of mission settlement, 489-92.  
 Sugden's proposals, 516.  
 No Government encouragement, 580.  
 Europeans settling, 719.  
 De Thierry's account of his efforts, 724-28.

**Shelley, Missionary—**

Death of, 404.

**Shepherd, James—**

Accompanies Marsden third visit, 534.

**Shipbuilding—**

At Dusky, 178, 182.  
 Hunter tells of, 230.  
 Registration of vessels, 685, 686, 687.  
 At Hokianga, 686.

**Ship Cove—**

Furneaux to leave instructions at, 16.

**Shipping—**

At Bay of Islands (1819), 593.  
 At Bay of Islands (1839), 758-8.

**Shipping, List of—**

Achilles, *barque*, 757.  
 Acquila, *cutler*, 756.  
 Active, *brig*, 318, 320, 327, 330, 337, 344-5, 347-9, 352-8-9, 360-1-5-6, 370-1-3-4-5-8, 387-9, 391, 393-5-8, 400-2-4, 413, 430-7-8, 452-3-4, 475-7-8-9, 499, 500-3-6, 517-8-9, 562-4-7-8, 572.  
 Adamant, The, 444.  
 Adelaide, *brig*, 756-7.  
 Adele, *ship*, 757.  
 Adventure, H.M.S., 16-7-8-9, 20.  
 Albion, The, 224, 249, 279, 298, 338.  
 Alexander, The, 248.  
 Ann, *ship*, 260, 298, 315, 339, 342-3.  
 Anne, The, 444.  
 Argo, The, 260, 338.  
 Ariel, *schooner*, 757-8.  
 Arion, *ship*, 756.  
 Atlanta, The, 300-1.  
 Atlas, *schooner*, 756.  
 Atrevida, *corvette*, 161-2.  
 Augustus Cæsar, *ship*, 756.  
 Aurora, The, 278.  
 Benezet, *ship*, 757.  
 Bounty, H.M.S., 73-4-6, 94, 115, 144.  
 Bourbon, *ship*, 756.  
 Boyd, The, 293-5-6-9, 300-1-3-4-6, 311-3-4, 323, 336, 352-4-5-6-7-8, 389, 406-7, 418, 421-2, 496-8, 551-2, 635, 641-2.  
 Brampton, The, 598.  
 Britannia, The, 147-8-9, 166-8-9, 170-4-5-6-7, 182-5-9, 190-6, 201, 217, 224, 234-5-6, 333.



## Shipping—continued.

Brixton, The, 567.  
 Brothers, *schooner*, 401-5, 498.  
 Buffalo, The, 258, 263-8, 286-7.  
 Campbell Maquarie, *brig*, 318, 429, 430.  
 Caroline, *brig*, 756.  
 Catherine, The, 444, 540, 555.  
 Catos, *ship*, 757.  
 Chatham, H.M.S., 124-9, 133-6, 141-2-7, 154-6.  
 Christina, *brig*, 757.  
 City of Edinburgh, *ship*, 295, 300-8, 312.  
 Commerce, The, 279.  
 Concord, The, 309.  
 Concordia, *ship*, 756-8.  
 Coromandel, H.M.S., 327, 494, 562-6-9, 572-3-5, 592.  
 Crocodile, H.M.S., 701.  
 Cumberland, *ship*, 295, 312, 417, 430-1, 573.  
 Currency Lass, *schooner*, 757-8.  
 Dædalus, H.M.S., 128-9, 130-3, 154-8-9, 165-6, 182, 333.  
 Daphne, The, 419, 424, 444.  
 Dartmouth, *ship*, 758.  
 David, *brig*, 756.  
 Descubierta, *corvette*, 161.  
 Diana, *ship*, 300, 498, 757.  
 Discovery, H.M.S. (Cook), 24.  
 Discovery, H.M.S. (Vancouver), 113-4-8, 122-4-9, 131-2-5-6-7, 142-6, 154-6-8, 160-7.  
 Dragon, The, 327.  
 Dromedary, H.M.S., 327, 430, 477-8, 480-1-3-4-5-7-8-9, 491-3-5-6, 511-2, 521-2-3-7-8, 533-4-8-9, 540, 550-1-2-3-4, 561-7, 587, 590-2-3-4-5-6.  
 Earl of Dalkeith, 651.  
 Earl Spencer, 344.  
 Ecastre, *ship*, 756.  
 Eliza, The, 224, 757.  
 Elizabeth, The, 279, 328.  
 Elizabeth and Mary, The (235 tons), 260.  
 Elizabeth and Mary, *schooner*, 429, 430, 509.  
 Elizabeth Henrietta, H.M. *brig*, 648-9, 651-2-4-5-6-7, 666.  
 Endeavour, H.M.S., 1, 5, 6, 10.  
 Endeavour (Bampton), 204-5, 225.  
 Endeavour, *brig*, 401, 498.  
 Enterprize, The, 444.  
 Experiment, *brig*, 302-3-4-5, 498.  
 Falcon, *ship*, 758.  
 Fancy (Snow), 197, 203-4.  
 Favourite, The, 278.  
 Ferdinand, *ship*, 758.  
 Fly, H.M.S., 674.  
 Fox, *brig*, 506.  
 Fox-hound, The, 444.  
 France, *ship*, 756.  
 Francis, The, 178-9.  
 Franklin, *ship*, 757.  
 Frederick, The, 340-1-2.  
 General Gates, The, 327, 437-8, 444, 484-5-8, 497, 521-2-3-4-5, 542, 561.  
 General Jackson, *ship*, 756.  
 Governor Bligh, *schooner*, 302-4, 429, 430, 444, 560.  
 Greenwich, The, 248.  
 Greyhound, The, 529-30.  
 Guardian, 132.  
 Guide, *brig*, 757.  
 Harmony, *ship*, 686.  
 Harriett, *ship*, 429, 430, 444, 501-9, 672.  
 Harvest, *ship*, 756.  
 Haweis, 452-3-4, 687.  
 Henry Porcher, 638-9.

## Shipping—continued.

Hind, *brig*, 756.  
 Hoogly, *ship*, 758.  
 Hope, *schooner*, 756.  
 Hope, *barque*, 757.  
 Indian, The, 444.  
 Inspector, *ship*, 300-1, 498.  
 Janus, *ship*, 431, 758.  
 Jefferson, *ship*, 343-7, 350-1, 387-8-9, 425-6, 498.  
 Jess, *schooner*, 756-7-8.  
 John Dunscombe, *schooner*, 756-7.  
 King George, *ship*, 296-8-9, 311, 338-9, 350-1, 421-3, 444, 498, 510.  
 Lady Leith, *brig*, 756.  
 Lady Nelson, 334.  
 Leonidas, *ship*, 758.  
 Martha, *brig*, 430, 758.  
 Mary, *ship*, 299.  
 Mary Ann, The, 314-5.  
 Mary Hay, *barque*, 757-8.  
 Melrose, *brig*, 757.  
 Mercator, *ship*, 757.  
 Mercury, *schooner*, 426.  
 Mermaid, H.M. *cutter*, 652.  
 Meuse, *ship*, 756-8.  
 Minerva, *ship*, 563.  
 Mount Vernon, *ship*, 757.  
 Narwal, *ship*, 756.  
 Nathaniel, *ship*, 757.  
 Neree, *ship*, 756-7.  
 New-Zealander, *ship*, 301, 367, 430, 444, 498.  
 New-Zealander, *brigantine*, 686-7, 697-8.  
 Nourwal, *barque*, 757.  
 Orion, *ship*, 758.  
 Pallas, *ship*, 756.  
 Parachute, *ship*, 756.  
 Parramatta, *schooner*, 304, 419, 423.  
 Perseverance, *brig*, 300-1-3, 315-6, 498, 507.  
 Phoenix, *ship*, 502.  
 Porpoise, 285.  
 Prince Regent, *schooner*, 327, 486-7, 497, 523.  
 Prince of Wales, The, 328.  
 Providence, 208.  
 Psyche, *barque*, 757.  
 Pyramus, The, 328, 721-3.  
 Queen Charlotte, The, 344, 426-7, 444.  
 Rainbow, H.M.S., 328, 669, 674.  
 Rambler, *ship*, 444, 575-6.  
 Regalia, The, 567.  
 Reliance, 204.  
 Resolution, H.M.S., 15-6-7-8, 20-3-4-8, 31.  
 Ridleman, *ship*, 758.  
 Robert Quayle, *brig*, 430, 517.  
 Rochester, *ship*, 629.  
 Royal William, *ship*, 756.  
 Sally and Mary, 309.  
 Santa Anna, The, 338-9, 340.  
 Saracen, The, 430.  
 Scorpion, The, 253.  
 Sirius, H.M.S., 74, 106-7, 111-2.  
 Sisters, *ship*, 668-9, 671-2-3.  
 Sophia, The, 448.  
 Speculation, *ship*, 758.  
 Speedy, The, 234-5.  
 Speke, *ship*, 300-1-5, 498.  
 Spring-Grove, *ship*, 301, 498.  
 Star, The, 279, 422.  
 Surrey, The, 509.  
 Susannah Ann, *schooner*, 757.  
 Tees, H.M.S., 647-8-9, 651-7-8.  
 Thames, The, 642-3.  
 Thomas Williams, *ship*, 756.  
 Toki-Raw, *ship*, 757.  
 Trial, *brig*, 401-5, 470, 498, 506.

**Shipping—continued.**

- Triton, *ship*, 757.  
 Urania, The, 635-7-8-9.  
 Vansittart, The, 431, 540.  
 Venus (Bass), 225, 240-4.  
 Venus, *whaler*, 234-5-6, 378.  
 Vulture, The, 278.  
 W. Hamilton, *ship*, 756.  
 W. Hannibal, *ship*, 756.  
 Wellington, *brig*, 668, 672-3.  
 Westmoreland, *ship*, 562.  
 White Oak, *ship*, 758.  
 Wiscasset, *ship*, 758.  
 Woodlark, The, *brig*, 431.  
 Xenophon, *ship*, 756.

**Shipping Returns**, 236, 248, 249, 253, 260,  
 309, 429, 498, 713, 756.

**Shungee—**

- Recognised as chief by Macquarie, 328, 428.  
 Visits Sydney, 345.  
 Marsden describes, 403.  
 See Marsden, 348-9.

**Siddons, Captain—**

- Rescued by "Perseverance," 318.

**Simmons—**

- Master "Mary," 299.

**Simmons, Lieutenant—**

- Commanded "Lady Nelson," 334.

**"Sisters," ship—**

- Brings "Wellington's," *brig*, pirates from  
 Bay of Islands, 669.  
 Captain Duke's petition, 672.  
 Captain Rous and others estimate value of  
 services, 673.

**Skinner—**

- To Macquarie : Leave for Marsden, 484.  
 To Macquarie : Report from Bay of Islands,  
 485.  
 To Marsden : Date of letter, 485.  
 To Macquarie : Despatch of "Prince  
 Regent," 487.  
 To Macquarie : Report convicts "General  
 Gates," 488.  
 To Bigge : Report on Maoris, &c., 495.  
 To Bigge : Trial New Zealand hemp, 511.  
 To Commissioners of Navy : Seizure of  
 "General Gates," 522.  
 To Commissioners of Navy : "General  
 Gates" prize-money, 524.  
 From Butler : Convicts on "General  
 Gates," 524.

**Slavery—**

- McCrae describes, 543.  
 See also McCrae (evidence).

**Snares—**

- Discovered, 142.  
 Menzies reports visit, 145.  
 Mentioned by Vancouver, 156.  
 Bass's fishing concession, 243.

**Solander Island—**

- Relief of five men, 459.

**"Sophia"—**

- Massacre, 448.

**South Cape—**

- Hunter passes in "Sirius" (see note), 75.  
 Mentioned by Vancouver, 156.  
 "Britannia" passed, 177.

**Spanish ships—**

- At Dusky Bay, 161.

**Spars from New Zealand—**

- Government order *re* duty on same, 402.

**Spearman—**

- From Stephen : Scheme of government,  
 740.  
 From Stephen : Cost first establishment,  
 744.

**"Speedy," Quested—**

- In whaling trade, 234.  
 Particulars, 235.

**"Speke," Kingston—**

- At Bay of Islands, 300.  
 Brings Kendall and chiefs, 498.

**Spencer and Co.—**

- Owners of "Elizabeth and Mary," 260.

**Spruce—**

- Banks's sketch of, 23, 29.

**"Star," James Birnie—**

- Movements of, 279.

**Stephen—**

- To Spearman : Establishment of consulate,  
 740.  
 From Backhouse : Appointment Consul,  
 744.  
 From Pennington : Appointment of Consul,  
 745.  
 From Pennington : Provision for the ex-  
 pense of Consul, 747.

**Stephens—**

- From Cook : "Endeavour's" movements,  
 1.  
 From Cook, forwarding curios, 15.  
 From Cook : Account of his voyage, 20.  
 From Bligh : Movements of "Bounty,"  
 73-4.  
 From Hunter : "Sirius" passes South  
 Cape, 74.  
 From Bligh : Loss of "Bounty," 76.

**Starbeck, Daniel—**

- Owner of "Aurora," 278.

**Stewart, William—**

- De Thierry's reference, 626.

**Stowaways—**

- "Hammont" has five on board, 408.

**Sugden—**

- To Bathurst : Formation of colony, 516.  
 From Goulburn : Establishment of colony  
 declined, 532.

**Sullivan—**

From Luttrell : Seal and flax trade, 279.

**Swain, William—**

"Cumberland," 295, 312.

**Swilley, Ja's Tob's, A.B.—**

Killed at Queen Charlotte Sound, 19.

**Sydney—**

From Howe : Matra's plan, 45.  
From Arden (Attorney-General) : Young's plan, 45.  
To Lords-Commissioners of Navy : Flax and timber trade, 49.  
From Phillip : Canoes at Norfolk Island, 107.

**Sydney Gazette—**

From De Thierry, 724.

**Taylor, Rev.—**

Succeeds Rev. Mr. Hill, 724.

**Terra—**

Rewarded for good conduct, 295.  
Chief of Mowhee's tribe, 347.  
Marsden visits his district, 364.

**Taylor and Upton—**

To Bathurst : Offering to carry despatches, 583.  
From Wilmot : No correspondence, 584.

**Thames River—**

In anonymous scheme, 61.

**Thames—**

Flax-plant at, 197.  
Marsden visits, 373.  
"Coromandel" at, 569-70.

**Thierry—**

See De Thierry, Baron.

**Thompson, Captain John, of "Boyd,"—**

Loss of "Boyd," 293, 295, 296, 299, 307, 311.

**Thompson, Joseph—**

Evidence before Bigge, 499.

**Thomson, J. D.—**

Reports on detention "General Gates," 521.

**Thomson, John—**

To Dundas, John : Scheme of conquest, 584.

**Three Kings—**

Raven sights, 184.  
Goats and hogs on, 304.  
Seen by Marsden, 348.

**Timber—**

Matra's proposal, 39.  
Sydney's memorandum, 55.  
In Dusky Bay, 178.  
King describes, 287.  
Fine spars in New Zealand, 291, 674.  
Marsden sails for cargo of, 364.

**Timber—continued.**

Macquarie fixes dues, 402.  
Marsden on, 481, 493, 494.  
Captain Skinner, "*Dromedary*," reports on, 485.  
Elives on, 494.  
Skinner's description, 497.  
Sugden's scheme, 516.  
McDonald's evidence, 559-60.  
Bigge's report, 591-2.  
Petition of merchants, 664.  
Spars for Navy, 674, 676, 677.  
In New Zealand : See also McDonald's evidence.  
Bay of Islands : See also Fairfowl, Dr. (evidence).

**Timmoranghee—**

On "Active," 374-5.

**Tippahe—**

Visits Sydney, 258.  
Ill used by a whaler, 262.  
Visits King, 263.  
Described by King, 264.  
Views of justice, 264.  
Inquires about owners of vessels, 265.  
Receives medal from King, 266.  
Idea of the supernatural, 267.  
Contempt for Australians, 267.  
His action *re* presents, 268.  
Would aid flax-getting, 287.  
Loss of "Boyd," 294, 295, 296, 300, 301, 308, 311, 336.  
Bruce marries daughter of, 322.  
Visits Sydney, 334.

**Tippahe Cupa—**

Trip to England, 635, 637, 638, 642.

**Tologa Bay—**

Furneaux makes for, 18.

**Tookee, New-Zealand flax-dresser—**

Returned, 170.  
Says farewell, 173.  
Mentioned by King, 263.

**Torrens—**

To Downing Street : Command of military force, 661-2.  
To Horton : New Zealand flax and timber, 676-7.

**Trade, shipping, imports, exports, &c.—**

Official tables, 712, 713-4.

**Trade with Maoris—**

See also Fairfowl, Dr. (evidence).

**Trade—**

See also McCrae (evidence).

**Traps—**

Distance of Bounty Isles, 77, 95.  
Mentioned by Vancouver, 156.

**"Trial," brig—**

Despatched to New Zealand, 401.

**Tugee, flax-dresser—**

Captured, 182.

Returned home, 183-4-5.

**Turnbull, Robert, "Britannia"—**

Answers King's queries, 234.

**Turner, Rev. N.—**

To Secretaries, Wesleyan Society : Trading accounts, 619.

To Etchells : Maori customs, 629.

Opinion of Maoris, 630.

To Secretary, Wesleyan Society : Death of Pepe, 634.

To Secretary, Wesleyan Society : Returned missionaries, 667.

To Secretary, Wesleyan Society : Wishes to remain in New South Wales, 670.

**Twiss—**

From Croker : Flax for navy, 683.

**Tyerman and Bennet—**

To Erskine and Leigh : Report of visit, 631.

Official report, 640.

**Under-Secretary of State—**

From Macquarie, on Bruce's memorial, 322.

From Hobson : Estimate of establishing colony, 744.

On his duties and powers, 750.

**Vancouver—**

"Discovery" and "Gorgon" to accompany, 113.

Menzies' instructions, 117.

"Discovery" and "Chatham" to accompany, 122.

"Dædalus" to take stores to, 128.

To Nepean : Describes voyage, 131.

From Cape of Good Hope, 131, 132.

Instructions to, 133.

Expedition at Cape of Good Hope, 136.

Expedition : Notes by Banks, 141.

Expedition at New Zealand, 142.

To Phillip, *re* voyage of the "Dædalus," 154-7.

Describes discoveries, 156.

To Phillip : Voyage of expedition, 156.

Instructions to Hanson, 158.

Despatches reach Phillip, 165.

Sends two flax-dressers, 165.

House sent home, 167.

**Venereal disease—***See* Fairfowl, Dr. (evidence).*See* McCrae (evidence).**"Venus," Bass—**

At Dusky, 225.

**"Venus," Gardiner—**

In whaling trade, movements, &amp;c., 234-5.

Conduct of crew, 378.

Captured natives, 378.

**Vines—**

Introduced by Marsden, 434.

**"Vulture," T. Folder—**

Movements of, 278.

**Waimate—**

Marsden visits, 366.

**Walker, John, master "Inspector"—**

"Boyd" massacre, 300.

**Wangaloora—***See also* Whangaroa, 301-2.**Wangarroa—***See* Whangaroa, 295.**Wangaroo—***See also* Whangaroa, 323.**War—**

Long journeys taken for, 398.

Fairfowl describes, 557.

Marsden describes, 702-3-6.

Taking heads : Causes, 716.

**War-ships—**

Sent to settle disputes, 720.

**Warrackie, Chief—**

Fears missionary designs, 406.

**Waterhouse—**

From Bass, on visit to Dusky, 225, 240-4.

**Watson—**

From Erskine : Cost of mission, 622.

**Weevea, Chief—**

Visits Marsden, 382-4.

Account of village, &amp;c., 385, 386, 387.

**Wellesley—**

From King : Hingston's visit, 223.

**"Wellington," brig—**

Seized by convicts, 668.

Claim for recapture by Duke, 671-2.

**Werrie—**

Angry with his wife, 371.

**Wesleyan Missionary Society—**

Proposal to appoint missionary : Marsden's opinion and counsel, 563.

To Bathurst : Goods for mission, 519, 531.

From Carvosso : Artificers wanted, 582.

From Turner : Accounts of mission, 619.

From Turner, describing death of Pepe, 634.

Rev. D. Tyerman's account of mission, 631.

Missionaries leave, 668.

Turner relinquishes work, 670.

**Whale-fishery—**

Extension of limits, 217, 310-2.

May be carried on, 292.

Employment of "Active" in, 517-8.

**Whalers—**

Ill treat Natives, 262.

Would report on timbers, 287.

Must be cautioned, 296.

To Macquarie on "Boyd" massacre, 299.

McCrae describes, 540.



**Whaling—**

Six vessels in, 224.  
 Successful, 233.  
 Captains answer King's queries, 234.  
 King reports established, 239, 247.  
 Vessels visit Bay of Islands, 254.  
 Captains take away Natives, 257.  
 Outfit and wages, 517-8.  
 Ships recruit on coast, 608.  
 Merchants ask for protection, 663.

**Whangarawe—**

See Whangaroa, 293.

**Whangaroa—**

See also Wangaloora, Wangarova, Wanga-  
 roo, Whangarame, and Whangarome.  
 "Boyd" massacre at, 336.  
 McCrae describes, 534-5.

**Whangarowe—**

See Whangaroa, 298.

**Wheat—**

Duaterra's endeavours to cultivate, 343.  
 Flour produced by Duaterra, 345.  
 Marsden's opinion, 414.

**White and Turner—**

To Secretaries, Wesleyan Missionary Society :  
 Mr. Leigh unsuitable, 625.

**Williams, Jacob—**

"Mercury's" crew's depredations, 426.

**Williams, Robert—**

To sail in "Perseverance," 315-6.  
 Macquarie says competent, 409.  
 Memorial of, on flax, 410.  
 Report on flax, 457.

**Williams, Robert—continued.**

Flax proposals to Birnie, 466-9.  
 Proposed agreement *re* flax, 468, 470.  
 Agreement with New South Wales New  
 Zealand Company, 473.

**Williams Bay—**

Leith to call at, 303.

**Wills, S.—**

Owner of "Sally and Mary," 309.

**Wilmot—**

From Lack, asking for specimens flax, 577.  
 From Navy Board : Conveyance of mission  
 stores, 577.  
 To Navy Commissioners, 583.  
 To Taylor and Upton : No official com-  
 munication with missionaries, 584.

**Wilson, Thomas—**

Ill at Dusky, 178.

**Wilson, Campbell, and Page—**

Owners of "Albion," 279.

**Woodhouse, Thomas, midshipman—**

Killed at Queen Charlotte Sound, 19.

**Woodoo—**

Return of flax-dresser, 171, 185.  
 Says farewell to King, 173.  
 Introduced potatoes, 263.

**Young, Sir George—**

Plan for a settlement, 45-7.  
 Arden's comments on plan, 45.  
 Petition for cultivation of flax, 72.

















